

His  
Love  
Healed  
my  
Heart

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

**For daily latest books please visit**  
<https://novelsguru.com/>

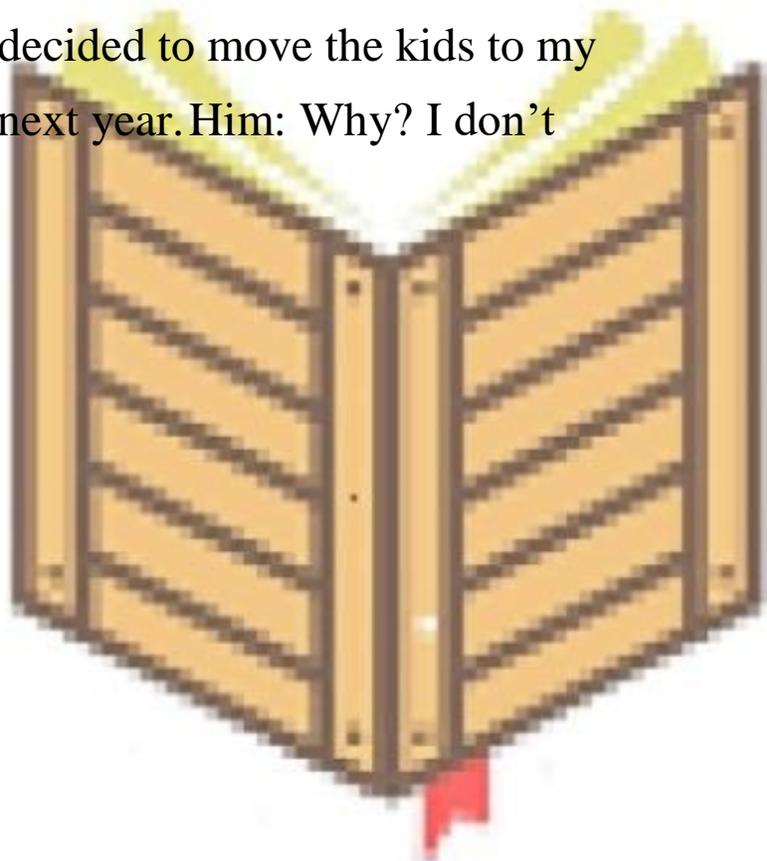
## INTRO

It's a cold rainy day standing by the kitchen window looking at the view of my pool with a cup of coffee in my hands thinking about the meeting I have this morning in fact I have back to back meetings starting at 10:00 am. 4 years ago who would have thought I would standing here looking at the view of my own pool in and out of meetings with a beautiful office my own company in fact various businesses. I am happy though my heart is too broken. Love broke me love broke my heart and I don't think I'll ever able to love another man. I'm too scared. The pain was just too much I don't think I'll ever heal yes I moved on with my life and I forgave him but I haven't healed. I've to realize that the love can break you

into a million pieces love can turn your heart into ice but can love heal you can love heal the broken the heart can it restore it can love melt the ice can it break down the walls you built to protect your heart. I wish I had protected my heart back then but I loved too much.

.....FLASHBACK.....  
.....  
.....

Me: I have decided to move the kids to my parents for next year. Him: Why? I don't understand



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Well I can see that we are a burden to you. Ever since I lost my job things have changed around here the treatment is not the same.

Him: What do you mean?

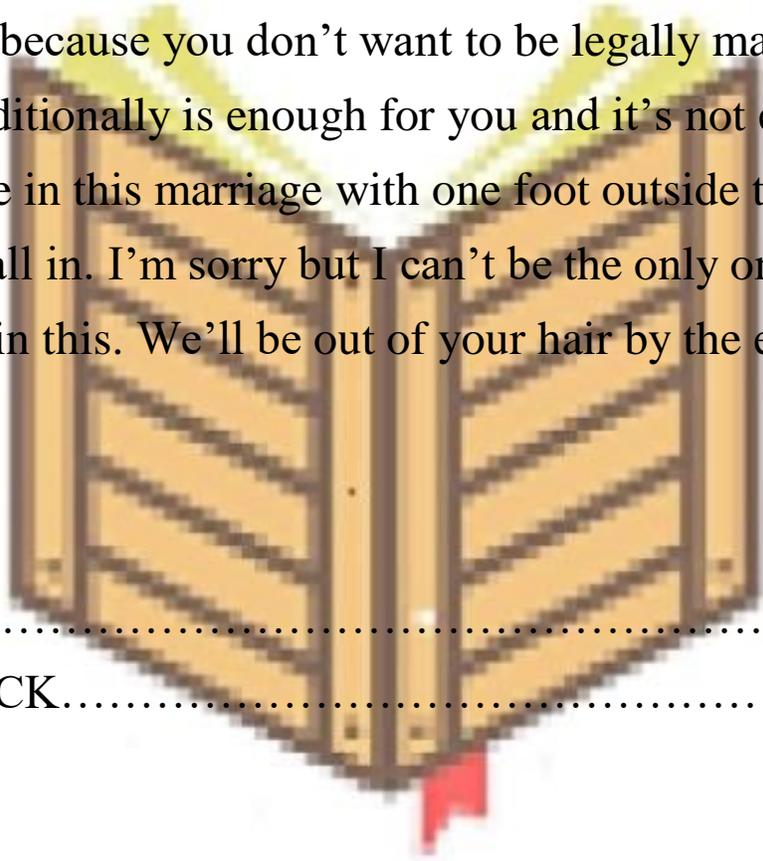
Me: I mean exactly that. I can't even ask you for anything because if I do ask for something you complain and start verbally abusing me. Telling me how ungrateful I am how we think wena uvuza imali. I hardly ever ask you for anything but when I do you act like everyday we want money from you. I've never asked for anything for the kids I take care of them myself while you forgot that you have kids. I do all I can for them

Sponsored

making sure that they don't ask for anything from you. it's not like you can't afford us. I've watched you verbally abusing our kids and I speak up for them you turn on me. Ndinyamezele amazwi abuhlungu ebephuma emlonyeni wakho ndahlala ndanyamezela hoping ukuba you will change but the longer we stay the worse it got. Today I'm telling you that we can't stay anymore the emotional abuse you are putting us through is killing us.

Him: Two of those kids are not my kids why would you expect me to anything for them they are your bastards.

Me: I gave you three beautiful kids and you never even spend time with them and My kids are not bastards and I never expected you to do anything for them hence I never asked for anything. You married me knowing that I have 2 kids I never hid that from you and you were ok think with it. Everything you did you did so people could applause you you care more about what people think than what your wife thinks in fact your so called wife because you don't want to be legally married being married traditionally is enough for you and it's not enough for me. You are in this marriage with one foot outside the door whilst I'm all in. I'm sorry but I can't be the only one fully committed in this. We'll be out of your hair by the end of the week.



.....END OF  
FLASHBACK.....

....

4 years later I'm single living with my kids in Durban walked away and never looked back I'll forever be grateful for the strength I had to eventually walk away from my marriage a toxic and emotionally abusive marriage.

My train of thoughts is interrupted by my driver/ personal body guard Andile: The car is ready Miss Sondlo

Me: Andile how many times must I tell you to call me Khanyi Andile: I'm sorry

Khanyi

Me: If you call me Miss Sondlo again I'll fire you I try very hard to say that with a straight face but I fail. His smile is contagious.

Andile: He smiles warmly I most definitely wouldn't want to lose my job. Can we go. Me: Yes we can. Were the kids ok when you drove them to school? They were mad at me because I couldn't drive them myself.

Andile: You should ask Eddie he drove them they are also mad at me and I don't know why Me: These kids and their drama.

We both laugh about it.

My name is Khanyisile Sondlo and this is my life.

Chapter 1

INSE

RT 1

TUES

DAY

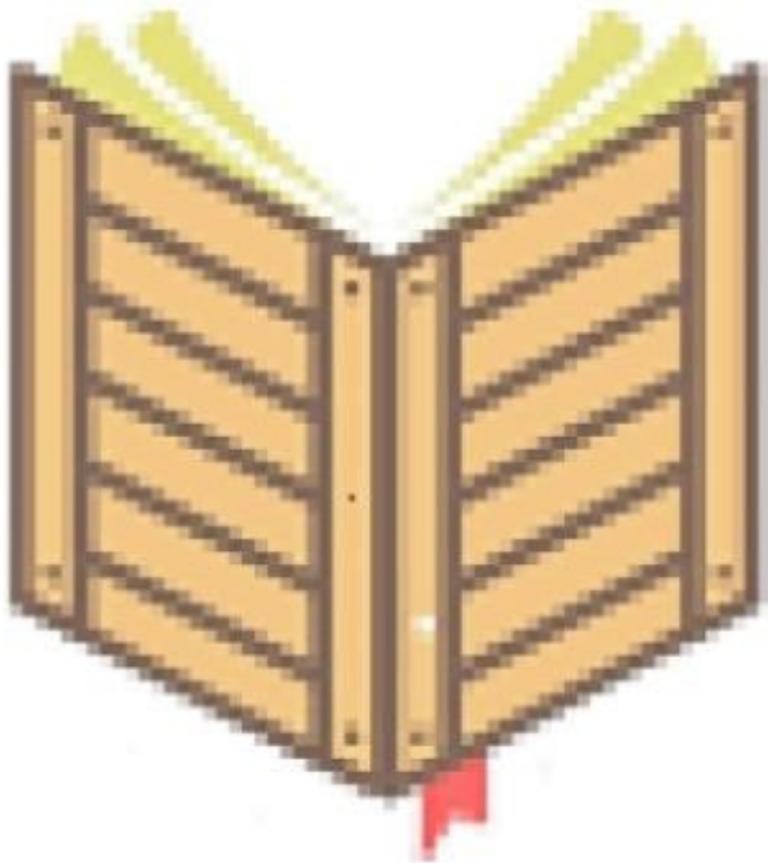
KHANYISILE

NOVELSGURU.COM

You know I always use to say “When life serves you lemons just make lemonade.” I live by that saying I did that a lot of time but there are times that the lemonade still tastes sour as hell. I had to taste a lot of lemons during my previous marriage. I suffered a lot of emotional abuse which led to me losing myself in the marriage losing my self esteem and not knowing who I am. I was never able to take my own advice advice that I would give to other people and it would work for them but me no I just had to be stubborn tell myself all will be well in time only I didn't realise I was drowning myself killing myself and my kids slowly digging our graves by believing that he'll change. 6 years I had to put up with it and endure it.

As I walk out of the gym I notice someone standing next to my car in fact he's leaning on my car. I hate it when people do that it's disrespectful he doesn't know me like that. I'm pissed off. “*Calm down Khanyi you don't have to shoot him.*” I say to myself. I press my keys to unlock the car hoping that he'll move and he does he's also busy on a call and he opens the car parked next to mine and gets in but he leaves the door slightly ajar and I'm thinking that

this guy was just sent to test me. I'm inside my car and I want to pull out but I can't he's door is still open. I open the passenger side window to talk to him but he is still on the phone so I honk my hooter and he looks at me and I just



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

point to the door. He just smiles and closes his door and I drive off. You know this guy's car is exactly the same as my other car even the interior I didn't look at the registration number now my mind is running wild I make a call to Eddie:

Eddie: Lady K are you ok?

Me: Eddie check if my Mustang is still there ( I know I'm being paranoid right now

Sponsored

but hey)

Eddie: it's here I used it to take the kids to school it was the car of the day that they chose. Why what's going on?

Me: Someone at the gym has the same car it's exactly like mine even the interior just everything.

Eddie: Oh I see. (and he laughs)

I drop the call as I'm almost home. I don't understand why he is laughing he would have reacted the same way. As I drive in my mood changes from 80 to 0 as I see the other car parked in my driveway definitely not someone I'm interested in seeing. Why was he allowed to come in. I

need to speak to Eddie about this. I sit in my car and take deep and brace myself for what I'm about to deal with right now. I really don't need drama right now. I can't see Eddie out here maybe he's inside I walk slowly towards the door before I open I take another deep breath and walk in. Why do I feel like this this is

my house for crying out loud I can kick him out I don't have to deal with him and he interrupts my train of thoughts:

Him: Hi

Me: Mmmm

Him: How are you? I've been waiting for you Me: I can see that what do you want?

Him: I would like to see the kids Me: Do you know day it is today? Him: Yes it's

Tuesday

Me: Why would they be home at this time? I know you don't drink so whatever it is that you are smoking stop it



NOVELSGURU.COM

it's making you confused. My son is at work and my daughter is a varsity student who stays at school. I don't understand why you would think they are home in the middle of the week. So why don't you tell me why you are really here you know what don't bother. The kids will see you when they want to see you it is their decision and you know this. Please leave. Eddie just came out of nowhere and he escorts him out.

As I walk up the stairs to my room " Baby daddy no scratch that sperm donor drama early in the morning shit I should just kill him." I mumble to myself



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

## Chapter 2

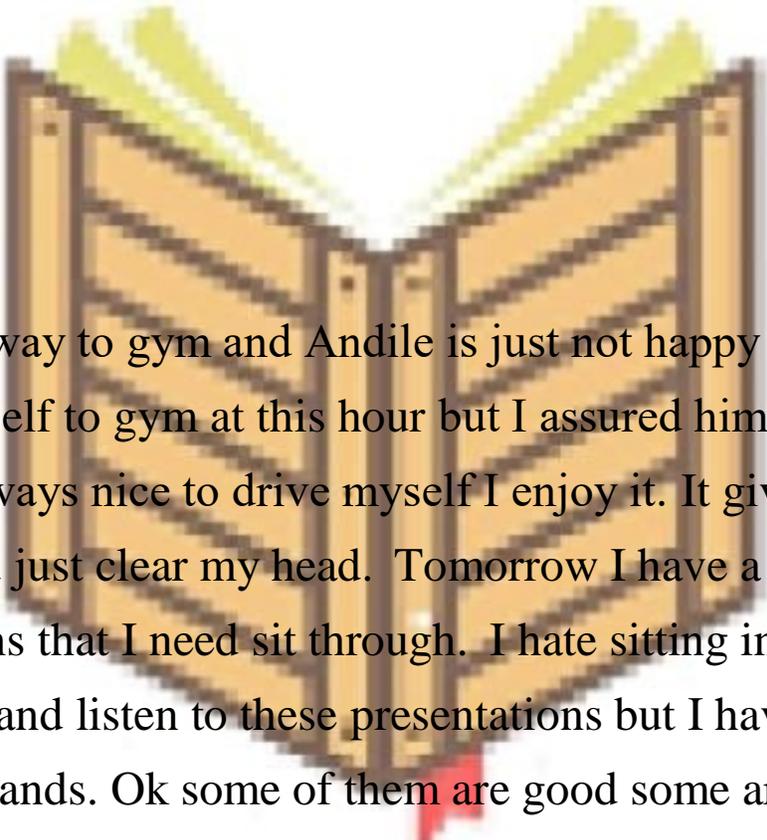
### INSERT 2

Khan

yi

4:30

AM



I'm on my way to gym and Andile is just not happy that I'm driving myself to gym at this hour but I assured him that I'll be fine. It's always nice to drive myself I enjoy it. It gives me time to think and just clear my head. Tomorrow I have a few presentations that I need sit through. I hate sitting in the boardroom and listen to these presentations but I have it's what the job demands. Ok some of them are good some are just take chances I simply just get bored. My son wanted to extend the music studio and for what he wants we have to build a completely new building for that. Come to think of I won't be able to sit in in that meeting he'll have to do this on his own I have another meeting exactly at the same as his and I can't cancel. Maybe I should

ask his uncle if he can attend the meeting on my behalf. I'm so great full for my brother he has been great the past four year he has been there for me and supported me through it all.

.....FLASHBACK.....

.....

.....

Lungelo: Khanyi are you ok?

Me: Not really just have a headache.

Lungelo: You've had this headache for days now are you stressing about something

Me: (Tears just fell) It's just that I'm so used to taking care of myself and now I'm adding moreburden on you.

Lungelo: Hey you'll never be a burden to me everything will be fine everything will work outjust fine you'll see. I know you are used to taking care of yourself and the kids but right now why don't you let me take care of you and the kids are alright the parents are taking good care ofthem just relax you'll be ok. Stop crying now.

.....

.....END OF FLASH

BACK.....

.....

Taking care of me was what he did and making sure that I had everything I needed. It's been a difficult journey it still is but not

as much. I park my car and walk into the gym it's packed this is why I don't like coming in the early hours of the morning. I walk straight up to my personal trainer I need him today so that I can be out of here by 06:00.

Me: Morning Thabiso

Him: Morning Khanyi how many times must I tell you to call me T-Boz

Me: How many times must I tell to get used to me calling you by your actual name. ( He just smiles and goes through all the exercises we'll be doing in this hour.)

As we were busy I notice someone that I was hoping not to see I think he was with his friend or something he looks my way and sees me and I just look away and focus on Thabiso. I finish with Thabiso and get my things it's 6:15 I still have enough time to get home shower take the kids to school and get to work. Today is going to be a hectic day. This week has just been hectic and I'm starting to feel it. I can't wait for weekend I just need to relax read a book and have some wine. I say my goodbyes to Thabiso and walk to my car Oh God why have you forsaken why is he standing next to my car. He is driving a Mustang the one I saw him in yesterday he is just standing there looking and the cars and he looks likes he is in deep thoughts. I press my key

to unlock my car and that snaps him out of his thoughts he looks at me I greet and just get into my car and drive off leaving him standing there.

As soon as I get home I take a shower get dressed and get breakfast ready for the kids. As they walk to the kitchen the elder brother comes in too. I swear this child never eats at his place he works he has a good salary still gets an allowance he can afford to buy his own groceries but no he has to come to my house and finish my food.

Khaya:

Morning fam

Me: Morning

Son

Ntando (Little brother): Hey big bro how are you? Don't you have food at your house? (My question exactly)

Lonwabo (little brother 2): He only buys food when we visit.

Maybe he should get a girlfriend Khaya: and who says I don't have one

Lonwabo: oh please don't tell about that Barbie doll who's always afraid that she'll break a nail Lwanele (Little Sister): it's true Khaya

They all just laugh and continue having breakfast after which we leave

I walk into the building and head straight for elevator greeting the receptionist. You know

every time I walk into this office it never ceases to amaze me how far I've come just when I was ready to give up just when I thought I was ready to let go and succumb to the words that kept ringing in my head "Your dreams will never become reality." I'm glad I never listened I'm glad I never gave up. My PA interrupts my train of thoughts.

Ibanathi: Lady K

Me: He calls me lady K. Morning Nathi how are you?

Ibanathi: I am fabulous. Here's your cup of hot water and you have 30 minutes before your first meeting with QM

Architecture. You will be dealing with Mr Qhawelomzi Mthimkhulu. He is the one that will be doing the presentation for the new building. After that you have SABC that will probably take through to lunch time and after lunch you have 3 more meetings the presentations that you've been working on.

Me: Thanks Nathi. Is my son here the QM project is his baby and his uncle will be in that meeting on my behalf. You double booked me today remember

Nathi: Oh yes I'm sorry about that lady K it won't happen again and your son is on his way he should be here by now.

Me: Thanks Nathi. I need you to get me some blueberry muffins and I need an energy drink this is going to be a very long day.

Oh and Nathi.... My son walks in interrupting us

Khaya: All sorted Nathi. What's up man he says shaking

Nathi's hand and he walks up to me kisses me on the cheek.

How are you mom?

Me: I'm good my son and you

Khaya: I'm good. Are you ready to do this

Me: it's now or never. Thanks for the muffins my munchkin

Khaya: Mom please how many times must I

tell you not to call me that. Me: How many

times must I tell you to get used to it.

Nathi: ok guys it's time to go. He walks out first laughing his lungs out followed by my sulking son.

And we go our separate ways to

different boardrooms. KHAYA

I really wanted my mom to be in this meeting but it's fine she can always look at the presentation later. I'm glad she asked my uncle to stand in for her. I really admire that woman the things that she has been through the shit I've put her through and not once did she ever give up on me. She was always there for me no matter what I did wrong she was always there. And the day I decided to clean up my act and start being responsible I could see how proud she was I still see it today. Every time she tells me how proud she of me I always see it in her eyes. Over the years I've learned that my mom can never hide how she feels even if she tries but her eyes will always give her away. She loves us so much everyone can see that and what I love the most

about how she is raising us she always makes sure that everything she does for us we have to earn it especially when it comes to money and other material things we have to earn them we never get anything on a silver platter.

My uncle disturbs me  
from my thoughts Uncle

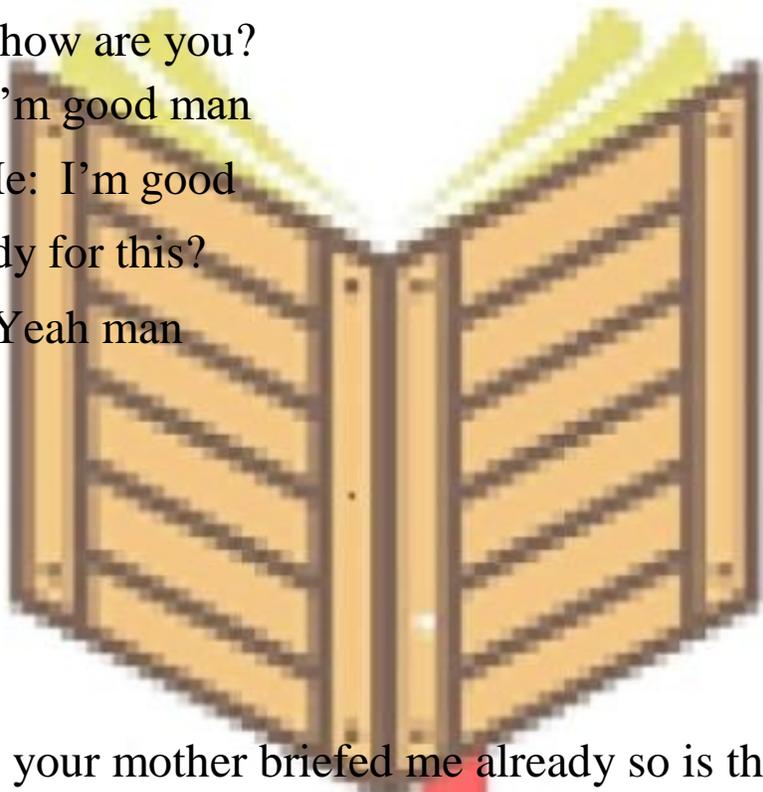
Lu: Nephew

Me: Uncle how are you?

Uncle Lu: I'm good man  
and you? Me: I'm good  
are you ready for this?

Uncle Lu: Yeah man  
let's do this

Sponsored



let's do this your mother briefed me already so is this guy here Just then Qhawe walks in. he is another role model of mine I look up to him. The man is great at what he does and I hope my mom will approve of his idea I like it I really do. Maybe I should hook him up with my mom they would make a cute couple.

Qhawe: Khaya how are you?

Me: (I forgot to mention that he is very intimidating just like mom.) I'm good. This is my Uncle Lungelo Sondlo he is

standing in for Khanyi she has another meeting and uncle this  
Qhawelomzi Mthimkhulu

Uncle Lu: Nice to meet you man.

Qhawe: Likewise. Khaya can we start I have another meeting to  
get to after this.

Khaya: Yes sure. Everything is set up you can just connect your  
laptop I'll get us some coffee so long.

Qhawe does his presentation and I can see that my uncle is  
impressed who wouldn't be. I mean this is a state of the art  
building which will have state of the art equipment which  
reminds me Qhawe needs some information from the sound  
equipment guys.

The meeting went well it took longer than we anticipated and  
Qhawe had to rush to his next meeting. He'll get feedback  
on Monday.

Uncle Lu: I'm impressed I'm sure  
your mom will be too. Me: I hope so.

Uncle Lu: You guys should come over for dinner this weekend  
you and your siblings I haven't seen you guys in a while

Me: I'll speak to mom. But I know we don't have  
plans with her this weekend. Uncle Lu: Cool then.

See you soon I also have to rush.

And he drives off and I get in my car and

drive off. QHAWELOMZI

I walked out of that boardroom feeling good about my presentation I hope I'll get this

deal. Being a divorcee and taking care of your kids on your own is not easy but I would never trade it for anything. My ex-wife is always complaining about everything under the sun especially

How the kids don't want to spend time with her how could they when she doesn't even respect them and take time to understand their needs when she makes everything to be all about her. I love my kids I've been a single father now for 6 years me getting full custody of the kids was part of the divorce settlement since their mother didn't want to be a full time mom and it has been a bumpy ride and we are surviving we making it and absolutely enjoy life together except for their mother who is just a thorn on our sides. Juggling work and kids is not easy I definitely understand what single women go through. There is no life manual on how to deal with things

sometimes you wish there was but I have learned along the way that prayer will get you through anything and giving up has never been an option for me.

When I started my architectural company I had doubts but I stayed positive stayed strong through difficult times and

focused on building this company a legacy for my kids and today my hard work has paid off I am now one of the best in the country.

My thoughts are interrupted by my twins:

Bandile: Hey

dad Banele:

what's up man

Me: hey boys (banele is very laid back)

Bandile: How did it go today are they going to use your company for their new building

Me; I don't know yet they said they would contact in two days that means I'll know Wednesday Banele: ok I hope you get it

Me: I hope so too.

Banele: You look like something

else is on your mind Me: It's

nothing man

Bandile: Who is she

Me: I don't know she goes to the same gym I go to.

Me: It's funny how they just said **that** at the same time) there's nothing much to tell I haven't spoken to her. I just see her at the gym and she's always in a hurry when she leaves.

Bandile: Just don't mess up the deal while thinking about her.

He says as they walk out. You know if it wasn't for my kids I don't think I would have made it this far. The divorce was hectic it was something that I don't wish to experience again and something I wouldn't wish on my worst enemy. After my

divorce I never wanted to love a woman again. That woman caused me so much pain but I decided not to paint women with the same brush that I paint her with. I loved her but she killed that love but told myself that the one meant for me is out there. I don't go sleeping with every woman I meet. I have casual sex here and there I am only human and I have needs so I just opted for a casual sex partner and she's great but I think it's time I let her go she wants more than I can give. I shouldn't drag this actually let me just call her.

Me: Hello

Her: HI how are you

Me : I'm good are you home can I come over we need to talk Her: yes I am home you can come what time will you be here?

Me: I'll be there in 15 minutes

When I get there she's just wearing a gown I think she thinks I'm here for our session. Her: Hi

Me: May I come in Her:

Sure

I walk in and sit on the dining table chair she comes close and gives me a kiss but I don't kiss her back I just ask her to sit and at this moment she is looking very puzzled by my actions and she has always been intimidated by me.

Me: I'll get straight to the point  
there's no need to drag it Her; what's  
wrong?

Me: Natasha look I can't continue seeing you. I have noticed that you want more from this you want more from me and the more you want is the more that I can't give you. I don't feel the same way you do. I don't want to string you along because if I do and let you fall in love with me you'll get hurt.

Natasha: How do you know I have feelings for you I never said anything

Me: You didn't have to say anything your actions said it all since last week you changed you are doing things differently started acting like a girlfriend. I don't want to hurt you that's why I'm breaking things off with you. Look you are a nice I'm sure you'll find a guy that will love you the way you want to be loved and that guy is not me.

Natasha: and if I don't want any other guy but you?

Me: That's the thing Natasha you can't have me. Look I have to go my kids are waiting for me. Good luck with everything. I'll see you around.

I get up and kiss her cheek and walk away  
just as I reach the door Her: Que please don't

do this let's try please

I turn I give her the look that says don't call me that she knows I hate being called Que. She mumbles an apology I nod and walk out.

When I get home my 2 girls have started with dinner I take over and let them start with their homework. I help with their homework while busy cooking. This is my life and I love it I wouldn't have it any other way although sometimes I feel that I do need to have someone to share it with I do get lonely at times.

### Chapter 3

Thursday: 4:00 AM

KHANYISILE

I got used to this routine. Waking up this early going to gym or go jogging. It became my coping mechanism my way of releasing stress my way of clearing my mind and just forget about everything

it became therapeutic for me even my kids started to join me after a while and it became more fun. It felt like we are recovering together it felt like they understood what I was going and they just wanted to be there. What I love about them is how they knew when I'm not ok and they would come and sit with me and not say anything but in a way they are letting me know that they are always here for me they did it back then they still do it now. I think I'm going to use the home gym today. I'll use the treadmill I don't feel like going out jogging today and since it's winter it's too dark outside at this time. My kids love their sleep they only use the gym in the afternoon or evenings.

Having 5 kids is no child's play. They can be very demanding. Khaya – 25 Linamandla – 19 Lonwabo – 16 Ntando – 15 and Lwanele – 12 my little tribe my people my pride and joy. Khaya has his own place Lina is a varsity student doing her second year who stays at the school res and the rest are high school brats. The shower always feels good after a hectic hour in the gym. I'm all dressed and ready for the day. Now I must get breakfast ready for the kids.

Kids: Morning mom (as they enter the kitchen taking their sits) Me: Morning babies

Lwanele: Mom you know it's Thursday today and I have Ballet after school. (She says with a big smile on her face. She absolutely loves ballet although she says she doesn't want to be professional dancer.)

Me: I know baby I'll drop you off at the studio and I'll ask Andile to pick you up I'll be in a meeting by the time you finish.

Lwanele: Ok mom that's fine.

Me: Ok guys finish up so we can get going otherwise we'll be late.

Lonwabo: Mom can we use the Raptor today and mom we also have rugby practice today. Me: No problem. Andile will also fetch guys.

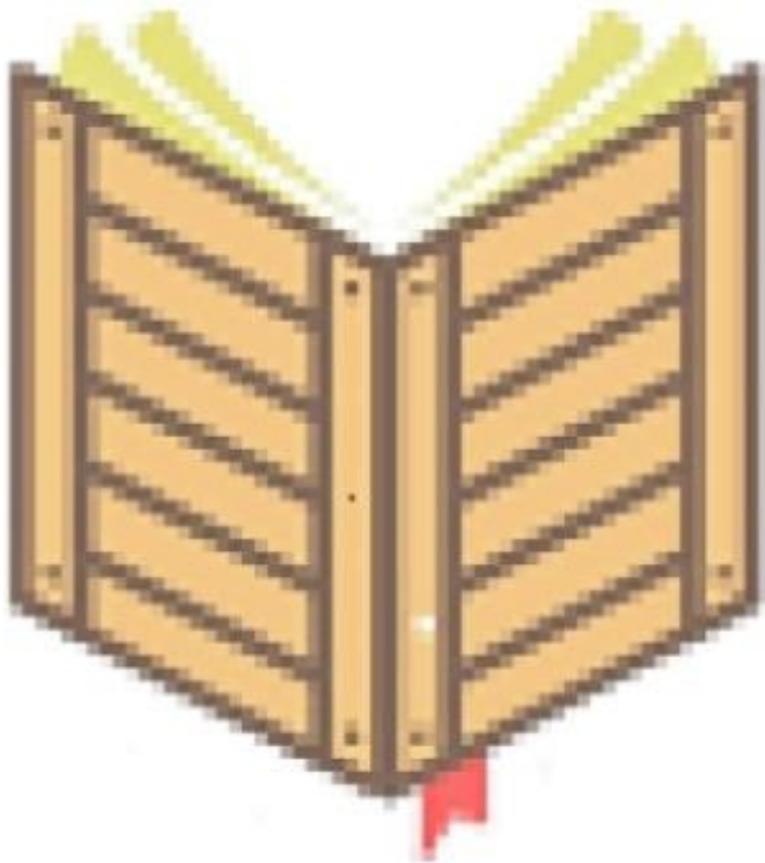
We finish up packing our things and we get going. I drop them at school and I rush to work. As I walk into my office putting my bags down Ibanathi rushes in with my cup of hot water and gives a run down of my meetings today and tells me I have an unexpected visitor waiting for me in the waiting area.

Me: Nathi who is that so in the morning?

Nathi: Baby Daddy. (that comes out as a whisper but loud enough for me to hear him)

Me: Nathi what the hell does he want I don't need his drama today I have a very busy day ahead of me.

Nathi: Just talk to him now your first meeting is in an hour.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I swear Nathi one of these day I'm going to kill Nkosikhona. Bring him in and he is not baby daddy he is just a sperm donor

Nathi laughs at me as he walks out of my office. This is really rubbing me up the wrong way all of a sudden now he wants to be a father where the hell was he all these years wasting my energy begging him to be a father to his kids and now he has the audacity to show up unannounced at my house and office. God please give strength.

NKOSIKHONA

I've been sitting waiting for Khanyi to show up. I just want her to allow me to do right by my kids and I probably don't have the right to call them my kids but they are Khanyi keeps saying it's too late now and it's not her decision to make. But these kids won't talk to me and she doesn't understand that I need her to help me reconnect with them. I know they are grown now I mean Khaya is 25 and working and he is doing quite well for himself and Lina is a second year varsity student. I've been keeping tabs on

them.

Ibanathi: She'll see you now you only 30 minutes she has a meeting to get to. Come this way Me: finally thanks.

Nathi: I wouldn't be so excited if I were you. I just look at him and nod I know exactly what he means. As we walk into the office she's sitting on the one sitter couch and she has a cup in her hands she's probably drinking hot lemon water.

Her: thanks Nathi can you bring a cup of coffee (she turns to look at me and asks if that's fine she knows I don't like coffee. I think she's just trying to get under my skin.)

Me: Juice will fine thanks (she turns to look at her assistant and nods)

Her: What do you want

Nkosikhona I am very busy

them. I just want to do right

by them.

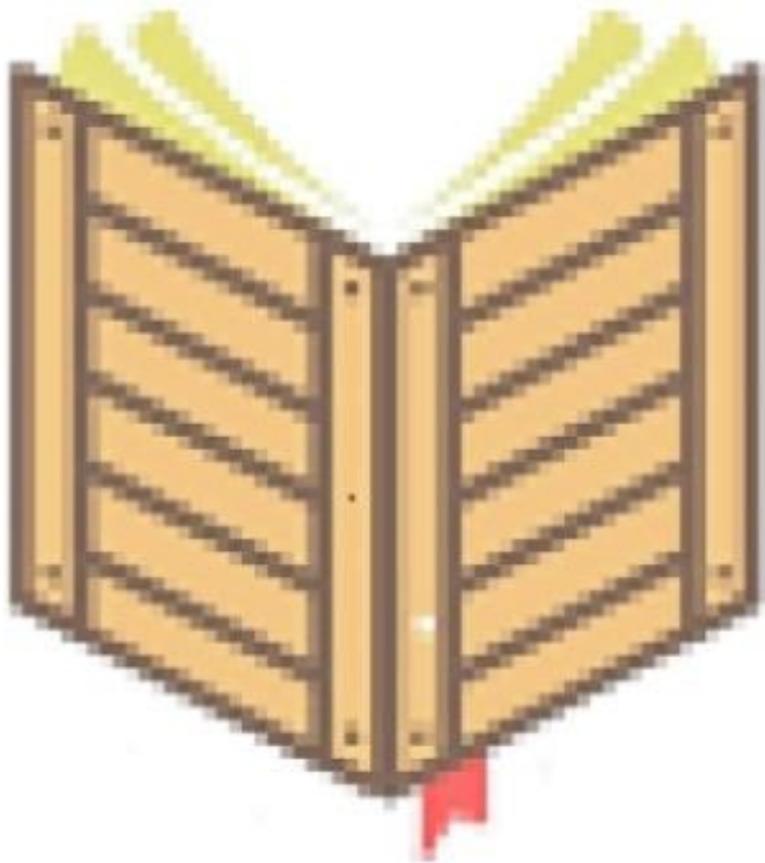
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: I told you before it is not up to me. If they don't want to talk to you I can't force them You made your bed now you lay in it. If there's nothing else please excuse me I have work to do.

Me: Khanyi I know you hate me and I know you'll never forgive for abandoning you guys but please help me out here.

Khanyi: Don't get it twisted bra. I don't hate you

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I don't have the energy to hate and I forgave you a long time ago. Like I said it's not up to me it's up to them. Now you are really pissing me off please leave before I do something I'll regret. Just leave please.

I stand up and walk to the door and she says to me "next time make an appointment otherwise I'll have you thrown out on second thought I'll just shoot you." And I know she means it. She has always been intimidating but now I think she's even more intimidating. I walk out of her office. She is right about one thing though that it is up to the kids they are adults now they can make their own decisions and I understand that she can only say so much to them. She is very protective of the kids and I know she'll do anything to protect them even from me.

KHANYISILE

Argh this man is just trying to ruin my day. Would I be so wrong if I kill him at least I won't have to deal with his irritating self. Argh I pick up my office phone and call Nathi. He walks in smiling ear to ear. This PA of mine is always in a jolly good mood and I like that sometimes it

rubs off on me. I'm actually great full for him. I really don't know how I would cope with all of this he just knows how to brighten my day.

Me: Nathi next time Nkosikhona comes here without an appoint get security to throw him out better yet tell them to shoot him.

Nathi: Sure thing Lady K. It's time to get ready for your meetings. After this meeting you have a meeting with Khaya regarding QM Architectural Company.

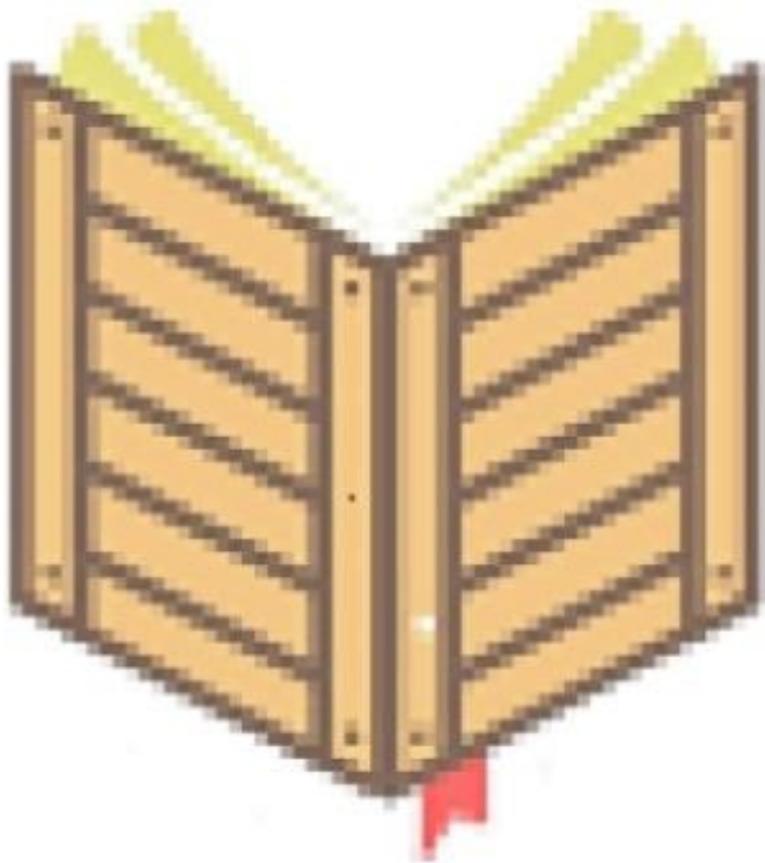
Me: Oh yes we have to discuss the deal and he also has to let them know they got the deal. Nathi: Come now your clients are waiting.

Me: Is everything set up

Nathi: Yes everything is set up and I got an energy drink I know you don't like them but you are going to need.

Me: Thanks Nathi. I say as we walk out of the office and I head to the boardroom. This is one those meetings I don't really like to handle because I have to deal with men who believe women should not be in business but the head of marketing is out of town this week. I really don't understand these men if this is how they feel why did they even agree to do business with me maybe they like

dealing with Vuyo I can't blame them he is good at what he does. He laughed when I told him that his crew wanted a meeting with him today and because he is not here I have to deal with these idiots. He must just come back.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

When I got to the boardroom they weren't happy to see me I had to tell them that Vuyo is out of town and they'll just have to suck it up and deal with me. I must say the meeting well though they are happy with everything we offered they made a few minor changes in the presentation that Vuyo gave them so he will have to deal with that.

And now I'm sitting here having my energy drink waiting for my son. I'm really proud of the person he has become he has come a long a way. The fact that his father didn't want to be a part of his life hit hard at some point in his life. He had to grow up and start taking responsibility for his life. He has come a long way and he is doing very well for himself. As he walks in

Him: Hey Ma (hugs me and kisses

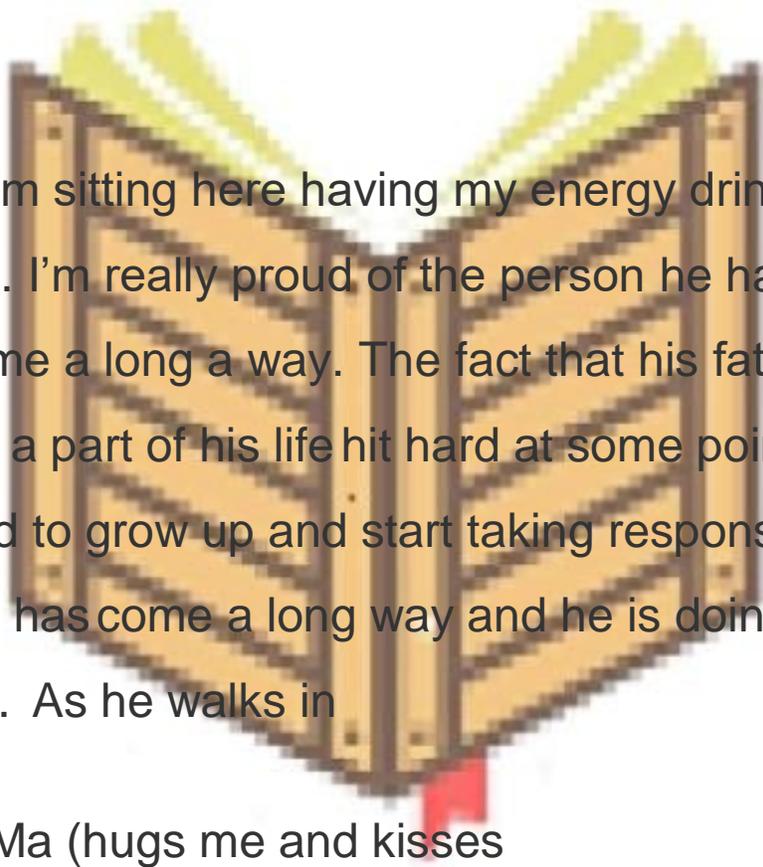
my cheek) How are you Me: I'm

good and how are you

Khaya: I'm good I'm good. (He

doesn't look good at all) Me:

What's wrong



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Nothing ma let's get started.

Me: Remember I know you start talking

Him: I broke up with my girlfriend I went to her place and found her in bed with another guy Me: She was never yours baby. Did you love her?

Him: I loved her but I know I was not in love with her and we've only been dating for year.

Me: And you never brought her home that alone should tell you something. Look sweetie the fact that you know you were not in love with her is something and she showed you who she really is before you were into deep. The one for you is out there you will meet her when you are ready for her and when she is ready for you. You should give me "Barbie's address she can't mess with you like and get away with it. Always remember that not every woman is like Barbie.

Him: Mom please stop it you are not going to do anything to her just leave her be that's what I'm doing. Anyway QM Architects what have you decided.

Me: We are not done with Barbie. I'm giving the deal to them. I liked the presentation and I love the building design. We go on about this deal the finances the specs of the building and everything and he also calls Mr Mthimkhulu

to tell him he got the deal. I love how my son gets excited about a new project he is very passionate about his work.

Me: Before you leave your father was here. (I see the expression on his face it's the one that says I'm not interested. )

Khaya: what does He want? As far as I am concerned I don't have a father.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I know baby and I understand how I feel and I am not about to tell you to speak to him if you don't want to. I do think that it's time you and Lina forgave him for you for your own sanity. I'm not saying be friends with him or anything just forgive and not hold a grudge because holding a grudge against him will destroy you and you've come too far. It destroyed you once don't let it destroy you again. I love you baby and I just want to see you happy.

Khaya: I hear you mom. Believe me I hear you. I love you too. By the way you should start dating. Me: I see you are changing the subject. (He does that when he doesn't want to continue with the topic at hand.) I just ignore him.

When we are done he leaves for his next meeting and I call Eddie to find Barbie for me. The day goes on meeting after meeting. By 6 I'm done and head home. I'm late today.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

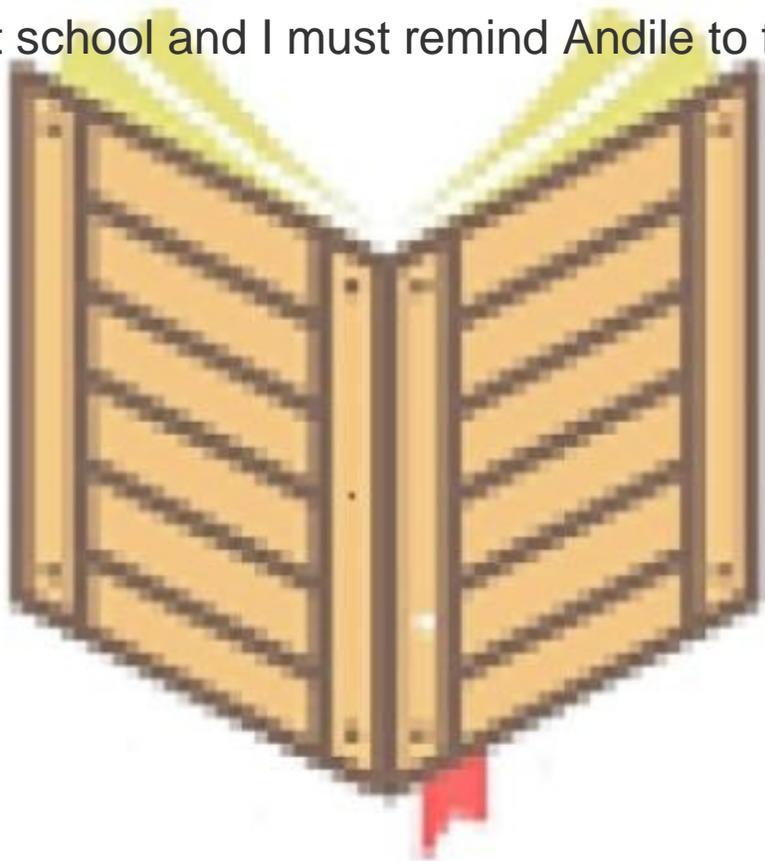
Chapter 4

4:30 AM Friday

## KHANYISILE

Today is a Friday meaning it's a short day for me. I usually go out on Fridays but today I don't know if I want to maybe I should I didn't go out last week. Well I don't really have friends in this city. My friends are back home in the Eastern Cape my two favourite crazy people. We see each other once or twice a month. Ncebakazi and Nothando I miss them so much that reminds I should plan our next get together this time it's my turn to host. I'm not going to gym today. Today I'm just doing paper work at the office I never arrange meetings on Fridays so that I can have enough time with myself and my kids during the weekend. Fridays are me time and Saturday and Sunday I spend with the kids unless they have plans of their own which doesn't happen very often. I think they prefer spending time with me on the weekends and sometimes I think it's because they don't really want me to be alone since I am not dating anyone. Lately they've been nagging me about that telling me that I should start dating again and a big part of me agrees with them. I do

need to date but I don't want to date for fun if I date then I want a proper relationship and I hope I meet someone who feels the same way. My babies come to the kitchen while I make myself something to eat and every Friday morning it's "Make your own breakfast" that's the Friday theme. When everyone is done eating we leave I drop them off at school and I must remind Andile to fetch my other my



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

daughter from the airport later on. She comes home every other weekend she is studying in UCT. As I walk into my office building I notice a car that looks familiar but I brush it off. As I settle into my office my PA comes with my regular cup of hot lemon water and the files I'll be working on. Nathi: Morning Lady K

Me: Morning Nathi how are you today?

Nathi: I'm good I'm very good. (He is smiling from ear to ear and I just giving the questioning look.) My crush finally asked me out so I have date with him tonight and I don't even know what I'm going to wear. Maybe I should go shopping after work do you mind coming with me.

Me: Wow finally it happened. You know I hate shopping with you you are always indecisive. You can use my stylist I'm sure he can help you. Oh! Before I forget please call The VG and tell them to prepare my usual table I'm going out tonight.

Nathi: Are you going

alone as usual Me:

Yes

Nathi: You are going to die alone with 10 dogs. You

should start dating you need to have that someone to share things with. You can't share everything with your kids and your kids won't give you sex which is exactly what you need right now. You can't hold on to the past. Not every man will hurt you like he did you to open up your heart to love again stop being afraid of love.

Trust Nathi to be straight about everything and he speaks the truth though. After that he leaves my office and I get on with my work trying very hard not to think about everything that Nathi said. Let me call my daughter.

Linamandla: hi mom

Me: Hey baby what time is your flight?

Lina: 11:30 my love.

Me: Ok baby. Andile will pick you up from the airport ok. Khaya is busy today he can't do it. Lina: that's ok mom. See you soon. I love you.

Me: I love you too.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

After that call I carry on with my day finishing my paper.

Andile fetched my daughter and dropped her off at home.

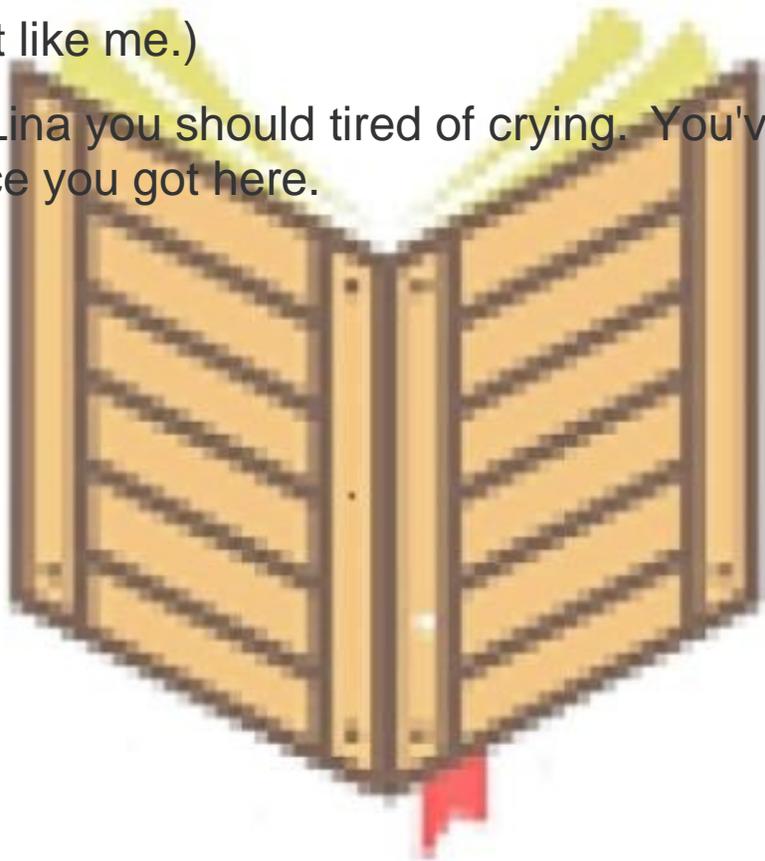
And it's time for me to go home. What am I going to wear tonight. When I get home the kids have cooked dinner.

Mam' Mavis our helper has the weekend off.

Me: Hey guys. (Linamandla comes running to me hugs me so tight. How I've missed her. My sweet angel. How are you baby how was your flight

Lina: I'm good mom I missed you guys so much. (She's crying. Tears of joy. She is just like me both my are cry babies just like me.)

Lwanele: Lina you should tired of crying. You've been crying since you got here.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lonwabo: oh please  
you are just like her.

Ntando: they take after  
mom

Me: hey leave my girls alone.

Lonwabo: what are you wearing tonight do you even have a  
date?

Ntando: she doesn't know what to wear and she doesn't  
have a date. She is going alone as usual. Lina: mama  
hayibo your life can't always be about us. You need start  
dating and find that someone special. I know it's hard  
mama but you have to try. It's bad enough that you only  
see aunt Ncesh and aunt Thando once a month.

Lwanele: that's exactly what we've been telling.

Ntando: look mom we are growing and we are leaving the  
nest one by one we just don't want you to lonely we want  
you to be happy.

Me: I hear you guys. (When did they get so wise they are  
growing up too fast)

Lina: come let's get you ready for your nigh out. Maybe  
you'll meet someone special tonight.

They choose my outfit very simple. White top blue jeans  
and brown timberland boots with my brown coat. They tell  
to take a car that's more feminine. So I take my

KiaOptima. Khaya arrives saying he's going to take them to their uncle's house. They are spending the weekend there. We'll have lunch together tomorrow.

## QHAWELOMZI

Today is a bit busy at the office. Fridays are always busy here trying to finalise everything we've done for the week so that the work is not carried over to the following week. That's the working system we have here and it actually works for us. I'm going to need a cold one after all this work maybe I should go out tonight. Actually I haven't been out in a while I've been so busy with work and the kid's school activities were keeping me busy also. I should call Bandile and Lwazi to join me we haven't seen each other in a while. My PA walks in as I finish the call with Bandile just to tell me she is leaving I didn't realise it was time to go home already. As she leaves I pack up my staff and leave. The kids are home I thought their mom was fetching them.

Me: hey

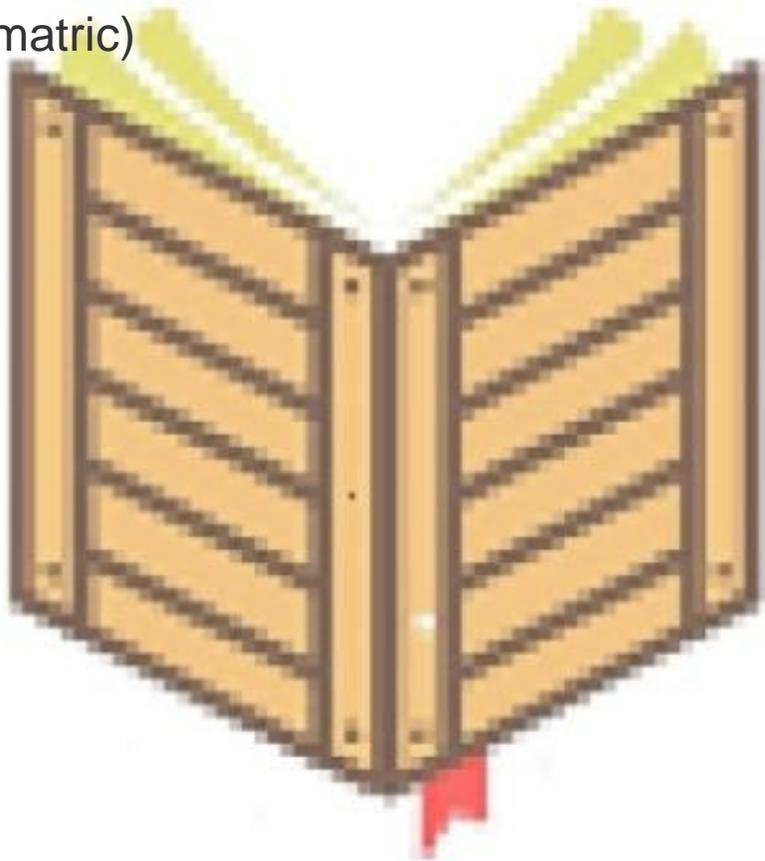
guys

Them;

Hi dad

Me: I thought your mom was fetching you guys for the weekend.

Sibahle: She just called saying she is on her way she is running late. (She is the second born 17 years old and doing her matric)



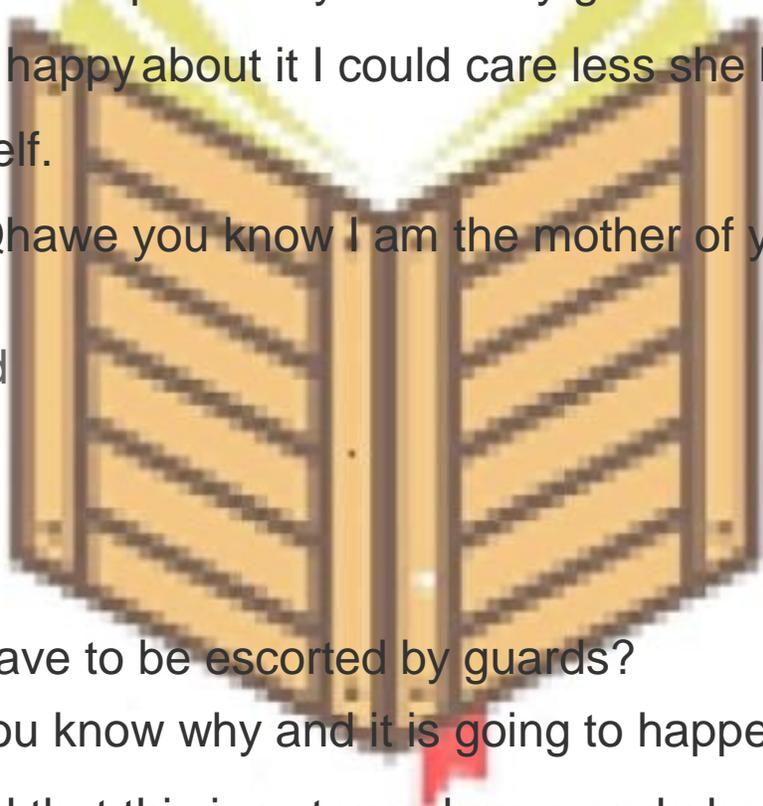
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Oh ok. Did you guys eat anything?

Banele: no mom said she would take us out for dinner. I know the twins are not happy about this but they just have to suck it up. The twins Banele and Bandile -22 doing their final year at varsity Bandile was named after my friend. Just as I was about to go to my room their mom walked in accompanied by one of my guards and she didn't look happy about it I could care less she brought it upon herself.

Anelisa: Qhawe you know I am the mother of your kids right

Sponsored



why do I have to be escorted by guards?

Qhawe: You know why and it is going to happen until you understand that this is not your house and when you come here you will show some respect. I think the kids are ready for you.

Kids: bye dad we'll see you Sunday.

Qhawe: bye guys. I'll come

fetch you on Sunday Anelisa:

You don't have to I'll bring

them back. Qhawe: that's fine. Bye

As they leave I go to my room to freshen up Bandile and Lwazi will be here shortly. I actually feel sorry for my kids this is going to be a long weekend for them but I just hope they try to make things work with their mom at least this is the start. Oh gosh what am I going to wear let's see blue jeans white shirt and my tan boots that should do. Bandile is here already looking fly telling Lwazi can't make it.

Bandile: you look good man can't remember the last time I saw you without a suit. Me: it actually feels great to be in my casual clothes. So where are we going tonight?

Bandile: We are going to The VG it's a nice place. It has a nice chilled out vibe just exactly what we need.

Me: I've heard about it I haven't been there yet let's get going you are driving.

Bandile is right this place is nice very chilled out the music is not too loud you can actually hold a conversation with someone with having to speak loudly. This is awesome there's an area with couches the

chairs for the dinner tables look so comfortable this place has that feel at home atmosphere to it. As I admire I notice the stairs and there's a sign saying "The club" wow I'm amazed. I wonder who owns this place. Bandile taps me on my shoulder bringing me out of my thoughts showing me our table.

Me: is there also a club here I saw the sign by the stairs I mean there's no loud music here



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Bandile: Yep there is the whole club floor is sound proofed that's why you can't hear the music from upstairs.

Me: I see. As the waitress puts our food on the table I notice a familiar face standing at the bar talking to someone. I didn't see her at them gym today. This woman looks beautiful and sexy without even trying I mean right now what she is wearing it's simple nothing fancy just blue jeans and a white shirt and she looks absolutely sexy.

Bandile: hey Qhawe who are you looking at I've been calling you man.

(When I'm about to answer he turns to look at what I'm looking at.) Oh that's Khanyi. Me: You know her?

Bandile: No man I don't I know someone who knows her I always see her at the gym. You like her don't you wait is she the one you've been telling me about

Me: yeah man she is. I'll be back (I stood up before he could say anything and walked towards this lady. I get to her just as she finishes the conversation with this guy.

Me: Hi I'm Qhawelomzi

Her: Hi what can I do you Qhawelomzi? (She hasn't looked at me yet)

Me: You could start by telling me your name I would love to know the woman who has the same taste in cars as I do in cars. (She looks up and she's shocked I can tell)

Her: Oh shit it's you \*she just looks at me with a blank face\* I'm Khanyisile I move close to her she smells good. I like her perfume very nice.

Her: Don't ever lean on my car like that I find it disrespectful. \*still looking at me with a blank face. Normally people get intimidated but she's not instead I find her intimidating. I am a dominant male and right now she doesn't seem intimidated she's making me weak.

Me: it won't happen again. I am sorry.

Her: good. If there's nothing else please excuse me.

Me: Actually there is your number otherwise I'll follow you around like a lost puppy

The expression on her face is priceless she looks at me and sees that I am dead serious. She holds out her hand I'm guessing she wants my phone so I give it to her and

CHAPTER 5  
saves her number. I take a few steps towards her closing

the space between us her reaction is something I didn't imagine. I just thank her and kiss her forehead. She smells really good. I walk away and head to the club I saw

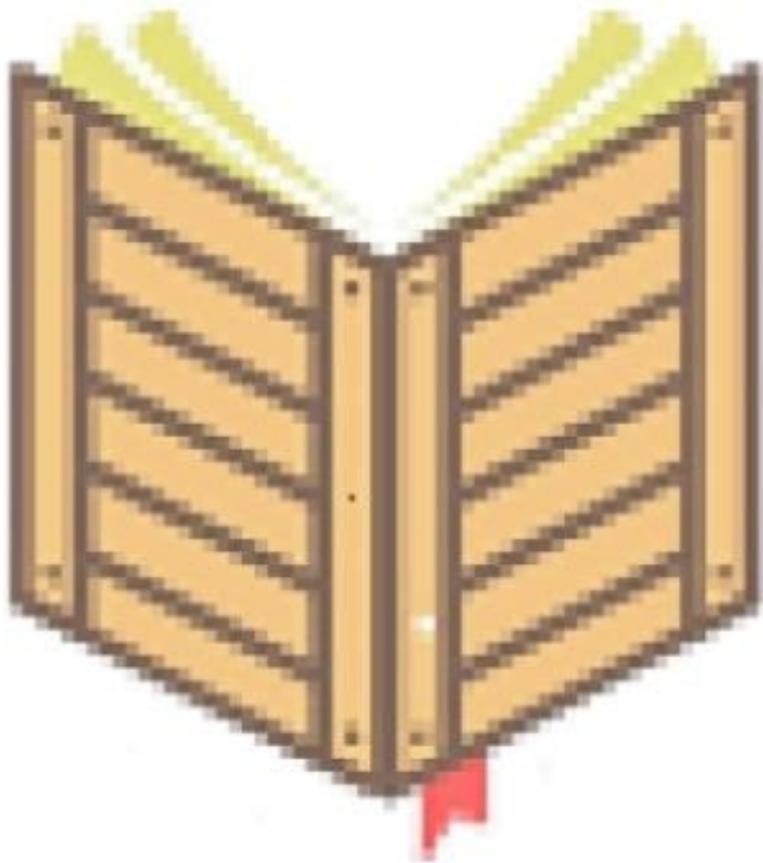
Bandile going that way.

INSERT

T 5

KHANY

ISILE



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Coming out tonight was a good idea it actually feels good even though this manager thinks I'm here to work. I don't understand this guy. I mean yes I own the place but tonight I'm just here to

chill. Maybe I should consider hiring someone who will manage the club and he just manages the restaurant. Ever since I added the club here he's not coping with the work load. He won't admit it but I can see it I should have this conversation with him on Monday.

I never expected to see him here and I've never seen him here. He is intimidating though I was intimidated and I could feel his dominance but he was going easy on me. I have a very submissive personality but I couldn't allow him to see that I'm sure he thought I was intimidating just like everyone else but I think I gave myself away when he got close to me too close for comfort he smelled good his cologne was not too much it was just right he is very tall brown eyes dark complexion goodness I'm getting goose bumps thinking about him argh. At least he apologised I don't know if I'm ready for this yes I gave him my number well only because he threatened to follow me around and

I'm not up for that. I really don't know if I'm ready for this dating game. Ok let me not over think it I'm here to relax and enjoy myself not to stress. Shit I need another bottle of wine. I should go up to the club and chill there.

My ex-husband never wanted me to go out on own especially after I lost my job.

.....FLASHBACK.....

Me: do you mind if I go out with Ncesh and Thando tonight?

Him: Why would I let you do that? Even if I do who is going to pay your drinks and inamali yodlala mna.(I don't have money play with.) I won't give you money so that you can gallivanting.

Me: it's not like you give me money to do anything anyway.

Him: You are not going period. You can tell your boyfriend you are not coming.

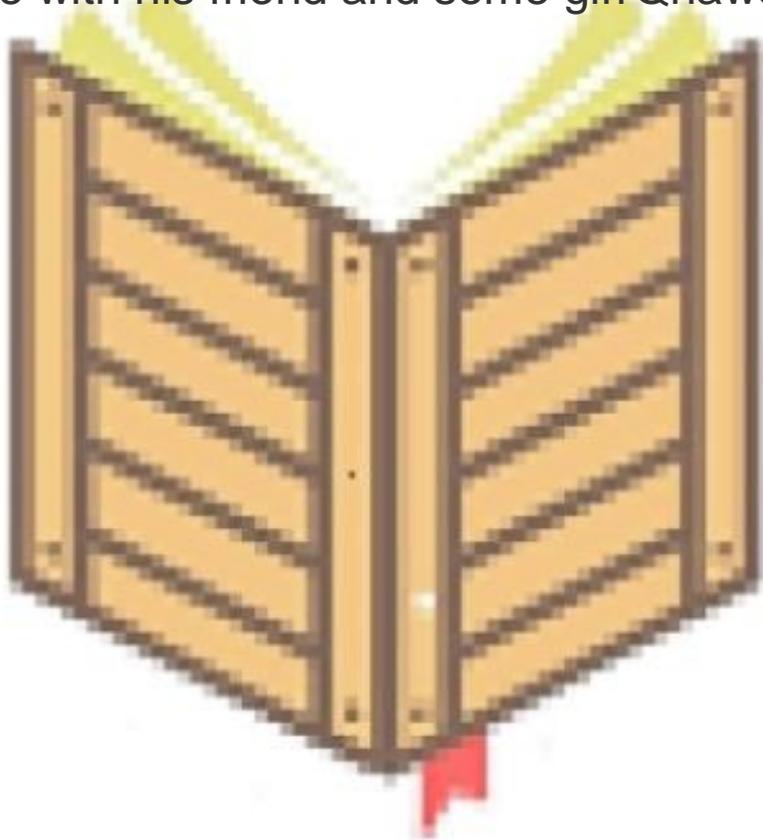
Me: Why is it that you always think I'm cheating on you.

Maybe I should then at least when you accuse me of doing I'll know that I'm actually doing it I don't think it would be a bad idea since my so called husband already has a mistress.

Him: Oh please who want you you are not even that pretty and you are not working.

.....  
....END OF  
FLASHBACK.....  
.....

I'm sitting at my usual spot and I see him coming towards me with his friend and some girl  
Qhawe: Hey  
Me: Hi



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: do you mind if we join you?

Me: Sure \*what am I doing I came here to chill on my own oh gosh. Khanyi just relax you never know you might just have fun just chill. I think to myself then I remember Lina's words "Mom when someone asks to join you at your table just let them and have a conversation with them you don't have to panic people don't bite." I just laugh at the thought.

Qhawe: This is my friend Bandile and his lady friend is Nomsa and guys this is Khanyi Me: Nice to meet you guys.

Qhawe: I'll be back I need to order our drinks.

Me: You don't have to there are waiters here you can wait there's one coming to bring my order you can place your order with him

Qhawe: You seem to know your way around here you must be a regular (he says smiling) Me: Actually I am a regular. I like the vibe it's very chilled

Bandile: Absolutely especially downstairs. Even up here it's chilled music not too loud. Whoever owns this place had me in mind when they created this place. (I look at him and smile so they have no idea who owns this place.

Maybe I should burst their bubble but then again showing off is not really my thing.)

Qhawe: it's actually my first time here so they have no idea who owns this place. Maybe I should burst their bubble but then again showing off is not really my thing.)

Qhawe: it's actually my first time here and I just decided I'm going to be a regular.

The waiter comes and gives me my order and takes their order and this Nomsa girl orders one of the very expensive cocktails on the menu and I notice Bandile looking at her

Bandile: Who is going to pay for that cocktail

Nomsa: I thought you are paying

Bandile: I can't afford that it's too expensive

Nomsa: But you just ordered expensive whisky for you and your friend.

Bandile: Because we can afford it. Listen if you wouldn't buy this cocktail with your own money then don't order it.

Order something you would normally buy for yourself and I'll gladly pay for it.

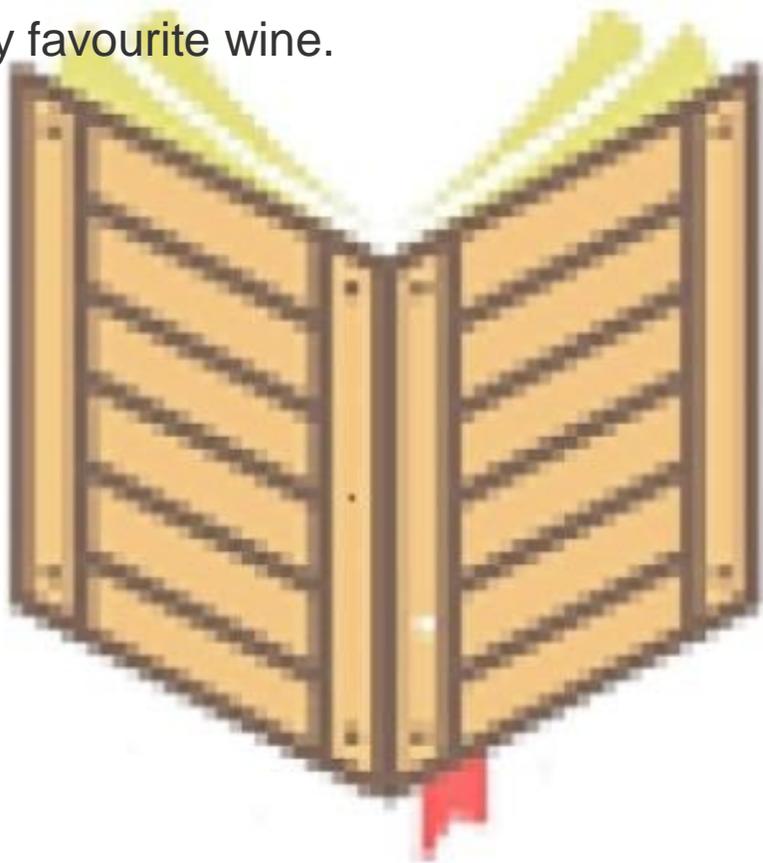
I couldn't help myself I just laughed and Qhawe joined in.

She looked at me looking very pissed and she just stood

up and left while we were still laughing. These girls come here thinking they can hustle the men that come here things didn't go her way today.

Qhawe: maybe she's gone to find a sucker that will buy her the cocktail. I see you have good taste in wine. (he says that looking at me)

Me: It's my favourite wine.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Bandile: that's interesting (he says that raising an eyebrow at Qhawe.) Seems like you guys have a lot more in common than just cars.

Right now I am confused but I don't dwell on his statement. It's funny how relaxed I am with these guys I think it's the wine. The conversation is just flowing and surprisingly enough none of us spoke about work. The conversation is just general. We didn't even talk that much about our personal lives. Bandile is a very laid back person he smiles and laughs a lot I can't say the same about Qhawe. I stand to go out to the balcony I grab my coat and my glass of wine. I find myself a sit and light my joint. Just as I light it up Qhawe joins me telling me Bandile left with a girl.

Me: why didn't you leave with him I thought you guys came together. I ask passing him the joint he looks at me amazed but he takes it.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: I still wanted to spend more time with you and make sure you get home safe.

Me: You don't have to worry about me I don't drive when I've been drinking my driver is already on his way so I'll definitely get home safely. And you how are you getting

home we can drop you off if you don't mind. (Ok Khanyi you are talking too much now. I blame the wine)

Qhawe: I was going to call an uber but I can't refuse your offer. In fact you can tell your driver not come and I'll drive you home.

I look at him and he has that look that says I'm not taking no for an answer. I

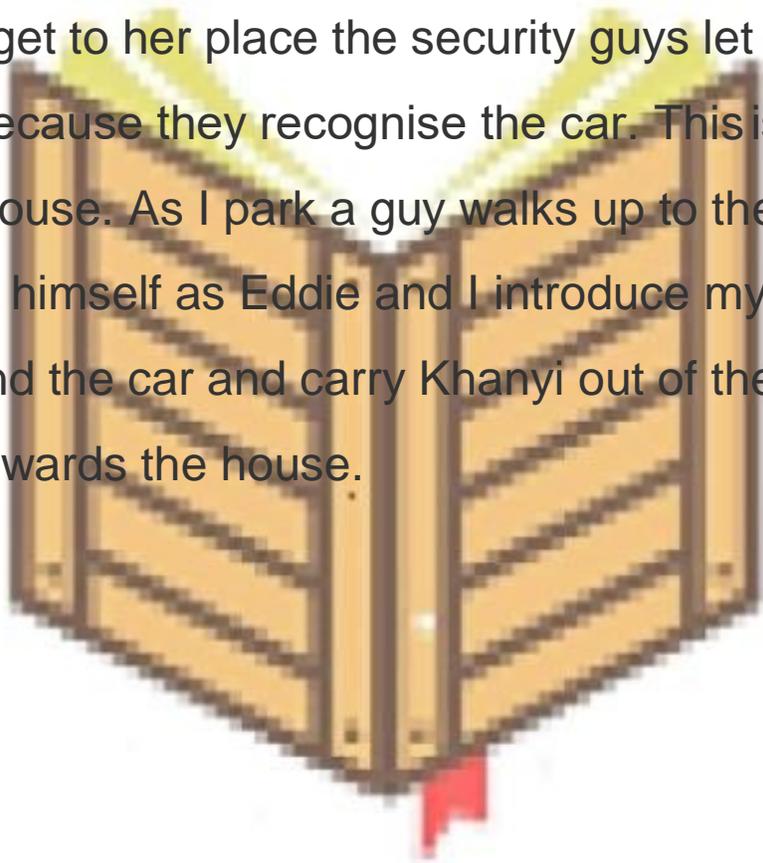
don't have the energy to argue with him before I can reply he moves closer to me and kisses my forehead. Ok I'm letting him drive me home. This is why I hate drinking in public alcohol makes me all mushy and soft inside and forehead kisses are one of my weaknesses.

QHAWELOMZI

I think her being tipsy is making things easy for me. She is very submissive tonight. She takes her phone calls the driver and tells him not to come she is good. I think the guy was very sceptical she kept reassuring him. After she finishes her glass and I finish mine she grabs her bag and we

leave. As we leave I notice that we are dressed the same way I didn't notice that earlier I'm sure she didn't either we

actually took a lot of pictures with my phone and Bandile's phone I must remember to send them to her. When we get to the car she gives me the car keys when we are in she fiddles with the GPS and tells me the GPS will direct me to her house and when we get there someone will drive me home. I just nod and drive off and she quickly dozed off. When we get to her place the security guys let me in I think it's because they recognise the car. This is a beautiful house. As I park a guy walks up to the car introduces himself as Eddie and I introduce myself too. I walk around the car and carry Khanyi out of the car and we walk towards the house.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Eddie: Looks like the lady of the house had a lot of fun tonight did she smoke a joint?

Me: Yeah she did have fun the way you say it though sounds like it's not something she does very often and yes she smoked a joint we both did.

Eddie: next time don't let her smoke in public it always knocks her out and yes she doesn't do it very often. (He Opens a door to beautiful bedroom and it's hers there's a black and white picture of her naked with a red guitar between her legs hiding her pussy and boobs above the bed. I wonder why Eddie would let me in here. It's a very beautiful picture very sexy too. Eddie walks in and gives a blanket to cover her with it.)

Eddie: She must like and trust you to actually let you bring her home. Me: Why do you say that?

Eddie: She doesn't trust easily. She would rather have us drive her home than a stranger. Me: What do you mean by "us"

Eddie: Her security team and her son. (I wonder happened to her that she would need a security team around her. You can also tell that these guys are highly trained.) Look

man I don't feel like driving so you can drive yourself home just leave your address and I'll send someone to fetch the car from you.

Me: No problem. (I give him my address and my number. He walks me out of the house and I drive off.)

She looked peaceful as she slept. I'm just wondering what happened to this woman. Eddie said a few things that just make me wonder. This car smells like her. I'm asking her out for dinner tomorrow. If we hit off I wonder if she'll be able to handle me but I think she can. I get home I'm tired I just want to sleep. Bandile calls just to check if I got home safe and if Khanyi is with me.

Me: I'm home safe. I used her car. I dropped her off and one of the security guys said they'll fetch the car tomorrow.

Bandile: she has a

security detail? Me:

yeah man she does

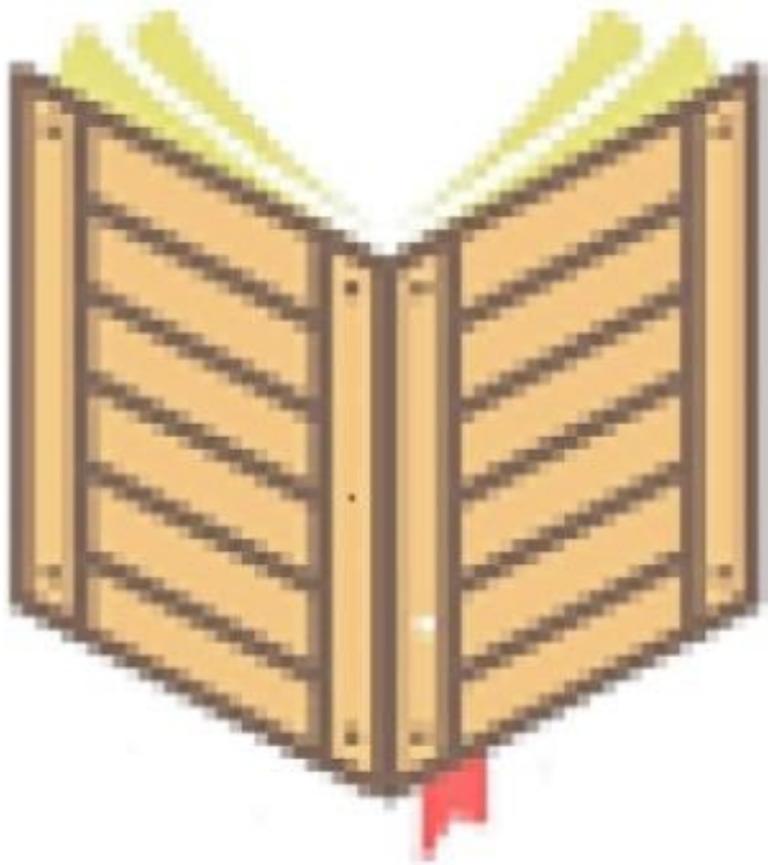
Bandile: You are going to have a tough time with bro (he says that laughing.) I just brush him off and hang up.

I'll talk to him in the morning

Saturday

KHANYI

SILE



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Oh gosh my head. Shit I slept in my clothes. I know Qhawe drove me but who put me in bed maybe Eddie did. I need to get to my brother's place actually what is it? 10:30 ok I still have time. Qhawe must think I'm some drunk. The minute I stepped into the car I just slept. Maybe I should ask him out for coffee next week just to make it up to him. As I finish getting dressed I hear my phone beeping yhooo that's a lot of messages. I'll check when I'm done getting

ready. I'm interrupted by a knock on my door. It's Eddie with pain killers and water.

Me: You know you are supposed to be off today. Andile is here and Jason is also here. Your wife is going to hate me. She's going to think I'm over working you.

(He looks at me and just laughs.)

Eddie: She's actually down stairs she wants to say hi. We are on our way to the mall but I just thought let me pass by here and see if you are ok.

Me: I'm ok Eddie. The other guys don't baby me the way you do.

Eddie: And they know why. You really like this Qhawe guy to actually let him bring you home. Oh by the way he saw that. (He says with smug on his face pointing at the picture of me naked.)

Me: Eddie why did you allow him up here?

Eddie: He carried you from the car and he didn't want to let go so I just let me. Plus he just reminded me of how I am

with my wife. Very protective and wanting to make sure she is ok. That's how he was with you last night.

Me: is that so. (I brush off what he just said) Let's go downstairs so that I can see Elsa. I blame everything that happened last night on the wine. I shouldn't have drunk so much wine. Come to think of it I had a great time last night. I actually had fun.

Elsa: Khanyi (she says while hugging me.) I'm glad to see you smile which means you really had a good time last night. Yes I know my dear husband told me everything. You know how couples like gossiping. (she laughs)

Me: Hi Elsa yes I did have a good time. It was really fun. The guys I was with were not really strangers I always see them at the gym.

Eddie: So Qhawe is the irritating idiot from the gym

Me: Yes he is. Elsa it's really good to see you I haven't seen you in a while. I should make time and visit.

Elsa: it's alright my dear I understand that you are busy and I know you haven't forgotten about me. I'm glad we came by today.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I'm glad too. But now I have to rush to my brother's house we are having lunch with the kids.

Elsa: I hope to see you soon darling. Have fun with the little ones. Come Eddie let's go. Eddie: I'll see you Monday Khanyi. Oh before I forget please send someone to fetch your car from Qhawe's house the address is in my office I told him to drive himself last night I also needed to get home to my wife.

Me: ok I'll do that. Thanks Eddie.

We all leave at the same time. Andile is coming with me. I'm not in the mood to drive. BANDILE

I wake up in one of the guest the bedrooms there's a girl next to me. She's beautiful I wonder maybe I should keep her around for a while no I can't these girls always get attached that's not what I need right now. At some point in my life I do need to settle down but I haven't found that special person. My two sons are all grown up and they don't live with me anymore this house is very empty without them it doesn't feel like a home anymore. Little miss here interrupts my

thoughts as she wakes up and she asks for the bathroom when she comes back she doesn't say anything she just kisses me and I can feel my dick waking up i move my lips to her neck down to her boobs my hands grabbing her ass I lift her a bit and insert myself in her and she moans her moans are nothing special it's something I'm used but she is

wet for me very wet and warm. She tries to move a little so that she fit all me in her when I'm finally in she rides me bouncing up and down she then settles and moves in circles it feels good she is moaning like crazy. I gently hold her tight to stop her from moving and gently get off me and I tell her to be on all fours. She bends over for me I start fingering her while she is bend over with two finger moving in and of her I use my other hand to play with her clit rubbing it slowly I stop as she tells she is about to cum and push myself in her gently pounding her deep. I reposition her bend her further down gently holding her head down and my other holding her waist so that she doesn't move. I fuck her hard and deep and I can hear from how she is moaning she is about to cum I move deeper and faster until she cums. As I feel that I'm about to cum I pull out and cum all over her ass.

My phone rings and it's Lwazi she gets up and goes to the bathroom I answer my phone as I leave the room going to my bedroom.

Lwazi: hey man what are you

up to? Bandile: I'm about to

shower man what's up

Lwazi: I wanted us to meet maybe have a little I spoke to

Qhawe he is cool with it we are going to his place.

Bandile: Alright then. I'll see you in an hour.

Lwazi: Cool man. Later then.  
Just as I finish getting ready hear  
her voice calling me Me: I'm in  
here

Her: this is a nice room. Why didn't we sleep in here.

Me: Only the woman I make my wife  
will sleep in this bed Her: I see.

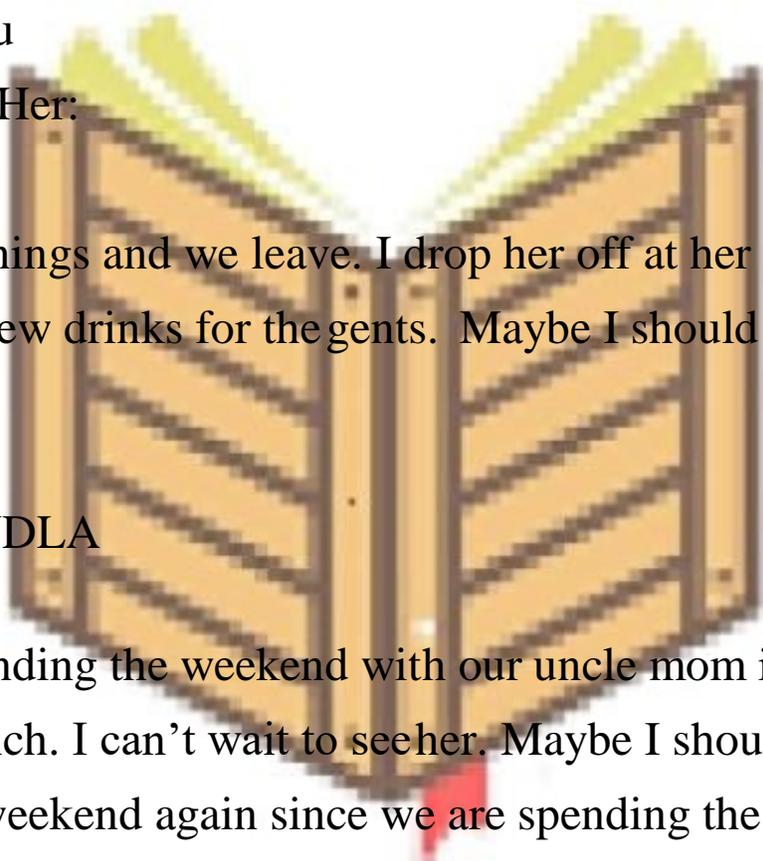
Me: are you  
ready to go Her:

Yes I am.

I grab my things and we leave. I drop her off at her place before  
I go buy a few drinks for the gents. Maybe I should buy more  
meat too.

LINAMANDLA

We are spending the weekend with our uncle mom is coming  
over for lunch. I can't wait to see her. Maybe I should come  
back next weekend again since we are spending the weekend  
with uncle Lu. We can spend next weekend with mom. I hope  
she had a good time last night she  
really needs it and deserves to be happy after everything she's  
been through. She called the other day telling me that my father  
wants to see us me and Khaya. I asked her why now she just  
said she doesn't know. One thing I appreciate about mom in this  
situation she is not forcing us to talk to him or have any kind of



NOVELSGURU.COM

relationship with him. She is leaving the decision making up to us.

My brother is really not handling this well he is angry and it's only mom and my little sister that can keep him calm. My little sister walks in the kitchen

Lwanele: hey Lina

Me: Hey baby sis what's up

Lwanele: Do you think mom had a good time night

Me: I hope she did. (Lwanele is not her usual self I

wonder what's going on) Lwanele: Lina can I ask you something

Me: yes you can baby

Lwanele: why is it our dad's don't want us?

I'm shocked with Lwanele's question I didn't expect it and I don't know how to answer it it's same question I had years ago but I never asked mom. Khaya and I we have our own father and my mom's ex-husband is the father to my three little siblings. Oh Gosh where is mom when I need her. I just move closer to her and hug her she's not crying but I can tell she is hurting. I need to call mom she needs to get here fast. Speak of the devil she walks in on us hugging

Mom: and then what's going on what happened  
Lwanele just runs to her and hugs her and starts  
crying I'm also in tears now. Mom: guys what's  
wrong

I look and mom and you can't miss the concern in her face. I tell  
her everything and she sighs very deeply she sits Lwanele on the  
kitchen counter and makes me sit on of the high chairs in the  
kitchen. Uncle Lu walks in as she is about to speak to us.

Uncle Lu: hey what's going on?

Mom: Lungelo please sit down. You girls sometimes I wish  
you didn't care so much about these men. I want you to listen to  
me and listen good. You guys did nothing to your fathers they  
are the ones who are idiots the ones who don't realise how  
special you are. You should never think that they are not in your  
lives because of you. They are not a part of your lives because  
of their own stupidity and I don't want you guys holding any  
grudges against them because that will drive you crazy.

Khaya: Mom is right look what happened to me what the anger  
I had inside did to me I've decided to forgive you guys should  
too.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Uncle Lu: Your brother is a perfect example of what happens  
when you hold to anger for a longtime. So please my babies  
don't do this to yourselves. They don't deserve to have crying  
over them.

Mom: And that doesn't mean you should hate all men just

because two idiots couldn't man up. Now wipe your tears so that we can prepare salads and guys are braai some meet we can enjoy the afternoon together.

Me: Only if you tell us about last night.

Mom: fine I'll tell you when we are done with everything..

So we prepare everything we eat while mom tells us all about last night. She really did have a good time. We wanted to see a picture of this guy but she didn't have one. The afternoon was great just family mom will only leave later in the evening.

QHAWELOMZI

Lwazi is here already he's making pap for the mini braai we are having and I'm looking at the pictures from last night. This lady is really making weak. Lwazi grabs my phone while contemplating if I should call her.

Lwazi: Is this her

Me: yeah man that's her



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lwazi: so you guys were on a date last night?

Me: No man it was just a pure coincidence that she was there and we were there and we ended chilling together.

Lwazi: Looks like I missed out on a good time

Me: You did man. This woman is really something else. I keep wondering if I should call her

Bandile: You should call her (he says as he walks in with a few beers and more meat.)

Lwazi: Man you've never had trouble with a girl. They throw themselves at you

Me: that's the thing Lwazi she is not throwing herself at me she's making me chase her she's making me hunt her and it's thrilling.

Bandile: let's watch and see how this chase is going to end. I bet that you are going to wife her. Lwazi: You think so?

Bandile: Ndoda this lady was dressed like him yesterday look at the pictures. She drinks the same wine as he does how many ladies do you know that he has met drink that wine she has the same taste in cars as him and that lady is as submissive as they come and she will submit to Qhawe here soon. She might be broken but she feels something for you she might not be sure just yet. I bet my life that if you call her now and ask her out on a date she'll say yes she's not the type that plays hard to get.

Lwazi: I like it when a woman knows what she wants and Qhawe it sounds like your woman knows what she wants.

Me: Bandile how do you know all this when did you become expert on women (we all laugh) Bandile: I promise you that

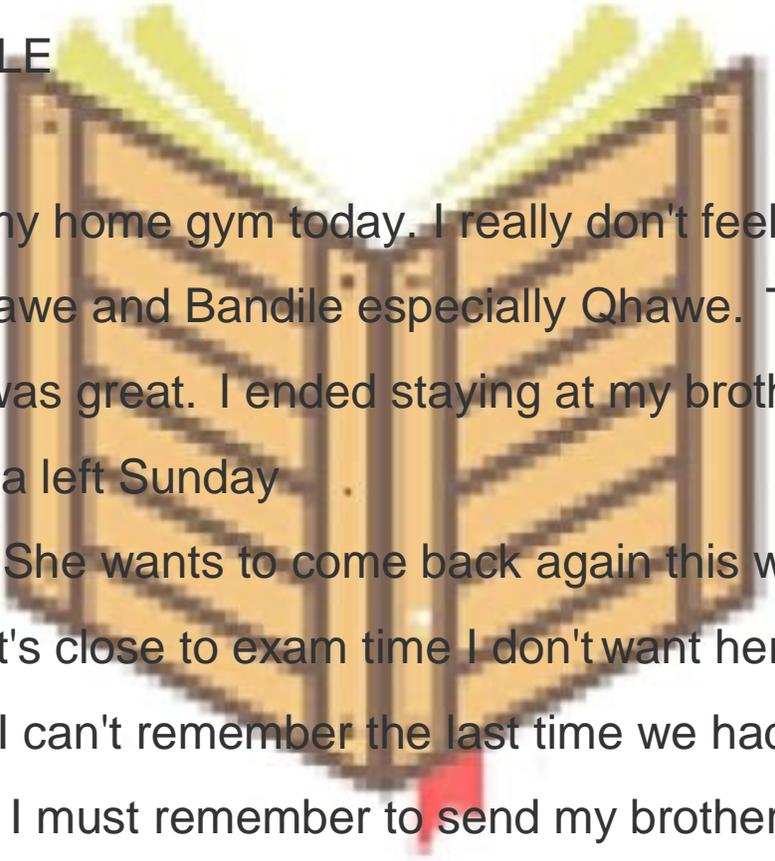
woman is yours.

Me: You are definitely right about that.

We carry on with our braai just relaxing enjoying the day. The guys have left already not before they helped me clean up. Since the kids are not here this weekend I gave mam' Nkosi the weekend off.

## CHAPTER 7

### KHANYISILE



I'm using my home gym today. I really don't feel like seeing Qhawe and Bandile especially Qhawe. The weekend was great. I ended staying at my brother's house. Lina left Sunday afternoon. She wants to come back again this weekend but we'll see. It's close to exam time I don't want her travelling too much. I can't remember the last time we had such a good time. I must remember to send my brother and his wife a bottle of wine just to say thank. The way life happens it

has taught to appreciate those who are good to and I must be good to them as well. Forget about those who speak negative things because people we'll always have something to say be it it's positive or negative. You have just got to stand your ground stand up for what you believe in.

Maybe everyone is right. I should just let this Qhawe situation play itself out i'm a bit scared I don't want to lie I would love to go on a proper date with him he seems like a fun guy. Oh my goodness I forgot to send Jason to fetch my car from Qhawe's place. I'll send him later.

After I'm done with my session I bath and get myself ready for work. I should wear my navy pant suit with the powder blue shirt and my navy heels and my coat. I'm done I grab my things go to the kitchen to start on breakfast but Mam' Mavis has beat me to it. So I grab a sit at the dining table as the kids walk in and ready for school. Their brother walks in to he slept here last night. Which reminds me I'm sure Eddie has found Barbie by now but then the weekend was hectic. We have breakfast talking about schedules for the day. Mondays are always busy for me. When we are done we leave and Khaya is taking the kids to school for

me.

When I get to the office Ibanathi is ready for me.

Ibanathi: Morning here's your water. As you know you have meetings with the various departments here. Vuyo is back so your first meeting is with him you need to update him since he wasn't here the whole of last. Here are the files for the meeting. And then you have a meeting with Khaya and QM Architecture remember you gave them the project for the new building and here are the notes you prepared for the meeting and I'll just the departments are ready you today. So tell me how was your weekend?

Me: it was good I really enjoyed it and I saw Mr gym at the VG he was there with his friend and we ended up having fun together. How was yours how was the date and who is this crush of yours? Ibanathi: the weekend was great the date was so much fun and he's name is Andile Andile Mthethwa.

My jaw drops that's my Andile my personal body guard. I know he's gay but I never thought he wanted Nathi.

Every time he came here he never showed any emotions towards Nathi. Oh wow. Me: that's my Andile (I say still obviously shocked.)

Ibanathi: I know. It's time to get to work. Vuyo is ready for you in boardroom on and then Khaya in same boardroom immediately after the meeting with Vuyo. I take all my files I don't think I'll spend time in my office today. I update Vuyo with everything and what he needs to do. As soon as we are done Khaya walks in followed by Qhawe.

Khaya: Hey ma

Me: Hey baby (I see shock is Qhawe's face and I'm sure he sees the same on my face.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khaya: mom please not in front of my associate. Qhawe meet my mom Khanyisile Sondlo mom this is Qhawelomzi Mtimkhulu the genius behind my new building.

(Right now I'm frozen I don't know what to say no it can't be I'm dreaming)

Khaya: mom are you ok you look like you've seen a ghost. Wait a minute you are the same Qhawe she met on Friday? (Qhawe looks at him and he just nods. Right now Qhawe can see that he has an effect on me I just confirmed it with my behaviour right now.)

Qhawe: nice to finally meet you. I really didn't know you were the Miss Sondlo I was suppose to me and we never told each other our last names. Khaya talks about you all the time.

Me: Please excuse me I need the bathroom (I walked out Sponsored

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

how am I suppose to work with him almost everyday. Oh shit shit. Hold it together Khanyi. You know how to be professional just treat him as you would any client. I wash

my face and go back to the boardroom.)

Me: Sorry about that. Can we get started.

Khaya: yes we may. At least now that you guys have met and it looks like you are both into each other it saves me the trouble of hooking up the two of you. (We look at him like "WHAT") yes I was planning on hooking you guys up.

Me: Mr Mtimkhulu please talk to me about the budget for the first phase of the building I saw in your proposal that you want us to pay when you complete a phase.

Qhawe: yes that's how I would like it to happen but then again I am not restricting you to pay in full should you wish to do so and I plan to start next week Monday.

Me: So soon?

Qhawe: there's nothing delaying us we have everything we need to start working. Me: alright then. But I think I want to pay in full we can discuss that later.

The meeting goes on Khaya is hardly participating he's just sitting there watching us work. He is just amused by this situation. After we discuss everything they leave. I go on with my other meetings keeping myself really busy I'm avoiding thinking about this whole thing. When I'm done

with everyone it's 16:30 I go to my office just finalise a bit of paper work my office phone rings

Ibanathi: Lady K there's someone who like

to see you can I let him through Me: yes

you can. (Few minutes later there's a

knock on my door)

Me: come in (The door opens mind I haven't looked at the door I'm standing in front of filing cabinet putting some documents. That smell I'd know that smell anywhere and right now the only going



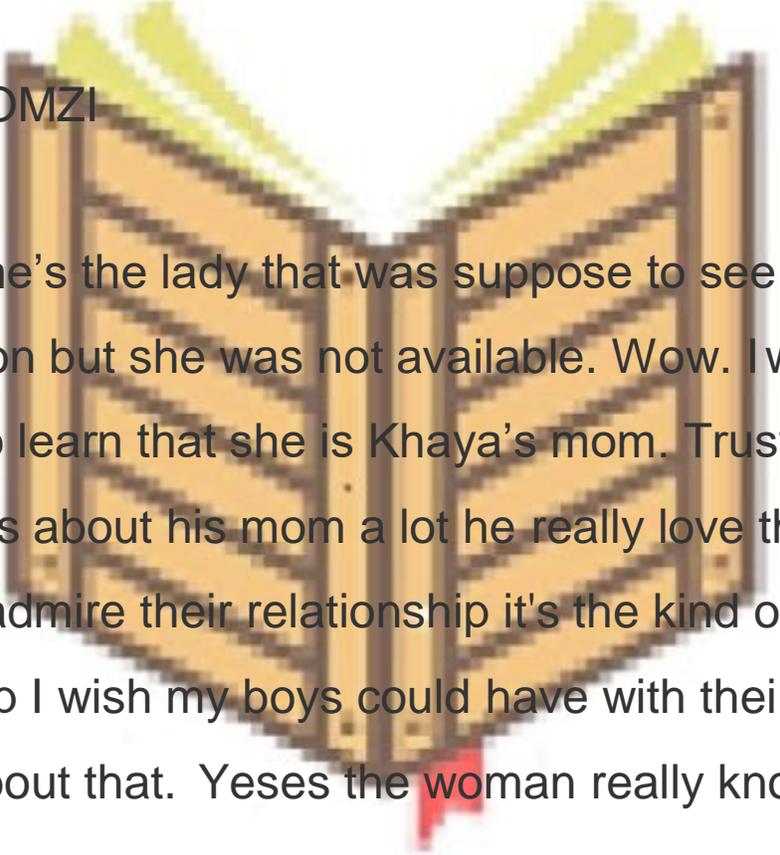
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

through my mind is me wanting the earth to swallow me whole. I force myself to turn around as I do and look at the door. No no no it can't be what is he doing here God why have you forsaken

me. What is he doing.

Me: Zwelibanzi (and it comes out as a whisper.)

QHAWELOMZI



Wow so she's the lady that was suppose to see my presentation but she was not available. Wow. I was so shocked to learn that she is Khaya's mom. Trust me Khaya talks about his mom a lot he really love that woman. I admire their relationship it's the kind of relationship I wish my boys could have with their mom. Enough about that. Yeses the woman really knows how to be

professional. At first she was shocked just as I was and we recovered and the job done. I still can't believe Khaya wanted to hook me up with his mom but then it just happened.

I tried calling her earlier but she didn't answer maybe I

should drive pass her office on my way home maybe we can do lunch tomorrow. She really gave herself away today. That intimidating Khanyi wasn't there for moment but when she came back from the bathroom she was back to her intimidating very professional self. You know what let me go see her I just have this need to see her. I pack up my things and walk out and drive off to her office. When I get people are getting ready to go home. It's knock off time. When I get to her office her assistant is not at the desk the door to her office is not completely closed. I hear her telling someone to leave she is calm bit you can tell she is angry by the tone of her voice. I hear the guy refusing to leave and she is just begging him to leave trying not lose control. I can't take this I just walk in. I see she is shocked at the same time happy to see me.

## CHAPTER 8

KHANYISILE

NOVELSGURU.COM

Right now I feel numb I feel angry I'm angry at him I'm angry at God. God why have you forsaken? What is this man doing here 4 years without seeing him without talking to him why now what does he want. He snaps me out my of thoughts

Zwelibanzi: Mrs Tom (I look at him and I know right now he can only see a blank face he can't read my emotions.)

Me: I think you have the wrong office there is no Mrs Tom here.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Zwelibanzi: You will always be Mrs Tom Khanyi.

Me: Zwelibanzi what do you want what are you doing here?

Zwellibanzi: Still calling me by my full name you never call me Zweli or Banzi just like other people and I always liked that about you I still do.

Me: I asked you what you want what you are doing here? Zwelibanzi: I see straight to the point I want my kids.

Me: I'm sorry you want your what? I don't think I heard you correctly (and I know he didn't miss the sarcasm and the anger in my question)

Zwelibanzi: I want my kids and you

Me: Heeee I thought I heard you incorrectly. Which kids exactly? The ones you haven't seen in 4 years the ones you last spoke to 4 years ago all of a sudden you have kids. Where were you when they got sick where were you when they had games to play who watched them play where were you when they needed help with their homework or when they needed help studying for a test or their exams where were you when they were crying wanting you to be there for

them. Where were you Zwelibanzi and now you have the balls even the liver to come here and demand them. Do you even know what they eat you don't even know their favourite foods their favourite books their favourite movies tv show music. You never cared for them Zwelibanzi even when were married you

never gave them the attention they needed from a father. Zwelibanzi we were in a relationship for 17 years out of that 17 years we were traditionally married for 6 years 6 years that became hell on earth for me and my babies. Now tell me what makes you think we want you

Zwelibanzi: Everything that you just said doesn't matter anymore I'm here now. I want to change things for you and the kids.

Me: you know whatever you and Nkosikhona are smoking please share it with me it's giving delusions that are out of this world or NIQHUNYWE NINGATSHAYANGA (YOU ARE HIGH WITHOUT SMOKING) Zwelibanzi get this through your thick skull you will never have those kids you will never have me.

Zwelibanzi: Khanyisile watch your tone you can't speak to me like that I am still the man around here.

Me: I can talk to you any way I want you mean nothing to me Zwelibanzi you can go and be a man somewhere else not here here you are not needed. Just leave go back to hole you crawled out of just leave Zwelibanzi.

Zwelibanzi: No I'm not leaving until we talk about this or else I'll take you court.

Me: I said leave now. (at this moment i am boiling with anger but still in control I'm trying veryhard not lose control trying very hard not to cry in front him I refuse to let him see my tears.) Leave Zwelibanzi.

My office door opens and I see a face I didn't expect to see what is he doing here I'm shocked and happy to see him but I'm more shocked.

Qhawe: I believe the lady asked you to leave

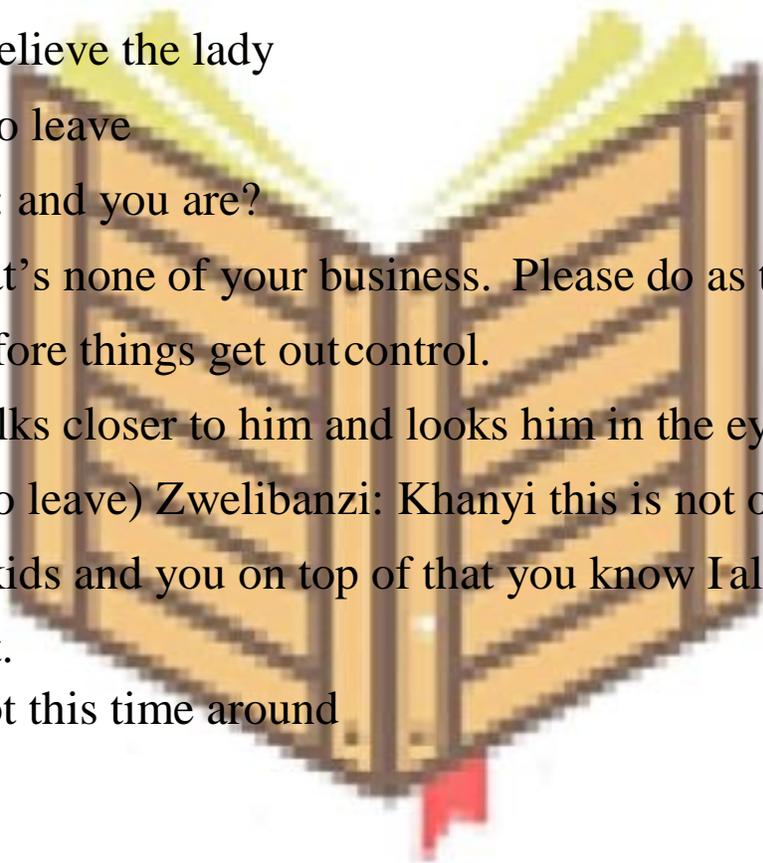
Zwelibanzi: and you are?

Qhawe: that's none of your business. Please do as the lady requests before things get outcontrol.

(Qhawe walks closer to him and looks him in the eye and tells him again to leave) Zwelibanzi: Khanyi this is not over I told I want my kids and you on top of that you know I always get what I want.

Qhawe: Not this time around

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I'm sure she has good reason for staying away from you. Khanyi:

Leave I'll see you in court.

Qhawe moves aside making space for him and watches as he

walks to the door at this moment I just involuntarily throw myself on my chair and I just let the tears fall. I feel Qhawe's arms around me he holds me so tight and he is busy shushing me.

I hear Andile's voice as he walks in but I can't look at him or talk to him right now but he talks to Qhawe.

Andile: I just saw Zwelibanzi leave what happened did he hurt her I could never forgive myself if he did. (he is so worried and stressed)

Qhawe: He didn't hurt physically she is not ok. Look don't worry about taking her home I'll do it but you guys really need to tighten security around here I have a feeling he'll be back. Anyway who is he?

Andile: When she is ready to

tell you she will.

QHAWE LOMZI

This is a very emotional moment at least she has stopped crying I get her to stand so that we can walk to the car. She stands gather her things she doesn't say anything so I just let her be I sit and

wait for her to finish gathering her things I still can't get over her beauty her sexiness. She really looks good in this suit. When she is done we leave. The ride to her house is quiet because she fell asleep I think she's tired from the crying. When we get to her house Eddie lets me in. I don't want to wake her so I carry her into the house straight to her bedroom this time Eddie doesn't come with me he waits for me in the lounge. These guys really care about Khanyi I wonder what's the story. I place her on her bed take her jacket and shoes off and just cover her with the throw that's on the bed. As I walk out I notice a remote control on the wall and it's for the air conditioner so I turn it on and adjust the temperature to be on heat. It's a bit chilly today and the throw is very light.

I have never seen her so broken as I walk to the lounge I bump into a little girl she looks like Khanyi a bit she looks more like that Zwelibanzi guy. She must be his daughter.

Her: I'm sorry I wasn't looking. Are you one of the new guys mom always introduces us to any new member of the security team.

Me: No sweetie I'm your mom's friend I brought her home she is not feeling well headache and now she is sleeping.

Her: So you were just in her bedroom

Me: Yes she fell asleep in the car so I had to carry her in because I didn't want to wake. Her: I see. Uncle Eddie allowed you to do that?

Me: Yes baby he did.

Her: I see. I have to go I have homework. Bye.

I'm Lwanele by the way. Me: Bye Lwanele I'm

Qhawelomzi Mthimkhulu

She walks up the stairs. She is

a smart kid. EDDIE

I look at Qhawe as he has a conversation with Lwanele. She is way too smart for her age. I'm sure she's already figuring out what's going on. They know their mother doesn't just fall asleep out of the blue unless she has been crying and they know that she just doesn't cry unless she's really hurt or angry.

Me: Qhawe how are you man?

Qhawe: I'm ok man just worried about Khanyi I walked in on her in her office angry and someone called Zwelibanzi.

Me: He was at the office how did he find this is not good. (I try not to let Qhawe see the panic on my face but I think I'm too late.)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Qhawe: Eddie what's going on who is this guy.

Me: He is her ex-husband and he is bad news the rest she will have to tell you it is not my story to tell.

Qhawe: I understand. Look I need to go I have to check on my kids and help with homework and cook dinner for them. (I can see that Eddie looks surprised at my statement.)

Me: You are a single dad?

Qhawe: Yes I am. Been doing it for 6 years now. Me: I'll call you and let you know when she is awake Qhawe: thanks I'd really appreciate that.

I walk him out to his car and you really can't miss the worry on his face he really cares about her I hope she'll open up to him. I think she is going to him now that Zwelibanzi is back. As Qhawe drives off Andile drives in in Khanyi's car. He gets out and walks up to me.

Andile: He is back after so long what does he want?

Me: I don't know Andile but we have to make sure they are safe. We have to tighten security again and the kids won't be happy about it.

Andile: They will understand. I swear Khanyi is going to kill him this time around.

Me: that's what I'm afraid of. Let's talk tomorrow we also need to have a meeting tomorrow about the changes in security. I know she won't like this but you'll have to be around her at all

times.

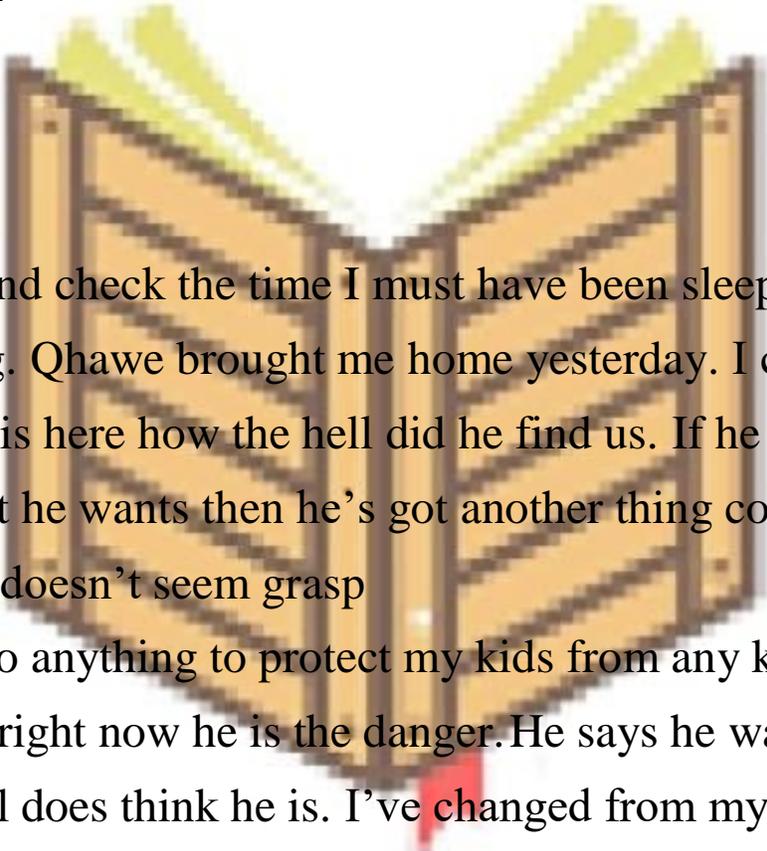
## CHAPTER 9

03:30AM

Tuesday

KHANYISI

LE



I wake up and check the time I must have been sleeping since this evening. Qhawe brought me home yesterday. I can't believe Zwelibanzi is here how the hell did he find us. If he thinks he is getting what he wants then he's got another thing coming. What Zwelibanzi doesn't seem grasp is that I'll do anything to protect my kids from any kind of danger and right now he is the danger. He says he wants me back who the hell does think he is. I've changed from my clothes to my pyjamas I'm in the kitchen warming up some milk for myself. This whole issue of Zwelibanzi coming back is driving me crazy how am I even going to tell the kids that he is back. I can't believe he wants to take me to court for the full custody of the kids. This man is really losing his

marbles does he really think he is going to get what he wants this time around. He has no idea of how I've changed since then I'm not the woman I was back then. I've done a lot to get to where I am. I also believe that that this is more than just him wanting the kids. He is up to

something. I need to speak to Eddie he needs look into Zwelibanzi I have a bad feeling about this. I'm laying on my bed and I can't sleep. I've been awake for hours and the kids just woke up they are getting ready for school. I'll have to tell them about their father and there's no better time like the present because they will also want to know what happened to yesterday. When I get to the kitchen mam' Mavis is making breakfast already she has been with us for three years now so I just make myself a cup of hot lemon water. The kids walk in  
Them: Morning ladies

Mam' Mavis: my babies how are you this morning. Ntando: we are good

ladies. Can we eat please I am hungry

Lonwabo: You are always hungry

wena

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: guys I have

something to tell you

Lwanele: What is wrong

Ma?

Me: Zwelibanzi is back. (I can see the shock in their face)

Lwanele: What does he want. Is he the reason you cried yourself to sleep yesterday when bhut' Qhawe brought you home.

Me: Wait you saw Qhawe??

Lonwabo: You had to be the first one to meet him. Ntando: What

does he want

Me: He says he wants us back.

Lonwabo: I hope you told him he can go to hell.

Me: Guys hell will freeze over but I let him have you. You don't have to worry about anything. You know I'll do anything to protect you.

Ntando: Mom I don't ever want to be in the house as him please. It's been 4 years of silence we've gotten used to not having him around even back then he was not around that much.

Me: You don't have to worry my son. It will always be just us.

Ok finish up and be ready to leave Jason will drive you to school

Sponsored

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I need to talk to Eddie and Andile.

They get their bags as Jason comes in to get the kids and the car keys. Jason use the Kia it less conspicuous.

EDDIE

I walk in as Khanyi finishes with Jason and kisses her kids goodbye and Andile walks in too. Me: guys let's sit. Khanyi I need to have Andile with you at all times.

Khanyi: No Eddie I need more security for my kids but I need the guys to blend in so that the kids don't feel uncomfortable. As for me you know I can take care of myself. You also need to talk to Brandon about tightening Security at work. And the two of you are responsible for us and the house.

Andile: back to the real question and that is what does he really want this can't just be about you and the kids Khanyi.

Khanyi: I know Andile but I think I might have an idea and it's too much of a coincidence that he shows up now.

Me: I think I know what you are talking. The Import and Export business you just bought and turned into a legit business. I know the previous owner had associates that were using the business for their illegal shit. Could Zwelibanzi be really involved in that kind of shit and I mean now the business is now clean and doing legit business. But how did he know you bought the company that's if he knows.

Khanyi: I don't know Eddie and I made sure that no one knows I own that business and Luyanda did a good job covering all the tracks that lead to me. Zwelibanzi would have to do serious digging to find out that I own that company.

Andile: maybe he did. We need to look into it. Eddie we have to talk to Zack about this and we need Sandiso to keep track of Zwelibanzi

Khanyi: Ok guys do all that and keep me updated. I need to speak to Luyanda about the up coming court case. (she says that laughing and her phone rings) Excuse me guys I need to take this.

QHAWELOMZI



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm at the office. I can't stop thinking about what happened in Khanyi's office yesterday. What I saw at the moment was completely broken woman I don't think I ever want to see her cry like that again. I need to know more about this Zwelibanzi person something is fishy. Let me call Charlie

Charlie: What's up man

Me: nothing much I need you to get me some info on someone Zwelibanzi Tom. Charlie: is that all you have on him?

Me: yeah man that's all can you do it with only just the name?

Charlie: I'm not promising anything but I'll try and see what I can get. What did he do Me: I don't know yet maybe he is about to do something.

Charlie: Ok. I'll get back to

you real quick. He drops the

call and I decide to call

Khanyi

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khanyi:

Khanyi hello

Me: Hey how

are you

Khanyi: I'm ok I guess and you

Me: I'm good just tired. Are you at work?

Khanyi: No I'm not. I'll be working from home today. I was really shaken by him showing up like that. Listen I also wanted to thank you for being there for me yesterday I really appreciate it.

Me: It was nothing really. Anyone else would have done the same thing.

Khanyi: I don't think so.

Me: Do you want to tell me about him?

Khanyi: If I tell you about him that means I'm letting you in to my world and I'm really not sure if I'm ready for that.

Me: It's ok. When you are ready you'll talk. How about lunch today just to get your mind off thing.

Khanyi: Sure why not I don't feel like going out so you'll have to my house.

## CHAPTER 10

WEDNESDAY

08:30 AM

ZWELIBANZI

NOVELSGURU.COM

She is still beautiful as ever seeing her today made me want her back even more but she is different this time around she is not the same. She has done really well for herself. Owning a trading enterprise of this magnitude is amazing. I mean this company is a one stop shop she got almost everything plus she owns a restaurant. How did she do it I really underestimated her. When she left I never thought she would be where she is she is even able to hide herself from the media from me. I can hardly find anything that's under her name. I must say she is very smart but there is something I managed to find out and I don't think she'll think I know. My kids hardly use their social media accounts they don't even post their pictures. They are really keeping their lives private. Even her other two kids they are hard to find. I know her son Khaya owns a music company and he also has an import and export company. Khanyi is really putting a lot of effort in keeping their private lives away from prying eyes but she must have known she can't hide from me forever. She was a good wife very humble and obedient and the respect she had for me was truly amazing but then I was a jerk that didn't appreciate her and I lost her but I want her back. My phone rings and it's my tech guy

Him: Zweli

Me: Did you manage to find her?

Him: No I didn't her home address is not listed the kid's school information is private I can't break the firewall. Whoever is

helping her is a genius. This woman is smart everything that we've managed to find on her is everything she wants people to find when they look into her life. Me: if that is the case then I need her to be followed but she will have to be followed from her office I need to know where she stays with my kids. Did you manage to find Khaya

Him: No I didn't. This woman is protecting her kids even Nkosikhona is not having it easy with her.

Me: I don't care about that guy he is an idiot.

Him: and what are you? You had a good woman and you fucked it up. She managed to move on with her life without you in it she is building a legacy for her kids and you can't deal with it and now you want something that you won't get. Listen man the way she's doing things I'd forget about this company you want from her and just buy yourself another one I'm telling you now she is going to put up a fight and doubt you are going to win. Remember she is a woman scorned scorned by you. Whatever you do tread carefully man.

Me: I'm also building a legacy for my kids

Him: Not Khanyi's kids. They will never take over from you your twins are more likely to take over since you are grooming them and teaching them your dirty ways.

Me: Just get someone to follow her I need that address and I also need to know the guy that came to her office yesterday. I hang up this guy was talking too much who does he think he is? My boys will take over. Maybe he is right though they are groomed differently from the twins but I will get them. They will learn about the business.

EDDIE

Qhawe was here for lunch yesterday he was a good destruction at least she got to relax for a bit. She is so worried about her kids she's mostly afraid of losing them even though she knows she won't lose them she just doesn't want to put anything past Zwelibanzi. She doesn't want to let her guard down and end up under estimating the guy she doesn't even believe he has changed neither do i. My phone rings and it's Zack

Zack: are you good man? How is Khanyi holding up?

Me: I'm good Zack she'll be ok. Do you have something for me?

Zack: firstly the tracking device is done and Zwelibanzi has a car that he's taking in for a service lucky for us I know someone who works at BMW and I'll talk to install the device this will help Sandiso to track without having to follow him.

Me: that's great news I'll ask Sandiso to give you a call so that you guys talk. What else do you have for me.

Zack: the guys has girlfriend and has twin boys with her who

are two years old. Remember the hotel Khanyi wanted to buy about a year ago in Cape Town but she decided not to well Zwelibanzi bought that hotel and right now I wish Khanyi had bought that hotel if you know what I mean.

Me: I know what you mean. Right now there's nothing we can do about that. All I can say is that this is going to be hard on Khanyi and she can't fight this guy alone. What about Qhawe?

Zack: and she won't. Qhawe is keeping his personal life very private there's not much on him except business. He is clean from what I could find out about him you need to get him on board. I'll tell you about it when we meet we can't talk about it over the phone. Oh and Brandon is on his way there with Barbie (he laughs at his own statement.)

Me: why is he bringing her here?

Zack: Just something to keep her busy so that she doesn't spend too much thinking about Zwelibanzi. This will be a good destruction

Me: ok man. Thanks for everything

Sponsored

we can't talk about it over the phone. Oh and Brandon is on his way there with Barbie (he laughs at his own statement.)

Me: why is he bringing her here?

Zack: Just something to keep her busy so that she doesn't spend too much thinking about Zwelibanzi. This will be a good destruction

Me: ok man. Thanks for everything I have to go we'll talk later I need to pick up the kids from school. (I hang up and shake my head wondering what this woman is going to do this girl.)

**KHANYISILE**

My day at work was a bit dull today. Ibanathi is on leave for 3 weeks and the girl he left me with is just.... Let me keep my mouth shut. The day was all about meetings and meetings it's good to keep busy. This new girl walks in without knocking

Me: get out and knock (I say before she could say anything. She goes out and knocks I let her in and she tells me my lawyer is here to see me and I tell her to bring him in)

Luyanda: Miss Sondlo How are you?

Me: Mr Langa I'm good and you? (we both laugh at the formalities) Luyanda: I'm good

nothing much. So why did you want to see me

Me: Well you know my ex-husband Zwelibanzi he wants to sue me for full custody of the kids. Luyanda: On what grounds is he suing for custody? I believe this guy is stupid to think he can win the case with the kind of history he has with you and considering the fact that he has been an absent father for 4 years.

Me: I really don't know unless he plans on bribing a judge. Luyanda: Not the judge

I'm hoping for.

Me: Luyanda anyone can be bought.

Luyanda: trust me not judge Smith. I can't do anything at the moment until Zwelibanzi's lawyer files for the law suit. In the meantime I am going to gather as much information as I can on the guy and I would appreciate Zack's help on this one.

Me: That's fine I'll speak to Zack.

Luyanda: I have to go. I was just passing by. I have a date tonight. Me: Thanks for stepping by and good luck with the date.

This whole situation is draining. I swear I am going to kill Zwelibanzi. I pack my things lock up my office and leave. I find Andile waiting for me at the door. As he drives us home I notice that there is a car following us.

Me: Andile I think we are being followed

Andile: I know I've noticed. But I will try to lose them. Call Eddie and give the registration number of the vehicle.

Andile manages to lose the car that was following us and we get home safe. As we walk into the house I can't help but laugh at what I see. Barbie sitting on the couch like she owns this place.

Me: get your feet off my couch. I believe you are a guest in this house having your feet on my couch is disrespectful. She quickly gets her feet off the couch and sits properly

I'm not cooking tonight I'm too tired. I go up to kid's study and find them busy with their school. I greet my babies and just have a short conversation with them after which I leave and just let them be. I go to my bedroom and change into comfortable clothes. As we wait for the order of food I ask Barbie to come with me to the kitchen.

Me: Tell me something Barbie what did my son ever do to you for you to hurt him like that? Barbie: I didn't do anything

Me: Ok so him catching you in bed with another man is nothing to you. I know my son he knows how to treat a woman and be respectful towards her and I can't say the same for you. I'm not the kind of mother that would let the likes of you get away with

hurting my son the way you did. I need you to listen to me very carefully if you were thinking of calling him and asking for another chance or call him because you want to apologise then don't otherwise your family will never find if you know what I mean. I could just shoot you right now but I don't have the energy to deal with you and your unruly personality. Now you can get up and leave your ride is waiting for you outside.

I really don't have the energy to deal with her. When the food arrives i eat with my kids after which we end up in the tv room watching movies I hear the door bell and get up to go see who it is gosh what is he doing here?

QHAWELOMZI

Ok I know that this is not a good time for Khanyi she has a lot on her plate but I want her I have decided I want her to be part of my life I want to protect her and her kids from all the bad guys. Right now I want to hold her and kiss her. She is really making me feel weak at the

NOVELSGURU.COM

knees. I get my keys say my goodbyes to the kids at least Mam' Nkosi is back so she can watch the kids besides there a few guards so they are safe and this guy Zwelibanzi doesn't know who I am. I arrive at her house as she opens the door she has that look on her face that face that haunts me every night that look that says what am I doing here. I don't say anything she moves aside and lets me in. As soon as she closes the door and turns around and notices that I'm standing directly in front of her I want to kiss I walk slow towards as she moves back and leans against the door. (Qhawe what are you doing she asks) I don't say anything I just hold her face small face in my hands and I kiss her gently and slowly and surprisingly she is kissing me back and when we stop we look at each other not saying anything

Khanyi: What was that?

Me: that is something I've wanted to do for a while now Khanyi: Oh is that

so

Me: yes it is so. ( I say kissing her again and she responds.)

## CHAPTER 11

THURSDAY

7:00 AM

KHANYISILE

My gym session was awesome today. I had to get my personal trainer to come to my house. I got to release the anger I had release the stress I had at least now I feel better. Exercising has always done that for me it has always been a good way for me to release my stress and sex but the sex I've been starving myself there I probably have spider webs down there. At least now I can be able to concentrate. I really need to find a way to deal with Zwelibanzi and Nkosikhona especially Zwelibanzi. I hate the fact that he thinks he owns me and he can do as he pleases and I'm sure the car that followed us yesterday was one of his guys he probably wants to know where I stay. The kids walk into the kitchen as I finish my tea and collect my bags so that we can leave. As we walk to the car Andile is ready for us. We drop the kids off at school and he drives me to the office.

Me: Andile you don't have to stay with me Brandon is here.

Andile: I know Brandon is here but I feel a lot better being the one here.

Me: Andile just stop security has been tightened here no one can get to my floor without an excess card not to mention the excess codes that you guys change whenever you feel like so I am

very safe here. I won't be having out of office meetings for a while. So please just relax and besides Eddie needs you.

Andile: fine I'll let you be just for today and yes I do have a lot that I need to do with Eddie. Be safe Khanyi and try to enjoy your day and don't think too much about that idiot we'll deal with him. You know we've got your back and we love you.

Me: I know you've got me and I love you too guys I can't believe we've come this far. (He hugs me)

Andile: And we still have a long way to go. (I just smile at him as tough as he is when it comes to me he just becomes a big softie. When i'm about to close the car door he speaks) Khanyi give Qhawe a chance we like him. He's good for you. You are ready even though you think you are not but you are. (I just smile and walk away. These guys they haven't even known him that long already they like him. How do they know I'm ready when I don't even know that.)

I walk into my office and my PA is not at the desk eish this girl. I miss Ibanathi I'm so used to how he does things he always made me feel at ease this is going to be a long 3 weeks without him. There's a knock on my door and it's the PA she's holding a cup and hands to me it's my hot water and I thank her. She gives me a rundown of my day not much is happening today. I'll be spending most the day with the Marketing department guys. She also tells me there is a delivery for me the security guy is

bringing it up. She walks out and my phone rings and it's my mom ok my parents don't need to know about Zwelibanzi yet so I won't be saying anything about that.

Me: Mom how are you

Mom: I'm good baby just getting old and how are you? Me: I'm good mom work is keeping me busy.

Mom: Don't be so busy that you don't have time to go on dates. You need start dating otherwise you'll die alone.

Anyway when are the kids coming?

Me: As soon as they finish with their June exams mom.

Mom: Ok my baby. Your dad says hi. We'll talk later then. We love you.

Me: I love you too guys and thanks for calling mom. Say hi to dad. (I hang up and the PA walks in with flowers and a medium sized blue teddy bear.

PA: this is the delivery I told you about.

Me: just put it on the desk thank you very much. Please close the door on your work out.

My favourite flowers white lilies and I love teddy bears as well who could have sent these they can't be from Zwelibanzi he has never bought me flowers. I notice a note hanging on the teddy

bear's neck. {I know you are scared you don't have to be only because you are mine. NB: I LOVE YOUR LIPS.}

I can't help but blush; I can't even remember the last time I blushed. If I was light in complexion I think my cheeks would be red now. I really don't know what Qhawe is doing to me. Should I give him a chance what if I ruin it what if I'm not what he is looking for can he really fall for me can I fall for him. Will he be able to deal with me love me unconditionally I don't think so and I'm just too broken.

## BANDILE

I've known Qhawe for a very long time since varsity years that's a very long time. We've been there for each other through everything. It's always been me him and Lwazi people always called us the Three Musketeers. When he got married to his ex-wife we were there we still don't know why he married her well we know why we just think that he didn't have to marry her but he is our friend and we had to support him. Qhawe wasn't always this quiet intimidating guy that woman changed him and in a way I'm glad he changed because people always took advantage of him including his ex-wife. He was so happy when the twins were born he named them after us Bandile and Banele which is Lwazi's second name. The smile he has when he talks about his

kids is the same smile he has when he talks about Khanyi. I never thought he would actually make his move it took him long enough. Khanyi is turning him into a big softie I am not complaining though. My phone rings:

Me: Qhawe!

Qhawe: hey man I need to see can you come to my office and bring Lwazi with you. I need your IT expertise.

Me: do I want to know what's going on?

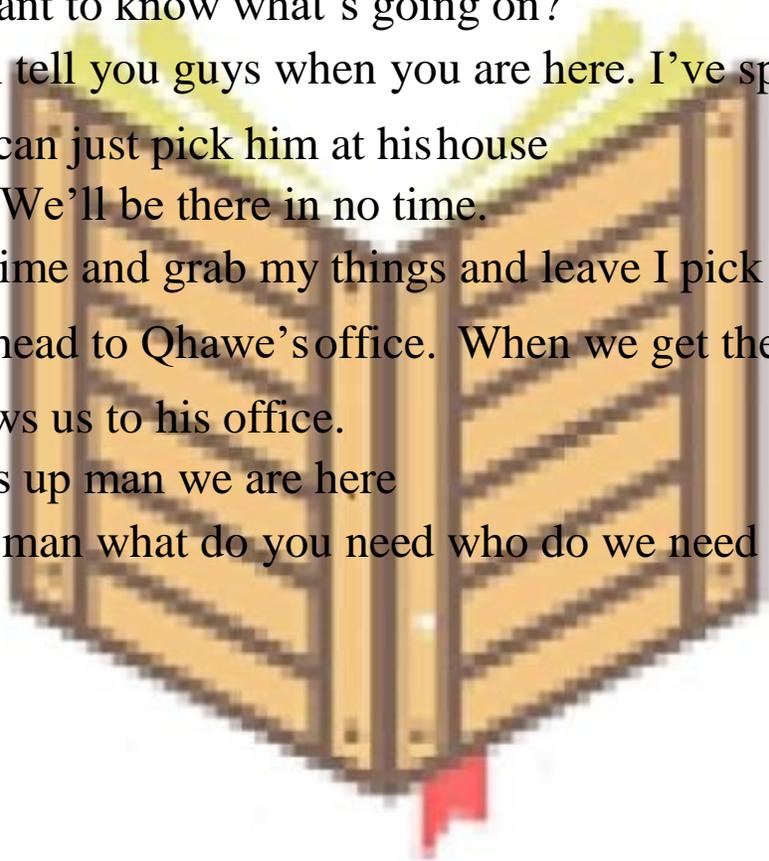
Qhawe: I'll tell you guys when you are here. I've spoken to Lwazi you can just pick him at his house

Me: Cool. We'll be there in no time.

I waste no time and grab my things and leave I pick up Lwazi and head to Qhawe's office. When we get there the PA shows us to his office.

Me: What's up man we are here

Lwazi: hey man what do you need who do we need to kill.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Qhawe: will you please sit down Zintle can you bring coffee for they guys and bring me a tea and also 2 blueberry muffins and chocolate chip muffins for these two. (she walks out)

Me: so we are here

Qhawe: it's about Khanyi I think she is in trouble or rather let me say she has a problem with someone her ex-husband to be precise and I need to find out as much as I can about this guy and you know Charlie can only do so much when it comes to computers.

Lwazi: who is this guy then. Kodwa Qhawe the woman is not yours yet and you are trying to help her. Does she know about this?

Qhawe: no she doesn't although I think she has her suspicions.

Me: What do you have so far on this guy what did Charlie manage to get? (I ask and he gives a file)

Zwelibanzi Tom business tycoon has his hand in a lot of cookie jars why is this guy still walking the streets?

Lwazi: Better yet why is he still alive?

Qhawe: Look guys I need more something doesn't add up and whatever we find I have to share with her security guys.

Me: Can you trust them?

Qhawe: Yeah man especially Eddie who is the head of security and Andile who is her personal body guard. I've noticed that they are more than employer and employee they are family there's history between them you can tell they've been through shit together.

Lwazi: I can see you really care about her when am I meeting her  
I know Bandile has met her Qhawe: Soon enough Lwazi. Can  
you guys do this for me

Lwazi: You know we can do it and we will do it. We'll let you  
as soon as we have something. Me: Definitely man.

Qhawe: thanks guys.

We continue having a general conversation as we finish our  
coffee and muffins and Qhawe's phone beeps indicating that  
he has a message I watch him as he reads the message his face  
just changed for hard to soft just like that and I know it's a  
message from Khanyi.

Me: You really like this woman nhe? (Lwazi takes Qhawe's  
phone Lwazi can be so childish at times he reads the message:  
{Thank you for the beautiful flowers though I don't  
remember telling you that they are my favourite flowers and  
I love teddy bears. I love them. NB: At least I'm not  
completely at a disadvantage I also know about something  
you love. ♡ Thank you}

Qhawe: Lwazi give me my phone before I shoot you.

Me: you sent her flowers and what does she mean by not being completely at a disadvantage? Qhawe: thank you guys for coming I have to get back to work now. You can take the muffins with you.

Me: Oh it's like that now fine. Lwazi let's go. (we leave as he just laughs at us this idiot.)

KHAYA

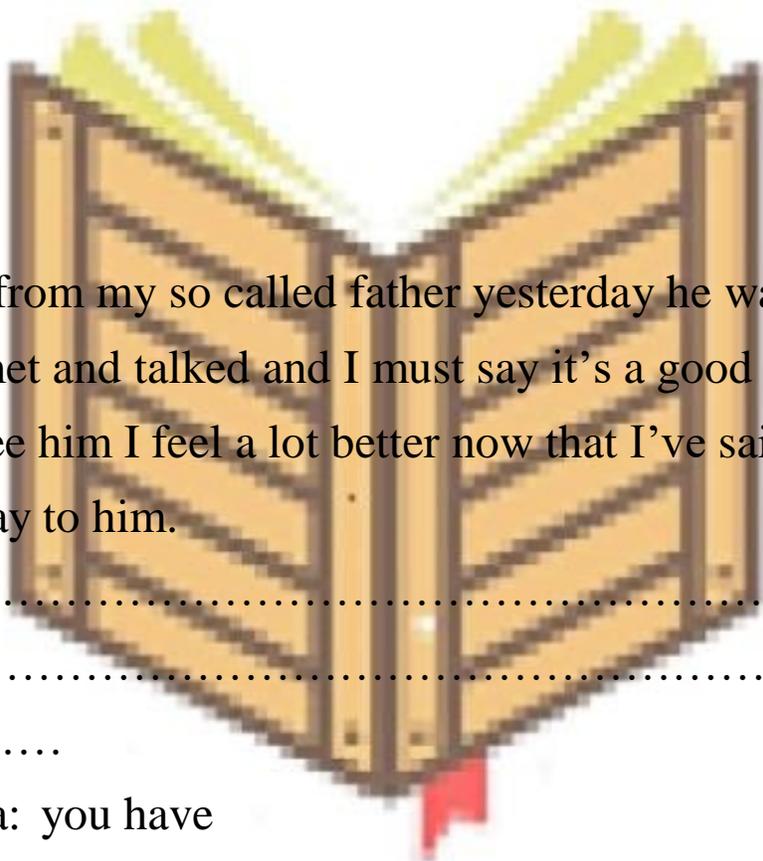
I got a call from my so called father yesterday he wanted to see me so we met and talked and I must say it's a good thing I agreed to see him I feel a lot better now that I've said what I wanted to say to him.

.....FLASH  
BACK.....

Nkosikhona: you have grown how are you? Me: I'm good what do you want?

Nkosikhona: you are just like your mom just want to get straight to point. Me: I ask again what do you want?

Nkosikhona: I want to apologise for not being there all your life I'm not going to lie your mom did everything she could to make



NOVELSGURU.COM

sure I have a relationship with you guys but I was too stupid easily influence and swayed there's no valid reason for me not to be there for you I was an idiot a fool that didn't know what he wanted out of life. I am truly sorry for abandoning you guys.

Me: I know mom did all she could to get to have a relationship with us she never asked you for me money she raised us and we are who we are because of her. I was angry at and holding a grudge against you and that was destroying and in the process I was slowing killing the one person I know would die for me and that is my mother. She is not perfect she makes mistakes just like everyone else but she made sure we were never short of anything most importantly she always made sure that we never felt unloved. What I'm trying to say is that mom has been a mother and father to us believe it or not that woman taught how to be a good man. I don't need you in my life maybe you need me in yours I don't know and I don't care. I accept your apology I forgive you but don't expect me to be your son and I'm not doing this for you I'm doing it for my own sanity.

Nkosikhona: You sound just like your mother  
Me: I learned from the best.

.....  
.....END OF FLASH

BACK.....

.....

I park my car in the drive way and take a deep breath just to relax. I walk up to the door and enter the house and go to the kitchen I know she's cooking it smells amazing in here.

Me: Hi mom

Mom: Hey baby how are you

Me: I am good what are you making for dinner?

Lwanele: She's cooking our favourite Oxtail with veggies and garlic bread. (as she walks into the kitchen)

Me: Well I'm staying for dinner.

Lwanele: Oh please don't make it sound like you were not going to stay. Me: (I just laugh at her.) Where are your brothers?

Lwanele: They are your brothers too you know. They are in the study. We are busy with homework and studying. Exams are starting next week.

Me: ok little sis can you give us a moment I just want to have a word with mom about something I'll join guys as soon as I'm done.

Lwanele: Ok. Anyway mom I came to ask you if you can help me with my homework after dinner. There's something that I don't understand.

Me: I'll help you how about we just  
let mom rest today. Lwanele: Cool  
(she says walking away.)

Me: she is so adorable. Mom I met up with my so called father  
yesterday he called wanting to see me.

Mom: and how do you feel?

Me: I feel good I feel lighter and I told him that just because I  
choose to forgive him he must not expect me to be his son.

Mom: I'm glad you feel good. That's all I want for you guys to  
be happy.

Me: and we are happy mom. We've had our share of ups and  
downs but we are happy. We love you and thank you for loving  
us the way you do. (She smiles and hugs me and asks to call the  
other kids so that we can eat. It's always good to be home. We  
have dinner listening to my younger siblings telling us about  
their day at school today. The boys have their last rugby game  
this weekend before they start with exams. There's absolutely no  
place like home.

CHAPTER 13

NOVELSGURU.COM

SATURD

AY

QHAWEL

OMZI

Today is my day with the kids we are going out for breakfast and doing some shopping as well. This is going to be a long day shopping with the girls is a nightmare they take after their mom except for the last born Lisakhan ya – 13 this one is more like me she always knows what she wants from the shops. Sibahle-17 and Zenande – 14 can really shop. They really know how to spend my money funny enough they don't go crazy with their allowances but when I decide to take them shopping it's like I opened the gates to the heavens. I had a great time with Khanyi yesterday even though she said we can try I know it will take some time for her to be completely comfortable but I want to take this journey with her.

Lisakhanya: Daddy how are you this morning  
Me: I'm fine  
sweetheart how are you

Khanya: I'm fine daddy. Are the others not down yet? Me: Not yet. Do you know what you are buying today?

Khanya: Yes dad. I just need a few winter clothes and some of my art stationery and new pouch for my phone. (See what I mean about her she's just simple.) I love you daddy

Me: I love you too Princess come let's go to the kitchen.

Zenande: Oh you guys just love being all lovey divvy. (she laughs) Morning daddy Sibahle: Morning dad

Me: Morning ladies let's eat so that we can go Sibahle:

Aren't the twins coming?

Bandile: Miss out on a chance to spend dad's money never.

Banele: Sorry to disappoint you little sis you won't be spending dad's money alone. Me: So this is about

spending my money and not spending time with your dad

Sibahle: dad we love you you know that but today is just one of those we love you for your money.

Me: I'm hurt truly I am. (they all just laugh at me)

Bandile: Dad when we are done with the shopping do you mind if we leave you guys Khaya wants to meet up for lunch we won't stay long we'll be home by 16:00

Me: No problem boys as long as you are home early. Come guys let's go

I drive with the girls and the boys take their won since they are only going home later.

When we get to the mall the girls go crazy. I love this mall. Even during its busy days you can still breath it doesn't get that congested. La Lucia is just the best place to raise kids and they are loving it here. We go to all these different shops Sibahle and Zenande are really going crazy. After a while I take Khanya with me to do grocery shopping while the other girls still busy with their own shopping. After that we are all going to get something to eat then go home. As we walk to Checkers Zenande and I I see her coming out of another shop she's with her daughter. I wonder where the boys are.

Me: Khanyi

Khanyi: hey how are you

Me: I'm good. What are you doing here?

Princess Lwanele how are you? Lwanele: I'm good and how are you

Me: I'm good too. Are you also here to spend mom's money?

This is Lisakhanya my daughter Lwanele: Hi Lisakhanya I'm Lwanele

Khanya: Nice meet Lwanele.

Lwanele: This is my mom Khanyi she is friends with your dad.

Khanya: Nice to meet you mama. So are you his friend or girlfriend I hope you are the girlfriend he needs one.

I swear my daughter just said too much right now and Khanyi is just amazed by her. I just stand there looking at her smiling I just couldn't help myself.

Khanya and Lwanele: OH MY GOD!!!!!! IT'S TRUE

Khanya: Daddy is it true? (she looking at me with

so much joy in her eyes)Lwanele: I knew it I

knew it.

Khanyi: Where were you

guys going?Me:

Checkers

Khanyi: We were going there too and we can finish this

conversation while we are there shopping

Me: yeah sure let's go.

Khanya: Dad you haven't answered my question

Me: (I look at Khanyi and she nods) yes

princess she my lady Khanya and Lwanele:

FINALLY!! (we just laugh)

I think these two will get along just fine. When we are done

at checkers we meet up with my other two girls at spur and

LisaKhanya is busy pulling Khanyi by her hand she's in a

hurry to show Khanyi to her sisters.

Khanya: hey guys this is Khanyi she is Lwanele's mom and dad's girlfriend

Sibahle: What? dad has a girlfriend how long has that been going on dad and you don't tell us. (she says that looking at me expecting an answer. As I'm about to answer the waitress brings our food and leaves.)

Me: Listen guys I was going to tell you this is not how I wanted to introduce her to you and we haven't been seeing each other that long. I guess fate decided otherwise.

Sibahle: Hi I'm Sibahle and this is Zenande Khanyi: Nice to meet you ladies.

We eat with the girls asking Khanyi and Lwanele a lot of questions. And I get up to go the bathroom and looking at the table we are sitting at they all look happy and laughing I just stand there for a minute looking at them and taking pictures. After the lunch we go our separate ways.

## THE TWINS

Today we decided to have lunch with Khaya. I remember when we first met him he was really out of it lost hanging out with the wrong crew but now when you look at him you could never say and he always says he owes all to his mom who never gave up on him and he has this amazing idea of a programme he wants to start for guys who've

been in the same situation as his or worse. Dad has been his mentor for a year now and he actually loves his idea and is prepared to back him up. We are sitting at Mugg and Bean waiting and I see him walking in and he is with two other guys.

Khaya: What's up guys haven't seen in you in a while

Banele: Busy man we are writing exams soon and we had a lot of assignments. Bandile: Are you good though?

Khaya: I'm good guys can't complain. Having a boys' day with my brothers today. Guys this is Lonwabo and Ntando my little brothers.

Bandile: Nice to finally meet you your brother talks about you guys all the time. Khanya: Guys these are the twins I've been telling you about Bandile and

Banele. Ntando & Lonwabo: Nice to meet you

Khaya: have you ordered?

Banele: Not yet we were waiting for you let me call a waitress.

We place our orders and she leaves.

Khaya: Ok guys

Sponsored

the idea that I told you about I also want to involve my brothers in the project. Ntando: Yeah we want in it's a fantastic idea.

Lonwabo: in as much as it is a fantastic idea whose going to fund it are we using our own money or are we getting sponsors? I do think getting sponsors will be a good idea it gets the community involved.

Bandile: You were right these boys are smart. Khaya: I told you.

Banele: Our first sponsors should be our parents. With their company names on our adverts we can get a lot of other businesses involved. (the waitress brings our food. We continue with our conversation while we eat.)

Ntando: Especially since their companies are amongst some of the best in the country. Khaya: I think we should have one meeting and pitch the idea to them at the same time.

Banele: That's perfect we'll speak to dad tonight.

Lonwabo: that means we should also speak to mom tonight.

Bandile: That's settled then we'll talk tomorrow. Right now we

have to go before we are late otherwise dad will have a thing.

Khaya: sure man we also need go don't worry

I'll get the bill this time. Khaya pays the bill and

the guys go their separate ways.

30 minutes later

Sibahle: Oh great you are

home just in time Banele: In

time for what?

Zenande: We have something to tell you it's about dad.

Dad: You are talking about me like I'm not even here. It's not your news to tell you know that right?

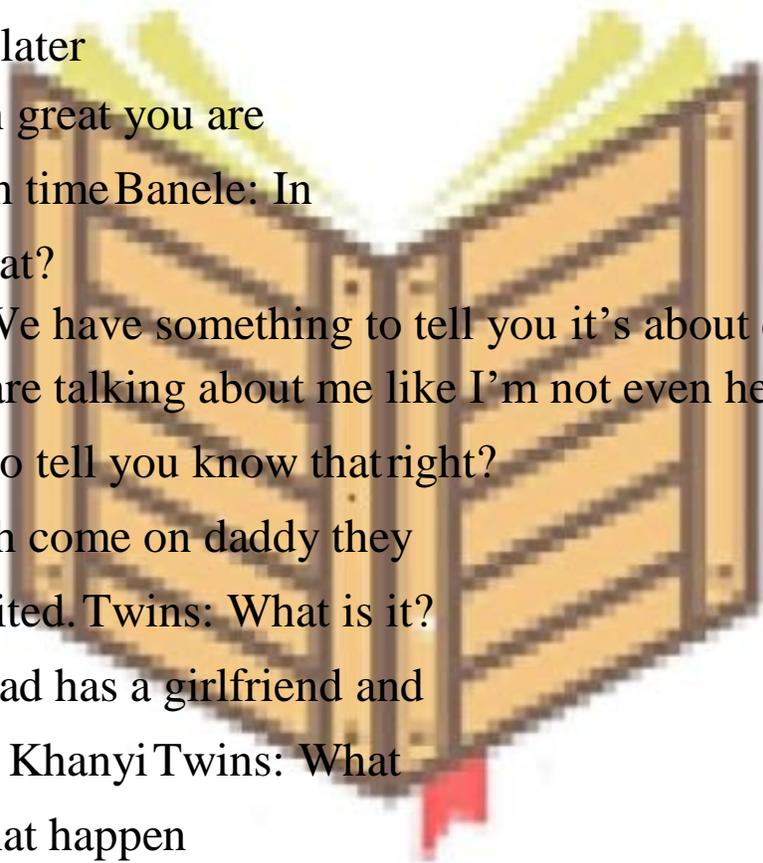
Khanya: Oh come on daddy they

are just excited. Twins: What is it?

Zenande: dad has a girlfriend and

her name is Khanyi Twins: What

when did that happen



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sibahle: apparently not that long and he was planning on telling us.

Bandile: really dad when were you going to tell us and you guys how did you find out. Sibahle: We met her at the mall and had lunch with her it was just a coincidence. Oh and we took pictures she's a lovely lady

Dad: I was going to tell when the time was right. Banele: Let me see the pictures

Dad: This is a going to be a long day for me. Is this what we are going to talk about the rest of the day.

Bandile: come on dad we just want to know about her.

Banele: I think we know her I've seen her before Bandile look at these pictures

Bandile: Dad this is Khaya's mom (he says shocked.) Is she the gym lady you told us about? Dad: Yes she is

Banele: Does Khaya know?

Dad: no not yet. This is really not how I wanted you to find out. We can talk about this later let's get dinner ready.

LWAZI

NOVELSGURU.COM

I need to call Qhawe he picks up:

Qhawe: Lwazi

Lwazi: We found something and you are not going to like it. This guy is bad news man. Qhawe: How bad?

Lwazi: dangerously bad. Look man we need to meet this is stuff

we can't discuss over the phone. I think we should go to her house tomorrow and inform the guys about what we found.

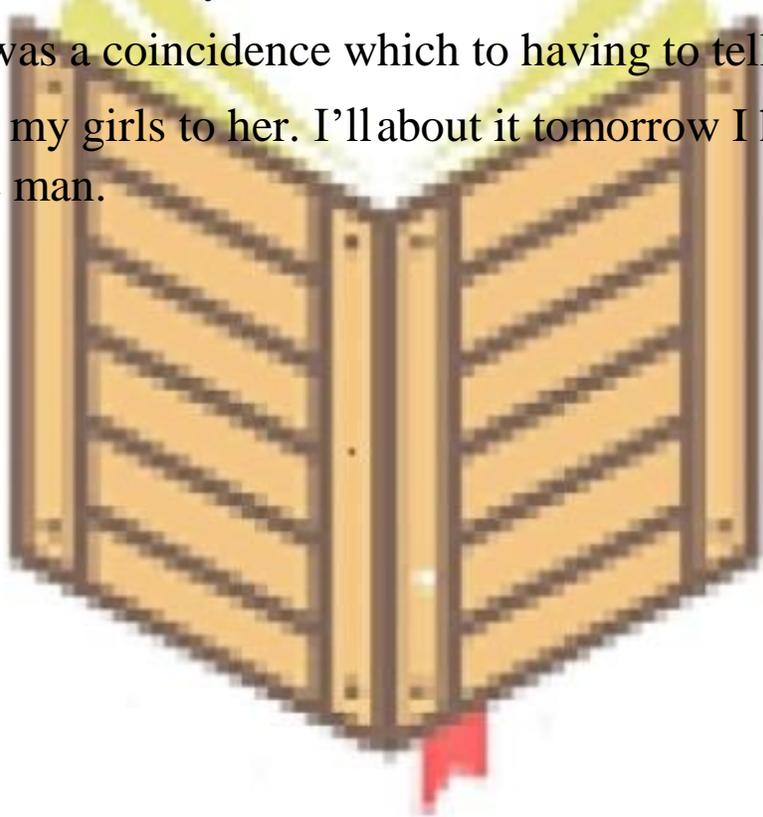
Qhawe: I want to know first before we go there. Come to my house tomorrow first we can go there together. Where is Bandile?

Lwazi: he is right here.

Qhawe: Ok. Let me see you tomorrow then. I'm grilled in this house about Khanyi. Lwazi: You told them?

Qhawe: it was a coincidence which to having to tell them and introducing my girls to her. I'll about it tomorrow I have to go.

Lwazi: sure man.



NOVELSGURU.COM

## KHAYA

When we get home mom was busy cooking dinner and having a conversation with Mam' Mavis who is about to leave also. Mam' Mavis is more like our second mother to us she's been with for years from when mom was still married. She is absolutely an amazing woman.

Me: My

ladies

Them:

Baby

Me: I'll let pass this time just because it's just us three in this kitchen. Mam' Mavis: Guys I'll see you tomorrow.

Us: Goodnight ma.

Mom: where are the boys?

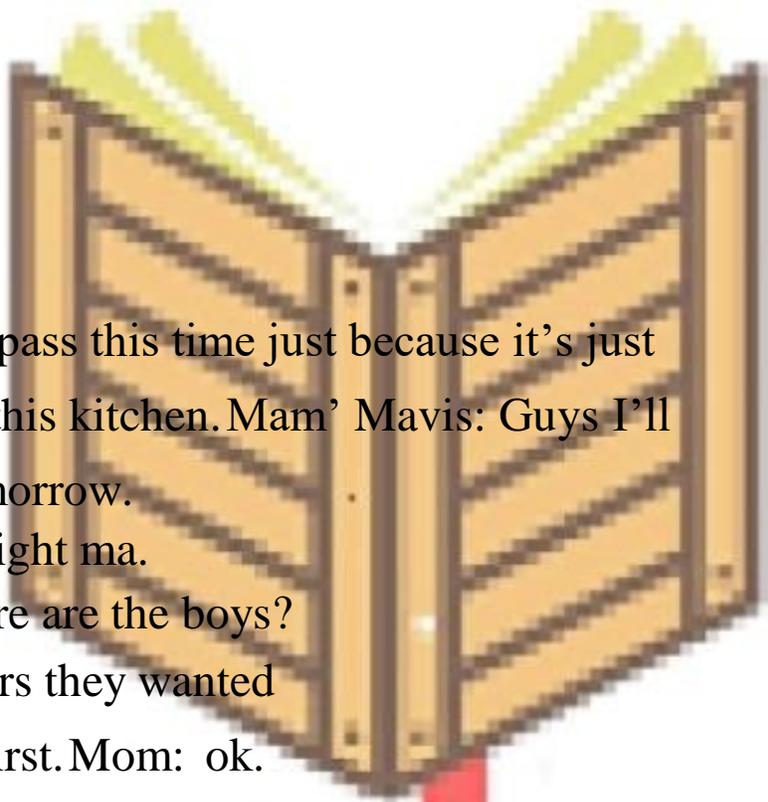
Me: Upstairs they wanted to shower first. Mom: ok.

Me: Mom we have a project that we are working on that we would like to pitch to you so we would like to have a formal meeting with and Bhut' Qhawe.

Mom: Have you spoken to him about it?

Me: The twins will speak to him tonight but he knows about the project.

Mom: I'll have a look at my calendar and see when I'm available. What is this about? Me: You'll find out when



we pitch it to you.

Mom: wait a minute you said the twins will speak to Qhawe  
are you telling me that the twins who are your friends are  
Qhawe's kids

Me: yes mom they are. I  
thought you knew Mom: You  
never told me who their parents  
are.

The kids come down for dinner mom dishes up for us as we eat  
and having a conversation about school Lwanele changes the  
subject:

Lwanele: Guys mom  
has a boyfriend

Lonwabo: Oh she does

Ntando: Who is he?

Lwanele: his name is

Qhawelomzi Mthimkhulu Mom:

Lwanele!!

Lwanele: But it's true mom.

Lonwabo: how do you know  
him Lwanele? Lwanele: I've  
met him

Ntando: How when how come we haven't met him?



Me: He's the father to the twins

Ntando: ok I still want to know how Lwanele met him and got to know she mom's boyfriend. Lwanele: they confirmed it today when we at the mall when his daughter asked if mom was his girlfriend they just couldn't hide besides Khanya is very nosy. I first met him here apparently that he had brought mom home because she wasn't feeling well I think that's the same day found out about father I bumped into him coming downstairs that's when he introduced himself to me but he said he was friend.

Mom: Well he was still a friend.

Ntando: Now he is a boyfriend how serious are you? Mom: Guys this is still new we taking one day at a time.

Khaya: We just happy you finally decided to date and I think this is the one for you but we'll see.

Lonwabo: We are happy for you mom. As long as he is good to you and he is good to us. After we are done dinner we clean up the kitchen and go watch movies in the tv room which reminds me that I saw mom cosy with Bhut' Qhawe here yesterday watching movies but she doesn't know that I know.

## CHAPTER 14

SUNDAY

ZWELIBANZI

I think I need to find myself another tech guy Enerst is seriously not doing the job I pay him for. How can it be to find someone's address. Even the guy I sent to follow her was an idiot. The question is who is helping Khanyisile who does she have on her payroll. This woman is not using any of the security companies here in KZN not one of them has listed her as client even with private security companies she is not listed as a client. I give it her she is smart very smart. I really need a breakthrough here. Khanyi has something I want and I'm going to get it. Tomorrow the lawyer must make sure that custody papers are sent to her I know that's what she's going to be focused on eventually lose focus on other things and let her guard down. My friend walks as I am about to leave to go to the mall.

Sizwe: Zwelibanzi

Me: You know that's how she calls me she has never not once shortened my name when she called me.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sizwe: Tell me something Banzi why are you obsessed with this woman?

Mei: She is the mother of my kids and I don't know there's something about her but right now that's not my focus. I want to get what I want from her first and the rest will follow.

Sizwe: you need to be careful from what you've told me this woman is highly protected. You need to tread carefully.

(At this point in time we are in the car driving to the mall and this idiot Sizwe is driving but he is not driving us to the mall he is driving to La Lucia

ME: Why are we going to La Lucia?

Sizwe: You need a bit of fresh air besides my girl stays here so I come here a lot and I love it I might just consider buying a house here.

(He drives us to La Lucia Mall and we go to Mugg and Bean for breakfast) Me: Why

is she hiding Sizwe

Sizwe: I don't think she is hiding she is just keeping her personal life private very private if might add. You know her she has never been the type to show off.

Me: This whole process is taking too long I need get my business running again I'm losing lots of money Sizwe

because of this.

Sizwe: Zweli you have money lots of it Why don't you just leave this whole thing and start fresh something new.

Look Zweli I really have a bad feeling about this this is not going to end well and you are messing with her kids you will never get those kids she will fight you tooth and nail and the other things I think you should just forget about them. Live your life like you have been leaving it the past 4 years.

Me: I can't Sizwe I really can't just let it go.  
(As we walk out of Mugg and Bean after our breakfast I bump into someone when I look who it is my jaw drops what is she doing here?)

Me:

Khanyi

Her:

Zweliban

zi

Me: What are you doing here?

Her: This is a mall right I'm doing what everybody does at the mall. Sizwe you still hang around with him how are you (she asks hugging him. Khanyi has always had a soft spot



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

for Sizwe.)

Sizwe: I'm good Khanyi and how are you?

Her: I'm good. It was nice to see you Sizwe stay out of trouble. I have to go. Zwelibanzi (and she turns and walks away. Is she really over me she shows no emotion when talking to me.)

Me: let's go we  
need to follow her

Sizwe: you do know  
that



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sponsored

that is a stupid idea she'll know. Look at the car we came here with and she is probably not alone Me: fine I'll let it go for now.

KHANYISILE

Andile: I thought you went to buy muffins

Me: I did until I ran into

Zwelibanzi and Sizwe

Andile: Are you ok did they follow you?

Me: No they didn't. I don't want the muffins anymore

let's go home. (My phone ring and it's Qhawe)

Qhawe:

Hello

Beautiful Me:

Hi Que

Qhawe: what's wrong where are you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm at the mall with Andile I wanted blueberry muffins but I ran into Zwelibanzi at Mugg and bean and I left without buying them. Andile is taking me home.

Qhawe: I'm really sorry about that. Are the kids home? Me: No they are not they are visiting their uncle.

Qhawe: I'll be there in 30 minutes. Me:

Ok. Bye. I hang up.

Me: Qhawe is coming over for a visit.

Andile: That's nice (he says as he parks but I not there's another parked.)

Me: What is Zack doing here? he doesn't come here unless it is really important. Andile: he must have something important to share. Let's go in.

When we walk in Zack and Eddie are in the kitchen making themselves sandwiches. Eddie: I

thought you went to buy muffins

Andile: She ran into Zwelibanzi

Zack: That's why I'm here (the doo bell rings as he says)

Me: Hold that thought. (I go and open the door and it's

Qhawe Bandile and I'm assuming the other guy is Lwazi.

I let them in and Qhawe walks up to me and holds out a paper bag to give to me. “Your muffins my lady.” I just smile and thank him as put them down on the table. He walks up to me



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

and holds me close and whisper in my ear “jump” and I do just that as he lifts me making me wrap my legs around his waist and kisses me ever so gently.)

Qhawe: Are you ok nana

did he hurt you? Me: I'm

fine Que stop worrying.

Lwazi: You let her call you Que (I turn to the side as he says that and then I look at Que. Lwazi's reaction is confusing me and I whisper to Qhawe to put me down and he does.) Sorry how rude of me I'm Lwazi the other friend.

Me: I'm Khanyi his lady (and that causes Qhawe to smile like crazy) So what's wrong with me calling him Que ( I ask as we walk to the kitchen where rest of the guys area seated finishing my food in my kitchen.

Everyone is making themselves sandwiches and having beer.)

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: So what's going on guys?

Zack: I found something while looking into Zwelibanzi.

Remember the company you bought the import and export company well we know that Zwelibanzi was involved in the company somehow but we don't know how. So as it turns

out he was using the company for some of his illegal activities but the problem I have is that I don't know what type of business he was using the company for and he knows that you own the company he managed to uncover that. As you know he was not he only one and ever since you bought the company and changed it around they are losing money.

Bandile: We have the same info and we also get stuck at what he was using the company for and it was definitely not drugs it's something big something that he doesn't anyone to know about. He deals in drugs and diamonds as well. His company is just a front there's nothing legit about it.

Me: Oh my God how did I get myself involved in this why didn't I know about this.

Qhawe: we think that he is coming after you because of whatever business he was doing with the company and the custody case I think he is using it against you so that you can let your guard down he's trying to distract you and whatever document you need to sign regarding the case your lawyer will have to go through them in case he tries to be sneaky by getting you to sign over the company to him thinking that you are signing custody documents.

Zack: Look Khanyi don't worry about anything we will find out what he was using the company for.

(I can't believe this I was with him for 17 years and I knew nothing about all this. I'm so scared for my kids.)

Qhawe: don't be scared ok he won't hurt you or the kids.

We are here for you all of us and he kisses me.

The guys: GET A ROOM. (and they laugh. I just put my face in my hands and hide myself in his chest.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

## CHAPTER 15

MONDAY

KHANYIISILE

I'm in my office pacing up and down I can't keep calm Luyanda is on the one sitter couch watching me. He knows not to say anything when I'm like this. I'm angry this man is really testing my limits the mere fact that I don't know what he wants from me at this moment is driving me crazy. It's bad enough that I found out yesterday that he is a criminal. How did I not see it 17 years with him how did I miss it there must have been signs. I really want to kill this man but how am I going to look at my kids knowing I killed their father.

Luyanda: Khanyi please sit down you've been pacing up and down for 30 minutes now and it's giving me a headache. Calm down please.

Me: I can't believe you just told me to calm down. I have just been served with papers suing me for full custody of my kids and the judge you trust Judge Smith won't be presiding over the case. Which judge are we getting

probably a judge he bought. The man is pushing me to play dirty and you busy telling me to calm down.

Luyanda: I understand but we can't discuss this with you like this. I'm not the enemy I am here to help. I've never seen you like this in the 3 years that I've been your lawyer I have never seen you like this.

Me: that's because nothing ever involved my kids. He's hitting me where it hurts the most Luyanda. (He picks up his phone and makes a call. "Get in here" he says and hangs up.) We are going to work it out. You won't lose your kids I promise you that.

Me: I know it won't take him long to find out where we stay I can't hide forever . Luyanda the guys can't even find out what he used the company for.

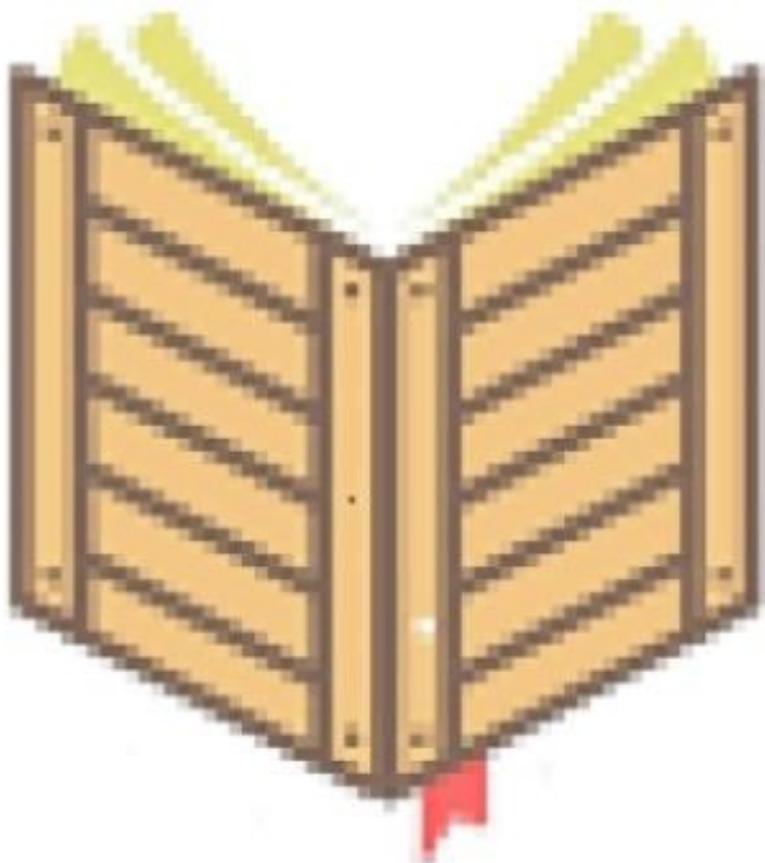
Luyanda: Why don't you just sign the company over to him?

Me: Luyanda uqhunyiwe (are you high)? First of all when I bought that company it had illegal activities attached to it over the years I've cleaned it up stopped the illegal activities and it's blossoming and now you telling to give it away. I don't know if you forgot that one the activities was human trafficking people got arrested because of me and I knew that I was safe I knew no one would find out I

never thought the person to find out would my ex-husband. If you have nothing useful to say just shut up.

(He tries to say something but Andile walks in.)

Andile: What's going on?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Luyanda: She's spitting fire and I can't keep her calm I seem to be making her angry more. Deal with her please calm her.

Andille: Khanyi talk to me

Me: What do you want me to say Andile he's hitting me where it hurts the most and I'm sure the judge that will be handling the case is a judge he bought.

Andile: Luyanda what happened to Smith.

Luyanda: He is out of the country.

Andile: Great just great.

Me: Andile I can't take this anymore. (He walks over to me and just hugs me tight)

Andile: It's time to go home so why don't I take you home we hit the gym and let that anger out. He lets go of me and I gather my things and we all leave.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ANELISA

I need to call Qhawe and make arrangements to see them before they start with their exams I know he won't let

me see them when they start with exams. I really need to my relationship with my kids maybe things can also work out with Qhawe. Yes I'm seeing someone but Qhawe I miss having a family I miss living under the same roof as my kids. My boyfriend walks in:

Him: Hey

Me: How are you?

Him: I'm good but you look like you have a lot on your mind what's eating you? Me: I'm just missing my kids that's all.

Him: Why don't you call them?

Me: I will tonight I have to speak to their father about getting them this weekend. Him: Baby we have the business gala dinner this weekend on Saturday.

Me: I'm sorry I forgot about that. Oh my God I don't even have a dress.

Him: We can go shopping now if you want but before we go I want to talk to you about something Me: ok I'm listening

Him: When we started out I didn't want anything serious I just wanted to have fun but now I'm falling you I'm developing strong feelings I don't know if it's love but I

know I'm feeling something and I know you still have a thing for your ex-husband but I want you to give me a chance to make you happy help you get your life together. You don't have to say anything right now just think about it. (I smile and nod.) Come let's go get that dress.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I grab my phone and my bag and we leave. As we drive to the mall I'm lost in my thoughts. I didn't realise he had feelings for me and he knows I still have feelings for Qhawe. Maybe I should just forget about Qhawe and focus on my kids and this guy next to me. Maybe Qhawe has moved on maybe he hasn't I don't know arghhh.

Before I forget let me call Qhawe. Babe do you mind if I make a call he looks at me smile and nods. This guy has a beautiful smile.

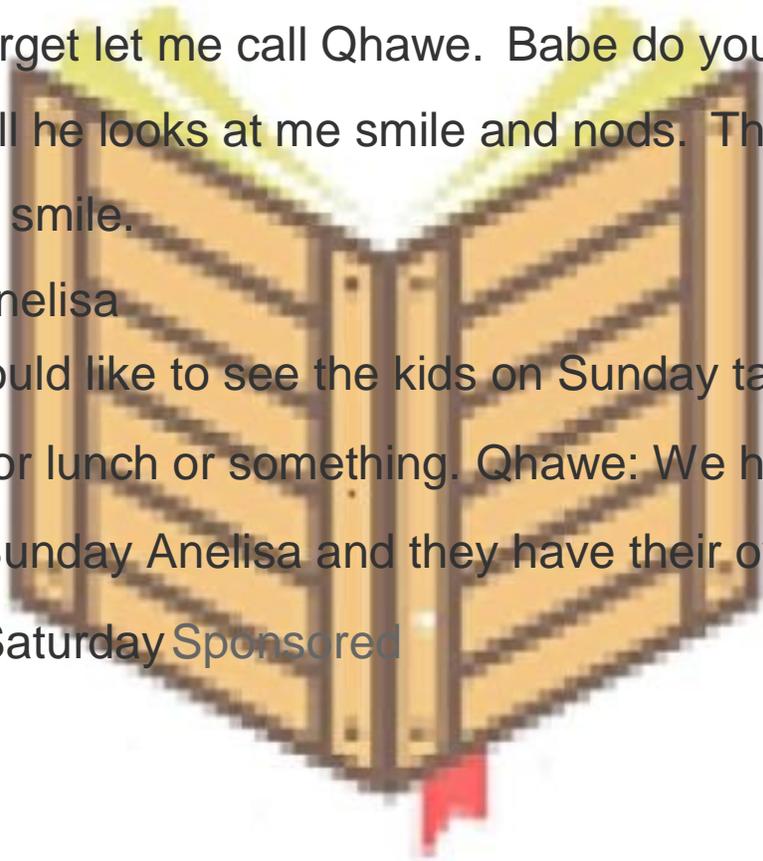
Qhawe: Anelisa

Me: hi I would like to see the kids on Sunday take them out for lunch or something. Qhawe: We have plans on Sunday Anelisa and they have their own plans for Saturday Sponsored

take them out for lunch or something.

Qhawe: We have plans on Sunday Anelisa and they have their own plans for Saturday why don't you call them and see if you can do dinner Friday.

Me: Oh I see. Thanks I'll call



NOVELSGURU.COM

them. Bye (I hang up) Him:

and?

Me: They have plans on Saturday and Sunday he suggested I speak to them about dinner Friday night.

Him: well there's still an opportunity so call them tonight and see.

We get to the mall and start looking for a perfect dress and find it. A beautiful straight cut long baby blue dress with a slit with silver sandals. We also go and fetch and suit and grab something to eat.

QHAWELOMZI

I received a message from Khanyi earlier telling me she received the custody papers from Zwelibanzi I need to call her I haven't spoken to her I'm sure she is not ok.

Today was just busy in and out of meeting the whole day most of them were new clients and I'm sure she hates me right now at least I'm done for the day. I call her and it rings unanswered. I'll try her later again. Let me go home I don't feel like cooking today maybe we'll order in. I drive home and when I get there the girls are cooking with

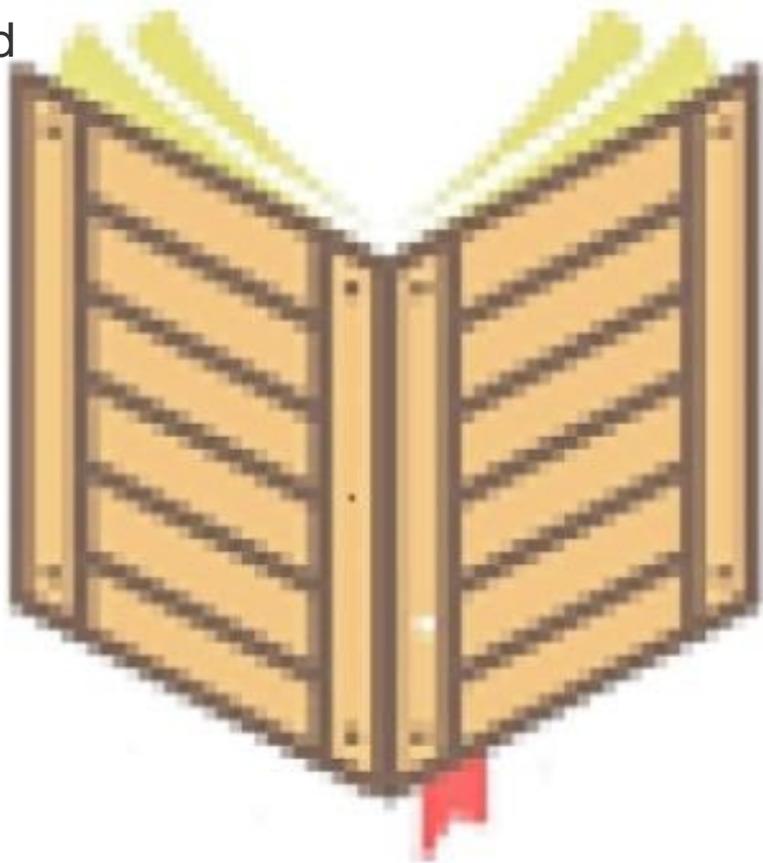
Mam' Nkosi. This woman does a lot of work in this house and still wants to cook. I've told her so many times that we can manage the cooking but she never listens.

Me: hello

everyone

The girls:

Daddy Dad



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mam' Nkosi: Molo

ndodana Sibahle:

Dinner is almost

ready

Bandile: You've been saying that for the past 10 minutes I'm hungry. Sibahle: You should've cooked then.

Me: Let me go change first I'll bath after dinner. (My phone rings as I walk upstairs to my room and it's my lady.)

Me: Hello beautiful

Her: Hello handsome I see you tried calling me

Me: yes I did. I'm sorry I didn't call earlier my day was just hectic with meetings. I got your message are you ok?

Her: Not really Que he knows me Que he knows I'll do anything for my kids. I don't want to say anything to the kids and they can see I'm not ok it's enough that they know he is back anything else they don't need to know.

Me: I understand you. Where are the kids now? Did Khaya speak to you about this projects he wants to start with his brothers and the twins.

Her: They'll be down in a minute for dinner yes he did I think we can listen to the pitch on Thursday if you are available.

Me: Thursday afternoon is fine. We are also about to have dinner I'm in my room changing.

Her: Can you sneak out after you done with the kids. I would but I'm being watched like a hawk in this house.

Me: I definitely can. I'll see you in two hours.

Her: Two hours it is then. See you later handsome. Me:

Later beautiful.

I head to the kitchen and they are all here waiting for me.

Bandile: Dad what took you so long we've been waiting Me: I

had to take an important call.

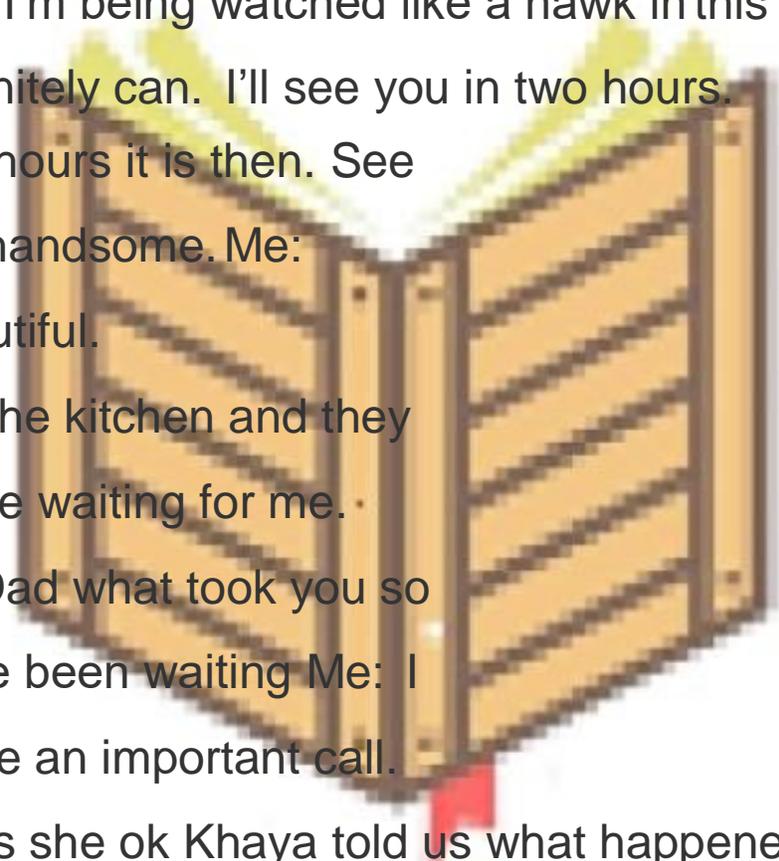
Bandile: Is she ok Khaya told us what happened.

Me: she'll be fine she is a strong woman. How did you know I was talking to her? Bandile: I heard

you talking when I went to call you.

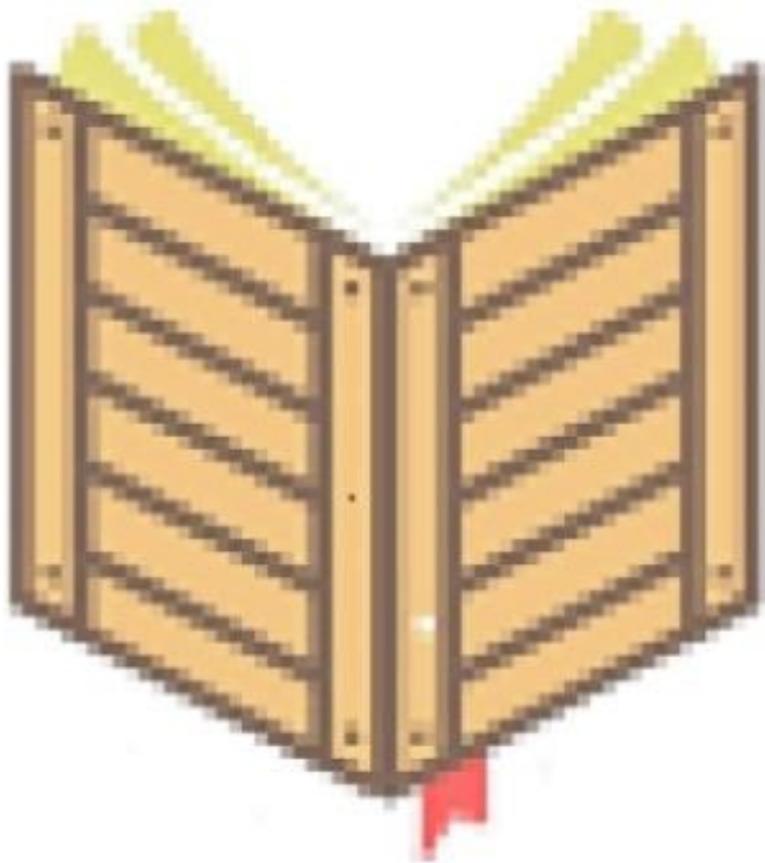
Me: I see. Let's eat we have homework to do right ladies and exams are starting next week. Are you guys ready?

Sibahle: Yes dad we are. Dad there's something



NOVELSGURU.COM

we would like to talk to you about. Me: What's that Princess?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sibahle: We were talking before you got home well we would like to spend the holidays at Khanyi's house since we know about her already and we know she has kids we would like to spend the holidays getting to know them.

Lisakhanya: yes dad and I spoke to Lwanele about it and she said she would speak to her mom and it turns out we all go to the same school.

Me: I didn't know they went to Redwood. Look I don't know guys I think it's too soon but I'll speak to her and find out besides they probably have plans already for the holidays.

Lisakhanya: Please dad if they say no we'll understand. Me: and if I say no?

Zenande: We'll understand.

Me: you do know that you are supposed to go to the Eastern Cape to your grandparents. Sibahle: We know dad maybe we can divide the holiday. Half here and half in the Eastern Cape. Me: You guys really thought about this

The girls: yes.

I guess the boys have no say in this since they are quiet.

We eat the boys clean up the kitchen while I help the girls

with homework. When all is done everyone is in their rooms I leave. I get to Khanyi's place I call her to open the door don't want to wake people by ringing the doorbell. She opens for me and just throws herself at me and I just hold her tight while we are standing at the door she's crying. I whisper in her ear to jump and she does and I lift her carry her inside closing the door behind me and I walk upstairs to her room I sit down on the bed with her still crying in my arms.

Me: It's going to be ok my love.

Khanyi: I hate him Que (she says wiping her tears even when she cries she looks beautiful

She needs a destruction. She is sitted on my lap with her legs still wrapped around my waist and she is looking at me not saying anything like she is thinking sometheing.)

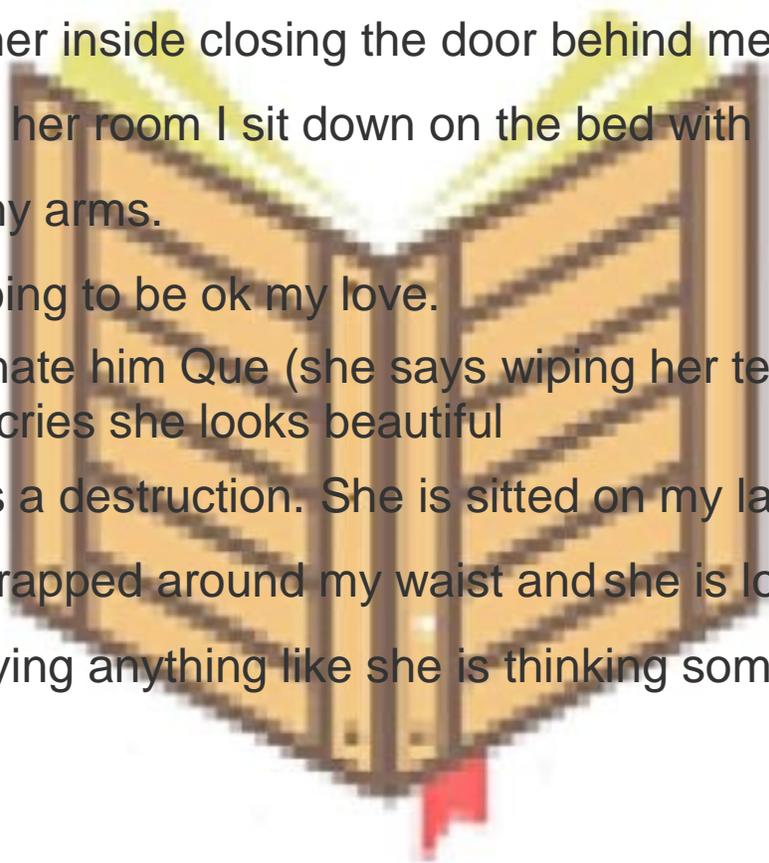
Khanyi:

Que Me:

Yes my

lady

Khanyi: Can you sleep over I just want you to hold me while I sleep. Me: I can do that are you sure though?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: yes I'm sure (she kisses me like it's the last time and I'm enjoying it. We lay in her bed watching movies talking about everything except Zwelibanzi. She eventually falls asleep in my arms.)

## CHAPTER 16

TUESDAY



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

## KHANYISLE

When I wake I notice that the tv is still on I don't remember when I fell asleep. He stayed he really stayed I move arm from gently and go to the bathroom and do my business and get back to bed when I checked the time it was 3:00 AM. I doubt I'll go back to sleep now. I just sit there watching him sleep this man is handsome I never too the time to admire he is still in his sweat pants and t-shirt. We fell asleep on top of the covers well the room is warm thanks to the panel heaters installed. He wakes up looks at me

Qhawe: Are you ok what's wrong?

Me: I'm ok. I couldn't go back to sleep so I was watching you sleep.

Qhawe: Is that so what time is it? (he asks getting out of bed and going to the bathroom.)

Me: it's just after 3 (I say when he comes out of the bathroom. (he get into bed lays on his side and looks at me.)

Qhawe: You are up early

Me: I needed to pee. (I just stare at him) Him: what why

are looking at me like that?

I don't answer him I just push me gently so that he can lie on his back and I get on top of him he places his hands on my waist and I hold his face in mine and kiss him. This is not the normal

kiss we normally have this is the kiss that says I'm horny and I want you. I feel his hands grabbing my thighs and lifting me a little and adjusting himself so that he is comfortable. His hands move up and down gently squeezing thighs here and there. I help him out of t-shirt and go back to kissing him with my hands playing around on his chest after a while he takes my nightdress off and I'm left with just my panties he starts playing with my tits squeezing and slight pinching my nipples he sucks on my tit gently biting on the nipple while the other hand is busy with my other boob he does this for a while switching from boob to another. I can feel my wetness I can feel my fluids flowing down there. I haven't been touched by man in a long time a very long time and I swear Qhawe is going to make me cum just by touching me. My body is responding to every touch his touch feels like a feather moving on my skin his hands are making love to my body. In a split second I find myself breathing heavy with him on top of me kissing me like there's no tomorrow. I whisper in his ear "I want you" he stops and looks at me:

Qhawe: Are you sure? (I just nod) I need your answer my lady. Me: yes I'm sure.

He kisses me with lust his lips move from mine to my neck to my chest sucks on my boobs slightly biting the nipples a little bit of pain pleasure mixed together while I'm focused on that I feel his one hand on my nuna I don't even know when he took off my panties

Qhawe: you are so wet nana. (I just smile)

He takes his forefinger and plays with my clit and at this moment I'm breathing heavily and moaning like nobody's business he kisses me again his finger hasn't stopped playing with my clit and I am a moaning mess in his mouth. (I'm not loud when it comes to sex yes I moan and scream but I'm loud enough only for my partner to hear.) His lips move to my neck again to myboobs to my stomach and stops but his finger hasn't stopped using his other hand he opens my legs wide for him and with the hand playing with my clit he brings his thumb to play slightly pinching my clit with his fingers and I can't hold it when I look at him he is kneeling between my legs so the that my legs stay open.

Me: Que I'm

cumming

NOVELSGURU.COM

Qhawe: cum for

me baby

And I just let go he lets go of my clit and I feel his tongue on it and his teeth gently biting on it which is making my orgasm even more intense and he inserts a finger while sucking on my

clit. This man is making sure this orgasm lasts long and in the process he is trying to kill me.

Me: Qhawe I can't stop( he bites a little harder on my clit making the whole thing more intense)ahhhhhh Que.

Right now I think his finger has found my g-spot. Truth be told I have never experienced such an intense and long orgasm.

Eventually it stops he comes up to my face looks at me and kisses me again. He flips me over and makes me lie flat on my stomach he kisses me from the cheek all the way to the back of my neck and right now I'm afraid he is going to find my weak spot my body is between his legs I can feel his hard dick on my ass the kisses move to my shoulders between my shoulders moving down my back kissing it all over and there my body betrays me and responds in a way I didn't want it to he brings his face to mine one of his hands on my stomach lifting me a bit he brings his right leg between my legs and uses it to open my legs he kisses my back again and I feel myself overflowing down there without warning he is in.

Me: Mhhhh Qhawe

Qhawe: I'll be kissing your back more often (he whispers)  
I try to respond but he goes in harder and deeper making me scream again again and again. After a while he pulls out and flips me over wraps my legs around his waist and he goes in hard and deep slowly reaching every corner of my nuna. He goes in hard again and I feel my orgasm

coming and I know he can see that I'm about to cum. He is in deep but he pushes in further without moving back he pushes in three times and I explode.

Qhawe: I need you to lock your legs tight around my waist don't let go until I'm done. Me: OK

I do as I'm told and he is gently pumping me deep his breathing is heavier his moans are louder my hands grabbing on tight on his waist.

Qhawe: Keep your legs like that and your hands on my waist. Right now it feels like I'm pulling him in deeper and deeper inside he slightly moves to the side he finds my g-spot

Qhawe: Cum with me baby

(he whispers and there I'm done I let go and he does too and flops on top of me. I play with my hands on his back while we try to get our breathing back to normal. I am so tired right now.) Me: You almost killed me with that first orgasm (he moves trying to pull out I stop him holding him tight.) not yet let's stay like this for a while.

Qhawe: am I not heavy for you?

Me: a little but I'm enjoying this moment. (he adjusts himself so that I don't feel all his weight. We stay like that for a while and he pulls out after a while and lies next to me pulling me into his arms. Eventually we get out of bed and shower together. When we are done getting dressed we go downstairs for tea and it's 5:00 am he has to

leave early otherwise he'll be late for work and his kids don't know that he didn't sleep at home.

Qhawe: I'll see you at lunch.

Me: Definitely. (he kisses me slowly. I don't want him to go.)

Qhawe: don't worry you'll see me later ok. (he kisses me again and this time I let him go.)

ZWELIBANZI

I hope Khanyi knows she hide from forever eventually I'll find out where they stay I want to see my kids and I know she won't let and the only way to do it is a surprise visit. I wonder how tight the security is since she is not listed with any security company.

My lawyer walks:

Me: Jonathan I hope you have good news for me.

Jonathan: The papers have been delivered we just need a court a date which I have to discuss with her and we are meeting tomorrow.

Me: And Judge?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Jonathan: Judge Smith is on leave and he is out of the country a different Judge will handling the case.

Me: who is the Judge?

Jonathan: I don't know yet. But I'll let you know when I know.

Me: Just keep in mind that I'll do whatever it takes to win this  
(Sizwe walks without knocking I'm used to it)

Jonathan: Sizwe

how are you Sizwe:

I'm good man.

Jonathan: Zweli her lawyer is a very good lawyer so be prepared that you might lose this case and remember the lawyer will ask for the kids to take a stand they are old enough to stand in court as witnesses.

Sizwe: he is right man.

Me: Look Jonathan I don't pay you to lose this case and you better make sure that those kids don't take the stand in court.

Sizwe: How is going to do that?

Me: He is the lawyer he'll figure it out.

Jonathan: I have to go I have another meeting. Sizwe talk some sense into your friend. With that said Jonathan walks out.

Sizwe: you are losing your mind you know that right.

Me: No I'm not I just want what I want and I'm going to get it. Sizwe: You really need to let this custody thing go man.

Me: Look Sizwe I know you've always had a soft spot for just as he does for you. This case is the only that will make her weak.

Those kids are her weakness.

Sizwe: having a soft spot for her has nothing to do with telling you the truth. You are going to lose. I know you've always hated being the truth just like when I told you that you will lose her if you don't treat her right and what happened you lost her and you think you are to get her back when you are tormenting her like this. Chew on that Zwelibanzi. I have to go.

With that being said he left. Sizwe doesn't understand. I need them back in my life and I'm going to do whatever it takes. Shit I need a date for this weekend.

## CHAPTER 17

TUESDAY

EVENING

KHAYA

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Hello

family

Llanelli: big

brother

Mom: you are home a lot lately what's wrong don't you have food at your house. (everyone just laugh)

Me: so you guys don't want me here.

Lonwabo: we didn't say that. Mom just asked if you don't have a food at your house. Me: Lonwabo you are being a smart ass.

Mom: Khaya language

Me: Sorry mom. (My siblings laugh)

Ntando: Anyway you are just in time for a video to Linamandla while we wait for mom and Lonwabo to finish cooking.

Me: Ok call her. (he gets mom's tablet and calls Lina. The video call is fun we update her about everything that's happening leaving out the Zwelibanzi issue. We also told her that mom has a boyfriend she wanted to know everything. Mom would just laugh at us talking about her like she is not here. All in all it was great talking to my sister. After the video call we sat down for dinner talking about our day.)

Mom: it's actually a good thing you are here I need you to babysit your siblings and they don't have home work today they just need to study. They are starting with exams next week.

Lonwabo: Why do we need a babysitter where are you going? Ntando: it's obvious Lonwabo.

Lwanele: Mom has never needed a babysitter during the week she obviously has a date. Lonwabo: oh yeah I forgot mom is seeing someone now.

Me: How can you forget something so important dude? It's fine mom I'll use a guest room. When are you leaving?

Mom: in an hour that will be around 20:00. Before I forget you guys can pitch your idea to us on Thursday afternoon. I think we'll use my home office.

Me: Oh ok. I'll speak to the twins.

Lwanele: Mom I have something to ask you. Mom:

Go ahead baby

Lwanele: Well I had a conversation with Lisakhanya yesterday they would like to spend the holidays with us.

Since we already met we would like to spend time together .

Mom: I understand but can't you guys do that over weekends does it have to be this holiday and you know you are going to the Eastern Cape this holiday to your grandparents.

Me: Hold on a second who are we talking about who is Lisakhanya? Mom: Qhawe's daughter remember we met her at mall over the weekend.

Ntando: I would like to meet them.

Lonwabo: Me too.

Mom: I know you would love too but it's too early to be spending holidays together.

Lwanele: Mom please I really like these girls and I know Linamandla will like them too. Please mom.

Mom: I don't know but I'll speak to Qhawe about it right now I have to go otherwise I'll be late. Me: Mom you guys don't really

have to sneak around anymore. We know about you guys he doesn't have to come here when we are asleep. I know him

Lwanele has met you will

him introduce him to the little brothers and Linamandla when she's back. You've met his 3 daughters and now you have to

meet the twins. Don't fight it mom just let it happen I really don't think he's going to hurt us or you for that matter.

Mom: I really don't know when you guys got so smart and wise. You were babies just yesterday and today you are giving me advice about my relationship. Wow. I have to go. Khaya please lock up. I'll back later.

Me: bye mom. We

love you.

## QHAWELOMZI

Everything is done kids are in their rooms and now I'm sitting in the kitchen having ice cream waiting for Khanyi to get here.

.....FLASH

BACK.....

.....

Khanyi: I bring food.

Me: I thought I was coming to your office.

Khanyi: Well I couldn't wait I'm hungry and I didn't want to eat alone.

Me: I see (I stand and walk towards her while she is busy putting the food on small coffee table in my office and hold her from behind. I whisper in her ear)

Me: You said you couldn't wait are you hungry for food or are you hungry for me. (she turns around to face me she is so short I like it and I just kiss her and she releases a soft moan I stop.)

Khanyi: I'm hungry for real food.

Me: Are sure about that ( I say

kissing her again) Khanyi: No

Que

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sponsored

I stop.)

Khanyi: I'm hungry for real food.

Me: Are sure about that ( I say kissing her again)

Khanyi: No Que I'm never having sex with you again. You are too big and my nuna is burning from this morning. (and she pouts)

I couldn't help myself I just laughed.

.....

.....END OF FLASH

BACK.....

.....

Oh she is here I get up to open the door there she stands she looks so cute in her sweatpants and a hoodie.

Me: Please come in. (I say pulling her to my chest and close the door behind her. While I'm holding her I walk back to the door until her back is against it. I lift her and she wraps her legs around my waist and push her against the door and kiss her after a while we stop I could feel myself getting hard. ) HI

Khanyi: Hey

Me: ( I put her down) come let's go to the kitchen I was having ice cream. Khanyi: really

now I think I am learning that you have a sweet tooth.

Me: I do have a sweet tooth. Would you like some.

Khanyi: yes please ( I lift her and place her on the kitchen counter. I think she enjoys this business of being lifted. I dish up more ice cream for us in one bowl.)

Me: Would like some wine?

Khanyi: yes please dry red.

Me: I know Rupert and Rothchild it's also my favourite.

Khanyi: Hayi Qhawe how do you know I don't remember telling you.

Me: Remember the first time we spent time together at The VG club remember when Bandile said we have more in common than just cars. He meant the wine.

Khanyi: I see. ( she takes a sip of the wine and closes her eyes and she lets it sit in her mouth enjoying the moment and she swallow and when she opens her eyes I'm standing in front of her I open her legs and stand between them and kiss her. I love kissing her she has very soft kissable

lips. And someone clears their throat and we both turn to see who it is and it's the twins. Khanyi just hides her face in my chest.)

Me: What are you doing here I thought you were in your rooms

Banele: Nope we were upstairs with the girls and we are on way to our rooms and the exit is here in the kitchen and I wanted some ice cream.

Bandile: Aren't you going

to introduce us? Me: Do I have to do that right now.

Bandile: yes dad you do. What if she is not here tomorrow when we wake up. The girls have met her already.

Me: guys you caught us in compromising position and you want me to do introductions (Khanyi is laughing in my chest she hasn't even turned to look at these two idiots in front us of right now. Banele: Dad a compromising position would have been us walking in on you having sex on the kitchen counter

Khanyi: Que it's

fine really. Me:

Are you sure?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Bandile: yes she is sure dad please move and introduce us. Wait did she just call you Que wait let's put a pin on that we'll come back to that point.

I move from where I was standing which was between Khanyi's legs and stand next to her.

Me: Khanyi these are my twin boys who are friends with Khaya

Bandile and Banele. Boys this Khaya's Mom Khanyi.

Banele: You could have just said your girlfriend (they laugh.)

Nice to finally Miss Sondlo BAndile: We've heard a lot about you .

Khanyi: I've had a lot about you too.

Banele: (busy eating his ice cream) I hope it's good things Khanyi: So far so good.

Bandile: let's go back to the pinned topic. Dad you let her call you Que. Khanyi: Kanti what is it about you and being called Que.

Bandile: Dad doesn't like being called Que everyone who knows him they never call him that even mom never called him that. He just doesn't like it.

Khanyi: how come you never told me how come you let me call you Que

Me: I like the way it sounds when you say the way you say it turns me on. (I whisper the last part to her so that the boys don't hear it.

Banele: Let us love and live you. We hope to see you tomorrow morning for breakfast sisi. Bandile: She loves us already she'll be

here.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Ok that's enough go now. Goodnight don't forget to lock

Me: I'm sorry about that. This is really not how I wanted to introduce you to the kids. Khanyi: it's ok really. They are quite something.

Me: yes they are. Now where were we before we rudely interrupted. ( I move closer to her for a kiss but blocks it with her hand.

Khanyi: We were moving this little party of ours upstairs before the girls walk in on us.

We take the wine and our glasses and go my bedroom where we just sit and chill talking. She tells me about how her kids wanting to spend the holidays with my kids. These kids don't understand that it's too soon but it looks like things are happening the way they want to happen we just have to go with the flow and we have decided to have a meeting with the kids and discuss the holiday issue . She tells me her nuna is burning and I feel for her. I am gifted and she is very tight she is still going to burn. Tonight I'll let her be.

## CHAPTER 18

WEDNESDAY MORNING

NOVELSGURU.COM

QHAWELOMZI

She didn't go home last night she slept here. I could get used to this waking up in the morning with her in my arms. She looks

so peaceful like she is not going to wake up to a mountain of problems she has to deal with at least she's not alone. It's just after 04:00 and I don't want to wake her but I have to she has no clothes here I should get that sorted at least if she had some clothes I would let her sleep in. I move closer to her face and kiss her after a while she responds Me: It's time to wake up beautiful

Khanyi: I don't want to (sounding very sleepy and I kiss her again) if this is how you are going to wake me up in the morning maybe I should just sleep next to you every night and get beautiful morning kisses when I wake up.

Me: That I would definitely not mind and besides this is not just a morning kiss it's a kiss that leads to my breakfast. (I kiss her again this time more passionately and she's responding. I make her lie on her back so I can be on top of her I quickly take her panties and she stops the kiss.) Khanyi: is that the breakfast you want?

Me: yes my love what did you think I was talking about?

Khanyi: Kodwa Qhawe ( I just kiss her and take her t-shirt off. I move my hand down to her nuna and start fingering as she moans in my mouth. She is so wet. I stop kissing and move down to her nuna I lick her and start sucking her clit and insert two finger she feels so warm and so wet. I feel her hands holding my head pulling it towards her and i take my fingers out and move my tongue to her hole with her pulling me in and begging me to go deeper I do as requested I stop when she is about to cum.)

Me: Don't cum

yet baby Khanyi:

I can't hold it

Me: You have to baby (I kiss her again and gently push myself in I struggle a bit like I did the first time we made love.

Eventually I go in I push in further and deeper so she can take all of me in I can see she feeling a bit of pain she's flinching)

Baby look at me are you ok you want me to stop? (she nods and shakes her head at the same time) talk baby (I say smiling at her)

Khanyi: Stop smiling. I'm ok and don't stop.

Me: don't worry you'll get used to it (she pulls me in for a kiss and she starts moving under me and I move with her she moves her hands to my waist holding it tight in between the kisses she tells to go deeper and not move. I push myself in deeper and hold my position and she starts

moving she's making me groan loud and her soft moans are not

helping the situation the way she is moving and I start to move again.)

Khanyi: Please don't move (I let her be and I can feel my orgasm how does she do it she is driving me crazy right now)

Me: Cum with me baby. ( I feel her grip on my waist tightening thank God she does not have long nails. I pull out and go in deep again I repeat that 3 times and we both climax at the same time. She doesn't let me pull out I adjust myself so that she doesn't have all my weight on top

her she's playing with her fingers on my back I like this this moment it feels good. We stay like this for a while. We get out of bed and take a bath and get dressed. She has to go home and change for work.)

Khanyi: I can't stay for breakfast otherwise I'll be late.

Me: You need to have clothes here but we'll sort that out later. (she pulls me to the bed and she gets on and stands on the bed which makes her slightly taller than me and kisses me as she jumps on me to carry her wrapping her legs around my waist.)

Khanyi: I love this. You can carry me downstairs my

nuna hurts I can't walk. Me: I'm sorry beautiful I can't help it (I say walking with her downstairs)

Morning love birds (and that's the twins what are they doing up this early they never wake up this early it's just after 06:00)

Me: what are you doing here why are you up so early (I'm asking all this still carrying Khanyi and I can feel her wiggling)

Khanyi: Que please put me down (she whispers)

Bandile: Dad I think you can put her down now. (I put her down) We wanted to see sis' Khanyi before she leaves.

Me: how did you know she slept here? Banele:

lucky guess dad.

Khanyi: Morning boys would love to stay and chat but I have to go before the girls come downstairs. I'm late already.

Bandile: Sis' Khanyi when can we visit Me:

We'll talk about that later.

Twins: Ok

Banele: bye love birds we also have to get ready for class. Khanyi: bye guys.

Que I have to go.

Me: Ok (kissing her and I walk her to the car and kiss her again. I'll see you later.) Khanyi: ok. Bye (and she drives off.)

**KHANYISILE**

I think those twins are going to be the death of me. What is

Qhawelomzi doing to me. I can feel myself melting for him. Can I really let him in am I ready we'll just have to see. Let me not over think it. This morning was amazing but his dick I don't think I can ever get used to it. In all of my life of having sex I've never been with someone that big. I'm used to the normal thicksize and he is just not normal but amazingly enough I'm enjoying him I want more of him I get wet just think about him. He has called 3 times already today I'm not used to this but I'm loving it. My lawyer walks in interrupting my thoughts;

Luyanda: and that smile?

Me: None of your business Mr Langa.

Luyanda: I see. Whoever he is he must keep doing whatever he is doing I like seeing you like

this and Andile is happy to see you smiling regardless of the situation. I hope I'll meet him soon. Me: Who says it's man?

Luyanda: I just know. Anyway the reason I'm here I like seeing you like this and Andile is happy to see you smiling regardless of the situation. I hope I'll meet him soon.

Me: Who says it's man?

Luyanda: I just know. Anyway the reason I'm here I want to discuss a few things with you. We need to get a court date preferably sooner than later. I also want to ask if you will be ok letting the kids take the stand in court reason being if Zwelibanzi has bribed the Judge which I think it will be the case the kids testimony will make the case stronger and the judge might be forced to side with the kids. I'm trying to get Judge Smith to come back as well. He's the only judge I know that can't be bought. I need to buy time. You also need to understand that Zwelibanzi will fight for the kids not speak in court he knows it will be his downfall.

Me: I here you but if the kids have to appear in court then I need the court date to be after they finish with their exams I don't need my kids destructed by all this. That should also give you time to get Smith back.

Luyanda: that's perfect when are they starting exams?

Me: Next week and it's going to take 2 weeks so you have two weeks to make it rain. Luyanda: Awesome you are so calm today I think I'm going to like this guy.

Andile: What guy? (as he walks in)

Luyanda: The one that's making her smile and keeping her calm like this.

Andile: Oh him don't worry you'll meet him soon he is a nice. In fact you might know him Qhawelomzi Mthimkhulu.

Me: Andile really now.

Andile: What he was going to find out anyway.

Luyanda: Noooo really. I know him I was his ex-wife's lawyer 6 years ago when they got divorced. Khanyi you hit the jackpot and this time stop hesitating just go with the flow.

Andile: That's what we've been telling her even the kids have been telling her that.

me: You guys sound like a bunch of school girls. Please leave my office (and my phone rings and it's my business cell.)

Khanyi Hello

Him: it's good to hear your voice how are you Angel Face? Me: don't call me that how did you get this number?

Him: it's the only cellphone number listed under your name.

Me: What do you want Zwelibanzi? (the guys look at me worried)

Him: I told you I want you and the kids back and I have a business proposal for you seeing that you are a business woman. Who knew my little Angel Face would turn out to be a successful business woman.

Me: and I told you that you won't get us back and as for the business proposal you take it shove it up where the sun doesn't shine which is up your ass.

Him: Come now Khanyi at least listen to my proposal.

Me: Not interested see you in court. (I hang up

and take a deep breath.)Luyanda: Are you ok

What does he want?

Me: he says he has a business

proposal for me Andile: I

wonder what game is he

playing?

Me: it doesn't matter he won't win. Luyanda give me your car

keys take mine. (he hands me his keys no questions asked.)

Andile: Where are you going?

Me: I need to see Qhawe and you are not coming that's why

I'm taking his car. I grab my bag and leave.)

Andile: Khanyi wait.

Me: I'll see you later guys and I'll be fine. ( I leave and drive

off to Qhawe's office when I enter the building I ask the

receptionist if he is available and she says yes tells me to go

through this girl has a stinking attitude. )thank you. (I walk into

his office without knocking)

Qhawe: Hey I wasn't expecting ... ( I don't let him finish I

just throw myself on his lap and kiss him. It's a good thing I'm

wearing a dress. He pulls out of the kiss and looks me) Hey are

you ok? (I kiss him again with so much passion and he responds

and I can feel his dick getting hard.)

Me: I need you I want you and I want you to fuck me hard.

(he looks at me a bit hesitant) Qhawe : are you sure I might just tear up that little whole of yours.

Me: Qhawe please and no foreplay

(he doesn't waste any time he puts me on his desk and takes off his jacket while I take off my panties he walks to the door and locks it. Comes back and stands between my legs and kisses while dropping his pants and I his fingers on my nuna I know I'm wet already he takes my left and open it wide and places my right leg on his shoulder without warning he enters me hard which makes me scream.)

Qhawe: I need you to keep it down my love this office is not sound proof.

( I try to say something he doesn't let me he does what I asked him to do until we both reach our climax. I think he tore up shit my nuna is burning. I needed that. He lifts and walks with me to another door in the office and it's the bathroom. We clean up and get dressed. When we are done he he goes and unlocks the door. He makes me sit on the couch and he sits next to me.)

Me: Que my nuna hurts it really hurts.( I say putting my head on his chest)

Qhawe: I'm sorry Beautiful but you asked me to be rough.

Uzoyiqhela (you'll get used to it) vha. I'll take you home and run you a nice hot bath to sooth the pain but not before you tell me what happened.

Me: Zwelibanzi happened he called... ( I don't finish and a lady walks in)

Lady: I'm sorry I didn't know you were busy your assistant is not at her desk neither was the receptionist.

Qhawe: Anelisa how many times must I tell you not come to my office without calling what do you want vele. You know never mind as you can see I'm busy . (oh this is the ex-wife he told me about.)

Anelisa: I'm sorry. ( she looks at me and leaves. I don't understand why our intimate moments have to be interrupted all the time. )

Qhawe: Khanyi look at me. Tell what happened with Zwelibanzi.

I tell him everything that happened and to say he is angry is an understatement. He takes me home as promised runs me a hot bath.

CHAPTER 19

NOVELSGURU.COM

THURS

DAY

ANELIS

A

I'm having lunch with my friend Jessica at the mall we are at Mugg and Bean.

Jessica: Lisa I don't know what to do my family really doesn't like him and I don't know why. Me: Try and find out why they don't like him Jess maybe it's something that you can fix

Jess: I don't think it can be fixed mom always had this one guy that she wanted me to date back then he lived in UMhlanga but later moved to the Eastern Cape. I was glad when he moved because mom stopped pestering me about dating him. She wants me to date for money and I can't do that.

Me: Well Jess sometimes love is not enough.

Jess: No man Lisa you need to stop ..... ( she doesn't finish)

Me: What's wrong?

Jess: Isn't that your ex-husband? (I turn to look and it's him he's with her the woman I saw him with yesterday in his office.)

Me: yes that's him

Jess: Wow they look cute she's short they are coming here.

I watch as they walk in holding hands Qhawe is smiling like I've never seen him smile before and she is laughing at whatever he is saying. The waitress takes them to their table.

Jess brings me out of my daze

Jess: are you ok? We can

leave if you want to. Me: I'm

fine we don't have to leave.

Jess: Lisa I thought you had moved on I mean you even have a boyfriend now.

Me: I have moved on. I just don't know why it hurts seeing him with someone else. I went to his office yesterday I just had this need to see him and I walked in on him with her sitting on the couch with her head on his chest it hurt so much what's worse Qhawe didn't even give me a minute of his time he just said he was busy.

Jess: Lisa don't do this to yourself. You messed up your marriage with him remember. You cheated and worst of all you didn't even want to co-parent your kids with him you gave him full custody. You wanted the divorce when he was willing to forgive you I don't understand why you are doing this and remember you have someone now and he cares about you.

Me: I don't know Lisa I miss him I miss our little family. I know I destroyed our marriage but..... (she doesn't let me finish)

Jess: But nothing Lisa you can't see him happy with someone else and all of a sudden you want him back. No Lisa. Leave

Qhawe be. (I look over their table and they look so cosy and some guy interrupts them and they don't look happy.) Lisa let's go.

BANDILE (Qhawe's friend)

I'm at Mugg and Bean getting a take away coffee and some muffins when I see Qhawe and Khanyi and when I walked in earlier I saw Anelisa and her friend and I'm just hoping she doesn't cause drama. When I saw Anelisa I decided to stay a bit. While sitting I notice a guy walking over to Qhawe's table and Anelisa and Jess leave. The atmosphere changes at the table and I quickly walk over to them:

Me: Hey guys how are you? (I greet kissing Khanyi's cheek and bro hug Qhawe.) Guy: Khanyi fancy seeing you here.

Khanyi: Well it is a public area.

Qhawe: what do you want man we are busy here let alone that I don't even know you for you to interrupt my lunch time like that. (Qhawe is really playing it cool. This Zwelibanzi guy is really

pushing the wrong buttons and Khanyi is watching Qhawe she wants to say something but right now I think she knows better.)

Zwelibanzi: Oh sorry about that let me introduce myself. I'm Zwelibanzi Tom and you are? Me: I'm Bandile Bam and he is Qhawe Mthimkhulu and obviously you know our lady here. So tell me Zwelibanzi what do you want with his wife? (I notice these two blushing if they were an lighter they would be red now just like Zwelibanzi here who is red because of anger.)

Zwelibanzi: so you are letting another man raise my kids (he says that looking at Khanyi Khanyi: I needed a man and one that didn't mind being a father to my kids and he was available so here we are and they call him daddy. (Qhawe looks at her and smiles and I'm just amazed at how she is playing along. Qhawe needs to keep her.) Now if you'll please excuse us my husbands and I have things to discuss.

Zwelibanzi: Husbands????

Khanyi: Let me clarify Bandile here is friends with my husband and technically he becomes my husband too.

Qhawe: Zwelibanzi right

Sponsored

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

you heard my wife here please leave before this gets ugly.

This idiot looks at us and walks away. Khanyi

looks at me and smiles: Khanyi: “His wife”

that’s the best you could come up with.

Me: Hey it worked right.

Khanyi: Hayisuka man Bandile you do know that you just put him in danger right.

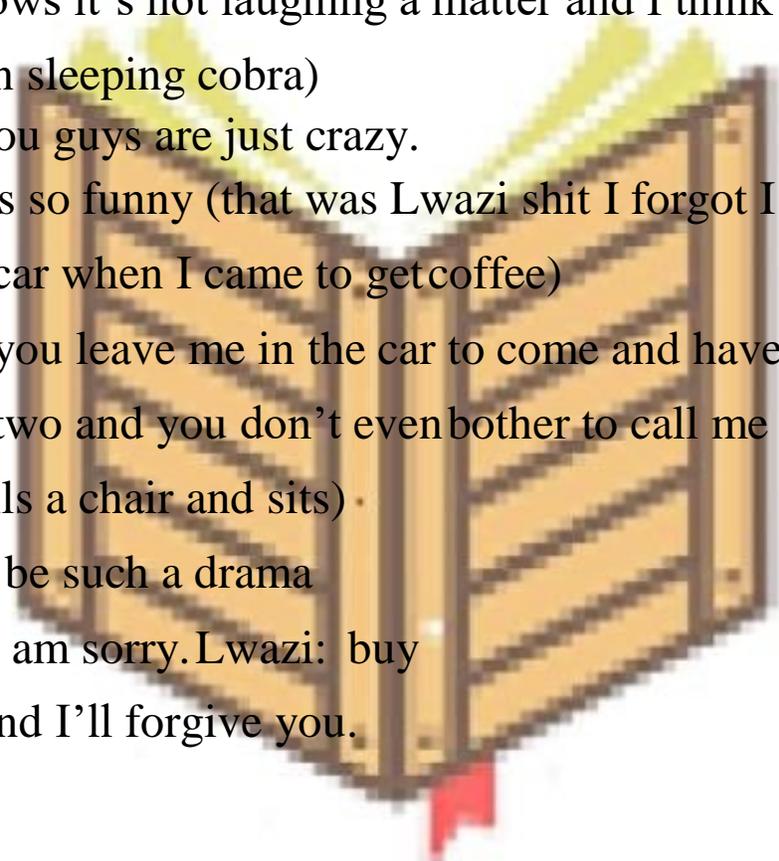
Qhawe: You seem to be forgetting that he is your husband too so he put both your husbands in danger (We all laugh but Khanyi knows it’s not laughing a matter and I think I might have woken sleeping cobra)

Khanyi: You guys are just crazy.

And what is so funny (that was Lwazi shit I forgot I left him in the car when I came to get coffee)

Lwazi: so you leave me in the car to come and have fun with these two and you don’t even bother to call me and tell me. (he pulls a chair and sits)

Me: Don’t be such a drama queen but I am sorry. Lwazi: buy me lunch and I’ll forgive you.



Qhawe: Listen guys do you mind coming over to Khanyi's house tonight the boys have a project that they want to pitch to us since you guys are family you need to be there. And I think we have other things to discuss.

Bandile: We'll be there man.

Lwazi: and yes we do have other things to discuss. We have new info. Khanyi: Hubby we have to go otherwise I'll be late for my meeting.

Lwazi: huh? Hayibo husband?

Qhawe: Since you are my friend you are also her husband. Let's go my Queen.

(the couple leaves and I'm left explaining things to Lwazi and this idiot is just laughing his lungs out.

## KHAYA

It's me Lonwabo and Ntando and we are waiting for the twins and my brothers here are so nervous I would be too if I were them. I remember when I had to do my first I was so nervous and it was with Bhut' Qhawe and back then I never we would this close and I would where I am today. The twins arrive and we decide to set up in the tv room because mom told me they invited other people to listen the pitch I haven't seen anyone else I think they are all in mom's office. Lwanele walks in as

we set up:

Lwanele: Are you guys ready

Me: yes we can you go and call everyone for us please.

Lwanele: Just so you I'll also be part of the panel

listen to your presentation. Khaya: hayi Lwanele go

watch tv in your room.

Lwanele: so you don't want my money as I understand this you

need sponsors to sponsor your project and you need as many as

you can get and I don't think it matters how much they

sponsor no matter how little it is it is needed. So just to sum it

up you need my 10 cents that I'm willing to donate.

Banele: how old are you? And I'm Banele and that's

my twin brother Bandile. Lwanele: I'm Lwanele and

I'm 12.

Banele: I like you you are very smart and you are right we

do need your 10 cents. Lwanele: finally someone with some

sense. (she says that looking at me and walks out.) Bandile:

That girl is going to be best friends with Lisakhanya.

Me: they are already best friends.

Everyone walks in and takes their seats including Lwanele who is sitting on Bhut'Qhawe's lap. Bhut' Qhawe's friend are here Uncle Eddie and Uncle Andile and Bhut' Luyanda who is mom's lawyer.

I stand up and take my position:

Me: Ladies and Gentlemen we are to talk to you about a project that we like start. As you all know that I've had quite a difficult time in my life I was rebellious kid that had misplaced anger I hung out with crew did things I wasn't supposed to do almost got arrested but mom saved me with a warning "NEXT TIME I'LL LET THEM ARREST YOU. JUST KNOW THAT JAIL IS

THE LAST PLACE YOU WANT TO BE." I did all these things because I was angry at the man who didn't deserve my attention he was an absent father he didn't want and I didn't understand.

No matter how hard mom tried to tell me that it was not my fault I did nothing wrong to him I always believed it was fault. She never gave up on me. It all changed when I met the twins and they introduced to their father and made realise how lucky I am to have a mother that

cares and loves me because of the love they showed me and the love my mom showed I'm here today although I never really thought I would have the man that helped save me as a father. We want to start a project that will help young boys young man who have the same issues as I did and some have had to deal with worse.

This is a project that will help them deal with whatever issues they have. We are going to need a psychologist to handle that. The project will also provide skills development. We will be providing the skills we have acquired in our respective fields we also want to have a sports department for those that are more talented in sports. The skills development programme will provide the following skills: sound engineering –Bandile

Civil Engineering:

Ntando Mechanical

engineering: Lonwabo

Our psychologist:

Banele

Ntando: The civil and mechanical engineering departments will have to get people who more qualified since we are still in school but we will be assisting in the departments. For now we will be doing sport with the kids that will be under the projects.

Bandile: Sound engineering has already started working. We have a lot of young people we are training in the current studio we have and when the new building is done we will do more.

Me: This is the project and we need your money. Bandile Sr:

guys this is amazing

Lwanele: you can R5000 from me. (everyone looks at surprised) what why are you looking me at like that I've been saving.

Qhawe: Guys I'm very proud of you this is absolutely amazing. I think we need to go through the figures that you have in this presentation and we will come back to you by next week Monday. At least you know you already R5000.

Lwanele: I told you are going to need my 10 cents. She says that leaving the room. Me: thank you for your time and for listening we'll talk Monday then.

Everyone gets up and leaves and we are left disconnecting the laptop and the projector. That went great.

## CHAPTER 20

2 WEEK

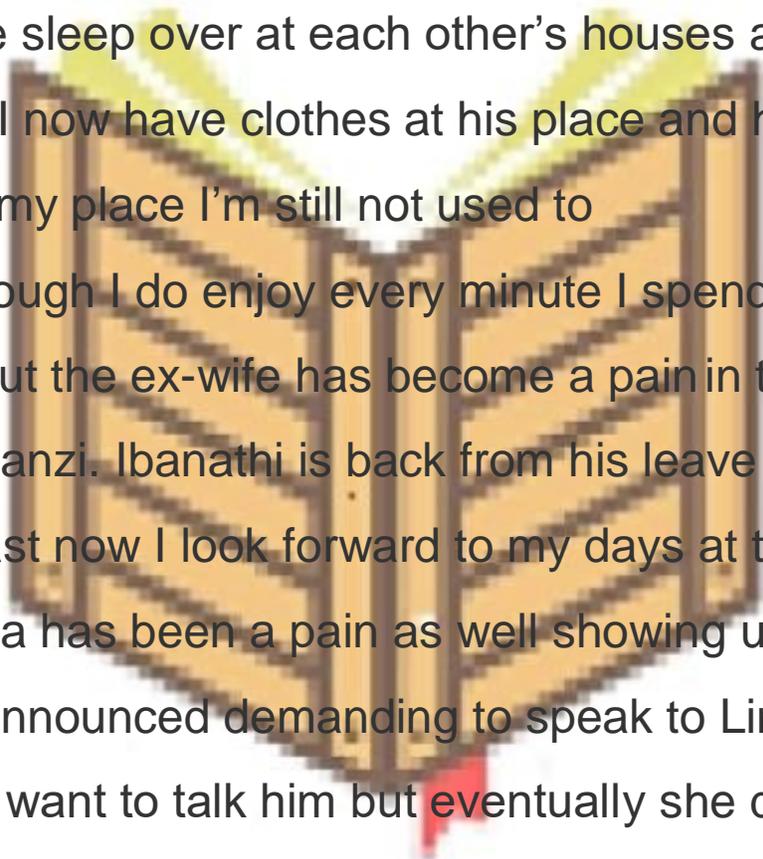
S LATER

FRIDAY

KHANYISILE

These two weeks went by really quick. We attended a Business Gala Dinner which was aimed at raising funds for shelters for the homeless. It was amazing and yes Zwelibanzi was there but this time he didn't make a nuisance of himself he actually behaved. Exams are done as well and my Linamandla is home. She met Qhawe and his kids and she loves them she went crazy over Qhawe.

The kids have also started spending more time with Qhawe and his kids want to be around me all the time his girls have been sleeping over at my house a lot in the past two weeks. My lawyer managed to get a court date after the exams that would be next week Monday. Qhawe and I well what can I say we are good and going strong the sex is great we sleep over at each other's houses almost every day I now have clothes at his place and he has clothes at my place I'm still not used to his dick though I do enjoy every minute I spend with him he is fun but the ex-wife has become a pain in the ass just like Zwelibanzi. Ibanathi is back from his leave I missed him. At least now I look forward to my days at the office. Nkosikhona has been a pain as well showing up at my house unannounced demanding to speak to Linamandla who didn't want to talk him but eventually she did. Khaya and Linamandla are ok now that they got a chance to talk to their father and tell him how they feel. Now he knows not push to matters. Security is still tight around the house and at work. The kids don't go anywhere without Jason and I don't go anywhere without Andile unless I'm with Qhawe. I'm having a girls weekend this weekend and I



NOVELSGURU.COM

must say Qhawe wasn't happy about that only because I won't be sleeping over at his house this weekend right now he's sulking and not talking to me it's been an hour now. The first sulking session was this morning and lasted 30



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

minutes. Andile is on the way to the airport to fetch my friends. Thando still can't believe Andile is gay she totally has a crush on him.

Lwanele: Mom when are they are getting here?

Me: Andile is fetching them from the airport as per Aunt Thando's request. Lwanele:

Mom Aunt Thando knows that Uncle Andile is gay right?

Me: yes baby she knows.

Lwanele: I feel for uncle Andile this is going to be a long weekend for me. I can't wait see them I've missed them so much

Me: I know how you feel.

Lwanele: so what do you have planned for the weekend?

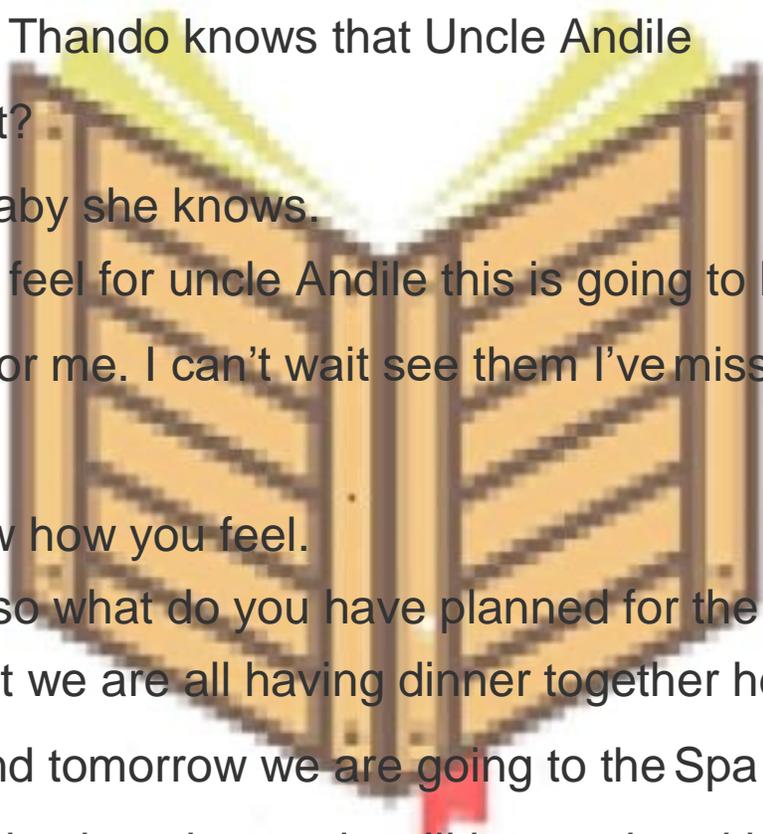
Me: tonight we are all having dinner together hence I am cooking and tomorrow we are going to the Spa after that we do a little shopping and we'll have a braai in the afternoon the men will be

here. Qhawe's kids will

be here too. Lwanele:

that's going to be great.

Me: Where are your brothers?



Lwanele: They are in the game room. I'll be back. (Just as she gets out of the kitchen I hear her scream)

Me: Lwanele what's wrong? (And I see her running to her aunts they are just screaming with excitement and I just let them be. Andile walks over to me)

Andile: Thando still has a crush on me when is she getting over it?

Ncesh: When she finds herself a man ( she walks over to me and hugs me tight) I have missed you so much.

Me: I missed you too. I'm really happy that you are here.

Ncesh: Are you cooking oh Khanyi you are a woman after my own heart. Do you have any idea how much I missed your cooking.

Me: I thought I already had your heart.

Thando: You can be sure you have mine (she also hugs me tight) I missed you girl Me: I missed you too.

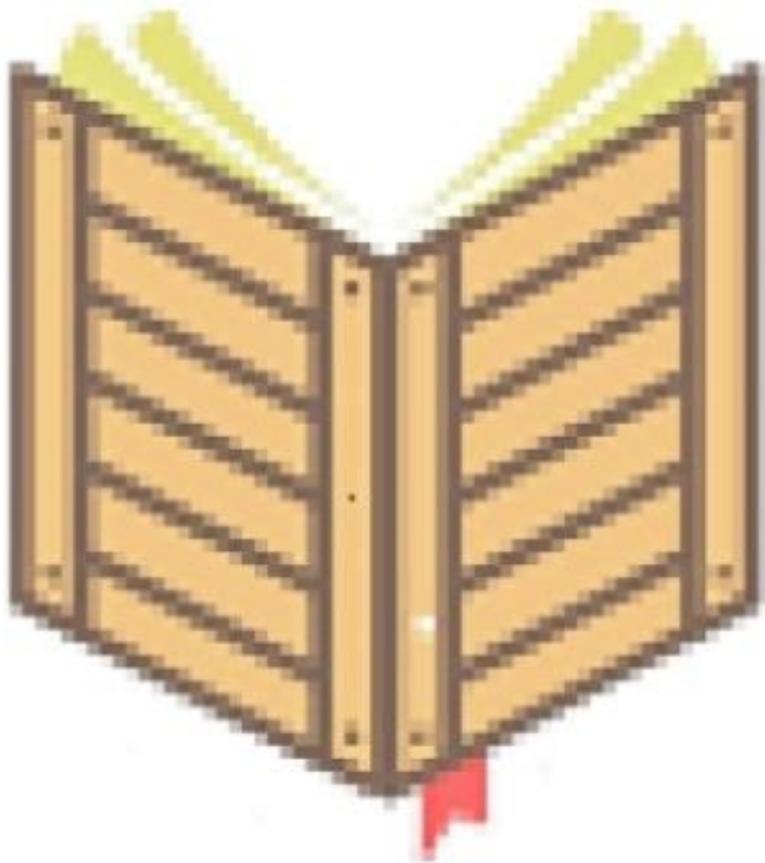
Thando: Where are my nephews?

Lwanele: They are in the game room come I'll go with you I'll show you your rooms. Aunt Ncesh are you coming?

Ncesh: I'll be there just now sweetie. Khanyi she has grown she is a big girl now. Maybe I should consider moving this side. Eastern Cape is boring now especially

after you left.

Me: You should. Durban is nice and you can always move your business here.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ncesh: I'll think about it. Let me go upstairs. (as she walks away Eddie walks in)

Eddie: I hear the girls have arrived and Thando still has a crush on Andile. (he says and laughs) What's the plan for tomorrow?

Me: we are going to the spa and then to the mall for a little shopping then come back here for the braai.

Eddie: Good no clubbing. Let me go home I'll see you guys tomorrow. Greet the ladies if I stay I'll never leave and I don't want to upset my wife.

Me: She should come tomorrow.

Eddie: I'll talk to her. Goodnight Khanyi and Andile is his cottage and Ntsika is handling the entrance tonight.

Me: Thanks Eddie have a good evening.

I finish cooking and get everyone to come down for dinner. We eat while catching up with Thando and Ncesh. My kids have really missed their aunts. After dinner we watch movies and play board games. Qhawe has called twice already I guess he has topped sulking.

ZWELIBANZI

Two weeks ago I found out that Khanyi was seeing some

guy called Qhawe how can she raise my kids with another man how can she let them call him daddy when I'm still alive. She even went to the Gala dinner with him when they told me at mugg and bean that day I really thought it was a joke. I need to make sure I win this case. I tried to find out some info on these guys this Qhawe and Bandile and my guy tells me they are clean they are just business man making millions every day I'm told their businesses are legit . No other man will have my family. I need to put my other plan into action. I need a drink. I need to focus we are going to court on Monday. My phone rings;

Me: Hello

Him: did you get it back?

Me: Not yet.

Him: Zweli we are running out of time and losing a lot money. The guys from China want to pull out if the deal and find another supplier.

Me: if they want to pull out they can pull out I can't rush this if I do we are going to lose everything is that what you want.

Him: If you are sure you don't have a problem with them pulling out of the deal we can always find new buyers when everything is ready.

Me: I'll let you know when all is sorted. Remember this is a delicate situation I need to tread carefully otherwise we lose it all and end up in jail.

Him: I hear you. (he hangs up and Sizwe walks in) Sizwe: are you good man?

Me: yeah man I'm good. I'm going to implement phase 2 of my plan. Did you know she was seeing someone in fact she said she was married. My kids are calling another man daddy and I still live and breathe how can she do that?

Sizwe: It's called moving on man.

Me: No Sizwe I can't accept that. She is mine and always has been.

Sizwe: This obsession you have over her is blinding you and you are going to end up losing everything if you are not careful. You need to walk away and start fresh somewhere else find yourself another lady and be happy.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I'm not like you Sizwe this my life this is what I know for me it's not as easy as it was for you to walk away.

Sizwe: that's just an excuse you are just greedy you want it all and you can't have it all. Pour me a drink I might as well get drunk while listening to cry about

your ex-wife and kids.

Saturday came the ladies went to the Spa which is exactly what they needed after the Spa they went shopping and went back to Khanyi's house to prepare for the braai.

When they got back the men were already there setting up the outdoor gas heaters for later in the evening. Khanyi saw Qhawe first she couldn't help herself she ran to him and jumped on him and trusting this man he caught and immediately had her legs wrapped around his waist they kissed like they haven't seen each other in years. Khanyi has really fallen in love with being lifted by Qhawe he got her used it and now she can't get enough of it. her friends walk over to them as Qhawe puts her down.

Ncesh: Aren't you going to introduce us Khanyi?

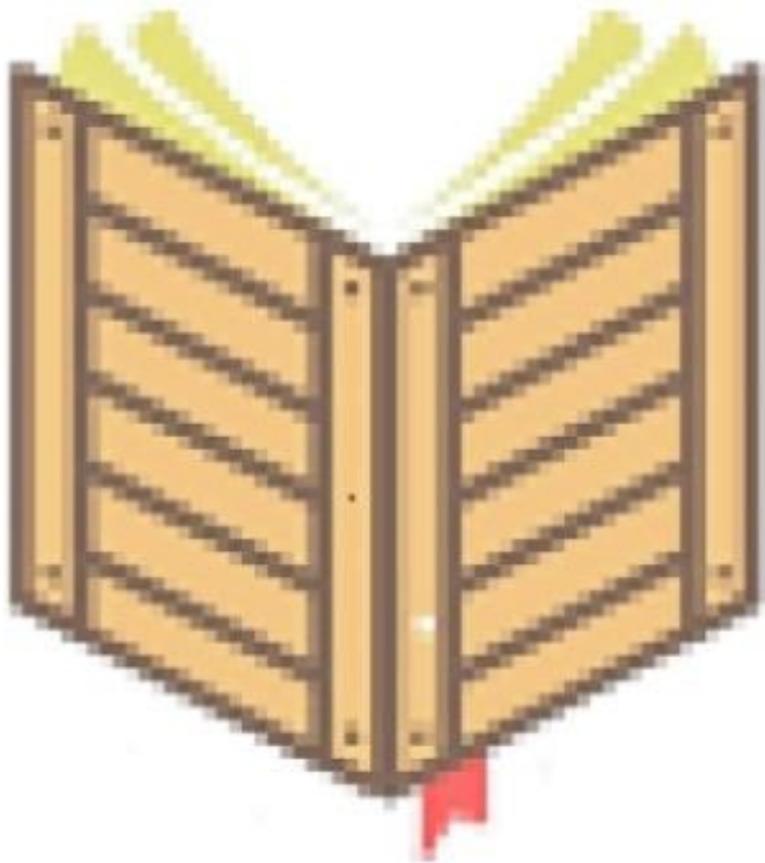
Khanyi: sorry ladies. This is Qhawe Qhawe these are my friends Ncebakazi and Nothando Thando: You can just call me Thando and you can call her Ncesh.

Qhawe: Nice meet you ladies. Khanyi

talks about you all the time Ncesh: And

she talks about non-stop too and I don't blame her.

Thando: you are so tall no wonder my girl is taken by you but then again she has never dated short guys.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: is that so. (he looks at Khanyi and gives a mischievous smile.) Ladies these are my friends

Bandile and Lwazi

Thando: Nice to meet you guys.

Khanyi: Que where are the kids?

Qhawe: the boys are in the game room and the girls in the tv room

Khanyi kisses her man and walks to the kitchen to get started on the salads as men start on the meet. Eddie's wife Elza also joins them. Ncesh seems to be taken by Bandile. She's asking Khanyi a lot of questions about him. The same thing is happening outside Bandile has taken a liking to her too and is busy asking Qhawe questions about her forgetting that Qhawe only just met her too and lucky for Bandile Ncesh is single.

The fun carries on conversation is flowing easy everyone is just having fun. The kids get along like a house on fire. Qhawe can't keep his off Khanyi these two are addicted to each other. On the other hand Lwazi and Thando are

hitting off as well. Looks like this family is getting bigger. Saturday was a blast no one went home they all slept at Khanyi's place. Our Qhawe was super excited all he wanted was to have his lady in his arms all night. On Sunday the ladies prepared lunch for every it was a very nice chilled out Sunday but the fun had to stop. Ncesh and Thando had to go back which had Khanyi crying until they got back from the airport. Now she knows it's back to reality.

On the other hand Anelisa went to Qhawe's house but no one was home she tried calling him but she couldn't get a hold of him and eventually she gave up. She broke up with her boyfriend telling him that she is still in love with her ex-husband and she wants him back. The guy understood and realised that if he continues to pursue her he'll be wasting his time it's better he cuts his losses now rather than getting hurt later. Anelisa doesn't realise that doesn't want her and that she is the one that is going to end up getting hurt no matter what she does

MONDAY

LUYANDA LANGA (Khanyi's Lawyer)

I need to make sure that this case doesn't drag on for a long time meaning I have to attack from the word go. I really don't understand why this man wants custody. From what I can see the man never cared why now. As I am busy going through my notes khanyi walks in with her entourage. She looks



NOVELSGURU.COM

tiny with all these tall men surrounding her she looks like she's loving it and that's what I call making an entrance. It's amazing how you never see her surrounded by females and I once asked why is that and she said that she prefers the company of man and she only has 2 female friends. When I look at Zwelibanzi and his lawyer they have their jaws dropped at the sight of Khanyi and her male entourage. Zwelibanzi is also turning red probably from anger. They walk over to me and I show them where to sit and show Khanyi her seat which is next to me. Qhawe brings her to me hugs and kisses her before he goes to his seat. All 5 men are seated directly behind us and right now I feel like nothing can go wrong.

Me: Morning Miss Sondlo

Khanyi: Morning Mr Langa (and she smiles it's good to see her smile meaning she's confident about this case.)

Me: Are you ready?

Khanyi: I should be asking you that question (she looks over at Zwelibanzi's side and smiles at them which I think unsettles Zwelibanzi a bit.)

Me: I'm ready. (just then we are interrupted)

Bailiff: All rise. (We all stand and Judge

Smith walks and takes his seat.) Judge:

You may be seated.

Our case is introduced and Jonathan stands to make his opening statement.

Jonathan: My client Mr Zwelibanzi Tom seeks full custody

of his 3 children that he has with his ex- wife Miss

Khanyisile Sondlo. Miss Sondlo has kept the children

away from their father for a period of four years which has

been a struggle for him since he couldn't find them. Miss

Sondlo left the Eastern Cape four years ago taking the

children without informing their father and because of this

we would like Miss Sondlo to be declared an unfit

mother. She changed her contact number which made it

impossible for my client to get a hold of her since he

wanted to speak to his children. We will also prove that

their father is in a better position to parent kids and have a

stable home for them. (Khanyi's jaw dropped at Jonathan's

statement. I know Jonathan and I know he knows that he

is going to lose this case and he knows he has no grounds

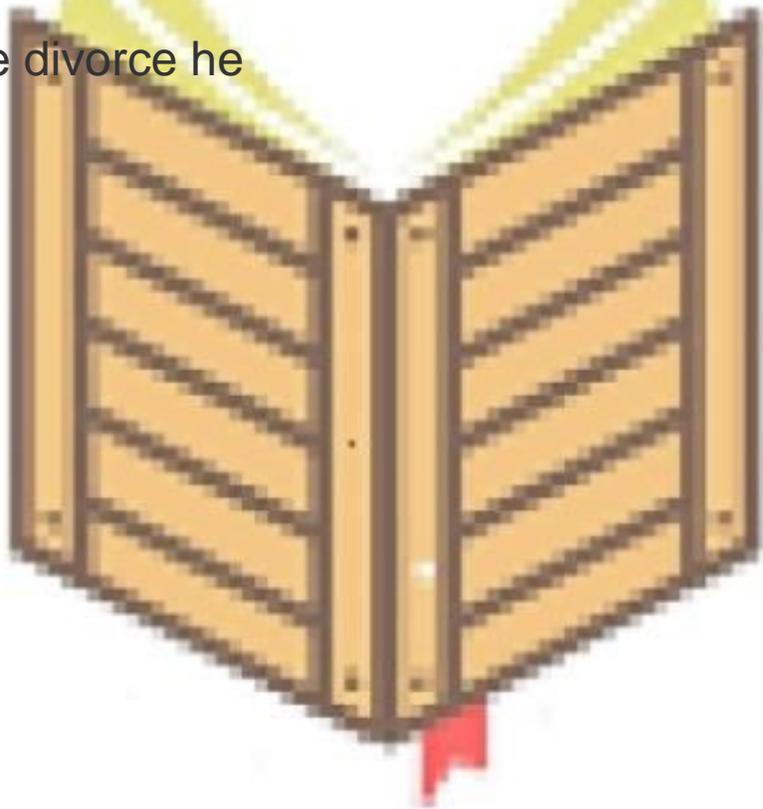
to declare Khanyi an unfit mother. She turns to look at

Qhawe who whispers to her not to worry. And now it is my

turn to make my statement.)

Me: Your Honor

My client didn't disappear with her kids. When my client left her ex-husband was very much aware of that but he didn't care. She left because of the unbearable emotional abuse that she suffered and which also the children suffered. When she left him and divorced he didn't contest the divorce he



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

was supposed to pay child maintenance we have records to prove that he never did. We also have call records to prove that the plaintiff has never tried to contact my client at any time. The defendant only changed her number a year after she left the defendant. Not once in that year did she receive a single call from the defendant. (I can see Zwelibanzi turning red right now.) My client is more than capable of taking care of her children not just financially but emotionally too she has been doing so from the day they were born and the father was present but he was an absent father never attended any of the kid's activities never helped with their home works never there during visits to the doctors he was there but he was not there. Thank You. (I take my seat. The court proceedings carry on with Jonathan trying to prove Zwelibanzi to be a good father. We go back and forth I also provide the judge with the call records her bank statements as well after we are done the judge speaks)

Judge: I have heard both sides of this case and I have read up on the files and I must say with everything that I see here so far this is interesting. This is a simple case which I will not drag for a long a time but before I make

my judgement I want to see the kids I want to hear from them. After speaking the children I'll pass my judgement. This case is adjourned until tomorrow at 09:00AM (He says standing and leaving the court the court room.

Me: Khanyi do you think the kids are ready to be here do you think they are ready to face their father and go against him.

Khanyi: Luyanda I don't know. I didn't think it would happen so soon. (The guys get up from their seats and come to us.)

Me: You have to make sure they are ready tomorrow. I also didn't think it would be this soon. I honestly thought the case would last at least a week.

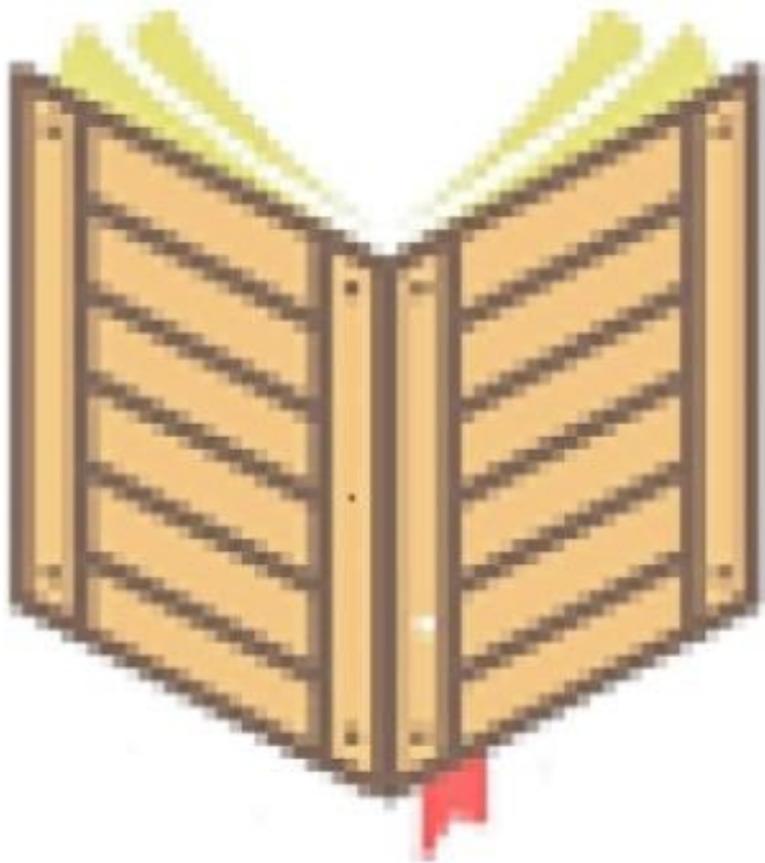
Qhawe: the kids will be ready tomorrow.

Eddie: Qhawe is right they will be ready. We will help them. Khanyi we are all here for you guys. We won't let him take the kids he won't take our kids. We all love those kids and will do anything to protect them and you know. Besides those kids are smart and they know where they belong.

Khanyi: I know (she smiles and hugs him)

Qhawe: That's enough hugging Eddie that's my woman. ( we all just laugh at him he doesn't like when we hug her and Khanyi walks over to him)

Khanyi: And I am all yours but at the same time you have to remember that you share me with 10 other men including our sons.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwazi: yeah man remember she is our wife too. (this idiot had to say that and everyone just laughed.)

## ZWELIBANZI

I'm mad at Jonathan I mean he didn't even try to fight for me. I understand that there isn't much he could have done but I feel like he should have tried harder. As soon as those kids speak in court it's over but then again this is me it's not over until I say it's over. I guess it's true what they say if you want something done do it yourself. I hear laughter and when I look it's Khanyi and these guys she's with. I don't understand why she has them around her all the time they make it so difficult to get to her. She looks happy she has her arm hooked on this boyfriend of hers with her head on his shoulder she looks beautiful. Why did I let her go I remember when I used to make her smile like that but then it all changed because of me. But then again I will have her back I will make things right.

I notice them getting up to leave and Khanyi is walking with her boyfriend behind the other guys and I walk

towards them and gently grab Khanyi's arm. She stands looks at me then looks at my hand on her arm the looks at me with that looks that says "let me go" but I'm not doing that. The boyfriend looks at me then my hand on Khanyi's arm then at me again giving me the same look Khanyi gave

Sponsored



giving me the same look Khanyi gave this guy needs to chill this woman is my wife. Me: Khanyi wait

Khanyi: Let go of

me Zwelibanzi Me:

Not until you talk to

me

Khanyi: If you want to keep that arm you will let go of me.

Qhawe: if I were you I would do as she says. Let her go now. (I look at this guy who does he think he is)

Me: you don't to tell me what to do with my wife. (This other coloured looking guy walks to us) Eddie:

Considering she is no longer your wife but his you have no right touching her like that. Let her go now before you lose that hand.

(he says pulling out his gun and I decide to let go and she turns and walks away leaving me with these two guys.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: I want you to listen to me and listen good I believe you were told that she is my wife she is my woman she is the mother of my kids all 10 of them including yours. I would kill for her and right now if I were I would leave her alone.

Eddie: Qhawe let's go he's not worth it. (Khanyi walks back to us and looks at Eddie) Khanyi:

Eddie it's ok (and he nods and she turns and looks at her boyfriend)

Khanyi: Hey babe come on just leave him. Remember I'm all yours I belong to you. Let's go the kids are waiting for us. (He looks at her and smiles like a retard and nods. ( they walk away leaving me standing there.)

KHANYISILE

Qhawe and I we decided not to go to work today and just be in court and we surprised to see Eddie Andile Lwazi and Bandile and they were coming with us to court I must say these guys can be dramatic you should have seen our entrance in that court room. I love these guys. Eddie and

Andile have been around me for years and the new guys just fit in perfectly it's like they've know each other all their lives their relationship is becoming stronger every day it's becoming an unbreakable brotherly bond and I'm glad my kids have them as their role models. We did good in court today and now we are on our way home I need to talk to the kids. Khaya didn't go to court with us today he wanted to stay with his siblings.

Me: Hey guys what are you doing? Them: hey ma hey uncles.

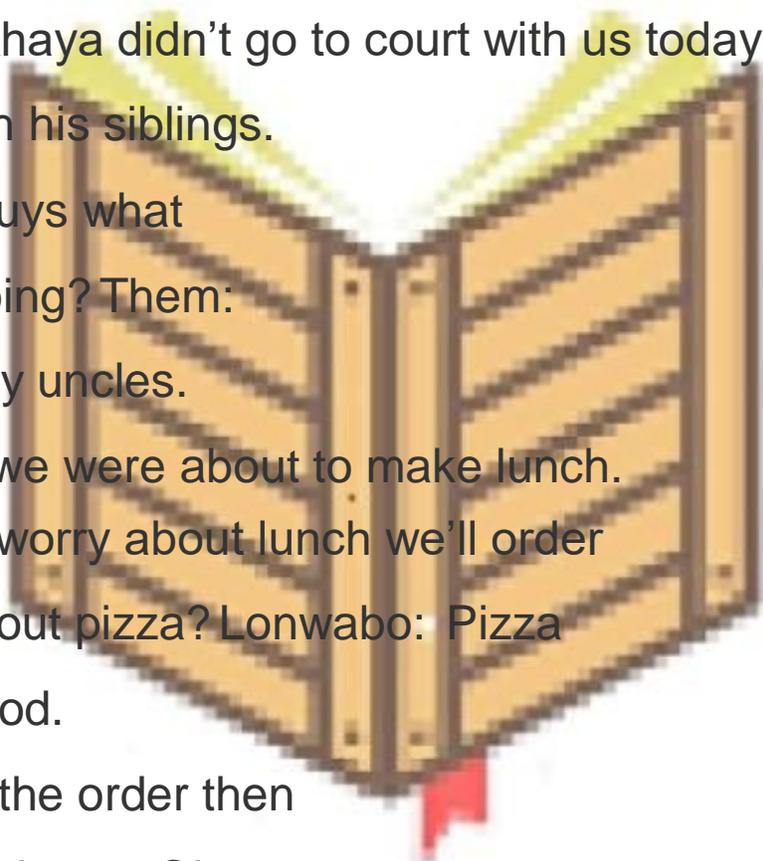
Lwanele: we were about to make lunch.

Me: Don't worry about lunch we'll order in. how about pizza? Lonwabo: Pizza sounds good.

Me: place the order then while I go change Qhawe: Wait for me I'm coming

with you

Lwazi: No hanky panky in that room we don't want to hear your screams Khanyi. (Yhoo Lwazi really knows how to embarrass a person and the guys are just laughing luckily

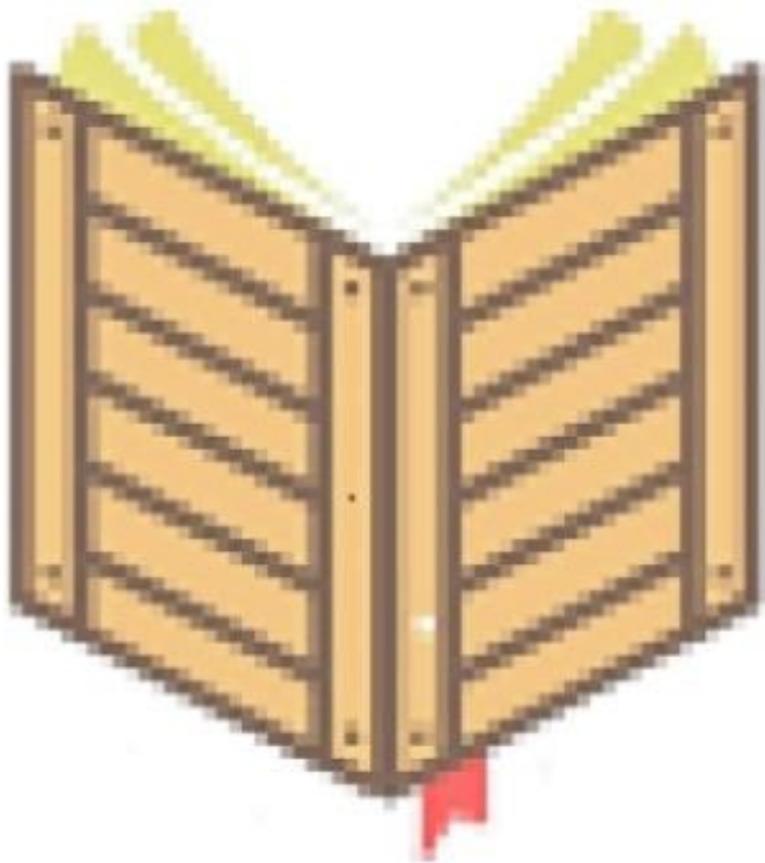


NOVELSGURU.COM

the kids are in the kitchen ordering the food.)

Qhawe: No man Lwazi sometimes you can be an idiot in fact what am I seeing you are always an idiot. (everyone laughs and he tries throwing a cushion at us as we run upstairs.)

Me: is Lwazi always like that?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: yes he is and he'll never change. (he walks over to me and lifts me and puts me against the wall and kisses me gently and slowly.)

Qhawe: Khanyi you are my woman and deeply care about you (he kisses me again) and I want you to know that I'm always going to be here for you and the kids and I want you know that those kids are now as much mine as they are yours. I LOVE YOU KHANYI I WOULD DIE TEN THOUSAND DEATHS FOR YOU AND OUR KIDS. I LOVE YOU. I KNOW YOU ARE SCARED BUT TRUST ME WHEN I SAY I LOVE YOU AND I WON'T HURT YOU INTENTIONALLY.

I know you not ready to say the words I love you yet I'll wait until you are ready. Just know that you are MINE ONLY MINE.

(I was so touched and I didn't expect me to tell me he loves me I'm scared and knows it. I was in tears and he just kissed my tears my away. We changed into comfortable clothes and went downstairs)

Me: guys we need to talk to (referring to the kids.

We were all sitting in the tv rooms.) Ntando: is everything ok?

Me: everything is fine my boy but we need to talk to you about something that you guys need to do tomorrow. (as I was talking the doorbell rang and it was the Pizza. Andile gets it and also brings us plates and drinks with Linamandla helping him.)

Me: Remember we told you that your father wanted full custody of you.

Lwanele: Don't tell me you lost the case

Me: No Princess I didn't but you need to be in court tomorrow the judge wants to talk to you. Lonwabo: Why

Me: well he wants to know from you how you feel about the situation and you will be asked questions about when we used to stay with him and I need you to answer all the questions honestly. Lwanele: Will the judge make us go stay with him (she asks running to Qhawe's arms)

Khaya: No he won't Lwa he can never force you to stay with him unless you want to. Lwanele: no. I don't want to stay with him.

Qhawe: Hey Princess that will never happen ok.

Ntando: we can't go back there mom. This is where we belong with you.

Lonwabo: besides we don't need him ma. We have all

the dads that we need right here (he says that looking at the guys and Lonwabo is not very fond of his father he hates him. After everything we've been through he really doesn't want anything to do with.)

Andile: hey guys we will do everything in our power to make sure that you don't go back to him. Lwazi: Your happiness is important to us just as your mom's happiness is also important.

Linamandla: don't worry too much. Just focus on what you need to tell the judge..



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lonwabo: We don't want to lose you mom.

Qhawe: and you won't lose her we'll make sure of that.

You also have to play your part tomorrow and just be honest with the judge and you don't need to be scared we'll all be there.

Andile: Just like we were there with mom today we'll be there for you tomorrow so you don't need to be scared.

Eddie: just know that we all love you.

We carry on with the conversation while eating Luyanda also arrives to help us prep the kids for tomorrow.

## CHAPTER 22

### TUESDAY MORNING

#### KHANYISILE

#### NOVELSGURU.COM

We just arrived at court I'm nervous the kids are nervous they don't know what to expect but Luyanda was very good with them yesterday when we were preparing them for today. Zwelibanzi is here already and I see Sizwe is also here today. Luyanda sees us and walks up to us and greets and shows

us to our respective seats. The kids are sitting with me except for Khaya and Lina who are sitting with the guys with Lina sitting between Khaya and Qhawe and I'm sure she feels like a Princess right now. My kids love attention.

Baillif: All rise (we all stand and Judge Smith walks in. I wonder what Luyanda had to do to get him back into the country. I must ask him.)

Judge: You may be seated. (the case is re-introduce again after that is done judge spoke.)

Judge Smith: Yesterday I heard everything I needed to hear from the lawyers. As I said today I want to hear what the kids have to say but before I speak to the kids I want to ask the father a few questions. Mr Zwelibanzi Tom please stand.

Tell me Mr Tom how is your relationship with your kids?

Zwelibanzi: at the moment it is very rocky since I haven't seen or spoken to them in four years. Judge: Why is that?

Zwelibanzi: When Miss Sondlo left I didn't know where she went and she changed her number and I couldn't get a hold of her.

Judge: Why do you think she is a bad mother?

Zwelibanzi: Because she kept them away from me for four years no good mother can do that keep the children away from their father for no reason.

Judge: Mmhhhh I see. You may sit.

(I don't understand what the judge is trying to do by asking Zwelibanzi all these questions but we'll see.)

Judge: Mr Langa are the

kids ready? Luyanda: Yes

Your honour they are ready.

Judge: I want to start with youngest.

Luyanda: Yes Your Honour. Lwanele please come forward.

(She looks at me and I just smile at her and she looks at Qhawe who nods and smiles for her. Luyanda takes her hand and walks her up to the witness stand. Luyanda explains to her why she has to put her hand on the bible and everything else and she nods in understanding.)

Judge: Hi there Princess can you please tell us your name and how old you are. (she smiles and looks at him)

Lwanele: I'm Lwanele Sondlo and I'm 12 years old. Judge can I ask you to do something for me. (Ok we are all surprised what could she possibly want the judge to do for her.)

Judge: Ok Princess Lwanele what would you like me to do for you?

Lwanele: Can you please not call me Princess only my dad's my siblings and mom call me princess.

(That was very unexpected we all just laughed. This child and she is like this she doesn't want anyone else calling her Princess except us. The Judge is shocked and I don't think he knows what to say her to right now.)

Judge: I hear you Lwanele I see your siblings tell me how many dads do you have? Lwanele: I have six dads Sir. 3 recently joined our family and the other 3 have always been there for us for as long as I can remember.

Judge: Can you point them out to? (she nods and points to where the guys are sitting.) Lwanele: and sixth one is Bhut' Luyanda.

Judge: So if I become friends with dads would I be allowed to call you Princess? Lwanele: Only if you are nice to them my mom and us.

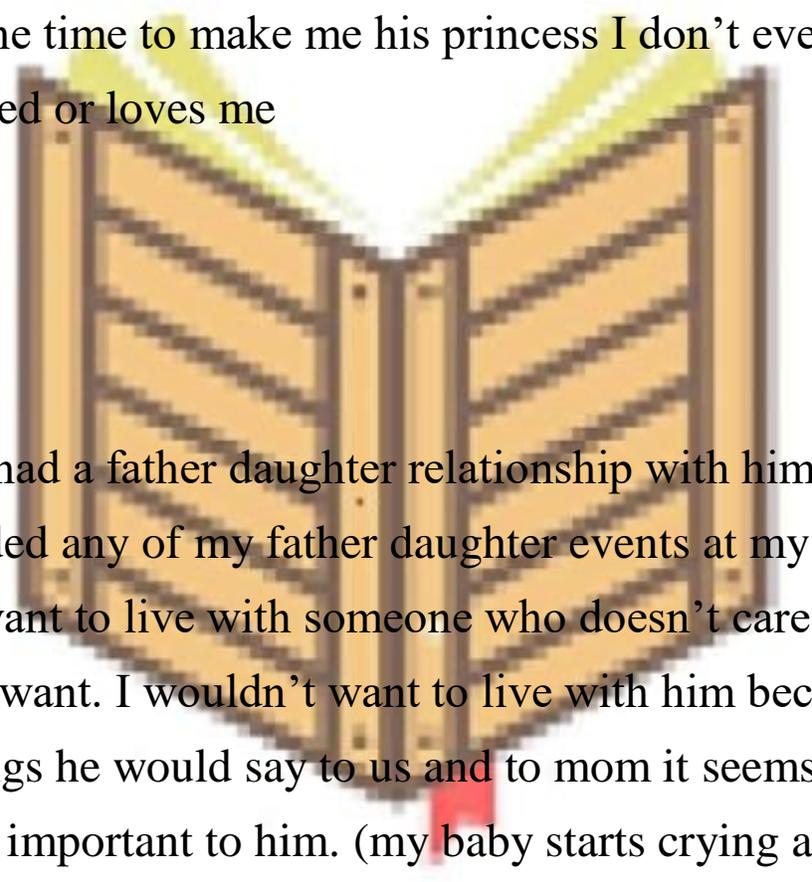
Judge: May the dads please stand. ( They guys smiling at their Princess.) may I have your permission just for today to call her Princess? (The guys look at her and she nods)

Qhawe: You have our permission Your Honour.

Judge: Thank you you may be seated. So tell me Princess Lwanele would you like to live with your father and also tell me why you didn't count him as one of your dads.

Lwanele: My mom never really wants to talk about what happened between her and our father. We haven't seen in him in 4 years and mom told us why she left even though she doesn't like talking about it but she had to tell us. I'm the youngest and people always think that I'm too young to understand anything but my mom always gave me the benefit of the doubt. My father has never taken the time to get to know me the time to make me his princess I don't even know if he ever loved or loves me

Sponsored



I've never had a father daughter relationship with him he never even attended any of my father daughter events at my school I wouldn't want to live with someone who doesn't care about me and what I want. I wouldn't want to live with him because of the hurtful things he would say to us and to mom it seems like we were never important to him. (my baby starts crying and Qhawe stands and asks for the Judges permission to go to her and the judge agrees. Qhawe takes his princess and tries to calm her and I'm also standing next them and brushing her back but my baby is so hurt she can't stop crying. The judge is watching all this and looks at Zwelibanzi then back to us)

Judge: it's fine you can go sit with her. Mr Langa bring the next child.

Luyanda: Ntando come. (he does the same thing he did with Lwanele explaining everything.) Judge: and you young man can you tell us your name and your age

Ntando: I'm ntando and 15 years old/

Judge: Can you answer the same question I asked your sister.

Ntando: Yes Sir I can. I wouldn't want to live with my father because even when we lived with him we were not happy he abused all of us emotionally. The things he would say to us to mom very hurtful things. I know I wouldn't want to be in that environment. I don't remember seeing him at any of my rugby games or going to the doctor with him. I don't even remember playing games or being a normal family. He was never home and when he was home home would be hell.

Judge: Thank you Ntando. The 6 gentlemen that your sister says are her dads do you also consider them your dads as well?

Ntando: yes Sir I do. They are the best.

Judge: You may step down young man thank you and now I'm going to speak to your brother. (Luyanda does what he needs to do with my son as he takes the stand)

Judge: Hello young man tell me your name and your age.

Lonwabo: I'm Lonwabo Sondlo and I'm 17. I don't want to live with my father for the same reasons that my siblings mentioned. Living with him would be hell on earth like it was back then. Even if your ruling would be for us to go live with him we wouldn't. there is a lot that happened in that house and mom thinks we don't know. We know that he would beat her and she tried hard to cry silently so that we don't hear her cry or wake us. (Lonwabo looks at me with tears in his eyes) Mom I know he would force himself on you after he comes back from his trips I would hear you begging him not to. I know you didn't tell anyone because you were protecting us. (I look at Zwellibanzi and I know this is the last thing he expected to happen and he looks livid.)

Judge: Wipe your tears young man I know it's painful but a man doesn't cry. (As the judge says that Qhawe and Khaya stand and Lonwabo shakes his head no and It is so hard not let my tears fall. I didn't know they knew so much.)

Lonwabo: that's where you are wrong Sir. A man should cry he is allowed to. crying doesn't make him weak crying makes him human. My mom taught me that. I'm 17 years old and because of my mom I know that I am 10 times the man my father should be. (he steps down from the witness stands and comes to me and hugs me tight and my tears just fall. I hear the Judge saying court is adjourned until 14:00

## ZWELIBANZI

I know I've lost this case. I've always thought there would be a chance to make things right as long as no one knew what was happening behind closed doors but now these kids know what I did. Lonwabo tells his mom he needs to be alone for a minute and he walks out followed by his little brother. After a few minutes I get up and follow them and find them standing against the wall outside at the far corner of the building and I walk to them.

Me:

boys

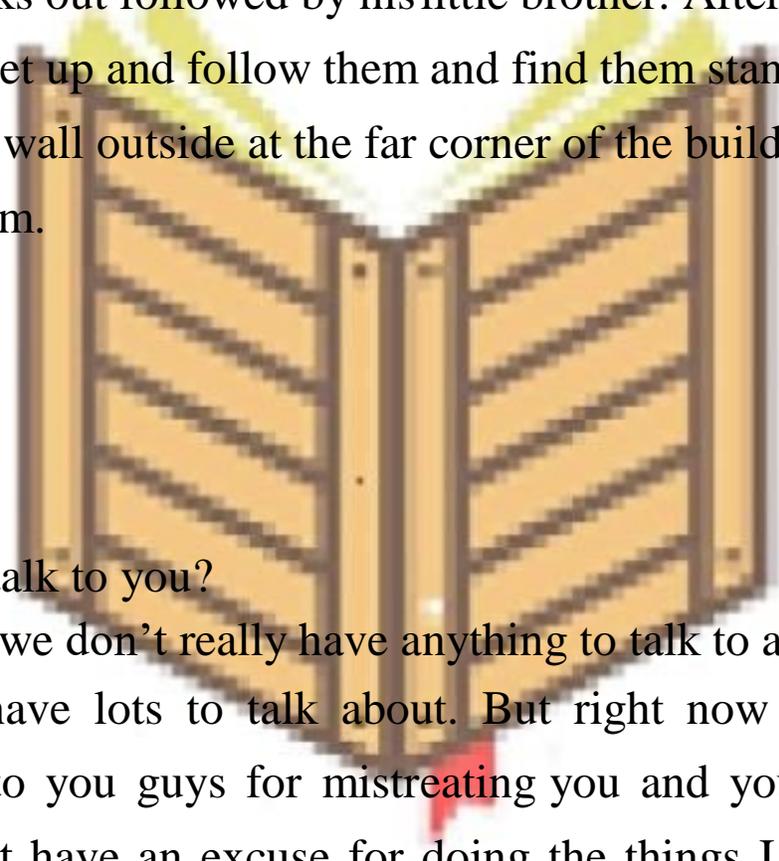
Them:

hi

Me: can I talk to you?

Lonwabo: we don't really have anything to talk to about.

Me: We have lots to talk about. But right now I want to apologise to you guys for mistreating you and your mom. I really don't have an excuse for doing the things I did I also don't know why I did them. I didn't know you guys knew.



Ntando: look Zwelibanzi just drop this whole thing because we would never willingly go live with you.

Lonwabo: Whatever your plans are you won't succeed. (I see Qhawe coming to us. Ntando just goes to him and hugs him)

Qhawe: are you guys ok are you ready to go. We are grabbing something to eat then come back here.

Me: I'm still having a conversation with my kids.

Lonwabo: We are more of his kids than we ever were your kids. Ntando come on lets go I can't stand being here. (with that said they walk away leaving me with Qhawe.

Qhawe: Stay away from them otherwise I'll make you regret the day your mother ever opened her legs for your father and made.

Me: I won't let you take my family from me.

Qhawe: they were never yours to begin with. But I'll tell you one thing though it's a good thing you screwed up and I got to have them in my life. (with that said he walks away.)

## CHAPTER 23

TUESDAY

NOVELSGURU.COM

AFTERNOON

QHAWELOMZI

We just had lunch and we are on our way back to court. I can't

believe what I heard in court I can't believe the things Lonwabo said the pain my woman suffered at the hands of that man the pain my kids suffered because of that man and he has the nerve to want them back. When we get to court I park the car everyone gets out but I stay and ask Lonwabo and Ntando to stay behind as well.

Lonwabo: is everything ok?

Me: I should be asking you guys that question.

Ntando: I'm not ok I just want this whole thing to be over and we can go back to our lives. Me: Why didn't you tell your mom that you knew what was going on.

Ntando: because she probably had her reasons for not telling us she told us but she didn't tell us everything.

Lonwabo: Mom had a lot to deal with and she didn't need to worry about us knowing too much and besides she took us for therapy we still go to therapy but not as often as we used when we started out. Bhut' Qhawe I know that you didn't know about the things I said in there and I'm

sorry you had to find out like that. Mom suffered all kinds of abuse at the hands of my father and we won't be the ones to tell you. When she is ready to talk she will. The only reason we know is because whenever our father was not home we used to sleep with mom in her bed. And when he is back before we go to bed we would go to their room to check on her that's when we got to hear her begging him to stop hurting her to beating her we heard her silent cries and muffled screams eventually we stopped going to their room when he was back and we just tried to be there for her like she was there for us even the grandparents don't know the whole story. She didn't tell anyone because she didn't want anyone feeling sorry for her.

Ntando: She also attended therapy with us we all did even Lina and Khaya. Him and Khaya don't get along at all because Khaya would stand up to him. He never did anything to mom or us when Khaya was around. He hates Khaya.

(as we were still talking there was a knock on the window and it was Luyanda telling us it was time to go in. We didn't waste time we went inside with him Khanyi was waiting for us at the door.)

Khanyi: hey guys are you ok?

Me: We are ok baby I just wanted to have a little conversation with them. Khanyi: Ok then. Let's go sit guys.

In a few minutes the

judge walked in. JUDGE

SMITH

Before we went to our lunch break I saw a lot of pain in a lot of people in this room. Some looked shocked at the things Lonwabo said some were crying what I want to know now is if everyone is at least calm now.

Luyanda: Yes Your Honour we are fine.

Judge Smith: before I pass my judgement it says here Miss Sondlo has 5 kids where are the other two kids.

Luyanda: they are here Your Honour.

Judge Smith: May they please stand. (they stand) Now tell me did you also stay with your parents?

Linamandla: he is not our father Sir we have a different father but to answer your question I stayed with them for two years and then my mom said I should go stay with my grandparents and my brother she said it was for my own protection.

Judge Smith: After you left did you visit over school holidays

Khaya: yes we did but I eventually stopped visiting after we had a few altercations about how he was treating mom and my siblings.

Judge Smith: did he hit you

Lina: No he didn't but we knew he was doing it to mom with us it was just hurtful words hurtful things he would say.

Judge Smith: thank you you may sit. Mr Langa has your client provided therapy for these children?

Luyanda: Yes Your Honour she has. It's been 4 years now but now the sessions are not as often as when they started out.

Judge Smith: how many sessions do they have now? Luyanda: One session a month Your Honour.

Judge Smith: After today they all need to have two sessions a week for the next two months this court case must have stirred up a whole lot of issues.

Luyanda: that will be arranged Your Honour

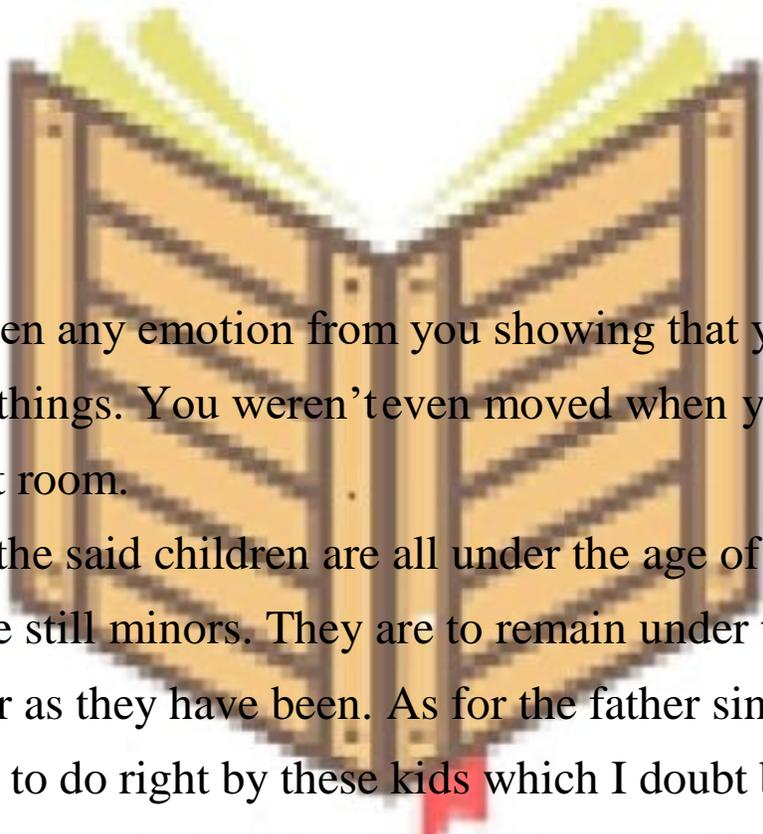
Judge Smith: Mr Tom you have guts if I should say so myself.

You sue for full custody of the kids knowing full well what you did did you really think that you would win or were you just tormenting her wanting to watch her squirm at your threats. You are a disgrace I wish she had got you arrested but then again from what I've read in your file you probably you would have bought your way out. You claim to want to do right by them but ever since you sat in my court room you haven't shown any

kind of remorse for what you did to your family I haven't seen any emotion from you showing that you actually want to fix things. You weren't even moved when your kids cried in this court room.

My ruling: the said children are all under the age of 18 meaning that they are still minors. They are to remain under the care of their mother as they have been. As for the father

Sponsored



I haven't seen any emotion from you showing that you actually want to fix things. You weren't even moved when your kids cried in this court room.

My ruling: the said children are all under the age of 18 meaning that they are still minors. They are to remain under the care of their mother as they have been. As for the father since you said you wanted to do right by these kids which I doubt but I am going to give you the benefit of the doubt you will get visitation rights. You are only allowed to visit them under supervision you will only be allowed to see them once a week and I repeat you will only have supervised visits. I

will appoint a social worker that will monitor the visits. Princess Lwanele said that they have six dads I appoint one of the new members of the family Lwazi Tiya to be present during these visits. I chose him because he's the only one that looks like he doesn't want to kill you and because he's the fun one he'll be able to lighten the mood during these visits.

Miss Sondlo you have wonderful kids and you are doing a good job raising them and the things you are teaching your kids at this young age I wish I had taught them to my kids at a younger age. You have beautiful strong young women and handsome strong young men who love you very much and I can see how much you love them. I'm allowing their father visitation rights so that they don't grow up blaming you or blaming themselves for his absence in their lives I'm doing this so that they can find a way to forgive and heal. You all won't be able to heal completely until you forgive it will take time but at some point you will have to do it which I'm sure that you have taught them about forgiving and being able to move on. I hope you understand my reasoning behind the visitation rights. And Mr Tom I truly hope they forgive you not for your sake but for their own sanity.

Princess Lwanele I hope I'll get an invitation for lunch some time. (she looks at me smiling and nods.)  
Court is adjourned.

## QHAWELOMZI

Lwazi is so excited and I know he is going to make those visits for Zwelibanzhi hell . We are all happy the judge chose Lwazi he is the most calm out of all of us. After court we all went to Khanyi's house we ordered in and just relaxed. Even the kids seem to be more relaxed now but they are not happy with the visits but they understand why the judge had to do it. Khanyi is still hurt that the kids heard everything that was happening to her. We really need to do something about Zwelibanzi with the information we have but we need something that links him directly to these activities because with everything that we have on him right now he is indirectly involved. Lonwabo interrupts my thoughts:

Lonwabo: You really shouldn't sit alone like this she is worried about you and she is scared you need to talk to her. (I know he is talking about his mother.)

Me: I will speak to her when everyone is gone I just wanted to absorb everything that happened today.

Lonwabo: I'm really sorry about how you found out. Me: it's ok man. Can I ask you something?

Lonwabo: What do you want to know?

Me: did you mean what you said when we were in court when I went to get you from your father. You said I was more of a father to you than he ever will be how do you know I'm better than him? I've only known you guys for a very short time.

Lonwabo: I just know. I just have a good feeling about you.

You are the first guy mom has introduced us to since our father which to means that she trusts you and she is not forcing you to spend time with us you are doing it on your own and you probably haven't told her anything about the "man to man" conversations we have and you never came here and demanded respect from us you earned it you are earning it. Just don't hurt us we've been through a lot especially mom. Also know that we would never intentionally hurt you.

Me: I hear you man. I would never intentionally hurt you either. Here comes your mom. Khanyi: Hey guys why so serious?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lonwabo: just having a "man to man" conversation that's all. (and he laughs) Khanyi: already that's nice.

Me: it is I feel so welcomed

Lonwabo: Let me go to the other kids. Catch you later love birds. Me: Thanks man. (and

he walks away.)

Khanyi: I miss  
you.

Me: I'm here  
my Star

Khanyi: I'm your Star now I'm moving up. (she laughs) I still  
miss you.

Me: Of cause you are my Star and I'm right here nje how do  
you miss someone who is next to you

Khanyi: you know

what I mean. Me: No

I don't explain to me.

Khanyi: you know what I mean. Mxm. ( hold her close to  
me and whisper in her ear) Me: What did I say about

using "mxm" when you talk to me?

Khanyi: Not to use it.

Me: They why are you using it?

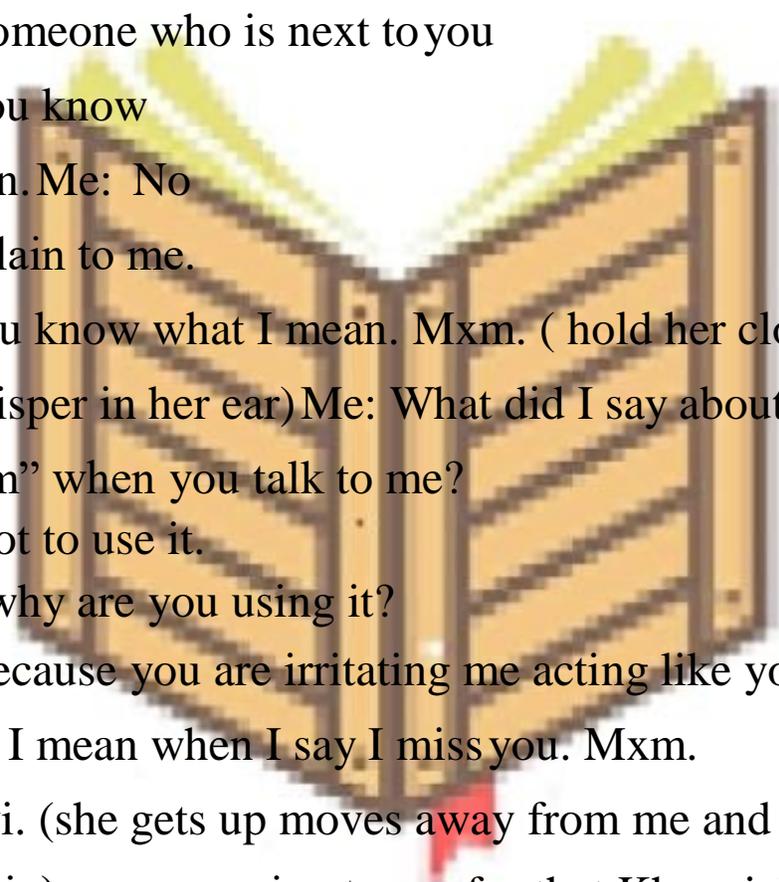
Khanyi: Because you are irritating me acting like you don't  
know what I mean when I say I miss you. Mxm.

Me: Khanyi. (she gets up moves away from me and she says

"mxm" again) you are going to pay for that Khanyisile. ( I say

getting up to move close to her and she moves back and says

it



again and she runs to the kitchen with me chasing her and she's busy calling for Eddie. When she gets to the kitchen she runs and hides behind Eddie laughing.)

Eddie: And now what's going on why are we running in the house behaving like kids? Khanyi: it's Qhawe (The guys just laugh at us. I love how childish she's being right now.)

Me: Khanyi you do know that Eddie is leaving in fact everyone is leaving they won't be here to save you.

Khanyi: I know but Lwazi is staying (she says that moving to Lwazi who was next to Eddie.) Eddie: Khanyi what did you do? You are so childish.

Khanyi: I said something I shouldn't have said. (the guys break into laughter)

Bandile: You are getting it tonight. Wait you are trusting Lwazi to save you from Qhawe. Let me tell you now Lwazi will throw into the lion's den (she looks at Lwazi shocked and he just shrugs his shoulders. Everyone is just laughing at her and she moves to Bandile avoiding me.) Khanyi: can't you stay then? (she asks Bandile and he gets up grabs his phone and car keys.)

Bandile: bye guys.

Khanyi: Huh Bandile just like that.

## CHAPTER 24

A WEEK

LATER

WEDNE

SDAY

ZWELIBANZI

My phone rings:

Me: what do you want?

Her: when are you coming back you been gone for two months now.

Me: I don't have time for this I told you I'll be back when I get what I came here for.

Her: Zwelibanzi how long is that going to take we need you here and your father needs you and your mother can't do this alone.

Me: My father is the reason

I'm here how is he? Her:

come back and you'll know

how he is doing. Me: fine I'll

back during the weekend.

Her: I really don't understand the obsession you and your

father have over this woman she left you why don't you just let her be.

NOVELSGURU.COM

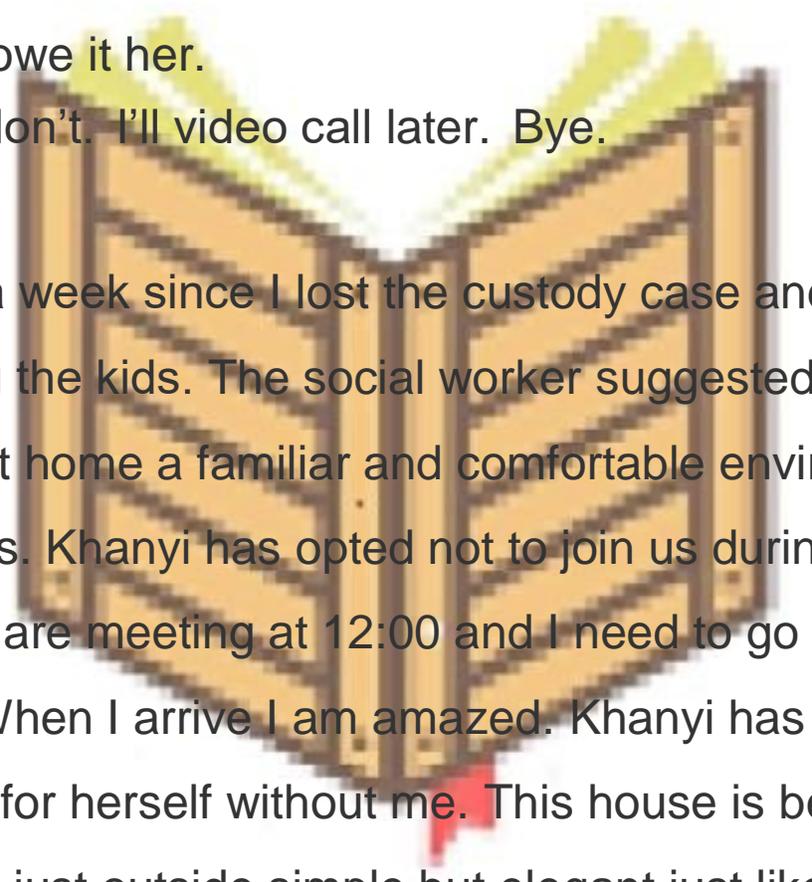
Me: you don't know anything about this so don't talk about it.

Her: maybe you should enlighten me and you need to tell her the truth Zwelibanzi.

Me: she is no longer my wife what difference will telling her the truth make it's not like she'll willingly come back to me with kids.

Her: you owe it her.

Me: no I don't. I'll video call later. Bye.



It's been a week since I lost the custody case and today I'm seeing the kids. The social worker suggested that visits be at home a familiar and comfortable environment for the kids. Khanyi has opted not to join us during these visits. We are meeting at 12:00 and I need to go before I am late. When I arrive I am amazed. Khanyi has really done well for herself without me. This house is beautiful and this is just outside simple but elegant just like her. I'm waiting at the gate while the security announces that I'm here. They let I drive in and my jaw drops WOW!!! I park the car in the driveway and make my way to the door escorted by another guy. He walks in with me:

Guy: Andile (he calls out and a familiar face shows up

and it's one of the guys. But I know this guy just don't know from where I can't place him.)

Andile: thanks Jason I'll

take it from here. Jason:

later man.

Andile: Zwelibanzi

follow me. Me: It's

Mr Tom to you.

Lwazi: next you come in here you leave that cocky attitude at the gate. (he says walking to us and we walk to the kitchen and I can hear them laughing when we walk in the go quiet. They are sitting with the social work having sandwiches. Lwazi offers me a sit I take a sit and greet everyone. I guess we are doing this in the kitchen.)

Andile: do you need me here?

Lwazi: don't worry man we'll be cool. Thanks. (Andile walks away)

Social worker: I'm only here to monitor the situation and make a report I'll interfere if I have to. (she stands and sits at the dining table in the kitchen while we all sat on the high chairs of the kitchen counter.)

Me: how are you guys

Lwanele: we are fine thanks how about you? (she has

taken after her mom she looks so much like her. I  
remember when her mom was pregnant I used to tell her  
that the baby was going to be a mini her and I was right.  
She is a mini Khanyi)  
Me: I'm ok just nervous



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lonwabo: why are you nervous?

Me: I haven't seen you guys in a long and I don't know how to act around you.

Lwazi: you can start by not being so serious and smile a little. (the kids just chuckle a little)

Lonwabo: Uncle Lwazi don't start. Today we need to be serious it is the first visit after all. Ntando: why did you lie in court about mom?

Me: What do you mean I lied?

Ntando: You said mom changed her number when she left and yet she didn't he kept hoping you would call and ask about us but you didn't. do we mean that little to you so little that you weren't even bothered by us leaving?

Me: It's not that there's more to it you are too young understand.

Lonwabo: that's bullshit if you wanted... (he does finish Lwazi interrupts him)

Lwazi: Lonwabo watch the language

he is still an adult. Lonwabo: Sorry

Uncle Lwazi (he turns and looks at me) I'm sorry.

Lwanele: Why do you think you deserve and a second chance from where I'm sitting I don't think you deserve

one.

Me: after everything I've put you through I probably don't deserve one but I am here hoping that at some point I'll get.

Ntando: Well we have discovered that you don't deserve one even if I may forgive you I don't want a relationship with I don't want you in my life I don't need you.

Lwanele: me I'm sorted. All I ever wanted was to have my father love me protect me and treat me like a Princess but I have someone who does that so I'm good. Maybe someday I'll find it in my heart to forgive you.

Me: You are really not going to make this easy on me are you?

Lonwabo: Why should we when you made our lives hell.

Mom always says we shouldn't hate you but you know what I hate you just like you hate us.

Me: I don't hate you might not believe this but. I do love you.

Lonwabo: You have a very funny way of showing it. Uncle Lwazi I've had enough of this can I go to my room.

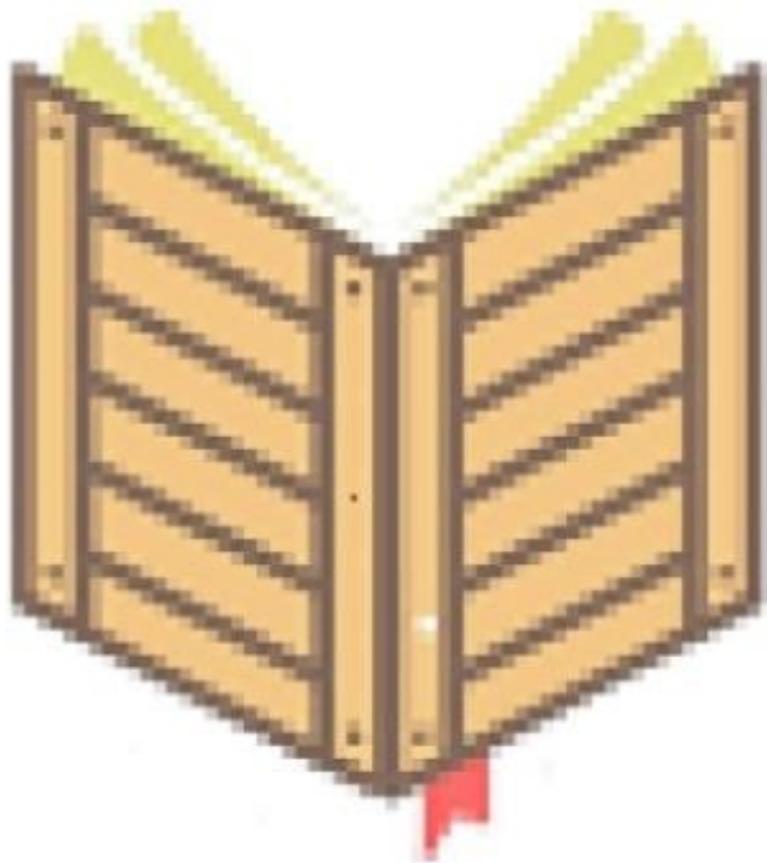
Lwazi: yeah sure you can go.

Me: but we are still talking you can't walk away just like that. Lonwabo: we learned from the best. ( he says that

walking away)

Ntando: Lonwabo wait for us. Lwanele  
are you coming. Bye Zwelibanzi Lwanele:  
bye Banzi

Me: Guys please wait



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

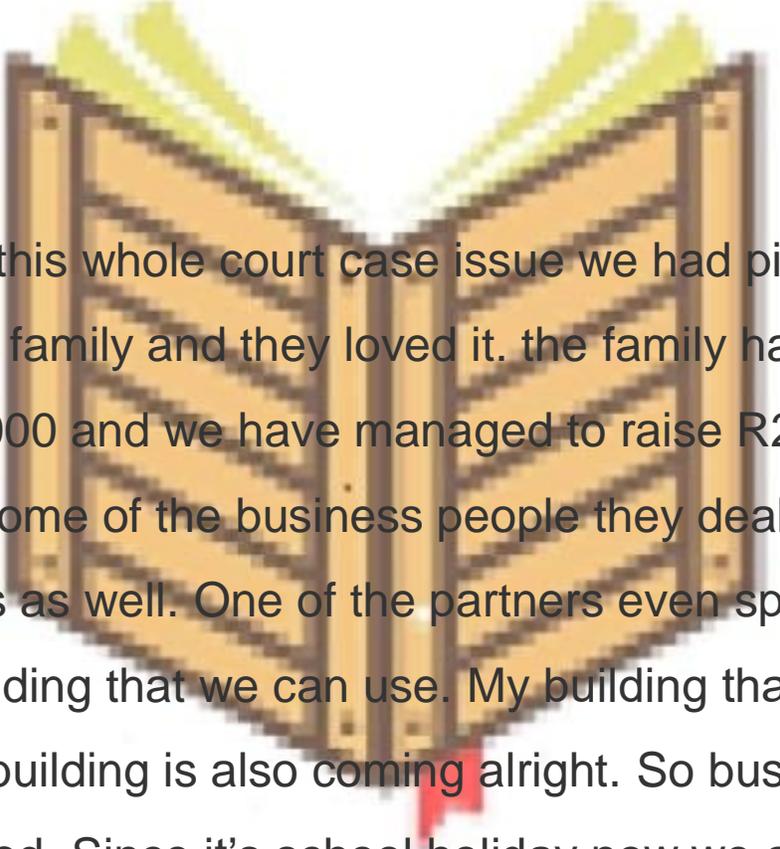
Social worker: Let them go.

You'll see them next week. Me:

they can't just leave

Lwazi: Look man those kids are angry and they hate you right now. Let them cool off. Just go home. (I turn to leave. That didn't go well at all.)

KHAYA



So before this whole court case issue we had pitched an idea to the family and they loved it. the family has given us R 500 000 and we have managed to raise R2 200 000. They got some of the business people they deal with to sponsor us as well. One of the partners even sponsored us with building that we can use. My building that bhut' Qhawe is building is also coming alright. So business is looking good. Since it's school holiday now we are going to be focused on the Brotherhood Love. That's we call the project. I'm on my way home I'm sure my mom is also home. I've been spending a lot of time at home lately just want to be sure that everyone is ok. Bhut' Qhawe is also spending the week with us. The kids are leaving this

weekend for the Eastern I wonder if the grandparents will cope apparently Sibahle Sibahle Zenande and Lisakhanya will be staying at grandparents' house for the holidays with my siblings.

Linamandla: you are home early

me: yes I finished early

today. Where is mom?

Lina: She is not here yet.

Me: let me go change how far are you with the cooking?

Lina: I'm not the one cooking today

Sibahle and Lonwabo are cooking. Me: I

see. I'll be back just now.

Lina: I'll come with you. I want to

talk to you about something Me: Ok

what's up?

Lina: Well I have a boyfriend.

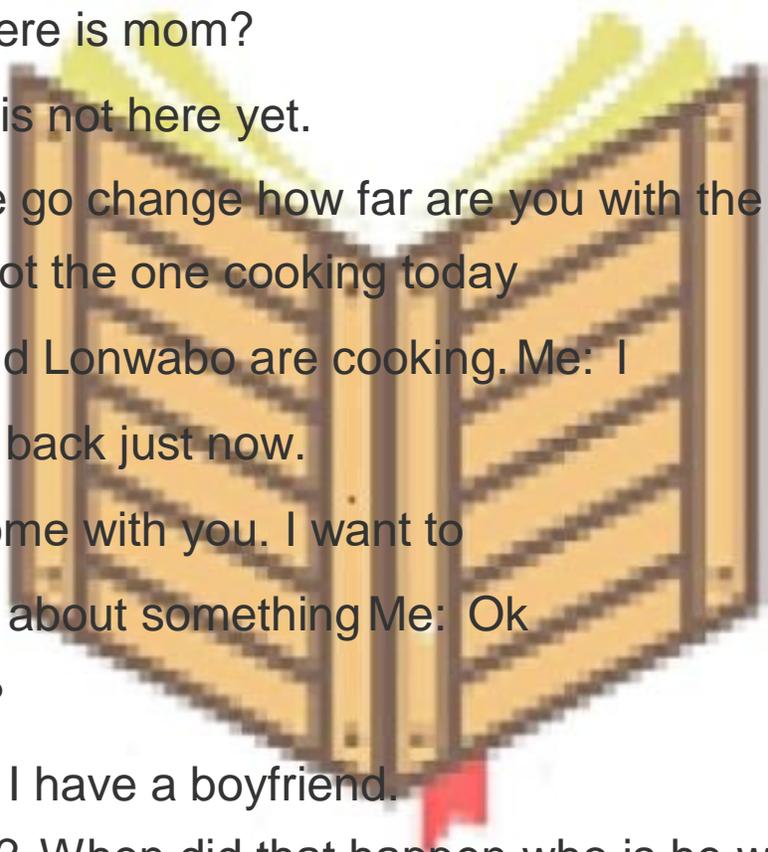
ME: What? When did that happen who is he where does he live?

Lina: can you please stop with the 20 questions and no you are not meeting him yet. It's been a year now.

me: a year Lina and you are only

telling me now no man. Lina: I

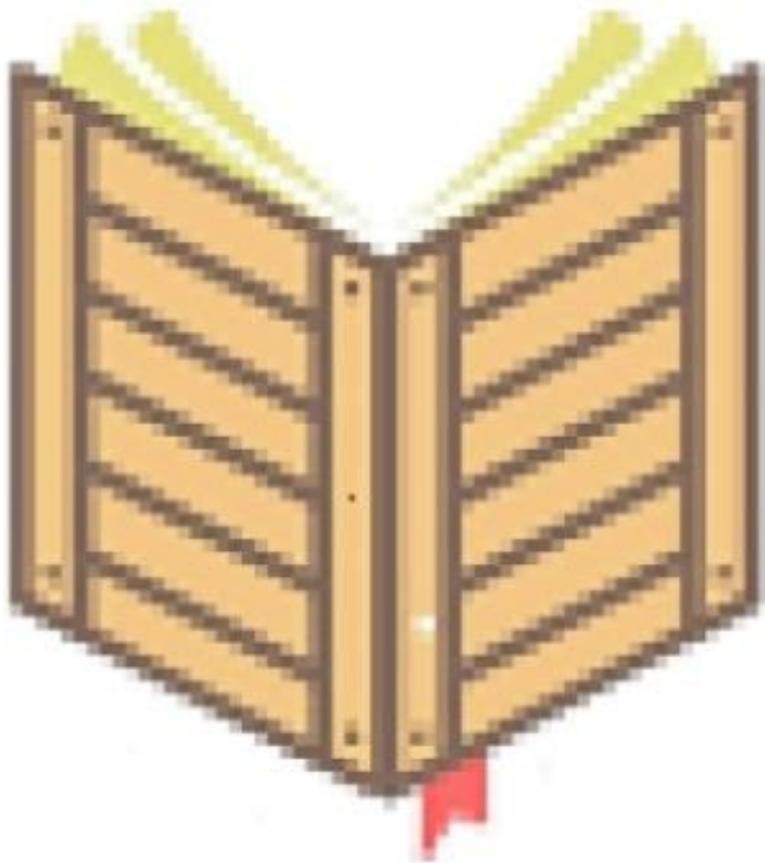
wanted to be sure about him first.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: does mom know?

Lina: not yet and you are not telling her she has a lot to deal with right now. Me: fine.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lina: Let's go dinner is probably ready and probably mom is home now. Khaya you can't tell anyone yet I want to tell them myself.

Me: You do know that that boyfriend of yours is in trouble especially with Bhut' Qhawe. Lina: I know Khaya.

Me: hey guys hi ma how are you?

Mom: I'm good just tired. Guys you know you are leaving for the Eastern Cape this weekend. Have you started packing yet?

Lwanele: yes mom we have.

Mom: make sure you pack warm clothes. The Eastern Cape is cold at this time.

QHAWELOMZI

I'm at my house getting ready to leave. I'm spending the week at Khanyi's house since the kids are there. My door bell rings who could that be I'm not expecting anyone when I open the door my mood drops from hot to ice cold.

Me: What are you doing here?

Her: aren't you going to let

me in. (I let her in.) Me: I

asked you a question?

Her: I'm here to see the kids

Me: Anelisa how many times must I tell you not to

come to my house unannounced? Anelisa: But

the kids said they were home when I asked them

where they are.

Me: did you say you were

coming to see them? Anelisa:

I didn't think it would be a

problem.

Me: Well it is a problem. When they said they were home

they didn't mean this home if you had asked you would

know.

Anelisa: Where are they?

Me: At my girlfriend's house. This weekend they are

leaving for the Eastern Cape and you already know that.

(she looks shocked it must be fact that the kids are with

Khanyi?

Anelisa: You have already introduced our kids to that woman already it's so soon.

Me: Anelisa this is none of your business. The kids are

happy that's all that matters she makes them happy not



NOVELSGURU.COM

that you would notice.

Anelisa: Qhawe please



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: it's true Anelisa you didn't even notice that Lisakhanya change her hair and she has boobs now and started her periods. You are so pre-occupied wanting something you can't have. You can't have me.

Anelisa: Qhawe come on I was your wife we were happy once we can be happy again. (she walks closer to me and tries to kiss me but I grab her wrists tight)

Me: You are right though you were my wife and we were happy once until you ruined it. I'm over it I'm moving on with life and I love Khanyi I'm in love with her she is my future. As for you you are nothing but the mother of my kids. Please leave I need to go.

Anelisa: Qhawe please don't do this we can make it work.

Me: Anelisa get out (she hesitates a bit but eventually she leaves.)

I grab my bag and my car keys and drive to my people and when I get there there is so much noise. They are

in the lounge playing games they don't even notice that I'm home I take a few

pictures and greet everyone. The little princesses come running to me for their hugs. These two are such babies. I take my bag upstairs and come back down to join the

Ten kids we make a rugby team and it's all good we are

happy. Khanyi's phone beeps indicating a message and that's her work phone her face changes in a split second when she reads the message. The kids haven't noticed she gets up and asks me to go with her to the kitchen and help her with the snacks. She gives me the phone to read the message.

Me: What  
the.....

Khanyi: I  
know

Me: is he stupid or what is Zwelibanzi stupid or what and he's even threatening you.

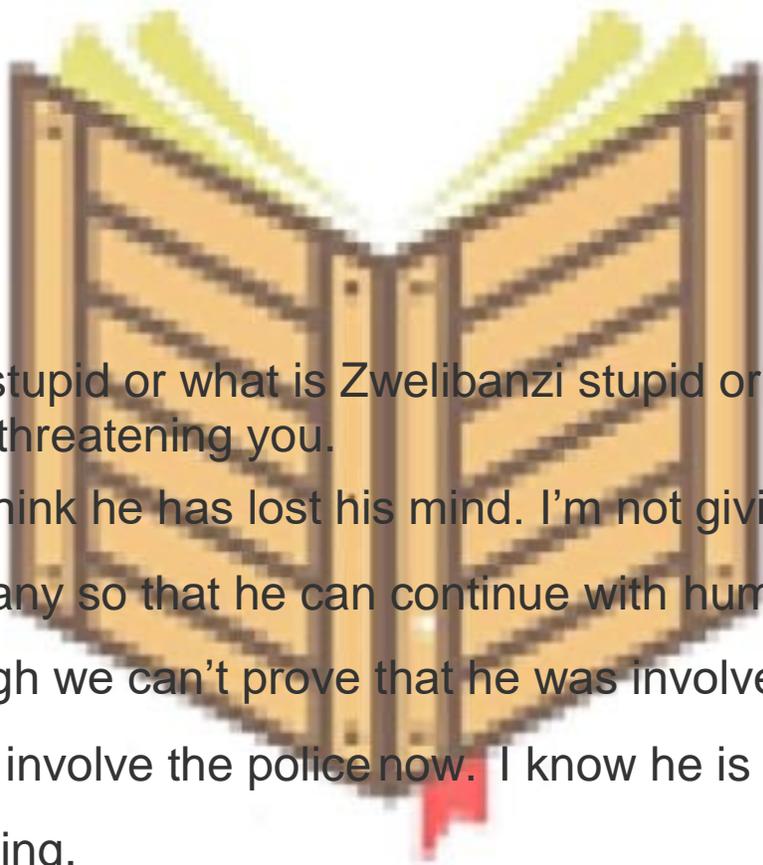
Khanyi: I think he has lost his mind. I'm not giving him that company so that he can continue with human traffic even though we can't prove that he was involved I think we should involve the police now. I know he is going to try something.

Me: don't panic. It's all going to be ok remember you have the best team.

I lift her and put her on the kitchen counter and I stand between her legs and kiss her. The kids show up in the kitchen all ten of them.

Bandile (Twin): I thought you were getting snacks

Banele: it's obvious they are busy snacking on each other

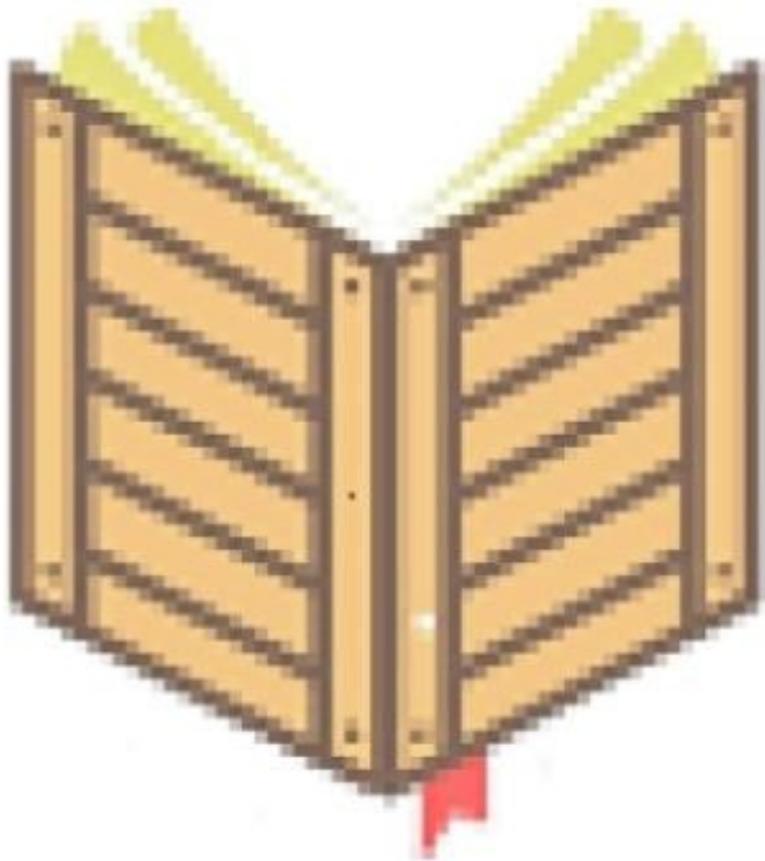


NOVELSGURU.COM

(and they all laugh. This is going to be a three days before they leave and these kids are cock blocking me every chance they get. Even Lisakhanya has a habit of wanting to share our bed with us.

They need to leave already I miss my baby girl and I know she misses me as well.

## CHAPTER 25



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

SATURDAY MORNING

QHAWELOMZI

The three days went by very fast. Khanyi is very angry at Zwelibanzi for threatening her for the company. I need to speak to Eddie about this maybe Khanyi giving Zwelibanzi the company might just be the trap we need to put him away for a long time. We could kill him but then again we are not killers. Khanyi just wants him dead and that night the only way I could get her to calm down was to sex her up and it's official I'm addicted to her not just sexually but in every way especially the way she carries herself her simplicity and right now I wish it was just me and her in this car. Khanya interrupts my naughty thoughts Khanyi looks at me and sees that I am a little annoyed and she just laughs at me.

Khanya: daddy

Me: yes Princess (I say with a big smile.)

Khanya: we need a bigger car so we can all ride together.

Me: You are right about that Princess we do need

a bigger a car for times like these. Khanyi: and

daddy is going to buy it Princess.

Me: I am?

Khanya: yes daddy you must.

Lwanele: I think he wants mom to buy it. (she laughs)

Khanyi: you can forget it Mr you agreed to it so you buy it. I still want to buy myself a sports car. Khanya: but mom you don't need to buy a sports a car daddy has 2 you can just take one of his. Khanyi: You know what Princess you are right and he actually has the one I want to buy.

Me: Ok stay away from my cars. (they all laugh I love these girls.) Khanyi: Buy us a family bus and we'll stay away from your cars. Zenande: Mom is right.

Me: You are calling Khanyi "mom"

Zenande: calling her sis' Khanyi didn't really gel with us so we decided to call her mom since we call Anelisa mommy.

Khanyi: Are you sure you want to call me mom? Khanya: We

would like nothing better if you allow us. Lwanele: believe me

she doesn't mind

Zenande: you really won't mind?

Khanyi: no babies I  
don't mind I'd love it.

Me: Are you blushing (I  
ask Khanyi) Khanyi:

mxm Qhawe leave me  
alone.

Me: did you just say "mxm"

Khanyi: oh shit (I just give her a smirk)

I park the car as we get to the airport. We are the last  
ones to get here. We made it in time. We get the whole  
process done the kids board their flight and we leave.

When we get to the car I lift her and put her on top of the  
car and stand between her legs.

Me: I want you to look at me (she looks at me) I want to  
remind you that I love you and you don't have to carry the  
load alone anymore. I want you to let me in let me take  
care of you and the kids let me give them what they need I  
know you are used to taking care of yourself I want to take

care of you guys allow me to do that let me love you let  
me help you heal your broken hearts let me be there for  
you let me protect you. Khanyi I'm not going anywhere  
this is it for me you are it for me there's no one else. I

know you think it's too soon for me to know that you are what I want I know what I want and that is you. I've loved before a lot but I've never been in love before and right now I am in love. To me love is not just an emotion that I feel for you it is what I am willing to sacrifice for you and our kids. I love you Baby Girl I'm in love with you. Also know that when you hurt I hurt too when you cry I cry with you when you die I die with you. (she's been crying and I just hold her to my chest and let her cry and I hear her chuckle through the tears. She pulls away and looks at me)

Khanyi: this is so random you are declaring your love in the parking lot at the airport with me sitting on the boot of your car I'm so turned on right now.

Me: Really Khanyi after everything I've said you are busy getting wet I must say I am horny too and it's a good thing you are wearing a dress. (she looks at me and gives me a naughty smile.)

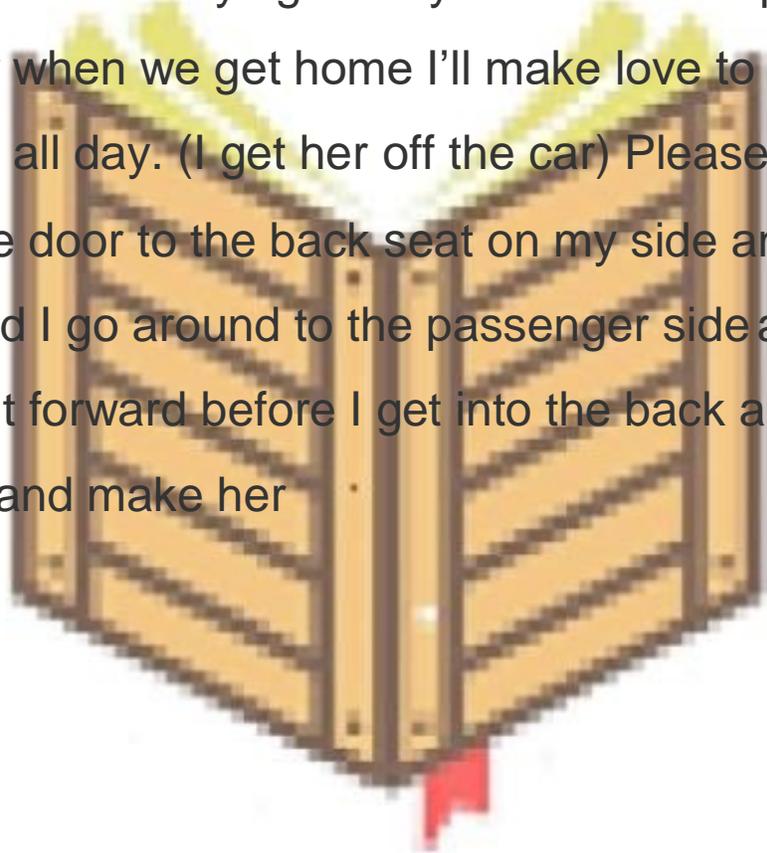
Khanyi: I know you love me and I don't doubt that at all. I do trust you and I believe that you wouldn't hurt me on purpose but I still have this fear in me and I'm really trying to get rid of

it Zwelibanzi really broke me Qhawe I just need you to be patient with me I promise I'll open up. (she kisses me after saying all that.)

Me: and I promise I'll be patient.

Khanyi: let's go home so that you make love to me.

Me: I can't wait that long I'm going to fuck you first right here right now for saying what you were not supposed to say earlier when we get home I'll make love to you slowly and gently all day. (I get her off the car) Please go inside (I open the door to the back seat on my side and she goes in and I go around to the passenger side and move the front sit forward before I get into the back and sit. I pull her to me and make her



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

straddle me. I push up her dress and squeeze her thighs a little and that causes her to close her eyes and I can see she is enjoying my touch I don't want this to take long I get her off me and take her panties off and bring her back on top of me I squeeze her boobs and she closes her eyes again.)

Me: Open your eyes Baby Girl and keep them open this is going to be quick ok

(she nods and opens her eyes. I finger her she's so wet for me I quickly unzip my pants and pull them down while she watches my dick spring out and she gasps she hasn't gotten used to it I take that moment and gently push myself in her I struggle a bit eventually I go in and I can feel her expanding to take all of me in she feels so warm she closes her eyes when I start moving.

Me: keep your eyes open Baby Girl lean back on the front sit and I'll help you move ok. (she nods) I can't here you baby

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: Ok (I move inside her while helping her move and she's moaning like crazy with her hands on my knees balancing herself. I push myself even deeper and hard she gasps I move faster I can feel she is about to come.)

Me: wait for me baby ( i bring her body to my chest and

she buries her face in my neck with her arms around my neck my hands on her waist helping her move faster until we both come. We stay like that for a while after which I pull her up and place on her back on the seat and use her panties to clean us and I put them in my pocket she looks at and doesn't say anything. As soon as we are done we drive back home and she falls asleep on the way.)

I really love this woman and I'll do anything for her and I have a surprise for her I hope she likes it.

ZWELIBANZI

My dad is really not well the cancer is really back but he is strong I believe he is going to survive. Mom: Zwelibanzi how are you

Me: I'm ok mama just tired that's all. How is dad doing?

Mom: He is asleep now. (she takes a deep breath)

Zwelibanzi where is Sisipho (that's the name they gave Khanyi when we got married) why didn't you bring her with you?

Me: I'll bring her next time mama.

Mom: Zwelibanzi you said that last time and you know your father wants to see her and his grandchildren before he

dies. He doesn't think he is going to survive it this time.

Me: I'll bring her mama.

Mom: Tell me the truth Banzi where is she you are not too old for me to beat you where is she where are the kids.

The kids visit her parents all the time and they never come here why is that Banzi why did she stop bringing the kids here?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: mama please not now (she slaps me and when I look at her she means business) ok fine I'll tell you. She is in Durban she lives and works there now. She has her own business there. She left me mama she left and took the kids with her four years ago. ( I can see the shock on her face she doesn't believe me.)

Mom: What do you mean she left what did you do she wouldn't just leave you that girl loves you. Four years ago Banzi and you didn't tell us (can I really tell her what happened what I did to her precious Makoti mom loves Khanyi a lot she was like a daughter to her. She loves her more than she loves Simamkele infact she doesn't like Simamkele at all.)

Me: Mama can we talk about this later I want to go see the twins and Sima. (I say that kissing her forehead and walking away)

Mom: Did you ever tell her the truth Banzi?

(I stop and turn to look and her.) Me: No mama I didn't I was afraid she would leave if she knew the truth.

Mom: She left anyway and you have to tell her or I will find her and I will tell her myself. Me: Is that why

dad wants to see her you guys want to tell her?

Mom: We didn't tell her in the first because of you we were respecting your wishes. You said you wanted to tell her yourself and we trusted you to do that Banzi and you never did. Even if she left you she still deserves to know the truth. Why did she leave?

Me: She left because I stopped being good to her I wasn't the husband I was supposed to be. (I left her standing there.)

When I get to my house Sima is there with the twins.

Me: Hey guys (the twins come running to me screaming tata) Hey boys how are you? Sima:

We are good when did you arrive?

Me: a few hours ago I went to see dad first.

Sima: Zweli we miss you when are you coming home? Me: as soon as I'm finished in Durban

I'll come home. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sima: That's not good enough Zweli when you leave we are coming with you. The boys miss you I miss you this house is too big and I can't deal with your mother Zweli she doesn't like me she never did she always wants to

see the twins.

Me: they are her grandkids she can see them whenever she wants. I know mama doesn't like you but she has never mistreated you or spoken out of turn with you I really don't understand what the issue is with her.

Sima: it's too much your dad being sick your mom the twins it's too much.

Me: Sima you don't work you live in this beautiful house you have everything you need you even have a helper what could be too much?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sima: Don't do that don't even try to compare me to her I'm not like her and never will be. With you it's always Khanyi this Khanyi that always Khanyi and her kids. I can't compete with her Zweli she has moved on with her life. She left you Zweli deal with it. (with that said she walked out taking her car keys leaving me with the twins.)

SUNDAY MORNING

KHANYISILE

Qhawe: Wake up my Baby Girl  
(he whispers in my ear) Me: No  
man Que I want to sleep some  
more.

Qhawe: come on Khanyi I want to take you shopping. (I slowly get up and wince a little and he has this worried look on his face) what's wrong baby?

Me: (I am annoyed by his question and he can see it. this is all his fault.) Do you even have to ask Qhawelomzi I'm in pain because of you.

Qhawe: Oh! What did I do now?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Qhawe my nuna hurts (I am literally crying and this man in front of me is busy laughing at me) Qhawe: Come your hot bath is ready you'll feel better in no time. (he is right I don't know what he puts in my bath water but I always feel better afterwards besides I have to feel better he's taking me to spend his money today. He carries me to the bathroom and puts in the bathtub and he joins me sitting behind me. I love the tub in his house it is big bigger than mine.)

Me: thank you. So you are taking me shopping today?

Qhawe: yes baby you get to spend your man's money today anything you want and I need a few things too.

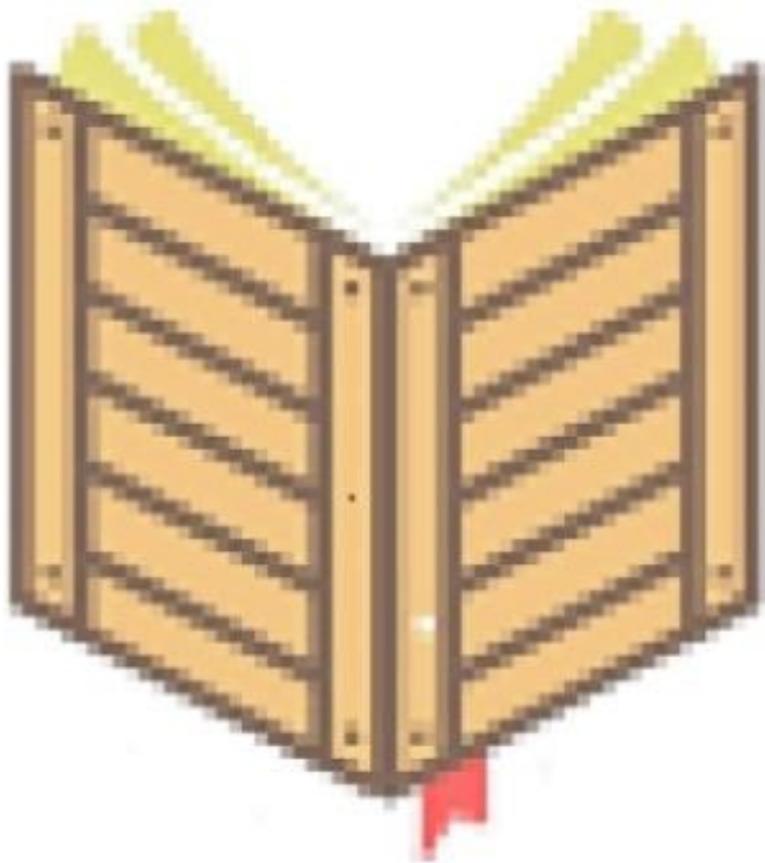
Me: Anything I want are you sure about that?

Qhawe: yes I'm sure just don't bankrupt me.

Me: we'll see about that. There's something I want to talk to you about it's business. Well it's something I did without talking to you please don't be mad.

Qhawe: I can never be mad at you. Can we talk while we get out of the tub water is cold now besides I don't want us to be late. (I agree with him and we get out of the tub.)

Me: in all the chaos that has been happening in our lives and running businesses I took the liberty of speaking to your marketing manager. We had quite a lengthy meeting. I don't feel that they are



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

doing enough to market your company so I decided to take over the marketing department but I will be working with them you don't have to fire anyone in that department.

Qhawe: baby what do you mean by taking over the marketing department?

Me: I mean that QM Architecture's marketing will be done by my company in fact we have already started. (I take out a file from my laptop bag and give it to him to look at.)

Look at this. (I walk to the closet take to get something to wear. I take out my blue jeans and red top red sneakers. Today is a warm day. All of a sudden he is up and taking the clothes that I took out back to the closet and gives a brand new outfit Navy short white shirt and navy sneakers. When did he buy these? He goes back to looking at the file while I get dressed. He is only wearing his shorts.)

Qhawe: I can't believe you did this (he

says smiling I take it he likes it.) Me: You

like it?

Qhawe: I like it? Baby I love it this is the direction I've been wanting to take the company how did you know because I know we never spoke about it.

Me: I didn't I just thought that if it were me that's the direction I would want to take to expand the company's clientele.

Qhawe: this is amazing I love it. come here. (I walk over to him and he makes me straddle him while he's sitting on the bed wrapping my legs around his waist and he kisses me so softly and slowly. He stops and looks deep in my eyes.) I see it in your eyes I see it in your actions and when you are ready to say it you will and I'll be patient. I love you and thank you so much for this.

Me: it was my pleasure. (we finished getting dressed and I noticed that we are dressed in matching outfits. On the left side of his shirt there's a small picture of woman with a crown Queen written about the picture and with an arrow pointing to his right arm. When we walk hand in hand the arrow is pointing at me same with my shirt but mine has a man and King written on it. Only a person who stands directly in front us can see these.) matching outfits nhe.

Qhawe: do you like them?

Me: I love them. I won't even ask when you planned all this. Let's go. Can't wait start spending your money.

(when we get downstairs Bandile was here what is he doing here I look up at Qhawe and he just shrugs.) Hello Bandile bye Bandile.

Qhawe: I'll be right there sweetheart.( He throws me the car keys we are taking the Audi today my favourite. I go to the car and sit on the passenger side and play some music. After a few minutes Qhawe gets in and we drive off.)

Me: What did he want?

Qhawe: he wants to chill he thought I was alone. Me: ok.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

We drive to the mall we first have breakfast at Wimpy after which we went to the shops. He was surprised that I wasn't buying much. Well after this I'm taking him to show him what I really want. Right now he's taking me to lingerie store really Qhawe. I tell him I don't need any lingerie and I'm told it's not for me it's for him but I'm going to wear it for him that is. Apparently I need to have new lingerie every month. I don't mind that since I love lingerie. We are busy looking at some beautiful pieces when she walks over to us:

Her: Qhawe (he looks annoyed very annoyed)

Qhawe: Anelisa (I've only seen a picture of her so this is her.) What do you want? Anelisa: just saying hi I'm doing a little shopping as well.

Qhawe: Good for you. Bye.(He looks at me) Let's go Babe.

Anelisa: Oh! This is her the girlfriend. We haven't been formally introduced I'm Anelisa (she holds out her hand for me to take it I really don't like handshakes.)

Qhawe: She doesn't do handshakes. Anelisa:

Oh ok. Anyway I'm

Anelisa

Me: And you thought introducing yourself to me whilst shopping for lingerie with my man who is your ex would be proper.

Anelisa: I'm not just an ex I'm also the mother of his children.

Me: Which I am very much aware of but you seem to be missing the point my dear. If you... I don't finish Qhawe cut's me off.

Qhawe: Anelisa we are busy

Me: Qhawe please I'll handle this it seems that her issue is with me not you.

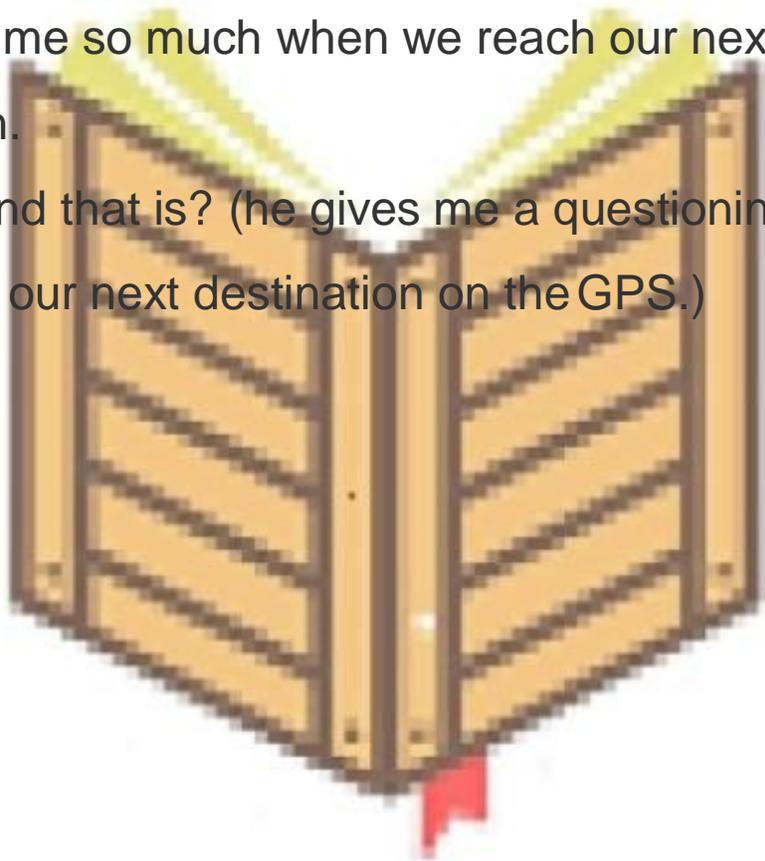
As I was saying I am very much aware that you are not only his ex you are the mother of his kids. Now if you wanted to meet me and properly introduce yourself you would have done that a long time ago. You would have called Qhawe and asked if you could meet the woman in his life the woman that will be spending time with your children but no you decide to interrupt our time because you feel entitled just because you have his kids. Anelisa right please don't exhaust me I still need my energy for tonight. Que can we please go before she drains me and if she does you won't be getting

any. (she looks shocked and annoyed at the same time.)

Anelisa: She calls you “Que” (we just looked at her and we left her standing there went and paid for our things and left.)

Qhawe: Remind me to never get on your wrong side. I love you (I just smile at him) Khanyi: You won't love me so much when we reach our next destination.

Qhawe: And that is? (he gives me a questioning look and I just punch our next destination on the GPS.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: You said I should spend your money and that's what I'm doing. Qhawe: you call what you did at the mall spending money

Sponsored

you didn't even put a dent on my account. Sibahle and Zenande can shop better than you. You my dear you need lessons in shopping. (he laughs.)

Me: You are going to take back everything you just said when we reach our destination. (before he could say anything else we arrived at our destination his jaw dropped.) don't say anything let me show you what I want. That is what I want. (I look up at him and I find him looking at me and he kisses me)

Qhawe: I take it back all of it. You do know how to spend money and this you shall have. Since it's closed today we'll come back for it tomorrow. This is going to put a dent on my bank account. (he kisses me again.)

ZWELIBANZI

Dad: Your mom tells me that  
Sisipho left you tell me why? Me:  
yes dad she left me she left  
because I wasn't good to her.

Dad: Call her now I want to talk to her I need to see her  
and my grandkids. I've been wondering why she stopped  
coming here. I said call her now.

Me: I can't dad I don't have her personal number I only  
have her business cell number which is off on weekends.

Dad: With all the money you have you can't get her  
number for four years you couldn't find her what good is  
this money if you can't do a simple thing as getting  
someone's contact number.

Me: Dad you don't understand Khanyi is keeping her life  
very private she's hardly ever in the media as well  
everything that is not business related she keeps it private  
and the guys helping her do that are very good at what  
they do. I've tried to hack into her private life with no luck.  
She has the best guys in the game.

Dad: where does she get the money for all of that last

time I checked she wasn't working not that it was her choice anyway.

Me: she has her own business now dad in the last four years she has built an empire a legacy for her kids she is multimillionaire now.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Dad: Smart girl I'm glad she is doing well for herself without you. I don't care what you have to do I need to see my grandkids. I don't have much time. Do you understand me Zwelibanzi and Zwelibanzi tell that the girl the truth you said you would now do it or else I'll come back from beyond the grave to haunt you.

BANDILE

Qhawe just texted me saying they are on their way back I wonder how much did she spend. That Woman never spends Qhawe's money and he always complains that she never asks him for anything. He understands that she has her own money but he just wants to take care of her as her man. I hope she makes him file for bankruptcy tomorrow. I hear a car outside.

Me: guys they are here. (they walk in holding hands matching outfits and all they look cute.) Us: surprise!!!!!! (I'm sure Khanyi nearly had a heart attack)

Khanyi: Qhawe what is this?

Qhawe: Turn around and see my love.

Khanyi: Oh my gosh you guys

what are you doing here? Ncesh:

We wanted to surprise you we missed you.

Thando: plus we have some news that we wanted to share with you and we didn't want to tell you over the phone.

Me: ladies come let's go outside that's where we are sitting. Qhawe:

Let me just go put these upstairs I'll be there just now. Me: You'll find us outside.

Khanyi: haa guys you even set up for a braai these must be good news.

Me: We are just waiting for one more person. Just in time.

(Qhawe walks in with Lwazi laughing as usual at whatever they are talking about.)

Lwazi: Ladies how are you today?

Khanyi: we are good (what are you so happy about?) Lwazi:

Can't a man be just happy.

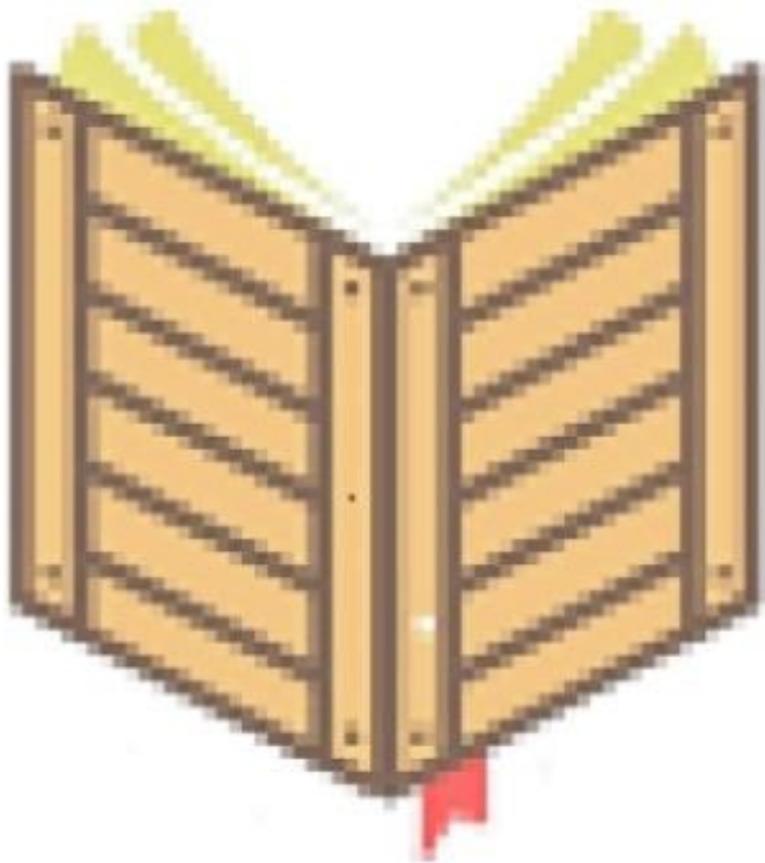
Khanyi: no and your happy is getting laid happy. You got



NOVELSGURU.COM

laid either last night or today. (we all laugh because we know it's true)

Me: Khanyi we all have something to tell you. (Qhawe is sitting next her she's sitting on the armrest of the couch she has her arm hooked on Qhawe's and her head on his shoulder she loves doing that when sitting next him.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: Ok what is it? wait a second. (she looks at me then Lwazi then Qhawe and then she looks at Thando and Ncesh then at herself and Qhawe.) Hold on matching outfits(we are all wearing navy shorts white shirts and navy sneakers she stands and leaves Qhawe seated she looks at our shirts and I think she found what she was looking) OH MY GOSH!!!! (she looks at Qhawe) And you didn't tell me.

Qhawe: It wasn't my place to tell you besides they wanted to tell you themselves. Me: it's true Khanyi we asked him not tell you.

Khanyi: Oh please don't give me that couples gossip all the time. (we all just laugh at her this woman is crazy. She goes back to her man sitting exactly the same way she was before one would think she is clingy but she is just in love and she's afraid to admit it she's scared of being hurt and she unknowingly acts out how she feels about my friend.) how long has this been going on?

Lwazi: from the first time we met them. We've been travelling to the Eastern Cape a lot since then. Khanyi: out of all the women you could date you decide to date my friends.

Me: What can we say we fell for your charm

Lwazi: I think that's the other way around

you guys fell for our charm. Khanyi: Lwazi

you are so full of yourself.

Thando: You can say that again. (Lwazi looks at her with a raised eyebrow)

Khanyi: Lwazi you are so full of yourself (Thando looks at her) what you said I should say it again. She gets up hugging all of us.) I'm happy for you guys.

Thando: I didn't mean that literally and thank you. Qhawe: and then where is my hug?

Lwazi: hayi Qhawe jealousy doesn't suit you

Khanyi: hey leave my man alone. (she walks over to her man and straddles him she puts her arms around his neck as he pulls her closer to his chest and kisses her like we are not here. She whispers something in his ear he laughs and he whispers back and she pouts he just kisses. They deserve to be happy. These two have been through a lot and they deserve this and we are just standing her watching them.)

Ncesh: ok guys that's enough. Khanyi come let's go to the kitchen we need to get started on the salads.

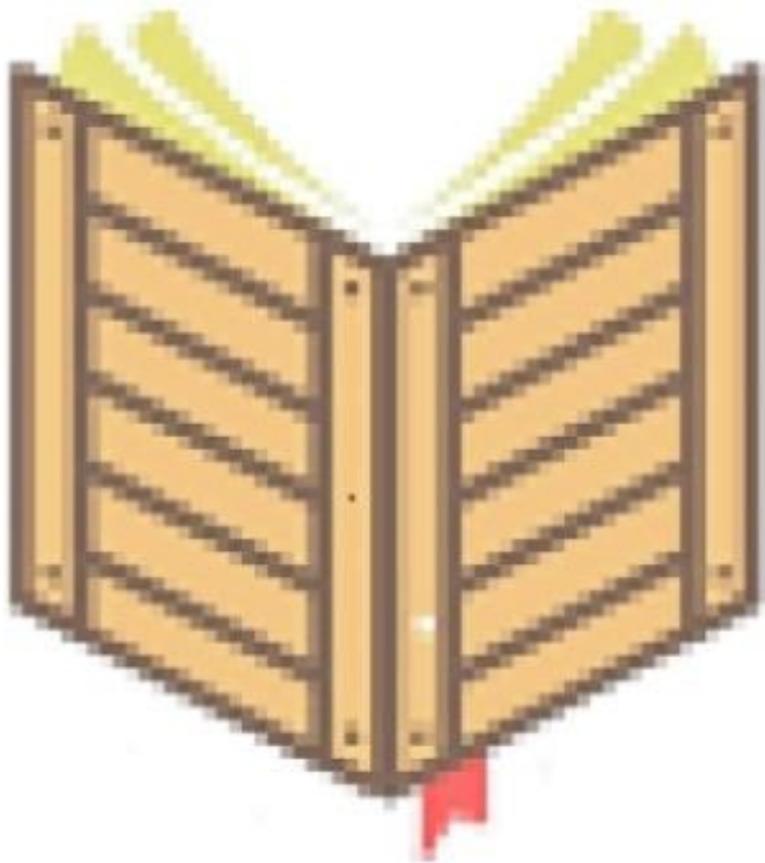
Me: don't worry about that my love. We are doing everything for you today so you ladies can just sit and relax.

What will you be drinking my Queen

Ncesh: Wine please

Thando: I'll have wine too please

Khanyi: (looking at Qhawe) I'll have a beer my King (my friend is smiling like a retard.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

We get started with getting the food ready and Qhawe is busy with the fire and chatting with the ladies. When we are done in the kitchen Lwazi and I join the others outside we help Qhawe with the meat. We sit and relax have our meal conversation is great good music. Khanyi gets up to go to the bathroom and doorbell rings.

Khanyi: I'll get it (she shouts and a few minutes later we hear a gunshot.)

## CHAPTER 27

SUNDAY

EVENING

BANDILE

We hear a gunshot and Qhawe is the first to jump out of his seat and then a second gunshot. When we get to the front door she is lying on the floor bleeding. The door is still open the two guards come running in and in that moment we hear a car driving off.

Me: Check it out and call an ambulance

Qhawe: no! the ambulance will take too long. Get the car. (I'm still in shock and I think Lwazi can see that and runs to get the car as Qhawe carries her to the car.)

Ncesh: Bandile snap out of it you need to drive that car Lwazi is not as calm as you

think. (she's right I run to the car Lwazi gets out and I drive off. Lwazi and the girls will take another car.

Qhawe: hang on Baby Girl. She is losing a lot of blood Bandile. I can't lose her.(I can hear his voice is breaking he wants to cry. Qhawe doesn't cry. This is bad)

Me: keep talking to her try to keep her awake. She's going to be ok man she's going to make it. keep her awake.

Qhawe: hey hey don't close your eyes look at me remember when you saw me leaning against your car remember how irritated you were? Do you want to know what I was thinking I was asking myself how can such a tiny woman drive a big vehicle like this you looked so small in that double cab. (I laugh to myself she does look small whenever she drives a big a car and she loves them. I look at my rear view mirror and I see that she is trying to say something but she is struggling I think the pain is too much she closes her eyes) no! no! no! no! don't close your eyes baby. Bandile we are losing her drive this car man.

Me: Check her pulse (he checks it)

Qhawe: she still has a pulse. Hold on my love we are almost there. Her pulse is weak.

Me: We are here (I say just as I stop the car at the emergency door of the hospital Qhawe gets out of the car carrying her and a nurse sees us and brings a stretcher)

Nurse: what happened?

Qhawe: two gunshot wounds to the chest one shot through and through and the other is still inside.

Nurse: You'll have to wait here Qhawe: No

I need to be with her

Nurse: You can't go in there she'll be fine. (the other nurses take her into the ER and we are told to wait in the waiting room the nurse walks away from us and comes back again.) These need to be filled in. (she says that looking at me and I take the forms from her and fill in what I can and Qhawe realises that I'm stuck there's things I don't know. He takes them from me and completes them he gets up going to the reception and hands in the forms.)

Qhawe: who could have done this and whoever did this knows that I don't have that much security around the house on weekends especially when I'm home. (Qhawe is too calm and that worries me)

Me: we are going to find out who did this man and they going to pay. (Lwazi walks in with the girls they look like they've been crying. I wonder how Lwazi coped with two women crying) Ncesh: Where is she? (she asks coming straight to me

and I just hold her she starts crying) she can't die Bandile we can't lose her I can't lose her Bandile.

Me: Hey look at me she is not going to die she is going to make it. (I notice Qhawe has tears

falling I don't even think he knows he is crying I think Thando noticed she moved from Lwazi to Qhawe and wiped his tear only then he realised he was crying. I have never seen Qhawe cry and I mean never. Right now I feel sorry for whoever shot his Baby Girl)

Thando: she is going to pull through she is going to be jumping on you for you to carry her while she wraps her legs around your waist and kiss you like nothing happened. (Qhawe looks at her with a faint and a surprised look.) yes we know she told us it is one of her favourite things she likes to do when she is with you. She loves you Qhawe she might be too scared to say it but she loves you she wants forever with you. (she hugs him tight) I almost forgot here we brought you these I think I saw a bathroom sign that way. (she says pointing at the direction where she saw the sign.)

Qhawe: Thank you. (he gets going to the bathroom to change his clothes he has Khanyi's blood all over him.)

Lwazi: come here baby

are you ok? Thando: I'll

be fine my love.

Lwazi: anyone for coffee? (We all say yes and Qhawe comes back as Lwazi leaves to go get the coffee I ask him if he would like some he looks like he needs it and he just nods.)

Qhawe: Lwazi can you also put this in the car (he hands him the bag that Thando gave him.) has the doctor said anything yet.

Me: not yet.

Qhawe: what's taking so long it's been an hour already.

Me: I called Eddie and Andile and they on their way. I also asked the security guys to go over the camera footage.

Qhawe: There's two extra cameras I installed a few months back no one knows about them one camera is directly facing the front door and also rotates a 180 degrees hopefully it caught who shot her. I need my laptop to excess that footage.

Me: That's great.

Ncesh: I don't even understand why someone would want to kill her.

Thando: I suspect the ex-wife (she says something I've been thinking but didn't want to say it out loud.)

Qhawe: well she might as well kill herself wherever she is before I get to her because I am going to forget she is a woman and the mother of my kids.

(the doctor walks into

the waiting) Doctor:

Khanyisile Sondlo

Us: yes (Just then Eddie and Andile walk in interrupting the doctor) Eddie: What's going

where is she?

Doctor: I was just about to explain. (we all look at him waiting for him to speak.) Ok then. She was shot twice on the right side of her chest one bullet was through and through and we have managed to remove the other bullet. She is still unconscious but she is stable. She is a very strong woman she is a fighter and very lucky.

Qhawe: What do you mean lucky?

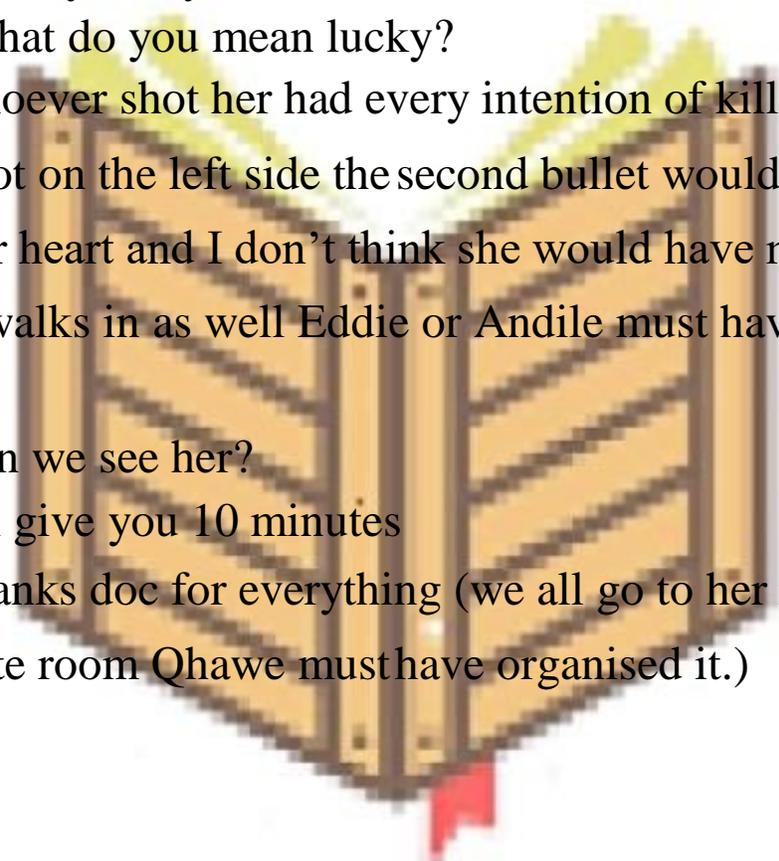
Doctor: whoever shot her had every intention of killing her. If she was shot on the left side the second bullet would have gone through her heart and I don't think she would have made it.

(Luyanda walks in as well Eddie or Andile must have called him.)

Qhawe: can we see her?

Doctor: I'll give you 10 minutes

Qhawe: thanks doc for everything (we all go to her room she has a private room Qhawe must have organised it.)



## QHAWELOMZI

Baby Girl looks so peaceful. The girls walk over to her and kiss her cheek

Sponsored

Qhawe must have

organised it.)

## QHAWELOMZI

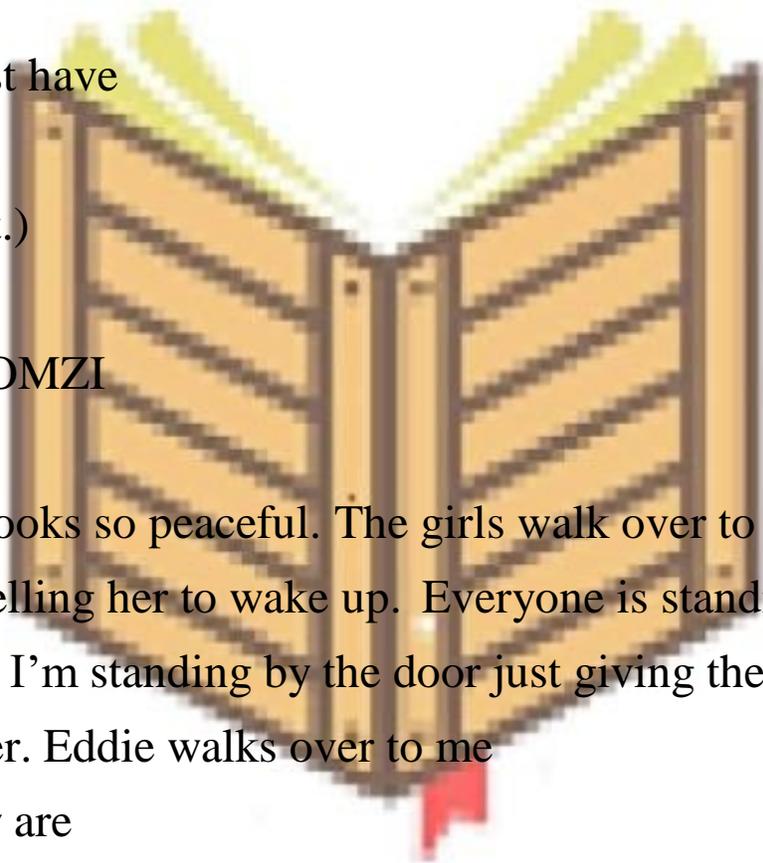
Baby Girl looks so peaceful. The girls walk over to her and kiss her cheek telling her to wake up. Everyone is standing next to the bed and I'm standing by the door just giving them a chance to talk to her. Eddie walks over to me

Eddie: how are

you doing? Me:

I'll be ok.

Eddie: I called the police on my way here they are probably at your house now so we'll leave just now and attend to that. We are going to find whoever did this. Bandile tells me there's another camera in the house and you are the only one who has



NOVELSGURU.COM

excess to the footage.

Me: You need my laptop it's in my study. The password is Khanyi's birthday call me when you open it I'll talk you through how to excess the footage. I'm not going with you.

Eddie: I know I'll talk to the doctor.

Me: Thanks. Eddie I want you to know that I didn't mean for this happen if i had known there would be such a risk I wouldn't have given my guys the weekend off.

Eddie: don't do that don't blame yourself for this we don't blame you. We know you love her and you will do anything to protect her. Don't blame yourself she needs you right now. We haven't told the kids yet.

Me: thank you man. Please don't tell the kids they've been through a lot lately and I don't want them worrying about their mother. Let them enjoy their holiday. Khaya and the twins are coming back Tuesday we can tell them then.

Eddie: I understand. They really have been through a lot. (the doctor walks in interrupting us) Doctor: ok guys your time is up.

Eddie: What's your

name doctor? Doctor:

NOVELSGURU.COM

Andrew Williams

Eddie: May I have a word with you Doctor Williams

Doctor: Sure no problem  
sir. Everyone walks out  
except for Lwazi.

Lwazi: Whoever did this is going to pay. I'm no killer but they  
are going to pay. (he is angry he's breathing fire and he is  
making me wonder why I am so calm it's unlike me.) She  
welcomed us into her life made us part of her family man. We  
have a family because of her. Bandile's boys can't wait to meet  
her and someone tries to kill for what what did she ever do to  
them for her to deserve this? If Zwelibanzi is behind this I  
swear. ( He keeps quiet.)

Me: I know it's not Zwelibanzi (he looks at me shocked) think  
about it Lwazi Zwelibanzi wants something from Khanyi and he  
needs her alive. He wants the company back if she dies  
Zwelibanzi loses that company. Whoever did this really wanted  
her dead and right now my money is on Anelisa.

Lwazi: She can't be that stupid can she?

Me: She thinks she's in love so anything is possible. (we both  
laugh)

Lwazi: I have to go man. I'll see you later. Don't worry too  
much she is going to be ok. She will fight to pull through for  
you and the kids.

Me: thanks man. (he hugs me and leaves.)

I walk towards Khanyi's bed I stand there just looking at her  
eventually I decide to get in bed with her I move her a little and  
position myself properly so that her head is on my chest. I think

they need to make bigger beds for hospitals.

Me: you need to wake Khanyi you can't leave me all alone here. I'm used to having you around you got me addicted to you I can't go back to a life that doesn't have you in it our kids can't have a life without you in it we won't survive it. Eddie and Andile are torn they need you. Andile doesn't even want to talk. You need to wake up my love. I lie there next to her stroking her face with my fingers thinking of things she would be saying right about now. I really hope and pray that Anelisa is not the one behind this shooting otherwise my kids will lose their mother.

**EDDIE**

We are at the Qhawe's house the police are here doing God knows what. The guards have pulled the security footage they gave the police a copy and I also asked for a copy. I know the police won't do anything about this I'll have to call in a favour with an old friend should the footage show us it's not who we think it is. Right now I'm in Qhawe's study with Lwazi Andile and Bandile. I open his laptop and punch the password.

Andile: How did you know the password? Eddie: He told me.

Andile: he trusted you with his laptop I don't think he knew what he was doing I don't blame him he is not himself.

Lwazi: I could have told you the password

Andile: He also told you his password I need to have Qhawe checked something is wrong with him. How can he trust the two of you with his computer? (we all just laugh and Luyanda walks in)

Luyanda: what's so funny?

Andile: Qhawe told Eddie and Lwazi his laptop password. Lwazi: he didn't have to tell me I just know it.

Luyanda: I could tell you what it is. Andile: yhooo I give up.

Lwazi: you don't need to be a rocket scientist to figure it out. It's Khanyi's birthday. Am I right Eddie? (I just nod.)

Me: I need to call him he'll talk us through how to excess the footage. (I call him he picks up when I'm about to cut off the call and he sounds sleepy he must have been sleeping I'm glad he is getting some sleep. I tell him I'm in and talks me through the whole process and when we are done I hang up telling him that I'll call him later when we've looked at the footage before I

hungup.

Andile: connect the laptop to the bigger screen we can all be able to watch it. (I do that and we go through the footage there's a knock on the office door and I quickly minimize everything on the screen. It's the detective in charge of this investigation.

Detective: We are done for now we need to speak to the owner of the house and the victim. Andile: the victim's name is Khanyisile Sondlo Miss Sondlo to you. She is in hospital and unconscious. The owner of the house is by her side. You can go to the hospital tomorrow. Detective: I'll also need you guys to come to the station to make your statements I'm referring to those who were here during the shooting.

Me: We understand. We'll be there tomorrow morning at 08:00.

Detective: thank you for cooperation I'll see you tomorrow then. (he walks out.)

Me: these guys are idiots. (we go back to viewing the footage.

This guy is standing right in front of her before he shoots he looks at his phone. Then shoots her twice and runs off.)

Us: Who the fuck is that?

Andile: This was a hit. This guy was sent by someone.

Me: We need someone who can run his photo through a facial recognition system  
Bandile: do you guys know someone.

Andile: we do (and we look at each other this is a favour we were hoping we would never have to call in.

Me: you know what this means right? (I ask looking at Andile) Andile: I know. (the other guys look very confused right now)

Me: It's a long story. We'll tell you about it when this is all over.

Bandile: who would want her dead and to go as far as to send a hit man.

Andile: that's the thing she has tried so hard not to be in the lime light she stayed away from business that would attract unwanted attention.

Lwazi: This is not good not good at all. Bandile:

My money is still on Anelisa.

Lwazi: this is too smart for her is it not. She can't be that stupid either. She knows Qhawe will kill her.

Me: let's not brush her off as yet. Anything is possible

## CHAPTER 28

MONDAY MORNING

## QHAWELOMZI

A nurse wakes me up and she is all smiles. I don't even know when I fell asleep last night Nurse:

Morning how are you?

Me: I'm ok I guess.

Nurse: I need you to get off the bed I need to check on her and change her bandages. Me: oh ok. What time is it?

Nurse: it's just after nine. I was here earlier but you were sleeping so soundly I didn't want to disturb you but now I need to do my job. Why don't you go home shower and change. Visiting hours start at 11:00.

Dr Williams: She's right go home and come back during visiting hours she is in good hands. Your friend spoke to me yesterday. No one is allowed to come in here except for you and the others that were here yesterday. We have allocated one nurse to attend to her and that will nurse Jaxa here. Nurse: You can call me Lungi short for Lungiswa.

Me: Thank you both. I'll be here by 11:00 (I kiss Khanyi's forehead before walking out. I don't have a car here so I call an uber. When we get to my house I call Bandile.)

Me: come to the gate and bring your wallet.

Bandile: Not even a hello Bandile how are you Bandile did you sleep well Bandile?

Me: Bandile just bring your ass to the gate. (I hang up few minutes he is at the gate. I get out of the car)

Me: Pay the man his money.

Bandile: pay him with whose money you should've asked me to bring your wallet. Me: just pay the man this is not even a scratch to your bank account.

Bandile: hayibo Qhawe this is my money I work hard for it.

Me: Fine I'll pay you back as soon as we get inside.

(he pays the uber and we go inside. ) Bandile: how are you?

Me: I'll be fine as soon as she wakes up. She needs to wake up man. I don't know how much more of this I can take. (I sit in my bed with my face in my hands.) she can't leave me Bandile we still have so much to do together so much to share I'm still looking forward to our first argument I'm looking forward to parenting our kids

together she still has to meet your boys. There's still so much to live for.

Bandile: Look at me Qhawe she is fighting to come back to you and the kids and she will. I have never seen you cry before and looking at you right now in tears tells me how much you love this woman. You were never like this even with your ex-wife yes you loved but not like this. Cry as much as you want but you need to be strong for her. Khaya and the twin are coming back tomorrow they are going to need you you need be strong for them and she is being strong for you.

Now take a shower and come down for breakfast. (with that said he leaves.)

{I take a long well deserved shower and get dressed in sweat pants a long sleeve t-shirt and sneakers. I look at the big picture of her that I have inside the walk in closet it's the same picture she has hanging above her bed in her house. I miss her so much. I need to find out who did this. I walk downstairs and they are all in the kitchen looks like breakfast is ready.}

Me: Morning

Them: Morning to you too?

Lwazi: why didn't you shave? You want her to wake up to an ugly you? Me: what are you talking about I still look good.

Lwazi: you think? Keep it up and watch when she runs away from you when she wakes up. You need to shave you look ugly.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Thando: Lwazi leave Qhawe alone.

Bandile: it's true he needs to shave. The scruffy look doesn't suit him.

Ncesh: I think it does and you guys are just jealous so what if he's letting his facial hair grow a little he still looks good.

Me: the ladies have spoken.

Lwazi: you are still ugly (everyone just laughs. We eat breakfast over a light conversation) Bandile: are you ready to look at the footage

Me: yeah let's go. (we walk upstairs to my study when we get there he plays the footage for me.) What the hell I know this guy why would he want to kill Khanyi he doesn't even know her?

Bandile: what do you mean you know him?

Me: He used to work for me I fired him three years ago for coming to work drunk. He was one of the security guys.

Bandile I'm telling you now this has Anelisa written all over it. we need to find her. Lwazi: We'll find her and you need to focus on Khanyi. Wait let me call Eddie and inform him. (he walks out to make the call and comes back.) Done.

Me: are you guys

coming to the hospital.

Bandile: yes we are do

you need a ride. Me: no

I'll take my car.

Bandile: Please pay me

back my money. Lwazi:

what money?

Bandile: he made me pay for his uber ride when he arrived.

Lwazi: Really Bandile the man is suffering the woman he loves is in hospital and you are crying for a R100 that you make every fifteen seconds.

Bandile: at the end of the day it's my money I work hard for it.

Me: here is your money. Thank you. (I say taking out an R100 out of my wallet)

Lwazi: Bandile you can be so insensitive at times. Come on lets go or we'll be late for the visiting hour. (we all laugh and leave)

We are all driving in separate cars to the hospital. When we get there Eddie Andile and Luyanda are already there they were waiting for us we all walk to her room. Everyone walks over to her bed they greet her kissing her cheek her forehead busy telling her to wake up the girls are not

crying today I'm happy about that. Everyone is talking to her about their lives they say they don't want her to be left behind they want her up to date when she wakes up they are making a lot of noise in this room it's as if we are home just chilling.

Lwazi: Khanyi you need to wake up this man of yours looks ugly now he is growing his facial a day without a trim and he already looks like King Kong (the laughter in this room the nurse walked in)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Nurse: You are going to  
wake the patient. Lwazi:  
I'm sorry  
Sponsored

the nurse walked in)

Nurse: You are going to wake the patient.

Lwazi: I'm sorry who are you walking  
in here telling us that? Nurse: I'm  
Lungi and I'm her nurse.

Lwazi: ok Nurse Lungi. Listen dear her waking up is  
exactly what we want so that she take care of King Kong  
over there (he says pointing at me.) Now please leave us  
in peace visiting hour is not over don't even think about  
kicking us out when it's over you are going to give us the  
extra minutes that I am busy wasting talking to you  
instead of her. Bye now. (the nurse looks defeated and  
she walks out and everyone just looks at Lwazi shaking  
their heads.)

Lwazi: don't look at me like that

you know I'm right. Thando: you are such an idiot at times.

Lwazi: and you love this idiot. (yhooo!!! Says everyone.) After a while everyone leaves and I'm left alone with her I take her comb and comb her hair.

Me: You are driving Lwazi crazy you need to wake up.

He lied by the way I don't look ugly you'll love my new look. Come back to me come back to us we miss you. (I take out my phone and play our favourite playlist which has our favourite songs. Her cellphone rings in my pocket.)

ZWELIBANZI

I am back in Durban and I need to talk to Khanyi about my Dad. Sizwe walks in Sizwe: how's your dad?

Me: he doesn't think he is going to make it he wants to see Khanyi and the kids and the parents are angry with me for not telling them that Khanyi left me. They are very disappointed.

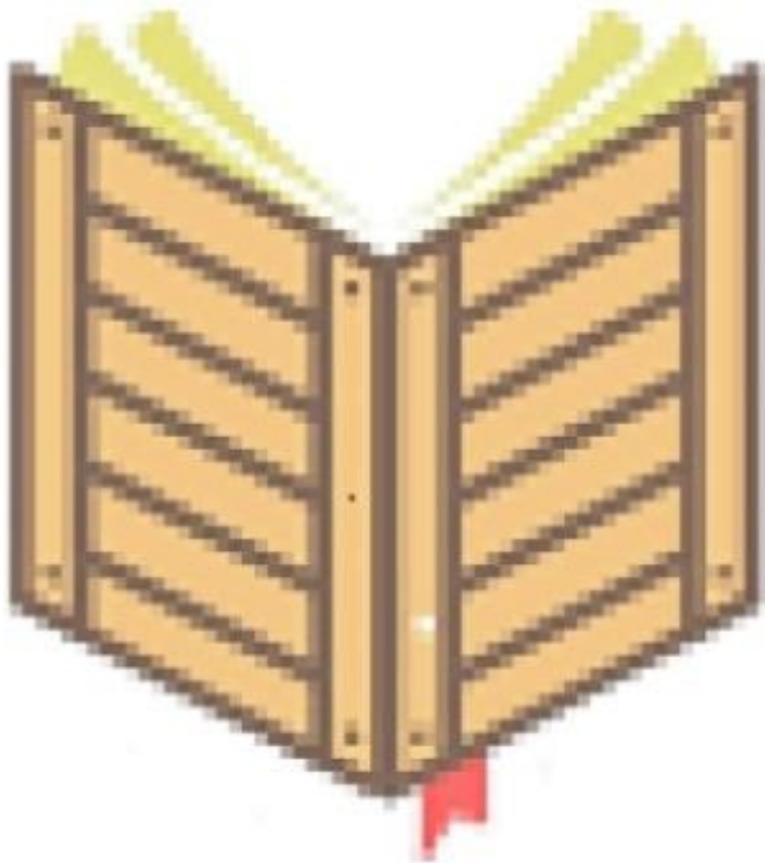
Sizwe: you already know my thoughts on that so I won't

say anything. I see you came back with Sima and the twins.

Me: I had no choice she insisted on coming with me. I

need to talk to Khanyisile about dad. Sizwe: call her and make arrangements to go see her and talk to her.

Me: that's the thing Sizwe she doesn't want to see me.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sizwe: but your visits with the kids are at her house right?

Me: Yes but she doesn't take part in the visits. My visits are monitored by a social worker and that Lwazi guy.

Sizwe: just call her and ask to see her? Call her now. (I take my phone and dial her number)

Phone conversation

Him: Miss Sondlo's

phone hello Me:

May I speak to

Khanyi please Him:

she is currently

unavailable

Me: look man I really need to talk to her

this is a matter of life and death. Him: Like I

said before Zwelibanzi she is not available.

Me: fine just tell her that my dad wants to see her and the kids He is dying of cancer.

Him: She is not available. Khanyi was shot yesterday

she's in hospital. (after saying that he hangs up and I'm

left wondering who could have done that I hope they don't

think it's me I need her alive and well. DAMMIT!!!!!!)

Sizwe: And then??

Me: Someone shot Khanyi yesterday she's in hospital.

Sizwe: what who would do that?

Me: I don't know man and whoever it is they are messing up with my plan. I need her alive not dead especially now that my parents insist on seeing her. If she dies I'm ruined man.

Sima: If who dies? (she asks as she walks into my study) I wanted to ask if you guys wanted something to eat and who are you talking about?

Sizwe: who's making the food?

Sima: I am why?

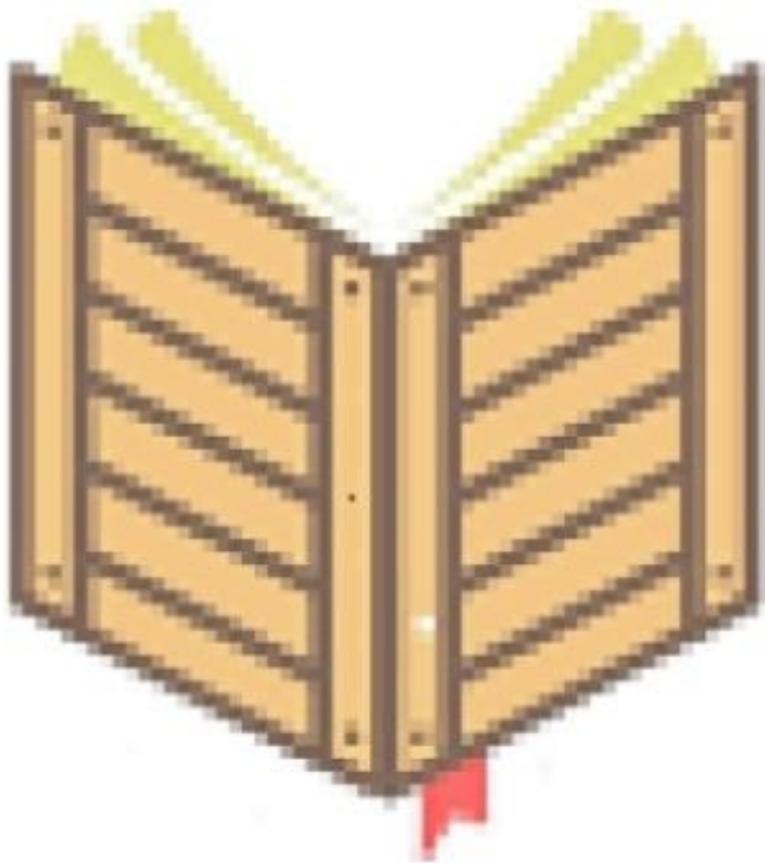
Sizwe: I'm not hungry thank you.

Sima: who were you talking about when I walked in

Me: Khanyi she's in hospital she was shot yesterday (I look at her with questioning eyes.)

Sima: this woman again no man Zweli. Hold on you said she was shot and you think I had something to do it. (I raise my eyebrow at her) Zweli I might be many things stupid is not one of them even I know not touch a single hair on her pretty little head otherwise you'll kill me. (she is right about that.)

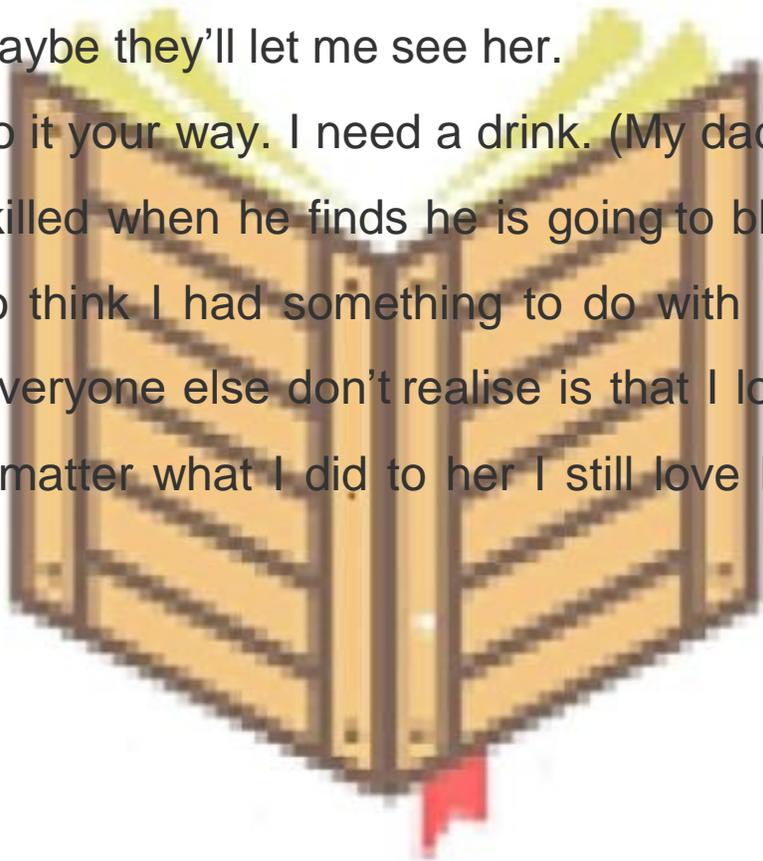
Me: Sizwe I need to see her.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sizwe: Forget it. They'll never let you anywhere near her. They don't trust you and they might just kill you. Look man don't make this situation any harder than it already is and remember you also have Sima to deal with. Look Khanyi has a soft spot for me some of the guys have seen me a few times and they've seen me talk to her at the mall maybe they'll let me see her.

Me: fine do it your way. I need a drink. (My dad is going to have me killed when he finds he is going to blame me he is going to think I had something to do with it. What my dad and everyone else don't realise is that I love her very much not matter what I did to her I still love her and still want her.



NCESH

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

She really needs to wake up. She is scaring me I can't lose her. We've been through a lot together. She was always there for me. When I lost my parents she was there when I lost my baby she was there comforting me.

When my ex-boyfriend was hitting me she was there not knowing that she was also getting beatings. I am the person I am today because of her. She allowed us to date Qhawe's friend. I'm truly happy with Bandile I can safely I have found the one even Thando and Lwazi the clowns of the family. "Family" who knew I would have a family and have a sense of belonging. Khanyi just has a way with people. If she dies this family dies. She doesn't know that she is the glue holding us all together. I am the only child that my parents had and when I met khanyi and Thando we hit off immediately. We became more than just friends we became sisters we took care of each. I am nothing without these ladies especially Khanyi. She is my ride or die she is the only one who has always been able to understand me and I understand her. I miss her so much right now. Come to think of it our friendship circle is the same as the guys circle. In our friendship circle Khanyi is our Qhawe and I am Bandile the calm one and Thando is Lwazi the clown.

If I lose her then I've lost it all.

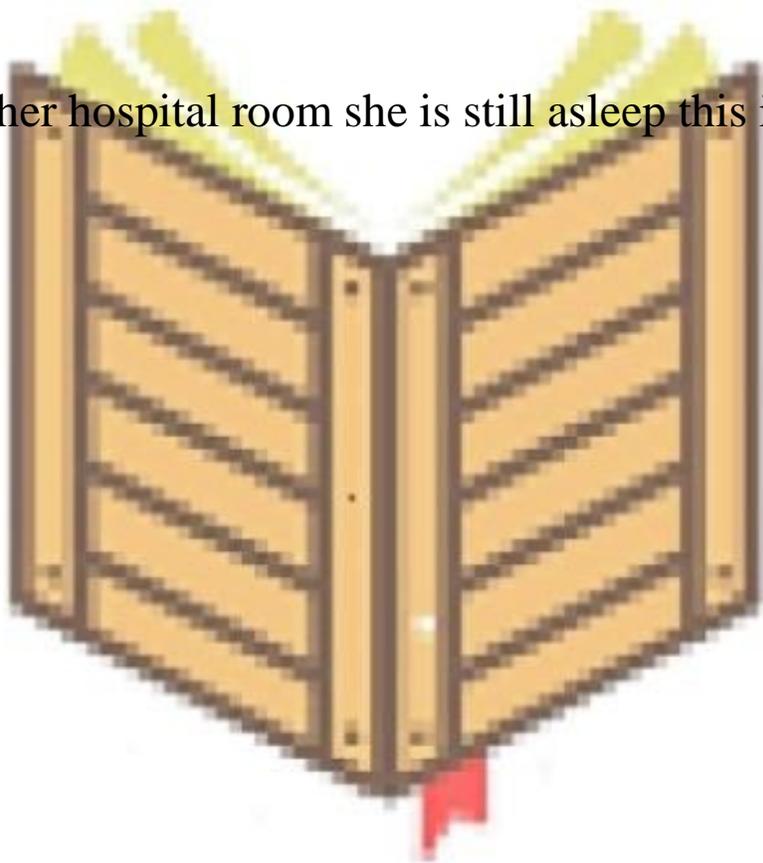
TUES

DAY

ANDIL

E

I walk into her hospital room she is still asleep this is not fair it's not right.



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Me: Khanyi you are the strongest woman I know you have survived a whole lot of shit that other people wouldn't survive after everything you've been through with Zwelibanzi others would have opted to kill themselves but you fought for a better life for you and the kids you took us in as employees but turned us into a family. You made us your family you can't stay here we need you to wake up. The kids are going to get suspicious if you go another day without calling them. Ibanathi wants to come see you but I told him he can come when you wake up and Elza has been crying ever since she found out you were in here you know Eddie can't handle his wife when she's crying you are killing him Khanyi by being here. A lot of people are dying inside by seeing you like this. Qhawe is the worst he doesn't eat properly he sleeps here with you Khanyi the man is a giant to be sharing this tiny bed with you he refuses to sleep at home be fair to him. Things between me and Ibanathi are really going good he makes a good partner but he can be such a drama queen. I remember the expression on your face when I told I was gay you couldn't believe it you kept say that it's such a waste for the female species. We miss you "His Queen" that's what Lwazi calls you lately. When you wake up you need to tell Qhawe how you feel about him. You know you love him beyond measure don't be scared Khanyi take this leap of faith and completely let him into your life tell him about your life what you want

through with Zwelibanzi he won't leave you. If he wanted to leave he would have after Lonwabo spoke in court. Wake up and tell him how you love him. We can all see that you do he can see it too but he needs to hear it from you. I'm bored Khanyi I don't have anyone to irritate and follow around Eddie is even tired of me he says I don't talk ever since you've been here that's not true. He pointed a gun at me today and told me to come talk to you can you believe it pointing a gun at me the man has gone crazy....

Qhawe: I can believe it. Eddie is right you've very quiet since Sunday. Me: How much of this one sided conversation did you hear?

Qhawe: Everything I've been here since you walked in you've let you guard down man you couldn't sense that there's someone else in the room.

Me: I know and I think that's why Eddie is frustrated with me I can hardly focus.

Qhawe: it's going to be ok and I am not a giant. If I am a giant what does that make you guys? Me: Yes are you the tallest of the group.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: oh come on I'm not that much taller than you guys just a few inches.

Me: that's true but still (we both laugh) on a serious note though we found the guy that shot her I'm sure the police are on their way to arrest him we gave the lead to Detective Nxele. Qhawe: so we are keeping the police involved.

Me: yes we are remember we don't want to be on the wrong side of the law we still have Zwelibanzi to deal with. I must say the detective is really good he was already suspecting that it's someone you know he picked up something up from the security footage we gave him. I

think he can be of great help in putting Zwelibanzi away and plus I don't think he's the kind of cop that can be bribed.

Qhawe: We can talk to the rest of the guys later about it. Where was this guy hiding he seems very stupid how can you be hired to kill someone and still stick around.

Me: We found him e Nanda.

Qhawe: I see I want to be there when he is being questioned. Me: I'll ask Eddie to speak to the detective.

Qhawe: Since you are bored with no one to irritate you can follow me around for today and irritate me. We need to pick up the boys from the airport.

Me: Ok let's go then Mr Giant. Do you know that Khanyi once shot me? (I see the shock in his face and a smile you can tell he wants to laugh but he is holding it in.)

Qhawe: I can't imagine that happening what did you do to her? Khanyi wouldn't hurt a fly.

Me: she would if it got on her wrong side. Anyway at that time she had stalker luckily her home address is not listed so this guy would stalk her at work wait for her in the parking lot

sometimes send her flowers chocolates and love notes. This one time he sent her lingerie and I told her that everywhere she goes I go with her. Sometimes I don't even understand why she wanted me to be her personal bodyguard because she would to go off on her own and leave me at the house. That woman of yours is crazy.

Qhawe: I know but You can't talk about my woman like that.

Me: anyway you know the leash that is use for toddlers so that the child doesn't wonder off too far when you walk with them. I bought one and I told her that I'd make wear it if she doesn't do as I tell at that moment she walked so fast towards me she was breathing fire and I stood there wanting to see what this tiny woman was going to do to me. I didn't see it coming even today I don't know how she took my gun out of my holster and shot my left arm twice telling me that she is not a child when she was about to fire a third bullet in my leg Eddie showed up just in the nick of time. (this man is laughing so much he's even holding his stomach. I'm actually glad to see him laughing for a change.)

Qhawe: so it's true short people are short tempered. It serves you right though you were treating her like a child.

Me: she was acting like one. (he shakes his head smiles) Qhawe: I miss her (he says that looking out the window

Sponsored

I see the pain on his face it is enough to tell you that he is dying inside.)

Me: You need to hide that face when we get to the airport you can't let the boys see that you are in pain.

Qhawe: even if I try to hide it they know we too well even Khaya knows me too well. Can you believe he wanted to hook me with his mom that was before he knew we knew each other already.

Me: You see you two were meant to be and it will happen. (when we arrive at the airport the boys were already waiting for us. They walk over to us they greet and hug us. Khaya is standing in front of Qhawe after the hug looking at him I guess Qhawe was right he knows him too well.) Khaya: what's wrong? (he asks looking at Qhawe)

Banele: what do you mean he looks fine to me.

Khaya: No Banele look at him even the hug is not his usual hug (hayi these kids are too smart for their own good and I can't blame them. Khanyi's kids are too observant) Dad what's wrong? (I look at Qhawe his eyes wide open his mouth open to say something but nothing comes out I'm shocked too did he just call him "dad")

Qhawe: Did you just call me "Dad"?

Bandile: yes he did now tell us what's wrong? (Qhawe pulls Khaya in for a tight hug and I believe he is crying he is very emotional these days. Khanyi and these kids are making him a softie. He pulls him away and hold him at arm's length and looks at him.)

Qhawe: you called me "Dad".

Khaya: Yes I did you've earned it you deserve it and I like calling you "Dad". Now tell us what's wrong.

Qhawe: let's go to the car I'll tell you on the way. (we all walk to the car and I drive off I

already know that I'm driving us to the hospital.) Your mom was shot Sunday afternoon at my house.

Them: What??? How??? (they sound like a choir)

Bandile: What happened? (Qhawe decides to tell them everything up until the arrest of the guy that shot her. We arrive at the hospital and when we get to Khanyi's room the nurse was there. It's a good thing she's here she needs to know that the boys will be added on the visitors list) Me: Good day Lungi

Lungi: Hi (when she is done the boys walk over to the bed standing on each side hold Khanyi's hands)

Khaya: How long has she been unconscious? Lungi: today is the third day (Khaya just nods)

Me: These are her sons they need to be added on the visitors list ok. They are going to introduce themselves. Can you give us a moment. (she nods and walks away)

Qhawe: Ok guys we are going to leave you here we need to get to the police station. Banele: that's fine. Please bring food when you come back. I'm hungry.

Khaya: You and food (he laughs)

Bandile: You are no better than him. (they all just laugh and we leave.)

EDDIE

Me: has he said anything?

Det. nxele: No he hasn't. We have his phone and his laptop we'll see if we can't get any information from them.

Me: I have someone who can help with that quickly.

Det. Nxele: I don't normally do this but we need all the help we can get with the government resources we have things take a while so whatever help I can get I'll take it besides I owe your friend.

Me: What do you mean you owe my friend?

Det. Nxele: Mr Mtimkhulu is your friend right (I just nod) well my wife was struggling to get a job that she was qualified for or any job for that matter she would get odd jobs every now and again. Three years ago she applied for a job that was advertised by your friend's

company. During the interview she was asked why she should be hired she told them they didn't have to hire her since she didn't have experience even though she is qualified she told them the pain of having a degree and not be able to make it worthwhile and I guess they were impressed and she was hired right there and then. She is now a CFO in that company. Our lives improved a lot when she started working there. She's been there for three years now and she's happy. So I want to return the favour he doesn't know me but I know him.

Qhawe: I know you your wife talks a lot about you and your two daughters and you don't owe me anything. She still has her job because she is quite good at it.

Me: How long have you been here?

Andile: Long enough to hear part of the conversation. Is our guy talking?

Det. Nxele: No he's not. (he turns to look at Eddie) how soon can I get the help you offered. Me: 30 minutes. (he smiles at me)

Det. Nxele: Let me try and talk to this guy again. Qhawe: can I talk to him?

Det. Nxele: I can't let you in there it's against the law but you can watch through the one way mirror and you'll be able here everything. (he walks into the interrogation room and I pick up my phone and call Zack asking him to come to the police station.)

Qhawe: I can't believe this guy did this. Was he really that desperate for money to even kill someone. (we hear the detective questioning him)

Det. Nxele: Your former employer is here he wants to know why you shot his wife. Suspect: that was his wife I didn't know. Oh my God I'm dead he is going to kill me.

Det. Nxele: why are you so scared of him he seems like a reasonable man.

Suspect: he is a reasonable until you screw him over. Look I'll tell you everything. (zack walks in)

Me: Qhawe why is he scared of you what did you do to him? Qhawe: Long story

you'll need a bottle of whiskey for this one. Zack: Where am I needed?

Me: let's wait for the detective. (the guy tells the detective everything and the fact that he was hired by a woman but he doesn't know her name. the detective walks up to us smiling looking at Qhawe.)

Det. Nxele: I should have mentioned your name to him long ago if I had known it would make him talk I don't even want to know what you did to him.

Me: this is the help I promised you I say pointing at Zack. (he walks out and comes back with a cellphone and a laptop.)

Det. Nxele: I need to know the person he's been talking to. Here's a number that has been calling him (he hands Zack a piece of paper and Zack gets to work. It's amazing what this guy can do with just a laptop.)

Zack: You've just made my job easy. Andile: how long is it going to take?

Zack: about an hour I'll even track the number for you if it's switched on. Qhawe: that would be great. I need to go back to the hospital my boys need food.

Me: they eat like there's no tomorrow.

Qhawe: keep me updated. See you later. (he walks out)

## KHAYA

Seeing mom like this is killing me. Linamandla called me telling me she can't get a hold of mom and I had to lie to her and I think she knows I'm hiding something. They can't deal with this. This one sided conversation we are having with her is not working for me she needs to

wake up now the twins are distraught they are also frustrated that their mom is not answering her phone. Bhut' Bandile and Bhut' Lwazi walk in greeting us and they brought food.

Bhut' Lwazi: where is your dad?

Banele: he went to the police station with Bhut' Andile.

Khaya: there's going to be too much food here he is also bringing food.

Bhut' Lwazi: knowing him and how pre occupied he is and the fact that he is not eating much these days and expects everyone to be like him he is going to walk in here saying he forgot the food.

Bandile(twin): the food is for his kids he won't forget.

Banele: besides if that happens mom will sort him out when she wakes up she doesn't play like that with her kids and the doctor says she can hear everything so she's hearing this conversation.

Bhut' Lwazi: guys I'm telling you he is going to forget. (just then he walks in carrying bags from Steers.)

Qhawe: forget what?

Lwazi: Nothing bring the food let's eat.

Qhawe: you are eating already you'll die from over eating (everyone just laughs) Khaya: how did it go at the police station?

Qhawe: it went well we are almost there.

Me: that's good. (Just then Aunt Ncesh and Aunt Thando walk in greeting and hugging everyone. We all sit and eat and enjoy the conversation.)

Qhawe: Baby you need to wake up we are all here waiting for you they are making a lot of noise I hope you can hear them. The twins are here Khaya is here. (just then Bhut' Andile and Uncle Eddie walk in. Dad looks shocked his mouth hanging he's looking at mom he looks like something is wrong) Call the doctor

Lwazi: What's wrong?

Qhawe: CALL THE DOCTOR NOW!!!

CHAPTER 30

## STILL TUESDAY

### ZWELIBANZI

My phone rings and

it's my mom; Me:

Hello mama

Mom: hello Banzi

how are you? Me: I'm

ok mama and you?

Mom: I'm ok. I miss the twins you didn't have to take them with you.

Me: the twins are a handful mama and you have dad to take care off it would have been too much.

Mom: there are helpers here Banzi anyway did you know that the kids are visiting Khanyi's parents?

Me: I was told they would be spending time with them I just didn't know where. You are calling her Khanyi now.

Mom: She left you Banzi she is no

longer your wife. Me: I'm going to

get her back.

Mom: you leave that girl alone you hear me after everything you've done to her you leave her alone. Yes I know I did my own little investigation. We didn't raise you like that Zwelibanzi. (When she calls me by full name she is angry with

me.) Who taught you to treat a woman like that in the years that I've been married to your father he has never laid a hand on me not once not even by mistake even if I did him wrong he always treated me with respect I'm very disappointed in you. All you need to do is tell the truth that you should have told her a long time ago. Do you hear me Zwelibanzi?

Me: (I sigh) Yes mama I hear you.

Mom: Tell Sima to video call me later I want to talk to the twins. I want you to know that it hurts that we are unable to see our grandchildren because of your selfishness. We love those kids Zwelibanzi but you've kept them from us and it truly hurts. All we ever did was love them. Call your father later tonight he wants to talk to you. (with that said she hangs up.

I need to speak to my lawyer before I speak to my dad. This thing with Khanyi is driving me crazy. I grab my things and my car keys and drive to Jonathan's office.

Me: Jonathan

Jonathan: what can I do for you?

Me: this thing with Khanyi isn't there a way around it?

Jonathan: Honestly I don't know it all depends on what's in your father's will. Zweli your father was not involved in anything illegal with his businesses everything was above board. He built that legacy for you and you got greedy and ended up being the criminal that you are. As your lawyer and friend I'm advising you not to fight this you will lose. Khanyi is no longer the naïve little girl you met 17 years ago. She grew up and opened her eyes. She's not stupid she sees right through you especially with this company you are trying to get from her and I'll tell you this she is probably one step ahead of you. Have you told her what you were supposed to tell her years ago does she even know why she married you does she know about Sima.

Me: She doesn't know anything I never told her I was scared she would leave. I love her Jonathan.

Jonathan: You don't treat someone you love the way you treated her as for the company you want from her forget about it. that company is clean now everything is above board and it is making a lot of money for her. Find yourself another import and export company to exploit for your illegal activities. In other words you are screwed my man. She has you by the balls.

Me: Eish I don't know this is a mess.

She is in hospital. Jonathan: Zweli are you trying to lose everything?

Me: I had nothing to do with it trust me. Someone shot her I don't know the full story yet. Jonathan: Whoever tried to kill her has no idea of what they got themselves into.

Me: Sounds like you know something I don't. Jonathan:

Some things are better left unsaid. Me: what is it Jonathan?

Jonathan: Leave it man. Trust me you don't want to know. I know you are stubborn and you are not going to listen to me all I can tell you is that be careful when it comes to Khanyi. You losing the court case was just the beginning in revealing how much power she has behind her. Now if you'll excuse I have another client in a few minutes.

I'm left wondering what he means by that. How did she get as powerful as he says in such a short time. He is right about one thing though she is no longer the naïve girl I met years ago. I wonder.....

KHANYISILE

NOVELSGURU.COM

I hear them

Sponsored

she is no longer the naïve girl I met

years ago. I wonder.....KHANYISILE

I hear them they are so loud chatting and laughing. He's telling me to wake up and I squeeze his hand. I hear him telling them to call the doctor I squeeze his hand again and he just roars in his deep voice

Me: Not so loud baby (I say it very slow and my voice is hoarse.)

Ncesh: Oh my God she is awake. (I try to open my eyes very slowly they are here they all here) Qhawe: hey Baby Girl (I reach for his face and wipe his tears and he kisses my

forehead.) I've missed you so much. Do you need water (I just nod and he gets up to get me my water. I look around and I see my sons I smile at them and they move closer to me and hug so hard that I wince out of pain they quickly let go.)

Khaya: are you ok?

Me: I'm fine you just hugged me too tight. (my chest hurts I am speaking so slow my voice sounds funny.)

Khaya: we are sorry. We were so worried about you. (Qhawe walks over to us with a glass of water and tries to help me sit up

so that I can have a drink but it hurts and opt to use a straw. The doctor walks in.)

Doctor: Miss Sondlo you're awake

how are you feeling? Me: I'm in pain

Doctor: we'll sort that out just now. can you guys please give us a minute you can come back in when I'm done with the check-up.

( They all get up and leave except for Qhawe the twins and Khaya the doctor looks at them like they've gone crazy)

“We are not going anywhere” (they say that at the same time and doctor looks defeated and continues with the check-up)

Doctor: everything looks good but you are still going to be here for another 3 days at least just to make sure that everything is ok before I let you go home.)

Qhawe: you are not being serious 3 days doc I'm tired of this hospital I want her home and this bed is too small for the two of us have you seen me doctor. (I can tell the doctor is holding in his laugh and the boys are just laughing away. I missed my crazy people.)

Doctor: these beds are not meant for two people.

Qhawe: if you are keeping her here for another 3 days do something about the bed. Me: babe just stop being difficult (I smile at him)

Doctor: I'll get your nurse to come and change your bandages. Me: thank you doctor. (Qhawe is sulking sitting next to me.) Khaya; don't worry dad the three days will be over quick.

Me: (I look at Khaya then at Qhawe) did he just call you "dad" (I'm still having difficulty speaking. The doctor said I'll be ok tomorrow.)

Banele: Yes he did. (I never thought I would see this day my son calling him "Dad". I knew he loved Qhawe and appreciated him but him calling him "dad" I definitely didn't see it coming. The nurse walks in.)

Nurse Lungi: will you guys please excuse us. (they look at her like she's gone crazy) Me: come on guys let her do her job she'll be done in no time. (they smiles at me.)

Nurse Lungi: You have a wonderful family but these men are so stubborn. Do you live with all of them.

Me: yes I do and it's the best life.

Nurse Lungi: you are truly blessed. (she changes my bandages and gives me something for the pain. When she is done she leaves and the boys walk in.

Qhawe: how are  
you feeling?Me:

sleepy

Khaya: did she give you  
something for the pain?Me: yes  
she did.

Qhawe: Ok. We'll let you sleep and I'll take the boys home.  
They haven't been home. We came here straight from the  
airport. We'll be back later.

Bandile: You scared us. We'll see you later and I love you. (he  
kisses my forehead.)

Qhawe: I love you I can't wait for you to be home. We'll see you  
later. (as they walk out I just close my eyes and sleep.)

EDDIE

Before we left the police station to go to the hospital Zack had  
given the detective all the information he needs he also manage  
to track the number that the suspect gave us. He tracked it to  
KwaMashu. While we were at the hospital he called telling me  
he found her I am wondering

who she is. We are at the police station waiting for det. Nxele and it's me and Andile. We didn't want the other guys to come we'll update them later.

Andile: I hope it's not the ex-wife  
ME: you can say that again.

Andile: I'm just happy she is awake I was worried sick . (the detective walks in)  
Eddie: is she talking?

Det. Nxele: Not yet she asked for a lawyer and we have to provide one for her  
Me: this is going to be tougher than I thought. Who is she?

Det. Nxele: I am going to hold onto that information for now at least until she has a lawyer.  
Andile: Our lady is awake.

Det. Nxele: I don't think she is aware that Miss Sondlo survived the shooting. I'm glad she is awake.

(The detective gets called into an office and he comes back after a minutes)  
Andile: is everything ok detective?

Det. Nxele: everything is fine we have to wait for the lawyer and she is not talking. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Ok please update us then we have other thing to do. ( I say as we leave going back to the house.)

Me: I got an unexpected call from an unexpected person  
Andile: and who is

that?

Me: Sizwe

Andile: Sizwe as in

Zwelibanzi's friend as in...Me:

the one and only.

Andile: what did he want.

Me: they know Khanyi is in hospital and

Sizwe would like to see her. Andile: You'll

have to speak to Qhawe about it.

Me: he is not going to

allow it. Andile: I

don't blame him

Me: there's something amiss about this whole Zwelibanzi issue.

He is hiding something something we haven't been able to find out.

Andile: I feel the same way and don't want us to be caught off guard.

Me: he is very desperate especially when it comes to the kids. We need to dig deeper.

CHAPTER 31

NOVELSGURU.COM

WEDNESDAY

KHANYISILE

I hate hospitals God knows I hate hospitals and this doctor wants to keep me here for the entire week and Qhawe is not taking it well he just wants to take me home. When he came back last night he told me that the guy that shot me was arrested and apparently he was hired to shoot me he doesn't know who hired him yet but they'll find out soon enough. I just woke up and he is still sleeping next to me he refused to go home saying he won't be able to sleep alone at home when he is here at least he knows what's going on. This man practically lives here. I try to move trying not wake him but I hurt myself "shit" and that wakes him up.

Qhawe: what's wrong?

Me: nothing I just tried to move a little and

ended up hurting myself. Qhawe: you

should have woken me up I would have

helped you.

Me: I know but you looked so handsome in your sleep. I

need to go to the bathroom please help me.

Qhawe: I thought you had a catheter.

Me: I did they removed it last night before you guys came back.

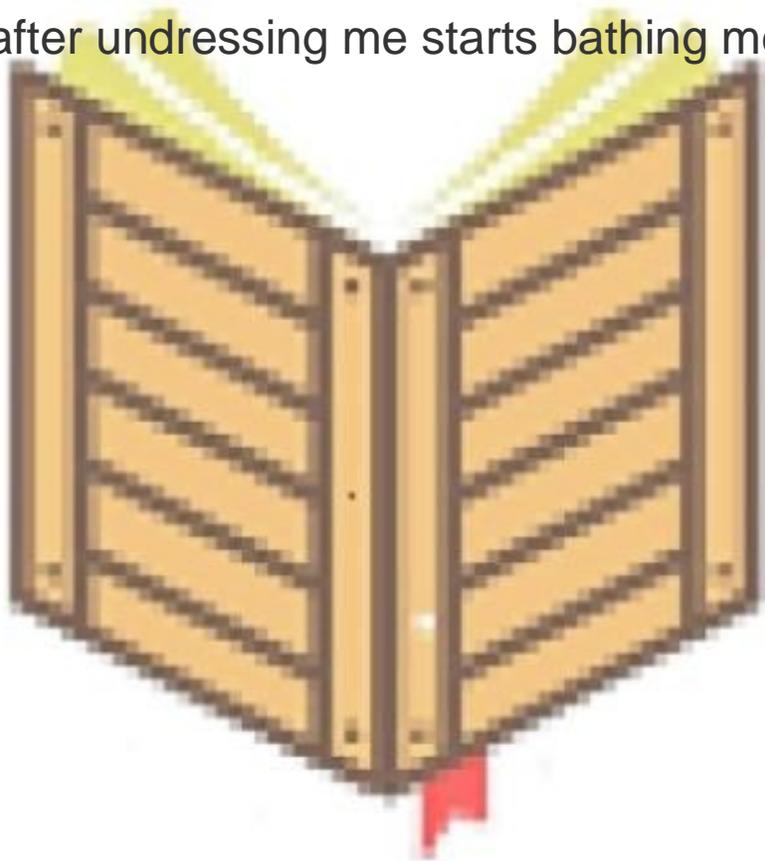
Qhawe: I see. (he helps me sit up and this man decides to carry me to the bathroom he puts down and lets me do my business. When I'm done I try to get up but it hurts when I try to balance myself the pain is too much and he immediately walks in.) I'll help you.

Me: Can I walk to my bed this time you can't be carrying me all the time besides when you are not I'll have to walk

Qhawe: Well right now I'm here so I'll carry you you can do the walking when I'm not here. Me: you are so stubborn

Qhawe: look who's talking (we both laugh he puts me on the bed and makes me sit with my legs dangling he stands between my legs and holds my face in his hands bends down to my face and kisses me with my hands on his waist. I missed him I missed his lips I missed these random kisses I stop the kiss I can feel myself getting wet right now.) I love you Baby Girl and I missed you so much. Me: and I missed you.

Qhawe: Sit here I'll run your bath and we can get you out of this hospital thing you are wearing and into your pyjamas. I brought your pyjamas and a few other things that you might. (he goes and opens the bag and takes out my toiletry bag and walks to the bathroom. He comes back out and carries me to the bathroom and puts me in the water after undressing me starts bathing me.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I think I can bath myself.

Qhawe: Not today. Today I'm bathing you and

tomorrow until you completely heal. Me: that

could take weeks. (I say that sulking)

Qhawe: You'll get used it (and he gives a his big smile)

Me: Just like you said I would get used to your dick (ok I don't know why I said that it just came out he stops looks at me smiling his naughty smile)

Qhawe: why would you compare this to that and don't

tell me you are not used to my dick yet. Me: I could

never get used to that thing of yours Que (he looks at

me at again and he just laughs) Qhawe: now it's a thing

it's no longer your "magic wand" or your "lollipop" huh?

(still laughing)

Me: hayi man Qhawelomzi (he just kisses me again and carries on bathing me being careful around the bandages.

He is bathing every inch even my nuna and I just let him

be.) Qhawe why would someone want to shoot me and

how did they know I was at your house that day.

Qhawe: I really don't know my Queen that's what we are trying to find and hopefully today we'll get the answers we are looking for. (as he finishes dressing me in pyjamas

and makes me sit on the toilet sit while he cleans the bathtub when he is done he carries me to the bed and pulls the blankets over my legs to my waist I really need my pain medication and the nurse walks in with a smile.)

Nurse Lungi: Looks like someone has bathed already.

Me: Thanks to this man here you won't have to help me with that today.

Nurse Lungi: this man is going to get me fired for doing my job for me. Let me look at your bandages ( thank God Qhawe brought me the pyjamas with buttons. The nurse looks at me and the doctor walks in as well)

Doctor: good morning how are we feeling today?

Me: we are fine just pain here and there (he looks at my wounds and smiles)

Doctor: your wounds are looking no infection I'm happy. Are you able to sleep on your back? Me: not completely the only time I sleep on my back is at night when Qhawe is here.

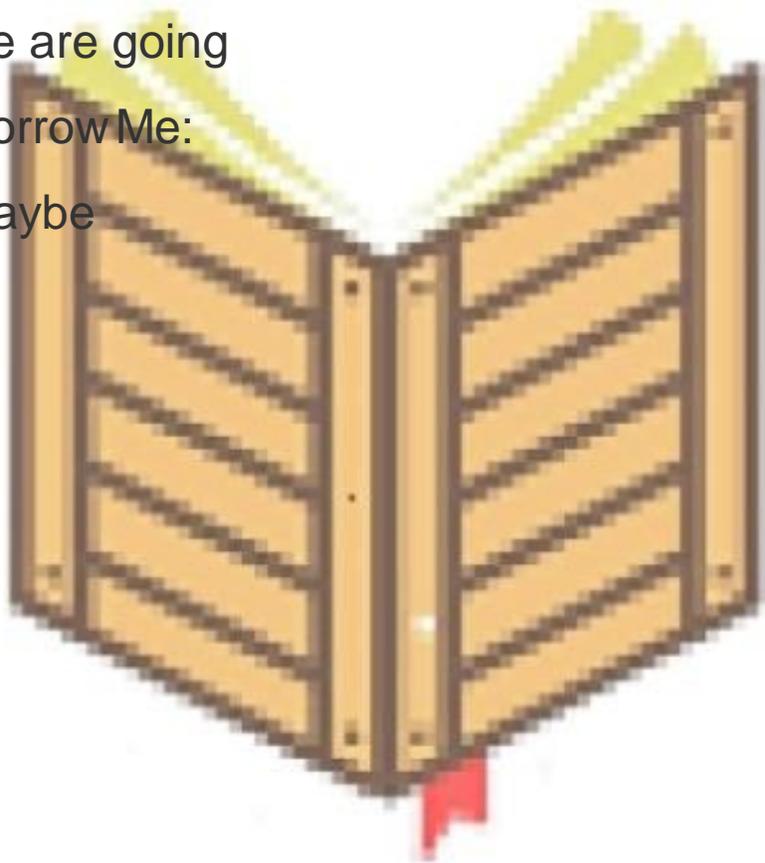
Doctor: how so? **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: well he sleeps in my bed as you know so when he puts my head on his chest my back is not completely on the bed so there's no pressure on the wound on my back. (the nurse gives me my pain killers and glass of water

after she is done dressing my wounds)

Doctor: I hear you. I still don't know how the two of you manage to fit in this bed considering.... (he doesn't finish he looks at Qhawe smiles.) We'll see how you are feeling tomorrow; maybe you can go home tomorrow. (I smile at him and thank him as he leaves.)

Qhawe: we are going home tomorrow  
Me:  
He said maybe



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

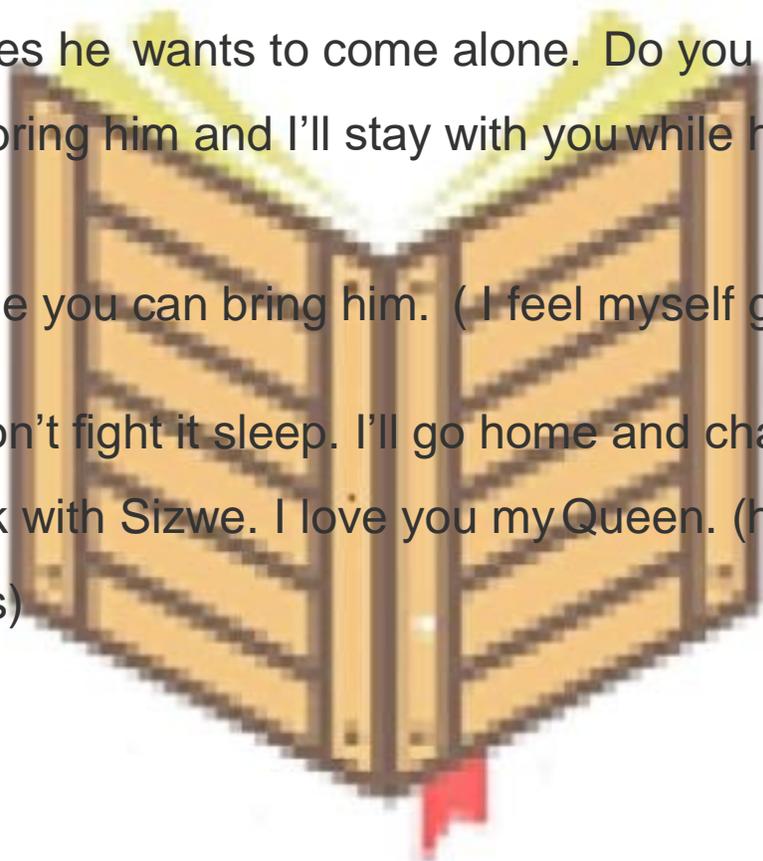
Qhawe: I don't care we are going home tomorrow I'm not sleeping in this bed any longer than I have to. (I just laugh at him) the guys will visit tonight but Khaya and the Twins will come at lunch

time. Another thing is that Sizwe wants to visit you. (I look at him not believing what he is saying) Me: alone

Qhawe: Yes he wants to come alone. Do you want to see him I can bring him and I'll stay with you while he is still here.

Me: It's fine you can bring him. (I feel myself getting sleepy)

Qhawe: don't fight it sleep. I'll go home and change and I'll come back with Sizwe. I love you my Queen. (he kisses me and leaves)



ANDILE

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I'm with Bandile and Lwazi we are on our way to the police station the detective called wanting to see us we are meeting Qhawe there. Lwazi is very quiet something is bothering him.

Me: Lwazi are you ok man?

Lwazi: I'm ok just thinking about Khanyi's ex-husband. I came across something when we were looking into him I feel like something is not adding up I feel like Khanyi is still danger.

Me: I had the same conversation with Eddie yesterday.

Lwazi: Khanyi's company that he wants is an import and export company that Zwelibanzi used to traffic drugs and human trafficking right. I mean if he wanted he could find some other company to use or buy his own he has the money. What's so special about this company that he wants it so badly and he knows he can't just get it. Khanyi has a silent partner in that company so she can't just hand it over to me just like that. Or maybe he doesn't know because the company is fully registered under Khanyi's name the silent partner signed a contract for their 50% share and the business is fully legal. Did Khanyi know about Zwellibanzi being involved in this company?

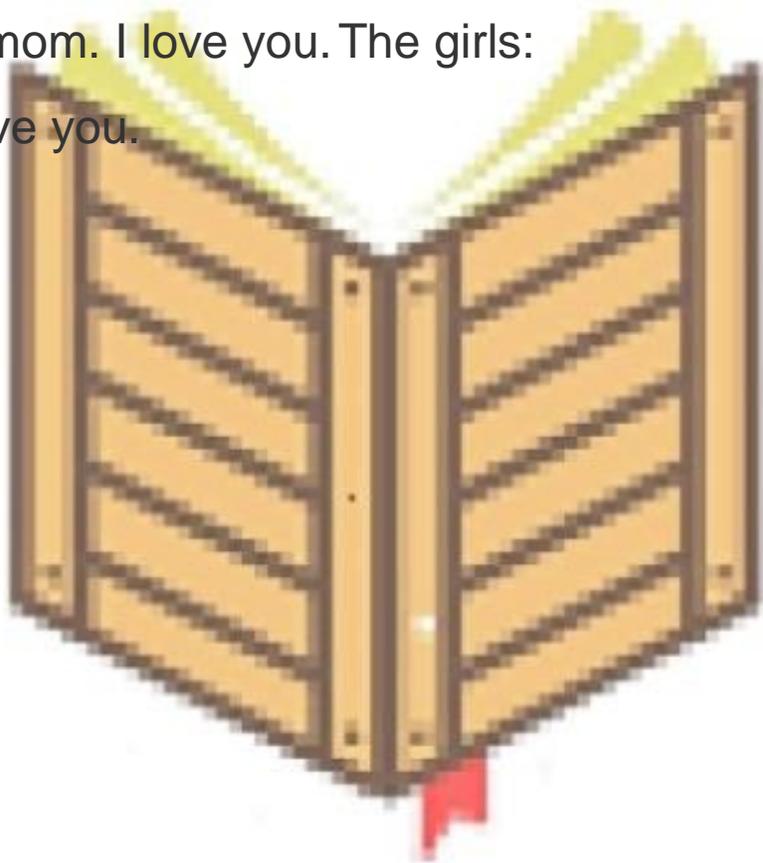
Me: At first we didn't we found later during the process of buying it but as you know Zwelibabzi is trying keep his hands clean so there's no concrete proof that he is directly involved even if we could have him arrested and go to court he would win the case.

Bandile: We need catch him red handed before he hurts Khanyi. We should speak to the detective. When we get to the police station Qhawe is already there outside leaning against his and smiling at his phone. We park and walk up to him and he is on a video call with the girls.

Qhawe: Girls I have to go I'll call you

later with mom. I love you. The girls:

And we love you.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: how are they doing? I miss them especially Lwanele. Qhawe: they are ok enjoying the holidays

Me: Let's go in. (we go in and find the detective waiting for us) morning detective

Det. Nxele: Gentlemen thank you for coming. As you know we have caught the culprit and she decided to confess I just finished taking her statement.

Bandile: What made her confess; yesterday she didn't sound like someone who wanted to confess when she asked for a lawyer.

Det. Nxele: she wanted to confess in the presence of a lawyer so that it doesn't look like the confession was forced out of her plus I mentioned his name and she trembled. (he says pointing at Qhawe)

Me: Smart woman I want to see her. Why is everyone so scared of you what did you do. Qhawe: I did nothing. I want to see her too.

Det. Nxele: come with me she's in the visitors' area that's the only way you can see her as visitors. We walk there with the detective we all go in and what we see before our eyes is..... well let me just say we didn't want to believe it.

we walk to the table where she is and we sit. The table is close to the wall Qhawe is just standing leaning against the wall looking at this woman with so much hate.

Detective is standing by the door. Lwazi sits next to her and that makes her a little uncomfortable me and Bandile we are seated opposite her.

Her: The whole squad is here I should have guessed it when they said I had visitors. You are new to the squad what's your name (this woman has the nerve)

Me: your worst nightmare (she swallows hard)

Her: I guess you want to know why I did it. Love and hate are my reasons.

Qhawe: Tell me Anelisa do you hate me that much that you would want to hurt me like this so much that you want to see me unhappy? (she doesn't answer she doesn't even look at him. Bandile whispers in my ear "she's trying to figure out why he is so calm and she knows that's not good." I look at Qhawe and he looks really calm way too calm if you ask me.)

Me: the woman you shot means the world to me I've known her longer than these guys and in the short space of time that they've known her she means the world to

them.

Anelisa: I don't care i.....

Me: (I don't let her finish) shhhh I'm doing the talking and you are listening do we understand each other? (she nods) You almost took a mother away from her kids kids that love her dearly and can't leave without her and for that you are going to pay and this is how it's going to work (everyone is just quiet) I am personally going to bail you out I'll take you to my house I have a special room for people



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

like you in that house do you want guess what's going to happen (she shakes her head no) I can't hear you my darling

Anelisa: No I don't

Me: I am going to tell you anyway. I have this friend that no one knows about you my dear are going to be his pet and when he is done with you I am going to skin you alive every day.

Bandile: I wouldn't want to be in your shoes. You still haven't answered Qhawe's question I'd be honest if I were you.

Anelisa: That's the thing Qhawe I don't hate you. (her voice is shaking I think she is scared.) I love you I love you so much that I couldn't stand seeing her with you she was taking you from me. She made you laugh she made smile and I hated her for it. I wanted to be the one to do that I wanted to you to be happy with me. I hated the fact that my kids were falling in love with her and calling her "mom". She's taking my family from me and I couldn't let have you guys.

Qhawe: we were never your family Anelisa. Tell me when did you realise that you loved me? Was it after you fucked

my colleague in our bed or was it when you finally saw me happy with someone else don't answer that. Answer me this though did you think of your kids when you were planning to kill her did you think of what they would say or do when they find out you killed the woman their father loves a woman they love how do you think they are going to feel when they find out that you tried to kill her tell me Anelisa in that little head of yours did you really see us becoming a family again after she dies because of you? Do you even have a brain or are you just carrying around an empty head on that neck yours.

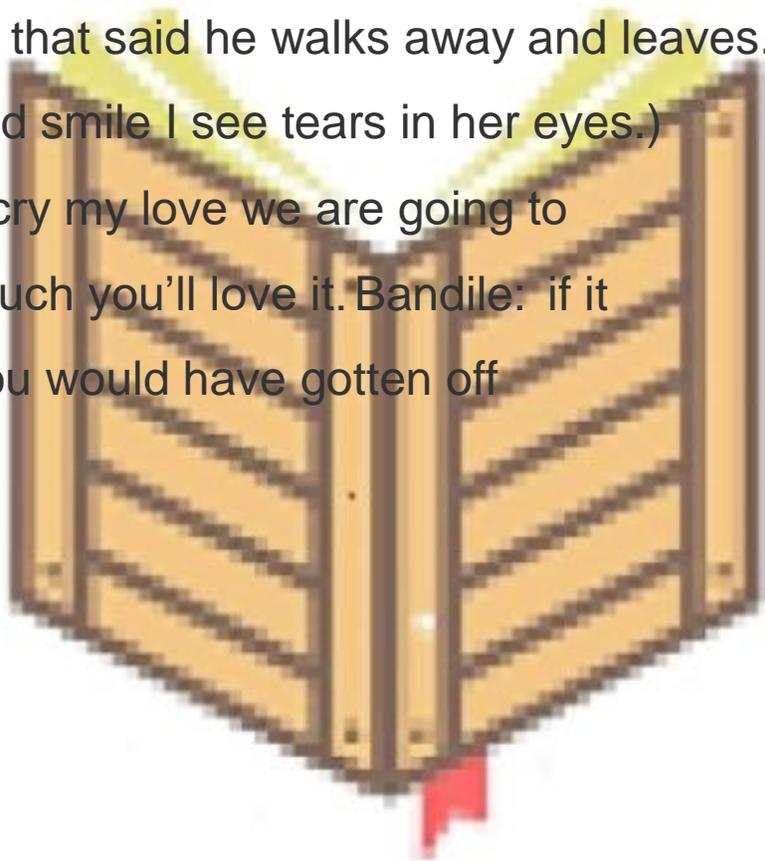
Anelisa: I wasn't thinking ok I just wanted what was mine. Qhawe: And you were prepared to lose your kids in the process

Anelisa: You are more of a parent to them than I ever was from the day they were born you've been the parent you have a special bond with them that I could never have. I hate that I can't be as close as you are with them and I know it's my entire fault.

Qhawe: I'm done with you. I'm not getting my hands dirty over you do you want to know why (she nods) because I

don't my kids to lose both their parents I don't want to lose my kids because I killed their mother and I don't want to lose the woman I love. (he moves closer to her and sits) what I am going to do though is let Andile here do whatever he wants with you. (he smiles at her kisses her forehead.) enjoy your new life with Andile. (he looks at me) have fun man. (with that said he walks away and leaves. I look at Anelisa and smile I see tears in her eyes.)

Me: don't cry my love we are going to have so much you'll love it. Bandile: if it was me you would have gotten off easy.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwazi: I would have just strangled you to death but I think I'm going to enjoy watching you squirm. (we all get up and leave)

STILL WEDNESDAY

QHAWELOMZI

Andile: Are you really going to do nothing to her?

Me: yes I am I don't really want her blood on my hands I would never be able to look at my kids knowing I killed their mother.

Andile: Khanyi said the same thing about not killing Zwelibanzi and Nkosikhona. Me: she wanted to kill them?

Andile: she still does (he says with a smile on his face.)

Me: now that Khanyi is better and is going home tomorrow I think we should tell the kids. The twins are already worried that they can't get a hold of Anelisa besides she might just kill herself in there because she doesn't want to be a pet to your imaginary friend and have you torture her by skinning her alive and she won't

be able to handle jail. The kids need to know the truth.

Andile: that makes sense. Would she really kill herself over my threat?

Me: trust me she would. I'll let jail deal with her she is going to suffer in there. Enough about Anelisa. I spoke to Khanyi about Sizwe and she agreed to see him but I'll be with them. Can you call him and tell him to meet me at the hospital now. I'm going there

Andile: sure I'll do that. How is she?

Me: she is fine she's her normal self. She was complaining about my..... (I stop talking realising that I'm about to say too much.) Never mind. I'll see you at the hospital.

Andile: wait! What was she complaining about? Lwazi: I

also want to know

Bandile: I'm curious too

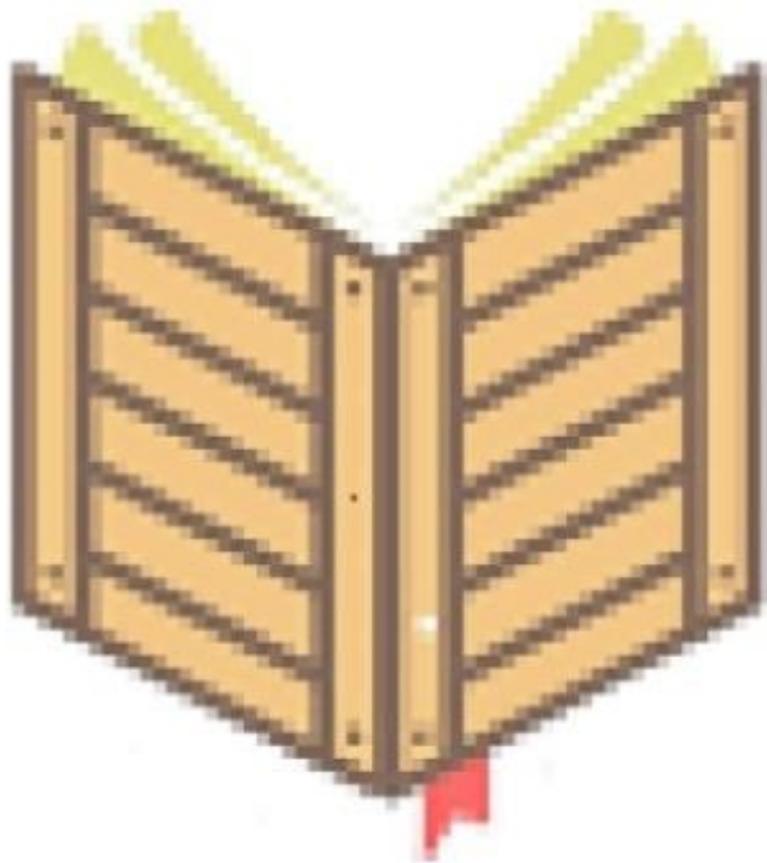
Me: hayi niyazithanda indaba ayifuni nina. {you like news and it's none of your business.} Lwazi: You started it you can't leave us hanging now.

ME: I can and I will watch (I say walking away to my car.)

Lwazi: I'm coming with you Thando is using my car. She says it turns her on. Me: Which

car is that?

Lwazi: The Beast



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I'm not surprised whenever Khanyi drives mine I know I'm getting it all night. Lwazi: how is she coping with your pipe?

Me: I think she is coping that's what she was complaining about earlier she says she doesn't think she'll get used to it but funny enough she can't get enough of me she always wants it and that just drives me crazy man. (Lwazi is the only one that I can actually talk to about my sex life. Me and him we have the same problem I wouldn't call it a problem but it is what it is we are both gifted down there very gifted if you know what I mean.)

Lwazi: Thando says same thing but she still gives it to me. I don't think I've met a girl that slept with me and didn't want to run away afterwards.

Me: me too man and I really love this woman she's it for me there's no one else she's my heart man.

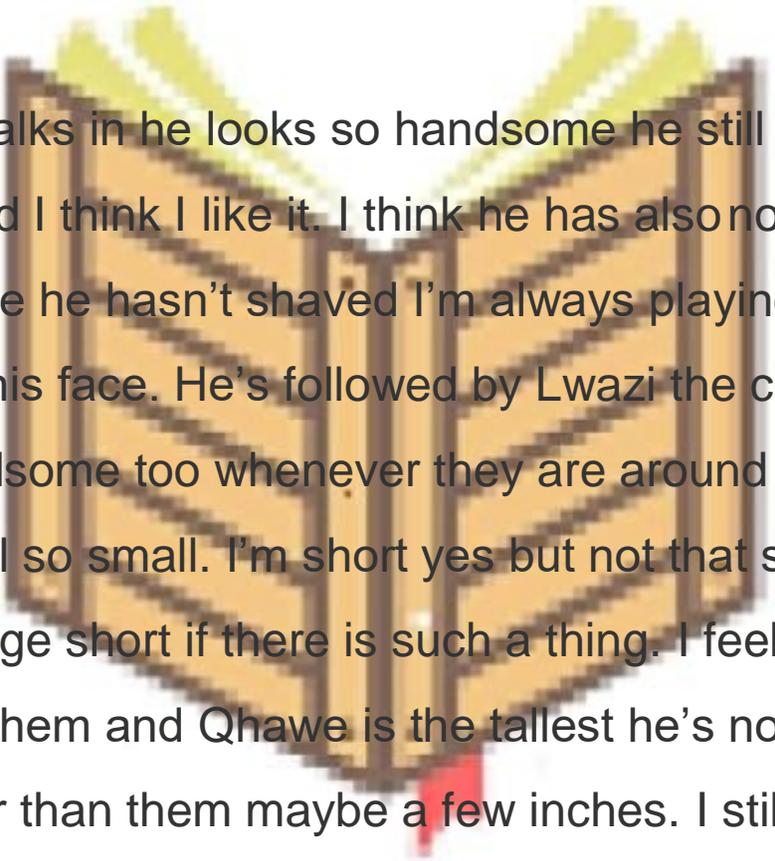
(when we walk into the hospital I notice Sizwe sitting on one of the chairs waiting)

Sizwe: thanks for letting me see me (he puts out his hand for a hand shake and I take it.) Lwazi: don't get used to it it's once off.

Sizwe: I understand.

Me: let's  
go.

## KHANYISILE



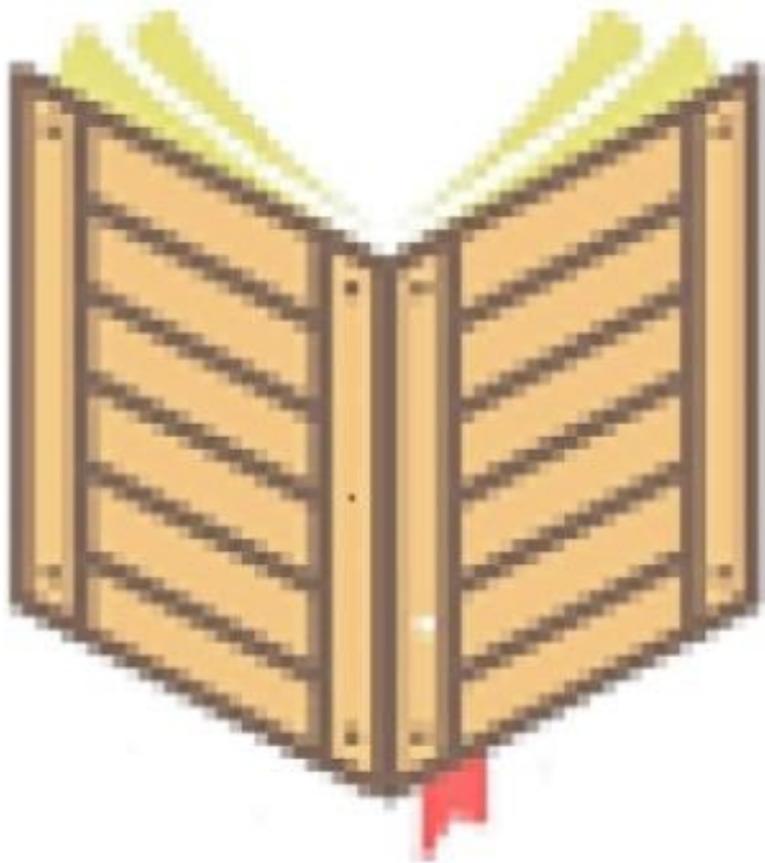
My man walks in he looks so handsome he still hasn't shaved and I think I like it. I think he has also noticed that I like it hence he hasn't shaved I'm always playing with my hands on his face. He's followed by Lwazi the clown he looks handsome too whenever they are around me I always feel so small. I'm short yes but not that short I'm your average short if there is such a thing. I feel like this with all of them and Qhawe is the tallest he's not that much taller than them maybe a few inches. I still love it though I mean I've never dated a short or average guy it's always been these tall people. Qhawe: Baby Girl (he gives me a kiss)

Lwazi: His Queen how are you?

Me: I'm ok getting better. Please help me sit up. (Lwazi helps me sit up)

Lwazi: We have a guest for you. (I look at the door and notice Sizwe standing there he walks over to me and hugs me.)

Sizwe: Short stuff how are you?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Sizwe don't call me that.

Lwazi: I am calling you that from now on (says laughing) Me: if you want to die they you will

Lwazi: but he is still alive

Me: not for long trust me. I'm ok Sizwe how are you doing?

Sizwe: I'm good. I heard what happened and wanted to see you and I wanted to talk to you as well. Me: I'm ok.

What do you want to talk about?

Sizwe: I wanted to apologise that I couldn't get you out of that marriage sooner.

Me: sizwe please don't do that to yourself you tried and he almost killed you and I managed to get out. I'm happy Sizwe I'm finally happy beyond measure and my kids are happy they have a father who loves them and adores them and I think he loves them more than he loves me.

Sizwe: are you jealous (he smiles and turns to look at Qhawe who was standing by the window paying us no attention Lwazi went out to get something to eat.) Do you love him? (I won't lie he caught me off guard with that question and I don't know what to say I think Qhawe heard the question when I turn to look at him he was looking at us he smiled and looked out the window) Love

him like you've never loved before

Sponsored

he smiled and looked out the window) Love him like you've never loved before give yourself to him you have nothing to lose but everything to gain. He loves you very much he is not obsessed with you he truly loves tell him how you feel.

Me: I'm scared Sizwe

Sizwe: I know you are but I promise you; you have nothing to be scared of. I don't know the guy but I can tell he has nothing but good intentions for you and the kids. No one knows better what you've been through more than I do and I wouldn't throw you in the lion's den.

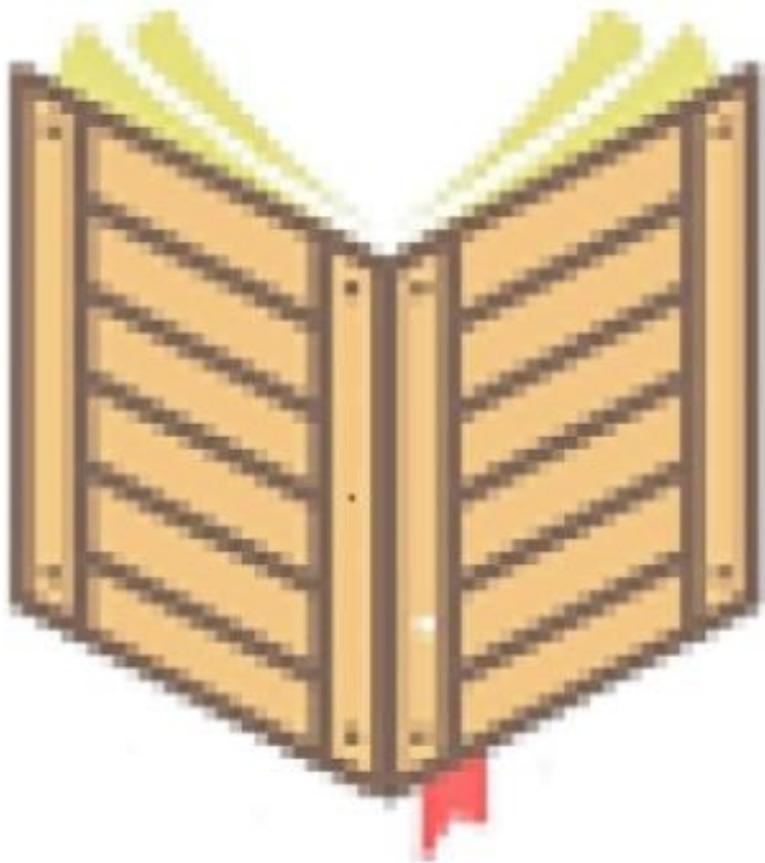
Me: I never thanked you for the money you gave me to start my new life and the money you kept sending.

Everything I have I started it with that money. Thank you.

The kids really missed you and they still do.

Sizwe: I had to stay away for their own protection and yours. Khanyi I don't have much time I need you to listen to me and I need you to listen good. Zwelibanzi is

dangerous very dangerous what you saw him do to me was nothing. I stayed his friend because I betrayed him in the worst possible way. Ever since you left I've been working with the cops to try and put him away but now I think he knows. (Qhawe walked closer to us and sat on the bed next to me just then Lwazi walked in)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwazi: what's with serious faces?

Qhawe: put the food down shut up and sit down. (he grabs a chair and sits.)

Sizwe: as I was saying I think he knows. I know you guys have been digging around into his illegal businesses and every time you hit a dead end he doesn't know you know Khanyi. I created the dead ends to protect you Short Stuff. No matter what you do don't ever sign over the company you bought to him don't even change ownership of the company keep it in your name that way he won't get it. I know your guys can protect no matter he does don't ever give that company.

Lwazi: what is it with this company?

Sizwe: he used it to traffic drugs from Cuba and Nigeria to South Africa he used it to launder money from overseas. He used it to traffic young girls and young boys to China Korea and Cuba.

Qhawe: selling them as sex slaves?

Sizwe: No it's worse than that he sold them for their organs. That's where he makes most of the money. When these boys and girls get to their destination they are killed and their organs sold to the highest bidder. He wants that company because it's the only company in the country that

has deals with more than four foreign countries with your company he sees his business growing worldwide. Take this (he hands me a flash drive) it has everything that I've got on him it's enough to get him arrested but he will probably get out on bail. I don't have much on him selling humans for their organs he doesn't tell me anything I don't even think his lawyer knows anything. You need someone you can trust in the police system that help you with this investigation everyone I've dealt with is on his payroll they always make his cases disappear. He'll never kill you Khanyi he needs you alive. He knows I came to see you he will want to know how you are doing and I am going to have to tell him he knows me he'll know when I'm lying to him.

Lwazi: Why are you doing this?

Sizwe: because it's time for me to get out of this life I'll help you as much as I can but when it's all done I think I'll relocate overseas haven't decided yet. Khanyi if anything happens to me please tell the kids I didn't abandon them. I stayed away to protect you guys. Tell Eddie I said thank you.

Me: you know Eddie how?

Sizwe: Long story we need a bottle whiskey for that.

Lwazi: You sound like Qhawe when he doesn't want tell a story.

Qhawe: I think we have someone we can trust in the police system not all of them are corrupt. Thank you for this thank you for protecting them for me.

Sizwe: I had to. She changed my life when I met her and the kids. Lwazi: she has that effect on people.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sizwe: I have to go please be careful he has eyes and ears almost everywhere. One more thing Khanyi his father is sick his cancer is back and he might not make it this time he wants to see you and the kids before he dies. I'm telling you just in case Zwelibanzi doesn't tell you his mom misses you a lot and she is broken they both are about not seeing their grandchildren especially when they go visit your parents. I'll see you soon short stuff. ( He hugs me just then Khaya and the Twins walk in. Khaya is frozen where he stands as the twins greet and take the food. " These kids and food." Sizwe walks over to Khaya and hugs him for a while.) Khaya: I didn't think I'd see you again how are you?

Sizwe: I heard about what happened to your mom. I'm good. Have you been good have you been taking good care of them?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khaya: I've been good and yes I'm taking good care of them. She is a fighter.

Sizwe: you know why I had to stay away ("my son knew" he nods) remember what I told you to do should anything happen to me (he nods) good. I promise when the others

are back I'll come visit and your mom can cook our favourite meal. I'll see you soon. (he hugs him again and leaves.)

## CHAPTER 33

THURS

DAY

ANELIS

A

I didn't think this through I really didn't. I let rage take over and now this is all messed I need to get out of here I won't survive jail. I don't even understand how this idiot got caught and he couldn't kill her.

Officer: you have  
a visitor Me:

who?

Officer: how am I supposed to know? (he opens up for me and walks me to the visitor's area. When we walk in I see him sitting there playing with his ring. How did he know I was here? Me: Hello

Him: how are you?

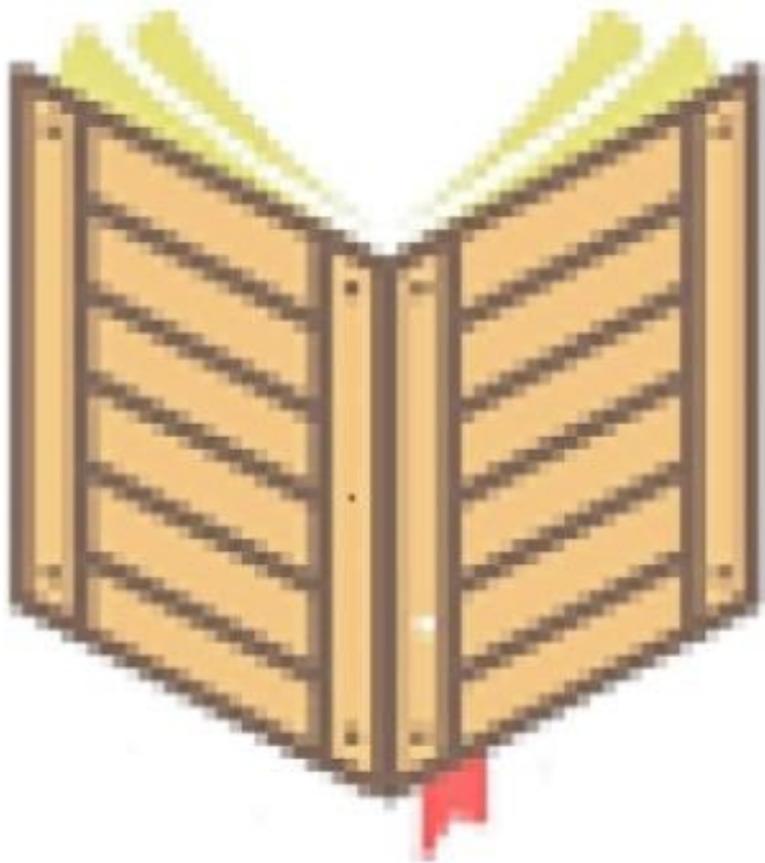


**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I'm ok I guess. What are you doing here?

Him: I heard from the grape vine that you are here for attempted murder. Who did you try to kill? you really didn't strike me as a murderer.

Me: honestly it has nothing to do with you. Just someone I needed to get rid of and I failed. Him: Actually it has everything to do with me.



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Me: How so because you don't even know the person we are talking about.

Him: that's where you are wrong my sweet I know her very well at that. (I look at him confused and shocked at the same time how can he possibly know her)

Me: Please leave (I say standing up so I can go back to my cell)

Him: Sit down Anelisa (I look at him and he is serious.) I SAID SIT DOWN. I have an hour with you I can get more if I want.

We are going to sit here until that hour is finished (I sit down this is going to be a long hour) I am going to talk you'll listen.

I'll ask questions and you'll answer them do we understand each other Anelisa?

Me: yes

Him: Anelisa you are so hung up on your ex so much that you can't even see a good thing staring you in the face. I cared about you I wanted to have something with you but you were so blind to see what's right in front of you. You want someone you can't have someone who doesn't love you and he made it clear to you that he doesn't want you and you go around killing people you are not supposed to kill. You know if you had taken the time to find out who she is who her friends are you would have known not to mess with her in fact; the fact that she is dating your ex-husband should have told you not mess with her but you decided to test the waters in the worst possible way and look at where you are now. You are going pay sweetheart for what you did it's just not going to happen in here.

Me: Sizwe please I'm sorry

Sizwe: What did I say before? (I quickly keep quiet. What is it with this woman and these men obsessing over her? In fact what hell hole did I get myself into by going after her?) do you want to know what's going happen?

Me: not really (I can hear my voice breaking)

Sizwe: Let me tell you a little story; the woman who you tried to kill has five beautiful children she still has her parents she was married to a very evil man but she didn't know and she loved him very much. When I met her she was not married to him but she already had 3 kids with him. I love those kids like they are mine. He was good to her did everything for her but when he married her things changed she endured nothing but pain from her husband. I almost died trying to help her leave. Eventually she did. I supported her financially until she was on her feet stayed away from her and her kids to protect them. She is like a sister to me. She knows more about me than anyone else she changed me into a better man. Now do you understand why I am going to make you pay for what you did? (I just nod)

Sizwe: did you think about your kids

when you planned this? Me: yes but

Sizwe please I'm sorry.

Sizwe: if I wasn't going to kill you would you be sorry. ( I keep quiet and not answer him.) I thought so. What's going to happen to you is worse than what Andile was going to do to you by the way he was just scaring you and on the other hand I'm being real. (he gets up walks to me and pecks my lips) I'll see you tomorrow darling when I come to fetch you and don't worry I'll be very gentle with you (and he leaves)

**KHANYISILE**

I'm watching Qhawe busy packing my things we are going home today. He's not letting me do anything. The doctor said I could go home but I must take it easy. This man right here translated that into me doing nothing for myself. The nurse showed him how to dress my wounds and treat them. He bathed and dressed me this morning. I officially feel like a baby.

Me: Que are you sure you don't need help?

Qhawe: I'm sure baby girl just sit there and look pretty.

Me: you do know that I am capable of doing things myself right. (he stops packing and comes to me. He opens my legs and stand between them why is this turning me on I close my eyes and enjoy his touch on my face.)

Qhawe: look at me (I open my eyes and look up at him) I know you can do things yourself right now I want to take care of you and do things for you please let me.

Me: let's make a deal. How about you let me bath myself and

dress myself if I struggle I'll ask for help and you can do everything else for me. (he looks at me for a while)

Qhawe: fine we have a deal. (he gives me a kiss and goes back to packing. My phone rings and it's my brother.)

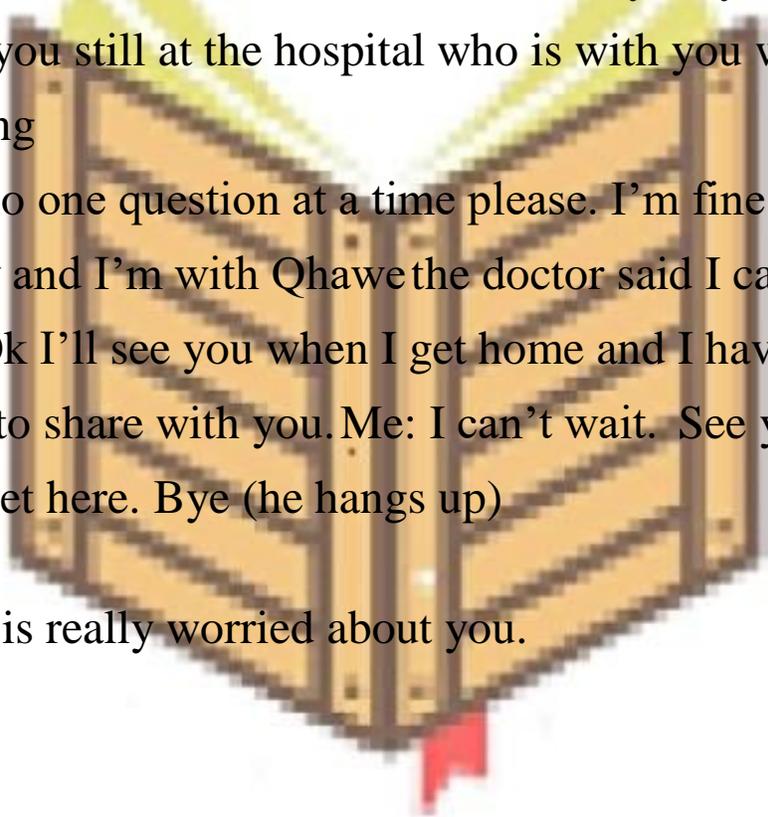
Me: Hello

Lungelo: are you ok I heard what happened. I'm sorry I couldn't be there I was out of town I'm on my way back. Are you ok are you still at the hospital who is with you what is the doctor saying

Me: Lungelo one question at a time please. I'm fine I'm going home today and I'm with Qhawe the doctor said I can go home.

Lungelo: Ok I'll see you when I get home and I have some good news to share with you. Me: I can't wait. See you when you get here. Bye (he hangs up)

Qhawe: he is really worried about you.



Me: he'll be alright. He said he has some good news to share with me I wonder

Qhawe: we'll just have to wait until he gets home.( He takes the bags and everything else that we are living with) I'll go put these in the car. I'll be right back.

(I sit on the bed playing games on my phone)

Qhawe: Are you ready to go (he stands between my legs again and kisses me. He takes my phone and puts it in his pocket and He bends his knees a little as he lifts me

Sponsored

I wonder

Qhawe: we'll just have to wait until he gets home.( He takes the bags and everything else that we are living with) I'll go put these in the car. I'll be right back.

(I sit on the bed playing games on my phone)

Qhawe: Are you ready to go (he stands between my legs again and kisses me. He takes my phone and puts it in his pocket and He bends his knees a little as he lifts me making me wrap my legs around his waist and kissing me as he walks towards the door with me.)

Me: Are you walking out with me like this hayi Qhawe put me down.

Qhawe: which is better a wheelchair or this either way they won't let you walk out of here. ( I look at him for a second and

he is smiling like a retard and I decide to let him be.) good choice. Me: “mxm” let’s just go (and I kiss him)

Qhawe: You are going to pay for that My Queen

Me: No I’m not. I have injuries so you can’t do anything to me Mtimkhulu. Qhawe: Says who?

Me: says me. (and I smile. People are busy staring at us. Qhawe stops in the middle of the reception area.) and why are you stopping?

Qhawe: the injuries are on your chest my darling down there you are perfectly fine for me to play around. (I open my mouth to say something but nothing comes out. I don’t have a comeback. I choose to keep quiet and he walks to the car he puts me in the car and gets in and drives us home.) I have to tell you something before we get home. I might not have a chance to tell you when we get home since everyone is going to be there when we arrive.

Me: ok what is it? you are scaring me.

Qhawe: we have to tell the kids what happened to you mainly because it was Anelisa who tried to kill you. And I’m afraid that she won’t survive prison she might just kiss herself.

Me: what why would she do that?

Qhawe: she wants me

Me: so bad that she would kill me. She's mad. Does she really think I'm going to hand you over to her just because you have kids with her she must be mad. I should kill her just to show her how it's done.

Qhawe: Baby calm down she's in prison and she is never coming out. I just feel for my kids at the end of the day she is their mother and they still love her. This is going to break their hearts.

Me: do we have to tell them

Qhawe; I promised my kids I would always be honest with them. The twins have been trying to call her so yes we have to.

Me: I understand. I can't believe this woman. Maybe I should visit her just to say hi. (he laughs at me) What did she say when you asked her why?

Qhawe: she said that she wanted her family back she did it because she loves me and she hated the fact that you are making me happy she said my smile is hers.

Me: hayibo who the hell does she think she is. (I say as he drives into the gate)

Qhawe: Baby Girl calm down I don't want you going there and killing her.

Me: I'm not about to lose my kids including her kids and the man I love over a psychotic bitch. (Qhawe parks the car as I'm about to open the door he locks the doors)

Me: Why did you do that Que?

Qhawe: Repeat what you just said about not losing your kids.

Me: I said I am not about to lose my kids including her kids and the man I love over... (I don't finish what I was saying when I realise what I just said I put my hands on my mouth looking at him.)

Qhawe: You said "the man you love" (I just nod holding back tears) I can't hear you baby.

Me: yes I said the man I love (I remove my hands from my mouth.) I won't lose the man I love because of her. (Qhawe unlocks the car gets out coming to my side opens my door for me to get out when I do he lifts me and leans me against the car I put arms around his neck and he kisses me so passionately that I feel his love I feel like nothing else exists except me and him. We are in our little bubble and it's just us my tears are just falling. He stops and looks at me and wipes my tears. I am feeling so emotional right.) I love you Qhawelomzi.

Qhawe: Say it again

Me: I love you!!! I love You!!! I love you!!! (he is so happy right now I am too. I really do love him)

## SIZWE

Anelisa really messed with the wrong person. I really feel sorry for her. Her and Zwelibanzi are going to pay. When Zwelibanzi introduced me to Khanyi I liked her instantly she filled the void that my little sister left when she died. Khanyi became my little sister my everything including her kids. I need to be careful with Zwelibanzi I can't kill him his police friends would know it's me besides his partners would just carry on with business we need to take everyone down kill the whole business. I'm on my way to see him because I have to keep up appearance. I hate this part I really do.

Me: Zweli

Zweli: how are you doing? Me:

I'm good just good.

Zweli: how is she?

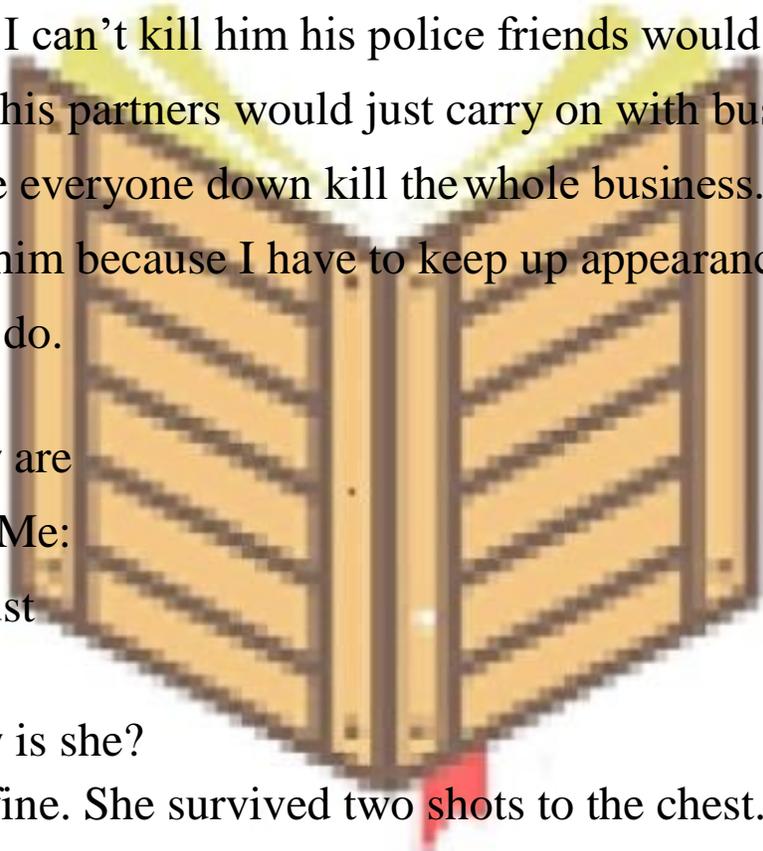
Me: she is fine. She survived two shots to the chest. She was unconscious for three days. I think she was going to be discharged today.

Zweli: do they know who shot her

Me: they do she has been

arrested. I know her. Zweli: Who is she?

Me: Qhawe's ex.



Zweli: how do you know her?

Me: she's the woman I was dating. She was still hung up on Qhawe that's why she broke up with me and shot Khanyi. I need a vacation breathe a little.

Zweli: my dad still wants to see her and the kids and I don't know how to get her to go.

Me: if I remember correctly Khanyi was fond of your parents the person she had issues with was you. Why don't you try talking to her she's not an unreasonable person she might just surprise you and agree to visit them.

Zweli: after everything that has happened I don't think she will.

Me: well you won't know until you try. I have to go man.

I have an ex to deal with. Zweli: what do you mean by dealing with her don't tell me you are going to torture her.

Me: why wouldn't i. she messed with the wrong person. You know I would do anything to protect Khayi even from you. I did before and you almost killed me.

Zweli: I feel sorry for her.

Me: I have to go man. I'll see you tomorrow. (I get up and leave)

This is how it's been now. He doesn't talk much about anything these days. I hope those guys will be able to crack codes I gave them on that flash drive I need find a way to have bugs installed in his house I hope their cop friend is trust worthy otherwise we are all dead.

## CHAPTER 34

TWO MONTH LATER

ANELISA

“You reap what you sow” that's exactly what I'm doing. I tried to kill someone got caught and now I'm reaping the benefits of my actions. Sizwe delayed the bail for about a week saying that my new cell is not ready. He had me placed under suicide watch so that I don't kill myself. He said he can't afford to have me kill myself. In that week Qhawe Khanyi and the Twins came to see me. The twins were very disappointed actually they were hurt and I could understand why.

\*\*\*\*\* FLASH

BACK\*\*\*\*\*

Banele: How could you even contemplate doing something

like this mommy why?

Bandile: Your relationship with dad was over years ago and we had accepted that and lived with it. Why couldn't you just accept especially since you are the one that wanted the divorce? All we wanted was for you guys to be happy. Dad is happy happier than we've ever seen him and we lived with him all our lives and he has never been this happy especially after you guys divorced. He is happy let him be.

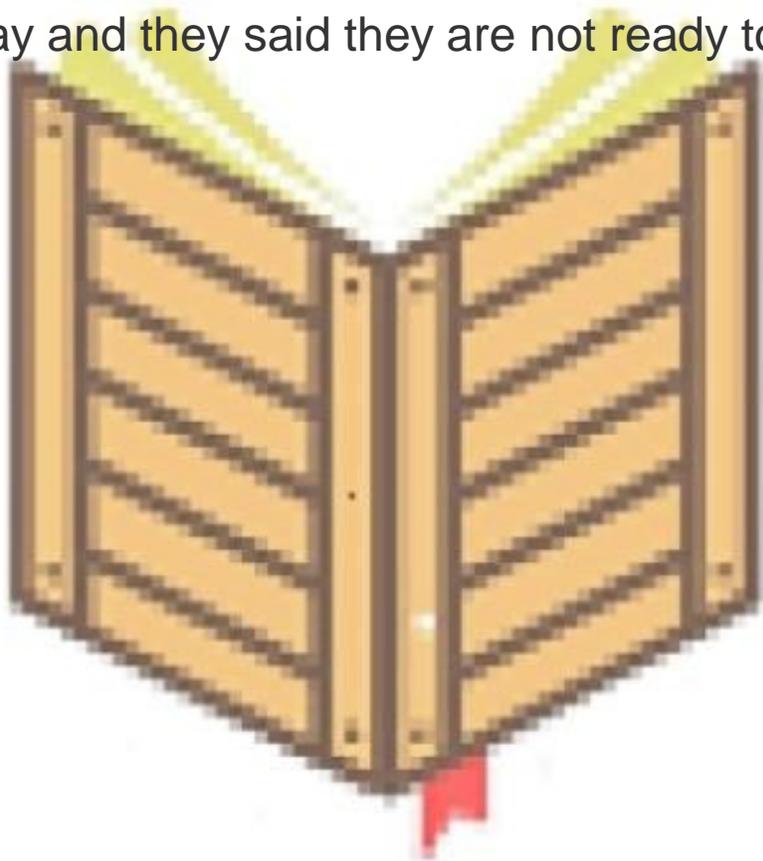
Banele: Sis' Khanyi didn't come into our lives to replace you she created her place in our lives and hearts she treats us the same way she treats her children she loves us just as much we call her mom because she earned it she didn't ask us to it was our choice. She is a part of lives and by the looks of things she is going to be around for a very long time.

Bandile: You might as well accept that and live with. You have all the time to do it in here. We love you Anelisa but to be honest you were never really what a mother should be to her children you never really gave us a mother's love and the one woman that does that for us you try to kill. If you were not my mother I swear you wouldn't be

breathing right now. (he stood up and walked away.)

Banele: I really hope you find peace and use this time that you have in here to find yourself. Bye mom. (he stood and kissed my cheek.)

Qhawe: I won't force them to come visit you I'll bring them only if they want to. The girls are not back yet from their holiday and they said they are not ready to see you.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*\*\*\*\*END OF FLASH

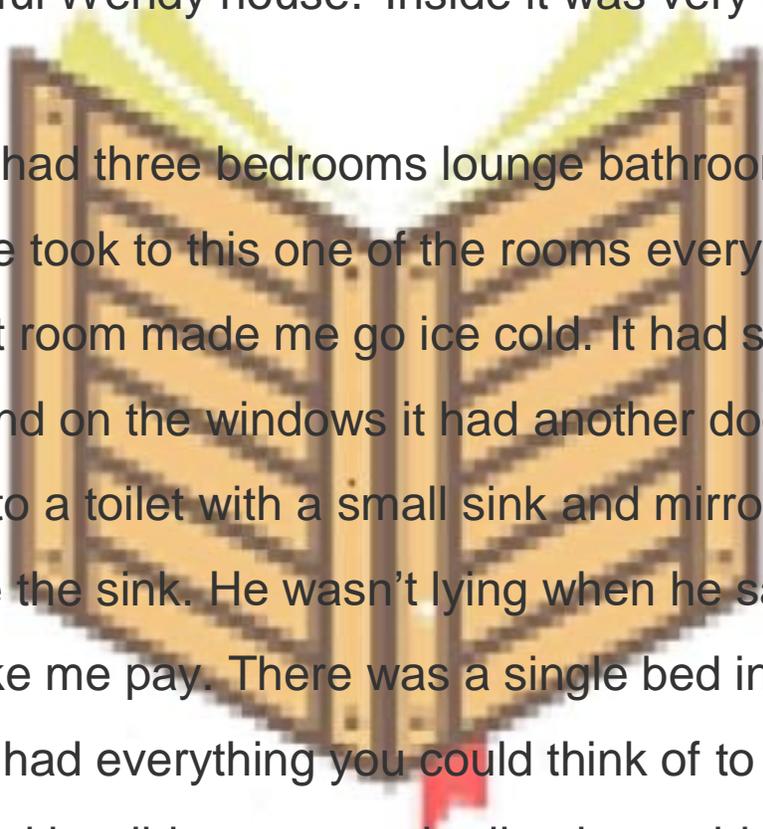
BACK\*\*\*\*\*

Nothing cut me deep as that moment. I felt like my kids had disowned. They spoke the truth and to have my kids tell me the things they told me that day it really hurt.

Sizwe finally got me out. He took me to a forest and it had this beautiful Wendy house. Inside it was very beautiful and very

elegant. It had three bedrooms lounge bathroom and a kitchen. He took to this one of the rooms everything that was in that room made me go ice cold. It had steel bars on the door and on the windows it had another door inside which led to a toilet with a small sink and mirror on the wall above the sink. He wasn't lying when he said he would make me pay. There was a single bed in the room.

This room had everything you could think of to torture a person. And he did torture me he lived up to his promise every day when he came in to torture me I wanted him to kill me I begged him to kill me and he would say "it's not time yet sweetheart". The man made me suffer for what I did he tortured me for 3 weeks. From electrifying me to surgically cutting me he removed my skin on certain parts



NOVELSGURU.COM

of my body he did a lot that I can't even mention strangely enough he never not once sexually violated me or beat me. He stopped after three weeks and brought a doctor to look at me and treat me. I was surprised by this gesture. Three days later he took out of my cell and put me in one of the other rooms it had a double bed a small wardrobe and a dresser with a mirror. I didn't understand what was going on I was still locked in. he came in once that day to bring me

dinner. The following morning he came and took me to the bathroom and told me to bath after I was done he took me back to the bedroom and brought me some food. That night after I ate he came back in the room I was just sitting on the bed. He checked my wounds and they healing it didn't hurt so much anymore. He sat next to me and surprised with a kiss which after a while I responded to he made me lie on my back and took off the t-shirt I was wearing and I was left naked. I was confused didn't know what to do and for the first time he spoke " you have a choice you can always say "NO" to what about to do."

With that said he continued to kiss me and I let him. He made love to me wait let me rephrase that he fucked me

he had no emotion no feelings nothing and he wouldn't let me have an orgasm. That carried on for the next four days. He would come into my room at least three to four times a day for sex and every time he told me that I can always say "No" I can always tell to stop and he will but I never did. During one of the sex sessions he told me he has decided not to kill me he thought he could kill me he said he has never killed a woman and I was not going to be his first and that my children still needed to see me. He said he was taking me back to prison. Before he took me back he made me do a pregnancy test and we discovered that i was pregnant. This is the worst pain I feel with everything that he did to me nothing hurts like knowing that I can never be a mother to this child I'll never see this baby grow up it is by far the worst pain and he knows. I am placed in safest part of the female prison with other pregnant prisoners. Sizwe is going to come to

NOVELSGURU.COM

every check-up. He threatened to kill my kids should I try to kill myself or abort this baby. Here I am a month pregnant and stuck with a baby I'll never get see.

## ZWELIBANZI

It's been two months since Khanyi was shot. I still haven't told her about my dad. I've been to her house for my once a week visits with the kids and those are still not going well. I saw Khaya twice at the house and I must say the kid hates me not that I blame him though. Sizwe went on a one month vacation

Sponsored

not that I blame him though. Sizwe went on a one month vacation came back looking fresh and happy which I find strange. He still hasn't told me what's making him so happy and I doubt he'll ever tell. The thing about Sizwe is that he knows how stay quiet how to not say anything meaning he knows how to keep a secret. In the month that

he wasn't around everything was a mess with the business. Someone is stealing my money and we don't know who it is I've had four police raids in one of my warehouses my products have gone missing don't know how. I told Sizwe about all of this and just told me that I don't know how to keep my people in line and he laughed. Things have been running smoothly since he came back but we still don't know who is stealing my money. When we try to track it it goes from one account to other different accounts and it disappears the trail just goes cold. My dad is getting worse and mama keeps nagging me about bringing Khanyi and the kids. I need to speak to her and I know she is going to say no but then again Sizwe is right I don't know what she is going to say until I speak to her. Khanyi still refuses to sell me her company. I really need to find a way that will make her sell to me without hesitation something that won't make her think twice about selling. Heeee! I think I've got. I take my phone and call Khanyi I can't put this off any longer.

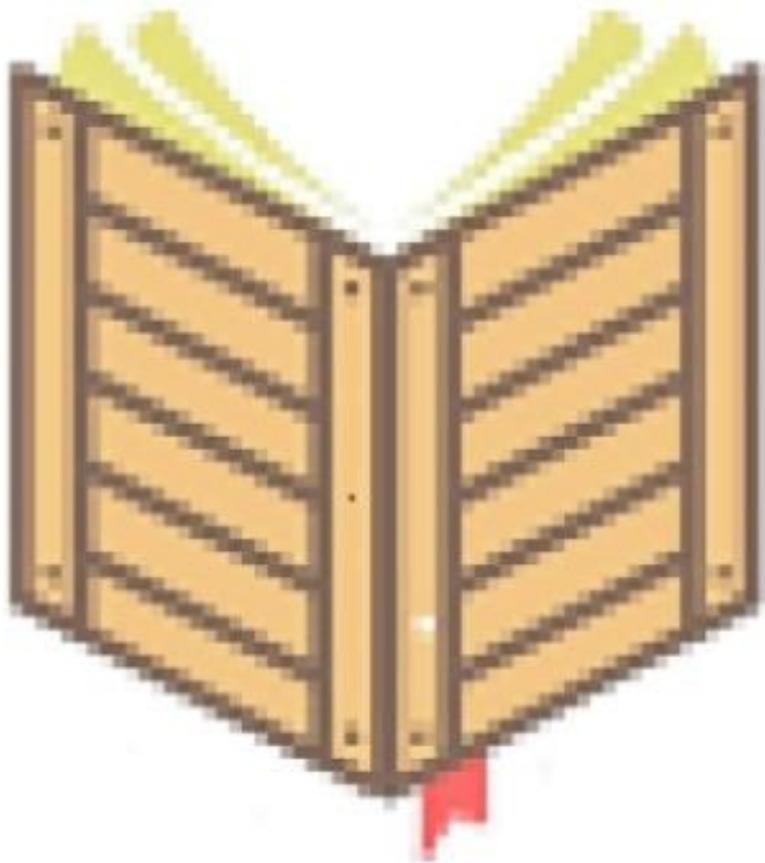
Me: Hello Khanyi how are you?

Khanyi: I'm fine Zwelibanzi what do you want?

Me: I would like to talk to you about something can I come over?

Khanyi: No you may not you were here yesterday.

Whatever you want to talk about I'm sure you can manage doing that over the phone.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: fine. My dad is sick very sick. His cancer came back. He wants to see you and the kids. Khanyi they both miss their grandchildren they would like to see them. (she goes silent for a while she's probably thinking.)

Khanyi: Give me their contact numbers I'll speak to them. (she lets out a heavy sigh.) Me: I'll send them. (she doesn't wait for me to say anything else she hangs up.)

Well we'll see how this is going go my phone rings and it's an unknown number:

Me: Hello

Him: tell me Mr Tom how does it feel to be losing money and you know who is stealing it. (I don't recognise the voice he's probably the one stealing my money)

Me: Are you the one stealing my money

Him: This is nothing Mr Tom you are still going to lose a whole lot more. That's a nice looking girlfriend you have there and those cute twins of yours and you have three other children right. Me: what do you want?

Him: Oh! Don't worry about that I'll tell you this though you are going to pay for your crimes. I won't kill you but you will go to jail (Just then Sizwe walks in.)

Me: who are you?

Him: You'll find out soon enough. Make sure to answer your phone when I call if you don't answer something bad will happen. Do we understand each other Zwelibanzi?

Me: Yes we do. (he hangs up and I'm left stunned)

Sizwe: Zweli what's wrong? You look like you've seen a ghost. (I can hear him speak I'm still in shock of what just happened.) hey snap out of it. What the fuck is wrong with you?

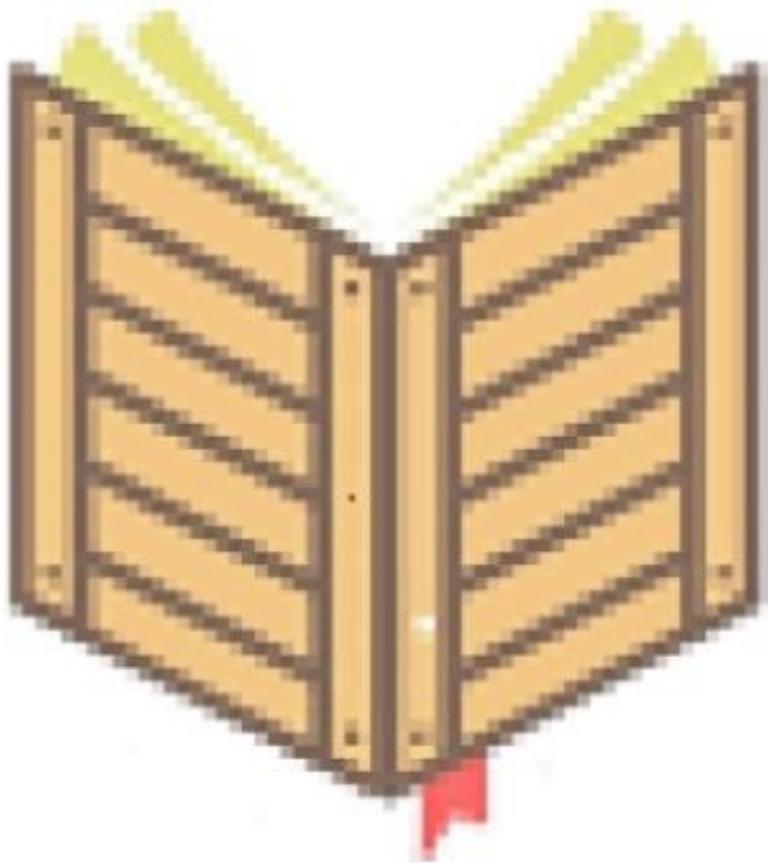
Me: The person stealing my money just called and threatened my kids and Sima. He says I'm going to pay for my crimes he's going to make sure I go to jail. Do you know what's going to happen to me if I go to prison? I have more enemies in prison than I do out here Sizwe.

Sizwe: I'm very aware of that. Maybe they are just bluffing just trying to scare you.

Me: No Sizwe this is not an empty threat my friend. This guy means business and I need to find out who he is soon before he destroys everything I've worked hard for. (Sizwe is looking at me like I've grown two heads I don't think he

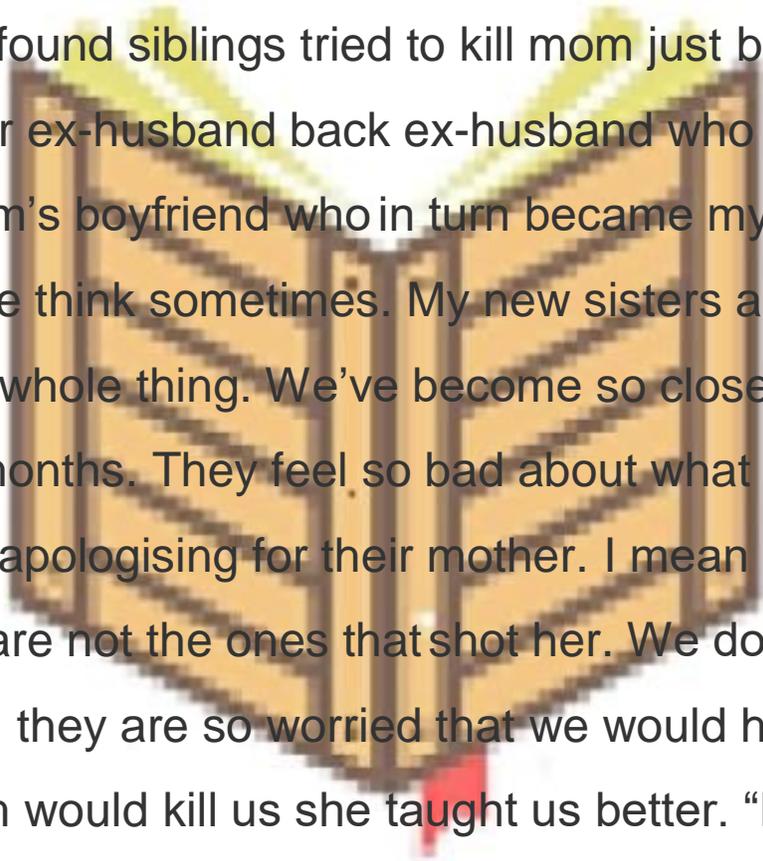
has ever seen me this scared.)

LONWABO



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I'm 17 years old and the shit I've seen happen around me and the shit I've experienced it's not stuff a 17 year old should experience. Mom would kill me if she heard me talking like this she hates it when we use foul language. We are not allowed to swear at all. She doesn't swear at least not in front of us. I couldn't believe that the mother of our newly found siblings tried to kill mom just because she wanted her ex-husband back ex-husband who happens to be my mom's boyfriend who in turn became my dad I don't know how people think sometimes. My new sisters are so hurt about this whole thing. We've become so close over the past few months. They feel so bad about what happened they keep apologising for their mother. I mean it's not their fault they are not the ones that shot her. We don't hate them for it. they are so worried that we would hate them for it. Mom would kill us she taught us better. "Don't hate or judge people because of other people's actions you will end up lonely." That's what she always says to us. We don't hate them we love them too much to hate them. I've seen what my father did to my mom I've heard her cries in the bathroom when she is alone. I have accidentally seen her naked and saw the bruises on her body caused by my



NOVELSGURU.COM

father he caused her a lot of pain but I don't hate his parents for what he did. I'm sure they taught him better. I miss them though maybe I should speak to mom about visiting them. We tried to make the girls understand that we do not hate them for what their mother did. We remain very close and our relationship as siblings is growing stronger every day. Ever since we found out about the shooting Lisakhanya has been having nightmares. In as much as she is very close to Lwanele but she felt more comfortable telling me about her nightmares maybe because she knows about my history of nightmares when I found out about what my father was doing to mom. Going to therapy helped a lot. I don't get the nightmares anymore but I've had one or two since the man walked into our lives but having Qhawe around really helps only him and Lisakhanya know that I sometimes get them. Lisakhanya doesn't want me to tell the parents about her nightmares. She would walk into my room in the middle of the night and I would know she had one I would have to share my bed with her. Lwanele sometimes gets jealous she does the same thing when she can't sleep she wants to cuddle with me. Sometimes I end up

having both of them in my bed. Thank God mom bought double beds for us. When I ask them why they don't go to Ntando's room they said Ntando snores. I couldn't help but laugh. Lisakhanya walks in to the kitchen and I'm making myself a sandwich.

Me: do you want one (I ask pointing at the sandwich) Lisa:

No thank you I'm not hungry.

Me: what's wrong little sis?

Lisa: Nothing is wrong I just want to say thank you for being there for me and sharing your bed with me when I get my nightmares.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: you do understand that you will have to go for therapy soon. It helped me with my nightmares and I am still going for therapy.

Lisa: I know Wabo I just don't want the parents to worry. (she calls me Wabo)

Me: It's their job to worry about us Lisa. You need help little sis we have to tell mom and dad. "tell us what?" (that's mom and dad walking into the kitchen.)  
"shit"

## CHAPTER 35

SUNDA

Y

KHANYI

SILE

It's been two month since I've been shot. I am completely healed. Eddie asked for 3 months off and Andile and they told me that I would be safe since Qhawe is around. They call twice a day to check up on me. It's been two weeks now since they started their leave. I feel there's something that they are hiding from me. For one they've never been off at the same time they

know they have to alternate but they insisted on going off at the same time. Zack and Sandiso are always busy with Lwazi.

Something is not adding up and when I talk to Qhawe about it he says I'm over thinking things. I just decide to leave it I know they are up to something.

Qhawe and I we are good more than good. Two months ago on our way home from the hospital I told him I loved and I didn't even realise I was saying it until he made me repeat it. He was so happy he made love to me all night that night he was so gentle as usual but I think he was also being extra careful since my wounds were still fresh. As for Anelisa I don't even want to think about her and what she's putting her kids through.

I got a call from Zwelibanzi yesterday telling me about his father being sick I'll deal with that later. Right now I need to deal with this daughter of mine that's having nightmares because of the shooting. I'm in Lisakhanya's room with Qhawe

Me: Khanya baby why didn't you tell us about your nightmares?

Khanya: I didn't want worry you and i was scared that you blamed us for what happened since it was my mother who shot you.

Qhawe: Khanya what happened to Khanyi was not your fault; it never was and never will be. What your mommy did she did it on her own it was her doing you don't need to blame yourself for her actions no one is blaming you.

Me: I want you to listen to me ok (she nods) I love you I love you very much I love you more than I love your dad (Qhawe looks at me with a raised eyebrow) HayiboI do (looking at



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe) Lisakhanya you mean the world to me I made you daughter and you made me your mother that means no matter what I'll always be there for you I'll love you even if you feel like I shouldn't that means next time you have a problem you come tell me about. At times there will be things that you might not be able to talk to dad about when that happens feel free to come to me don't be afraid to ask me for help. (she has tears all over her face and she just nods at everything I say and she throws herself at me for a hug. Qhawe is all smiles looking proud.) Qhawe: I'm proud of you my Queen and thank you for loving them.

Me: do you want to attend therapy baby. Khanya: Yes mom I do.

Qhawe: would you like to go with me or with mom?

Khanya: Actually I would like to go Wabo (Qhawe and I look at each other amazed that was unexpected.)

Qhawe: do you want to tell us why you want to go with Wabo?

Khanya: He already understands what I'm going through more than you guys. Me: You'll have to speak to him and find out if he is ok with that.

Khanya: I will (she says with a smile.) Can I go speak to him now? Me: Sure baby.

Qhawe: that was unexpected but then again I understand why. Wabo told me that when she wakes up from her nightmares she goes to his room and sleep in his bed.

Me: She does the same thing Lwanele does when she can't sleep she goes to his room. I'll have speak to the therapist and tell her that we have one more child to add to the sessions. Que (he looks at) I would like to have a family session with the therapist about this shooting thing and I would like Anelisa to be part of it what do you think?

Qhawe: you really shouldn't call me "Que" when we are having a serious conversation you really throw me off when you do the way you say it it's such a turn on.

Me: argh Que man focus.

Qhawe: you are doing it again I won't be responsible for I do to you. Anyway I think it's a good idea but let's speak to the doctor and find out if it's a good idea.

Me: Ok then. There's something else (he looks at me nodding for me to continue) Remember what Sizwe told about Zwelibanzi's father being sick.

Qhawe: Yes what about it?

Me: Zwelibanzi called yesterday telling me about his father and how he wants to see me and the kids. I would like to take the kids I would like to do it as soon as possible if you are ok with that. Qhawe: Are you sure you want to go there?

Me: yes I'm sure. I don't have a problem with his parents. I didn't go there for the past four years because I didn't want to deal with Zwelibanzi.

Qhawe: What if Zwelibanzi is there?

Me: well I have you to protect me my big strong chocolate handsome giant (I say getting on top straddling him putting my arms around his neck and kiss him slowly his hands grabbing my ass) "Oh come on you guys do you have get busy in my room when you have your own?" (oh my goodness that was Lwanele sounding disgusted we were just kissing and these kids keep catching us in heated moments.) it was just a kiss and besides we bought this house so we..... She doesn't let me finish)

Lwanele: no mom you guys might have bought the house but this is my room and my bed. Please get out go to your room. Go! GO! Go! (we just laugh at her and Qhawe stands up with me in his arms and my legs around his waist and walks to the door)

Qhawe: Sorry Princess. (he smiles at her and she smiles back)

Lwanele: You guys are just crazy don't let me catch you in my room like that again please leave. (we leave and she closes the door shaking her head.)

Qhawe: When is the next school holdiday so that we can be alone again? (he asks as we walk downstairs to the kitchen and he puts me down when reach the bottom of the stairs.

Me: September and it's 10 days and we are only

in middle of August now. Qhawe: when are you thinking of going to the Eastern Cape?

Me: this coming weekend but I need to call them first I was thinking we could all go and you can take the other kids to your parents while we go to Zwelibanzi's parents.

Qhawe: Actually I've been thinking of introducing you to my parents so I would like to do it when we are there if you are ok with that.

Me: are you sure about that what if they don't like me?

Qhawe: I'm sure about it and if they don't like you it won't change how I feel

Sponsored

besides they are going to love the woman who loves my kids more than she loves. (he says that with a smile reminding me of what I said to Lisakhanya.)

Me: let me call Zwelibanzi's

parents I love you. KHAYA

NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm at home with my family. Nkosikhona has been calling me nonstop nagging about going to the Eastern Cape so that he can introduce me and Lina to his family. This man has been quiet for months and now that he wants something he decides to call he expects us to jump at his request. I really don't get it. For someone who wants a relationship with his kids he's doing a bad job sometimes I feel like he is being forced to do this.

Maybe his wife is pushing him to do so if she is pushing I wish she would stop. We don't need this man we did fine without him in our

lives. We have forgiven and right now that's all we can do. My phone rings and it's my sister. Me: My beautiful sister

Lina: My handsome brother

how are you? Me: I'm good and you?

Lina: I'm good. How's everyone else?

Me: they are good Lisakhanya is going to attend therapy sessions and apparently she's been having nightmares of mom being shot ever since you guys found out.)

Lina: arg man poor little thing. I can only imagine how she feels and Sibahle is also not taking this whole thing well. She says even though her and her mom were not that close she still loved her and now after what she did she doesn't know how to feel she says she doesn't even know how to act around Khanyi anymore. I told her to speak to mom about her feelings or speak

to dad. I really don't understand why they don't want to speak to the parents.

Me: I can understand. It's hard for them. At least they speak to us that is a plus. Lina: I guess you are right.

Me: Lwanele caught mom and dad making out in her room and she kicked them out.

Lina: I swear the parents are like love sick teenagers. They make out everywhere in the house and we always catch them in compromising positions (she laughs hard)

Me: At least we get to see what love between two people should be like. It's always beautiful to watch mom's childishness around him chasing each other around the house sometimes he would spank her when she walks away the way she giggles it's truly amazing. I mean the random hugs the random kisses the I love you. Mom is happy Lina I haven't seen her like this in a long time. They are both very happy. I never thought mom would tell Qhawe how she feels.

Lina: I'm glad she is happy I'm happy for the both of them.

Ntando said something that got me thinking.

Me: What did he say?

Lina: he said that the way mom treats Qhawe teaches us girls about how we should treat a man and the way Qhawe treats mom teaches you guys about how you should treat a woman.

Me: You know I never thought of it like that.

Lina: Me too.

Me: I met someone and I want to introduce her to the family we've been dating for a month and a half now

Lina: Finally I hope it's not another Barbie

Me: no it's not and this time I think I'm in love I've never wanted to introduce a girl to my family before. She is the kind of girl I want to bring home and introduce to the parents. I think she is the one.

Lina: I'm happy for you big brother.

Me: When are you introducing us to your boyfriend? I hope you are still a virgin Lina. Otherwise I'm breaking his legs.

Lina: what!! give the parents a heart attack they are not ready for me to have a boyfriend besides you know how dad doesn't boys around us and yes I'm still a virgin. (I smile to myself)

Me: Nkosikhona called

Lina: I know he called me too. I don't understand this man. He asks for forgiveness and we forgive me and then he goes quiet for months and now he rocks up in our lives demanding to introduce us to his family doesn't he know we don't care.

Me: he went as far as saying "I am your father and you will do as I say" hayibo siphi na (where are we)

Lina: the liver he has (we just laugh and continue

talking until we say our goodbyes) My sister is crazy. I

love her though.

## ZWELIBANZI

Sima: Zweli come on what's taking so long? Zweli: I'm coming

Sima wanted us to go out today as a family with the twins. I'm taking them out for lunch and a little bit of shopping. She is not happy with me because I told her she can't go out on her own anymore; she needs to have someone with her all the time I told she is not safe. She'll just have to suck it up. I'm not taking any chances and I need to speak to Khanyi to tighten her security as well what am I talking about she has tight security it's even difficult for me to get in there with an appointment. That phone call really spooked me and I haven't been able to trace the call this is so frustrating I really hate it when I don't have control of the situation. When we get to the

mall we start with the shopping buying some groceries some clothes for the twins and a few items for ourselves after that We go have lunch at the Spur at least they have a play area for the kids. We get our food and eat over a light conversation when we are done Sima wanted to have her nails done I said she can go and we'll wait here for her at least the place is right opposite the restaurant and I can see her from where I'm sitting. My phone rings and I pick it up

Him: you still have money to spend I should take more from you. Me: What do you want?

Him: Nothing much just wanted to let you know that I have your shipment from Nigeria. It's funny how these documents have your name all over them.

Me: That's impossible; nothing ever has my name on it. What are you going to do with my shipment?

Him: You need to do something for me in return I won't steal your money for a week and I won't even stalk your pretty little girlfriend for week she looks pretty in that pink dress of hers.

As for what I'll do with the shipment it doesn't concern you.

(oh my god. He is watching us who is this guy. As I get up from where I'm sitting he speaks again) I'd sit down if I were you and pretend you are having a normal conversation on the phone.

We don't want to scare your little family now do we? The less they know the better for them.

Me: who are you what do you want?

Him: I am your worst nightmare I'm the boogie man you already know what I want and that is to watch you suffer. Now back to what I need you to do for me. I need you to stop harassing Miss Sondlo for that import and export company she owns I have plans for it.

Me: What kind of plans? I need that company I can't do what you asking me to do and you can't kill her I need her alive.

Him: 1. my plans are none of your business besides my plans will benefit her. 2. You don't have a choice in the matter; otherwise pretty little Sima loses her head. 3. I have no intentions of killing if that was the case why would I make plans that would benefit her. This is not a negotiation Mr Tom. You have one week to back off from that company. (he hangs up. DAMMIT ! who is this guy? FUCK!!)

## CHAPTER 36

FRIDAY

KHANYISILE

NOVELSGURU.COM

The week went by really quick. I spoke to Zwelibanzi's parents and they agreed to us visiting this weekend and now we are on our way there. His mother was so excited to here from me and apparently Zweilibanzi is going to be here too this is going to be a drag. On the other hand I am meeting Qhawe's parents this weekend as well and that is making me nervous. Qhawe is so excited he keeps telling me his parents are going to like me and the twins told me that the grandparents are crazy in love with each other he says they are just like me and Qhawe. I couldn't stop laughing and couldn't believe that these kids are comparing my relationship to the grandparents' relationship. Life is good with my new family. The kids didn't go to school today since we are all travelling together. I wanted us to take the first flight out of Durban to East London; I wanted to us be here early and get this over and done with today. Qhawe just dropped us off at Mr Tom's house and he's going to fetch us when we are done here. He's taking his kids to his parents. We haven't been here in a long time if feels strange. As we knock Mrs Tom's opens the door

Mrs Tom: Oh! My children look at you please come in. (she is excited we walk in she hugs us crying and all smiles she is so emotional understandably so.) How I have missed you. Look at my grandchildren they've grown so much.

Lonwabo and Ntando you are grown man now.

Lonwabo: Makhulu how are you?

Ntando: yes makhulu we are grown man

now how are you Makhulu Mrs Tom: I'm

fine my babies and how have you been?

Lonwabo: We are fine happy to see you again.

Ntando: We've missed you guys. (Lwanele is so quiet waiting for her moment)

Mrs Tom: I've missed you too. Lwanele baby come to grandma you are so big how old are you now?

Lwanele: I'm a big girl now grandma I'm 12. (at the corner of my eye I notice Zwelibanzi walking in but he doesn't come to us he stands by the door and leans against the wall.)

Mrs Tom: Sisipho baby how are you? (she really doesn't have to call me Sisipho anymore) Me: I'm fine mama I'm doing good.

Mrs Tom: I can see you

look beautiful. Me:

Thank you mama.

Lwanele: Grandma where is grandpa can we see him mom told us he is very sick.

Mrs Tom: yes baby grandpa is very sick. Before we go see him how about we have something to eat first I'm sure you are hungry come lets go. (in this house we have to use the dining table in the dining room and my kids are so used to sitting and eating in kitchen they were walking towards the kitchen when I stopped them.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: we have to go to the dining area guys.

Lonwabo: but ma you know we are

more comfortable in the kitchen Me:

What do I always say when we are not

home?

Them: we follow the rules of other people's home. (Mrs Tom looks at me and smiles)

Mrs Tom: It's ok sisi we can sit in the kitchen I know they love it and I still have their high chairs. (they just run to the kitchen)

Me: NO RUNNING IN THE HOUSE!

Lwanele: Mom that's not fair you and dad run around the house all the time. (I want to say something to her but I'm rendered speechless. Zwelibanzi looks at me like I owe him something as we walk into the kitchen Mrs Tom just smiled at me and she wants to know who Lwanele is talking about and she is going to ask when we sit down.)

Zwelibanzi: Molweni

The Kids: Banzi! (hayibo these kids since

when do they call him Banzi) Me: Hello to

you too

We sit on the high chairs in the kitchen and helper dishes up for us and we eat with the kids talking non-stop with

their grandmother. They are telling her about school and what they have been up to. Their grandmother is happy she can't contain it. Zwelibanzi keeps steeling glances at me. When we are done eating mama takes us to see her husband in his room. They moved from up downstairs to the room downstairs it's much easier for him. When we get inside the room he is on his feet walking towards the door using a walker.

Mr Tom: Molweni I was just coming to you (he quickly walks to the one sitter couch in his room and you can that has taken a lot out of him. His breathing is slightly heavy.)

Lwanele: grandpa (she walks to him and hugs him and I think she is crying. She has always grandpa's little princess.)

Mr Tom: Don't cry Princess grandpa is going to be ok.

(the boys go to them and hug them it's a group hug. This is so emotional. I decide to walk out just to give him time with his grandkids.

Mrs Tom: What's wrong (she asks as she follows me?)

Me: Nothing mama I'm just giving them space. (she just says ok and follows me as I walk upstairs to his study. I've

always loved being in his study it has the most amazing view I walk in stand by the window looking at the view she is following me.) I broke my kids relationship with you guys seeing them like that with their grandfather made me realise how much I have taken from them. I deprived them the love of their grandparents for four years and for what for a man who was stupid enough not to care about us. No matter what Zwelibanzi did to me I shouldn't have kept them away from you at least uTata would have had more time with them they would have had more time with him.

After



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

seeing the way they are with him right now I don't think they'll ever forgive me for keeping them away.

Mrs Tom: Khanyi your kids know that there's nothing to forgive. You did what you did because you were protecting them and you they understand that. Please don't blame yourself for anything.

Me: Mama can you please give me a moment alone. I just need to breathe a little. Mrs Tom: Ok baby. (she hugs me and leaves. Just then my rings)

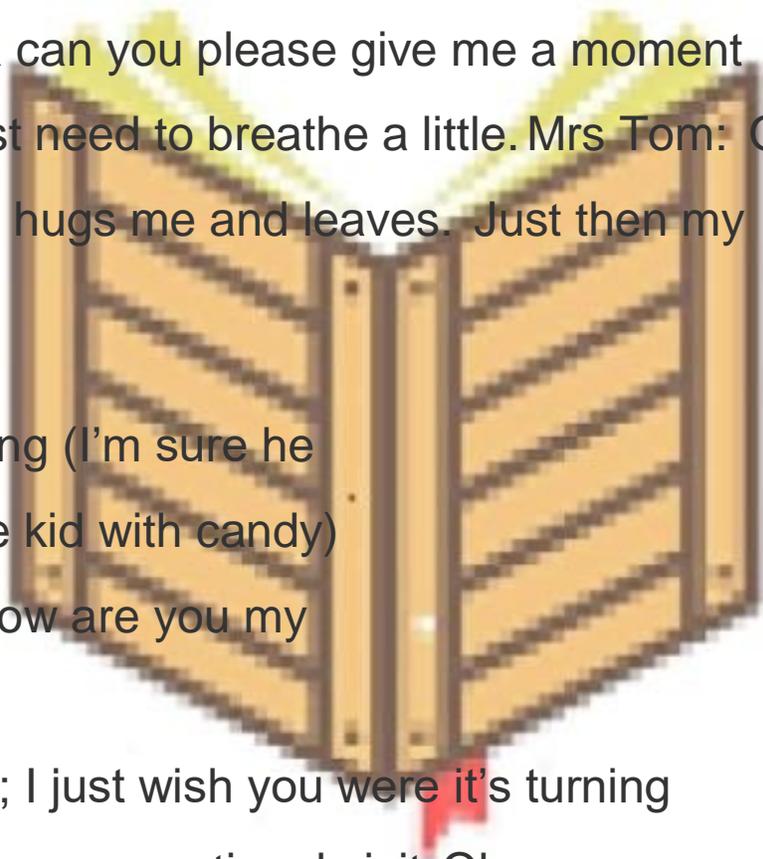
Me: My King (I'm sure he smiling like kid with candy)

Qhawe: How are you my Queen?

Me: I'm ok; I just wish you were it's turning out to be a very emotional visit. Qhawe: are you ok where are the kids?

Me: I'm ok my King. The kids are fine; they are bonding with their grandfather.

Qhawe: Ok my love I just wanted to check on you. Call me when that idiot starts with his nonsense I'll come fetch you. (I hear someone clearing their throat and it's



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zwelibanzi)

Me: I have to go love.

Qhawe: Ok my

Queen. I love you.

Me: and I love you

My King

Zwelibanzi: You never called me your King.

Me: Because you never presented yourself as one.

What do you want Zwelibanzi? Zwelibanzi: and he presents himself as your King?

Me: Yes he does Zwelibanzi

Sponsored

I'll come fetch you. (I hear someone clearing their throat and it's Zwelibanzi) Me: I have to go love.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: Ok my

Queen. I love you.

Me: and I love you

My King

Zwelibanzi: You never called me your King.

Me: Because you never presented yourself as one.

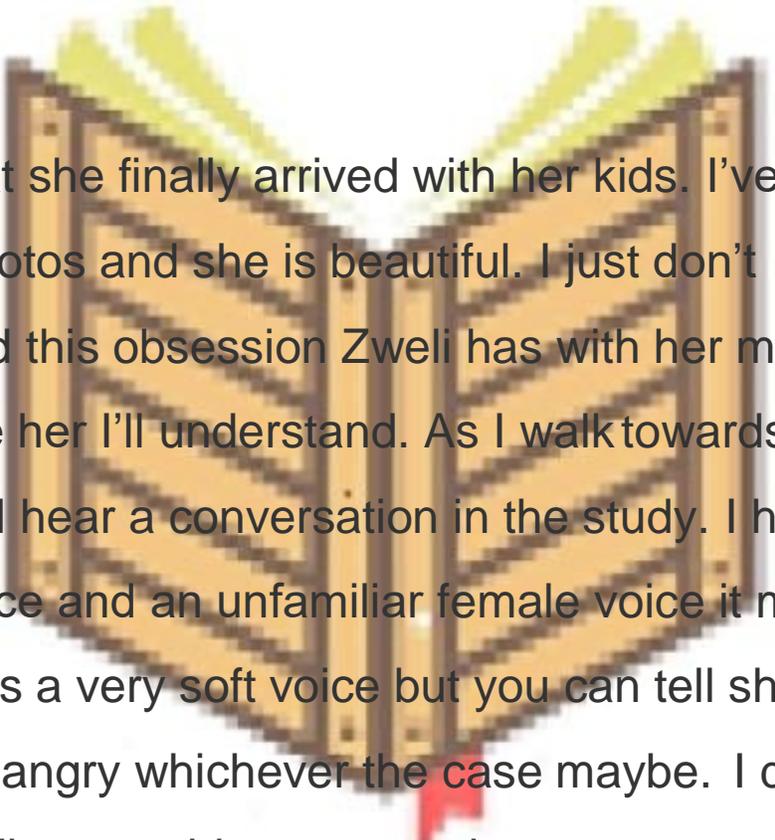
What do you want Zwelibanzi? Zwelibanzi: and he presents himself as your King?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Yes he does Zwelibanzi not just my King but a King in our home a King in our hearts. I am his Queen; they are his Princes and Princesses. We are royalty by our own making.

SIMA



I heard that she finally arrived with her kids. I've seen them in photos and she is beautiful. I just don't understand this obsession Zweli has with her maybe when I see her I'll understand. As I walk towards the stairs and I hear a conversation in the study. I hear Zweli's voice and an unfamiliar female voice it must be her she has a very soft voice but you can tell she is very irritated or angry whichever the case maybe. I decide to stand and listen to this conversation.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: We are royalty in our own making.

Zweli: Khanyi you don't have to rub it in my face you know.

Her: You asked and I gave you an answer. Honestly Zwelibanzi what do you want? (no one calls him by his full name)

Zweli: I want you and the kids I want you back in my life. I know I screwed up big up time and I am hoping that one day you'll forgive me and I could use your help with my visits with the kids they hate me.

Her: and whose fault is that? Definitely not mine or theirs. They saw it all Zwelibanzi they heard it all the silent cries the silent screams the bruises the emotional pain you put them through the horrible things you said to us and you stand here and have the balls to ask for my help to ask for forgiveness. You actually think that I'll come back to you and be your wife again really Zwelibanzi are you for real right now? Whatever you are smoking please pass it on so that I can try it. (what is she talking about Zweli would never hurt a woman like that. I decide to walk in)

Me: Hi

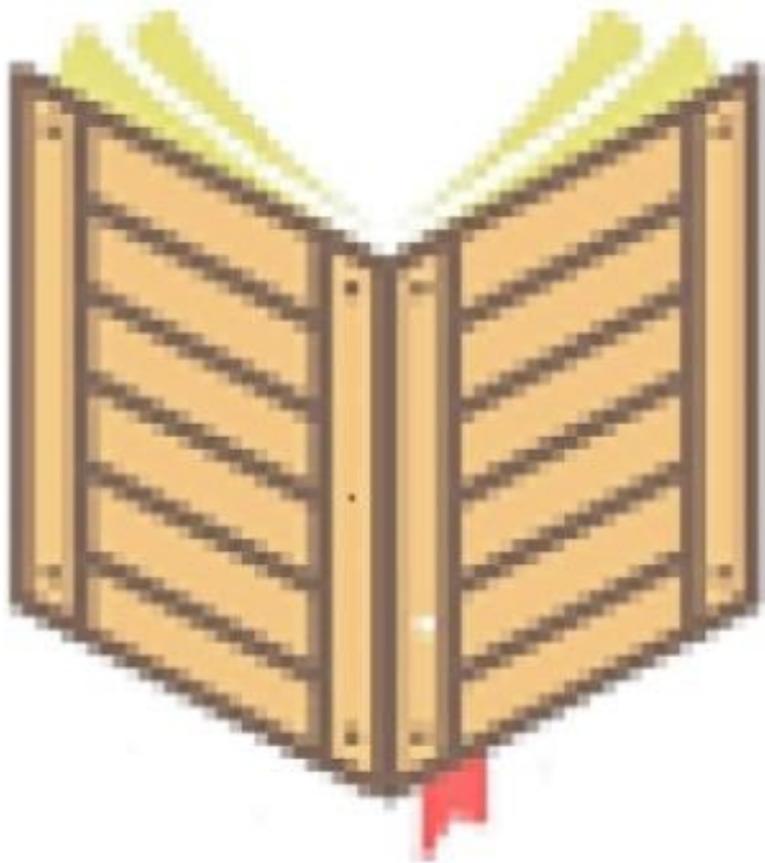
Zweli: Sima what are you doing here.

Me: I was looking for you and I heard your voice from here. Hi I'm Simamkele (I greet her holding my hand out for a handshake but she doesn't take it.)

Zweli: She doesn't really do handshakes

Me: oh I see.

Her: I'm Khanyi



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I've heard a lot about you it's nice to finally meet you sister wife (I see the shock in her face Oh No don't tell me she doesn't know she was supposed to have been told a long time ago)

Khanyi: I'm sorry did you just say sister wife (Zweli is just standing the looking like he is ready to kill me. I can't stop talking now.)

Me: yes I did. I'm Zweli's wife we've married for ten years now and we have twins they are two years old. (she looks like she can't breathe she really didn't know)

Khanyi: Zwelibanzi what the fuck is she talking about 10 years? Zweli: you just couldn't keep your mouth shut Sima

Me: I thought she knew

Khanyi: ZWELIBANZI! I ASKED YOU A QUESTION WHAT THE FUCK IS SHE TALKING ABOUT?

(her voice is firm she's not shouting at him shit! me and my big mouth.)

Zweli: Khanyi YOU WILL NOT SPEAK TO ME LIKE THAT AND IN THAT TONE OF VOICE (his voice is also firm but louder than hers)

Khanyi: I WILL SPEAK TO YOU ANY WAY I WANT AND WITH ANY TONE OF VOICE I

WANT. NOW ANSWER THE DAMN

QUESTION (Zweli's mom walks in) Mrs

Tom: What's going on here Khanyi what's wrong?

Me: Mama it's my fault (she's shocked she didn't notice me in the room I think she just figured out what happened.) I thought she knew mama I thought she knew.

Khanyi: IS SOMEONE GOING TO TELL ME WHAT IS GOIN ON HERE (This woman is really calm but her voice is telling a different strory.)

Mrs Tom: Zweli talk (he looks at his mom like "why me?")

Zweli I said talk you were supposed to tell her TELL HER.

Zweli: Khanyi it's true we are married 10 years now. you were my second wife. I met her a year after I met you Linamandla was a year old then and you were doing your third year at varsity. A year after I met her she had to go overseas to continue her studies after her studies she was going to work there for a few years. All the times that I was gone long periods of time I was with her I lied and said it was business trips. When Ntando was five she came back and we got married. I loved her I had fallen in love with her and I still love her and am still in love with her.

Khanyi: Why did you marry me?

Zweli: She couldn't have children she was told she could never have kids and I had already had kids with you. I married you because I love you and I wanted to have my kids close to me. If you remember we didn't live together and I didn't like that and I married you because it was the only way I could get my dad to support me financially. I needed money to expand my business and I had to marry you. My parents love you more than they love her she doesn't get along with my mom they



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

didn't want me to marry the chose you for me but I went ahead and married her against their will. They didn't force me to marry I wanted to because I love you and for the other benefits that came with marrying you.

They wanted to tell you from the beginning but I didn't want them to because I was afraid you would leave me.

Khanyi: I left you anyway. Excuse me I can't deal with this right now. Mama where are my babies? Mrs Tom: they are in the game room. Their grandfather is sleeping.

(Khanyi takes out her phone and makes a phone call.)

Khanyi: Please come fetch me this idiot has started with his nonsense. (that's what she says on the phone.) Please excuse me I have to go.

Mrs Tom: I'm sorry Sisipho we should have told you. (she just looks at her and walks out.)

CHAPTER 37

SATURDAY

NOVELSGURU.COM

QHAWE

Ok my Queen is very upset. She hasn't spoken about what happened yesterday and today we are having

breakfast with my parents. The kids also don't know what happened as they spend most of the time with their grandparents. Zwelibanzi is testing me. We are on our way to my parents' house and she's been very quiet since last night. I know she'll tell me when she is ready. I park the car and look at her.

Me: Are you ready for this? Khanyi:

Yes my King I'm ready.

Me: We can always do this some other time.

Khanyi: No baby I'm fine I promise. We'll talk after breakfast I promise

Me: ok then let's go. (I look at my three kids in the back sit) are you guys ready to meet your new grandparents.

Ntando: bring it on dad. (I just laugh. This one hangs out too much with his Uncle Lwazi. I knock on the door I look at my Queen and she looks so nervous I hold her hand and squeeze it just so she knows it's going to be fine.)

Ntando: don't worry mom I'm sure they don't bite (we all just laughed and the door opened while we were laughing.)

Bandile: I wouldn't be laughing if I were (he smiles at Khanyi) You're late.

Me: Just let us in. Where is everyone?

Bandile: in the dining room. (we walk in and head to the dining room and the girls get up from their sits and go straight to Khanyi and hug her after which they hug their siblings. My mom looks shocked and I think the kids haven't said anything to them. We greet them and take our sits.

Me: Mom dad this is the woman I've been telling you about My Queen Khanyisile Sondlo and these are our kids Lonwabo Ntando and Lwanele the other two kids you will meet later on.

Mom: You look beautiful and very short I was expecting to see a tall woman and you have beautiful kids.

Dad: finally we get to meet the woman that has captured my son's heart. Thank you for coming. I'm his dad Loyiso Mtimkhulu and this is my wife Siyanda Mtimkhulu.

Khanyi: it's nice to finally meet you the kids talk about you a lot. Mom: how is

your relationship with my grandkids?

Khanyi: it is the best it feels like they were meant to be mine.

Banele: but we are yours and there's nothing you can do

about it you can run from us but you can't hide.

Bandile: We'll find you. (the kids just laugh including Khanyi) Khanyi: as if I would want to run away.

Mom: it's good to see that you get along with them. Lisakhanya:

can you guys sleepover tonight?

Dad: I don't see a problem with that Qhawelomzi what do you say?

Me: (I look at Khanyi and she smile at me and I take that as yes) We don't have a problem tata. When we are done eating the kids do the dishes and drive off to Zwelibanzi's home. When we get there I park the car and the kids run to their grandmother who was waiting outside. She looks at the car I think she was expecting Khanyi to follow but she is still in the car. I turn and look at her) Khanyi: I'll go inside in a minute

Me: What's wrong baby? (I can see she is angry but she is keeping calm) **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: that idiot Zwelibanzi took me as a second wife.

He was married been married for 10 years nows he married me because he stood to benefit from it from his father he married me so that the kids can have his name.

He used me.

Me: just tell me everything that happened yesterday (and she tells me everything by the time she is finished I still can't believe Zwelibanzi could be so selfish.) are you sure you want to go back in there.

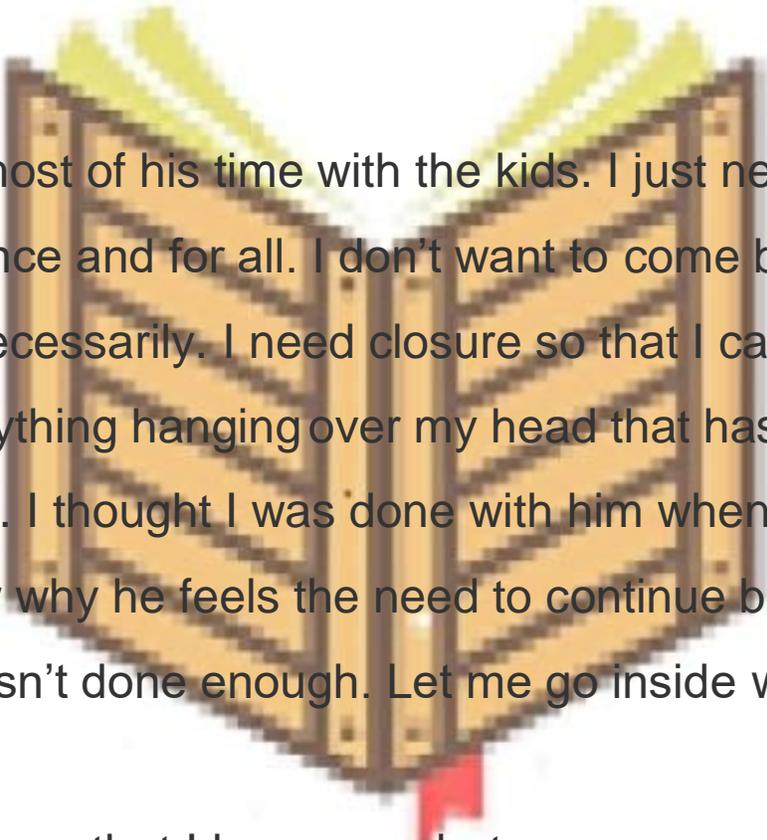
Khanyi: I'll be fine his father wanted to see me I didn't get to speak to him yesterday he spent most of his time with the kids. I just need to deal with this once and for all. I don't want to come back here



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

again unnecessarily. I need closure so that I can move on without anything hanging over my head that has to do with Zwelibanzi. I thought I was done with him when I left him. I don't know why he feels the need to continue breaking me

Sponsored



he spent most of his time with the kids. I just need to deal with this once and for all. I don't want to come back here again unnecessarily. I need closure so that I can move on without anything hanging over my head that has to do with Zwelibanzi. I thought I was done with him when I left him. I don't know why he feels the need to continue breaking me as if he hasn't done enough. Let me go inside we'll talk later.

Me: Just know that I love you whatever happens I'm here for you and I love you. (I kiss her and watch her as she walks into the house.)

MR TOM (ZWELI'S FATHER)

Mr Tom: Zweli you have hurt that girl too much. I told you to be good to her and she will be good to you she loved you she gave you her all and you betrayed her and I warned you that this would come back to bite you look what's happening now. You are married to a woman that says yes to everything you do and say. A woman that can't even tell you when you are wrong she can't even stand up to you she probably loves your money more than she loves you. On the other hand Khanyi made you a better man.

Zweli: dad please I don't need to hear this now. yes I screwed and I can't change that. I love Khanyi and I love my kids.

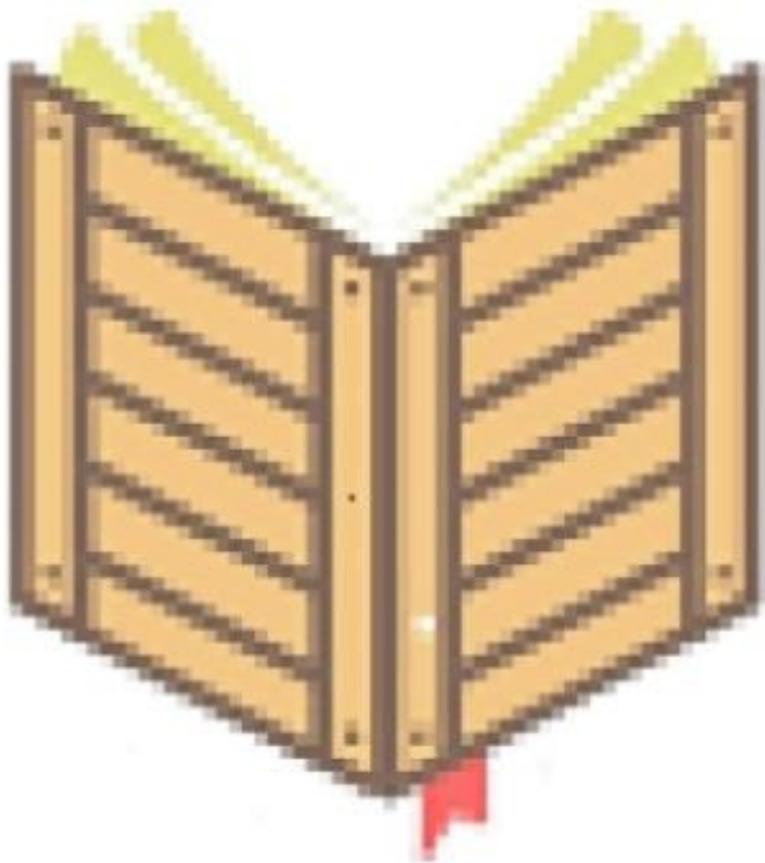
Me: No you don't. You love the benefits you get for having her in your life. (just then Khanyi walks in) My daughter how are you?

Khanyi: I'm ok tata how are you? (she looks at Zwelibanzi and there's so much hate in her eyes she has always been able to say a lot with her eyes.) Zwelibanzi

Me: my days are numbered Khanyi. Zweli please excuse

us I want to talk to her alone. (he gets up and leaves)

Khanyi: you could have told me tata.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I know my child but I trusted that fool to tell you himself when he said he wanted to tell you. I know what I am about say won't change anything. I'm sorry for what my son put you and the kids through I truly am. I wish you had told us what was happening.

Khanyi: it was not easy tata he had me watched all the time he didn't want me to tell anyone the only person who knew was Sizwe and when he tried to help he almost killed him.

Me: I hear you. Khanyi I don't have much time to live. I know that my son is a very greedy man he is also very selfish for what I am about to tell you I might be putting you and the kids in danger but I have to do it. I have worked very hard for my legacy to have Zwelibanzi destroy it just like that.

Everything me and his mother own will be left to your kids only one company will be left to the twins but you have to take care of it until they are 18. Everything that we leave to your kids you will have to manage as well. The twins also have a trust fund that I created for them part of that fund is for their education. Zwelibanzi can't have any of it because I know he will destroy it with his illegal

activities. I am only leaving him with R5 million. Khanyi: Tata you can't do that this is too much.

Me: I can and I have. Everything is done. Everyone else will find out when the will is read. Everything is already transferred into their names and you as the one who will manage everything. I don't trust the twin's mother she will spend it all on nothing. It is done Khanyi. All I need from you is to promise me that you will do everything in your power to protect them and protect yourself.

Khanyi: But tata I don't (I don't let her finish)

Me: promise me Khanyi promise me you won't let Zwelibanzi destroy my legacy your kids legacy. Khanyi: (she hesitates to answer) I promise tata.

Me: That's my girl. Come here (she comes closer and I give her a warm hug. Zweli lost a good woman.)

## CHAPTER 38

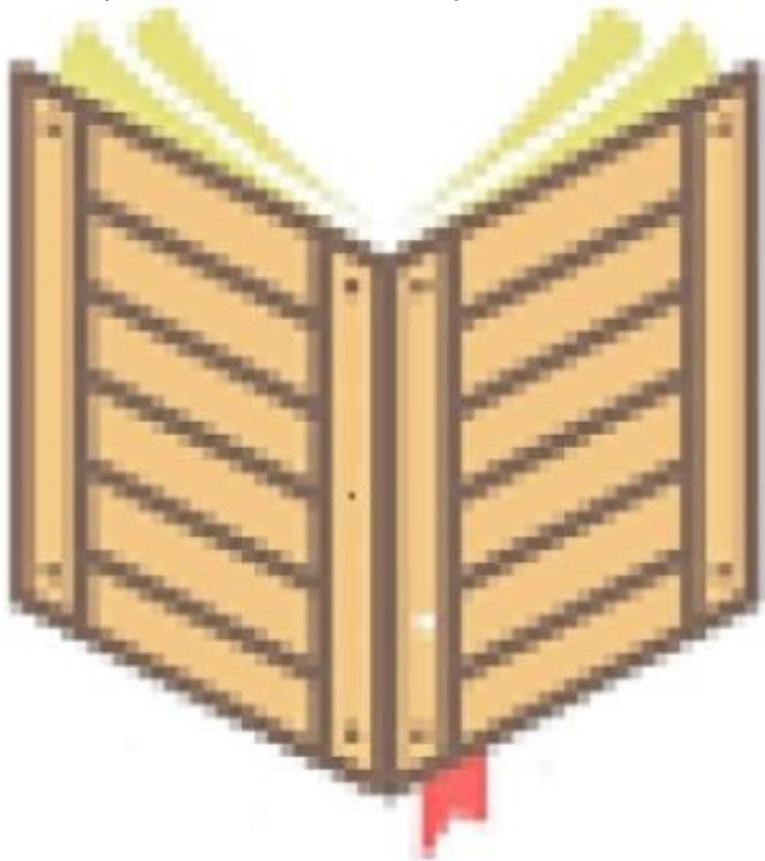
### SATURDAY

### EVENING

## KHANYISILE

We are at Qhawe's parents' house we are sleeping over as requested. We just had dinner and I'm sitting with Qhawe's mom outside by the garden. She has a beautiful garden.

Siyanda (Qhawe's Mom): Tell me Khanyisile what do you from my son are you after his money?



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Me: Excuse me I don't think I had you correctly ma

Siyanda: ARE –YOU – AFTER – HIS – MONEY? (She says it very slow with so much emphasis. This woman is insulting me.)

Me: No I'm not. I have my own money I don't need his.

Siyanda: Then what do you want from him most women were with him because of his money even his ex-wife.

Me: Ma the things that I'm going to say to you right now I am only going to say them once and once only because I hate repeating myself. 1. Never again compare me to any woman that Qhawelomzi has been with I'm not them they are not me and never will be. 2. Qhawe came after me not the other way around. 3. I love Qhawe very much it hasn't been easy for me but I love him and I love his kids probably more than I love him we are now a family a family that I have no intentions of walking away from. 4. I've been through a whole of shit in my life I've had to put up with a whole of shit and right now at this very moment I want you to know that I won't put up with any shit from you. (Just then I notice Qhawe's dad (Loyiso) standing and leaning against the wall by the door. I wonder how much of this did he hear he doesn't look very happy. He walks to us and he has this serious face on and he is looking at his wife very intensely.)

Loyiso: Siyanda leave this girl alone. You are not going to choose a girl for Qhawe. He loves her and he is happy for the very first time in a long time my son is happy and you will not

take that away from him and I hope you take note of the things this girl said to you.

Siyanda: I just wanted to know what she wants if she wanted his money.

Loyiso: if you had taken this time to find out more about her you would know that she is a self-made multi millionaire who doesn't need our son to support her financially.

Me: tata please excuse me I really don't have the energy for this conversation. Do you know where I could find Qhawe?

Loyiso: He is in his room he was also looking for you. The kids are in there tv room watching movies. You have wonderful kids Khanyi you've raised them well.

Me: Thank you tata. Goodnight to you both (I stand and walk away. He can deal with his wife I really don't have time for a woman's insecurities about his son. I find Qhawe in his bedroom

looking at his laptop he doesn't really look busy on it when I walk close to him he's looking at pictures of me and I've never seen these pictures before. He shuts his laptop before I could look at more pictures.)

Qhawe: You were not supposed to see these pictures. Me: I only saw three when did you take these pictures?

Qhawe: forget about the pictures ok My Queen. How are you?

Me: I'm ok babe just emotionally tired. Zwelibanzi's father has put our lives in danger. (he looks at me shocked)

Qhawe: how so?

Me: the will; he is leaving everything to his grandkids.

Everything has already been transferred into their names and I have to manage everything.

Qhawe: How do you know does Zwelibanzi know?

Me: No he doesn't know he'll find out at the reading of the will after his father dies I am the only one who knows. (I see a bit of confusion. I decided to start over and tell him about everything that Mr Tom said.) He told me because he wants me to be able to protect the kids and myself from Zwelibanzi. I don't want this Qhawe I don't want anything from him this is just too much for us. I don't want to accept it but he said that there's nothing I can do. Everything is set. Qhawe I'm scared I don't know why his father is doing this it's not fair. I don't know if I have the strength for this.

Qhawe: All I can think of it's probably his way of showing you that he does love his grandkids and he wants them taken care of. Look it's not fair. I don't know if I have the strength for this.

Qhawe: All I can think of it's probably his way of showing you that he does love his grandkids and he wants them taken care of. Look don't worry too much. You have six men who love and care for you and they will do anything to protect you and all

your kids . you will be safe.

Zwelibanzi will have to get through us be he gets to you.

Me: Thank you I appreciate that. I'm glad my giants will be protecting us.

Qhawe: Khanyi who are you calling giants. (before I answer I get off the bed and stand next to the bed on my side and he kneels on the bed looking at me.) who are you calling giants and don't even think about running out of this room you won't make it to the door. ( I take a few steps trying to get closer to the bathroom.)

Me: you guys are giants nje you are so tall you are like (I don't finish what I wanted to say he jumps over to my side and I start running to the bathroom but I don't make it. He grabs me by my waist and puts me on the bed. He is on top of tickling me telling to apologise otherwise he won't stop. I give up and apologise which earns me a kiss. It gets heated I feel myself getting wet. He takes my clothes off and continues to kiss I take his t-shirt off and we continue kissing just then the door opens and it's his mother. Fuck this woman what does she want? is she cock blocking now. DAMMIT!!!

NOVELSGURU.COM

ZWELIBANZI

Me: You had to mention to her that are married?

Sima: Zweli I thought she knew. Why didn't you tell her like you were supposed to years ago? You are not going to blame me for this.

Me: it was not your responsibility to tell her.

Sima: baby I thought she knew.

Me: Sima I have told you before to stay out of my business that concerns Khanyi

Sima: I hear you but what did she mean when she said you put her through a lot she suffered a lot of pain because of you?

Zweli did you hurt her?

Me: That's none of your business Sima.

Sima: I am your wife it is my business Zweli. (I turn and give her the that says "don't fuck with me". She wants to say more but she keeps quiet. She stands up and leaves the room.) I'm going to check on the twins.

Me: Fine. (Sima will never understand the less she knows the better. I have bigger problems to worry about than worrying about how Sima feels. I need to find a way to get to Khanyi without this mysterious guy knowing it seems like he is watching every step I make. How did he even manage to have document with my name on for the shipment from Nigeria. The police are on my tail but they haven't attempted to arrest me

what are they waiting for maybe they are still investigating.

Now that Khanyi knows the truth about Sima she'll never want to talk to me again I can't even get Sizwe to help me he doesn't want to be involved in anything that hurts

Khanyi. My phone rings:

Me: yes

Him: Boss! we lost him.

Me: how can you lose him. He is always alone he doesn't have bodyguards following him around. So how the fuck did you lose him?

Him: he is protected Boss. His guys keep their distance and they blend in with the crowd we tried following him in his car but he never goes to his house the place where he normally goes to we can't touch him boss.

Me: I don't care how you do it I need you to get him and fast. We are running out of time and a lot is riding on this plan succeeding. Do you hear me?

Him: yes Boss.

Me: Good get it done. (I hang up. Shit everything is just a mess.

I really need Sizwe on this I need to find a way to get him on board and the only way to that is to blackmail him but with what. Sizwe basically has nothing to lose. He lost his little a long time ago and now now it's

just him no woman in his life no child. Wait a minute Sizwe sees Khanyi as his little sister and he loves my kids I guess not all is lost. Khanyi will sign over that company to me sooner than she thought.

My phone rings again and it's an unknown number

Him: I thought I made it clear to you that you need to leave Miss Sondlo's company alone but you don't listen Mr Tom.

Me: I told I can't lose that company I need that company.

Him: You are really testing me now. Do you think that I won't hurt your family. I want you to look outside the window right now. ( I walk to the window and I don't believe what I see.) Do you see how easy it is to get to them. The man talking to your pretty little girlfriend next time he won't be so friendly he will kill her right in front of you and your twins. Don't mess with me Zwelibanzi Tom. Live that company alone and in return you get to keep your family.

## CHAPTER 39

SUNDAY

NOVELSGURU.COM

QHAWELOMZI

I cannot believe my mom cock blocked me last night.

Khanyi was also very frustrated. I know my Baby Girl

needed me to relieve her stress and I needed her. She needed me inside and I needed to be inside her but then my mother happened. This woman really knows how to push all the wrong buttons with me.

Me: Mama what are you trying to achieve by all of this? What you wanted me to do last night is something dad could have done or one of the twins for that matter but you felt the need to stop my fun last night.

Mom: Qhawe I don't like her. You need someone who is always going to be home taking care of you and the kids. This girl won't have time for you I bet she doesn't even have time for these poor kids. You need someone like Cindy.

Me: I can't believe you just said that. Mama you introduced me to Anelisa look how that turned out she did nothing but spend my money she didn't even take care of the kids and now you want me to date Cindy who will probably do the same things Anelisa was doing. Don't you get tired of choosing these women and for me and they end up hurting me? You like seeing me unhappy right mama?

Mom: Sindy is not like Anelisa Qhawe she is a respectful girl humble and down to earth. (she said the same thing about Anelisa I wonder what's different now?)

Me: Mama I'm happy Khanyi makes me and my kids happy her kids make me and my kids happy. She has time for all of us. There's nothing that she doesn't do for us even though she is working and by working I mean running her own company. There's something that you seem to forget. I am not my father he wanted a housewife and you wanted to be one. Mama being with Khanyi is a challenge she challenges me every day she keeps me on my toes. She's helping me grow my business to heights I never imagined. My company is going to be internationally known because of her and most importantly she loves my kids. She spends time with them which is more than I could say for your precious Anelisa. My love her she is a mother to them. Did you see how happy they were to see her when she arrived here yesterday? (just then my dad walks in.)

Dad: and I'm glad she is making you happy son.

Siyanda I told you to stop this or else you are going to lose your son. Didn't we have this conversation last

night do you want me to remind you what happens when you get this stubborn?

Mom: My son wouldn't stop talking to me just because of some girl.

Me: That's where you are wrong mama. For Khanyi I would and she is not just some girl. She is the woman I love the woman I want to spend the rest of my life the woman I want to grow old with the woman I want to raise my kids with. If you don't stop with this Sindy nonsense mama I swear I will walk away from you and not look back.

Mom: you can't do that Qhawe I'm your mother. Loyiso speak to him

Dad: Speak to him and say what? The person I'm speaking to now is you. Stop this nonsense Siyanda or else...(my dad was very firm and very serious and I could see a bit of fear in my mom's face. I know that my dad does beat mom I just wonder what he does to punish her) Qhawe is old enough to choose a woman for himself.

Look at how happy these kids are all of them together and you want to destroy all of that trust me when I tell you this you will die before I let you destroy my children's happiness because of your own selfish reasons. (Khanyi

walks into the study)

Khanyi: Oh sorry I didn't realise I thought you were alone.

Me: it's fine my love.

Khanyi: I just wanted to let you know that we are ready to go and I need the car keys the boys are going to put the bags in the car so long.

Me: come here. (my dad is watching us very closely.

Khanyi walks to me and stands next to me with my arm wrapped around her waist as I take out my car keys hand them to her.) Do you need my help?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: No my King the boys are helping out so we are fine. You can finish up here. (she stands to walk away but I pull her close hold her face tell her I love her while looking into her eyes kiss her after which she leaves.)

Dad: Most independent woman don't know how to submit to a man but her she submits to you. Me: that's because she trusts me. Besides how do you know that she does?

Dad: This moment what just happened said a lot about you guys and about her behaviour toward you and I can see that she trusts you But you still have a long way to go with her I can tell. You need be patient with her. I can tell that she's been through a lot in life. You two are good for each other.

Mom: mxm (mom says before walking out)

Me: thanks dad. I really love her I can tell. You need be patient with her. I can tell that she's been through a lot in life. You two are good for each other.

Mom: mxm (mom says before walking out)

Me: thanks dad. I really love her I would die if I had to lose her. Let me go check on how far they are. (I stand and walk out of the study leaving him there. When I get to

my room Khanyi was just finishing packing our last bag the rest are in the car) Baby are we going to past Zwelibanzi's house? Khanyi: No babe. The kids already said their goodbyes yesterday. We can just go straight to the airport and now I'm done with this we can go. The kids are done also. All their bags are in the car. Me: I have a surprise for you when we get home.

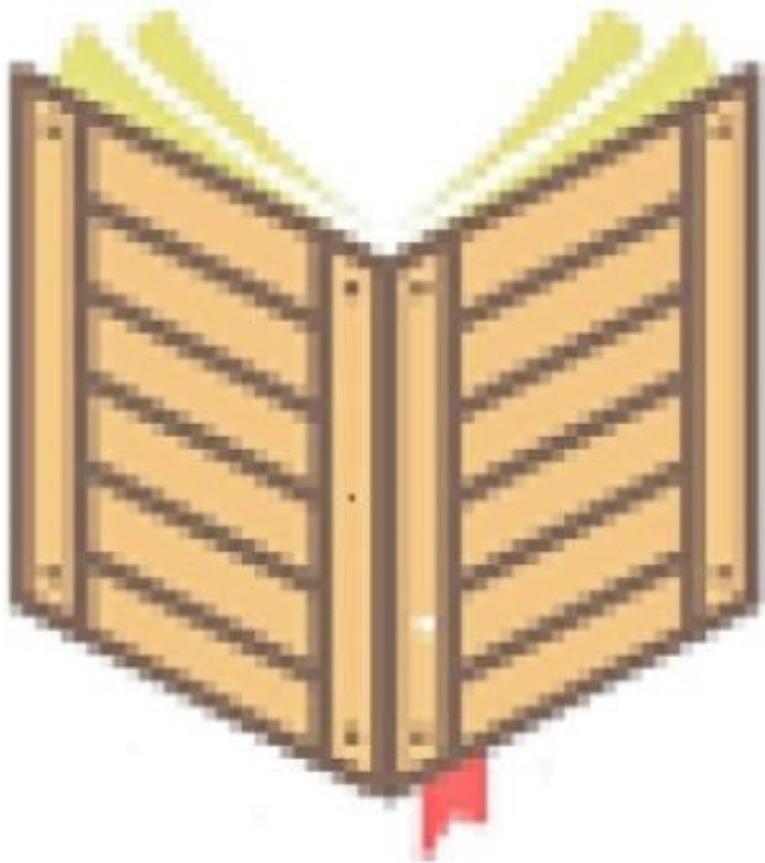
Khanyi: Que you know I hate surprises what is it?

Me: it won't be a surprise if I tell you. (I sit on the bed come here babe ( she walks over to me and I make straddle me and hold her close to my chest and whisper in her ear) "but before I give you the surprise first thing I want to do when we get home is to be get myself deep inside you. Do you want me inside you Baby Girl? (she whispers a "yes" with her lips against my neck and that alone does things to me. This woman drives me crazy the little things that she does the ways she says my name especially when she calls me "Que")

"You really should keep the door closed when you are alone in your room so that we can knock you can't keep your hands off each other." (and that was my son Lonwabo.)

Lonwabo: Please stop fooling around we are going to be late so we need to go. Honestly guys do we always have to catch you in these compromising positions maybe you should learn to keep away from each other. (he laughs and he walks out.)

Me: if it's not these kids it's my mother. Will we ever have peace?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ANELISA

Me: how are you?

Sizwe: I'm fine and how are you and how's my baby?

Me: We are fine thanks to you I'm well taken care off. (we were sitting in the doctor's office that's here in the prison it's the day of the check-up)

Sizwe: I hope you understand that this is only until the baby is born after that you are on your own here.

Me: I know you made it clear.

(the doctor walks in.) Doctor:  
how are you feeling Anelisa?

Me: I'm ok. Just wish the morning sickness would just stop.

Doctor: it will stop don't worry just hang in there. Lie on your back please. (I do as the doctor says and he performs the ultra sound scan it was amazing how I could hear my son's heartbeat. (we don't know the gender yet.

Sizwe wants to be surprised but he is hoping for a girl.)

Sizwe: is that the hearbeat doc. O my god I just can't get over it. (I understand his excitement and it his first child.

The doctor does everything he needs to do when we are done Sizwe kisses my forehead) thank you for this.

Me: it's not like I have a choice I can't even enjoy it.

Sizwe: Doc can you give us a minute (the doctor nods and walks out.) Have you told them about the baby?

Me: not yet

Sizwe: what are you waiting for Anelisa. They are the only people I trust to help me raise this baby you need to tell them soon. As for you not having a choice in this you are wrong my dear. I gave you a choice when I started fucking you. You could have said no why didn't you say no Anelisa?

Me: I wanted it it felt good having you inside me even though you didn't let me come I still wanted it. At least that torture I could deal with.

Sizwe: don't ever say you didn't have choice then. I didn't rape you honestly I didn't think you would be pregnant. I'm happy you are now I have a little person to call my own.

Me: why are you being so good to me? I thought the baby would be staying with you.

Sizwe: Hayibo Anelisa why wouldn't I be you carrying my precious cargo and I'm showing what it have been like had you given us a chance and not go after your ex which ended you and yes the baby will be staying with me I'll be raising my baby like any single parent I am going to need

help and they are the only ones that can help me and help me keep my baby safe. I have to go



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

now. Take care of my baby will you. (he kisses my forehead and kisses my stomach) Daddy loves you. Be good in there. I can't wait to meet you. (with that he walks out and leaves.)

SIZWE

As I live the prison I  
get a phone call. Me:

what's wrong?

Him: they are following the kid but he is safe we managed to lose them.

Me: We need to be careful and be aware all the time. Shit is about to hit the fan.

Him: yeah we do. They already know his protected at all times. At some point we have to get the police involved we can't always keep him hidden.

Me: Anything is possible. We have to get ready for phase two of this plan. He really won't know what hit him. Are you ready for that? Has he told his mother about what's going on?

Him: yeah man I am. I told him not to tell his mother yet.

The sooner we end this the better. That baby needs to arrive with all this done so that you can focus on him/her.

How is the mother?

Me: she is fine. I'm sure if I didn't threaten to kill her kids she would have done something stupid like killing herself or having an abortion. She says it's worst kind of pain.

Him: worse than the things you did to her when you held her captive you wouldn't kill her kids would you?

Me: that's what she says man. I would never kill those kids. Those kids are Khanyi's kids now I would never hurt like that even if they were not I don't kill children but she doesn't need to know that. Him: I hear you. You really care about Khanyi don't you?

Me: I do a lot. She's my little sister. I love her too much.

Him: she's one lucky woman. I just wanted to

update I have to go we'll talk later. Me: sure man

ONE

WEEK

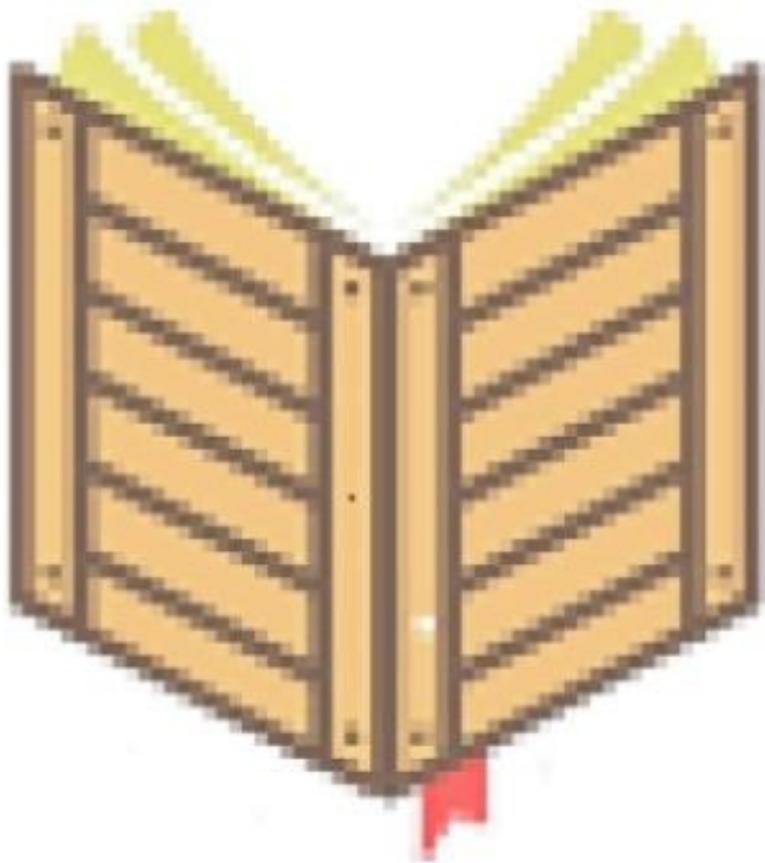
LATER

MONDAY

ZWELIBANZI

NOVELSGURU.COM

The house phone rings who could it  
be so early in the morning Me:  
Someone had better be dying



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: is that how you answer your phone Banzi (shit it's my mother she never calls this early.) Me: Sorry mama

Mom: your dad is in hospital and it's not looking good you get over here now. Me: I'll be there in an hour mom.

Mom: good see you when you get here. (she hangs up.) {mom must really be stressed and this must be really difficult for her. She asked me to stay for another week after Khanyi left I could see she needed me to be here and the past week has been very difficult for all of us. I get out of bed shower get dressed and before I leave I wake Sima up.) Sima: it's still early Zweli

Me: you sleep too much for someone who has toddlers.

Sima: that's why we have the help.

Me: Maybe I should fire them then you can start taking care of me and the twins. (that makes her jump up and looks at me like I've said the most terrible thing) I'm on my way to the hospital dad is getting worse.

Sima: wait for me I'll come with you.

Me: it's fine you don't have to you can come later besides I can't wait for you for two hours while you're getting ready. I have to go. I'll see you later. (I say and walk out. When I get to the hospital mom is sitting on the small couch in dad's room looking much drained. She looks like she's been crying.) Mom are you ok?

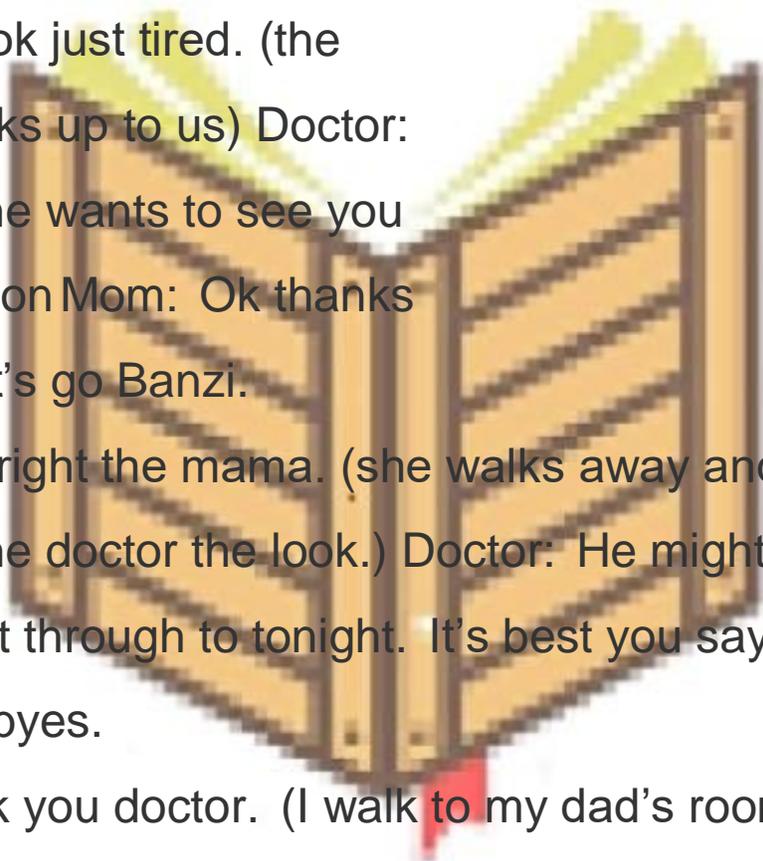
Mom: I'm ok just tired. (the doctor walks up to us) Doctor:

Mrs Tom he wants to see you and your son Mom: Ok thanks doctor. Let's go Banzi.

Me: I'll be right the mama. (she walks away and I just give the doctor the look.) Doctor: He might not make it through to tonight. It's best you say your goodbyes.

Me: Thank you doctor. (I walk to my dad's room and when I get there he was talking to my mom and I decide not interrupt them I just stand by the door. He is having difficulty speaking.)

Dad: I love you my darling but you have to let me go I need to rest from all this pain. It hurts too much my dear and I can't handle it anymore. I'm not leaving you I'll

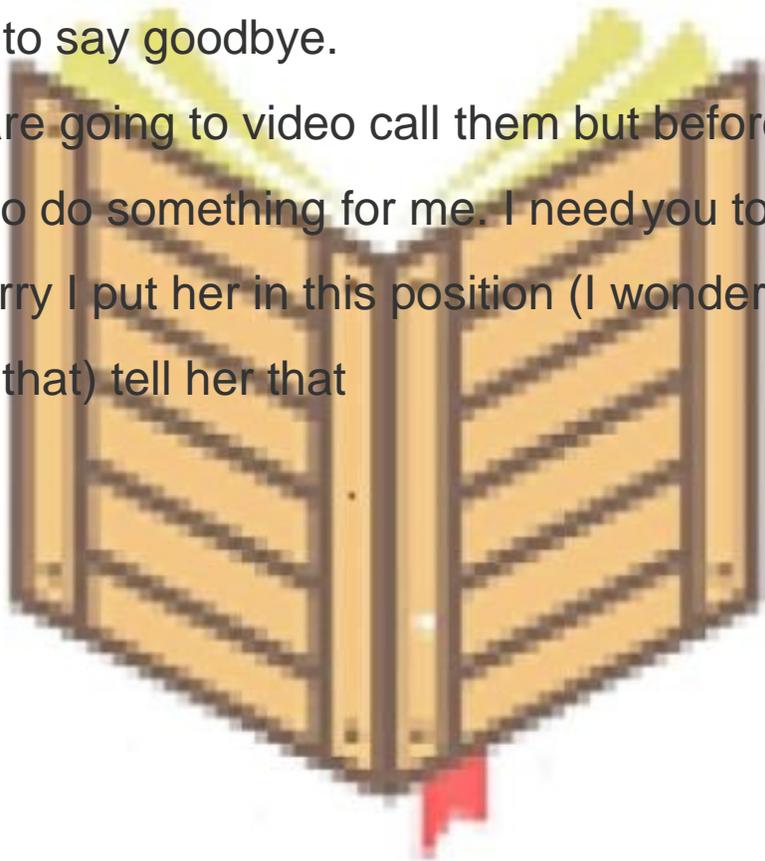


NOVELSGURU.COM

forever live in your heart. Dry your eyes and give me that beautiful smile. (mom does as instructed) that's my girl. You have always been beautiful even with age. (she laughs at that.)

Mom: And you've always been a charmer. I love you too. I am going to miss you so much. I wish our grandkids were here to say goodbye.

Dad: We are going to video call them but before we do I need you to do something for me. I need you to tell Khanyi that I'm sorry I put her in this position (I wonder what position is that) tell her that



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

she will always be my daughter the daughter I never had  
promise me that you will reassure her of our love for her  
even after everything that happened with our son.

Apologise to her for us for not Telling her the truth sooner.

We should have known better.

Mom: yes we should have known better. I promise I'll talk  
to her.

Dad: Thank you my love. Zweli how long are you going to  
stand there listening to a private conversation. (how did he  
know I was standing there I was quiet.) I knew you were  
there the minute you walked in.

Me: Dad how are you feeling?

Dad: I need you take care of  
your mother when I'm gone. Me:  
I will dad I promise.

Dad: video call my grandkids for me please. (my takes out  
her tablet from her bag and makes the call.)

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

**KHANYISILE**

Today I'm working at QM Architecture. I'm working on the  
advertising campaign that we were supposed to start  
before I got shot two months ago. Working so close to

Qhawe today is really not a good thing. He is wearing my favourite suit and I have been horny for him since we left the house and today he decides to drive the Aston Martin Vantage and he knows what that car does to me I swear he is doing all this on purpose but then again I can't get enough of him. My tablet rings and I only use that for video calls who would video call me during office hours. When I look at the caller id it's Zwelibanzi's mom.

Me: Hello ma

Her: hello Khanyi

how are you? Me:

I'm ok mama how

are you?

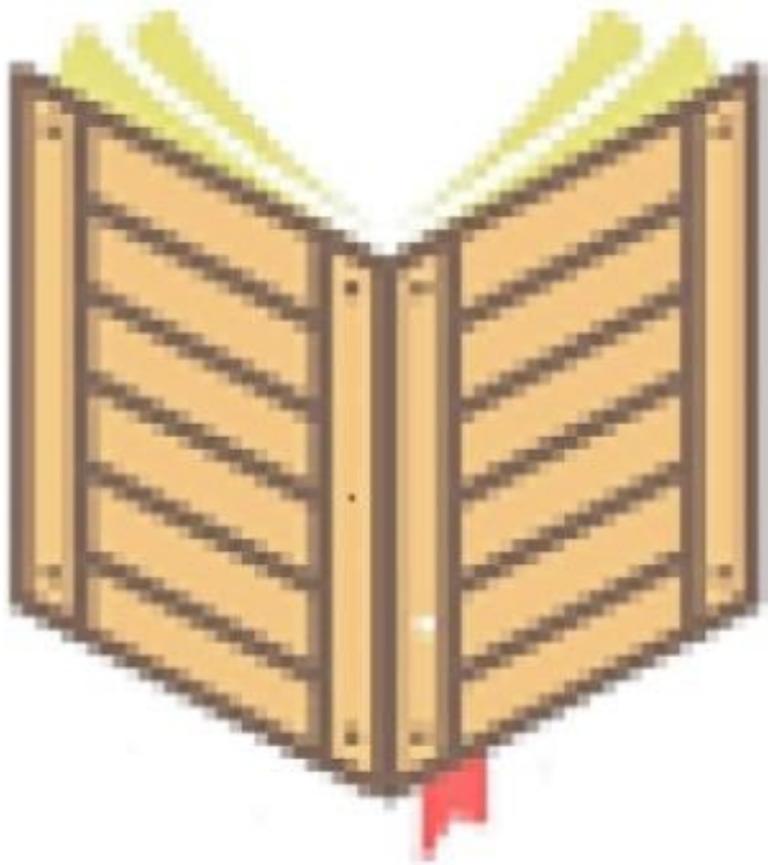
Her: I'm hanging in there. I just wanted to know if it was possible to speak to the kids their grandfather wants to speak to them.

Me: is he ok mama?

Her: it's not looking Sisipho. (she'll probably never stop calling me Sisipho even though I'm no longer married to her son.)

Me: Mama it's Monday today and the kids are at school. I can video call when I fetch them from school will that be

ok?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mr Tom: That will be fine my child. (mama has turned the phone to face him so that I can see him. Zwelibanzi is also there)

Me: how are you feeling old man

Mr Tom: Who are you calling old? I still have enough energy to outrun you. (he tries to laugh but he is in pain.)

Me: I'll let you win just like all these other times you thought you won. (I give him a warm smile.) Mr Tom: I missed you so much. You have always been able to make my heart smile. You are the daughter I never had I will always love you don't ever forget that.

Me: and I love you tata. Let me get back to work and I'll call when I'm with the kids.

Mr Tom: Ok sisi. We'll talk later then. (I hang up. Now I'm not in the mood for work the man is dying and I'm sure he wants to say goodbye to his grand kids. I tell John to continue working on the ads with the team and I pack up my things and go to Qhawe's office and lucky for me he is alone and the door is open he is concentrating on whatever it is that he is doing and I'm just leaning against the door post and watching him and I steal a few pictures)

Qhawe: Staring is rude and you might want to take a picture

Sponsored

it lasts longer plus you really shouldn't drool over me I am all yours.

Me: how did you know it was me and the picture has been taken in fact pictures have been taken. Qhawe:

Your perfume gave you away. (he walks over to me looking me straight in the eyes when he gets to me he holds my waist and pulls me to him and with his other hand he takes my bags and puts them on the floor and closes the door. He lifts and puts me against the door. Thank god I'm wearing pants. He looks at me straight into my eyes and right now he knows something is wrong. He kisses me so passionately and moves to my neck and then back to my lips and we stop since it was getting out of control) What's wrong my Queen?

Me: How do you know when something is wrong because you always know.

Qhawe: Your eyes are the windows to how you feel your eyes and your actions always speak louder.

Me: Mr Tom is dying (he looks like I've gone mad.)

Qhawe: Since when do you call that dooshbag Mr Tom?

(I couldn't help myself I just had to laugh.) Me: Oh Que!  
Not him I meant his father. (I just continue laughing)  
Qhawe: oh ok.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: he wants to talk to the kids after school via a video call. I think he is saying his goodbyes. My kids are going to be so hurt Qhawe they lost four years with him because of me.

Qhawe: Hey don't do that to yourself don't blame yourself you made a choice that was right for you and the kids. Do you know what's great? Their grandparents understand they don't blame you so please don't blame yourself and the kids understand too. Come on let's go home I'm sure the kids are home by now. (he kisses me and holds me tight to his chest before he puts me down. We gather our things and leave. When we get to the reception area Qhawe tells the receptionist to cancel his appointments and reschedule them for tomorrow. I need to sort this girl out. Every time I come here she has an attitude towards me. We leave the ride is silent mostly because I am absolutely not looking forward to this video call. When we get home the kids are home and they are all in the kitchen including Qhawe's kids. I tell the kids their grandfather wants to speak with them. I make the call and mama answers. )

Me: we are home mama where is tata

Mrs Tom: he is right here. (she  
give him the phone ) Mr Tom:

My grandchildren how are you

Ntando: Hello grandpa

Lwanele: How are you feeling today?

Mr Tom: I'm ok my Princess. Are you guys going  
to introduce me to your friends? Lonwabo: they

are not our friends. They are our siblings they  
Bhut' Qhawe's kids.

Mr Tom: Oh I see. It's good that you guys get along  
because you will need each. I need you to listen to me. I  
want you to promise me that you will never forget that I  
love you and your mother is going to need you now more  
than ever. I am not going to be around for much longer  
now the pain it too much. I also want you to promise me  
that you will not blame your mother for the four years we  
missed. She did exactly what I would have done to protect  
you had I known what was going on I would have  
sacrificed not seeing you just to make sure that you are  
safe and happy. (he pauses and takes a deep breath and  
the little Princess is a crying mess. Qhawe's girls decided  
to leave the kitchen and Khaya just walked in.)

Khaya: What's going on?

Me: shhhh

Mr Tom: is that Khaya? Can he join us where is Princess Lina? (Khaya joins in on the video call and Lwanele moves to Qhawe who tries to get her to stop crying. Ntando is also almost in tears. This hurts I don't like seeing my kids like this.)

Me: Lina is at school in Cape town.

Mr Tom: I see. Khaya you're a man now. you've grown so much.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khaya: Grandpa Tom you look good as always (he is just trying to lighten things up)

Mr Tom: take care of them Khaya. Know that I love you had I known what was going I would have done anything for you. I am so sorry for everything that you guys had to go through. Khanyi where is this man in your life the man my grandkids call dad?

Me: He is right here tata.

Mr Tom: I want to see him ( Qhawe moves closer to us and sits where he can be seen.) I know my babies love you they have welcomed you in their lives. Don't hurt them like their father did. I need you to protect them with your life. In as much as Khanyi is no longer married to my son but that doesn't change the fact that she will always be my daughter she will always be my princess. Love them and protect them. Don't ever let Zwelibanzi hurt them again. Protect my babies do you hear me son? (he coughs a bit and takes another deep breath.)

Qhawe: I hear you Mr Tom and I promise I will protect them no matter.

Mr Tom: Kids your grandpa loves you Khaya tell Lina I love her and she must stay the beautiful princess that she is and she must stay from boys. Lwanele don't cry so

much my princess Grandpa is not going to be pain anymore. It's not going to for hurt much longer now. (my kids just cried even Khaya was also crying I can't cry I have to be strong for them) You should cry Khanyi don't hold back your tear he is strong enough for all of you (he says pointing to Qhawe.) You don't always have to be strong my children it's ok to cry from time to time. (he coughs again and takes another deep breath)

Lonwabo: we would never blame mom for keeping us away we understand why she did. I am sorry that none of us never told you what was going on. We know you love us and you would have protected us. We love you and ..... (he doesn't finish tears just fall and he walks to Qhawe

who just open his arms for him mind you he still has the princess in his arms too.)

Ntando: (he also has tear falling) thank you for loving us grandpa. We are going to miss you even more now that we know we will never see you again. (he also goes to Qhawe and leans on his shoulder. Hayibo what did Qhawe feed my kids)

Khaya: Rest easy old man and thank you for the love. I'll

always appreciate how you never treated us like outsiders.

(he stands walks out of the kitchen also crying.)

Lwanele: Bye Grandpa I love you always. (she moves close to the screen and kisses her grandpa on the screen And walks back to Qhawe.)

Mr Tom: I have to go now. I love you all. Qhawe take care of my babies please. Khanyi remember what I said to you. Don't let him win no matter what. I built that legacy for you and all my grandkids. I love you always.

Me: I love you too tata.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

## CHAPTER 41

TUESDAY

ZWELIBANZI

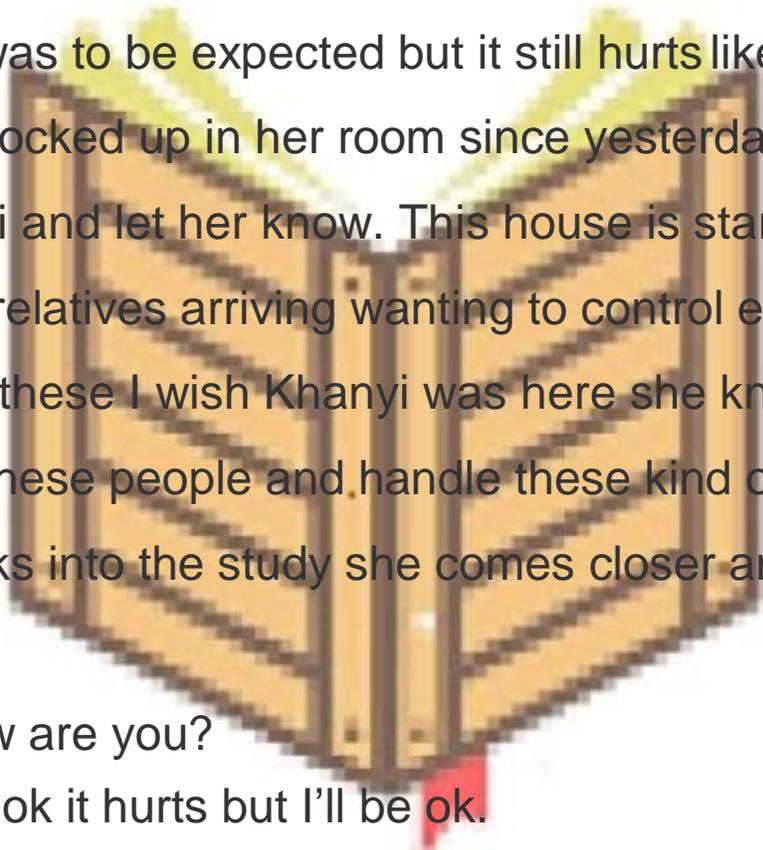
My dad died yesterday and I must say it hurts a lot even though it was to be expected but it still hurts like hell. Mom has been locked up in her room since yesterday. I need to call Khanyi and let her know. This house is start to get busy with relatives arriving wanting to control everything. Times like these I wish Khanyi was here she knew how to deal with these people and handle these kind of situations. (Sima walks into the study she comes closer and hugs me.)

Sima: How are you?

Me: I'll be ok it hurts but I'll be ok.

Sima: just give it time. When is Khanyi coming with the kids?

Me: I haven't told her yet I need to call her. She'll probably be here on the weekend for the funeral. Sima: why can't she come earlier I am going to need help with your family Zweli. (My mom walked in she looks like a



NOVELSGURU.COM

zombie I don't think she slept last night)

Mom: What help are you going to need Sima. It's not like you are going to be doing everything yourself the people that are here will be helping with everything. You seem to forget that you are the one married to Banzi not Khanyi. She doesn't need to be here but you do and I don't understand why you are dressed like that. You need to go change now. long dresses or skirts and a doek on your head and you need a scarf around your waist.

Sima: But mama.....

Me: Are you really trying to argue with my mother about how you should dress she is being lenient on you and you still want to argue. You know what you can wear your Makoti outfit the whole outfit and a black doek. Mom was being nice to you because she didn't want her daughters in law to feel oppressed.

Sima: But Zweli.... (I don't let her finish)

Me: Go now and change and look respectable around your in laws. (she sees how serious I am and walks out.)

Mom: You didn't have to do that.

Me: I did mama. Sima is too comfortable and she turns to forget that she is a wife here. How are you feeling?

Mom: your aunts are busy wanting me to sit on mattress and I told them I'm not doing that. Your father never wanted me to do that even yesterday he reminded me that I shouldn't and he also said that I shouldn't mourn him by wearing black clothes every day.

Me: I know mama he told me and he told his brothers too. Don't worry they are going to sort out their wives.

Mom: I came to ask you if you have called Khanyi? Me:

Not yet. I'll call her just now.

Mom: I'll be in my room. (I give her a warm hug and kiss her forehead and she leaves me in the study. I take out my phone and call Khanyi)

Her:

Zwelibanz

i Me:

Hello

Khanyi

Khanyi: What can I do for you?

Me: Khanyi dad passed away. Soon after he spoke to the kids he died. The funeral will be on Saturday.

Khanyi: Thank you for letting



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

me. I'm sorry for your loss. Me:

When do you think you'll get

here?

Khanyi: We'll probably fly

in Friday afternoon. Me: ok

see you then. Bye (she

just hangs up)

When I walk out of the study I bump into my one of my aunts

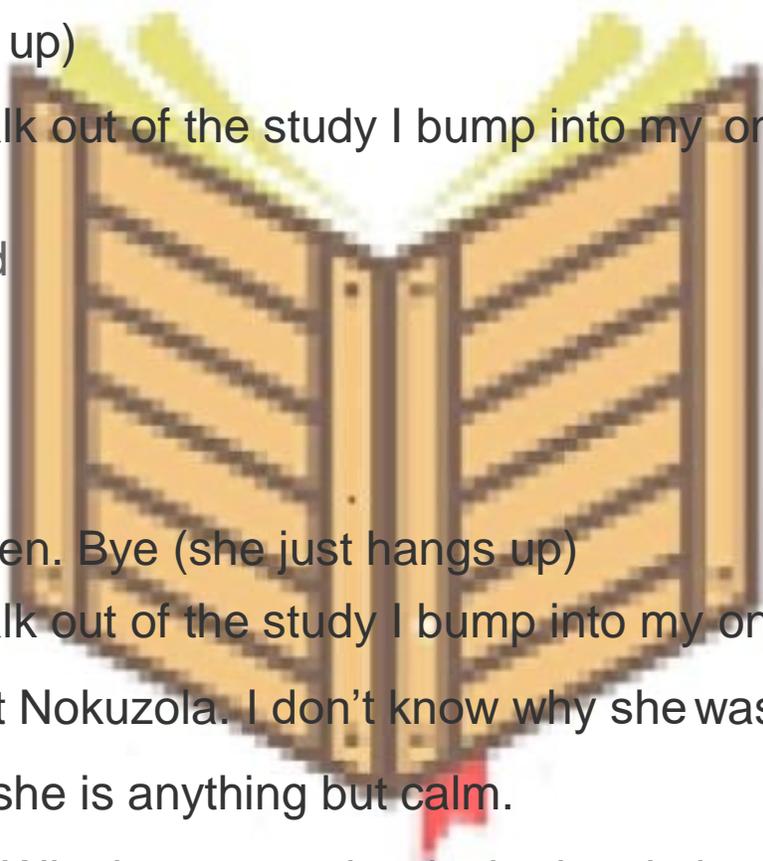
Sponsored

see you then. Bye (she just hangs up)

When I walk out of the study I bump into my one of my aunts Aunt Nokuzola. I don't know why she was named Nokuzola she is anything but calm.

Nokuzolo: Why is your mother locked up in her room she needs to sit on a mattress and we need mattress too.

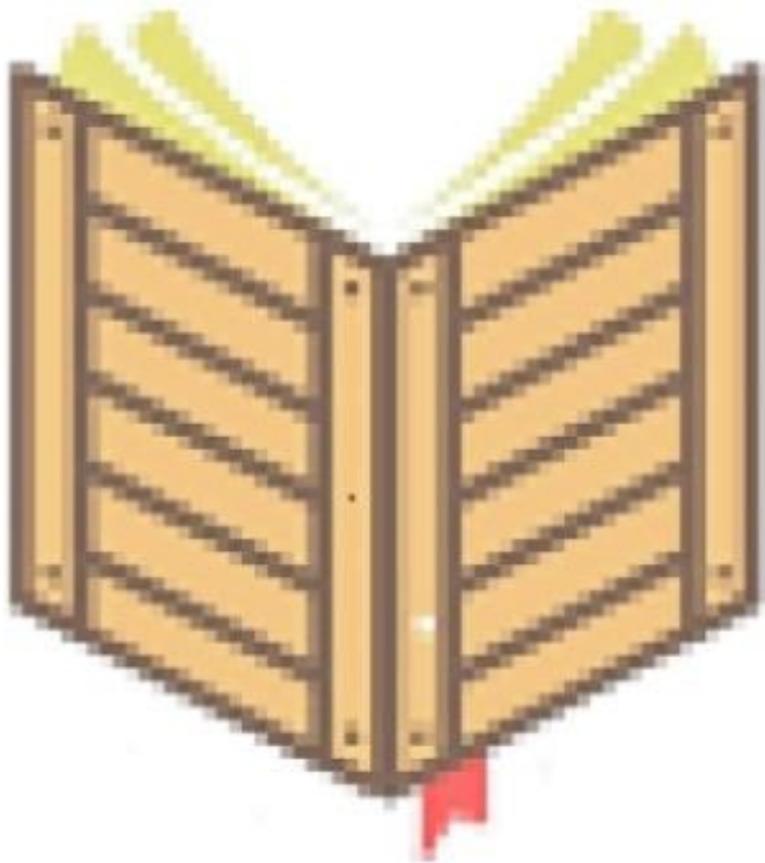
Me: Mom is not going to do that. Dad's orders and your husband knows. My father instructed him to make sure that doesn't happen. If you have any other questions about the issue please ask your husband.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nokuzola: you are doing things the white man's way.  
Where is your wife?

Me: I don't know aunty she is somewhere around this house. Please excuse me aunty I need to get some air..



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

## QHAWE

Khanyi just got a call from Zwelibanzi telling her that his dad died just after he spoke with the kids yesterday.

This is a difficult time for these kids and for Khanyi. She hasn't cried since

yesterday. She is being strong. She is worrying a lot of about the kids. Now we have to tell them that their grandfather has actually passed away. Even though they new it would happen I think they still had hope. We are in the tv room with the kids. Khaya is not back from work and twins are on their back from their classes.

Khanyi: hey guys. We have something to tell you. Lonwabo:

is he gone?

Khanyi: yes baby he is. I am so sorry. I know you still had hope that he would still be ok. Ntando: when did it happen?

Me: After he spoke to you guys. (Ntando walks over to me and lets the tears fall. Sibahle is hugging Lwanele who is crying frantically. )

Sibahle: I am so sorry guys I wish there was

something we could to take the pain away. Ntando:

thank you Sibahle

Lisakhanya: Wabo are you ok? (He looks up at her with a sad smile.)

Lonwabo: i'll be ok. Don't worry about me. When is the funeral?( He asks looking at his mother) Khanyi: it's on Saturday. We'll live on Friday.

Lonwabo: mom can we sleepover there on Friday if that's ok with you. (She looks at me and I just nod.)

Khanyi: I'll ask grandma ok.

Ntando: thanks ma.

Me: princess Lwanele please come to daddy. (She moves from Sibahle and comes to me and sits on my lap.) Are you ok Princess?

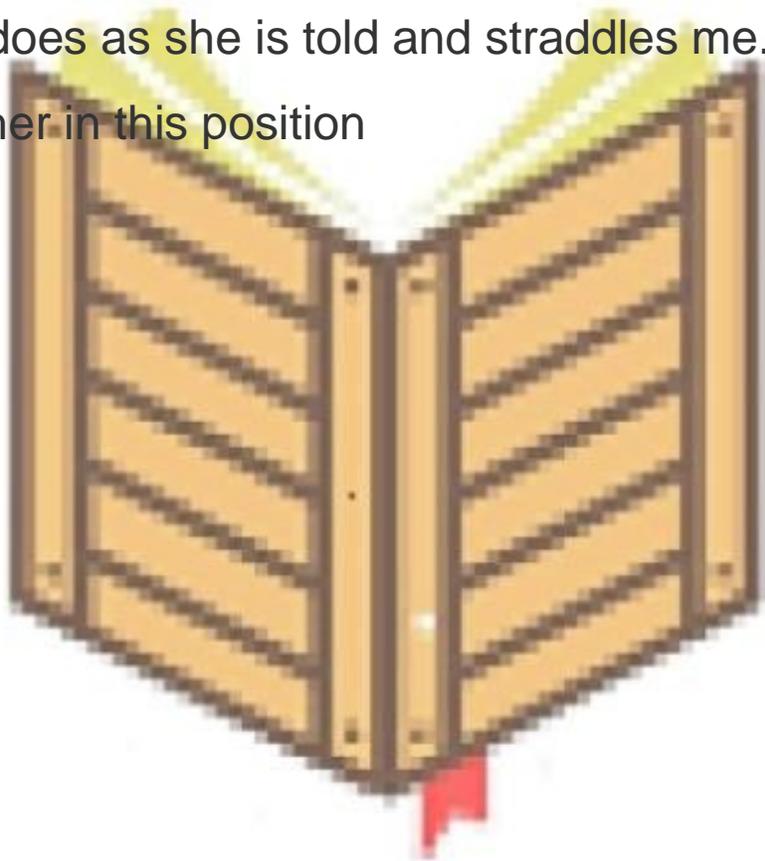
Lwanele: I'm ok Dad just sad that I'll never see him again.

Me: you are going to be ok. All of you you are going to be ok just give yourselves time and know that we love you and we are here for you.

Ntando: thanks dad. May we be excused? (I just nod at them and they get up to leave. Lwanele goes to Sibahle

who gives her her hand to hold as they walk out and Lisakhanya was between Ntando and Lonwabo and i'm assuming they are going to one of their rooms. I look at their beautiful mother)

Me: come here baby (she walks over to me as she tries to sit next to me I pull her to come sit on top of me.) Straddle me. (She does as she is told and straddles me. I like talking to her in this position



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

or when I'm lifting her and her back against the wall and legs around my waist. In these two positions she is able to stay vulnerable. ) talk to me my love

Khanyi: I feel like it all happened so fast. I was hoping for more time. I'm not ready to deal with Zwelibanzi Qhawe. He is going to come after us with guns blazing. I'm scared for me and my kids. Me: khanyi look at me. You are not alone. We are here for you and the kids. I am here for you ok. Khanyi: thank you for being here. Tell me vele what did you feed my kids. They don't cry to me anymore.

Me: are you jealous?

Khanyi: maybe a little.

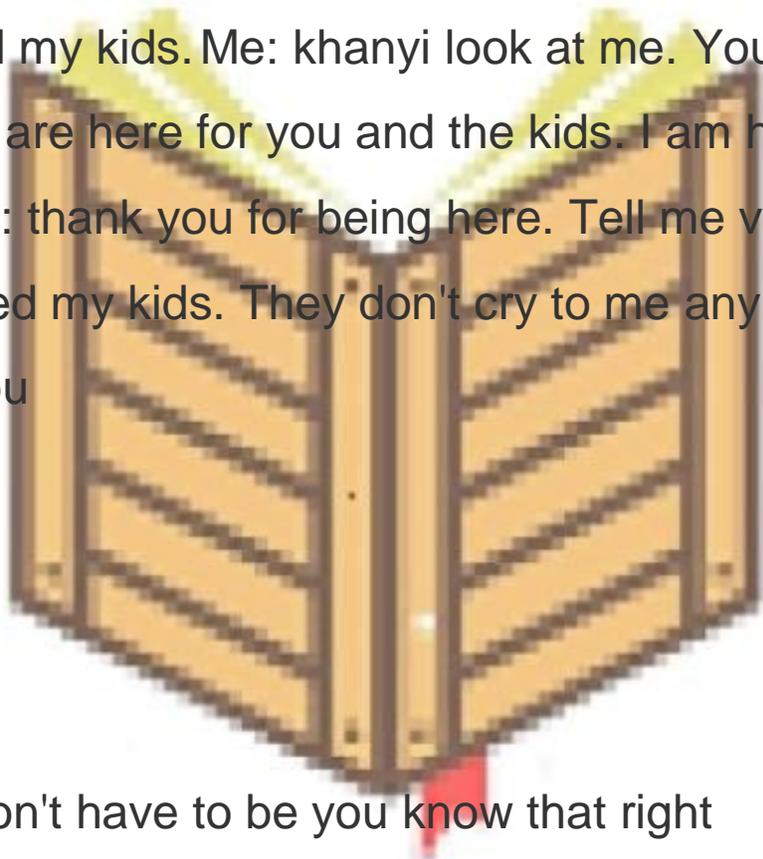
Me: you don't have to be you know that right

Khanyi: I know. It's just that sometimes I can't help it. It has always been me and them and now I have to share them with you. It's just taking some getting used to.

Me: I understand my Queen.

Khanyi: let me call their grandmother be fore I forget.

(She doesn't move from me she makes the call while



NOVELSGURU.COM

sitting on top of me. The call takes about 5 minutes.)

She says it's fine she'll just ask Sima to make sure that no one uses their rooms. (Lonwabo walks in)

Lonwabo: mom can I talk

to you for a minute. Me: do

you need me to leave

Lonwabo: no dad it's fine. Am I going to talk to you seated like that? We really need to establish house rules we can't keep walking in on you both in these positions you are always in. (We just look at him and smile. Khanyi moves to sit next to me.) mom we understand why you had to

keep your distance from them. I know if Zweli knew we

were visiting he would have made sure that he was there to bother you or even drag you back to his house and punish you for leaving. You protected us when he

wouldn't. Please don't blame yourself for the time we lost with our grandparents. If anyone is to be blamed that's

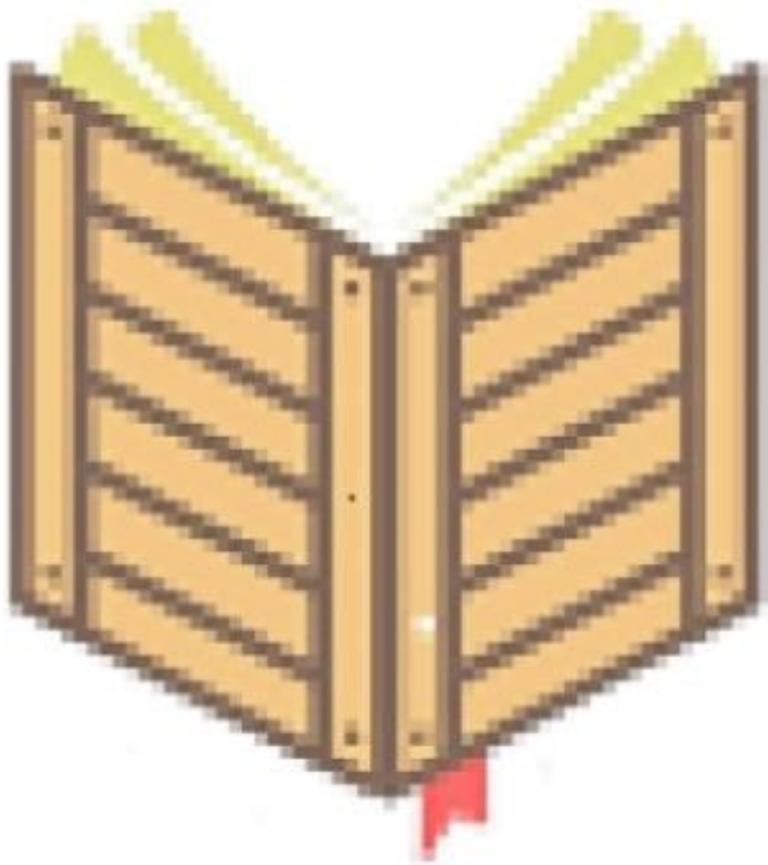
Zweli. At least we got to see him before he died and we

got to say goodbye. We love you mama and we

appreciate all you've done for us. (He walks over to his mother and hugs her tight.)

SATURDAY (DAY OF THE FUNERAL)

KHANYISILE



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

We arrived late yesterday Qhawe's kids also wanted to come to the funeral for support. Lonwabo Ntando and Lwanele slept over at their grandparents' house.

Apparently they ended up sleeping in their grandma's room. Some of the family members asking why we only arrived yesterday we should have been here Tuesday already asking me why I'm not dressed like a makoti and I just told them to ask Zwelibanzi. Aunt Nokuzola was on my case wanting me to sleepover and help out around the house. There's too many people here already everything will be done besides Zwelibanzi's wife is here she will make sure everything goes well. Me and my little family we decided to wear navy suits. We were dressed in navy suits baby blue shirts and navy ties brown shoes for the guys and red shoes for the ladies. We wore very simple outfits but we looked good. Good enough to be on a cover of a magazine. That's what Zwelibanzi's father would have said. I miss him already. I just arrived and aunt Nokuzola was the first person I get to see.

Nokuzola: you are dressed already who is going to serve breakfast to all these people you are not even dressed in black.

Me: morning to you too Aunty. I believe there caterers around here. You should let them do their job which catering every meal of this day and serving everyone. I am no longer married to Zwelibanzi so I will dress however I want.

Nokuzola: I see. (I see she wants to say something else. This woman never gets tired of being controlling)

Khanyi: Aunty if you have anything other questions about how things are being done ask mama or Zwelibanzi or even his wife. If you'll excuse me I need to check on my kids. (She looks at me for a while and moves to the side and I walk away. I find my kids in Ntando's room. This is rare they sitting together in Ntando's room. I greet them and we hug. My boys look so handsome and the Princess looks just like me in her flowy navy skirt baby blue shirt and her tiny scarf tied into a bow. She didn't want a tie. She is so cute with her red pumps. We are supposed to have small red roses pinned to our jackets; I hope Qhawe doesn't forget them.) How are you guys doing?

Lwanele: We are ok mom.

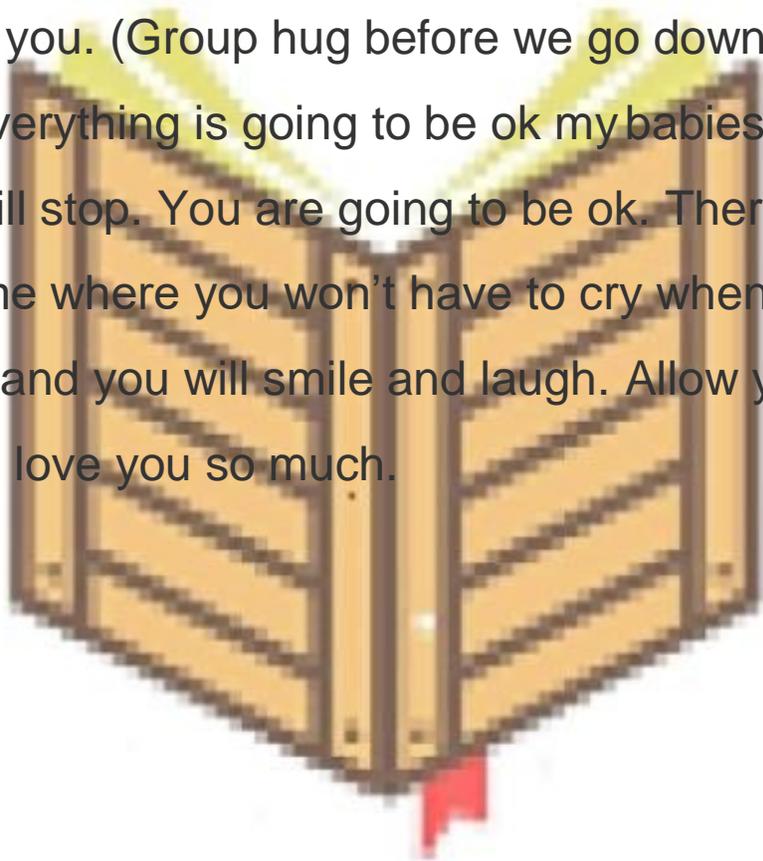
Me: have you decided who is going to

Speak amongst the three of you?

Lonwabo: Ntando is going to do it. I won't be able to.

Me: Are you sure you can do it Ntando? Khaya and Lina will stand with you at the podium. Ntando: I am not sure mama but I will certainly try.

Me: I hear you. (Group hug before we go down stairs and we hug) everything is going to be ok my babies in time the pain will stop. You are going to be ok. There will come a time where you won't have to cry when you think about him and you will smile and laugh. Allow yourselves to grieve. I love you so much.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Them: we love you too. (Let us go down stairs.

Remember there are a lot of people downstairs some you know some you don't know but just remember to be polite.

There is something I didn't tell you.)

Lonwabo: what is that mom?

Me: You have other siblings 2 years old and twins.

Lwanele: Oh we know. We met them yesterday. Grandma introduced us. She said you probably forgot to tell us because of everything that has been going on.

Ntando: They are so cute but very troublesome.

Me: I am sorry I did not tell you I really did forget to tell you.

Lonwabo: It's ok mom. Can we go now (my phone beeps and it is a text from Qhawe and he is outside.)

Me: Let's go your dad is outside. (we all walk out and go

outside. I see Qhawe standing next to the car he is actually leaning against it with the twins and my girls are having their own conversation on the other side of the car.

This man mara. I swear he is trying to kill me he is looking so hot right now the twins look good too but their dad is such a dish I could eat him up right now. "Khanyi stop it".

We walk towards them as they see us the girls come to us greet and hug. My girls look so beautiful. I think navy is going to be our family colour. I hug the twins

and walk to this man. He looks at me bites his lower lip and hugs me tight. He whispers in my ear.

Qhawe: You look ravishing I could eat you up right now. (I got so wet instantly and he lets go of me. This needs to stop we are at a funeral for crying out loud. The kids just chose to ignore us.)

Me: Que stop it. Did you bring the roses? (I just smile at him and Khaya interrupt us)

Khaya: Morning guys (Linamandla comes to me and gives me a hug. She is also looking beautiful) Me:

Morning my babies how was your flight Lina?

Lina: It was ok mama. I just can't believe grandpa Tom is dead.

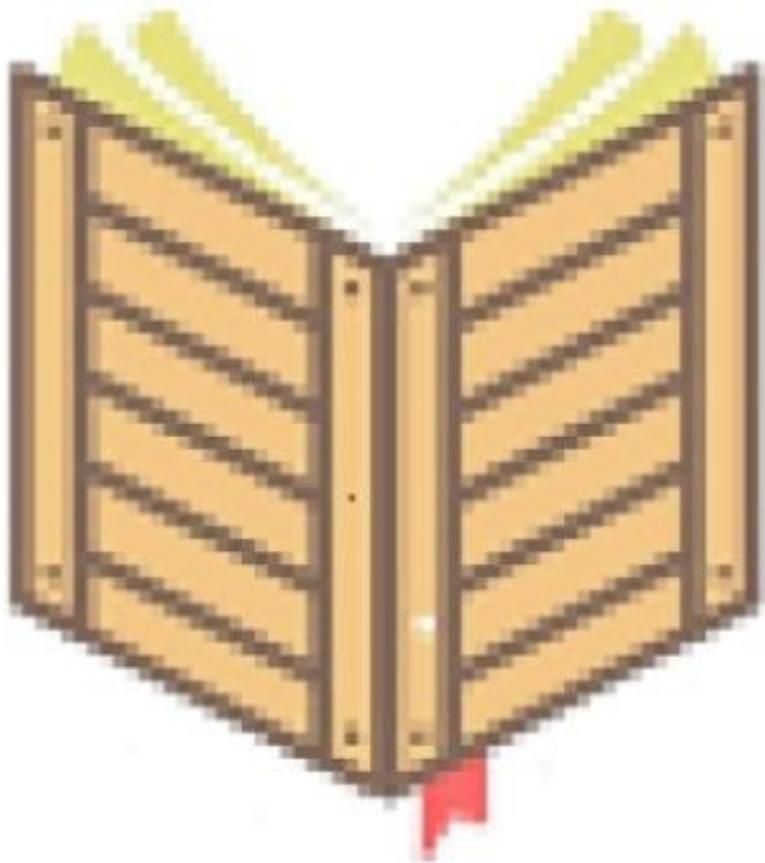
Me: it is unbelievable. (One of Zwelibanzi's cousins walks to us and tells us that they are about to view the body. My kids don't want see him like that and me as well. I just thank her and we walk to the house to join the service but we won't view the body.)

Qhawe: I brought the roses and We'll see you at church ok. (he takes his kids and they leave for church.)

When we walk into the lounge there's the coffin this is still unbelievable. Mrs Tom sees us and calls us to sit next her she is with the twins. We sit and the pastor continues after

he is done he calls on family members that want to view the body. Everyone walks up to the coffin to view the body. Some are just being dramatic with the crying. Aunt Nokuzola and Aunt Cebisa walk up to us.)

Cebisa: Why are you not going to view the body?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: it's not something we want to do. (she nods and smiles at the kids. She has always been the nice one.)

Nokuzola: hayibo if you do not want to do it the kids have to do it.

Me: With all due respect aunty my kids do not have to do anything right now. They do not want to see their grandfather like that and that's how it's going be.

(Zwelibanzi walks up to us.) Zwelibanzi: What is going on here?

Me: ask your aunties here. (he looks at them expecting an answer)

Nokuzola: I was just telling her that kids should go see their grandfather; it's something they have to do.

Zwelibanzi: says who? Aunty please leave them alone if they don't want to do it then let them be. (he turns to look at us) are you guys ok. ( we just nod and he gives his hand to mother to help her stand) Let's go to the car mama come on boys(twins). Khanyi we'll talk after the funeral. (he walks away with his mother. We also stand to leave leaving the aunt's there. Linamandla and Khaya are holding in their laughter. I am glad they find this funny.)

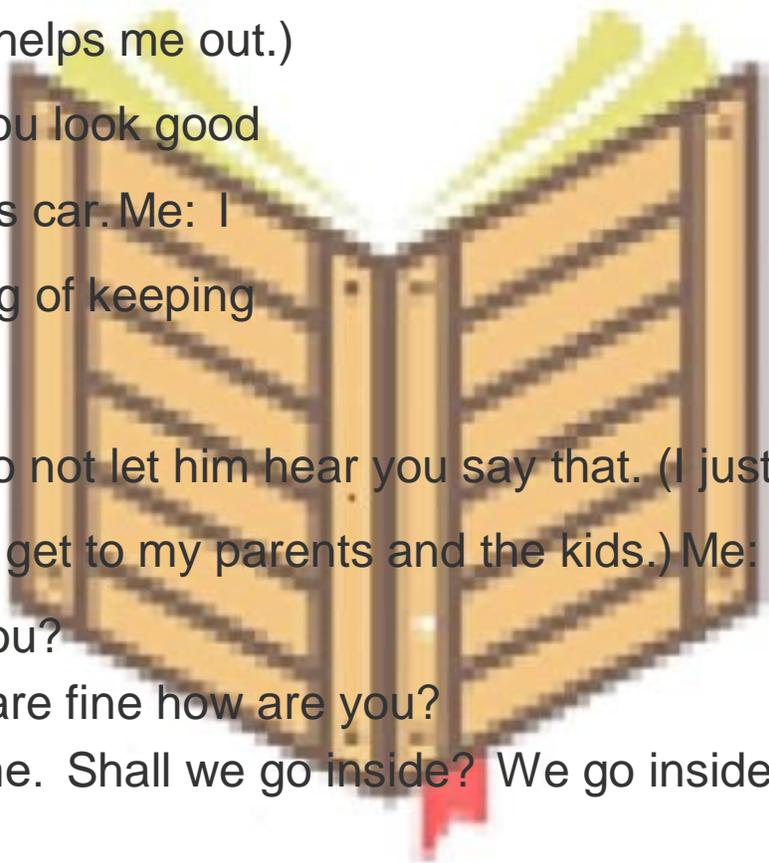
When we get to church my little family is there my parents are here too. I park next to Qhawe's car. He comes to my side and opens the door for his princesses since they were sitting behind and kisses their forehead as they get out of the car. The boys are already out talking to my parents. He opens my door puts his head and kisses me before he helps me out.)

Qhawe: You look good in my dad's car. Me: I am thinking of keeping it.

Qhawe: Do not let him hear you say that. (I just smile at him as we get to my parents and the kids.) Me: Mom Dad how are you?

Dad: We are fine how are you?

Me: I'm fine. Shall we go inside? We go inside and find our sits.

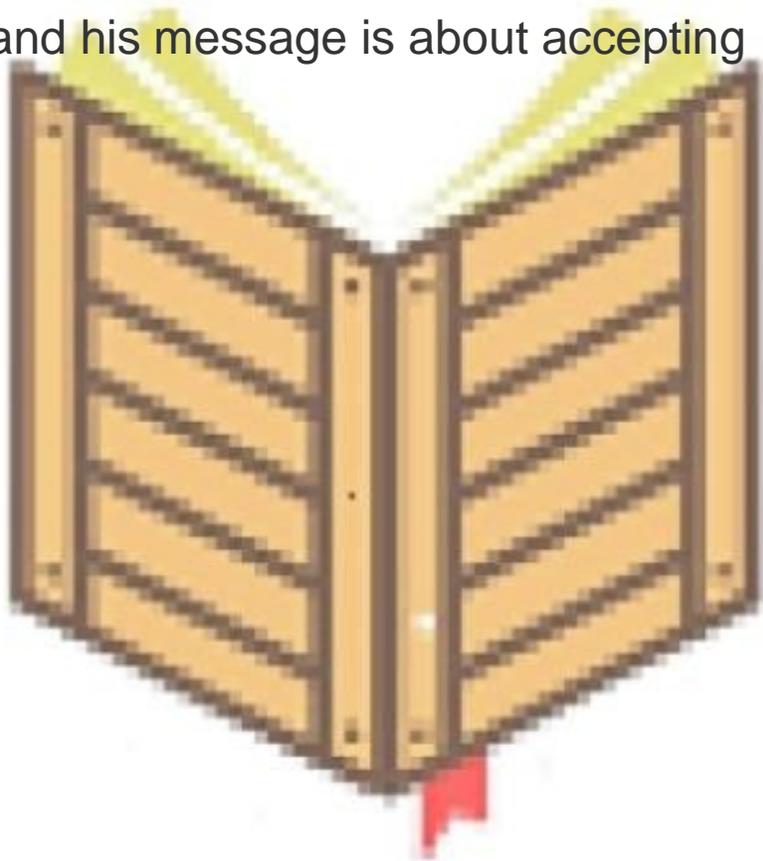


**NOVELSGURU.COM**

**ZWELIBANZI**

I see Khanyi walking in with her little family and her parents. They look really good in those navy suits if there

was a competition they would be the best dressed family. I don't understand what her boyfriend is doing here with his kids though. They are ushered to their seats. The pastor starts with the service. He is going to preach first and then the speeches will follow and after that we go to the grave yard which is not far from here. The pastor preaches and his message is about accepting

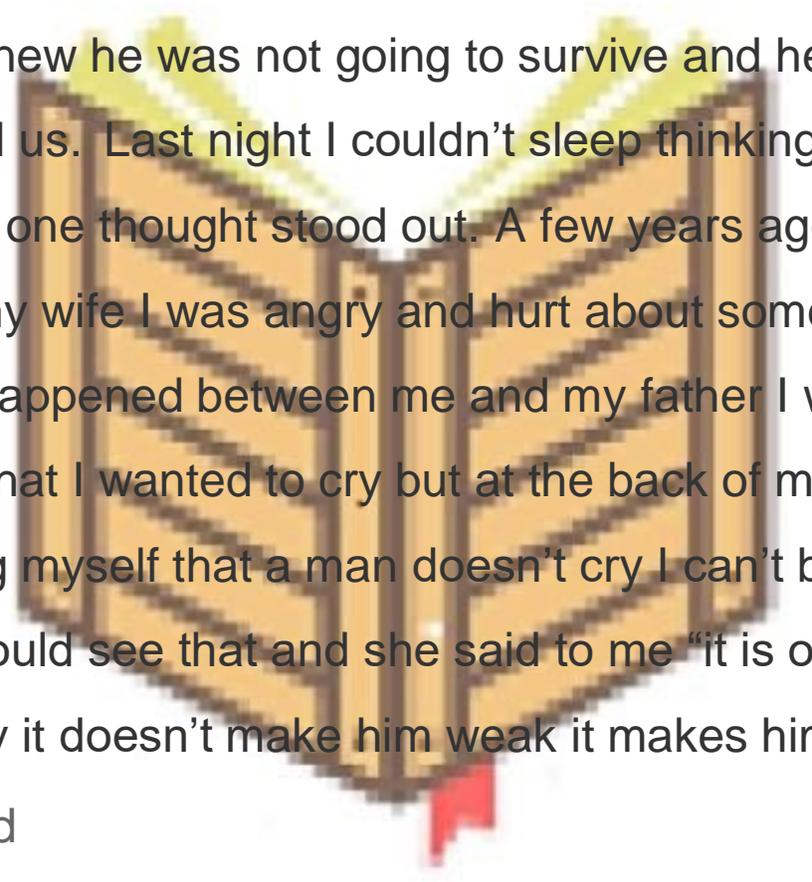


**NOVELSGURU.COM**

what happened and healing from grief. He is done and now it's time for the speeches. Uncle Sicelo spoke first on behalf of the family followed by one of dad's friends and now it's my turn.

Me: Morning everyone. My father tried to make us ready ready for this day. When we found out that his cancer was back he knew he was not going to survive and he would always tell us. Last night I couldn't sleep thinking a lot of things but one thought stood out. A few years ago I went home to my wife I was angry and hurt about something that had happened between me and my father I was hurt so much that I wanted to cry but at the back of my mind I was telling myself that a man doesn't cry I can't be weak. My wife could see that and she said to me "it is ok for a man to cry it doesn't make him weak it makes him human

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

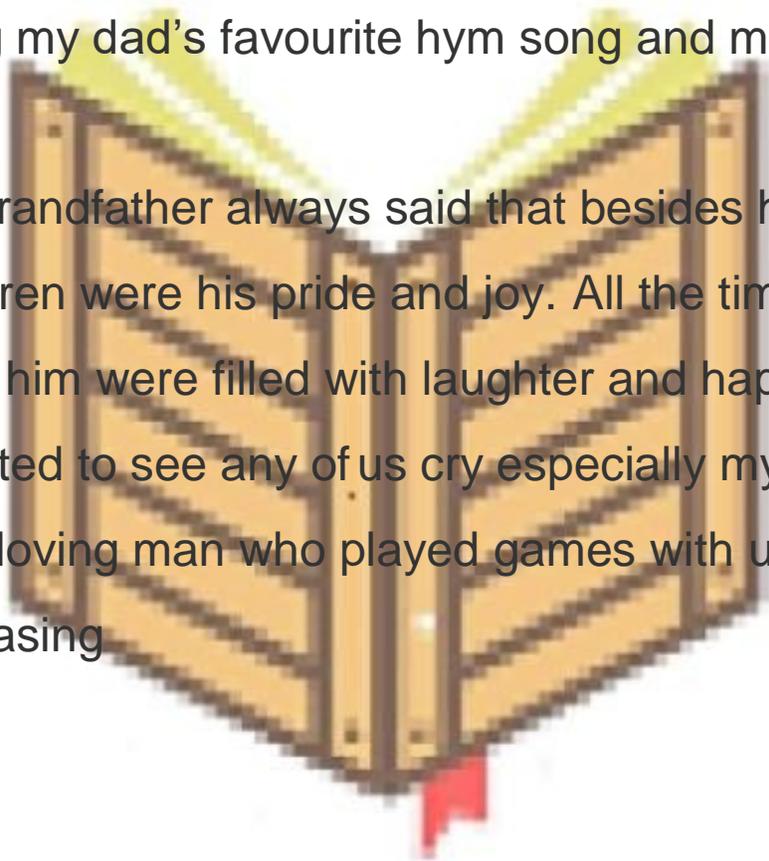
it makes him human it shows that he has emotions. Cry if you need to." At that moment I let the tears fall. For the first time since dad got sick and passed away I cried

thinking that my dad used to say same thing to me but she didn't know that. I cried because I never really took some of the lessons he taught me serious I didn't take them to heart. Today I woke up thinking that had I listened to some of his teachings followed them I would be a much better man today. I watched how he loved my mother how he respected her how he would humble himself when he made her cry how he listened to her when she spoke. It was beautiful. He loved us he loved my children he spent as much time as he could with them. Whenever the kids were visiting them he used to say me "watch how your wife is raising those boys. She is not raising boys she is raising men." I didn't understand but today I see what he meant. Right now the thought that crosses my mind as I look at my mother my ex-wife and my kids "Son a perfectly cut diamond is not always perfect it has hidden cracks you may not see but a rough uncut diamond is always perfect because you can see its flaws and you can make it to be what you desire." Today I realise what he meant by that. I miss you already old man. I will always love you. Thank you.

As I sit next to my mother I look at her and she has tears

in her eyes she gives a warm hug and kisses my forehead. The last person to speak is one of my kids their mother walks them to the podium and hugs the princess giving her a warm smile. She looks at her grandma and smiles. She starts singing very softly wow she has a beautiful voice Lonwabo Khaya and Lina join her. They are singing my dad's favourite hymn song and my mother is in tears.

Ntando: Grandfather always said that besides his son his grandchildren were his pride and joy. All the times we spent with him were filled with laughter and happiness. He never wanted to see any of us cry especially my mom. He was a fun loving man who played games with us ran around chasing



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

us around the yard always went jogging with mom and us in the mornings when we visited. Mom would always let him win. He always saw her as more than just a daughter in law to him our mom was the daughter he never had. He would say that if he had a daughter he want her to be like her when we asked why? His answer was always the same “Your mother doesn’t pretend to something she is.” (he pauses a bit and the siblings singing sounds so beautiful as his background music as he speaks.) He used to say we must act like man because mom is raising man but we must not forget that we are still kids and should behave as such. I know most of you won’t understand but don’t worry we do (and he laughs a little.) He was perfect with his imperfections he faltered and would acknowledge his faults. He loved like he never loved before he was never afraid to show emotion. Behind the woman who raised us to be who we are today he was the man that took every opportunity he got to remind us about what it is to be a man and what it is to be a good son. He was our partner in crime whenever grandma baked cookies. (I see a small smile on my mother’s face.) When grandma would punish us for

stealing her cookies he would be there taking the punishment with us it didn't matter what type of punishment it was he would take it like a man. I remember this one time grandma baked blueberry muffins and he called us to the kitchen and said grandma made our favourite. He took two muffins and cut them in half.

Lwanele reminded him that we will be punished for this and he just "I know Princess." We were in the lounge watching tv when grandma walked asking about the muffins. That day we had our ears pinched grandma saying we do not listen when it was his turn grandma pinched his ears harder and said "this is all your fault so I'll pinch you harder" and he took like a man. He was a crazy old man and we loved him to the moon and back. Our love for him will never die just as much as his love for us would never die his love for us didn't die with him it lives on our hearts. Our love was cast in stone and no one can ever take that away from us. I would say he was taken too soon but then again death has no time frame. We are grateful for the time we were given to be his grandkids and him our grandfather. He always live on in our hearts. Thank you. (All five kids are in tears even Khaya and they just

stand there hugging each other. I stand and walk up to them and I join the hug. Lwanele cries frantically and breaks the hug running to Qhawe who is already meeting her halfway. When she gets to him he kneels on one knee to her height he catches her as she throws herself at him and hugs her. One of Qhawe's twins takes Lina who was running after Lwanele. Khanyi walks to the podium and takes her boys.)

Khanyi: Let's go sit down. You did good you will be ok. (they all go and sit Qhawe is still kneeling with Lwanele Lina is now sitting with the twins. There's another little girl that went and sat next Lonwabo about Lwanele's age she is holding his hand and Ntando is clinging to his mother. As I walk back to my seat:)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: Come Princess let's go sit or do you want to go to mom (she shakes her head no) I can't hear you Princess (he says that with a smile)

Lwanele: No daddy I want to sit with you and the twins and Lina.

(he gets up holding her hand and they go sit. When everyone has calm down the service continues and it is now time to go to the graveyard. When we get there the pastor continues with the service as the coffin goes down it hits hard. I'll never see my father again he is gone. My mom is in tears she can't stop crying and it's understandable. When I look around I see Khanyi crying probably for the first since dad passed. What hurts me the most right now is seeing my family clinging to another man. They are all standing together comforting each other. She should be next to me with Sima but then again..... After everything is done we head home

## CHAPTER 43

SUNDA

Y

ZWELIB

ANZI

Today is the reading of the will. The lawyer is already here. Most of the people left yesterday and some are leaving today and I just said goodbye to my two uncles and their wives. I was not surprised when Aunt Nokuzola wanted to stay for the reading but my uncle knows how to handle her. Pretty soon it's just going to be me mom Sima and the twins in this house. Maybe Sima should stay here with her. I'll have to speak to them. Khanyi just arrived with the kids we were actually waiting for them.

Khanyi: Morning Zwelibanzi (this woman has called me Zwelibanzi for years and it still does something to me the way she says my name.)

Me: Morning Khanyi hi kids.

Them: Zweli (ok this I'll never get used to)

Me: We can go to the study the lawyer is here. (we walk to the study and take our seats not before the kids hug their grandmother Sima is also here.)

Lawyer: Morning everyone. This is not going to take too much time so I'll get started since we are all here. I will need everyone to reserve their comments for when I am done.

**THIS IS THE LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF  
MZIMKHULU TOM**

I Mzimkhulu Tom write this will being of sound mind and with no outside influence. Everything in this will I have discussed with my wife Eunice Tom and we both agreed on how to divide my estate.

1. To my grandchildren Ahlume and Hlumelo Tom (the twins) I leave trust funds each worth R2 million an education fund for each child worth R2 million and my construction company MT Constuctions which is just about construction. I leave all this to them to be managed by Khanyisile Sondlo. She will manage the trust fund until the kids are 18 and the educational fund she will manage until they get their degrees. Whatever is left over from their educational fund will be re-invested for their children. Reason for this is that I don't trust their parents to handle these funds properly.
2. To Lonwabo Ntando and Lwanele Sondlo; I leave to them MT Engineers and Construction. This company combines Civil engineering and construction the company has four branches in the country. Khanyisile Sondlo will manage the company for the children until they finish school. I leave the Hotel to my little Princess Lwanele Sondlo which her mom will also manage until she finishes school. I also leave to them trust funds worth R1.5 million each which their mother Khanyisile Sondlo will manage until they are 18. Lwanele also gets a dance studio which she can start using as in yesterday. It is ready and fully

equipped. I know how much she loves dancing. She can use the studio teach others.

3. To my wife Eunice I leave the restaurant which she will take care of until she decides who she wants to take over from her. I leave the house to her which requested that it be transferred to the grandchildren. The ownership of the house has been transferred to Lonwabo Ntando Lwanele Sondlo Ahlume and Hlumelo Tom. They will only make decisions concerning the house when my wife dies and they will not be allowed to sell the house. This the house you will use for big family gatherings family reunions and so forth. Until such time my wife will take care of everything that concerns the house.

4. To Simamkele Tom I leave her with R2.5 million. Sima you should use R500 000 to start your own Interior design company. You are good at put your degree to good use. I know your husband may not allow this but do it for you and your kids build a legacy for them.

5. To my only son: Zwelibanzi I know about your illegal activities I thought I taught you better my child. The reason I left my companies to your kids is because I want my legacy to live on and I know they will be able to do that. You failed at doing that. I tried to guide towards the right direction but you chose the route that you are on. Zweli greed will be your downfall. I leave you R 5 million and my holiday home in Cape town.

6. To Khaya and Linamandla Sondlo: even though you are not born of Zwelibanzi I loved you as my grandkids. Khaya since you are already working and have your own company I leave you with R1.5 million. R500 000 is sponsorship for you Brotherhood project that you started with your brothers. Yes I know about it. An associate of mine is one of your sponsors. You will get more sponsors. You are doing good my child I am proud of you. To Linamandla: you are almost done with school. I have paid the remainder of your fees that is until you finish school and when you are done with school You will have R2 Million waiting for you to help you start your own practise. You already have a buiding for it and some of the equipment you will need. I want you to build the best practise. And your mom is going to give you a little something from me you can go spoil yourself with your sister and your newly found sisters.

7. To Khanyisle Sondlo: My Princess I know that you don't need it but my wife insisted on it. I give you R1 million and the lawyer will hand you keys to something you will love.

Please note that everything has been transferred to the kids names and Khanyisile Sondlo has been named as the person who will manage all the trust funds and the companies on behalf of my grandchildren until they become illegible as stipulated. The Will cannot be contested. Thank you Lawyer: that is all. I hope everything is clear.

Sima: I don't understand why she gets to manage my kids trust fund and company I am their mother (she is breathing fire right now and I understand why dad did that. Sima is very reckless when it comes to money and she won't be able to manage those funds. I would have thought that he would let me manage them. I guess he really didn't trust me.)

Me: Leave it alone Sima. (I still can't believe my dad left all his companies to his grandchildren and made Khanyi to manage them I must admit that doesn't sit well with me how could he do that I am his only child. R5 million and a house really dad?)

Sima: No Zweli this is not fair. Why her these are my kids. (Khanyi is just looking at her not saying anything. This is how she. Always calm and it's very dangerous)

Mom: Sima stop it right now. Khanyi didn't ask for this. My husband and I we decided on how things should be and this is best for the kids.

Khanyi: Is there anything else Mr Zulu.

Mr Zulu: if there are no other questions I'll be on my way. Your monies will be transferred to you by end of day tomorrow. Miss Sondlo there some documents you need sign regarding the trust funds. I'll email them to you you should have them by tonight and you can have your lawyer look them over.

Khanyi: Thank you Mr Zulu. (he gets up and bids everyone farewell. Khanyi turns to look at me and she knows I am angry right now. those companies should be mine. She looks at my mother who gives her the I'm sorry look. If my parents knew I was not going take this lying down why did they leave everything to her and the kids. Why would my dad say I'm greedy.)

Mom: I'm sorry Khanyi. You know why it had to be like this. (what does my mother mean by that?)

Khanyi: I didn't want any of it mama but I understand but do you understand what this means for me and my kids?

Mom: yes baby I understand. (she stands and hugs her) Khanyi: We have to go now. you must come and visit soon.

Mom: I will. Lwanele can take me to the dance studio and show me what she can do. (mama hugs the kids and says her goobyes.

When Khanyi walks out the door Sima speaks)

Sima: I will fight this I won't leave it lying (Khanyi doesn't let her finish.)

Khanyi: I didn't ask for this. If you want a fight then go to his grave and fight with him there then go to his grave and fight with him there if you as so much bother mama about this I swear I will make you regret the day you first laid your eyes on him. (she says that pointing at me.) As for you Zwelibanzi whatever you are thinking right now get it out of your mind. I will die before I let you hurt my kids and don't think I won't kill you this

time trust me I won't hesitate. (I know she means every word. She will do anything to protect those kids. She kisses my mother's forehead and leaves. The kids are already waiting for her in the car.)

I need to do something but I can't hurt my kids. I want those companies.

## KHANYISILE

We are home in Durban. I told Qhawe everything and he is worried. I'm in my home office right now and I can't sleep. Everyone is in bed. Where is my phone I need to make a phone call.

Him: Khanyisile why are you calling so late is everything ok.

Me: I'm cancelling your leave. It's time to come back.

Shit is about to hit the fan Eddie: What do you mean

shit is about to hit the fan.

Me: I mean exactly that. Wherever you are you need to come back as in yesterday.

Eddie: ok fine. I'll be there tomorrow. Try and get some sleep. (I hang up and call Andile)

Him: I hope you are dying calling me this late while I'm on leave you know the rules Khanyi. Me: Your leave has been cancelled with immediate effect. You need to come back. (I hear someone's voice in the background) is that Ibanathi?

Andile: yes it's him. Khanyi what happened?

Me: Shit is about to hit the fan that's all I can say right. Be here tomorrow. I already spoke to Eddie.

Andile: is it that serious?

Me: Andile seriously get your dick out of Ibanathi and listen to what I am telling you. Be here tomorrow ok this is not a game.

This is life and death.

Andile: Ok. I'll be there. (I hang up and take a sip of my wine.)

Me: DAMMIT MZIMKHULU TOM!!!

Qhawe: you shouldn't curse the dead. (he walks to me and pulls me from my chair he sits and makes me straddle him.) Talk to me my Queen

Khanyi: Tell me something my King why do you always make me talk when I'm in these awkward and compromising positions? As the kids would define them. If I am not straddling you my legs are wrapped around your waist and my back against the wall.

Qhawe: 1. I have learned that it's easy for you to talk in these positions and you are at your most vulnerable moment. It's when you let me into your world and talk freely. (ok that I didn't know.) 2. It makes it easy for me to fuck you should the need

arise. (he gives me a naughty smile.) and right now there is a need but I need you to talk to me.

Khanyi: I just called Eddie and Andile back from their leave.

Qhawe: I know I heard you talking and I called Charlie too. He will be here tomorrow as well. Khanyi: I don't know why the old man thought I could do this. He put me in a difficult position. Now I have Zwelibanzi who is going to come after me full force and his wife who is being petty right now. I should have slapped her when she opened her mouth this morning.

Qhawe: he believed in you. I don't think he would have done this if he didn't look what he did to Sima. Baby you are not alone in this. Bandile and Sizwe will be here tomorrow as well. They are also back from wherever they disappeared to. I feel like these guys are up to something. You have whole team behind you baby. You will be safe the kids will be safe.

Me: you don't get it Que Zwelibanzi will come after everyone I care about and he knows that my weak spot are my kids. He will take advantage of that somehow.

Qhawe: that's where you are wrong my darling. He knows those kids make you strong he knows you will fight tooth and nail for them he knows he won't get anything from you by

hurting the kids. What he is going to do is hit you where you least expect him to. He won't go after his own kids but he will go after Khaya and Linamandla.

Me: that makes sense and Lina is flying back to Cape Town tomorrow.

Qhawe: I know what you are thinking and the answer is NO. Let her go back to school you don't want to raise Zwelibanzi's suspicions. She still has her detail at school. They will continue watching her as they always did. It is important that we don't make major changes when it comes to them. We'll figure out the rest tomorrow when the guys are here.

Me: Thank you for being here and thank you for your support.

Qhawe: I wouldn't be anywhere else. (he kisses me and the kiss gets passionate and heated he stands and puts me on the desk and takes off my underwear since I'm wearing one his t-shirts. He comes back to kissing me his fingers are deep inside me and he moves my to ear and whispers) no foreplay you are already so wet (his fingers are driving me crazy I am a moaning mess his deep voice in my ear is not helping things and I can feel that I'm about to come and he stops.) I am going to fuck all this frustration out of you. Do you want me to?

Me: Yes (and it comes out as a whisper. I just want him inside me. He tries to go in about two times and the third time he succeeds. He goes in deep and rough. He does exactly what he said he would he is drilling me deep and I love every minute of

it. he moves my right leg over his shoulder and leaves my left leg wrapped on his waist he moves slightly to the side holding both my legs tight which keeps me in position at this point my orgasm is calling me telling me to let go but I don't want to he feels so good right now.

Qhawe: Let go baby (I do as told and he doesn't stop he keeps fucking me which intensifies my orgasm a few minutes later he lets go and the only sound in this room right now is our heavy breathing. He lets go of my right leg on his shoulder and wraps both my legs around his waist. With him still inside me he moves to the couch and takes the throw he covers both of us and walks out of the office to our bedroom. I can feel growing inside me and that alone does something to me. It's funny how I always seem like such a light weight. When we get to the bedroom he lowers me to the bed on my back and he is carefull that he doesn't pullout of me) Qhawe: right now I am going to make love you to you tonight I'll make you forget about your problems. We'll deal with them tomorrow. (he says all this moving back and forth inside me very slowly.) I love you Khanyi  
Me: I love you Que.

## CHAPTER 44

### MONDAY

## KHANYISILE

I feel his soft kisses on my face and on my lips.

Me: No Qhawe let me sleep. I'm not opening my legs for you again and it's still early. (I say all this with my eyes still closed.)

Qhawe: it is funny how you always say that you are never opening your legs for me but you always do. Tonight you will open them and beg me to be inside. (I open my eyes and the meethis looking straight at me with a silly smile on his face.)

Me: I do not beg you use witchcraft on me. (He laughs so hard even holding his stomach. i try to sit up but my nuna hurts and it's burning he notices me flinch in pain and helps me sit up.)

Qhawe: your bath is ready and after that we can have breakfast before the guys get here. Come. (he carefully lifts me and takes me to the bathroom and puts me in the bath tub.)

Me: Qhawe what time is it. Qhawe: it's after

8 why?

Me: why didn't you wake me up earlier who took the kids to school?

Qhawe: I took them to school; I know what I did to you last night so I let you sleep in.

Me: I see. (he kisses me and leaves me to bath. i'm obviously not going to the office today. Maybe I should appoint a new CEO so that I go to the

office when I am needed plus I have all these other businesses that need my attention now. When I get out of the bathroom Qhawe has clothes laid out on the bed for me my leggings and one of his long sleeve t-shirt it's one of my favourites and he loves it when I wear it. He is up to no good again. When I get downstairs he is in the kitchen with Mam' Mavis talking.)

Morning mama

Mavis: Morning Khanyi you are glowing this morning. (this woman is making me blush.)

Me: it's nothing ma. (I take a sit on one of the high chairs and Qhawe brings our breakfast and sits next to me not before giving me a kiss.)

Mavis: I'll leave you two love birds to enjoy your breakfast.

Khanyi don't forget I'm off this weekend.

Me: Don't worry mama I won't ruin your weekend by making you work.

Mavis. Thank you child. Thank you for everything (she hugs me and walks out. I'm left with this idiot of mine grinning from ear to ear like a retard.)

Me: and that smile on your face?

Qhawe: I am thinking of something

my father said. Me: what is that?

Qhawe: He said that no matter how angry you should make me I must never let you go because I won't find another like you. I must say I agree with him. Everyday I learn something new about you. (I don't say anything I just kiss him.)

“You still can't keep your hands off each other” that was Luyanda my lawyer.

Me: Knocking doesn't cost a thing you know. (he comes over to me and gives me a hug and kisses my cheek.)

Luyanda: the way you are so all over each other you wouldn't have heard the knock. Is there more food?

Qhawe: there's enough for everyone.

Me: Que they need to start paying for the food when they come here. They always leave the fridge half empty especially Lwazi.

“what about Lwazi?” that was Lwazi himself with Bandile Bandile: is there more of that Lu?

Luyanda: there's enough for everyone.

Lwazi: oh good I'm starving (I turn to look at Qhawe)

Me: You see what I mean. (he just smiles at me and I turn to look at these two idiots that just walked in helping themselves to my food. ) and whatever happened to knocking before you enter someones house.

Lwazi: you were too busy talking about me you wouldn't have heard the knock anyway. Heee Khanyi are you wearing his clothes while you have visitors? You do know that this is his favourite t-shirt and you do know what happens to him when he

sees you in his clothes

Me: I give up. Ask him those questions he chose my outfit for today. (Qhawe is just laughing at me just Eddie and Andile walk in)

Andile: oh good there's food and Qhawe is up to no good. (my sentiments exactly) Eddie: I'm starving

Me: I really don't understand you guys don't you have food at your houses? Luyanda: it's not that we don't have food we do. We just like eating your food.

Qhawe: In that case you will all have to start pitching in on buying the groceries.

Lwazi: hayibo Qhawe you guys make more money than we do you certainly afford to buy groceries without our help.

Qhawe: It's either you help out or you don't eat when you come here. "If I were I would help with the groceries." (that was Khaya)

Khaya: even Eddie and Andile help with the groceries. (they all turn to look at Andile and Eddie)

Andile & Eddie:

it's true Lwazi:

Yhooo this is

serious

Khaya: I'm telling you. I also help with the groceries why do you think the fridge and cupboards are always full. Every week someone buys food we take turns. Mom doesn't play like that.

Me: thank you Khaya. Aren't you late for work?

Khaya: I'm on my way out. Lina asked me to apologise for her she left early she said she'll call you guys.

Me: I thought her flight was later this afternoon I know because I booked it. Khaya: she changed it she forgot she had an assignment to submit today.

Me: this child. Before you go do me a favour and run up to the office bring me the documents on my desk with Luyanda's name on them. (he quickly does that comes back and leaves for work. I take the document and give to Luyanda.) Look over those quickly. guys please put your plates in the sink. We need to move to the lounge so that Mam' Mavis can clean here. I should make you clean this kitchen. (they look at me like I've gone mad or something. We all go to the lounge.)

Eddie: Why was my leave cancelled?

Me: Because Zwelibanzi's father died leaving almost all his businesses to me in fact not to me but to my kids and I am supposed to manage them until they are eligible to do so and

that will only happen when they finish their degrees. Luyanda those documents stipulate everything that I am saying.

Luyanda: I see that. Your ex-father in law planned this properly. These documents are simple and straight forward there are no loop holes

Sponsored

he made sure of that. Zwelibanzi won't be able to fight you in court and if anything happens to the kids everything goes to Khanyi.

Me: I guess that's what he meant when he said that he has put our lives in danger. I am officially screwed. (Qhawe looks at me with a raised eyebrow) get your dirty mind out of the gutter.

Qhawe: what do you mean dirty mind. I did nothing I just looked at you. (I give him the "stop it" look and I know he doesn't like it when I do that and I'm going to pay for it later.)

Eddie: this is serious. This means the old man knew about his son's activities.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: yes he knew that's why he did this. He said that he doesn't want his son destroying what he worked hard for his legacy.

Luyanda can I sign those documents?

Luyanda: yes you can. You can sign them now and I'll send them to him as we speak. (I take the documents sign them and hand them back to him.)

Andile: he is going to go after the kids.

Lwazi: I don't think so. He needs something that will make Khanyi weak something that will make her lose her mind. Him going after the kids won't do that instead it will drive her to fight him even to a point where she has to kill him that is something he knows and sure of.

Qhawe: what he also knows is that the focus will be on Lonwabo Ntando and the little Princess. He is going to want hit her where she least expects him to and that's Khaya and Lina. Bandile: You might be right.

Eddie: We need inside help. Let me make a call. (he takes his phone and makes the shortest call I've ever heard him make.

"GET HERE NOW." that's all he said to the person on the other end of the call.

Me: who the hell

was that? Eddie:

You'll see.

Me: Ok. While we wait Luyanda I need you to do something for me. All the information you need is in those documents. I

need you to re-draft my will saying that I leave everything I own to Khaya's project.

Qhawe: what's the point of that I'm a bit confused.

Me: Baby if anything happens to these three kids everything their grandfather left to them automatically comes to me right so the WILL is a protective measure making sure he doesn't get anything.

Luyanda: ok I get you. Consider it done.

Qhawe: it's clear now. (my front door opens. I really don't understand why people who come to this house are allergic to knocking and when I look at the door the man I see standing there is a man I never expected to see at my doorstep.

Me: Sizwe (and it comes

out as whisper.) SIMA

I don't understand why my father in law would do this to me. Yes he said he didn't trust us but still he should have let us handle what he left for our kids. Khanyi is really becoming a thorn on my side. In fact she has always been a thorn on my side. Zweli's parents never liked me she

was always the favourite they even loved her first two kids took them in as their own grandchildren. I was not even allowed to be in this house when she was here with the kids just because Zweli was refusing to her truth. I can't let this happen. There has to be a way to get her to sign over the trust funds to me to manage them. Maybe I just need to get rid of her. I've always lived in her shadow. She has always had the attention. I now have kids with Zweli but the kids get more attention from this family more than me. The worst part is that it's always Khanyi this and khanyi that I hate it. I even hate the fact that Zweli might be in love with her and he doesn't know. Damn you Zweli. As I walk towards the stairs I hear my mother in law talking to someone but I don't recognise his voice.

Mrs Tom: We put her in danger by giving everything to the kids. Yes she can manage it all but will she be safe from my son.

Him: She will be. She has people watching over her but you need to prepare yourself. Mrs Tom: for what?

Him: You might lose your son this time. She won't run away this time she will fight with everything she's got and you need to tell his wife that if she knows what's good for her she will stay away from Khanyi this is a fight she won't win. In fact both of them they won't

win. Khanyi has a special weapon but she doesn't know yet she'll find out tonight. (I'm not staying away from her I want her

gone now. I'm tired of being in her shadow.)

Mrs Tom: I know I might lose my son I hope and pray it doesn't come to that. (I wonder who is this man that this woman is talking to and seems well informed about Khanyi and Zweli.)

Him: it has started. Your son is losing a lot of money and doesn't know who is doing it. I can't tell you much right now but when the time is right you will know everything. I have to go. I'll come around again soon. (I quickly run back to my room. I wonder who is that and who is stealing Zweli's money. No wonder he's been in such a bad mood lately I wonder how much has he lost now. this has Khanyisile written all over it. This woman needs to go.

ZWELIBANZI

Dad why did you this? This is the question I keep asking but he is not here to answer even though I have the answer but it's not enough. I need him to explain further. The money those companies generate could have replaced the money I'm losing at the moment. I know I can't kill any of them even if I could do that I'm sure my dad had a failsafe plan in place for everything. My phone rings:

[Todayebooks.comPdfdreams.com](http://Todayebooks.comPdfdreams.com)

Enjoy lot of African new novels click on image that mention below



Him: You know I miss seeing you in Durban you should come back. Me: What do you want?

Him: Straight to the point I like that. I know what happened I mean about the Will. I actually can't wait to see what you are going to do and by that giving me a chance to strangle you to death.

Me: You'll wait for a long time.

Him: I don't think so. I know you and right now you need to make more money. I just took R 2 million from you. Now that things are a bit of a mess for you I need to remind you of what's at stake here but the reason for today's call is to tell you to tell your pretty little wife to stay away from Khanyi if she values her life and the lives of her kids and your life for that matter.

Me: What do you mean she needs to stay away from Khanyi. She hasn't done anything to her. Him: I forget you can be stupid at times. After what happened at the reading of the will trust me she is planning something and if she doesn't stop she will get

burnt. And her stupid plans just cost you another R 4 million.  
Talk to her otherwise all the money you'll be losing from now  
on will be because of her.  
(he hangs up).

Shit Sima what have you done or what are you going to do. I told  
her to leave it alone now she is being stubborn. How the hell does  
this guy know everything.  
What to do? What to do?

CHAPTER 45



NOVELSGURU.COM

MONDAY AFTERNOON

SIZWE

The look on her face the way she whispered my name says it all. I'm the last person she expected to see on her door step and in a minute she is going to be angry with me. Today is the day I have to tell them everything. Her and Qhawe have been in the dark for far too long. I walk in and walk up to them and she is still looking at me. She has many questions. The last time I saw was when she was in hospital when I told her a quarter of the truth and now the whole truth has to come out. Her eyes are still on me as i walk closer to where they are sitting and she is on her feet.)

Me: hey guys. Khanyi you look beautiful as ever. (I'm hoping my compliment will buy my way out of this. I get close to her and pull her into a hug and she hugs me back tight. We stay like that for a while.)

Qhawe: Ok that's enough hugging (he says pulling us apart. I never figured him to be the jealous type but when

it comes to Khanyi I can't blame she is attractive in many ways but I never saw her in any other way except as my little sister.)

Me: You have nothing to worry about man this is my little sister. Qhawe:

Still.....

Khanyi: What are you doing here? The last time I saw you I was in hospital. (I turn to look at Eddie and gives me a nod in approval.)

Me: I'm here because of you Qhawe and the kids

Qhawe: What are you talking about man? (he looks around the room and shakes his head not wanting to believe what his mind was telling him) this can't be what I'm thinking.

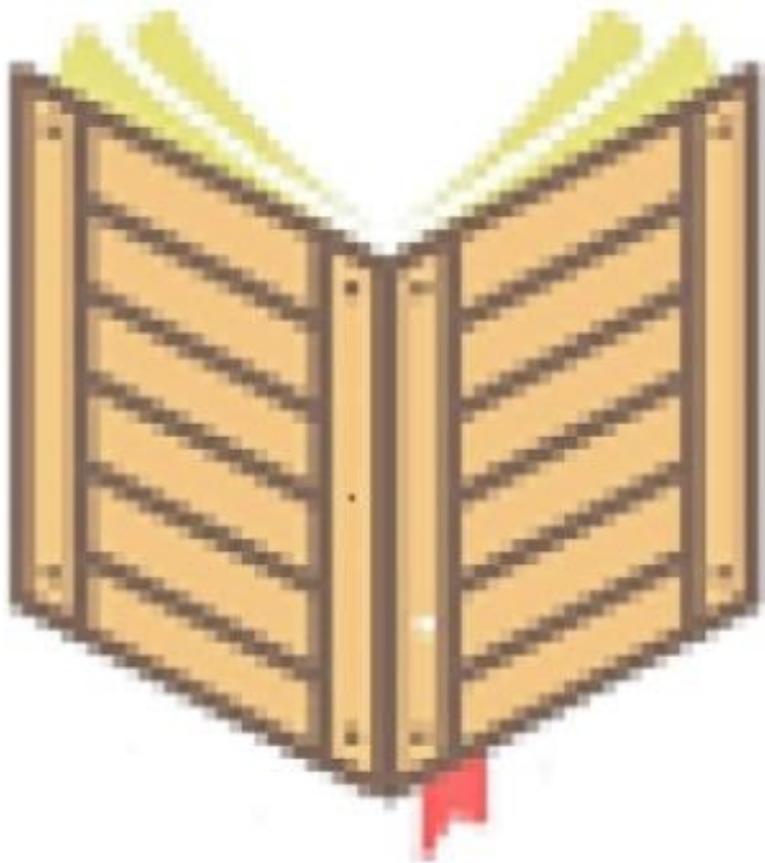
Me: Maybe it is maybe not. Can I sit and Qhawe I think it's time for that bottle of Whiskey. Lwazi: now

you are talking I'll bring the bottle and the glasses.

Bandile: I'll make something to nibble on.

Khanyi: Lwazi and Bandile will go grocery shopping tomorrow. (they turn to look at her they want to say something but she gives them that look that says "don't mess with me" so they decided to keep quiet.)

Qhawe: What is this all about? (Khanyi goes and sits on his lap with her legs inbetween his and she is facing my way. Lwazi comes back with the whiskey and wine for Khanyi)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Remember the last time we spoke in hospital I told you about how I was working with the police to bring down Zwelibanzi. Tomorrow Zwelibanzi is going to be arrested but we know that he is going to make to bail. His case is going to drag for a very a long time in court. But soon enough he won't even be able to afford a lawyer. What I'm about to tell you is going to shock you but before I tell you let me tell you about how I know Eddie.

Lwazi: just to remind you Sizwe that you might just leave this house in a body bag. Bandile: He knows that. Just let the man talk.

Me: khanyi when I tried to save you and almost died Eddie is the one that found me when Zweli left me for dead on the side of the road and nursed me back to health again and we've been friend ever since. Him being in your life was not by chance. When you left Zwelibanzi I put him in your path because I knew you would need him not only because of Zwelibanzi but also because of how you were growing as a person and how you were becoming a feisty businessperson. I knew you would have enemies along the line and I knew Zwelibanzi would eventually find you. I was not only sending money to you

Khanyi I was watching over you and the kids. I kept my distance to protect to you if he knew was keeping in touch with you he would have found you sooner.

Eddie: I didn't have to be around your house full time  
Khanyi. I could have installed the security system gave you all the guards you needed and that would have been it but when I met you I fell in love with your spirit the way you carry yourself and the way you dealt with me so I decided to be involved and I knew that would make Sizwe happy.

Khanyi: so you've known each other for a long time? (I just nod.) Ok. We get how you guys know each other what else do we need to know?

Me: When I told you about mr Tom being sick when you were in hospital I knew about his plan he told me about it and asked me to never stop protecting you until Zwelibanzi is dealt with.

Qhawe: I thought I heard you say that you knew about his plan.

Me: yes I knew. I tried to talk him out of it but the old man was very stubborn. Khanyi: You knew and you didn't tell me.

Me: He didn't want me to tell you. He wanted to tell you

himself.

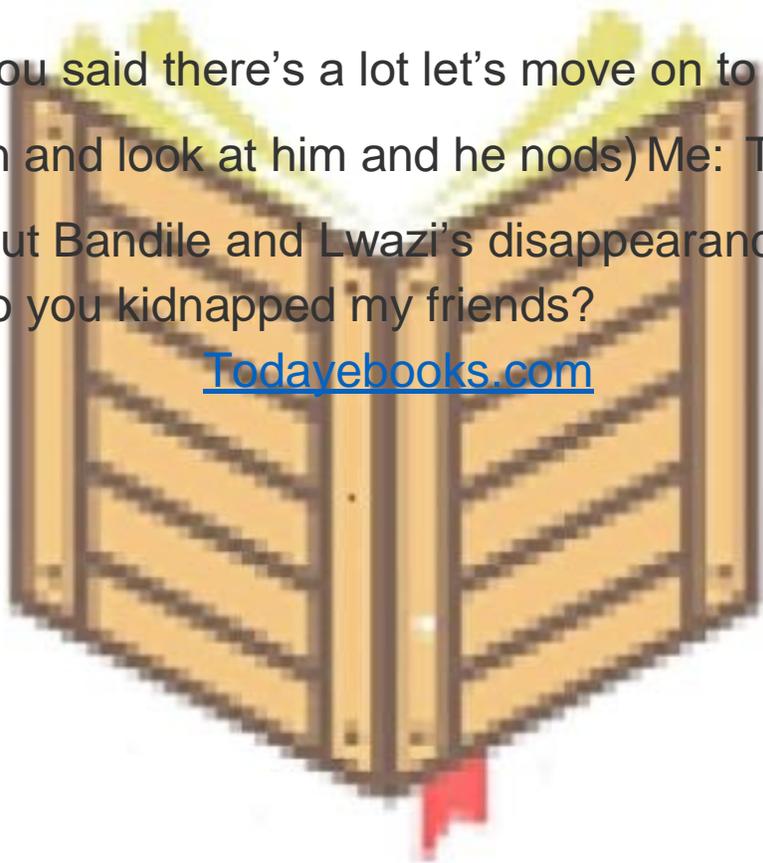
Khanyi: You could have warned me at least I would have been prepared for when he told me. I almost peed my pants when he told me. Hayi Sizwe a little warning would have been nice.

Me: I'm sorry Khanyi. (She keeps quiet and just looks at me.)

Bandile: You said there's a lot let's move on to the next part. (I turn and look at him and he nods) Me: The next part is about Bandile and Lwazi's disappearance.

Qhawe: so you kidnapped my friends?

[Todayebooks.com](http://Todayebooks.com)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

[Pdfdreams.com](http://Pdfdreams.com)

Enjoy lot of African new novels click on image that mention below



Me: Not exactly they came willingly. You could say Khanyi has everyone in this room wrapped around her little finger.

Khanyi: Hayibo

Sponsored

where do I fit in? I didn't do anything to anyone.

Lwazi: That's what you think and believe.

Anyway please let the man finish his story

Qhawe: Hey don't speak to her like that.

Me: can you guys stop it. Zwelibanzi has been losing a lot of money lately and receiving threats to stay away from you Khanyi hence he hasn't bothered you that much.

Bandile and Lwazi are behind that with the help of Sandiso the tech guy.

Khanyi: I don't understand

Lwazi: We've been stealing money from Zwelibanzi transferring it to an unknown account. He's been trying to trace where the money is going but he can't find it. The only person that will have access to that money is Linamandla but she doesn't know that and you don't have to worry even if he finds the money he won't know who has access to it. So the princess is safe. Well to put it correctly Sandiso has been stealing the money I have been the guy threatening him and his little family and Bandile was the bad guy that made random visits to the family hence he hasn't made his move yet he believes that his wife and twins are in danger.

Qhawe: and you didn't tell me. Yhooo so much for our friendship. Bandile: it's not about our friendship it's about keeping you guys safe.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: What do you mean keep us safe? The people that need to be kept safe here are Khanyi and the kids.

Eddie: That's where you are wrong. I've looked at this whole situation and Zwelibanzi will go after what make her weak and that's not the kids. Qhawe you don't seem to get that you are what makes her weak even though she doesn't want to fully admit it Khanyi will do anything for you she'll give up everything to save you. Zwelibanzi knows that should he break even a single hair on those kids' heads he is a dead man. With you it's different. She'll give him anything he wants just to keep you alive because you keep her alive. You are her heart and she is yours.

Me: it's true. Even if he hasn't figured it out yet but you Qhawe; you will be the target. Khanyi: We can't allow that to happen.

Eddie: You see what I mean. She might not admit it to herself she might not say it but her actions speak very loud. This is not just about protecting Khanyi and the kids it's about protecting you too. (Qhawe and Khanyi looked shocked and the seem not to be able to get this around their heads but I think they know it makes sense. Just then the kids walk. Is it afternoon already?)

Them: Guys

Khanyi: Hey babies (she stands and walks to them they hug and kiss her and they come to their dad and hug kiss and kiss him as well.)

Lonwabo: What's going on are you guys having some sort of a meeting. Khanyi: Yes we are.

Sibahle: Well we won't disturb you then. We'll see you later.

Ntando: Wait no this can't be mom! (he says looking at me and shock written all over his face.) Khanyi: it is baby. Go ahead.

Ntando: Uncle Sizwe is that you?

Me: yes it's me my boy( Lonwabo also turns to look as Lwanele jus to me for a hug) Lonwabo: We haven't seen you in a while

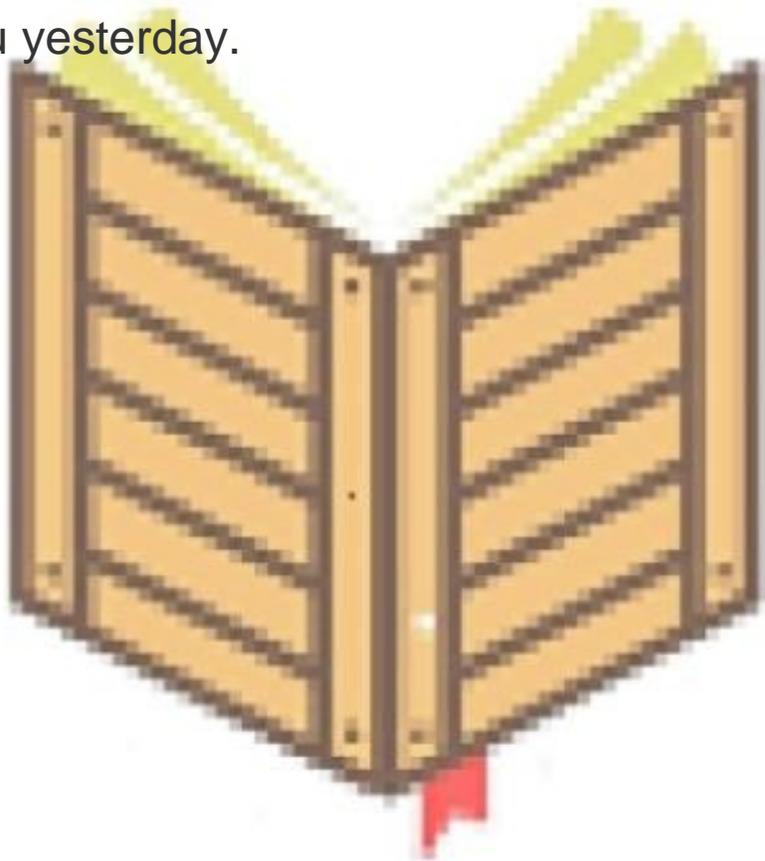
Lwanele: Where were you hiding yourself? You look different.

Me: I know I do princess. Tell you what; why don't guys go upstairs and I'll tell you about where I've been after this meeting I'm having with these big kids.

Lwanele: Ok then. We'll see you later.

Ntando: It's good to see you again Uncle Sizwe (and they walk upstairs.)

Luyanda: I just got a text from Mr Zulu he received the documents and filed them. The payments have been made and he says there's something else he wants to discuss with you Khanyi something he was told to discuss with just you. He's coming to Durban tomorrow and he says he has the keys that he was supposed to give to you yesterday.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: I guess we'll see him tomorrow then.

Qhawe: This must your week of getting

keys. I also have a key for you Andile:

Qhawe this is not the time to be romantic.

You can do that later. Qhawe: jealous

much are we?

Andile: You wish.. (I can't help but laugh at these guys.)

Me: Back to more issues that are serious. Now that we've

established who Zwelibanzi will be going after there's

more. Before I say anything Qhawe you need to keep

calm and don't kill me. (he looks at me with a raised

eyebrow.) After Khanyi was shot you told your dad and

your dad was angry. He contacted the police station and

wanted to know who was in charge of the case and he

was given Det. Nxele's number as it turns out they knew

each from a previous case. He wanted to know what was

going on and he was given all the info. I don't know how

he found me but he did and at that time I didn't even know

who he was. When I wanted to know who he was he said

I would have to bring a bottle of the most expensive

whisky. I still have to do that. Your father knew Mr Tom. (I

see shock on his face.) they were not friends or anything.

They were just business associates. When your father found out about Khanyi being shot he wanted to know everything he wanted to know why and who shot Khanyi. What I'm trying to tell you is that we've been working with your

father. He's the one that's helping track Zwelibanzi's drugs.

(I look at Khanyi and I look at Qhawe) Khanyi: Don't look at me I'm still trying to wrap my around the fact that you know Qhawe's father and you've been working with him.

Qhawe: Why are you looking at me I feel the same way he does. Still don't understand why I was not told any of this.

Me: If we had told you you have told your little miss here and she would have panicked and made all the wrong moves. Qhawe's father is behind Zwellibanzi's arrest.

CHAPTER 46

TUES

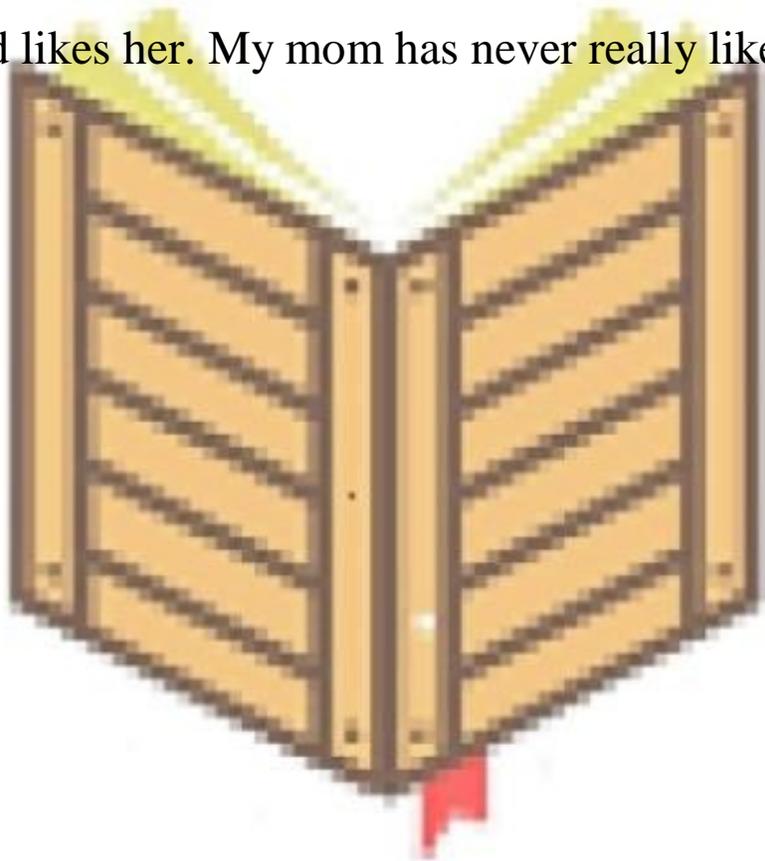
NOVELSGURU.COM

DAY

QHAW

E

The guys slept here last night. Sizwe kept dropping bombshells one after the other. I don't know how to take the news of my father's involvement in this. I know my father is a resourceful man I just didn't think he would use his resources for Khanyi. I think it makes sense now why mother doesn't like Khanyi it's because dad likes her. My mom has never really liked any girl of mine



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

that my dad liked. I need to speak to my dad about all this. As I walk to the kitchen I bump into Andile he is in his gym clothes.

Andile: Morning

Me: Morning where are the guys?

Andile: Not sure somewhere around this big house. Me: Ok.

Have you seen Khanyi and the kids?

Andile: She dropped the kids off at school came back and went straight to the gym. Me: Alright. Thanks. (I say walking towards the gym)

Andile: I wouldn't go in there if I were you Me: is it that serious?

Andile: serious is an understatement. Me: I'll take my chances.

Andile: It's your funeral.

Me: See you later man. (and I walk towards the home gym and when I get there Khanyi is punching the living day lights out of the punching bag. She must be really frustrated about this whole thing. I stand by the door and just watch her she stops she turns to look at me and smiles but her smile is not her usual smile. I walk in but she runs me and jumps into my arms wrapping her legs around my waist her arms around my neck and hides her

face on my neck. I walk to one of the benches and sit with her still in the position. She has wrapped herself around me so tight as if she is saying something. I know what she is saying with this action I have learned to understand what she means by her actions but sometimes I wish she could just say it.)

Me: I'll never leave you I'm here and we'll get through this. You'll never lose me no matter what your ex tries he won't win. (she pulls out a little and looks at me. I can see the love she has for me and I see the fear she has for her family.)

Khanyi: I'm scared Qhawe I really am.

Me: you don't have to be I'm here baby and I'm not going anywhere.

Khanyi: what if he manages to get to you Qhawe? I couldn't live with myself knowing the kids lost their father because of me.

Me: there is no way you are losing me. Eddie and Sizwe will never allow that.

"He is right Khanyi we'll never allow that to happen." (that was Eddie and Sizwe they are in their gym clothes as well)

Eddie: I thought we were going to walk into a war zone in here when Andile said the two of you were here. How do you manage to keep her that calm ever since I've known her I would never come in here when she relieving stress.

Me: I don't really do anything special man. The way she is wrapped around me right now seems to do the trick everytime. (she smacks my shoulder playfully and laughs a little.)

Sizwe: He is her heart and she is his heart. From what I've heard about Qhawe he is also not that calm in situations like these but around her he is as calm as anything. Qhawe your dad is on his way here.

Me: What? How did he know I was here?

Eddie: We told him. He wants to explain everything.

Sizwe: he knows I told you the truth. There's something that I didn't you last night.

Me: Sizwe don't you think you've dropped enough bomb shells and now you want to drop another one.

Sizwe: it's something I have to do and I promise for now this is the last one.

Me: Meaning there's still more. You know what go ahead drop another one. ( Khanyi laughs and she still wrapped around me she really doesn't want to let go she's being her childish self now.)

Sizwe: A few months back before Khanyi was shot I was dating this woman but she was so hung up on her ex that she broke things off with me to pursue her ex who had moved on with his life and has someone he truly loves but she couldn't accept that and ended up shooting the woman her ex is dating.

Me: Don't tell me you were dating Anelisa.

Sizwe: I was but I didn't know she was your ex until I found out about what she did. After I found out I tried to find out everything I could about her and I did. And I made her suffer for what she did. Trust me you don't want to know the details. What I really want to tell you is that she is pregnant right now with my child I am going to be a single father in a few months to come and I am asking for your help to raise my child.

(Khanyi lets go of me gets off me and walks to Sizwe. I'm still shocked. I have never been so shocked so many times in my life in such a short space of time.)

Khanyi: You are going to be a dad you are finally going to be a dad? (after everything that Sizwe said right now is that all she heard?)

Sizwe: Yes I am. You are finally going to be aunt to my child. (She hugs him and congratulates him.)

Me: How far along is she?

Sizwe: She's 3 months.

Me: wait if she is three months pregnant that means it happened after Khanyi was shot

Sponsored

that means it happened after Khanyi was shot did you....?

Sizwe: Yes it happened after Khanyi w me if she didn't want me to but she never did. When I asked why she didn't stop me she said she wanted it.

Me: I get it. (I't really don't want to know what happened.)

Khanyi: so we have six months to get ready for the baby.

Where will you be staying? Sizwe: Well I'm buying the house next door.

Khanyi: That's great. You should finalise the sale soon so that we can get the baby's room ready. (this woman is so excited about this and I'm still trying to wrap my head around the fact that my kids will have a new sibling. My dad walks interrupting my thoughts.)

Loyiso (My Dad): So this is where you hold meetings in the morning very unusual. Me: this is where we relieve our stresses and this is not a meeting we just having a conversation. How are you dad?

Loyiso: I'm good son and how are you how are you Khanyi? Me: I'm good dad.

Khanyi: I'm ok tata. Please excuse me I need to go change. Loyiso: ok and when you are done we have lots to talk about.

Khanyi: Ok. I'll be quick. (and she walks away.)

Qhawe: wait babe I'll come with you and also change. (she turns to look at me and gives me a naughty smile.)

Khanyi: Race you to the bedroom? Me: and if you lose?

Khanyi: I'm not going to lose (still giving me that naughty smile of hers.)

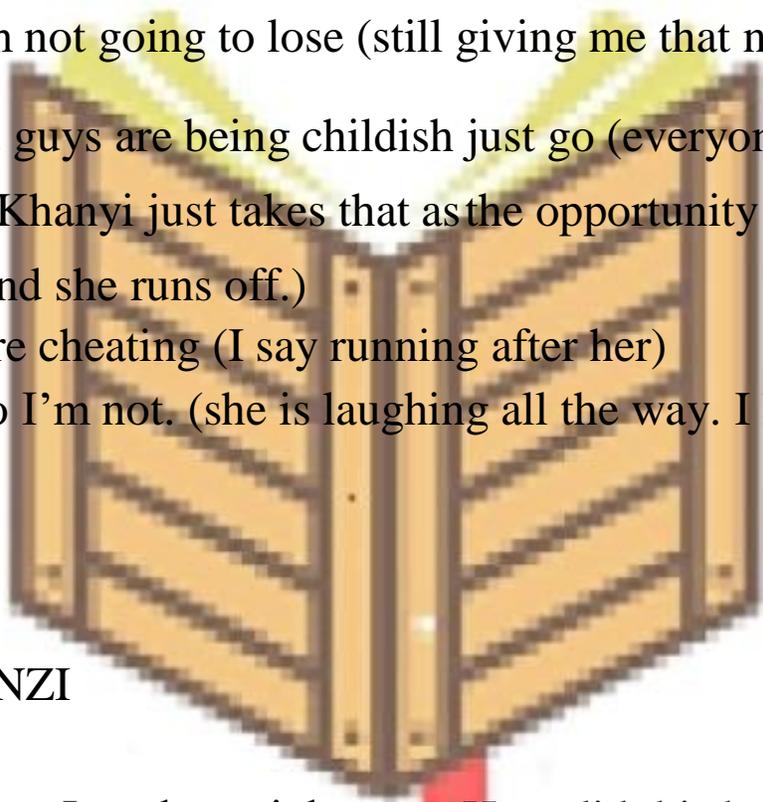
Sizwe: You guys are being childish just go (everyone just laughs and Khanyi just takes that as the opportunity to get a head start and she runs off.)

Me: You are cheating (I say running after her)

Khanyi: No I'm not. (she is laughing all the way. I love hearing her laugh.)

ZWELIBANZI

I can't believe I am here right now. How did this happen? I have to get myself out this situation. I don't even like being in this room. It's obvious that this mystery caller of mine was



NOVELSGURU.COM

not just making threats he lived up to his threats. He did say he wanted to see me in jail. He just began a never ending journey for me of being in and out of a police station. Dammit and I can bet my life that Khanyi is involved somehow whether directly or indirectly. Someone walks in and sits on the opposite side right in front of me.

Him: are you ok Mr Tom do you need anything?

Me: Why would I be ok with being in a police station and in cuffs? Him: Oh those I can take those off as long as you promise to behave.

Me: Where could I possibly run to it is a police station after all. (he walks to my side and takes off my cuffs and goes back to his seat.) Thank you. What am doing here and who are you?

Him: Well I'm Detective Nxele and your lawyer is on his way. We are waiting for him so that we can start with the interrogation.

Me: Why do I need a lawyer? I'm not guilty of anything.

Him: I wouldn't be too sure if I were you. Let me leave I'll be back with your lawyer.

Me: you are the famous Detective Nxele you even solve cold cases and I'm pretty sure that you know you have nothing on me and I'll be out of here soon.

Him: I wouldn't say famous but I am good at what I do and I know you will be out of here soon. As for me having nothing on you I wouldn't be so sure of that if I were you. (with that he leaves the room. I know for a fact they have something on me

otherwise I wouldn't be here. I need to find a way to make this case disappear and this is going to be difficult because this detective is one of those that can't be bought. This man lives for this he is passionate about being a cop. I need to know his weak spot everyone has one.)

SIMA

Shit!! I can't believe Zweli has just been arrested. I can't believe the charges against him. That can't be the Zweli I know. It doesn't matter I love him and I'm not letting him rot in jail. I can't go there right now because of the twins but his lawyer is on his way there. I hope he appears in court soon for his bail hearing. In the meantime I need to take care of this Khanyisile problem. I need to make a call.

Him: what do you want this call can only mean trouble. Me: I need you to take care of someone for me.

Him: I don't come cheap you know that and I'm sure the man who raised you would be proud of you right now.

Me: what do you mean proud?

Him: remember how he used to say you can't run away from this life and he was right. Look at you wanting to get rid of someone and using one his best man.

Me: You are not going to tell him and besides this is a once off.

Him: once you start darling you never go back but if that's what you say then oh well... who is this person you want taken of?

Me: Khanyisile Sondlo girlfriend to Qhawe

Mtimkhulu the architect guru. Him: forge itt. She's a no go I can't do it. find someone else.

Me: What do you mean you can't do it?

Him: I mean exactly that Sima. Anyone who tries to go after her ends up in jail or dead in a ditch somewhere. I am good at what I do I've never been caught. Going after her means the end of my life. I love my life and I'm not ready to die yet or go to jail for that matter.

Me: I don't understand. What is it about this woman?

Him: do your homework properly and you will find out that she is not one to be messed with. The lady rubs shoulders with the best of the best. The security company she uses only deals with the elite. Find someone else darling.

Me: Anyone you can recommend.

Him: the few people I know won't take this job. Sorry dear I can't help you. Speak to the big man maybe he can help.

Me: No I'm not going to speak to him. I have to go.

Him: Sorry I couldn't help. Whatever you do Sima keep one

thing in mind. The woman that tried to kill her the first time got off easy. Be careful you might not be so lucky if you get caught and your husband is in deep shit because he couldn't leave her alone. (he hangs up. DAMN YOU KHANYISILE!!!!)

## CHAPTER 47

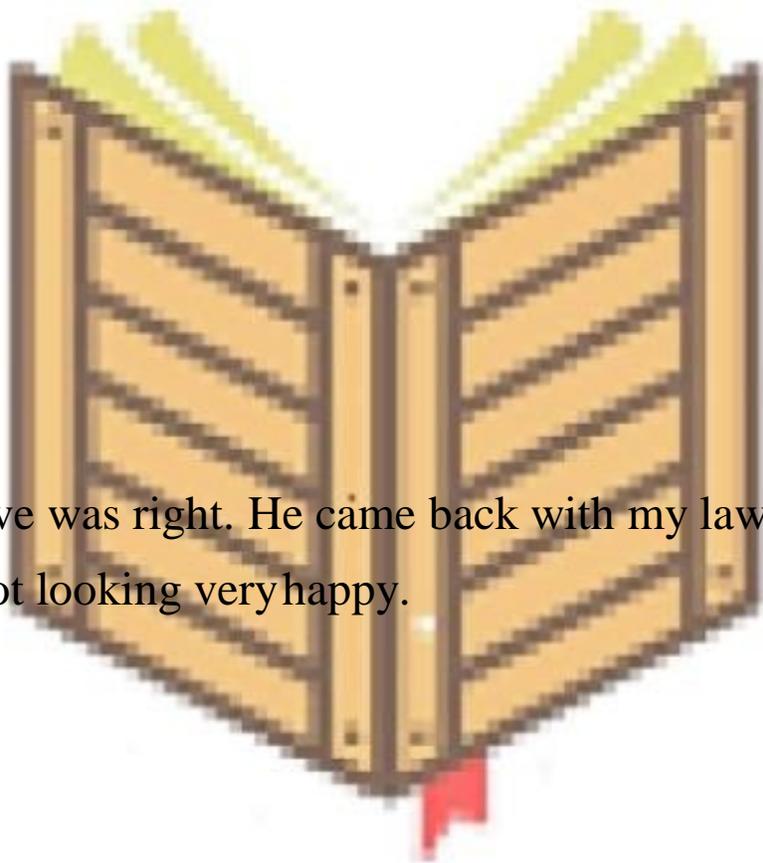
STILL

TUESDAY

ZWELIBA

NZI

The detective was right. He came back with my lawyer and my lawyer is not looking very happy.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Det. Nxele: I did promise I would come back with your lawyer. Are you still ok? (this detective is playing games with me) No we can begin.

Me: Jonathan I need to get out of here soon. They have nothing on me.

Jonathan: that's where you are wrong. They have a lot on you and the charges they have against you you might not even get bail.

Me: What are you talking about Jonathan?

Det. Nxele: tell me Mr Tom what was your involvement with Dunham Import and Exports before it was turned to Diamond Enterprises? (shit! This is not good not good at all. That's the company I want from Khanyi how did he manage ..... Damn.)

Me: Nothing I had no involvement with them.

Det. Nxele: ok we'll come back to that. I have documents here linking you to a drug shipment from Nigeria actually not just one shipment.

Me: those could have been forged.

Jonathan: he is right those could have been forged. We can always get a handwriting expert for authentication.

Det. Nxele: I knew you would say that. We'll have the results tomorrow. Jonathan: Detective may I have a moment with my client?

Det. Nxele: you may have all the time you need I'll continue with my questions tomorrow before he goes for his bail hearing. (and the detective walks out.)

Me: My bailing hearing is tomorrow? Jonathan I can't spend the night here

Jonathan: don't you think I know that. I couldn't get the usual judge and the judge available will be attend the case tomorrow. You'll have to suck it up and I can't make this case disappear like the other ones. The case file is only handled by Det. Nxele. Right now it is safe to say you my friend you are screwed. Trust me when I tell you this you are going down and there's nothing I can do for you. I'll try my best but I can't promise you anything.

They have you on drug trafficking and prostitution. They are still investigating the Human trafficking but the evidence they have against you is overwhelming and it is safe to say you have a moule in your business.

Me: I know but I can't figure out who it is at first I thought it was Sizwe and I stopped telling him everything. The shipments from Nigeria he didn't know about them. Something is not adding up here Jonathan. I have a mystery caller that keeps calling threatening my family and me. He even told me to tell Sima to leave Khanyi alone. Find out for me what Sima is planning. This woman is going to ruin things for me. I'm losing everything and she is going to make things worse.

Jonathan: I'll do what I can.

Me: You better I'm paying a lot of money for being my lawyer.

(his phone rings he answers and hands to me without saying anything) who is it?

Jonathan: I don't know he wants to talk to you.

\*\*\*\*\*

Phone conversation

Me: hello

Him: how does it feel knowing your days are numbered? Me: What do you want?

Him: Your lawyer is not going to be able help you this time I hope you know that. I also know you are going to get out on bail but you won't be outside for long. You see Mr Tom I am going to find what I am looking for. The detective will add murder soon on your charge sheet. All those people you killed for their organs you are going to pay. It is only just a matter of time before I find everything I am looking for.

Me: You know what I am getting tired of your little threats....  
(he cuts me short)

Him: I think I have proven that I'm not just threatening you Mr Tom since right now you are sitting with your lawyer inside a police station. The reason I called you is that your wife is

planning to kill Miss Sondlo and she is talking to the wrong people she is digging her own grave and she is going to die if she is not careful. I'm telling you again talk to her before I do something and that you won't like.

Me: I will talk to her but keep this in mind I will get to Khanyi and I will have her or else no one will. She is going to give me back everything that my dad gave to those brats and as for you you better sleep with one eye open because I will find you and when I do you will beg for me to kill you.

Him: being taugh nhe. Don't say I didn't warn you (he hangs up)

\*\*\*\*\*

Jonathan: is that your  
mystery caller? Me: yes  
it was.

Jonathan: how did he get my number how did he even know I was here?

Me: I don't know. He knows a lot about me. He knows everything he knows things you don't even know about me.

Jonathan: and you just threatened a man like that you must have a death wish.

Me: I had to I'm losing a lot of money because of this guy. Let me make a call. It's time for

them to know they can't mess with me. (I make a call to one of my guys I can't lose everything I've worked for.)

Phone conversation:

Me: where are you?

Him: Watching the kid he is alone today. Me: Take him and I'll come by tomorrow.

Him: Sure thing boss. (he hangs up)

\*\*\*\*\*

Jonathan: You are playing with fire and you are going to burn. (with that he stood up and left and an officer came in and took me to a holding cell. There were other guys but I just kept to myself. If the social workers find about this I'm going to lose my visitation rights I still need these visits. Who is doing this to me if this detective finds out what happened to the people I trafficked I'm done for it. if I had listened and just left well enough alone none of this would be happening then if I can't have her

then no one will I won't be the only one losing here.)

## KHANYISILE

I am dating the craziest man I love the fact

he loves my childiness. Me: Qhawe hayi

Qhawe: hayibo Khanyi why not?

Me: Your dad is here behave. (we are standing in the middle of the lounge on our way to the kitchen for breakfast)

Qhawe: dad won't mind I'll just be kissing the woman I love that's all and it won't be the firsttime kissing her in front of him.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: it's not like I had a choice the first time it happened at your parents house. (right now I am walking backwards away from him and he is walking towards me from slowly.) Qhawe stop being childish.

Qhawe: Really Khanyi I'm the one being childish. If you allowed me to kiss me when we reached the bottom of the stairs none of this would be happening.

Me: let's say I allow you to kiss me what if he walks in with your tongue down my throat and your hands grabbing on my ass and me moaning in your mouth?

"I would say my son chose well. The way you are right now reminds me of how my wife and i can be sometimes." (that was Qhawe's dad talking behind me and I almost bumped into him

Sponsored

I was so embarrassed and Qhawe took that as opportunity to take me into his arms.) Qhawe: Tata you are making my Queen shy.

Loyiso: that's not being shy that's blushing.

Me: can we go to the kitchen now please. (when we get to the kitchen Sizwe is already making breakfast eish these guys and cooking in my kitchen these days that's not good and the other guys are sitting around the kitchen counter waiting but Lwazi is

not here. Do they really have to sit around the counter I have a dining table in the kitchen.) two of you need to move to the table. Bandile: but why?

Me: Because I want to sit on one of the high chairs and this is not open for negotiation Bandile and you guys need to stop cooking all the time in my kitchen.

Bandile: why can't we cook now?

Me: I'm not saying you can't cook but not everyday since it seems like you are here every day now and Qhawe can't always eat food cooked by you guys. I need to cook for my man and my kids

Bandile: but we can't wait for you to cook when we are hungry? Me: Bandile who's house is this?

Bandile: Yours

Me: Who's rules do you follow

when you are here? Bandile: Yours

Me: good now we understand each other. After breakfast you and Lwazi are going grocery shopping and you are using your own money. I'll make a list for you.

Loyiso: Why are they doing the grocery shopping? (I forgot he was here.)

Me: it's their turn tata. These men eat a lot when they are here and I make them buy groceries. Qhawe and I can't always to buying groceries for them.

Loyiso: am I also going to buy groceries because I am always going to be here for the whole month.

Me: No you won't tata.

Qhawe: dad you are staying for the whole month? What does mom say about that? Loyiso: she is also coming.

She'll be here tomorrow. We have a beach house in Mhlanga. Eddie: Can we get down to business.

Me: Bandile please move to the table I want to sit

Bandile: hayibo Khanyi out of all these guys you choose me

Me: Yes because you talk too much. Now move please Sizwe is dishing up. (he quietly moves and Andile follows him. (Qhawe takes Andile's seat which is next to me. Sizwe dishes up from everyone and we eat. Eddie looks at Qhawe's dad giving him the go ahead to speak.)

Loyiso: we are going to talk while eating in the kitchen Eddie: You'll

get used to it. we did.

Loyiso: I see. Qhawe I know you have a lot of questions I am going to try and answer them. I saw how broken you were when she got shot that's why I decided to be involved in this I was very shocked to find out that it was Anelisa who did it. I can see how much you love Khanyi even though she is holding

back she loves you too. Another reason I am doing this is that I was asked to by Mzimkhulu Tom. We were not friends we didn't even know each other that well I don't know why he trusted me with this. He has shares in one of my businesses that's how we knew each other. Back in the days a year after I started my business it was struggling I was

losing money didn't have enough clients he came to my rescue and bought 10% of the company. I would say he saved my business. We would only meet every quarter to discuss how the business doing. No one knows about the 10%. He also left that to you Khanyi. (this old man is really digging a grave for me.)

Me: Meaning that my kids own 10% of your company.

Loyiso: No Khanyi it means you own 10% of my company. He transferred the shares to your name not to the kids but to you and you are not allowed to sell them. His profit share went into a savings account which he called the Rainy day fund. You are supposed to continue saving the money for that rainy day.

Me: I don't have a choice in this now do I. this old man has control of my life from beyond the grave. Maybe I should just kill Zwelibanzi once and for all.

Loyiso: You can't do that. Who is going to be there for my kids if you go to jail for killing that idiot.

Qhawe: Does mom know about all this is it the reason why she doesn't like Khanyi?

Loyiso: Yes she knows but it's not the reason why she doesn't like her. Your mom is just being her usual self. She wants you to date the girl she thinks is good for you like she has always done.

Me: how did you know about Zwelibanzi's dealings.

Loyiso: His father told me that his son was involved in illegal business so I investigated and found out a lot and here we are today. (his phone beeps he takes it out of his pocket and looks at.)

Loyiso: he has been arrested but he is not going to be there for long.

Eddie: We need to move fast and this guy really knows how to hide his illegal business. We need more information regarding the human trafficking and the people that owned Khanyi's company before her know nothing.

Bandile: maybe we should investigate from a different prospective. Andile: which would be?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: investigate overseas. The people were being shipped overseas right. Start investigating from the destinations of his shipments. (Lwazi walks where was he?)

Lwazi: we have a problem

Eddie: what kind of a problem what happened with the call

Lwazi: he is not backing down he is going to fight back and Sima is trying kill you Khanyi. Me: honestly what is it with these women and trying to kill me?

Eddie: this is not good.

Me: can someone please bring me Sima I need to deal with her. Qhawe: what do you mean deal with her just let us handle this.

Andile: Qhawe leave it alone let her do it trust me you don't want to go there. Qhawe: Actually I do. She is not going to deal with her we are going to handle this. Me: I want everyone out of this kitchen I need to talk to my man alone.

Andile: I told to leave it alone. Let's go guys (he looks at Qhawe and shakes his head as they walk out)

Me: Qhawelomzi Mtimkhulu (and I here Lwazi cursing) understand this I am going to deal with Simamkele whether you like it or not and I am going to deal with her my way. Don't tell me that you guys are going to handle this. These two idiots are messing with my life and you want to sit here and twiddle my thumbs. That's not going to happen. (he gets up from his seat stands in

front of me he lifts me puts on the kitchen counter he stands between my legs and takes my arms puts them around his neck and holds me close to me.)

Qhawe: You know I love you right and I need you to listen to me this time.

Me: No Qhawe I am going to deal with her because if I don't she is going to think that she can walk all over me. And I am not trying to disrespect you you need to let me do this Que. Let's not discuss it. (he tries to say something but I just kiss him to shut him up) I love you too (he kisses me again)

“guys come on we eat in this kitchen go to your bedroom.

This is the second time we are catching in the kitchen.”

That was Banele

Me: Aren't you supposed to be on campus. Twins: we are on our way.

Bandile(twin): don't change the subject missy. Lonwabo was right we need to set some house rules for you guys and grandpa is here do you really want him to be seeing you like this. The uncles are used to already even us as kids we are used to seeing you like this and you seem to forget that there are kids in this house who do not need to any of this and you are going to traumatise the old man.

Loyiso: Who are you calling old? Leave my kids alone. (everyone just laughs)

THURSDAY

ZWELIBANZI

I am out on bail and everyone is going to know that they can't mess with me. Khanyi is going to sign over everything my dad gave my kids. First I need to deal with Sima. Speak of the devil:

Me: I was just coming to you. Please sit. Sima:

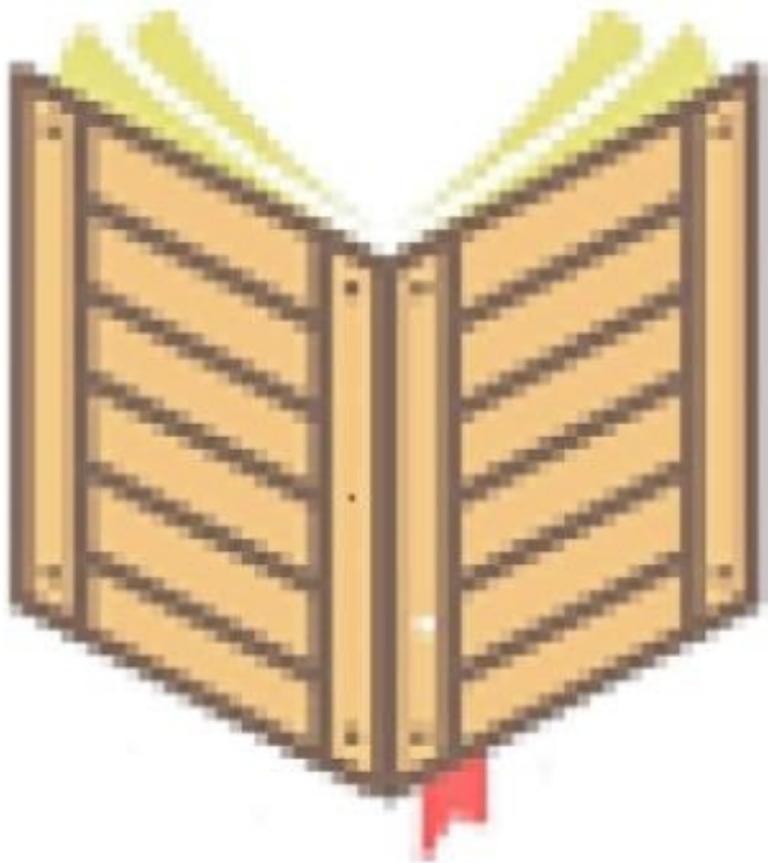
What's wrong?

Me: What is this I hear about you trying to kill Khanyi? Sima: who told you that?

Me: I am only going to say this once to you and once only. Stay away from Khanyi. I need that woman alive not dead. This life you are living now will end if you refuse to listen.

Sima: Zweli I'm tired of everything being about Khanyi. It's always Khanyi this and Khanyi that. I still want to know what your father meant when he said that Khanyi

went through hell with you.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: and I told you that everything and anything that has to do with Khanyi and me is none of your business stay out of it. pay attention to your relationship with me and the twins and leave everything else alone. Do you hear me Sima?

Sima: fine. It's your way or the high way you won't even tell me what you were arrested for. I won't waste my breath trying to talk to you. I am also taking your father's advice and starting my own business. (she stands and walks out. This woman is going to be the end of me. I need to make a call)



\*\*\*\*\*

Him: Boss

Me: how is our guest doing? Him: very quiet it scares me.

Me: I'm on my way maybe he'll talk to me. Him: Sure boss

\*\*\*\*\*

I grab my keys and my wallet and walk out. I bump into Sima. Me: I'll see you in a few hours.

Sima: whatever. (she is sulking she'll get over it.)  
(I walk to my car and drive off. I hope this plan works.)

When I get to my destination it is very quiet. I walk in the house and see Songezo.

Me: Where is he?

Songezo: in the special room. Come with me. (I walk into the room and there he is tied up on a chair)

Me: thanks Songezo please leave us. (and he walks out) how are you feeling?

Him: Let's see I'm in a cold room tied up on a chair been here for a day now and I haven't eaten I couldn't be better.

Me: you are very cocky I would be nice to me if I were.

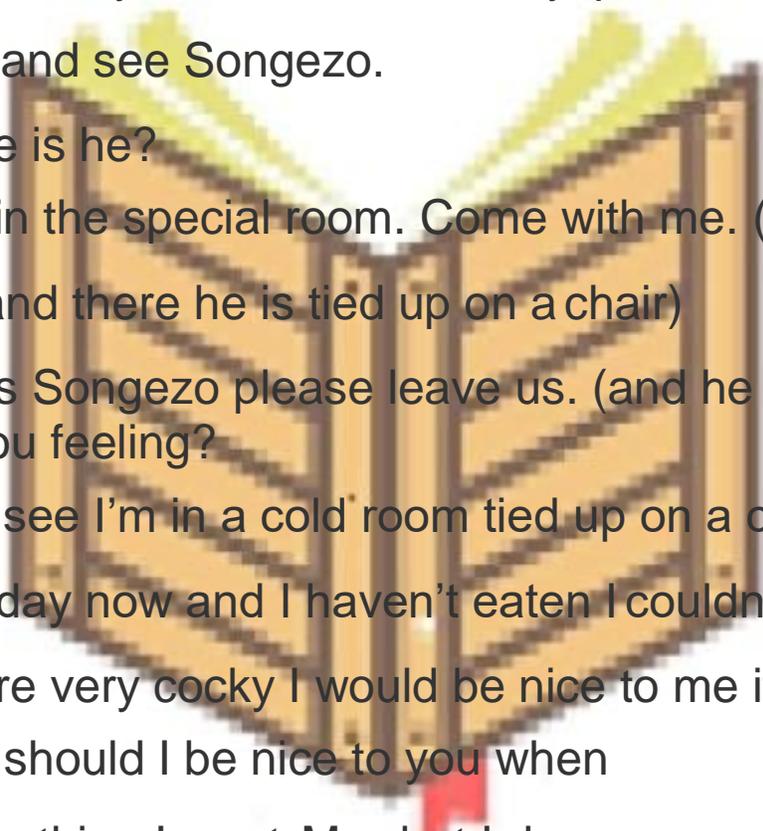
Him: Why should I be nice to you when you have nothing I want. Me: but I do

have something you want your

freedom

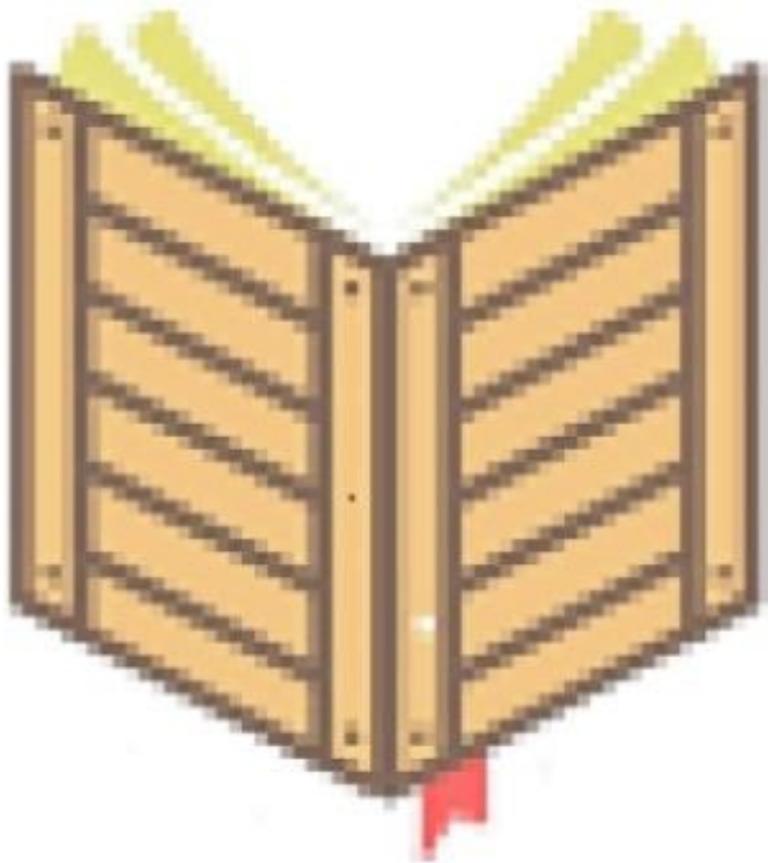
Him: Oh please do you really think my freedom is in your hands I think it's the other way

around. You need me more than I need and I know you won't kill me you need me alive because your life depends



NOVELSGURU.COM

on whether I live or die.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: you are right about that. I'm keeping you alive until I get what I want.

Him: if you think you are going to get anything by keeping me here then you are more stupid than I thought. Do you really think keeping here and starving me is really going to make a difference on how things turn out. You haven't thought this through. Your anger and your greed drive how you think as a result you just made the biggest mistake of your life. Keep this in mind Zwelibanzi I'm only here because I'm letting you to keep me here.

Me: You are so sure of yourself aren't you. Him: let's just say I had a good trainer.

Me: I see . make yourself comfortable you are going to be here for a while. Before I forget I just need to take a few pictures of you and you are going to a roommate tonight (I walk over to him and untie the ropes and walk out the room making sure I lock the steel door.)

I guess he is a lot tougher than I thought.

Me: Songezo I need you to get the big guy as well I'm sure that will be easy. Get him and bring him here.

Songezo: Sure sure boss.

## KHANYISILE

Bandile and Lwazi eventually bought groceries and they went back to their own houses yesterday. I know for sure by dinner time they will be here. Qhawe went to the office. Eddie and Andile are out to God knows where. I have this very uneasy feeling that something is wrong and Khaya is not answering his phone which is so unlike him maybe they are busy at music studio. I am waiting for my guest to arrive. Yes speak of the devil Jason walks in with my guest.

Me: thank you Jason please take the kids to the game room and organise them some snacks. (he takes the kids and walks away ) Hello Sima how are you dear?

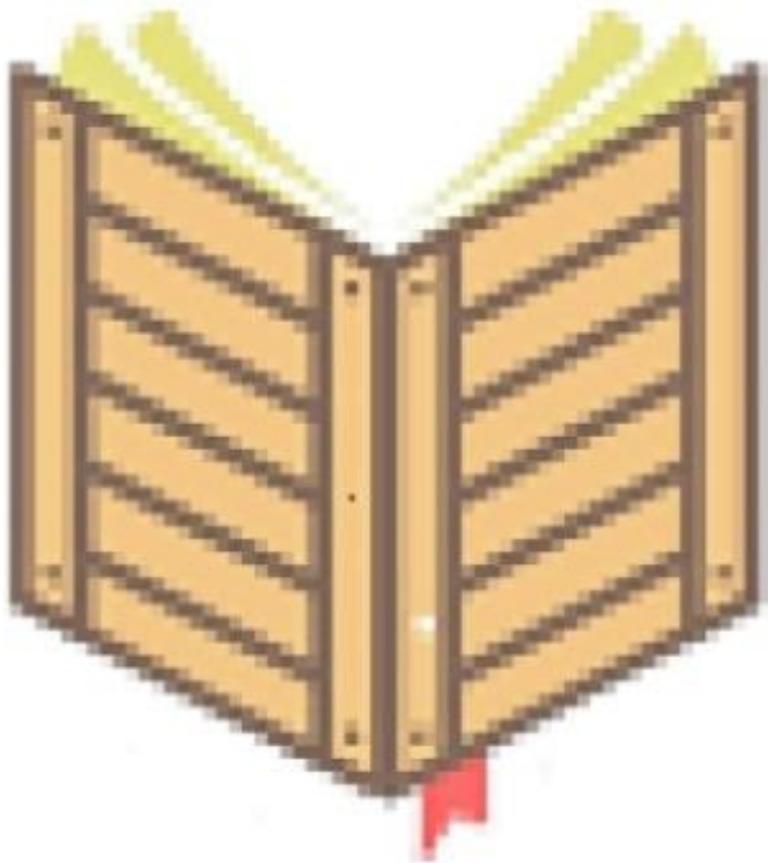
Sima: what am I doing here?

Me: Ok straight to the point. I am making your job easy. You don't have to send anyone to kill me you can do it yourself. Here take this (I say taking out my gun from under the coffee table and she looks shocked.)

Sima: you must be crazy

Me: hayibo Sima how is it that I'm crazy

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

you are the one that wanted to kill me but you know what as for me I am going to kill you but before I do I want us to talk a little bit.

Sima: unless you are signing over my kids company and their trust funds over to me then we have nothing to talk about.

Me: Oh Sima darling that's not going to happen and you don't have to talk you can just listen. Sima: you are wasting my time Khanyi Zweli will be home soon. (she stands getting ready to walk to the same direction she saw Jason.)

Me: Sit down Sima. (she folds her arms across her chest and stares at me>) Sima:

Where are my kids. I need to leave

Me: I said sit down. (I say it in the most calm manner and point the gun at her) **SIT DOWN MRS TOM!**

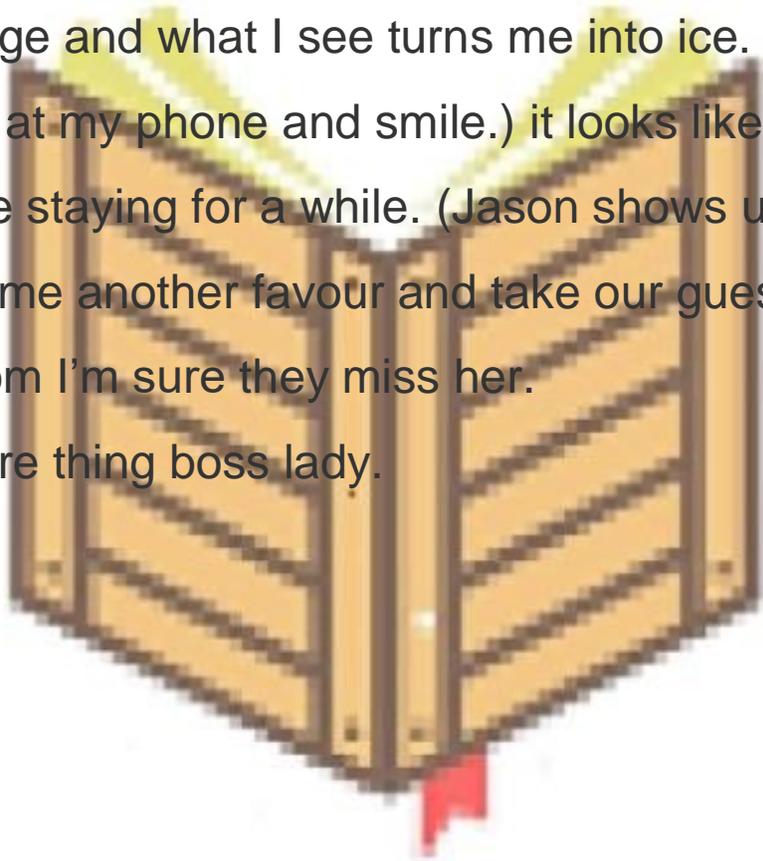
Sima: I don't understand what you want. You have everything everything is always about you. It's always you and those brats of yours. I'm tired of it. yes I wanted to kill you because I'm tired of leaving in your shadow. Even

though you left him he still wants you. I hate you you are ruining my life. I can't even kill you because Zweli needs you alive for some reason.

Me: Wow that was a mouthful. Sima do you know how it was for me living with Zwelibanzi the six years that I was married to him? Let me tell you. You see everytime when he came back from being with you he would force himself on me he would beat me he would say hurtful things to me and my kids. He gave my kids emotional scars that took a very long time to heal. He left me with physical and emotional scars that still haven't completely healed. Your precious Zwelibanzi broke me into a million pieces that I am still trying to put together. (she is so shocked she can't believe the things I am saying to her.) he abused this family that he claims to love today. If you look at this correctly I should be hating you because you lived comfortably. He loved you and showed you that he loves you as for me I suffered with my kids while you were happy. When one of his friends tried to help me leave he almost killed him. When I left four years ago that was the beginning of a new life for me and my kids and what you see here is all my doing. I worked hard to be where I am

today and I am not about to let a stupid little spoiled wife and her idiotic husband take that away from me. You see Sima a woman already tried to kill me because she wanted Qhawe and look at me now. Now you want to kill me because you think I want Zwelibanzi. You are very stupid. (my phone beeps I take it and look at the message and what I see turns me into ice. I look at Sima then at my phone and smile.) it looks like you are going to be staying for a while. (Jason shows up.) Jason please do me another favour and take our guest to the games room I'm sure they miss her.

Jason: Sure thing boss lady.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Thanks Jason. Oh and Sima don't think about escaping you won't even make it to the front gate without being caught. I'll join you soon. ( I call Qhawe but he doesn't answer. He's probably in a meeting. Andile and Eddie walk in.)

Me: Where were you?

Eddie: I had something to take care of. (I take my phone and show him the picture I received)

Me: I hope for your sake that this is what you were taking care of. (they look shocked and angry at the same time) was this the business you taking care of.

Andile: No it was not but we'll get on it.

Me: and do what exactly Andile don't piss me off more than I already am. Eddie: how did this happen?

Me: you are asking me you are seriously asking me that question the same question I should be asking you Eddie. (I am being tested.)

NOVELSGURU.COM

CHAPTER 49

STILL

THURSDAY

## KHANYISIL

E

I had a doctor's appointment today. The bullet wounds have completely healed I don't feel pain anymore. My doctor gave me a clean bill of health. As I walk into the house these guys are sitting in the lounge busy on their laptops. Lwanele walks down the stairs she greets and walks to the kitchen.

Me: Where is our guest? (Before they could answer me

Lwanele walks in holding a small bottle of juice.)

Lwanele: Mom is dad still at work?

Me: yes he is Princess do you need anything?

Lwanele: no mom. I just have this uneasy feeling about him. Oh the twins are here.

Me: I'm sure he is ok and I know about the twins. Do me a favour and call their mother for me. Thank you (she runs off.)

guys I need you your attention please put the laptops away. (just then Sima walks in) Please sit Sima. (My phone beeps again and it's another picture and this makes my knees weak. If I was standing I probably would have fallen. I try to collect myself and keep calm.)

Sima you and your husband are playing with fire and you are going to burn. You guys are really messing with me in the wrong way. When I had you brought here I had no intentions of keeping

you longer than I had to. That plan has changed. You are going to stay until further notice all because that stupid husband of yours did something stupid something that is going to get him killed.

Sima: Khanyi you can't kill him please. The kids still need him.

Me: I'm sorry Sima but Zwelibanzi did this to himself. I am going to send someone to your house to get a few things that you will need. Take this write down a list and I'll call the help to pack the things for you.

Sima: Khanyi please don't do this. Eddie: Just do as she says.

Me: Sima answer me this; looking at the current situation between you and me who should be killing who? (she looks at me with tears in her eyes and she doesn't have an answer for me.) I thought so.

(I take out my phone and open the pictures that were sent to me.) Look at these pictures that's my son and that is the man I love. Yazi Sima wena nomyeni wakho ninyatheke inyoka emsileni.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

{ You know Sima you and your husband just stepped on the snake's tail. } do you know what happens when one does that they get bitten and they die.

Eddie: he has Qhawe too. This is bad.

Me: Take my phone and take that number down you can also

download those pics. Call Zack and Sandiso they need to be here. I need them to trace the calls that he is going to be making to me.

Andile: I'll call Lwazi and Bandile to come over.

Me: You don't have to. They are probably on their way they love the food in this house too much besides they bought groceries so obviously they want to eat here. (I feel a bit light headed right now. may I stood uup too fast.)

Eddei: Khanyi you are not ok. Why don't you sit down and breathe a little.

Me: Eddie he is messing with me he is messing with my family

Eddie. (I feel my tears falling on my face. Eddie just holds.)

Eddie: I know Princess and we are going to find them.

Me: I'll be upstairs Sima go back to your kids I'll deal with you later. Andile take my phone and take pictures of her and the kids. (I walk away and go upstairs.)

Zwelibanzi is really playing with fire. He still thinks that I'm that woman i was when I was married to him the woman he broke. He is really shitting on me right now and he is going to regret this. I strip naked and walk in to a shower I need the hot shower to clear my head. The

water feels so good. I need my boys to hang in there. Qhawe looked liked he was out. I wonder what he used to drug him. I get dressed in one of his shirts and leggings I go and check on the kids and they are going to want to know where they are why they are not home. Sibahle has become so close to Khaya now. The relationship that these kids built between themselves in such a short space of time is amazing their bonds with each other are so tight and the relationship my kids have with Qhawe is that kind of relationship Zwelibanzi should have with his kids. I hope my kids will for give me one day because the only way out of this for Zwelibanzi is death. It's time I put the things Eddie taught me into use. When I get downstairs Zack and Sandiso are here and Bandile and Lwazi just walked in.

Bandile: what's going on?

Eddie: Zwellibanzi took

Khaya and Qhawe Bandile:

how did that happen Eddie?

Eddie: they both didn't have their guards with them and Qhawe was really being stubborn about this morning. (Sizwe walks in)

Sizwe: he is not going to any thing to them not yet anyway. We need to find them before he hurts them.

Me: he is not going to do anything to them at all. He is not even going to break a single hair on their body.

Sizwe: Why are you so sure?

Me: I have what he wants and what he loves. He needs me and he knows if anything happens to them he gets nothing.

Sizwe: you don't get it he is trying to break you Khanyi by using the most important men in your life.

Me: I am going to break him. I need you all to listen to me. We are going to do this my way

Sponsored

we are going to get them back and we are doing it my way. I'm tired of Zwelibanzi thinking he can get away with everything he does to me no this time.

Eddie: but Khanyi ..... (I don't let him finish what he wants to say.)

ME: No buts Eddie. We are doing it my way.

Sizwe: Let her be remember she knows him better that we do. (my phone rings and Andile hands it to me he looks at Sandiso who just nods and andile tells me to Answer.)

\*\*\*\*\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

Phone conversation:

Me: hello

Zweli: Angel Face.

How are you? Me: I'm

good and you

Zweli: I'm good too. Did you get my messages Angel Face?

ME: Call me Angel Face one more time I'll end this call. I got your messages. What do you want?

Zweli: Angel Face is such a beautiful name and it suits you.

(this guy is really testing me right now.) I think you know what I want. Sign over everything my dad left to my kids and we go our separate ways.

Me: you really must have a screw loose in that head of yours.

I'm not signing anything. What I am going to do though is to find you and when I do you will die.

Zweli: we both know you won't kill me. Your conscious won't allow you because you won't be able to answer the kids when they ask about me

Me: I used to think that but I don't care anymore. I swear if they have even a single scratch on them because of you. Your life depends on whether they live or die and if I were I'd try my best to keep them alive.

Zweli: that's funny because your son

said the same thing. Me: He was

taught well.

Zweli: I have the documents drawn up just sign them and this will be over soon. Me: like I said I'm not signing anything

Zweli: not even to save the new man in your life.

ME: Not even to save him. (I tried so hard to say it with conviction and I think he picked on my slight hesitation.) bye

Zweli (and I hang up)

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*Lwazi: you hesitated and he picked up on it.

Me: I know. (my phone beeps again when I check it he sent me a video this time his guys are beating up Qhawe he is helpless both his hands and feet are tied he can't even fight back. It's a very short video at the end of the video Zwelibanzi says something to me. "I know you love him probably more than you ever loved me and for him you will sign.") Andile get Sima for me. Sandiso Zack anything on the trace?

Zack: Nothing yet. He has scrambler. It will take a while to get his actual location. Me: fine just find him.

(Andile walks in with Sima.) Sima come with me.

Eddie: where are you taking her?

Me: Basement

Eddie & Andile: Khanyi NO!!! (the rest of the guys look at them and then me probably wondering what happens in the basement.

Me: He is playing dirty and I'm not holding back. Bring me the twins. Andile: the twins are sleeping.

Me: perfect hopefully they won't wake up until I'm done. BRINGTHEM. Andile: Khanyi not the kids please.

Me: what makes you think I'm going to hurt them just bring me those boys. Sima: why are we going to the basement:

Me: Patience my dear Sima. You'll find out.

Lwazi: I want to see this basement that everyone is so afraid of. (he says that following me to the basement. When we get there I switch on the lights and I see the shock in both their faces.) Me: Sit Sima. Lwazi since you are here make yourself and tie her up. (Andile walked in with the twins still out like a light. They must be really tired.) Put them on the mat next to their mother take the cable ties and tie them up. Hurry I need to do this while they are sleeping. (Sima is busy crying which is good for me at this moment.)

Sima: Khanyi please don't hurt us. (I keep quiet and give Andile my phone and instruct him to take a video.

ME: I am going to make a video and send it to your husband and we'll see how much he loves you. We'll see if he loves money more than he loves you guys. (I slap) that is for planning to kill me. (I slap her again) that is for your husband's stupidity. (I tell Andile to stop the video.) did you include the boys in this video. Andile: yes included them he'll be able to even see the cable ties.

Me: Good. You can take the boys upstairs do not forget to cut the cable ties. Lwazi: you are really good at this.

Me: I'm pissed off Lwazi and these two are going to pay and I haven't done anything yet. Sima you can stay here for a while. Don't think I've forgotten you tried to kill me. Maybe you can choose a weapon you want me to use on you from the ones you see.

Lwazi: I feel sorry you Sima. (she is tears and scared for her life.) Me: Lwazi stop tormenting the poor woman come on let's go.

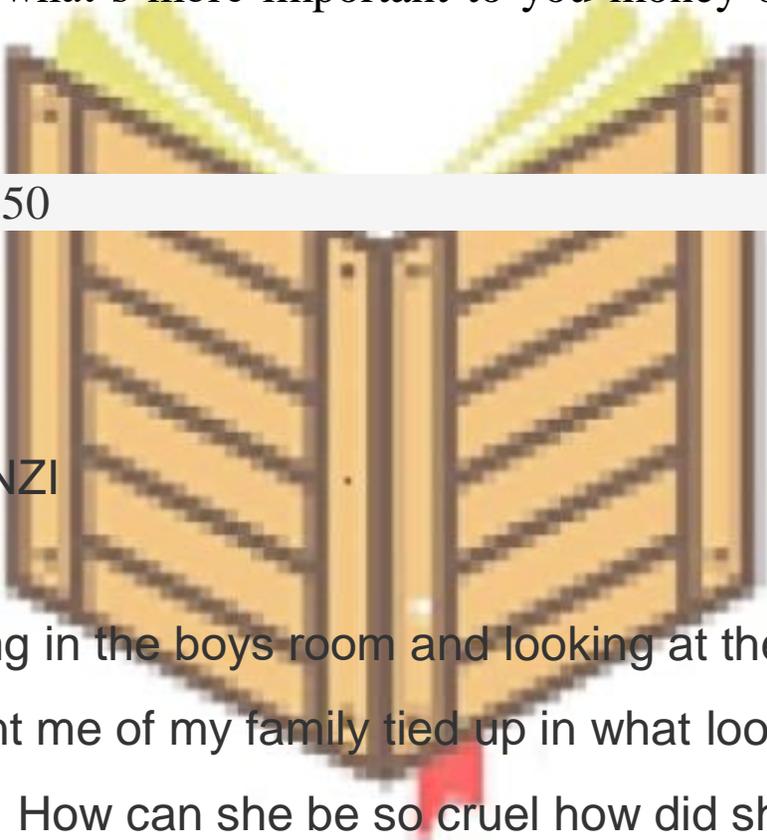
Lwazi: Me tormenting the woman. Khanyi please. You are the one tormenting her she's even scared of you she really thought you were going to hurt the kids and I think what scares her the most is that she doesn't know what you are going to do to her. I am going to steal you from Qhawe and make you my wife. (he says that laughing)

Me: In your dreams clown boy. (we walk into the lounge where everyone laughing and talking.

I sit down on the and send photos of Sima and kids having fun in the game room with our

kids. Caption: BEFORE YOU LAID YOUR HANDS ON HIM.

After that I sent him the video and a few pictures from the basement. Caption: AFTER YOU LAID YOUR HANDS ON HIM. Let's what's more important to you money or your little family.



## CHAPTER 50

FRIDAY

ZWELIBANZI

I'm standing in the boys room and looking at the video Khanyi sent me of my family tied up in what looks like a basement. How can she be so cruel how did she get to be so cold. My boys are only two years old and it looks like they are sleeping in this video. The ways she slaps Sima I have never seen so much anger in her. If I came home when I was supposed to they would still be here. I can't let her hurt my family. I love my family I can't let her hurt

them. I need to see those two. They need to talk some sense into her. I grab my car keys and drive off to the house.

Me: Songezo how are our guests doing?

Songezo: they seem fine to me but I think the big guy has a broken rib from the beating yesterday. Me: he is going to be fine. Let me go see them. (when I get there Khaya is crouching over Qhawe looking at his injuries. I must say he is badly hurt.) he is going to be fine though. (Khaya chuckles a little.) You need to talk some sense into your mother kid.

Khaya: don't make me laugh. What did she do?

Qhawe: she's got him by the balls (he tries to laugh but I am assuming tha it hurts when he laughs. He is right though. Khanyi has me by the balls. It's strange how he knows her so well in such a short space of time.)

Me: This is a dangerous game that she is playing and she is going to lose. I know she is going to do what I want her to do for you. I mean Khaya your are her first born son after all.

Khaya: you've been with my mom for so long and still don't know her you don't know how she thinks. Let me

educate Zweli; she would die for us she would fight anyone who tries to hurt us. She might not kill you for us she might just let you go to jail and let jail deal with you because she wouldn't want to tell my little siblings that she killed their father. When it comes to him (he says



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

looking at Qhawe) she is going to kill you. But first you will suffer unbearable pain for hurting her kids and then a bullet through the heart for him.

Me: oh please we both know your mother is not capable of killing anyone.

Khaya: if that's what you think then it's your funeral.

(Qhawe starts coughing and Khaya gives his attention again) Dad are you ok?

Qhawe: I'm fine. I'll be fine.

Khaya: She is going to find us. They are going to find us. (I leave the room making sure I lock and I make a call to Khanyi)

\*\*\*\*\*

Phone conversation

Khanyi: if you are not about tell me that you are parked outside my gate with family then we have nothing to talk about.

Me: but we do. You also have my family and my businesses and I want it all Khanyi and I am going to have it.

Khanyi: Are you sure you want to go this route? Me: yes.

Khanyi: let the games begin but remember this; everytime you lay hand on them your little family suffers for it. (she hangs up before I could say anything. Dammit this woman is really going to make me sweat. I know for sure she won't find me Sima won't talk she knows about this property and I don't think she is going to tell them.

KHANYISILE

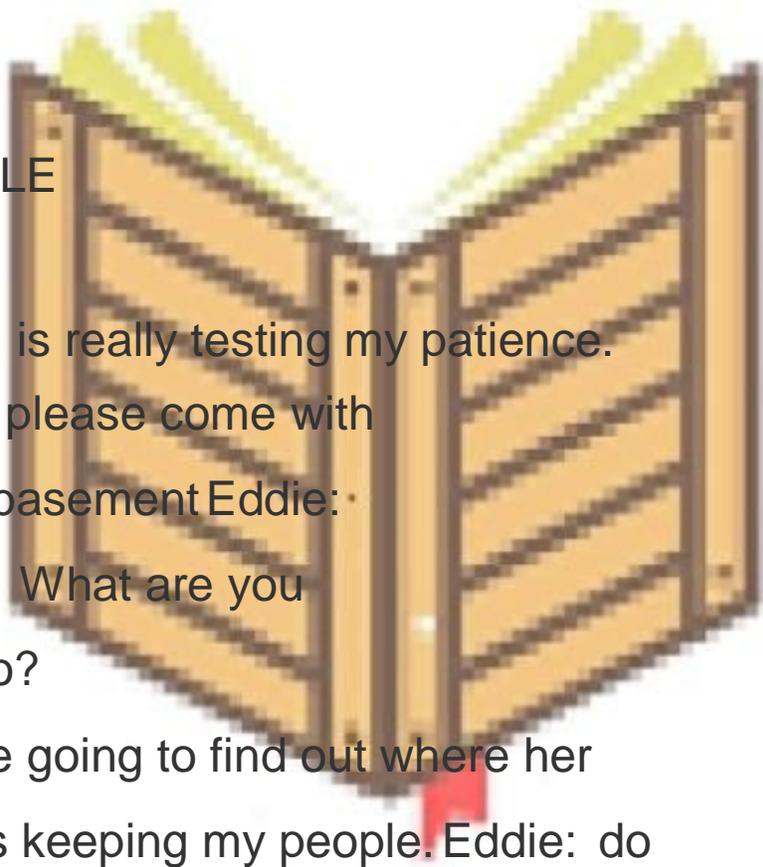
Zwelibanzi is really testing my patience.

Me: Eddie please come with me to the basement Eddie: sure thing. What are you going to do?

Me: we are going to find out where her husband is keeping my people. Eddie: do you think she knows

Me: I know for a fact she knows. (when we get to the basement she was awake.) you are awake. Did you sleep well last night?

Sima: how do you think I

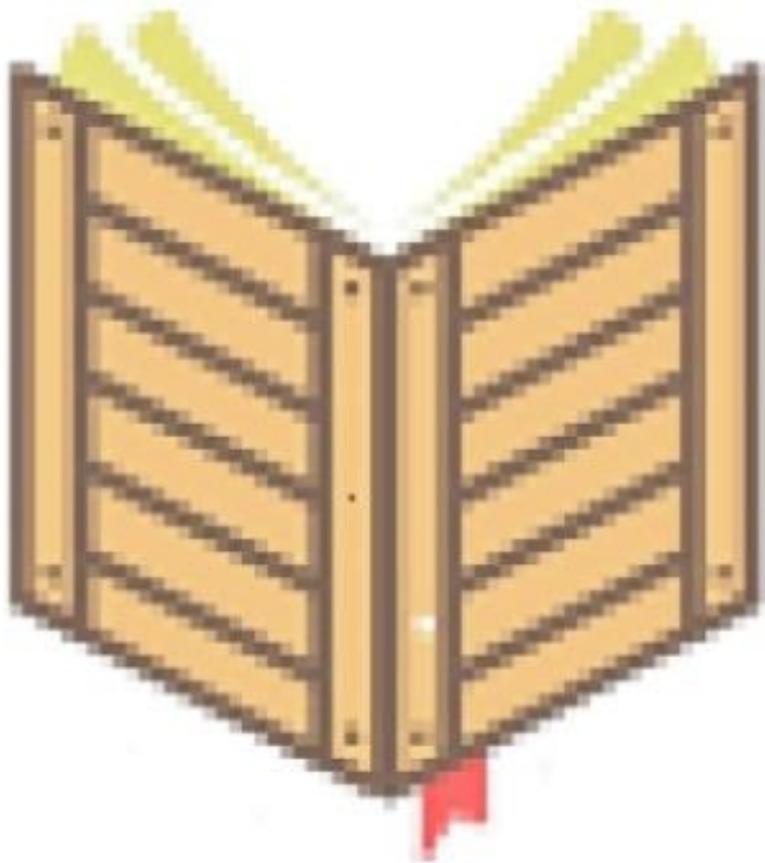


NOVELSGURU.COM

slept? You are so cruel ME:

We still have a stinking  
attitude Eddie.

Eddie: maybe we should get rid of it.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Take a sit Sima we have something to talk about and Eddie here is going to tie you up again. Did you choose a weapon that you want me to use on you? you know what never mind. I'll choose one. Play nice with Eddie he is not as friendly as I am. That means you need to answer all

the question we are going to ask and if we don't like your answers then I pity you. Are you done Eddie?

Eddie: I'm done . so which are you going to use? Sima:

Khanyi please don't do this think of my babies.

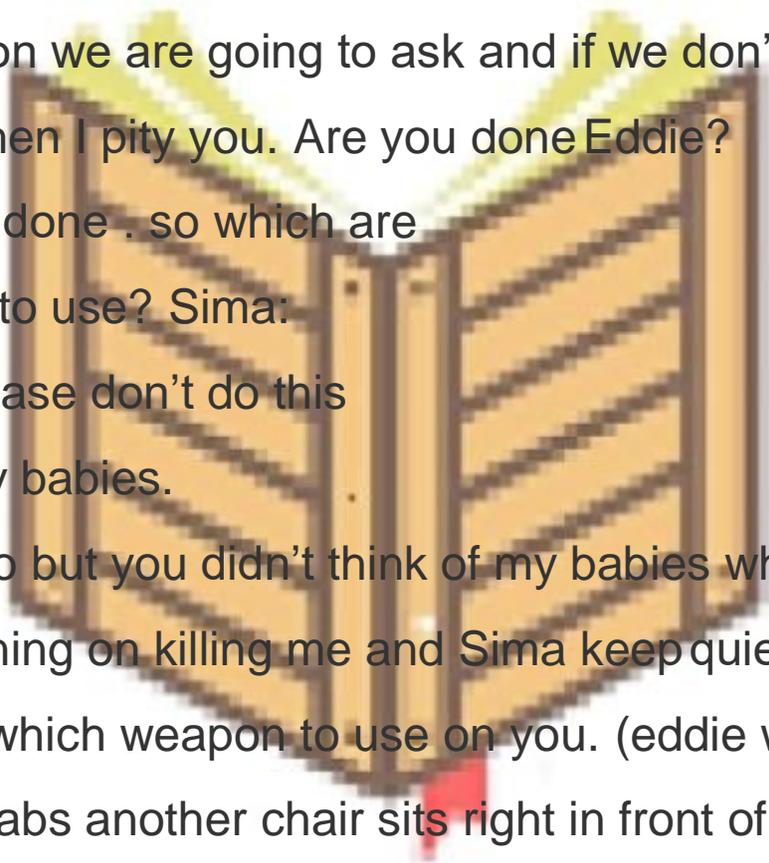
Me: hayibo but you didn't think of my babies when you were planning on killing me and Sima keep quiet I'm trying to decide which weapon to use on you. (eddie walks over to Sima grabs another chair sits right in front of her.)

Eddie: Where is he keeping them?

Sima: I don't know

Eddie: I don't like that answer Sima.

Me: let's try this again. How many properties does Zwelibanzi have around here



NOVELSGURU.COM

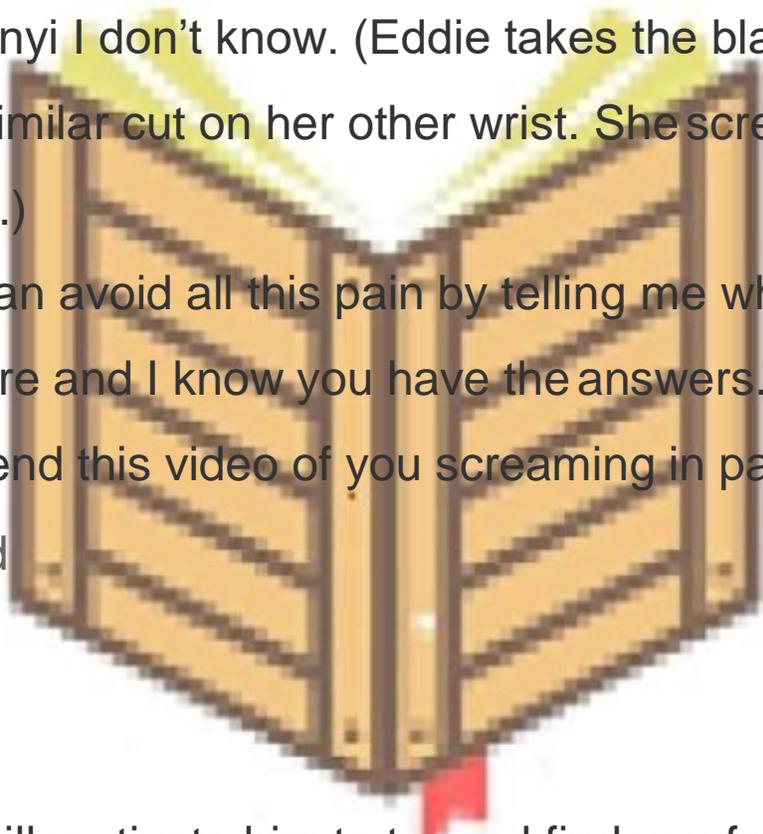
Sima: I said I don't know (I take the surgical blade I was holding and make a small on he wrist careful not to cut the veins and she screams in pain.)

Me: the next one will go through your veins and that will lead to a lot of bleeding. Let's try again. How many properties does Zwelibanzi own in KZN.

Sima: Khanyi I don't know. (Eddie takes the blade and makes a similar cut on her other wrist. She screams in pain again.)

Me: You can avoid all this pain by telling me what I want to here and I know you have the answers. I'm going to send this video of you screaming in pain

Sponsored



maybe it will motivate him to try and find you faster if I don't find him first and if that happens you don't want to know what I'll do to him. This is nothing dear.)

Eddie: Let's try this again. Where is he keeping them?

Sima: I don't know. (Eddie takes his

gun and shoots her arm) Eddie: I

didn't like your answer the next bullet goes to your head.

Me: let's try one more time and this time we better like the answer. How many properties does Zwellibanzi own in KZN? (I ask pointing a gun to her head)

Sima: ok ok. He owns three properties only one is an isolated property. It's a house. I'll tell you where it is. (she can't even stop crying she has hiccups.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Good girl. I'll send someone to clean you up and bandage your wounds.

She gives me the info we need. This house is on the outskirts of Mhlanga. We walk out of the basement to the lounge where the others were still sitting.

Bandile: We heard a gunshot is she still alive?

Me: She is very alive just in pain. Andile you up: gunshot wound to the arm and surgical cuts on her wrist and give her some pain killers. (Andile walks to the basement and I take my phone and I send a video of Eddie shooting her arm. Caption: THIS IS FOR LAYING YOUR HANDS ON THEM. I'M COMING FOR YOU.

SIZWE

Me: remind me never to get on your wrong side.

Qhawe's dad is on his way here. Khanyi: He'll have to babysit because we are going to get my baby and my King.

Eddie: You can't go (I look at this and I'm thinking he is crazy if he thinks Khanyi is just going to sit here waiting for us to come back with her guys.

Khanyi: You must be crazy. (he tries to say something but

I think he knows not to say anything at this moment.

Qhawe's dad walks in and goes straight to Khanyi and hugs the living day lights out of her.)

Loyiso: Are you ok?

Khanyi: I'm fine. I'm bringing him home tonight. You'll have to babysit and enjoy being a grandpa. (suddenly Sima screams in the basement. The door must be open for us to hear that scream. Good thing the game room and the tv room upstairs are sound proofed at least the kids can't here any of this.)

Loyiso: Who is that?

Me: We'll explain later. (I walk towards the basement) Andile finish up we need to go. Andile: I'm done. Let's go. As for you Sima you can go upstairs to your kids.

Sima: my babies are still ok?

Me: She would never hurt them

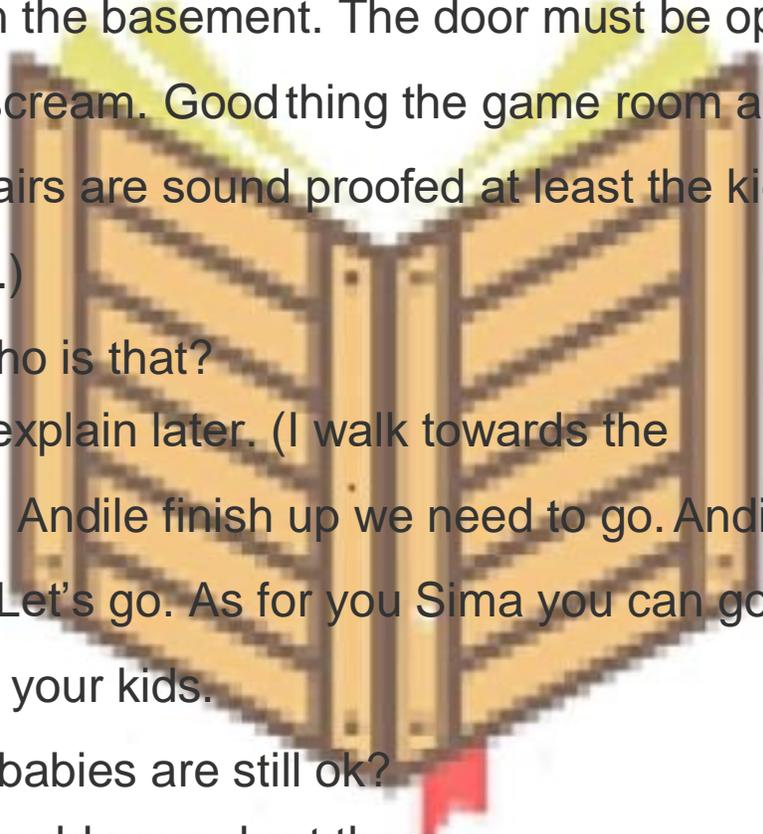
she is not that heartless. Sima:

Look what she did to me she is

heartless

Me: You and your husband started it. You can't blame

her for trying to protect what's hers. Sima: Zweli



should have never trusted you.

Me: You are wrong darling he should have never tried to kill me all those years ago. Karma is a bitch. Let's go Andile.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

(we walk out and leave her there everyone is already in their cars. I'm really scared of what's going to happen when we get there. Khanyi calls me from her car and tells me that I need to watch myself. Zweli will try to kill me for betraying him. I know he will and I am not about to die I have a baby coming. We get there and the place is very quiet not even security guards. When we walk in we see two guys sitting on the couch. They stand up and draw their guns as soon as they see us. Them: and then nina?

Eddie: We are not here for you if you know what's good for you you'll step aside. Guy 1: Why should we do that?

Khanyi: because I am going to shoot you if you don't and trust me right now I'm not in the mood for games. (ok this would be funny if we weren't in this situation. These are big and she is so tiny.)

Guy 2: a small person like you I would like to see you try. (she laughs a little takes out her gun and shoots him in the leg. Guy 1 tries to take out his gun but Andile shoots his arm.

Khanyi: We are not here for you.

## CHAPTER 51

STILL

FRIDAY

ZWELIBA

NZI

I'm standing here looking at the video she sent me the shot Sima but she is still alive. She says she is coming for me.

Me: Songezo tie them up.( He ties them and leaves the room. Soon after he leaves the room I hear gunshots. It can't be her. She can't be here. How did she find me so quickly. Shit Sima and your big mouth.

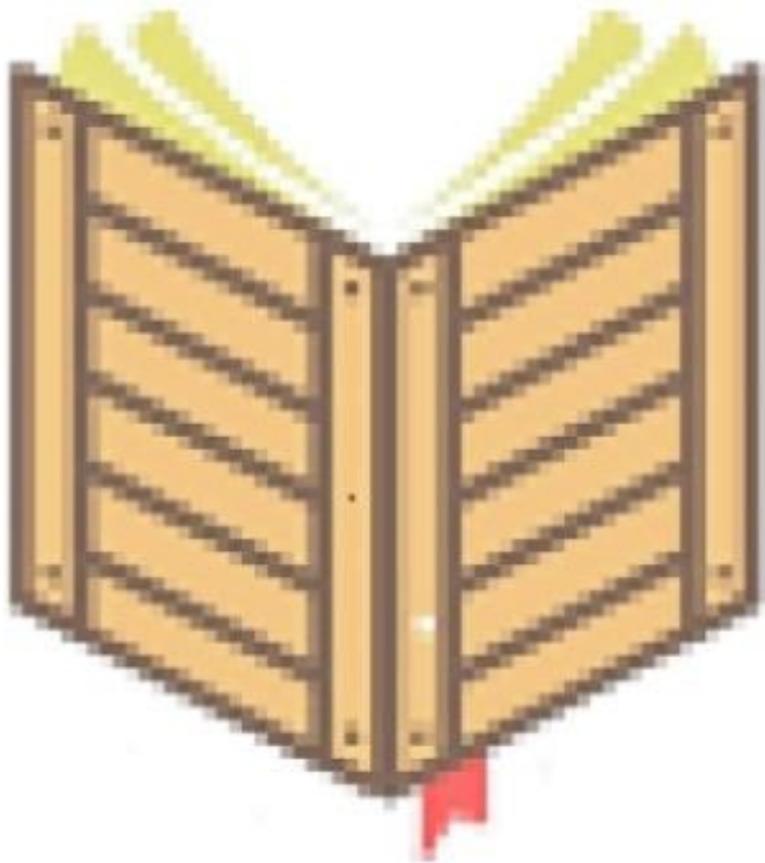
Khaya: What's wrong Zwelli you look like you've seen a ghost. Don't tell me an evil man like you is scared of little Angel Face as you would call her. I told you she was coming and I know she brought the calvary with her.

Me: I'm not scared of her.

Qhawe: Oh my god you really are scared of her. Why did you start all this if you are afraid of her?

Me: I said I'm not scared of her. (I say pointing the gun at him just then the door opens and she walks in and I quickly stand

next to Qhawe and still pointing the gun at him.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: you really should be scared of me. (she scans the room scans her son and looks at Qhawe then me the Qhawe again and she smiles at him which he returns probably assuring her that he is ok. She walks over to her son touches his face and kisses his forehead.) Are you ok my baby?

Khaya: I'm fine mom.

Khanyi: I am going to untie and I want you to walk out of here and go to the car do you hear me and don't worry I'll see you in a few minutes. (Khaya just nods)

Me: no one is going anywhere (she ignores me and continues to untie Khaya I fire a warning shot she turns to look at me then her son.)

Khanyi: Go baby he is going to die before he shoots you. (she says that taking out her gun pointing at me and whispers something to Khaya before he walks out. She takes a sit where Khaya was sitting. Did she really come alone where are her guys) I'm not alone. I would move that gun from his head if I were you. Grab a sit let's talk you wanted me to sign something.

Me: I do want you to sign something. (I say that grabbing a chair and sit in front of her. She looks at Qhawe and gives him a very warm smile but I can see the pain in her eyes of seeing him like that.)

Khanyi: Zwelibanzi do you enjoy hurting me haven't you done enough to hurt me and my kids and now you are hurting my

heart.

Me: I just want what I want at any cost.

Khanyi: So when you said you loved me that was to get me to come back to you? Me: I do love you

Khanyi.... (she doesn't let me finish)

Khanyi: How stupid do you think I am Zwelibanzi. (I stand and walk towards the table that's in the far corner of this room. I take the envelope that's on the table. It's a good thing I came after I had these drawn up. I take the document out of the envelope and throw them at her.)

Me: Sign or I shoot him. (some guy walks in)

Him: I want to see you try. Put the gun down and you won't get hurt. (I turn to look at this guy and I pull the trigger and the bullet goes through his shoulder. I hear Khanyi calling his name and going to him)

Khanyi: Eddie look at me. Are you ok tell me you are ok.

Eddie: I'm ok it's just my shoulder. (this guy sounds like he is used to getting shot.)

Me: I said sign the papers. (she gets up and looks at me just then my friend walks in) Sizwe what are you doing here?

Khanyi: Sizwe I told you to take Khaya home.

Sizwe: Lwazi and Bandile took him the hospital. Are you ok?

Khanyi: I'm fine he shot Eddie.

Me: so you are the one that betrayed me the one that 's destroying me.

Sizwe: you shouldn't have tried to kill me and you shouldn't have hurt her the way you did. I told you I would do whatever it takes to protect them and here I am. (he walks towards Qhawe and stands next to him.

Me: Sign or they both die.

Qhawe: Khanyi look at me. (she turns to look at him.) don't sign those documents. You are a beautiful strong woman. You have beautiful kids waiting for you at home 10 of them a whole team baby to play touch rugby with. (she smiles at him warmly.) remember what the old man said remember what you promised him. No matter what it takes protect his legacy my Queen. He gave it to his grandchildren for a reason and you know that. I love you so much and we still have a lifetime to spend together. Do me a favour and take care of this idiot so that we can go home.

(she turns to look at me points the gun at me and shoots my leg and i scream in pain. I'm on one knee holding on to where she shot me on my left thigh. I'm still holding my gun I point it at Sizwe and shoot him.)

Me: you betrayed me (Khanyi screams and I notice that Sizwe and Qhawe are both on the floor. She turns Qhawe over and he is bleeding but how how did he get in front of Sizwe so quick.

Another shot was fired and it goes through my shoulder when I turn to look it's this Eddie person. When he was about to fire another shot Khanyi stops him).

Khanyi: Don't kill him. (she shoots my other leg. Damn this shit hurts.)

He is going to the basement. (She goes back to Qhawe who is bleeding on the floor and he is losing a lot of blood.) baby look at me please don't die on me. It's not your time yet stay with me Qhawe. (Sizwe ran out a few minutes ago and came back with this other guy) Andile help him please I can't lose him. (I can hear her talking but I think I'm about to pass out.)

**KHANYISILE**

Andile: we need to get him to the hospital. Sizwe get the car.

Me: baby do you hear that we are taking you to the hospital.

Please hang in there my love. You can't die because if you do I'll die with you

Sponsored

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

we'll all die with you. We still have a new baby to welcome to this world. Que please look at me. (he opens his eyes and smiles at me.)

Qhawe: I love you (it comes out as whisper)

Sizwe: let's get him in the car. (they take him and carry him to the car. As I walk out I looked at Zwelibanzi who is passed out on the floor. I am going to make him suffer first.)

Eddie: Lwazi is on his way he'll take him. I'll see you at the hospital now go (I run out and get in the back seat where they put Qhawe. I take his head and put it on my lap. His pulse is weak and his breathing is becoming shallow.)

Me: Qhawe please hold on for me baby. You have to meet our little Boov. I never believed in miracles but today I believe miracles do happen. Something I thought would never happen to me has happened and I can't live without you remember what Sizwe said I am your heart and you are mine. I can't do it alone my love I can't go through the hormonal changes that I'm experiencing now alone. I need you we need you. You are going to be a father again. I never thought it would happen again after the operation I had. You have to make it.

Sizwe: we are here. (Andile runs in and comes back with a nurse pushing a stretcher. They take him and place him on it and take him inside and I was right beside him holding his hand he is unconscious now.

Nurse: you have to let go you can't go in with him.

Me: I love you (I kiss his forehead and let go. Right there at that moment I go down on my knees and breakdown. I feel arms around when I look up it's Andile. He helps up and takes me to the waiting room and helps me sit.)

Andile: you are shaking Khanyi. Try to relax and breathe. He is going to be ok. Please try to relax the stress is not good for the baby. Why didn't you tell us?

Me: I only found out when I went to the doctor for my check up. I didn't know Andile: how far along are you?

Me: 2 weeks. I'm scared Andile I don't want to raise this baby without him in fact I don't want to go through this pregnancy without him (he holds me and lets me cry in his arms. Sizwe walks in.)

Sizwe: hey he is going to make it. you need to relax for our little niece in there. Me: who says it's a girl?

Andile: there's too many males in this family we need a princess. Qhawe's parents are on their way. (Bandile walks in)

Bandile: Khaya is fine he is sleeping they are keeping him overnight for observation. He might go home tomorrow if the doctor is ok with his progress.

Me: Please take me to him. He holds out his hand for me to take and I take it. He walks me to Khaya's room and my son was sleeping peacefully. I just kiss his forehead and go back to the waiting room just as we sit Qhawe's parents walk in. Loyiso walks up to me and hugs me. He is hugging me a lot today.)

Loyiso: are you ok? (I shake my head "no") I can't hear you. (I just cried because Qhawe always says that if I make gesture for my answers. He just held me and let me cry on him chest. Hush now sisi Qhawe is going to be fine.)

Siyanda: My son is in here because of you if he was not with you he wouldn't be here. He would be home taking care of his kids. It's all your fault and why are his kids not here.

Loyiso: what are they going to do here Siyanda?

Siyanda: what if he doesn't make it they need to see their father. I am going to tell the twins and Sibahle.

Me: if you so as much as open your mouth about Qhawe to those kids I swear I'll do to you what I did to the guy that shot Qhawe. Don't test me. I know you don't like me so please don't make your problems mine.

Siyanda: Are you going to let her  
talk to me like that. Loyiso: you

deserve it. how's your son Khanyi?

Me: he is ok tata. They are keeping him overnight for observation. (Eddie walks in all bandaged up and his arm in a sling. He comes to me and hugs with his one arm.) Are you ok?

I'm so sorry. Eddie: I'm ok and it was bound to happen don't worry about it. Why didn't you tell me?

ME: I only found out when I went for my check up. (I whisper my answer to him. Qhawe's parents don't know yet. I look at him with questioning eyes )

Eddie: Sizwe told me. ( I look at Sizwe and he just smiles at me. Lwazi walks in holding a bag)Lwazi: I brought you a change of clothes. I had to go to Qhawe's house to get these. I didn't want the kids asking a lot of questions.)

Siyanda: so what if they ask questions he is their father after all.

Loyiso: open your mouth again and let what comes of it disrespect these kids and I'll take you home and I'll make sure your name is not on the visitors list.

Sizwe: Khanyi go change your clothes you have his blood all over you and as for your information Mrs Mtimkhulu Qhawe is here because he took a bullet for me. So lay off Khanyi otherwise you'll have all of us to deal with. (she keeps quiet and I walk out to the bathroom and change my clothes and only thing going through my mind is this baby that I'm carrying. I still can't believe I am pregnant. I had my tubes tied after I miscarried my last baby and they said I

would never be pregnant again. I walk back to the waiting room looking fresh and smelling fresh. The doctor walks in after I sit down. We've been waiting for hours now.)

Doctor: Qhawe Mtimkhulu

Me: yes ( I say standing up and walking towards him) how is he is he ok?

Doctor: the bullet almost hit the heart and we've managed to remove it and he is going to be ok  
Me: Can we see him?

Doctor: only for a few minutes he is still unconscious. I'll show you his room.

## CHAPTER 52

### SATURDAY

I had to come home last night I couldn't sleep at the hospital the doctor wouldn't let me. I also needed to be with the kids. Now that we know their father is going to be ok I have decided to tell them that he is hospital and I can't hide his whereabouts much longer. Qhawe's parents are also here Qhawe's mom is the last person I want to deal with right now. I simply don't have the energy for her. Zwelibanzi is here and the guys are keeping him in the basement I'll decided later what to do with him. When I walk down stairs I can hear the sound

of laughter coming from the kitchen. It sound like everyone is in the kitchen including the kids.

Me: Morning everyone

Them: Morning His Queen

(yhooo choir ) Lwazi:

Morning mama bear

Bandile: uyazibaxa izinto ke wena Lwazi. (you exaggerate things Lwazi)

Lwazi: I was the one calling her His Queen and now you have all hijacked that and I'm sure you'll hijack Mama Bear too.

Me: they won't I'll make sure of it.

Lwazi: thank you Khanyi. Do you want me to dish up for you? Me: I would like that. It looks like everyone has eaten.

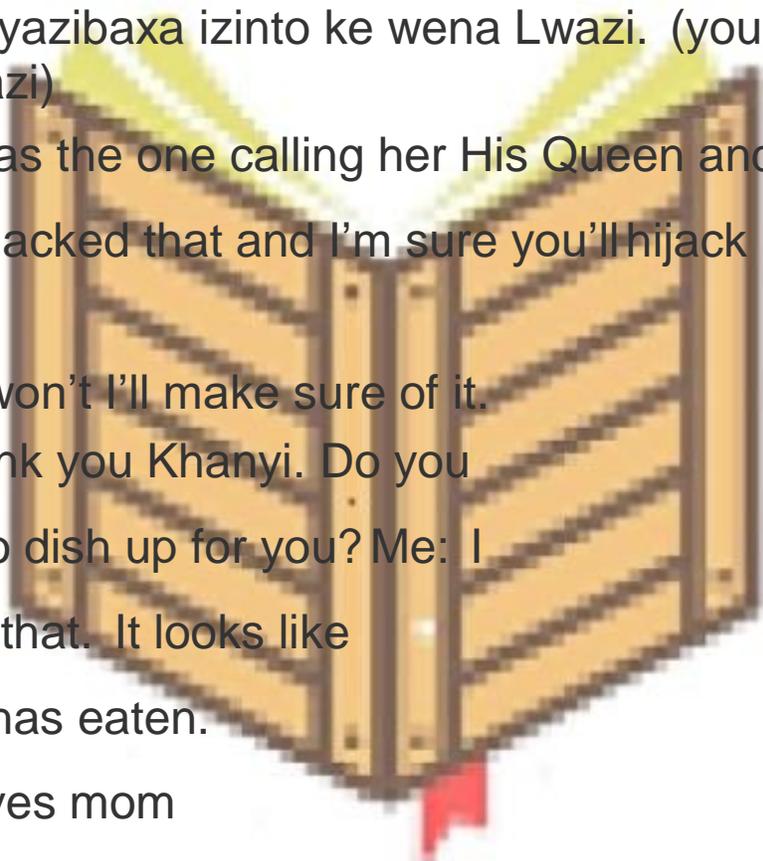
Lwanele: yes mom

where is daddy.

Lisakhanya: yes

mom where he is?

Me: come here girls ( they walk to me and Lisakhanya stands between my legs while lwanele stands next to me and leans on my left shoulder.) I have to tell you



NOVELSGURU.COM

something.

Loyiso: you decided to tell them?

Me: Ewe tata at least now we know what's going on.

Siyanda: and when I wanted to tell them yesterday you were against it.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Loyiso: with good reason and it was not your place to tell them. (she wanted to say more but Loyiso just gave her that look that says just shut up. And she doesn't say anything.)

Me: guys Daddy and Khaya are in hospital.

Bandile(twin): What happened?

Me: they were involved in an accident. Khaya might come home today or tomorrow but daddy will be there for a while. He is still unconscious. I'll tell you about the accident later. Right now you need to go get ready so that we can go to the hospital.

Lisakhanya: is daddy going to be ok mom. (she is crying on my chest and I'm holding both her and Lwanele sibahle and Zenande they join us for the hug also crying.)

Me: daddy is going to be fine. The doctor said he is going to be fine he just needs to wake up and he will soon.

Don't cry babies daddy is going to be fine.

Sibahle: We can't lose them mama.

Me: trust me we won't. Now wipe your tear go upstairs and let's get ready to go to the

hospital. (Ntando takes them upstairs and Lonwabo

comes to me and the twins . they hug me all at once and

we stay like that for a while. I want to cry but I have to be strong for my babies. When we break the hug Lonwabo looks and smiles warmly. My baby is so handsome.)

Lonwabo: are you

ok mama? Me: I'm

fine baby

Lonwabo: You don't always have to be strong mama. We can see you are hurting and we are here for you.

Banele: He is right mama. We are here for you. You always put us first in everything you were there for us when we went through what Anelisa did you helped us get through it and still helping us to survive that. We know you love our dad very much and we know that it probably hurts like hell seeing him lying in a hospital helpless.

Allow us to be here for you and comfort you. (I couldn't hold back the tears I just let them fall and Lonwabo kept wiping them with his thumb.)

Lonwabo: don't cry Queen. It's all going to be ok. We are here and we are not going anywhere. (I just can't stop crying)

Lwazi: hey guys why don't you go and get ready so that we can leave. Your mom will be fine. By the time you

come downstairs she'll be fine. (they hug me again and leave the kitchen.)

Lwazi: hey Mama Bear you need to relax. Qhawe is going to be fine and those boys really care about they love you so much and you guys will get through this and their father is going to wake up. Have you told his parents?

Me: No I haven't.

Loyiso: tell us what? (Lwazi looks at me and I just nod giving him the go ahead.)



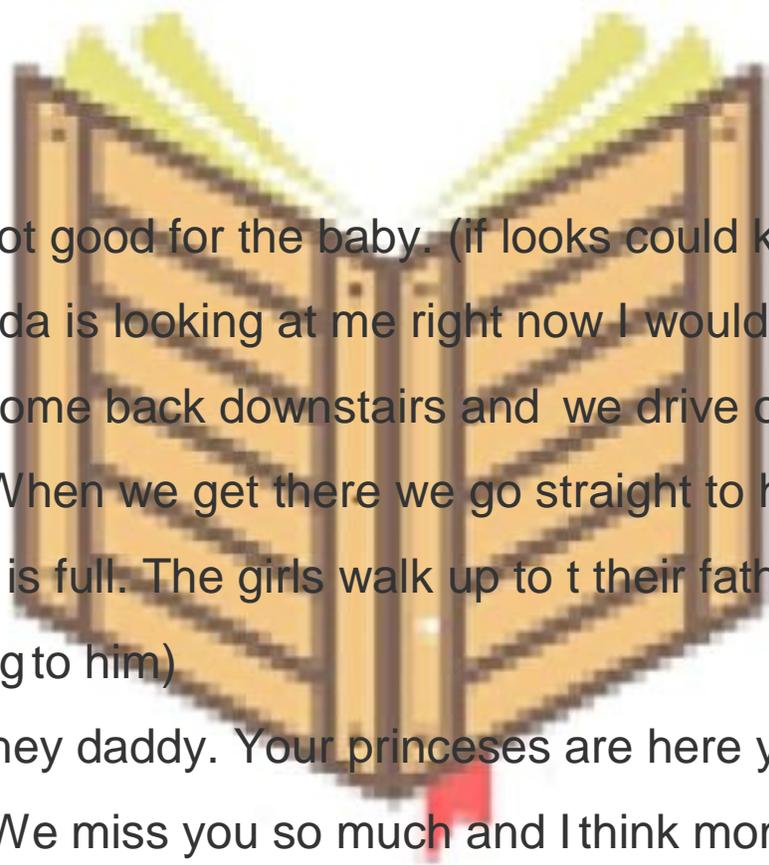
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwazi: Khanyi is two weeks pregnant.

Loyiso; I though you couldn't have kids anymore

Me: I thought so too. The doctor said it's one of those one in a million chances Loyiso: that's wonderful news. You must try to relax

Sponsored



stress is not good for the baby. (if looks could kill they way Siyanda is looking at me right now I would be dead. The kids come back downstairs and we drive off to the hospital. When we get there we go straight to his room. This room is full. The girls walk up to t their father and start talking to him)

Lwanele: hey daddy. Your princesses are here you need to wake up. We miss you so much and I think mom misses you more than us.

Lisakhanya: plus you hate hospitals we can't keep coming here every day. You need to get your stubborn self out of here.

Zenande: we love you daddy now and always.

Sibahle: you should see mom she doesn't look so good.

She told us Khaya might go home today or tomorrow you see you also can't be here for a long time. When we are done we are going to see Khaya. Thank you daddy for keeping Khanyi around she is an amazing woman.

Can we go see Khaya mom.

Me: yes you may. (will you guys go with them. I just want to talk to Qhawe. I'll join you just now.)

SIYANDA

We left Khanyi with Qhawe and went to see Khaya and he looked good apparently he is going home tomorrow. I must say I was amazed by what I saw in the kitchen this morning. Qhawe's kids are so attached to this woman. So she really loves them and these kids are so attached to each

other. Ntando is very quiet just like Zenande and they seem to get along so well. How did they manage to blend this family like this and these guys kids call uncles are not even related to Khanyi but they are family. I sneak out of the room and go back to Qhawe's room and when I get there Khanyi was talking to him and she was crying.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khanyi: I have loved a man before given love to a man before loved unconditionally loved with no equivalence and yet love still breaks me. I love love yet love does not love me back. I give love and



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

love doesn't return to me. Love never loves me back yet I hope it will. Love makes me cry and I hope it will make me laugh. Love hurt me Yet I hope it will heal me. Love broke me into a million pieces impossible to put together and yet I hope it will put me back together again. I am broken because love me broke me baby and you are my only hope. You have to wake up. I can't do this life thing without you we still have lots to live for. Come back to us. It's funny how before I met you I knew what to do and did what I had to do when required and now it's like I can't move without you. (my phone rings and I walk away from the door before she notices)

Me: Hello

Sindy: Hello ma how is Qhawe? When can I come to see me.

ME: You can't Sindy your name is not on the visitor list.

Look Sindy I don't think things will work out. I am going to book a flight back to the Eastern Cape for you. Qhawe

loves someone else. Sindy: mama you know I love

Qhawe and you know I've always loved him and I am going to fight for.

Me: Stop it. don't make things harder than they already

are.

Sindy: no ma you promised me that I will have him and I want him (she hangs up. Damn this girl is going to make things difficult. I need to do something to stop her.

## STILL SATURDAY

KHANYISILE

I'm in Khaya's room and he looks so much better.

Everyone else left they'll be back later tonight. Khaya: you know mom you don't have to be here.

Me: you are my baby and I have to be here. I have to make sure that I am ok.

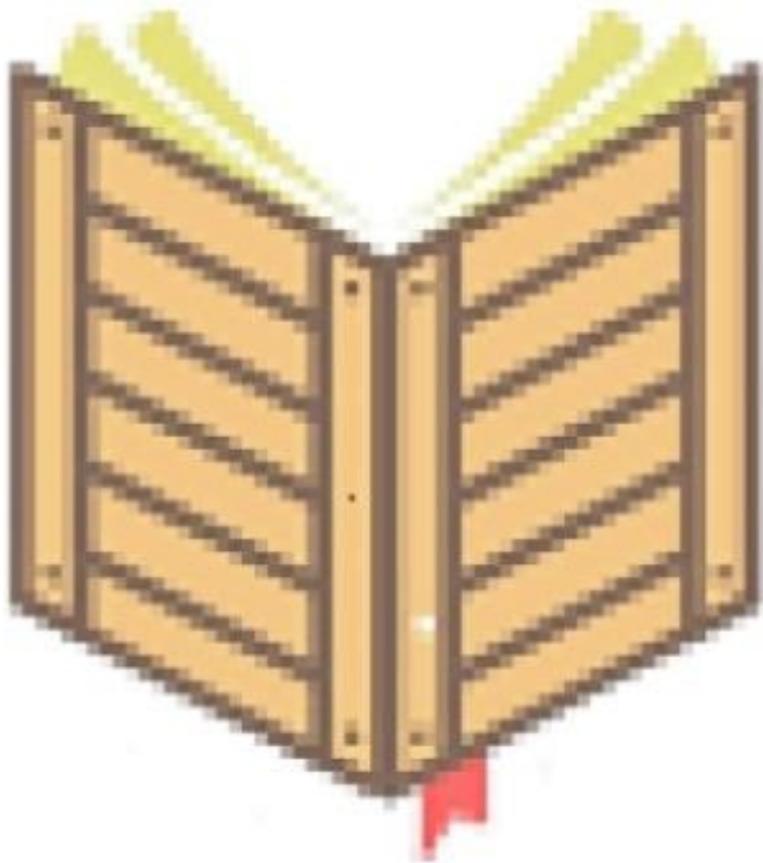
Khaya: I am ok mama. I really am and besides I told the doctor to let me go home tonight there's really no reason for him to keep me here. Tonight when everyone comes back for a visit I'll be going home with them.

Me: Are you sure about that. I just want to be sure that you are fine and fit to go home. You are still my baby and I worry about you.

Khaya: I know mama but you don't have to besides you guys got there in time and he is going to be fine too doctor

said no permanent damage right at least that's good news and you know why he took the bullet for uncle Sizwe.

Me: yes the doctor said he will be fine and yes I know why he did.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khaya: then go to him go be with him he needs you to be there more than I do. It's fine mom you can go.

Me: Are you sure about that?

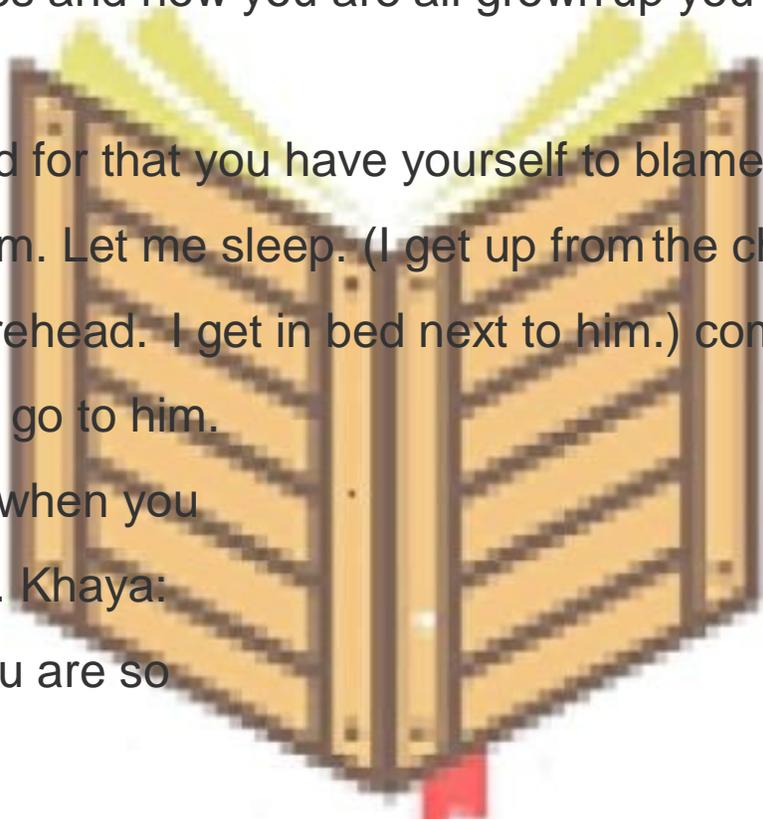
Khaya: Yes mom I'm sure. Just go he needs you and you need to be close to him.

Me: when did you guys grow up. Last time I checked you were babies and now you are all grown up you guys grew up too fast

Khaya: and for that you have yourself to blame. I feel sleepy mom. Let me sleep. (I get up from the chair and kiss his forehead. I get in bed next to him.) come on mama just go to him.

Me: I'll go when you fall asleep. Khaya: fine but you are so stubborn.

Me: just sleep. (he positions himself so that his head is on my chest and I just play with his short hair and in no time he was asleep. I stayed in that position for about thirty minutes and got out of bed without waking him and I went to Qhawe's room. When I got to his room a nurse was busy with I just sat on the small couch that's in his



room until she finished. I have so much going through my mind right now. Qhawe really needs to wake up. I miss him so much the kids miss him so much. I haven't decided what I'm going to do with that bastard called Zwelibanzi maybe I should just let him go to jail. Would I really be able to live with his death on my conscious would be able to look at my kids and tell them I killed him when they ask about him one day besides I'm not a killer why should I start killing because of me. I hate feeling like this. I didn't even realise the nurse left the room and his father just walked in. I thought he went home and was coming back later.)

Loyiso: Khanyi how are you?

Me: I'm ok I guess. I just want him to wake up.

Loyiso: I understand how you feel. Khanyi I want to talk to you about his mother. Me: what about her?

Loyiso: she wants to talk to you and she doesn't know how to because of the way she behaved and treated you. I'm guessing she wants to apologise she didn't say why she wants to talk you. She just asked me to ask you to hear what she has to say.

Me: I don't need anymore drama in my life right now and if she is bringing drama then I'm not interested.

Loyiso: I don't think she is but just give her time and hear what she has to say. Me: ok I'll hear her out. I'm doing it for you.

Loyiso: thank you my child. And don't worry my son is very strong he will wake up soon. Me: thank you for your support.

Loyiso: I have to go I have business I need to attend. I'll see you tonight.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

When he lives the room I get in bed next to Qhawe and lay my head on his shoulder.

Me: you really need to wake up. We miss you I miss you so much I guess I could say I know how you felt when I was shot. I can't stand not hearing your voice and looking into your eyes. Please my King wake up now we need you. It's funny how I didn't want to admit how I feel about you when everyone else could see and now I know for sure that I feel the same way you do. This life won't be fun without you. Khaya even chased me out of his hospital room telling me that you needed me more than he needs me. And guess what we have a doctor's appointment on Wednesday and I can't be there alone. The doctor is going to be doing another scan so you really need to be there to see out little Boov even though she is sill just a dot but she has a strong heartbeat. Khanya is going home today he is ok but he is worried about you and Linamandla is coming home on Tuesday the poor Princess is so stressed she is writing a test on Monday that's why she can't come sooner. Basically everyone is worried about you Lwazi was even crying the

other day but he doesn't know that I know so you can't tease him about it when you wake up. I think I am going to hand over Zwelibanzi to Det. Nxele when he is healed I don't think I want his death on my conscious or on any of you. I love you Qhawe you are breaking down the walls I built around my heart to protect it from men even though I never gave up on love I still protected my heart. You are melting the ice that froze my heart towards man so you see you have to wake up if you are not going to do it for anyone else do it for me.

SINDISWA (SINDY)

So I can't go see Qhawe at the hospital I wonder how he is doing. Why is his mom changing her mind now I thought she didn't like the woman Qhawe was dating what could have happened? I've always had a crush on Qhawe in fact it's more than a crush. I love the guy. He is nothing like the guys I've dated. He is your unusual tall dark and handsome kind of guy. I'm also a tall woman but shorter than him even when we were in high school together I always thought we would end up together and a few years

after varsity I had he got married right there I lost all hope of being with him. I use to see him or bump into him whenever he went home to the Eastern Cape and when ever he greeted he always had his beautiful smile on his face. I thought now that he is divorced I might have a chance I still have a chance he is not married to this woman I am going to fight for what I want. L grab my things and drive off. When I get to the hospital I try to find out which ward he is in and the receptionist tells where to find him. This girl doesn't even ask who I am to check the visitor's list

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

she looks stressed as well at least that worked for me if she was focused she probably wouldn't have given me the information. I walk into his room and there he is with bandages on his chest his muscles you can tell he goes to gym. I've never been a fan of exercising. Even at school Qhawe was a sports person in fact he played rugby he looked hot then and he still does.

Me: hi Qhawe it's Sindiswa your mom told me you were here. I just came to see how you were doing and I am hoping that when you get out of here we can out for coffee or something. I heard about your divorce and I'm sorry about that and I would like us try and see what happens. You know I've always liked you maybe you can give us a chance but you have to wake up for that to happen. "For what to happen?" this lady asks as she walks in holding a cup in her hands. She is short not too short same skin colour as Qhawe she has a natural beautiful afro she is wearing legging and an oversized hoodie it must Qhawe's she must be the girlfriend. I though Qhawe was into tall

girls like me.

Her: excuse me stop staring at me. Who are you what are you doing here and most importantly how did you get in here.

Me: I'm his friend and I heard about his accident so I thought I'd come and see him.

Her: I know all his friends and you my dear are not one of them and besides Que doesn't have friends he has family.

Again I ask who are you and what are you doing here?

(she is so calm her voice soft and strangely she doesn't even sound rude but you can tell she is irritated. Just as I am about to speak his mom walks in also holding a cup and hers smells like coffee.)

Siyanda: Sindy what are you doing here?

Me: I came to see Qhawe ma. I wanted to see for myself.

Siyanda: how did you get in here? (this other lady is just standing there watching us and she is losing her patience she wants answers.)

Me: I have my ways.

Her: Ma since you guys seem to know each other please get her out here Que doesn't need all this and I most definitely don't need this and the kids will be here soon. ( I look at her shocked at the fact that she calls him Que.

Qhawe has never liked being called Que but this woman does maybe it's because he unconscious. Qhawe's mom drags me out of the room and I stand at the door looking at the girlfriend talking to him as she gets in bed with him and lays her head on his shoulder)

Siyanda: what in God's name are you doing here Sindy? Me: I

wanted to see him ma.

Siyanda: I've booked your flight. You are leaving first thing in the morning.

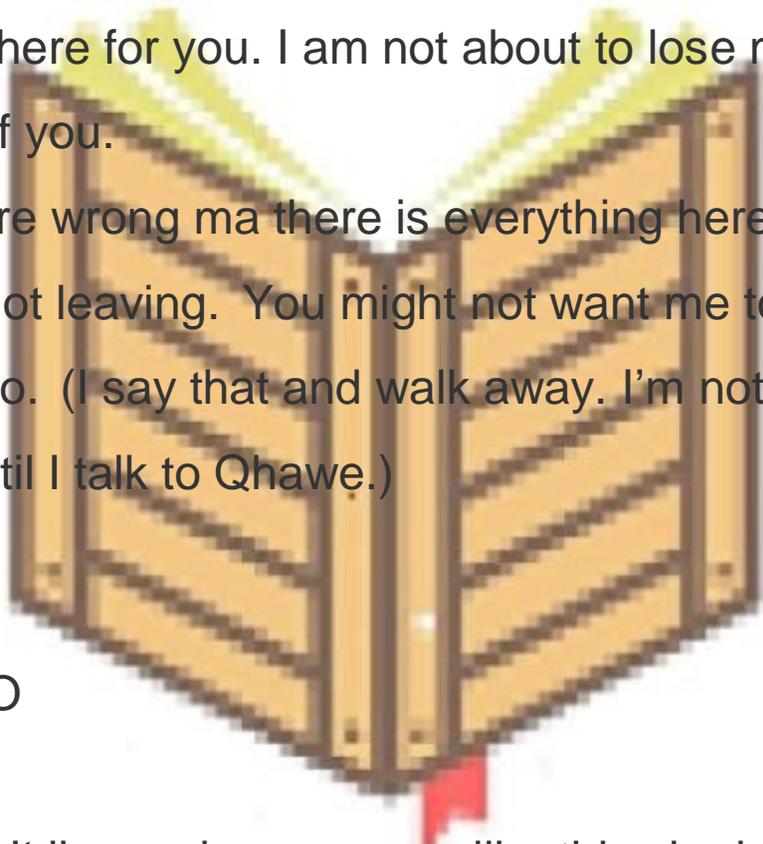


**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Hayibo ma I thought you didn't like the woman Qhawe is dating I thought you wanted me to be with him.

Siyanda: I did want you for him but it's not about what I want. It's about what he wants and what's good for him and his kids. That woman in there is good for them. I judged her before I gave a chance. Just leave Sindy there is nothing here for you. I am not about to lose my son because of you.

Me: You are wrong ma there is everything here for me and I am not leaving. You might not want me to be with him but I do. (I say that and walk away. I'm not leaving Durban until I talk to Qhawe.)



LONWABO

I really don't like seeing my mom like this she is tired and stressed. This is becoming too much for her. When we walk into dad's room she was curled up in bed with him she looked so tiny. She must have fallen asleep reading a book to him. At least she is getting some sleep. I walk to the bed and look at her and kiss her cheek.

Me: Mom wake up we are here. (she mumbles something but I can't hear what she is saying.) Mom come on wake up everyone is here and uncle Lwazi is laughing at you.)

Lwazi: Lonwabo why would you want to get me into trouble like that do you know what she is going to do to me when she wakes up.

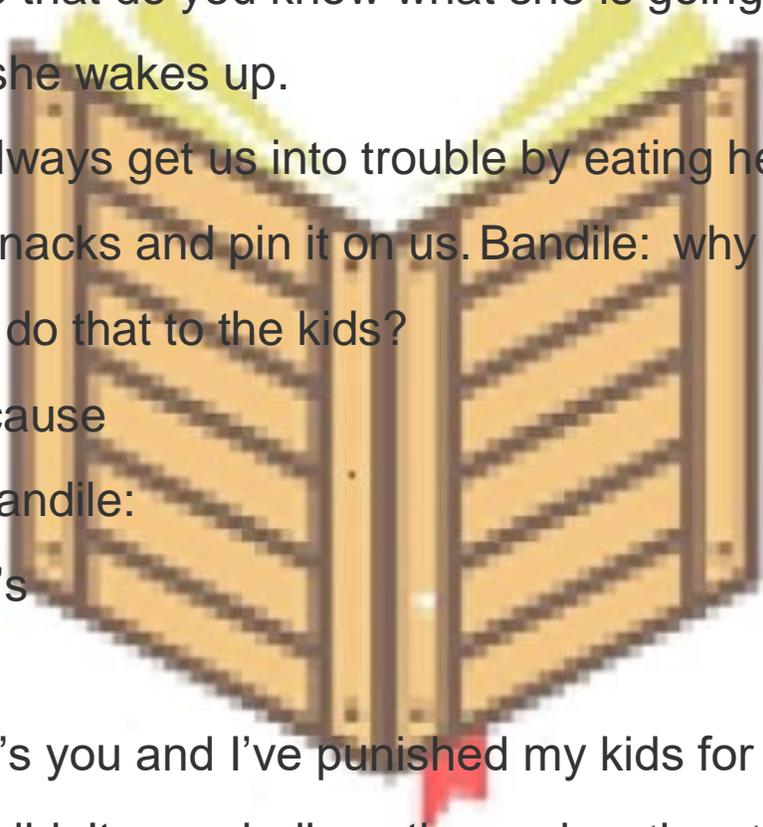
Me: You always get us into trouble by eating her favourite snacks and pin it on us. Bandile: why would you do that to the kids?

Lwazi: because it's easy Bandile: and now it's backfiring.

Mom: so it's you and I've punished my kids for nothing because I didn't even believe them when they told me it was you. (she says that getting out bed.)

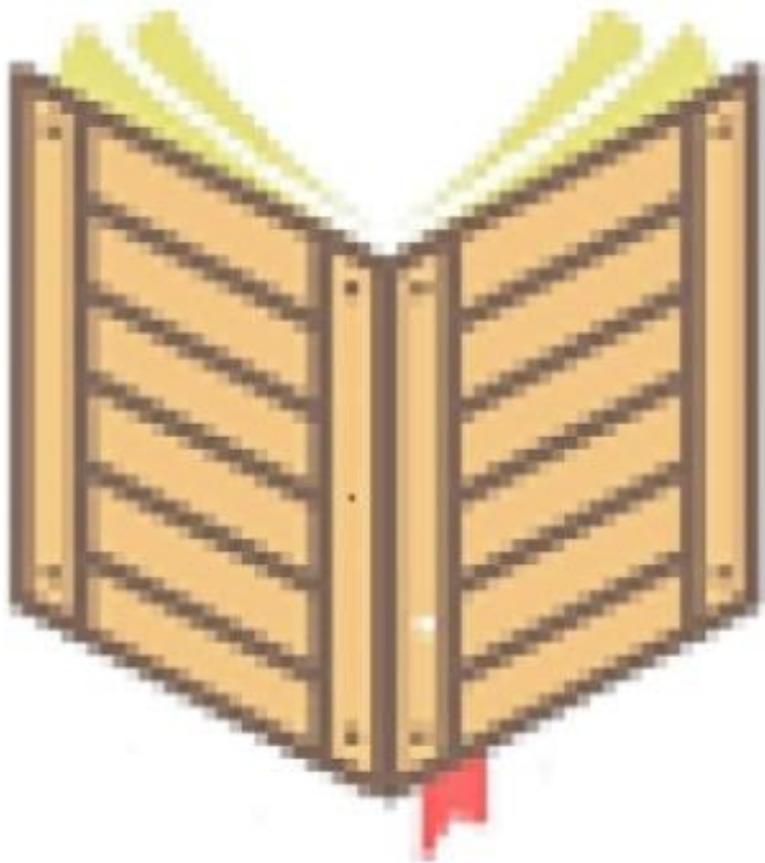
Lisakhanya: it's him mama. He said if we told you he would take away our games.

Ntando: I think he is the worst uncle we have. (Khaya walks in all dressed and ready to go. He walks up to mom hugs her and gives dad a kiss on his forehead and



whispers something in his ear.) uncle Lwazi you might as well run away because you are going to be in trouble when dad wakes up. Apparently he can hear this conversation.

Me: that's right the doctor said he can hear everything we say.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sibahle: I would run away if I were even mom is not happy with you look at her. (she was right mom was not happy)

Zenande: I don't think we have to wait for daddy to wake up mom is ready to beat the living day lights out him.

Lwazi: She can't do that and she knows.

Mom: I have something much worse in mind for you Lwazi. A beating would be very easy.

We ordered food and stayed there chatting about everything until it was time for us to leave and mom was staying.

Me: I'll be there in a sec guys I just need to talk to mom... hey mom how are you feeling? Mom: I'm ok baby just tired that's all.

Me: He is going to be fine mama. He is going to wake up just be patient with him. You know how stubborn he can be and right now he is just being his usual stubborn self.

Mom: tell me something how did you grow up so fast and into this young man standing before me? Me: we learned

from the best. She is not perfect she makes mistakes she is human after all but she always makes sure that we have what we need and makes sure that we know that we always know that she is there for us. He also knows you

are here for him and he know we love him and we need that's why he is going to wake up. Let me go mom before Uncle Bandile comes back in here for me. I love you mom and please try to get some sleep ok.

## CHAPTER 54

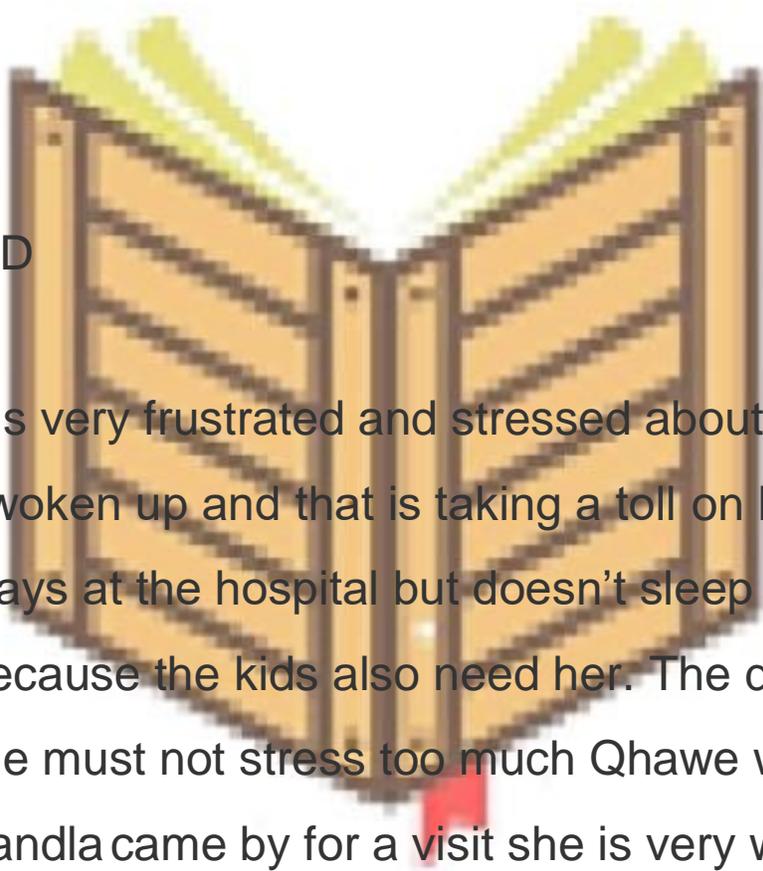
A WEEK

LATER

SUNDAY

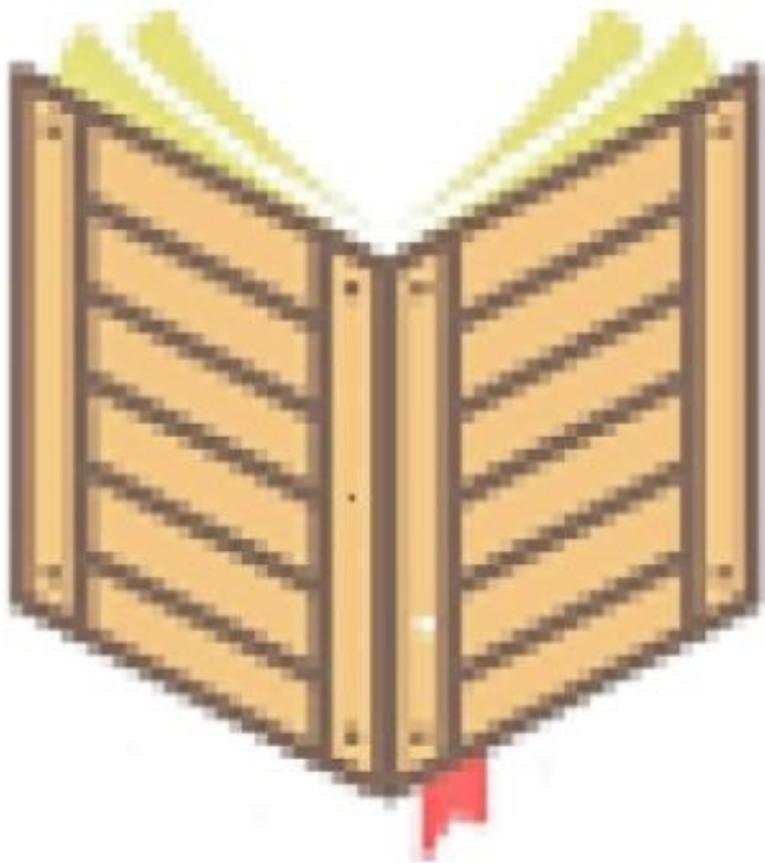
NARATTED

Everyone is very frustrated and stressed about Qhawe he hasn't woken up and that is taking a toll on Khanyi. She is always at the hospital but doesn't sleep there all the time because the kids also need her. The doctor told her that she must not stress too much Qhawe will wake up. Linamandla came by for a visit she is very worried about her mom but she couldn't stay long because of school she is writing tests but she makes sure she calls every night to check on her family. Khaya has completely recovered and back at work. Khanyi is only working from home and goes to the office when she needs to. Her and



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khaya are handling Qhawe's business but the plans Khanyi had of launching the new ad campaign have to wait until Qhawe wakes up. Andile and Eddie really did a number on Zwelibanzi after which they handed him over to Det. Nxele who wanted to know what



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

happened to Zwelibanzi and was told not to ask too many questions. He will be going to prison for a very long time. They finally got the information they needed on him about the human trafficking from an anonymous source so he will have multiple murder charges added on his charge sheet. The kids are getting along very well and being there for each other in these trying times. Sibahle and Zenande also spoke to Khanyi about seeing Anelisa when their father wakes up. They want to go see her. Sibahle wants to put everything behind her. Lisakhanya's nightmares are better now it seems like therapy is helping and having her Wabo is helping her a lot. The kids have become inseperable in such a short space of time.

Lwazi was punished for making the kids take the fall for him eating Khanyi's snacks. His punishment was doing the dishes every night for two weeks. he still has a week to go.

Lwazi: Khanyi does it have to be for two weeks?

Khanyi: Yes it does besides Thando said you deserve more that two weeks so you should be happy I didn't your girlfriend's idea. One week is pusionishment for eating my stuff and the other week is for making my kids take the fall

for you.

Lwazi: yhooo no Qhawe needs to wake up now. You are very abusive. Even my Queen is selling me out.

Lonwabo: Uncle Lwazi tell me something what did you think was going to happen if he was here? The way I see it you are getting off lightly with this punishment from mom.

Lwazi: Qhawe wouldn't allow this kind of abuse.

Bandile: for someone who has known that man since varsity years you are being dillusional right now.

Khanyi: two weeks and that's it.

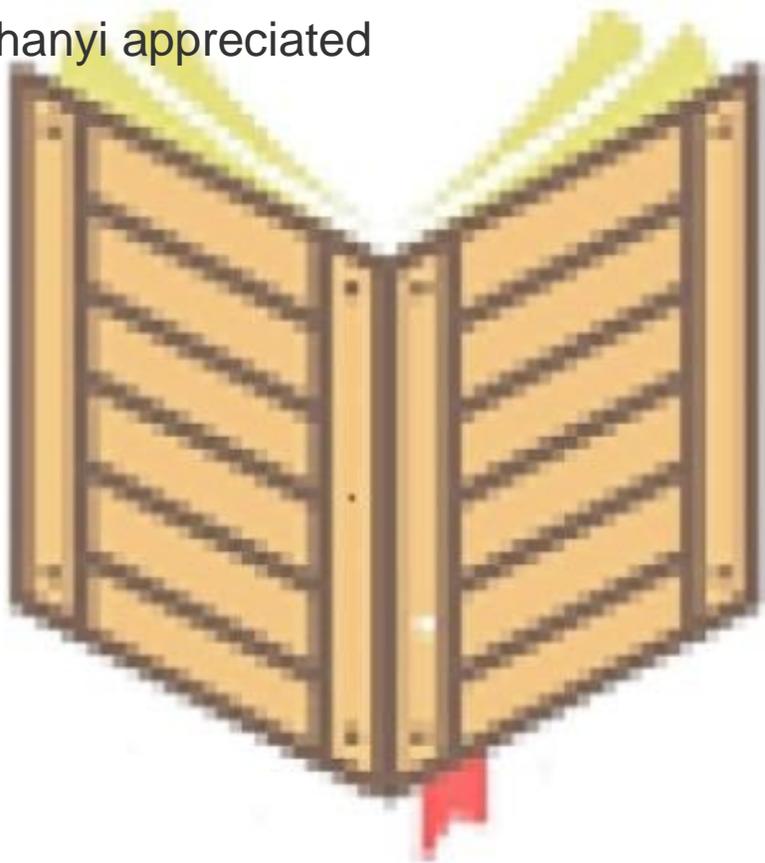
Ntando: Take it like a man uncle Sizwe we did.

Lwazi: you kids you are really not helping this situation. You are just fire to the fuel.

Everyone just laughed at him having the idea that the kids would actually take his side. He was really being delusional. Sizwe is very excited about being a father. He goes to prison to check on Anelisa making sure that she is taking care of herself and reminding her that he will kill her kids should she not take care of herself. Little does she know that Sizwe has no intentions of doing that he never did and the fact is that he is now part of the family.

Siyanda has failed to get Sindy to leave. She is adamant

that she will only leave when she has spoken to Qhawe and Siyanda has warned her about stepping on Khanyi's toes and the girl refuses to listen. Siyanda finally had a chance to talk to Khanyi and apologised for behaving the way she did and judging her. She also told Khanyi about how she wanted Sindy to be the one that was dating Qhawe. Khanyi appreciated



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Siyanda's honesty and she forgave her. They are now working on their relationship hopefully it will be a good one at least for now they are civil to each other.

QHAWE

When I woke up last night I realised I was in hospital and I remembered that I took a bullet for Sizwe I know that was a stupid a move but I couldn't let him die before he meets his child. As I was thinking back I rembered Khanyi telling me that she was pregnant but how I thought she couldn't have kids anymore since she had the operation to tie her tubes how is it possible. Oh my God

Sponsored

I am going to be a father again. What did I do? I can't wait to see my Queen and my kids. I miss them so much. The doctor need to let me go home soon. I miss my family.

The doctor walks in interrupting me from my thoughts.

Doctor: Morning how are

you feeling today? Me: I'm

feeling ok just in pain that's all.

Doctor: the nurse will come by and give you your morning dose. Me: thanks doctor. When am I going home?

Doctor: As soon as I am convinced that you are better.

Me: I miss my family doc I need to be with them.

Doctor: you will be with them. They usually come from lunch time. Only the Mrs comes early in the morning and she will be here soon. (the nurse walks and gives me my pain medication and leaves.) Me: Well Doc we are not married yet.

Doctor: Really? one would swear the two of you are married. She must really love you then. They way she hovers over you says it all. You are a lucky man.

Me: I am indeed. (I can feel the pain medication working it's also making me sleepy. I don't know when I fell asleep but I woke up to a soft voice talking to me and her head on my shoulder I think she is avoiding hurting me by lying on

my chest I decide to keep quiet and listen to her)

Khanyi: You are boring you know that right. I've been coming here for a week and I always talk alone. I thought you would be awake by now. we had a doctor's appointment and i cancelled it because I didn't want to go alone. Look I get that you are in pain but really this is not funny anymore if you don't wake today I am going to stop coming and you owe me for the time you took me shopping on the day I got shot and I still haven't received what I wanted that day.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: you will get it my Queen I promise.

Khanyi: how am I going to get it when you are being stubborn I this bed not wanting to wake up. Me: As soon as you realise that I am awake and I am actually talking to you. (she literally jumps up tears just fall on her face and she kisses me. She stops kissing me and looks into my eyes and I think she sees what she was looking for.)

Khanyi: You are awake. I'll get the doctor.

Me: You don't have to baby he knows. I woke up last night. Khanyi: why didn't they call me Qhawe?

Me: I asked them not to. I wanted to surprise you and I guess I did. I love you so much and thank you for being here everyday. Please stop crying.

Khanyi: it's tears of joy. I'm just so happy that you're awake. ( she says that kissing me again.)

NOVELSGURU.COM

SINDY

He is finally awake. I came to see him I snuck in but when I got to his room he is with her. That should be me kissing him like that. She is so excited I just stand at the

door and watch them being all lovey dovey. I hate this woman right now she has what I want the man I want and the life I want. Things would be so much easier if she wan't in the picture she is just complicating things for me and the fact that those kids love her so much doesn't help my case but they can learn to love me as well.

Qhawe's mom actually told me that she told her the truth. I can't believe she changed her mind just like that. She even kicked me out of Qhawe's house. She let me stay there when I arrived but now that she changed her mind she kicked me out. Maybe I should consider looking for a job this side. I'm actually grateful that all of this is happening whilst I'm on leave. My phone rings and it's one of my friends.

Me: Hello

Her: how are you doing **Sindy** when are you coming back?

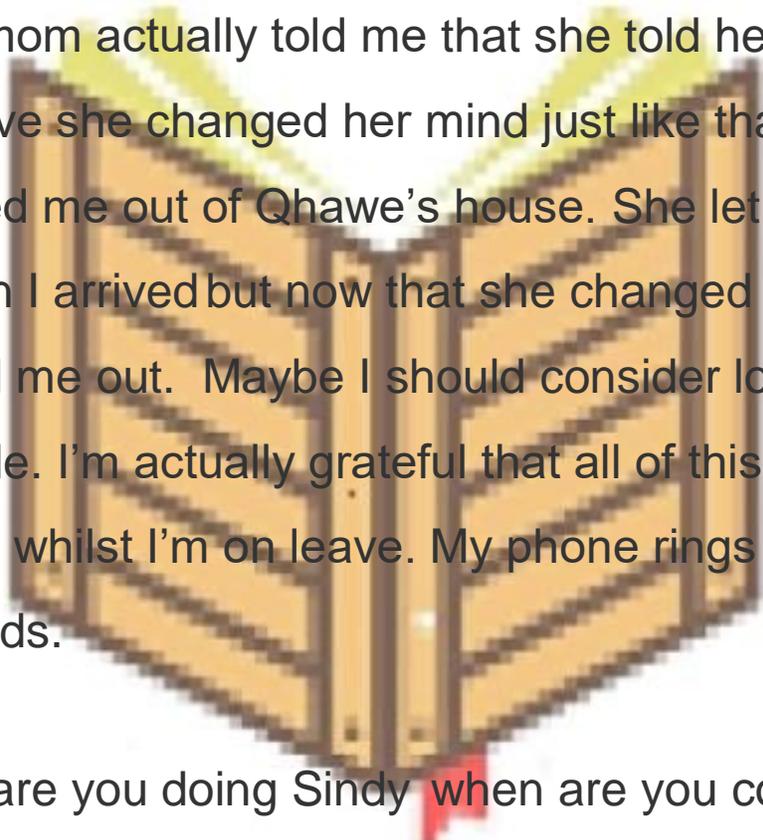
Me; I'm ok. I'm not sure when I'll be

back. Qhawe is finally awake. Her:

have you spoken to him?

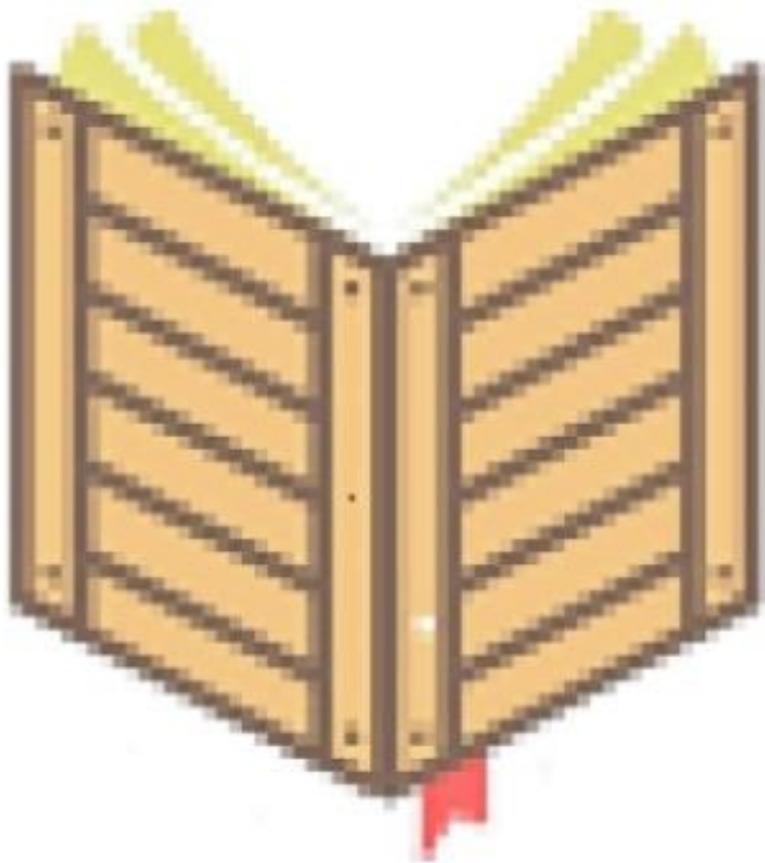
Me: no I haven't. I can't even see him. I snuck in today and when I got to his room he was with his girlfriend.

Her: what does his mother have to say?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: she is not helping me anymore she reconsidered. Only God knows why. This girl is not even Qhawe's type.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: their relationship is not that serious?

Me: it is looks like it is and Qhawe's kids love her. I might stand a chance with Qhawe but I don't think I'll stand a chance with the kids.

Her; hayibo Sindy there's kids involved but you've always said you are not ready to be a parent nje. Me: for Qhawe I'll be ready and he is not the type to send his kids to boarding school and besides the kids are grown now. the little one 12 years old.

Her: are you sure you want this my friend? Me: I am sure.

Her: I'll support you then.

Me: thank you dear. (I say as I hang up. But the question is am I really ready for his kids. I go back to his room and this time there's whole lot of people and his parents are here too. They look like they are having fun.)

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

CHAPTER 55

MONDAY

KHANYISILE

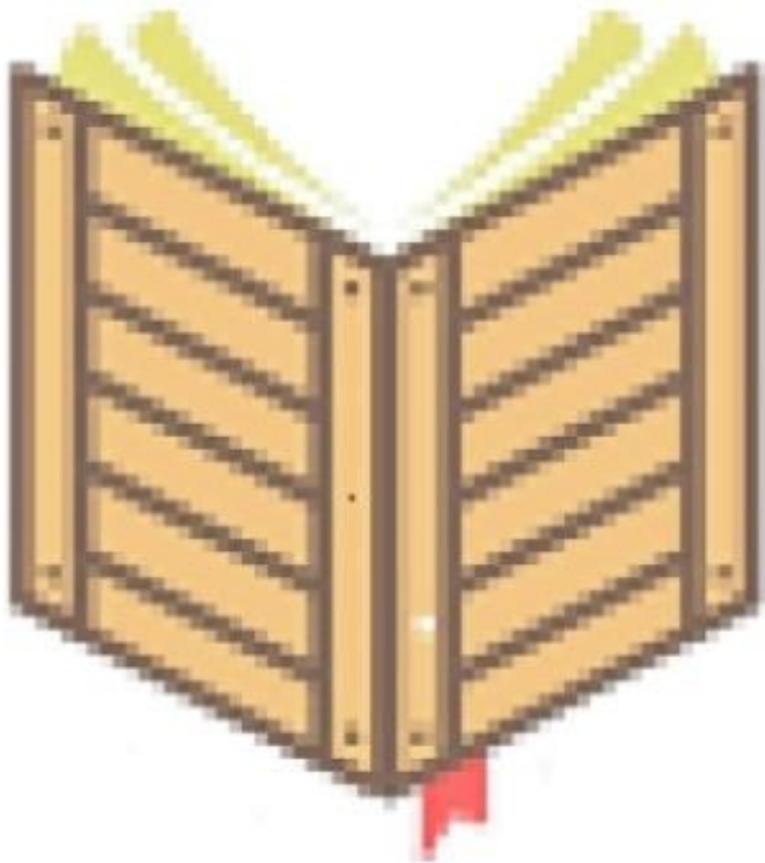
So today is Monday and I have to be in the office. I'm driving the kids to school who are excited that their father is awake and they are also excited about the weekend. There's a spring event happening at school this weekend since it is the first week of September. I love seeing them so happy and so excited about things. The matriculants also have their matric farewell in the middle of September and that's Lonwabo and Sibahle. Lonwabo is being a boy about it and Sibahle is being a girl about it. Who would have thought I would be a mother of 10 kids soon to be 11. 5 boys and 5 girls and these boys are actually taller than me even Sibahle and Linamandla but those are the joys of dating tall guys.

Sibahle: Mom are we going to see daddy today?

Me: yes baby you will. We'll go straight to the hospital when I fetch you from school. Ntando: you are not at the office much lately mom what's going on?

Me: well since your grandfather decided to make you guys business people at a young age I have to handle your businesses as well so I decided to work from home

for now until I get my way around things besides I'm thinking of hiring a CEO for my company but I have to talk to your dad about



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

that. As soon as he is healthy and strong again we are going to have a business meeting regarding the business you got from your grandfather.

Lonwabo: can Sibahle join us in the meeting. There's something I would like to discuss but I would like for her to be there.

Sibahle: what are you talking about Lonwabo?

Me: if she is ok with that then I don't see a problem.

Lonwabo: You'll find out at the meeting dear sister. (he just smiles at her and she shakes her head.) Ntando: Let's have Zenande and Lisakhanya too. I also have something I want to discuss and Lwanele has something she wants discuss too.

Me: we are here. (I say as I park the car in front of the school gate.) I heard you all and I will discuss everything with the King of the castle. How's that?

Sibahle: that's fine.

Lwanele: That's fine mom. See you at three.

Say hi to dad when you talk to him. Me: I will baby.

Them: bye

mom Me:

bye

babies.

Ntando: We love you don't ever doubt it.

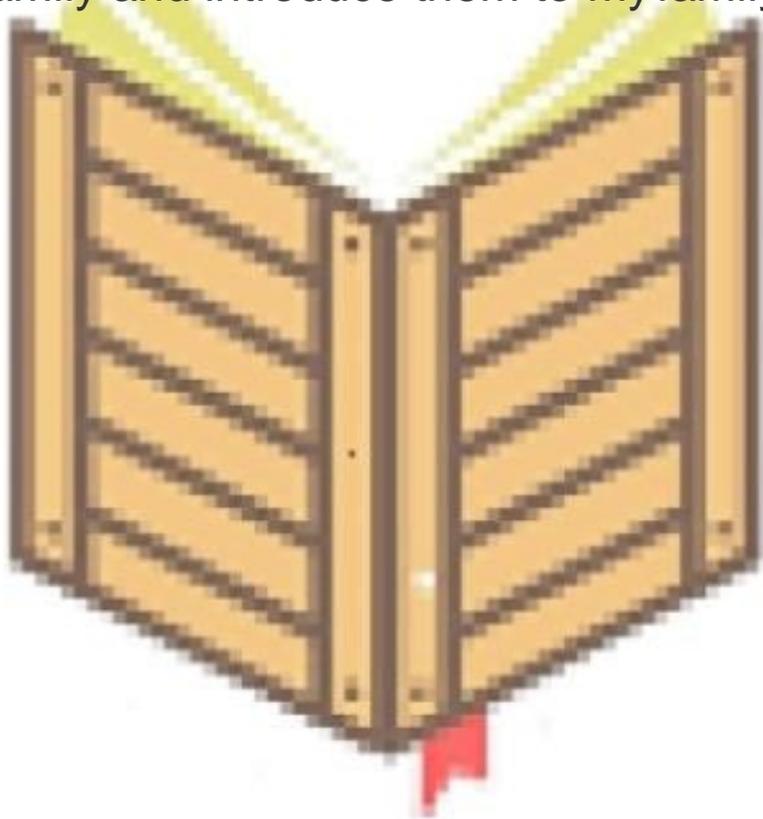
(he says that kissing my forehead and walks to the others and I drive off to the office. When I get there Ibanathi is ready for me as usual this one he never fails. Actually Ibanathi knows everything there is to know about this business he has a degree in accounting and diploma in business management he has worked closely with me ever since I started I think no one deserves this more than he does. I'll just have to speak to Qhawe and Khaya. I'm spending half a day in my office and the other half in Qhawe's office. This man needs to get better now. I still have to go to the mall and get him a new phone since his phone was destroyed during the kidnapping and his laptop. Today is a busy day and I am not in the mood for it I just want to be next to my man and just cuddle. i think this baby is making me clingy and I don't think I like that. Half way through the morning Ibanathi tells me there's someone who want to see me he is in the waiting room. Stupid me I don't even ask who it is I just tell him to bring him in and only to find out that....

Me: what do you want?

Him: is that the way you greet people these days  
you don't even offer your guest a drink. Me:

Nkosikhona if you don't state your business right  
now security is only a button away.

Nkosikhona: I need to take Linamandla and Khaya to  
meet my family and introduce them to my family and  
ancestors.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Get out right now. you know very well that I hate repeating myself but because it's you let me do you this favour one last time and repeat myself. My kids don't need your family they don't need your ancestors they are doing just fine. All of sudden now your family realises that the kids need to be introduced to them and your bloody ancestors where were they the past twenty five years. Please Nkosikhona don't fuck with me not today not any other day from now on. You your family and ancestors can go fuck yourselves. NOW LEAVE MY OFFICE. (he tries to say something but I interrupt him.) I SAID LEAVE AND DON'T EVER COME BACK HERE AGAIN IF YOU KNOW WHAT'S GOOD FOR YOU. (he gets up leaves without saying anything. After he Leaves I take a deep breath and I just carry on with my day. I finish up with everything here and go to QM Architecture when I get there at least John is ready for me. I didn't have to stay long with John we just had a few things to finalise for the ad campaign and now Qhawe just has to sign off a few things the rest I've signed off. As soon as Qhawe signs we are launching on Friday and a certain part of the campaign is a surprise for him which is

the part I signed off. I took the kids to the hospital after school. We didn't stay long I still have to go to the mall for his phone and laptop I'll go back with them tonight. I must say they enjoyed seeing each other. He actually couldn't take his eyes off me. He said I looked sexy and he said I was killing him. I actually didn't feel sexy. I'm wearing my maroon pant suit with a white shirt and maroon pencil heel shoes today but when I went to the hospital I had taken off my jacket rolled up my shirt sleeves to the elbow since today is a hot day. Believe me there's nothing sexy with how I look. I decide to go buy myself some coffee while I wait for Qhawe's gadgets and this woman comes and sits at my table. The coffee shop is directly opposite the gadget shop. I must remember to buy him a slice of cheesecake. He love the cheesecake from here.

Me: what do you want?

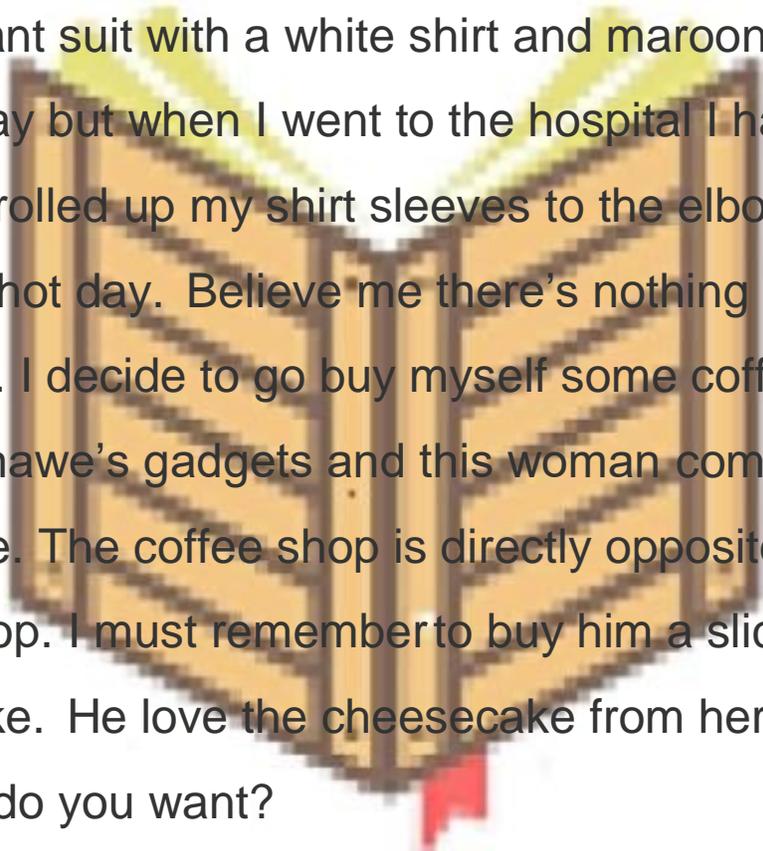
Her: I want to officially introduce myself

Me: what makes you think I am

interested in your introduction? Her:

You should be because the man you are with is mine.

Me: I see I didn't realise I was sharing him. I'm

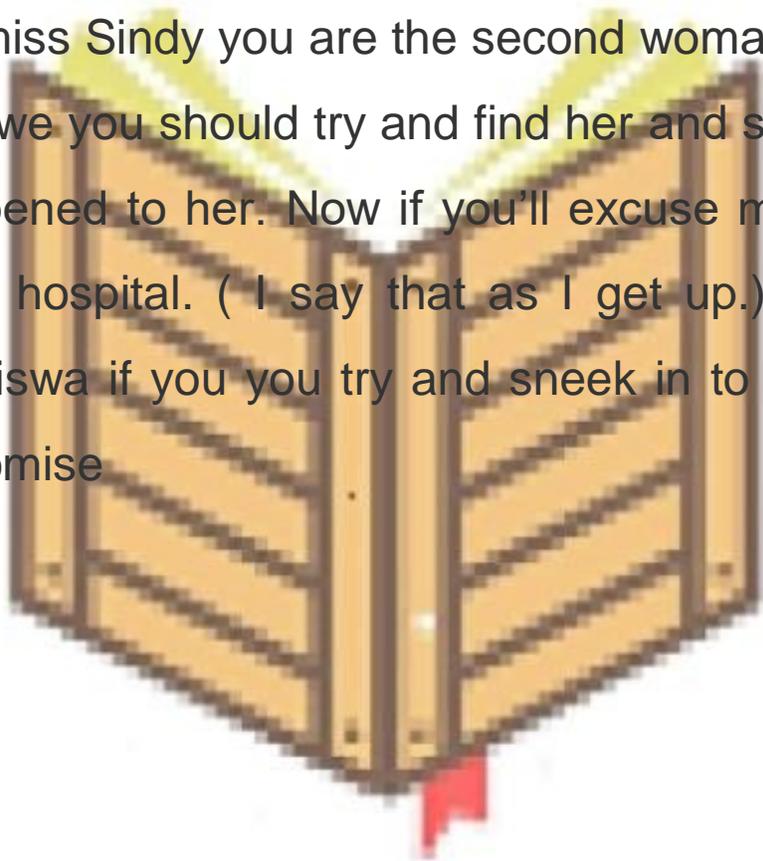


NOVELSGURU.COM

sorry what's your name again? Her: I'm Sindiswa and Qhawe is going to be mine soon.

Me: I thought you just said he was already yours you really should make up your mind. Her: he is mine.

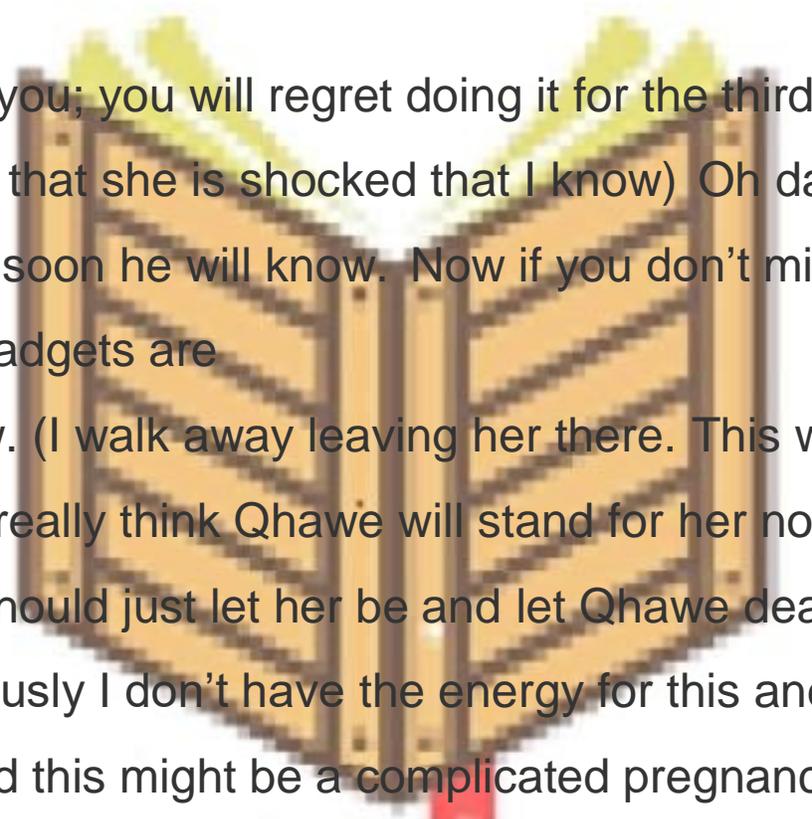
Me: look miss Sindy you are the second woman coming to claim Qhawe you should try and find her and she'll tell you what happened to her. Now if you'll excuse me I have to get to the hospital. ( I say that as I get up.) One more thing Sindiswa if you you try and sneek in to the hospital again I promise



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

you; you will regret doing it for the third time. (I can see that she is shocked that I know) Oh darling I know and soon he will know. Now if you don't mind

Sponsored



I promise you; you will regret doing it for the third time. (I can see that she is shocked that I know) Oh darling I know and soon he will know. Now if you don't mind I'm sure his gadgets are ready now. (I walk away leaving her there. This woman does she really think Qhawe will stand for her nonsense. Maybe I should just let her be and let Qhawe deal with her. Seriously I don't have the energy for this and the doctor said this might be a complicated pregnancy. I really don't need all this unnecessary stress.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

**KHAYA**

I survived what I would consider the worst experience in my life even though I knew they would be there to save us. I prayed that when they do get there it wasn't too late.

I'm grateful for the uncles for being there for us and for mom. Now life must go on. I have decided to introduce my girlfriend to my family and this girl I want to spend the rest of my life with. I'll be doing the introduction at the hospital since she works there plus tonight she is working so that makes things easy for me. She is going to kill me though because I haven't told her but she knows them already so it won't be that awkward. We are at the hospital right now and I am actually nervous about the whole thing maybe I should wait. No let me do it now.

Lonwabo: Bro are you ok?

You look really nevous. Me:  
that's because I am.'

Lonwabo: don't worry everyone is going to like her and plus she will be here soon so get your act together. Plus I don't think she will mind that you introduced her to your family at the

hospital. Besides this is where we  
spend most of our days now. Banele:

What's with the private conversation  
guys.

Lonwabo: You'll just have to wait bro.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Bandile(Twin): You guys have been having a lot of these lately. (he is right about that because Lonwabo is the only one I trust not to say anything to anyone.)

Lisakhanya: Wabo are you keeping secrets from me now (Lisakhanya and Lwanele are his weakness.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lonwabo: Never Princess. (I know it's hard for him to lie to her right now. Just then my girlfriend walks in to check on dad she looks at me and I see that mom saw that and dad just looked at me with a raised eyebrow. While she was busy checking dad's chart and checking on him I decide to do it.)

Me: Guys (the room goes quiet giving me all the attention and mind everyone is here including dad's parents.) I would like to introduce you to my girlfriend Lungiswa (I say looking at me and she turns looking at me shocked)

Her: Khaya!!! (that comes out as a whisper from her and I here dad cursing and only then she realises that she was holding his wound too tight) Shit! Shit!! Khaya look what you made me do. I'm so sorry Mr Mtimkhulu. I'll give you something for the pain.

Khaya: watch the language babe there's kids here.

Her: Don't tell me to watch my language while your dad is in pain because of me. You know what this is all your fault.

Me: come on babe I didn't mean for you to hurt him and besides this was the easiest way to introduce you to my

crazy family.

Her: Khaya if you don't stop talking right now I will give this injection to you instead of him.

Mom: don't even think about it my man needs that more than that idiot boyfriend of yours. Khaya I am going to kill you if you don't shut up right now.

Me: Oh please mom you could have done

that years ago if you wanted to. Lungiswa: I will help her if you don't shut up.

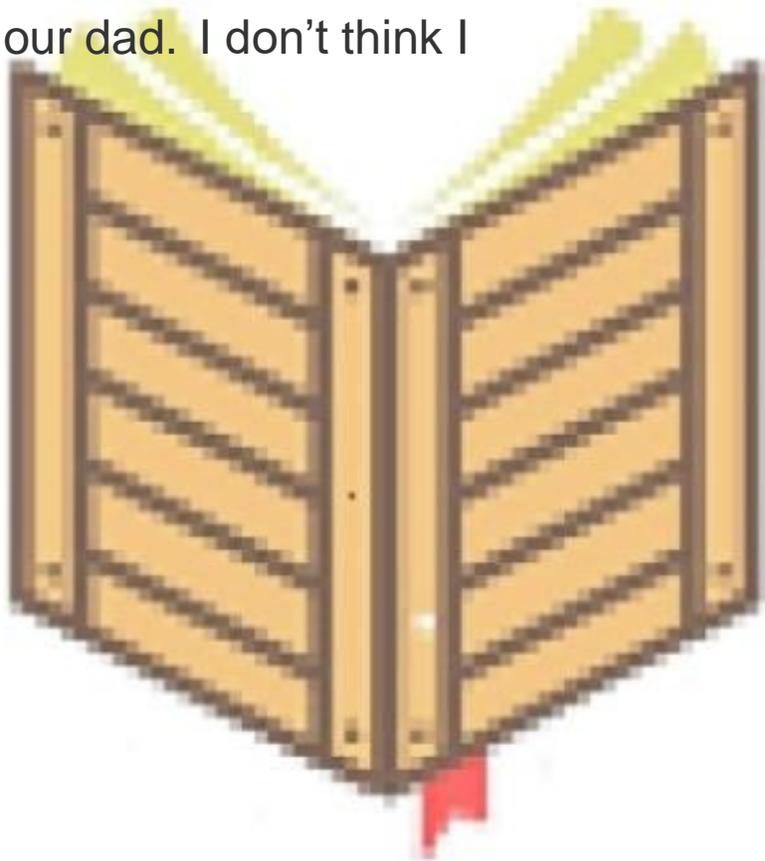
Ntando: she fits in perfectly with the family. Welcome to the family my dear sister in law. (he gets up and side hugs her because she was still busy with my dad.) you took care of mom when she was shot and now you are taking care of dad (everyone in the room goes "oh shit it's her") I guess you were meant to be part of this family. Don't worry dear sister you will fit in because it seems you are as crazy as we are. You and mom will be best friends.

Me: Ntando stop it you are making her shy.

Bandile(Twin): but he is speaking the truth what's your problem. You wanted to introduce her to your crazy family so deal with it.

Lwanele: Hi Lungi I'm Lwanele and these are my sisters Sibahle Zenande and Lisakhanya. Those four idiots in the

corner there are my brothers. The Twins (Bandile and Banele) then Ntando and Lonwabo also known as Wabo and then that's my Uncle Sizwe he is my favourite uncle that's uncle Eddie and Uncle Andile over there and then next to them are Uncle Bandile and Uncle Lwazi the twins are name after them. The old couple are our grandparents parents to our dad. I don't think I



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

need to introduce the parents since you already met them. There; now you know everyone in this room.

That's what my idiot big brother was suppose to do.

Me: Lwanele I am not your age mate don't call me an idiot.

Qhawe: Don't feel bad Princess he is one and you did good with the introduction now come here. (she smiles and sticks her tongue out looking at me and goes to her dad.)

Me: I'll get you for this.

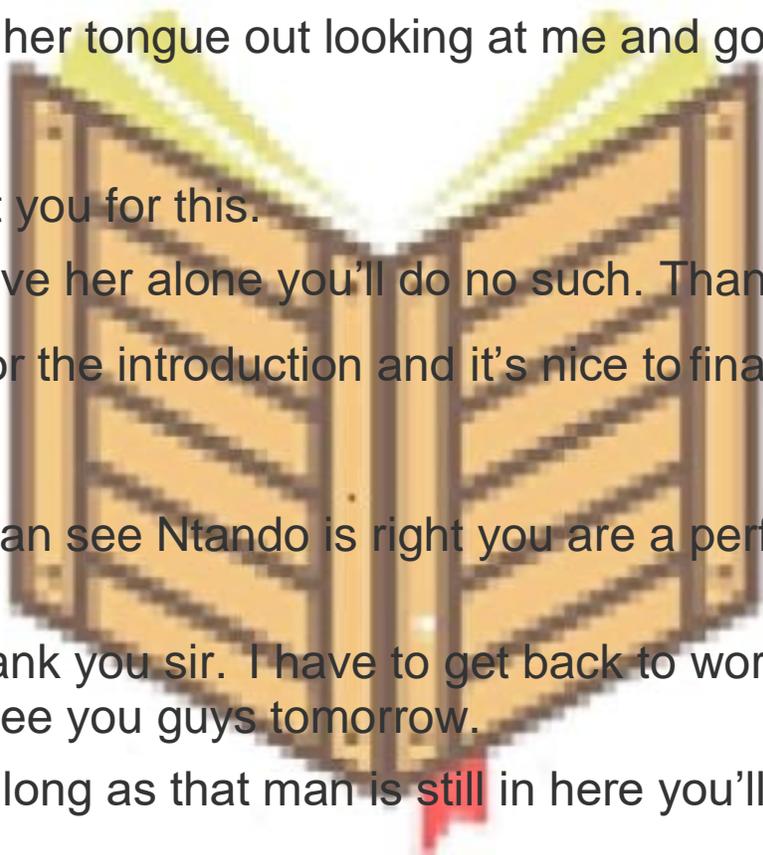
Lungi: Leave her alone you'll do no such. Thank you Lwanele for the introduction and it's nice to finally meet everyone.

Loyiso: I can see Ntando is right you are a perfect fit in this family.

Lungi: Thank you sir. I have to get back to work and I guess I'll see you guys tomorrow.

Lwazi: As long as that man is **still** in here you'll see us everyday. Khaya couldn't you wait to introduce her you just had to do it at the hospital. I'm just wondering if your mom didn't drop you as a baby.

Lonwabo: Uncle Lwazi I wouldn't say much about mom if I were remember you are still on punishment and you don't want her to make it worse especially when aunt



NOVELSGURU.COM

Thando is going to back her up.

Lwazi: you can say that again. I'm shutting up. (everyone laughs at him) Lungi: What did he do?

Bandile (twin): that's a story for when we are sitting in the kitchen having breakfast.

Loyiso: that's another thing you'll have to get used to with this family. They love eating in the kitchen they have a proper dining table but they never use it. They live in the kitchen.

Qhawe: dad don't say it like that. We use the diniring area sometimes. Bandile: the kitchen is more comfortable and relaxed.

Lungi: I see. I have to go. I'll come check on you later Mr Mtimkhulu Qhawe: thanks Lungi.

(I stand from where I was sitting and walk her out.)

Lungi: Did you really have to do it here.

Me: it went well babe and I told you they would like you.

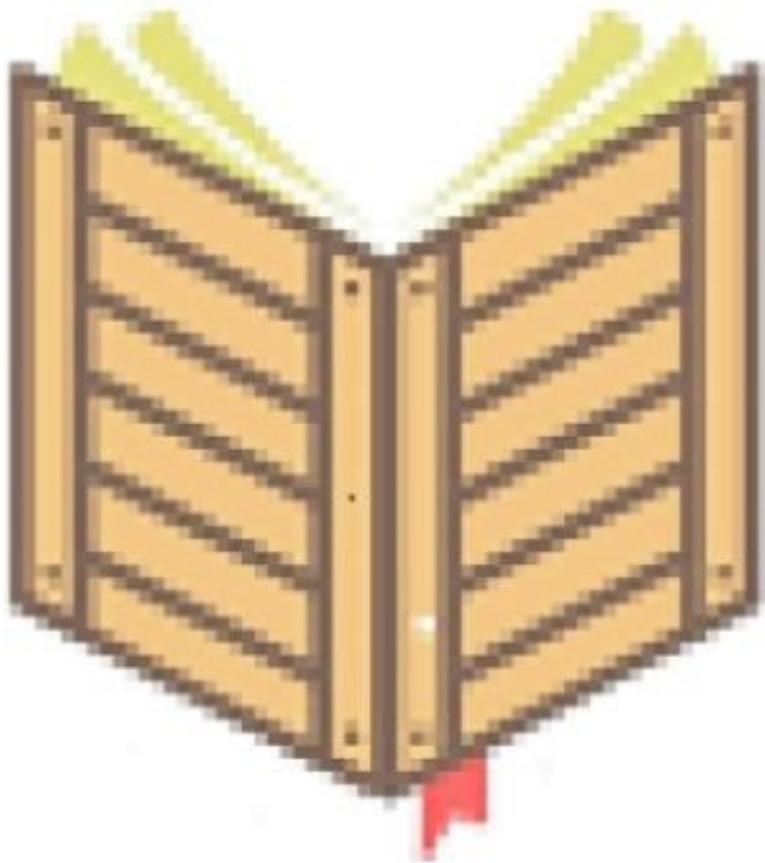
Lungi: but Khaya (I just bring her shortself closer to me and kiss her.)



Me: go back to work and I'll see you in the morning when I come to fetch you. Lungi: You do know that I can drive myself right.

Me: I know. I just like driving you around when I have the time to do it so just enjoy it.

SINDISWA



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

What did she mean when she said I must find the other woman and she'll tell me what happened to her and who is this woman. Khanyi is so confident that she won't lose Qhawe to me. She doesn't know me very well but I need to find this woman she is talking about and while I'm at it let me find out what I can about Khanyi. Where's my phone I need call the Private Investigator we use at work I can't afford to hire one.

Him: what can I do for you?

Me: I need you find out some information for me

Him: is it work related or is it personal I heard you are in Durban and you don't even come to check on me.

Me: I've been busy and the info I need is for me. Him:

You know the price right?

Me: Yes I know

Him: good then. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Qhawe Mtimkhulu I need know every thing about him especially his previous girlfriends and Khanyisile Sondlo I also need to know everything about her.

Him: Qhawe the Architect guru and Khanyisile the

Marketing Lady and the rumour is that she is behind the new image of QM Architecture that they will be launching soon you are really aiming high this time Sindy. I hope you remember what happened the last time you did this.

Me: you don't have to remind me and this time it's different.

Him: is it really different Sindy. These people you want info on are very powerful people in business they have money they can easily make you disappear and you know what that would do to your mother.

Me: don't tell me about my mother she is the reason I'm doing this.

Him: fine I'll get you the info you want I'll let you know when I have it but Sindy you need tread carefully on this one.

Me: I will. Thanks for the advice. I'll be waiting for your call. Bye.

(I know Qhawe is one of the best architect in the country but he called the marketing lady does that mean she money too. Mxm Qhawe probably helped her to start the business. I need a long hot bath.)

## CHAPTER 56

### FIRDAY

## QHAWE

I hate being here and I am hoping that the doctor tells me I can go home today. Khanyi is nothere yet and I hope the doctor comes when she is here. I miss my lady I miss my kids. I just miss being home and I know she needs my help even though she won't say it. I signed off on the new ad campaign she designed for my business and it looks absolutely amazing and it's launching today. I can't wait to see the results after this. Someone walks in interrupting me from my thoughts it's Lungi and the doctor. Lungi comes to me and starts changing my bandages.

Doctor: You are healing nicely and you can go home today. Me: finally. I was going to discharge myself now.

Doctor: Now you don't have to. You need take care of that would until it heals completely. No weight lifting until you are healed is that clear?

Me: Yes doc.

Doctor: I was hoping the Mrs would be here so that Lungi can show her how to dress your wound but she can always show her when she gets here.

Me: Thanks doc. Thanks Lungi. (the doctor leaves and Lungi finishes up what she is doing.) Now that I am getting out of here today you should talk to Khaya about bringing you over to the house for dinner.

Lungi: I'll talk to him.

Thank you. Me: You

really do love him?

Lungi: how can you tell?

Me: the way your face lights up at the mention of his name.

Lungi Khaya has been through a lot if he hasn't told he will.

Don't push him to open up he will talk when he is ready. He is more like his mom more than he realises. Love him care for me don't get tired of showing him you love him and telling him. I know you want to hear him say it and he will. I wanted so bad for his mom to tell me she loves me. I could see it in everything. She did everything she could to show me but I wanted to hear it but I was patient I waited for her. The moment the words came out her mouth I didn't believe it because she was angry when she said it angry at my ex-wife even though she was angry I knew she meant it it came from the heart. Khaya is just like his mom in everyway just be patient with him. Do you understand?

Lungi: I understand but how do you know he hasn't told me he loved?

Me: He might not be biologically mine but he is my son I know him and understand him. Lungi: he is lucky to have you.

Me: I am lucky to have them in my life. The life I have with them I wouldn't trade it for anything.

Lungi: the love you guys have for each is amazing sometimes I wish my family was as united as you guys.

Me: You are part of the family now. To be a family you don't have to related the most unlikely strangers can make a family and that's how our family started.

Lungi: You mean to tell me that you are not all related.

Me: No we are not. Lwazi and Bandile are my friends since varsity. Lungi: and I thought you guys were brothers.

Me: in a way we are brothers we all are. Eddie Andile and Luyanda have been with Khanyi for four years. You still have to meet Luyanda. Sizwe has also been in Khanyi's life for a very long time he considers her his little sister. Khanyi has 5 kids and I have 5 kids too and now we are this big blended family.

Lungi: how did you manage to blend so well.

Me: I would be lying if I said we worked hard on us being like this. It just happened naturally Lungi: I'm glad to be part of the family. Thank you for welcoming me and thank you for the breakdown I appreciate it. I sent Khaya a message to bring a change of clothes for you he said he'll come and his mom was going to be held up in a meeting. (my phone beeps and it's a message from Khanyi. "Stuck in a meeting. I'll see you soon. I hope the doctor has discharged you. I need you home today. I

love you my King.” Me: Yes I’m going home today apparently Khaya is the one to fetch me. I love you too my Queen.)

Me: That was Khaya’s mom.

Lungi: I could tell by the smile on your face. Thank you for the advice. I have to go check on my patients. You are no longer my patient. Take care of yourself Mr Mtimkhulu.

Me: You as well Lungi. Hope to see you soon. (just as I am getting myself comfortable and wait for Khaya someone else walks in. I haven’t seen this in person in ages what is she doing here) Me: Sindiswa

Sindy: Hi Qhawe how are you?

Me: fine. What are you doing here? Sindy: I came to see you

Me: And your reason for that would be what exactly? Sindy: because I care about you.

Me: why would you care oh no wait don’t tell me you still have a crush on me. You’ve had this crush since high school and you haven’t gotten over it? wow

Sindy: it's not just a crush Qhawe I love you. I loved you back then I still love you now. ( I look at her shocked and I'm trying to find a nice to say what I want to say to her.)

## KHANYISILE

I really don't understand why that meeting had to drag for so long. Old people in business sometimes they can be a pain. It's a good thing Khaya hadn't left for the hospital. I'm so happy he is finally coming home. I missed him so much. I bump into

Lungi at the hospital reception. Khaya chose well. She is a beautiful girl and very humble. Me: Is he ready to go?

Lungi: yes he is. He just needs his clothes I hope he is not sleeping I gave him his pain medication.

Me: I'm sure he is too excited to sleep. Let me go. Oh and tell that son of mine to bring you over for dinner soon.

Lungi: I will. See you later

Miss Sondlo. Me: see you

later baby.

I walk to Qhawe's room before I could go in I hear his voice and he is angry so I decide to stand and listen.

Qhawe: which part of I have a woman in my life and she is

all the woman I need did you not understand Cindy. (oh it's her how did she manage to get in. she must be very sneaky)

Sindy: Qhawe please I just want us try and see where it goes. You have nothing to lose.

Qhawe: woman are you mad. I have everything to lose besides that I'm not interested in you. Don't you think if I wanted you in any way I would have dated you in high school. You threw yourself at me back then just like you are now. you know what I don't even know why I'm entertaining this nonsense of your. Get out leave.

Sindy: Que please just give us a chance.

Qhawe: if you ever call me that again I will slap the black off you. Now leave. (let rescue this poor girl from Qhawe's rath. Why would she call him Que. She has a death wish.)

Me: I believe the man said leave (she looks at with so much disgust in her eyes. I couldn't care less really. She looks at Qhawe who looks back at her with a raised eyebrow.) you are still here. Ok then. ( I walk over to Qhawe)

Me: hi Que how are you? Are you ready to go home my King?

Qhawe: I've been ready my Queen. I miss you guys so much. (he pulls me close and kisses me)

Sindy: why does she call you Que I thought you didn't like.  
(hayibo this girl is still here.) Qhawe: none of your business.  
Baby please call security because I am about to kill someone in  
this room. I'll go change so we can go. (Qhawe turns and looks  
at Sindy) by the time I get of out of the bathroom you had  
better not be here. (he kisses my forehead and walks to the  
bathroom with his bag.)

Me: why are you still standing here

Sponsored

I thought you didn't like. (hayibo this girl is still here.)  
Qhawe: none of your business. Baby please call security  
because I am about to kill someone in this room. I'll go change  
so we can go. (Qhawe turns and looks at Sindy) by the time I  
get of out of the bathroom you had better not be here. (he kisses  
my forehead and walks to the bathroom with his bag.)

Me: why are you still standing here

you heard the man. Sindy: this is not  
over.

Me: oh it is darling. It is over my dear. Now leave. (she  
looks at me for a while clicks hertongue and walks out)

Qhawe: good she is gone. I really don't know what mom  
was thinking bringing her here. Me: she wanted what she

thought was best for you.

Qhawe: You are what's best for me. Let's go home so that I can make love to you before the kids come home.

Me: the doctor said no sex my King until you are completely healed. (just then Lungi walks in with the wheel chair.)

Qhawe: I'm not using that.

Me: since I can't carry you you have to use it you don't have a choice. Lungi: use it or I'll

call security to carry you

Qhawe: You wouldn't dare

Lungi: try me dad in law try

me and you'll see. Qhawe: fine

I'll use it.

Me: Good. Sit I'll push you. Thanks Lungi. (we walk out)

Qhawe: Khanyi no doctor is going to tell not to make love to my Queen. I miss you woman. Me: I miss you too my King. (I help him into the car and I drive us home. There's no point in arguing with him about this he has made up his mind.) what's on your mind you are very quiet.

Qhawe: I'm trying to figure out what could be going on in that woman's head. I mean she was told to go home there's nothing for her here and she decides to stay to pursue me with the hope that I'll end things with you and be with her. I'm just trying to understand how her brain works. Me: Just let her be eventually she will get it.

Qhawe: I can't let her be babe. Remember you are pregnant and you don't need the stress she has to be dealt with.

Me: Que if there one thing I know and sure of right now is that she won't get what she wants. Let's both not stress about her. she is non-factor in our lives.

Qhawe: You really shouldn't call me Que. The way you say does things to me I might just make you pull over on the side of the road.

SINDISWA

Being here makes me nervous I don't know. Whenever I'm around him I am always nervous. Why is he taking so long to open the door. Just as I am about to open it he opens the door. Ok so he was in the shower his body is wet and has a towel wrapped around his waiste. He has a nice body not your gym type body but he has a nice medium sized body. He is not one those guys that go to

gym.

Him: how long are you going to stand

there staring at me. Me: I'm sorry (I

say as I walk in.) hi

Him: hi to you too.

Me: you have what I asked for?

Him: on the dining table (I walk to the dining table and take the

envelope and look at the info.) Me: Qhawe is worth so much I

didn't know he was this rich and his business is doing well. So

the only previous serious relationship was with his ex-wife

who is in prison now for attempted murder.

Him: before she went to jail she disappeared for about a month.

She came back with scars all over her body like someone who was

being tortured.

Me: who did she try to kill

Him: Khanyisile Sondlo because she wanted her ex-husband.

You need you need to tread carefully though otherwise you are

going to be in trouble. Why don't you let this one go.

Me: I can't I love him.

Him: do you really love him or are you obsessed.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I'm not obsessed I know I love him. ( I go through all the document and realise that Khanyi is also rich. She was also married. But there's not much here on her.) there's not much on her. Him: it's very difficult to get info on her that's all I know.

Me: but why

Him: I don't know maybe she doesn't want people snooping around in her life and I can't blame her. I got you all the info I could get. If you want more than this you'll have to find out yourself from the source. Now it's time for my payment.

Me: fine I didn't forget.

Him: be a good girl and take off your clothes (I do as I am told.) first I'm going to punish you for not tell me you were around and not coming to see me. (I've always loved sex with him.) Go to the couch and bend over the arm rest. (as soon as I am in position he spans my ass and stings. I feel his wet lips where I felt the sting he repeats that 5 times and I swear I am so wet for him right now I just want to feel him inside me. Without warning he pushes himself hard and deep. He pulls out and goes in again hard and deep he stays like that for a while and starts moving slowing going deeper and deeper and all I could do is scream out his name and that seems to give him power because he gives it to me rough and deep he is really not being gentle but it feels so good. He goes on and stops when I'm about to come he pulls out and carries me to his room and ties me to the bed my legs tied to the corners of the bed and that gives him the full

view of my nuna. He comes to kiss me and it's a beautiful kiss it says something just not sure what. He enters me slowly and gently this time moving back and forth in and out slowly. He is making love to me slowly this time this time it's different. He is more passionate today it's as if he is trying to tell me something and the pleasure is so amazing at the same time he has full control of my body and that drives me crazy he stops and pulls out again just before I come I know this is punishment. He unties me and makes me wrap my legs around his waist with his whole upper body on my chest and he is moving back and forth inside me. He strokes are quicker and I feel my orgasm coming and he goes faster. I want him to go deeper )

Me: go deeper Siphon please (he does as told and his pace is faster)

Siphon: come for baby ( after 3 deep and quick strokes I let go and soon after he comes too.) This session was different from the other ones I used to have with him it feels like it meant something maybe I'm just imagining things. I must go see Qhawe's ex-wife. I need to know what happened to her. In the mean time I'll be making Khanyi's life a living hell she won't know what hit her.

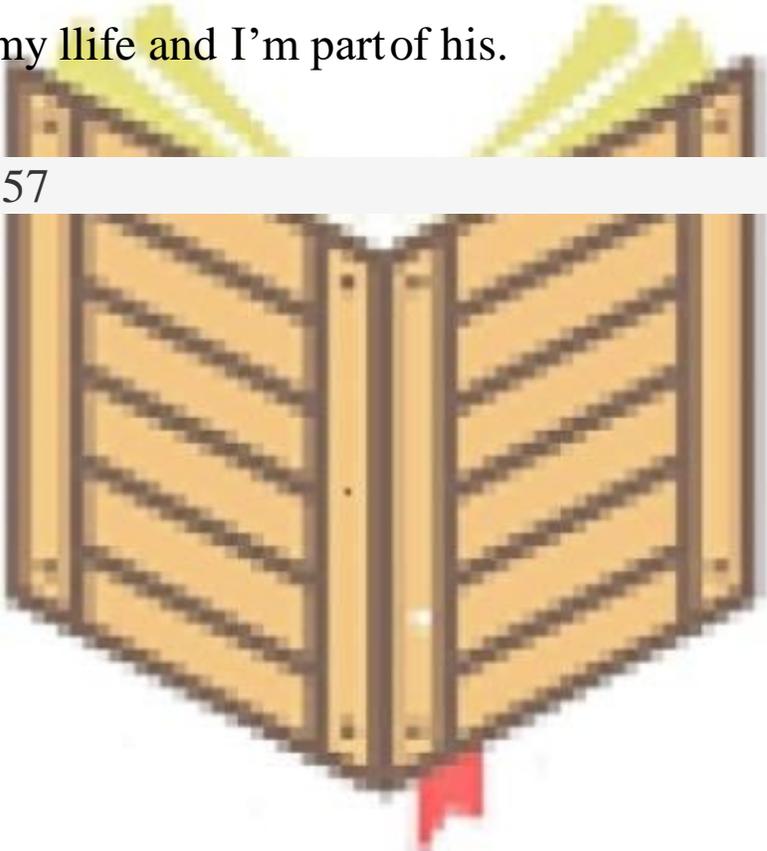
Siphon: what's on your mind?

Me: nothing much. I'm thinking of getting a job this side.

Sipho: is it because him?

Me: Yes and No. I also need a change of scenary and to be away from my mother for a while. Sipho: sindy you need to be careful. I didn't like what happened to you the last time you did something like this. Have you ever considered that the might someone out there who loves you just as you are.

Me: Only man I've ever truly loved is Qhawe and it's time he is a part of my llife and I'm part of his.



## CHAPTER 57

SATURD

AY

KHANYI

SILE

Today was the day of spring event at the kids school and Qhawe insisted on going at least he was careful not to play games that would require him to use his chest a lot. I must say it was a fun day it was what we needed after everything that has happened.

Everyone is at home now

relaxing after the day they've had and I decided to pay someone a visit. I don't know what I'm expecting out of this visit all I know

is that I need closure. They bring him in and he sits right in front of me.

Me: you look good considering where you are.

Zweli: I try. I spend most of my days in solitary confinement.

Me: Why didn't you listen to me when I told you I would end you?

Zweli: because I didn't believe you had it in you and I was wrong. I shouldn't have doubted you. I always thought of you as the young vulnerable woman you were.

Me: you made me like this. It's even hard to love him completely because I always wonder if he is not going to turn into you and start treating me the way you did. I should have killed you but my conscious wouldn't allow me to.

Zweli: Why did Sizwe betray me I'm sure you know.

Me: because you hurt me. What you don't get is that love is very powerful. Sizwe has always treated me like his little from the day you introduced me to him. He did this because of the love he has for me and my kids you tried to kill him when he tried to save me from you you showed him that you didn't care about him you cared about what he brings to the table and you betrayed him first. You married me because of what I came with you never loved me.

Zweli: I did love you I do love you I really do I just didn't know what to do with it because I also love Sima very much even though my marriage with her was arranged I fell in love with her the day I met her. I didn't want to love you because I was afraid I would end up not loving Sima and I didn't want to lose her. (what does he mean his marriage to Sima was arranged and I'm it's his own arrangement his father would never do that. I won't dwell on that.)

Me: you know Zwelibanzi if you were honest with me about everything I would have still married you because I loved you very much you were the father of my kids. You could have loved us both it's not impossible to love two people at the same time. You did things the way you did and I got the raw end of the stick and it hurt like hell you destroyed whatever love I had for you you destroyed whatever love the kids had for you you made us who we are towards you. Zweli: you can't say I was their father I'm still their father Khanyi.

Me: no you are not. You lost that right when you tried to kill me all those years ago and now recently you lost that right when you failed to motivate them to be there for them when they needed. I didn't come here to be reminded of the pain you caused us. I came here to tell you that I forgive you. I can't live my life holding a grudge against you my kids can't live a life

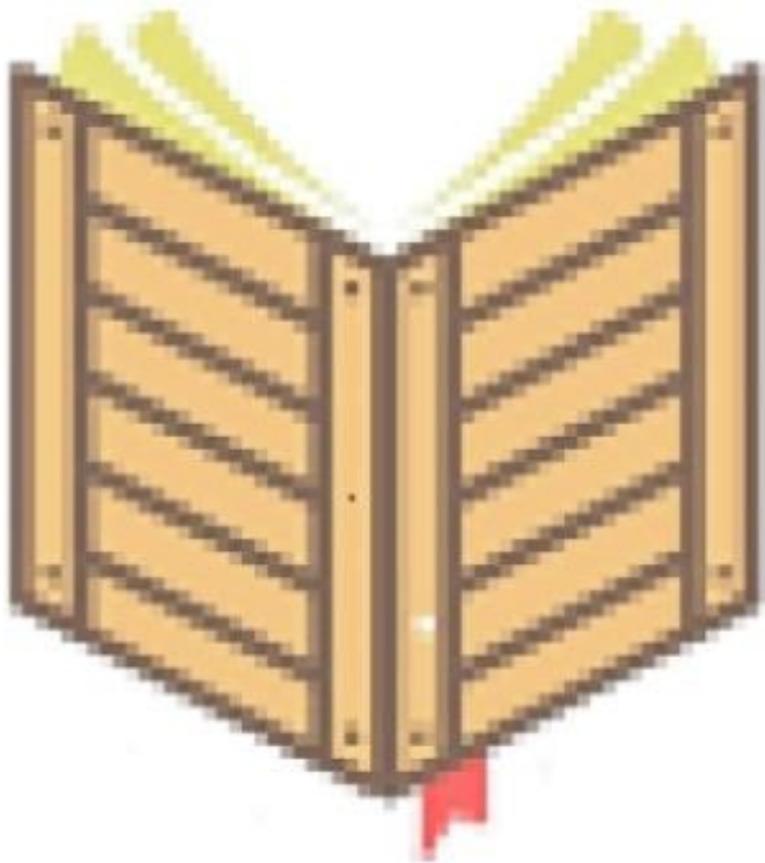
holding a grudge against we would lose ourselves if we did that. I hope one day you will realise your wrong doings and find peace.

Zweli: you know after the trial they are going to move to Westville and you know that I won't survive there they will kill me.

Me: that's why we didn't kill you I would rather have your death on someone else's conscious than ours. I'll bring the kids soon because they want to see you. You also need to tell Simamkele that she can't keep the twins from visiting their siblings please remind her of what will happen if she does. Bye Zwelibanzi.

I feel so light after that. somehow I wish the kids didn't want to see him but I can't say no to them for wanting to see him it will help them move on. All I want is to be happy with my family our happy moments don't last very long now there is this Sindiswa woman I have to deal with. For now I'll just let her have fun with me I'll deal with her soon I have far more important thing to deal with right now. I need to call Zwelibanzi's mother as well. I almost forgot Lonwabo wanted Sima's twins to visit now I have to call her too I really don't have the energy for her drama. It is so quiet in here where is everyone maybe I should enjoy this moment of peace and quiet I know it won't last very long and I'm craving an peanut butter and jam sandwich with coffee I must remember to buy decaf coffee since coffee is a new craving.

I'm busy making my sandwich when I feel his hand on my waist he moves them to my stomach brushing it lightly and kisses the back of my neck all the way to my shoulder. Qhawe knows



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

what these back kisses do to me and he is doing it on purpose. He stops the kisses and moves even closer to me. This man is really going to kill me if he carries on like this.

Qhawe: What are you making Baby Girl?

Me: Peanut butter and jam

sandwich with coffee. Qhawe:

can you make some for me too

please

Me: Only if you help me. You can grab a second plate cup and more bread. (he gets everything and when I am about to sit he stops me and lifts to sit on the counter he puts my food next to me and he pulls the chair and places it between my legs and he sits right there. I'm sitting on the counter and he is sitting between my legs I like this. My new favourite eating position)

Qhawe: this is my new favourite eating position when we are alone. (I keep quiet just look at him because I was just thinking the same thing.) So tell me Baby Girl how did the visit go?

Me: it went well I actually feel better and I told him the kids want to see him and he is fine with that.

Qhawe: I really wish they didn't have to see him but I understand why they want to. When are you taking them to see him?

Me: maybe next weekend I'll speak to them first and find out when they want to go and see him. I'm really enjoying this sandwich.

Qhawe: Me too it's really good. What are we doing with Sindiswa?

Me: for now let's just let her have her fun we'll deal with her later. I went past the hospital on my way back and we have an appointment on Monday. Remember the appointment I cancelled when you were in hospital I booked it again.

Qhawe: what time?

Me: 09:00 am

Qhawe: ok then. (he stands up and puts the dishes we were using in the sink comes back and stands in front of me between my legs he pulls close to him to the edge of the counter and wraps my legs around his waist kissing my neck I tilt my head giving him more excess. His lips come back to my lips he kisses so passionately I missed this when he was in hospital. It feels so good.) now that we've had the main course how about we take this upstairs I want to eat my woman for desert. (He gives me his naughty smile and kisses me before I could say anything.) "guys come on we eat in this kitchen."

That was Lonwabo Me: We were going upstairs.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lonwabo: not anymore. We are having an emergency family meeting. Qhawe: why what's wrong what happened? (he is panicking)

Lonwabo: You guys happened. (he moves to the kitchen entrance and shouts for everyone to come to the kitchen.) do you mind changing your position please. I'm sure you can manage keeping your hands off each other for a while.

Qhawe: how long is this meeting going to take?

Lonwabo: well dearest dad I don't know maybe until you guys learn to behave. (just then the kids walked in even Khaya is here. This child doesn't like his own place he is always here.

Everyone finds a sit and Lwanele comes to Qhawe who looks at me to take her. he looks down at his pants and he looks at me. Shit!! I just smile at him)

Me: Lwanele come sit with me.

Lwanele: why I want to sit on dad's lap. I miss dad. Me: mom misses you more come Princess.

Ntando: Nele just go to mom. Why were we called here I was winning my game Bandile(twin): you wish you were winning you are going to lose little man

Ntando: oh yeah we'll see about that

Lonwabo: guys we need house rules for the parents. I caught them in here again hence dad here is avoiding Nele. (I'm speechless right now)

Lwanele: what does he mean you are avoiding me.

Qhawe: I'll explain when you are 16 you won't understand it now.

Lwanele: Actually I understand a lot about sex they teach us

these things at school and mom has talks with us from time to time. I am 12 years old after all. (Qhawe tries to say something but he is rendered speechless.)

Banele: wow you guys have a thing for the kitchen.

Ntando: what is it about the kitchen? (heee these kids are being serious right now. we be reprimanded by our kids)

Bandile: parents we know that you love each very much and it is actually beautiful to watch and it shows us how happy you are and it makes us happy to have you happy but there are things that you are just have to not do when we are around.

Khaya: 1. We shouldn't be catching you all up in each other in the public areas of the house especially the kitchen.

Banele: we eat in this kitchen as a family and it doesn't help walking into the kitchen having an image of your parents about to do the deed on the counter.

Qhawe: hold on a sec. Should Nele and Lisakhanya be part of this meeting aren't they a bit too young

Sibahle: Dad they are old enough they learn about this stuff at school already besides when mom has talks with me she involves them too. (he looks at me and I just smile.)

Ntando: this is how it is the kitchen the tv room are off limits. Lwanele: Our bedroom is off limits.

Ntando: You caught them in your room too? Hayi you guys have no shame. Khaya: how did that happen I want to hear the story.

Lwanele: I don't want to talk about I was traumatised. Me: Princess

you are being dramatic right now.

Lisakhanya: no she is not. You guys can really be all over each other.

Zenande: the lounge should be off limits too. Please remember we are doing this because we love you.

Lonwabo: Ok that's it. parents do you have anything to say for yourselves.

Qhawe: we heard you and we promise we will try and behave appropriately when you are here. Lonwabo: and that's all we

ask. Thank you for your understanding. We love you. (and they all leave us in the kitchen speechless.)

Qhawe: that was cock blocking at it's best if you ask me.

I wish Sindy could see how much I care about her. I've always cared about her I don't know why she keeps doing this chasing people who do not want her. the last time was messed up and this time this time she is going to get seriously burned. She is a wonderful woman she just needs to give herself a chance to be love and be shown what love is. Her mother doesn't show her love she doesn't even teach her about love. I really don't know why she is pushing her into doing this. She is putting her daughters life in danger. I should find out why she is doing this maybe I can help Sindy. I am trying to find out more about Khanyisile Sondlo but the woman is such a mistery which could be dangerous for Sindy. I spoke to Anelisa and what happened to her after she tried to kill this woman made my skin crawl and Sindy is very stubborn. This obsession she has over this guy is driving her crazy. It's been years but she can't get over it. I don't know how to stop her maybe I should just let her be and let her realise on her own that the man she thinks she loves doesn't love her and if I do that will I be able to help her pick up the pieces.

## CHAPTER 58

MONDAY

KHANYISILE

The weekend was great the kids finally called us into order. Since the family emergency meeting that Lonwabo called we were good parents we behaved and I don't know how long is the good behaviour going to last for.

Besides the ups and downs that we are experiencing life is good we are good but this pregnancy is making me clingy. We are on our way to the hospital for our appointment he should also have his wound checked. It looks good to me maybe we can stop covering it now.

Me: Babe I've been thinking about work I want to make some changes Qhawe:

what kind of changes Sthandwa sam

Me: since I have added responsibility that is extra companies to take care of. I'm thinking of hiring a new CEO to take over from me so that I can be able to focus on the kids' businesses that their grandfather left them and I would like us to have a meeting with the kids regarding these businesses because I would like you to help me

since you know more about construction than I do.

Qhawe: hiring someone I think that's a good idea and as for me helping out I would gladly do that but let's have the meeting with the kids and find out how they feel about my involvement.

Me: Ok we can do that.

Qhawe: I also want you to understand that I would never make you stop working I love that you are independent and have your own things even though that may be the case I still want you to allow me to take care of you and the kids. As a man I feel good knowing I can do that.

promise me you'll try. Me: I promise I'll try.

Qhawe: and that's all I

ask. We are here. Me: I

feel nervous

Qhawe: why? You don't have to be I'm here.

Me: I know. I never expected to get pregnant. Apparently it

happens but it's one those rare cases. Qhawe: it is a

miracle. 11 kids wow it's a whole squad. (the doctors calls us in when we walk inside there is another doctor I wonder he invited another doctor.)

Me: Morning Doc

Doctor: Morning Miss Sondlo this is doctor Johnson she will be assisting me today with your case. Me: Nice to meet you Dr Johnson. This is the father to be Qhawe Mtimkhulu. Babe that's my doctor Dr Nkosi Qhawe: Nice to meet you both.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Dr Nkosi: Miss Sondlo if you could please get yourself comfortable on the bed. (I do as he asks) Me: What did you mean when you said my case? (Qhawe pulled a chair and sat next to bed in view of the ultra sound screen.)

Dr Nkosi: the last time you were her I noticed something with your pregnancy but Dr Johnson was not on duty then I wanted to confirm what I saw that's what she is here for today.

Me: Ok. (he pours the gel on my stomach and starts moving the scanner around. The heartbeat is so loud today and it sounds different from the last time.)

Qhawe: is that my baby? The heart beat is so strong. Me: yep that's your baby. (he is smiling from ear to ear.)

Dr Nkosi: Actually that's what I needed confirmation on it's not just one baby or two. Dr Johnson if you please. (Dr Johnson takes over and her smile is just like Qhawe's smile. What could be so exciting)

Dr Johnson: You were right Dr Nkosi she is having Quintuplets. Me &

Qhawe: I'M SORRY WHAT????

ANELISA

Apparently I have a visitor it's not Sizwe this is the second time I've had a visit from a stranger. I'm becoming popular with strangers.

Me: Who are you and what do you want?

Her: I just want some information that's all. My name is Sindy Me: Ok what do you want Sindy?

Sindy: tell me about Khanyisile Sondlo. Me: why should I do that?

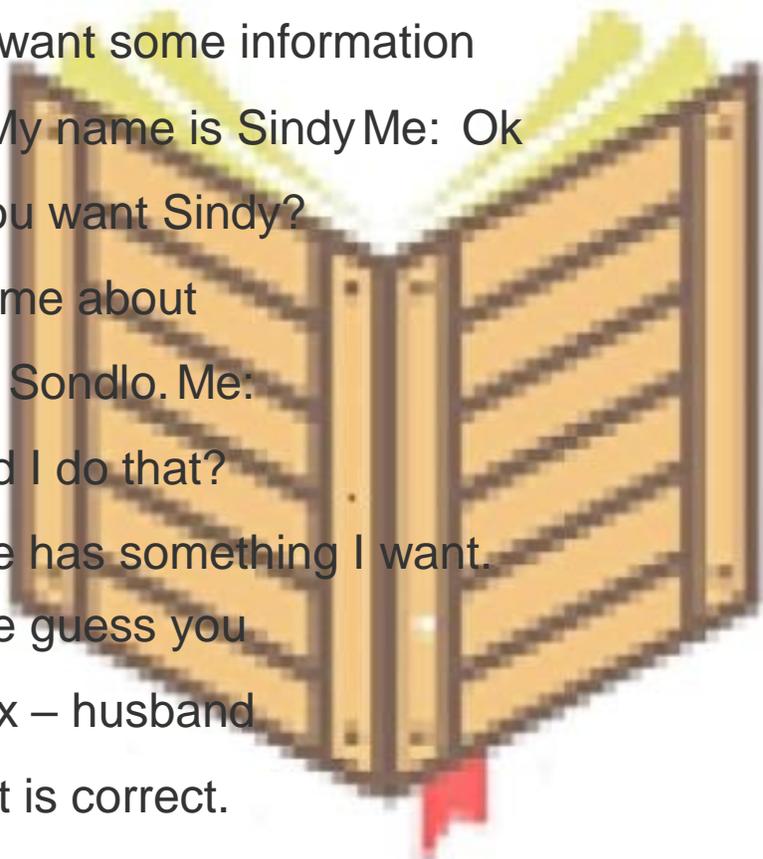
Sindy: She has something I want.

Me: Let me guess you want my ex – husband

Sindy: that is correct.

Me: I'll tell you what you want to know but I'm going to give a little advice before I do Sindy: what advice would that be?

ME: Stay away from that woman if Qhawe doesn't want you which I am sure he doesn't leave them alone otherwise you end up where I am or worse.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sindy: I'll keep that in my mind.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I am here because I tried to kill her. I sent someone to do the job she survived two bullets to the chest. The guy I sent was caught which resulted to me being caught as well. That's not the worst of it.

Sindy: what's the worst of it. ( I look at her and shake my head. I feel sorry her going after someone who has no interest in her at all.)

Me: I dated a guy named Sizwe and I broke up with because I still wanted my ex-husband. Sizwe cared about me he wanted us to try for a serious relationship but I was dead set on getting Qhawe back. I regret that decision today because I'm sure I would have been happy with Sizwe. After Khanyi was shot he found out that I did it. I didn't even know they knew each other. They've known each other for a very long time he considers his little sister. He paid my bail and took me to this house that was far away from the world even if I screamed no one would hear me. He tortured me for three weeks I think. (I looked at this woman in front me and I felt nothing but pity for her. she looks shocked by what i'm telling her I decide to continue and tell her everything that Sizwe did to me when I finish talking she has her hand covering her

mouth.)

Sindy: why didn't you try to escape?

Me: there was no escape in that situation he made sure of that.

Sindy: if he did all that to you then how did you become pregnant with his baby? Me: he slept with me?

Sindy: You mean he raped you?

Why didn't you report it? Me: it was not rape my dear

Sindy: I don't understand what do you mean? (she'll never Qhawe this one.)

Me: when he let me out of what he called my cage he put in a bedroom with a comfortable with nothing but a t-shirt to wear. He fed me allowed me to bath. every time he came to my room to fuck me he always told me that I can stop him he won't force himself on me. I didn't want him to stop. To be honest I enjoyed sex with Sizwe very much when we were dating and I missed it. I wanted him to touch in that way I wanted to feel him inside me and hear him moan on top me. That was also punishment because he never allowed me to climax. That happened for almost a week and before he brought me back here we found out

that I was pregnant and it's his first child that he is going to raise without him I'll never see my child grow up. I'll never have the second chance of being a better mother. That alone is worse than anything that Sizwe did to me. Khanyi never asked him to do what he did. They protect her without her having to ask them. Qhawe will kill you before he lets you hurt her. As Sizwe once said to me; Khanyi is Qhawe's heart and he is hers.

They are a united family people who were strangers but became a very strong united family. You don't hurt one of their own and get away with it.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Tread carefully Cindy (I get up and leave her there still shocked. I turn around and look at her) Me: Don't even think about hurting that woman she is now the mother to my kids and she is good for them

Sponsored

she is now the mother to my kids and she is good for them as for you being a mother to them you'll never survive.)

QHAWE

Me: I'm sorry I think I just developed a hearing problem I thought I heard you say Quintuplets. Dr Johnson: there's nothing wrong with your sir she is pregnant with 5 babies.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: as if mentioning the number of the babies makes it sound better. why are you so excited your are not the one carrying 5 babies inside her.

Dr Johnson: You are the first person who will deliver Quintuplets in this hospital and it will be our first time

delivering so many babies at the same time.

Dr Nkosi: Miss Sondlo are you ok?

Khanyi: Tell me something Sibusiso Nkosi do I look ok to you. Is what she just said suppose to make me feel better about carrying 5 babies.

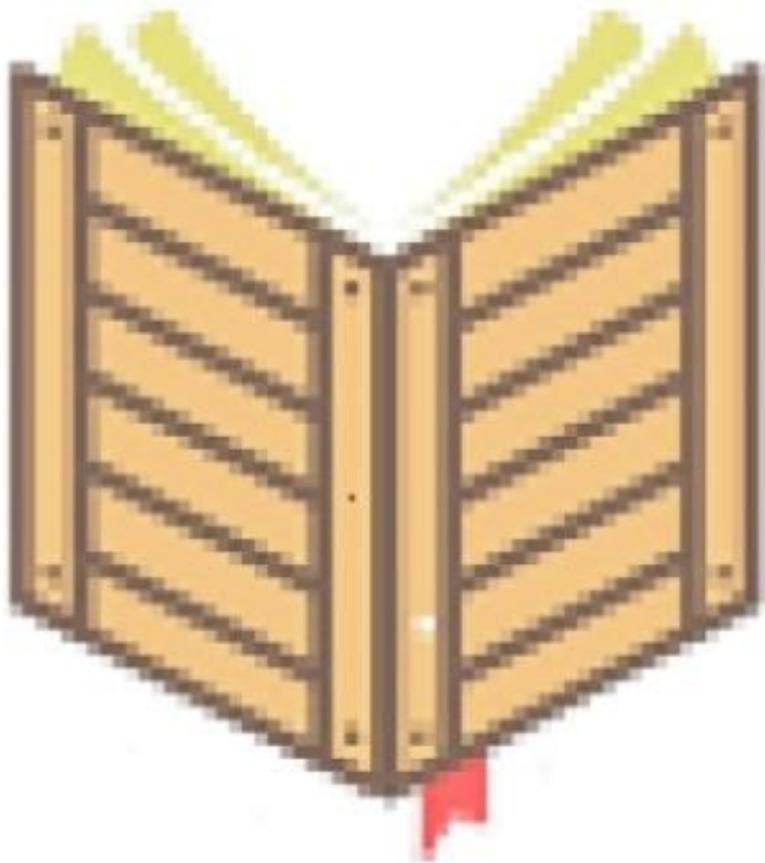
Me: My Queen please calm down

Khanyi: as for you you don't get to tell me to calm down I hate you right now. Me: hayibo what did I do?

Khanyi: You are asking me what you did? Ye Qhawelomzi you left 5 babies inside me how am I suppose to carry 5 babies. Look at me Qhawelomzi I'm cute I am beautiful I love my beautiful body how do you think I am going to look with 5 human beings growing inside me. Picture a pregnant hippo that is going to be me in five months time. Doctor please wipe this gel off me. It's bad enough that we have ten kids at home 4 of which are young adults and 2 are turning 18 and 4 damn teenagers. Ten of them Qhawe and Sizwe is bringing his baby into the picture and now you decide you want me to carry 5 babies tell me my dear King how am I suppose to cope with 15 kids make that 16. You know what you can sleep on the couch

tonight

Me: baby come on I didn't know and I am going to be here every step of the way. ( I try to hold her but she slaps my hand she is crying and breathing heavily.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Dr Nkosi: I think she is having a panic attack she needs to calm down. You need to breathe Khanyi. (if looks could kill the doctor would dead right now.)

Khanyi: don't touch me I don't want to talk to you right now I don't even want to see you right now. Give me my phone where's my phone (I give her the phone and she makes a call. I don't like how she is right now. she's all tears angry and her breathing is not making me comfortable. She just called Andile to come fetch her. she is really angry.)

ME: Doctor Nkosi something is not right. Baby look at me are you ok? (she looks at me and just says "Mxm" she tries to stand but she falls. Luckily the doctor and I we were standing next to her.)

Dr Johnson: I think she had a panic attack. Dr Nkosi get her into a ward let's keep her overnight just to make sure everything is ok. (Dr Johnson looks at me) I hope she is calm when she wakes up otherwise you are in for it.

Me: Tell me about it. (they both laugh at me.)

Dr Nkosi: Look man I'm sure she is fine. We'll run all necessary tests. Get yourself some water and just breathe a little this must be a shock to you too just as much as it is

for her. She'll be fine.

(I walk out to the waiting and pour myself a glass of water as I sit down and breathe out heavily. I didn't realise I was holding my breath. Ok so we are having five babies. Shit!!! She is carrying five babies I get up start pacing up and down I think I'm having my own panic attack. First she can't have kids now she's pregnant with quintuplets. OH! GOD. Just then Andile walks in.)

Andile: What's wrong? Khanyi called me What's going on?

(I stand and look at him I feel a little light headed.)

Me: she's pregnant....

Andile: We know that is it only just sinking in with you.

Come on man don't be scared it's just a baby.

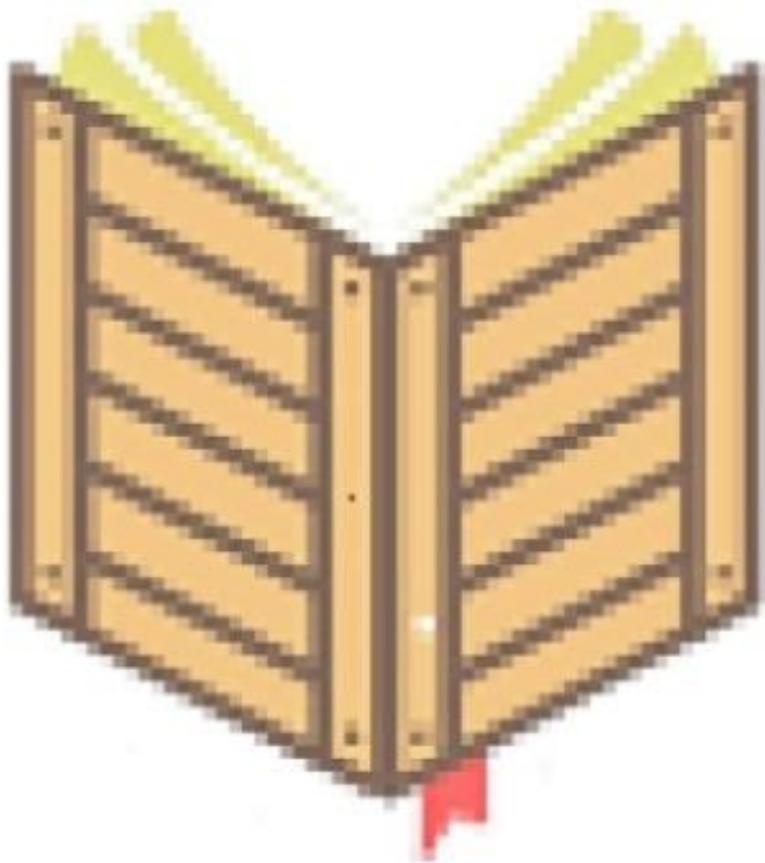
Me: it's not just a baby it's babies.

Andile: she's having twins awesome man. You are blessed.

Me: More like Quintuplets ( he looks at me with disbelief his mouth open)

Andile: You are not blessed you are in deep shit. She is going to hate the entire pregnancy (what he just said freaked me out more I heard him telling me to breathe trying to get me to sit. He keeps calling me my name and then.....)

STILL MONDAY



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

## ANDILE

When I rush out of the waiting room to get help I bump into Khaya's girlfriend what's her name again Lungi yes that's it Lungi.

Me: Lungi I need your help (I say dragging her to the waiting room)

Lungi: what happened to him what did you do?

Me: what makes you think I did anything? I didn't do anything I think he fainted and I think he was having a panic attack.

Lungi: I'll get someone to take him to one of the rooms. (when she walks out another doctor walks in and rushes to him and he looks at me.)

Doctor: what happened?

Me: I think he had a panic attack he just found out his lady is carrying Quintuplets. Doctor: I'm her doctor are you family?

Me: Yes I am.

Doctor: she is awake and she was asking for someone called Andile.

Me: That's me. (Lungi walks in with two male nurses

they take Qhawe and put him on the stretcher)

Doctor: take him to the private room next to Miss

Sondlo's that's room 190. I'll attend to him. Lungi: ok

doc. Is Miss Sondlo ok.

Doctor: she is fine she had a panic attack.

Lungi: ok doc. (she looks at me) are you coming?

ME: yes (she shows me Khanyi's room and she goes to help with Qhawe.) hey Khanyi how are you feeling?

Khanyi: I don't know Andile. He made me pregnant with five babies Andile (she is crying. Khanyi is not this emotional.)

Me: (I give her a hug and let her cry on my chest.) didn't I tell you not open your legs for him. Look where you are now.

Khanyi: This is not the time

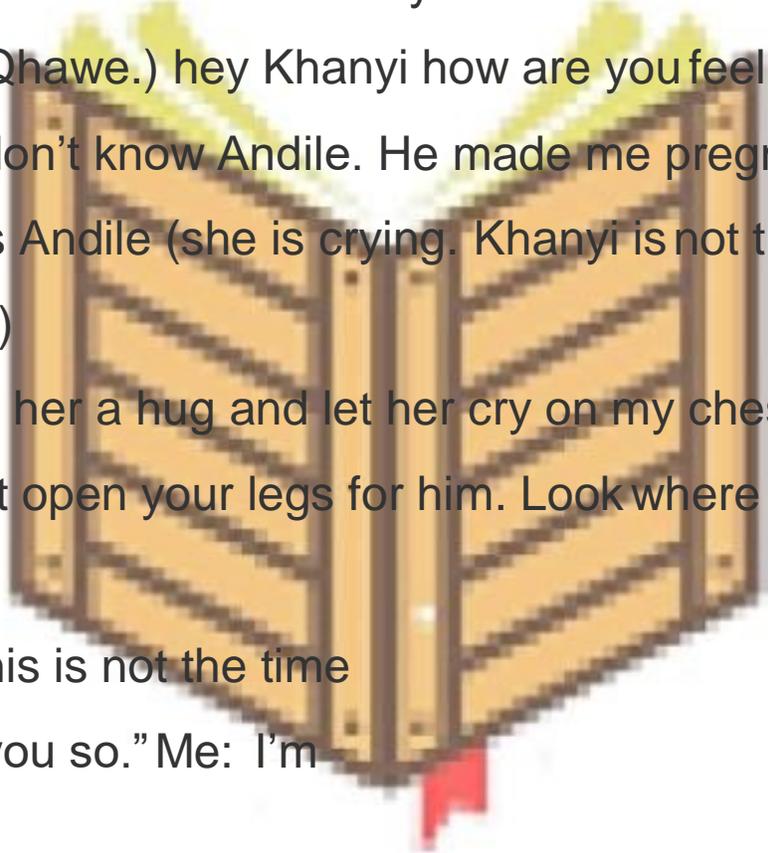
for "I told you so." Me: I'm

sorry.

Khanyi: I hate him right now.

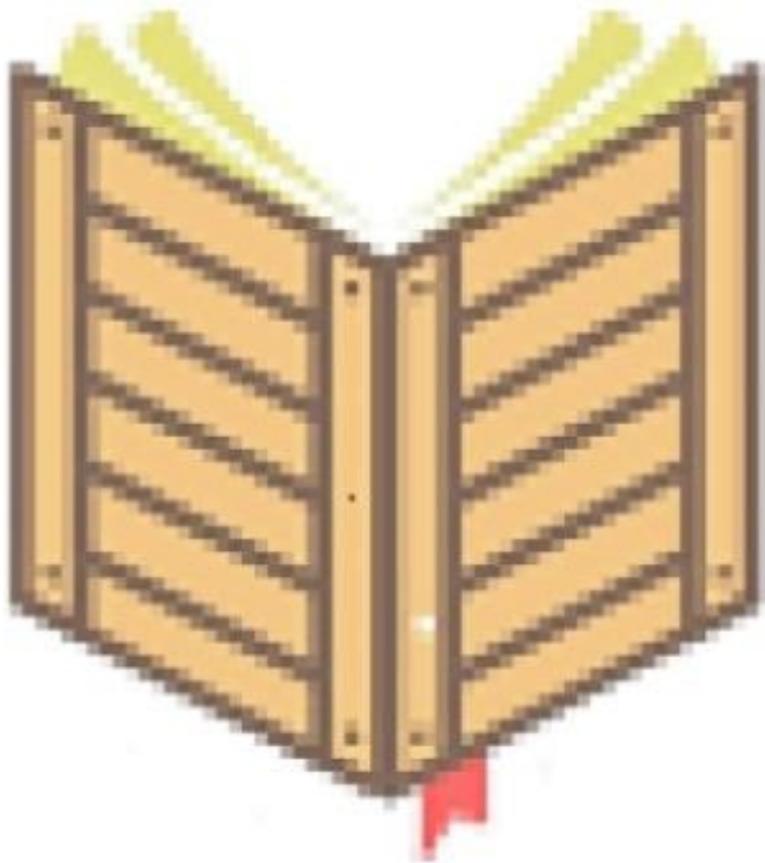
Me: No you don't you are just in shock right now. you love him very much and you are happy you are having his babies.

Khanyi: I hate him. The doctor said they are going to



NOVELSGURU.COM

keep me over night just to make sure that I'm ok. (I've been trying to get out of the hug but she doesn't want to let go. I think this being clingy



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

business is getting serious. I am going to Kill Qhawe if she doesn't do it first. He should be here dealing with this emotional woman of his and he is busy fainting)

Me: let me call Eddie to bring you a change of clothes and I'll ask Lwazi to fetch the kids from school.

Khanyi: Qhawe will fetch the kids from school.

Me: Qhawe can't fetch the kids from school he has been admitted too. Khanyi:

What did you do to him?

Me: why is everyone thinking I did something to the man. I didn't do anything to him. The same thing that happened to you happened to me.

Khanyi: You lie Qhawe having a panic attack that doesn't sound right (she finally lets go of me.) Me: you

should have seen him. He was really freaked out about this. He is worried that you will hate him. It also didn't help that I told him you will hate him.

Khanyi: Why would you do that Andile? If he doesn't wake up I'm blaming you.

Me: I didn't mean to. I was also shocked. Let me call Eddie. (just then Lungi walks in and I walk out to call Eddie. I went to check on Qhawe he is still out. I really feel for him.)

## SINDISWA

The visit to the prison was not what I expected. The things Anelisa told me I couldn't believe them. It doesn't change anything though. I still want him to be mine. What did she mean I wouldn't survive being a mother to his kids are they that bad and why is Khanyi good for them and I'm not. How did she even allow a man that tortured her like that to touch her. I felt her pain though when she spoke about not being able to be a part of the baby's life. I wonder if this Sizwe guy is dating anyone otherwise how is he going to take care of a baby alone. She also said "they protect her" who is they? Maybe it's Qhawe and this Sizwe guy. You know what none of this scares me. I want to do this I have to do this. My phone rings and it's my mother eish this woman?

Me: Mama

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mom: Sindy when are

you coming home? Me:

When my leave is over

ma.

Mom: such a long time Sindy fine. How are things going there did Siyanda hook you up with her son?

Me: No mama she didn't she said she doesn't want to be part of it and she won't lose her son and grandkids because of me.

Mom: I thought she wanted you for her son didn't she.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

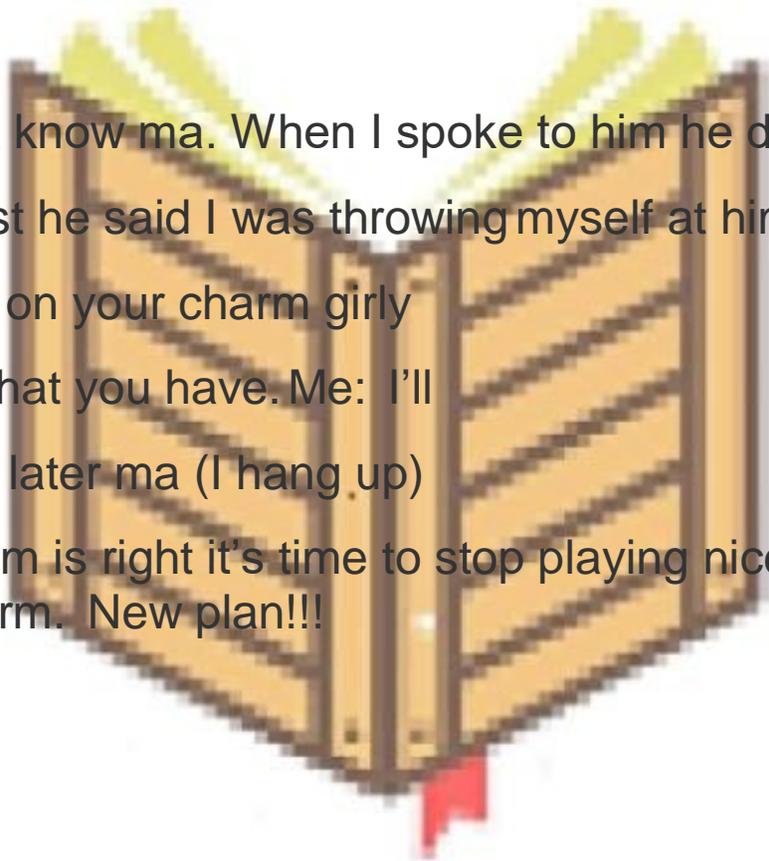
ME: Look ma I'm doing this my way now I don't need his mom's help anyway. The only thing making things difficult is that he is seeing someone and it looks like he loves her.

Mom: as long as he is not married you can still have him. You actually didn't think you would find him single waiting did you?

Me: I don't know ma. When I spoke to him he didn't show any interest he said I was throwing myself at him.

Mom: turn on your charm girly and use what you have. Me: I'll talk to you later ma (I hang up)

Maybe mom is right it's time to stop playing nice and turn on my charm. New plan!!!



LWAZI

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me:

Hey

guys

Them:

Hey

Sibahle: Did mom approve this pick up

Lwazi: obviously I wouldn't be

here if she didn't. Ntando:

where are they

Lwazi: In

hospital

Ntando: Both

of them? Me:

Yes both of

them Them:

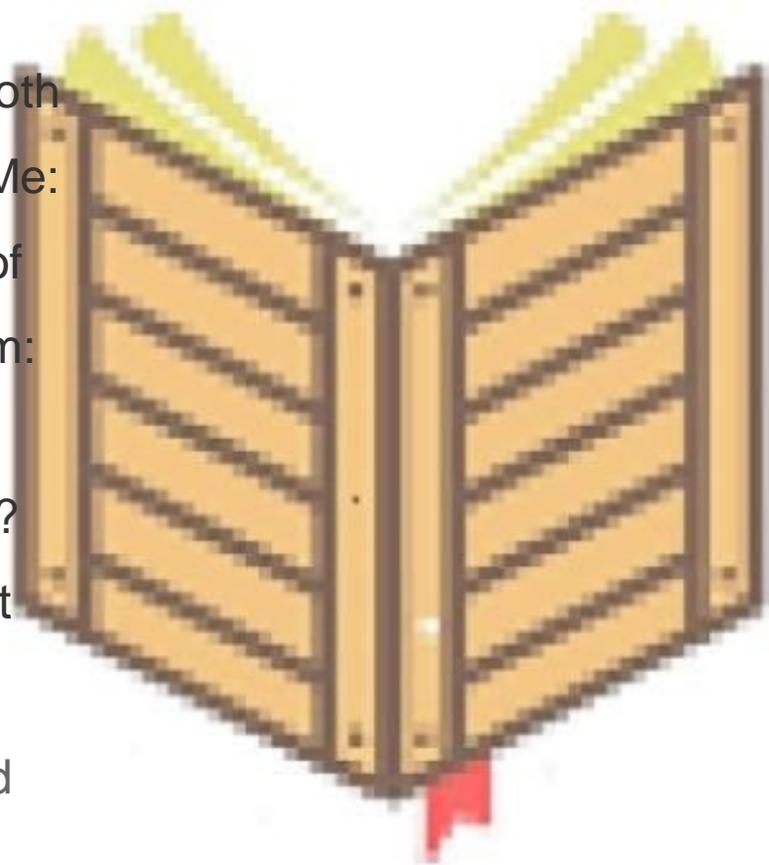
what

happened?

Me: I don't

know

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

it's time to stop playing nice and turn on my charm. New plan!!!

LWAZI

Me:

Hey

guys

Them:

Hey

Sibahle: Did mom approve this pick up



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwazi: obviously I wouldn't be here if she didn't. Ntando:

where are they

Lwazi: In

hospital

Ntando: Both

of them? Me:

Yes both of

them Them:

what

happened?

Me: I don't know we'll find out

when we get there. Nele:

didn't you go to the hospital?

Me: No I

didn't.

Zenande:

why not?

Me: I was busy with

work Zenny.

Lisakhanya: too busy

for your family?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: do you always ask this many questions when your parents pick you up or is it just me? Lonwabo: It's just you Uncle Lwazi. Normally we talk about how our day was what we are going to for the night what homework we need help with and these day we also talk business those kind of things. (this kids is being sarcastic and he has a big smile on his face and thanks to their mother's punishment I have to be nice to them and they are taking advantage of that.)

Me: I see. Well Lisakhanya I am not too busy for my family I am with you right. Lisa: thank you for being here.

Me: we are here (we all get out of the car and walk into the hospital and Lungi comes to us.) Lungi: hey guys (she hugs all of us)

Zenande: Sis' Lungi

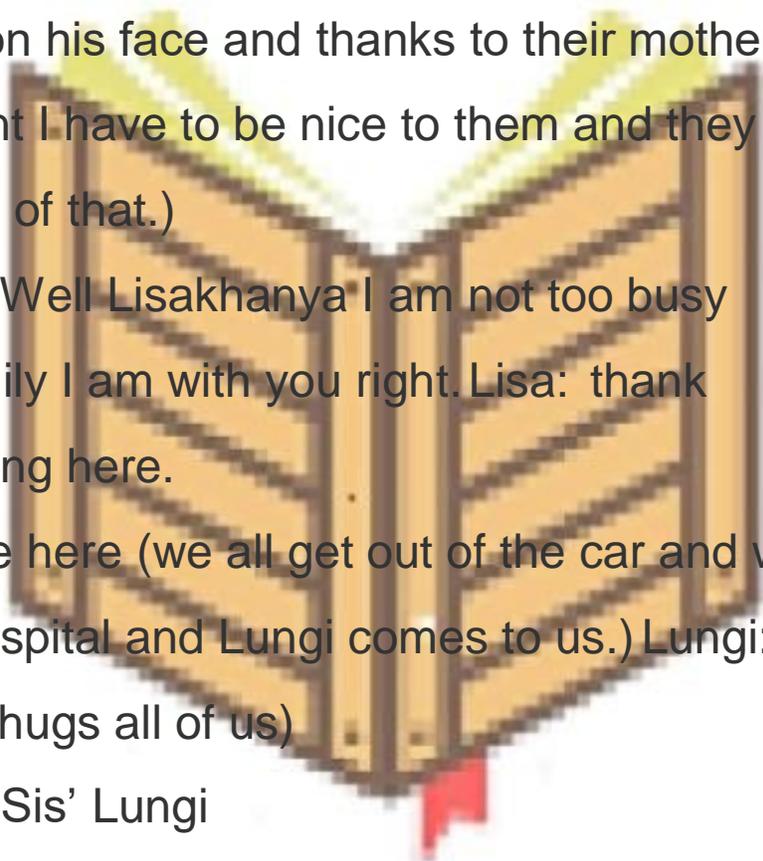
how are you? Lungi:

I'm good baby how are

you guys? Zenande:

We are good sisi.

Lungi: come I'll show you where your mom is.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sibahle: Is she ok sisi?

Lungi: she is perfectly fine. She just had a panic attack.

Lonwabo: mom hardly gets panic attacks unless it's something serious.

Lungi: she will tell you herself but you don't have to worry she is fine. (she shows us the room and leaves us. Qhawe is not here and this room is big for two people.

Me: Mama Bear how are you? (everyone is already here why are we all here) Khanyi: I'm fine Lwazi how are you? (she's busy hugging the babies.)

Me: I'm good. Don't you guys work or have classes.

Sizwe: we do. We received a call to come to the hospital so here we are.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Bandile(twin): Mom why are you here where's dad.

Me: they'll bring your dad in just now. We both had a panic attack.

Lonwabo: What caused it? (the nurses wheel in Qhawe's bed before Khanyi could answer Wabo's question. He is completely out. They place the bed next to Khanyi's bed.)

Lwanele: is he going to wake up.

Khanyi: Yes baby he will. He just fainted.

(Bandile and Sizwe just laughed so loud) Lungi: I can wake him up if you like.

Me: Can you do it? (I ask looking at Khanyi and nods.

Lungi takes something out of her pocket and moves in front of Qhawe's nose and he wakes up. He looks disorientated)

Qhawe: What happened?

Lungi: You had a panic attack and fainted. You are ok. I'll give you some space. Khanyi: No stay please. Babe can we tell them. (Qhawe looks at her doubtful) Qhawe: Are you ok (she nods) You don't hate me?

Khanyi: I could never hate you even if I tried. (he gets off the bed goes to her and hugs so tight.) I'm sorry I said all those things I was shocked.

Khaya: why would she hate you? (they break the hug

Qhawe kisses her forehead and gets in bed with her.)

Me: that's what I would like to know. What did he do to you

Mama bear I'll beat him up for you. Khanyi: I'm pregnant

Sizwe: but we already know that.

Banele: Speak for yourself Bhut' Sizwe. We didn't

know. Why weren't we told? Bandile(twin): Really

guys why didn't you tell us.

Lonwabo: just hang on you have 5 kids each already so

you being pregnant wouldn't cause a panic attack.

Qhawe: Unless she is carrying quintuplets. (the room

goes quiet you can actually here a needle drop)

Khaya: I'm sorry what?

Bhut' Bandile: I thought i had

him say Quintuplets Eddie:

that's five babies right?

Banele: I think I have a hearing problem.

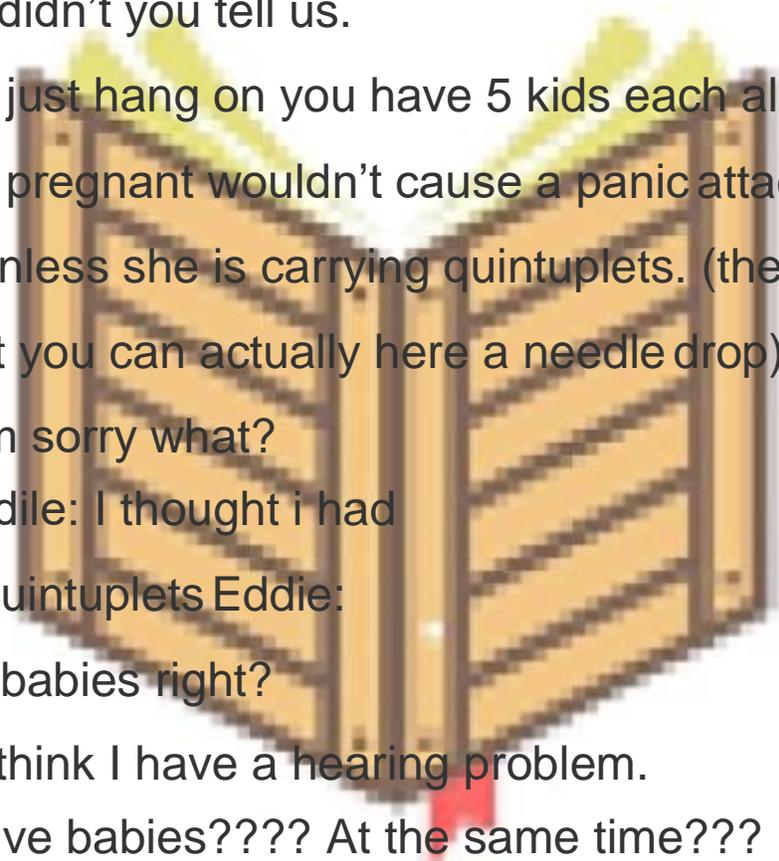
Bandile: five babies???? At the same time??? Dad how could you????

Sibahle: You guys have ten kids already and you decide

that bringing in another five into this crazy family would be a

good idea. (Qhawe and Khanyi are just quiet listening to

everyone's reactions)



Me: everyone just hang on a second I think I lost my hearing senses when he said she is carrying Quintuplets. What are we going to do with five babies.

Lungi: It's true she carrying Quintuplets. ( I look at Lwanele and Lisakhanya they are frozen the poor girls are so shocked.)

Me: NeleLisa are you ok girls.

Lisa: I'm still trying to recover from when she said she was pregnant.

Nele: 5 babies REALLY DAD??? (yhooo the room was just filled with laughter she is so serious looking at her dad.)

CHAPTER 60

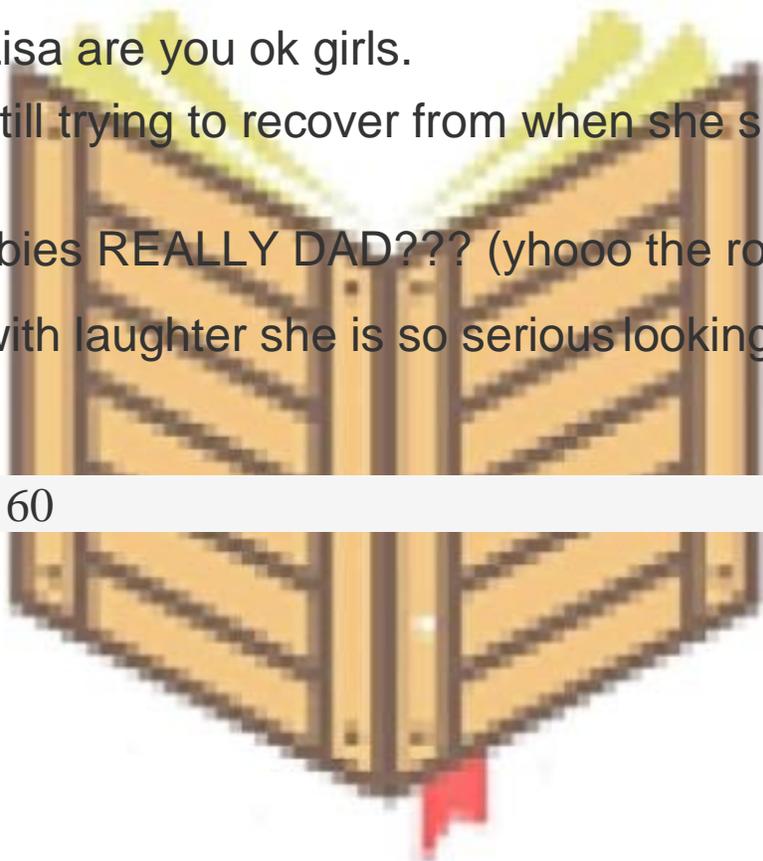
TUESDA

Y

KHANYI

SILE

I woke up in hospital in Qhawe's arms . I remember I didn't want him to go home last night after telling everyone about the



NOVELSGURU.COM

pregnancy. I try to get out of bed without waking him and I fail.  
Qhawe: where are you going you? (he asks gently pulling me to him.)

Khanyi: I need to pee Qhawe. (he lets go and I get out of bed do my business in the bathroom and go back to him just as I am about to get into bed again the doctor walks in.)

Doctor: my favourite couple I see you are awake. How are you feeling today? (he has such a big smile on his face. I wonder what't that all about.)

Qhawe: We are fine doc. Can I take her home today.

Doctor: yes you can. You are both completely fine. I have some pills for you Miss Sondlo that you have to take everyday to help in the growth of the babies. I'm sure you know about them since you are not a first time mother. Here don't forget you have to take them every day. Instruction on how to take them are inside. You can also sign these discharge paper. Please remember this will be a delicate pregnancy.

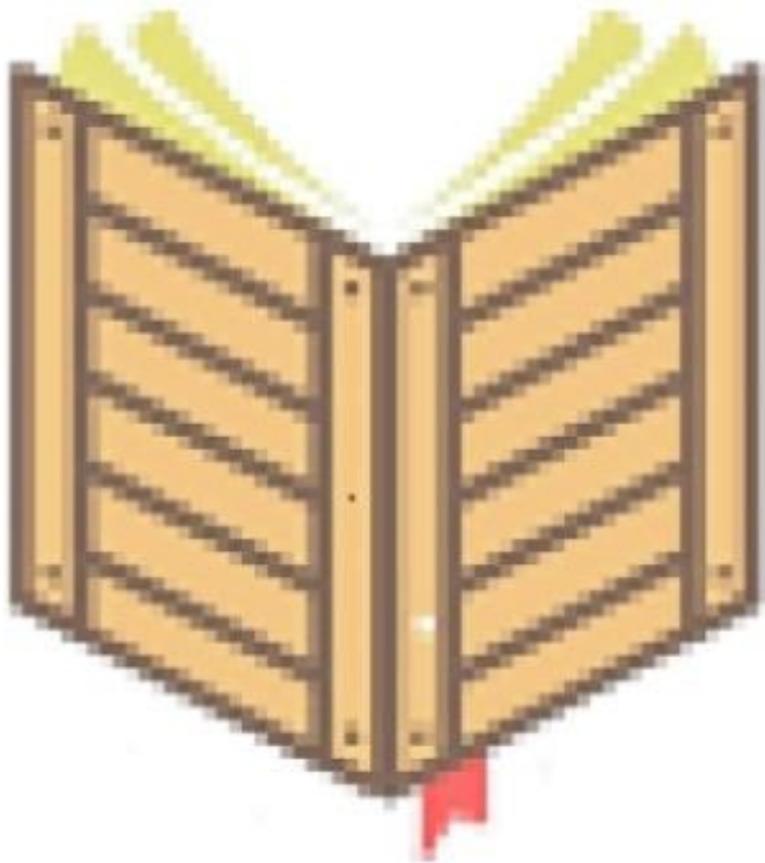
Please no stress I don't want you having panic attacks any time soon.

Me: thanks doc. Don't worry I won't be dealing with anything stressful.

Doctor: that's good to hear and please take care of yourselves don't forget your next appointment next month.

Qhawe: We won't. thank you. (the doctor walks out.) let's go home baby. I just want to be home and relax with you before the kids are home. We can watch movies and enjoy some junk

food. I feel like vanilla ice cream cheesecake and some hot chips.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Me too and chocolate.

Qhawe: let's go we can pass by the mall and get what we need. (he gets off the bed and stands between my legs and looks into my eyes. It's one of the things he loves doing. He says sometimes when he wants to hear me telling him that I love him and I don't all he has to do is look into my eyes and he will know. I guess this is one of those moments.) Thank you my beautiful Queen for carrying such wonderful gifts for us and I promise that I will do my best to take care of you and be there for you in every way you need me. I love you mama wabo. (and kisses me like it's the last time)

Me: we have to tell the parents soon. Yours and my parents. I swear my mother is going to die of a heart attack when she finds out

Qhawe:

Mine too.

Me: Babe

Qhawe: yes my Queen

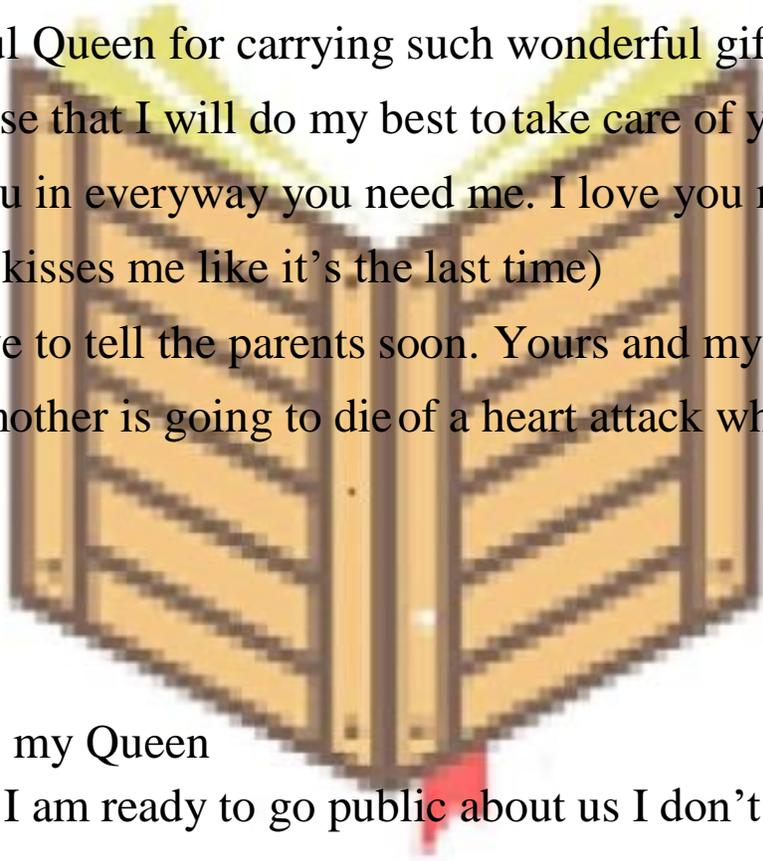
Me: I think I am ready to go public about us I don't

want to hide anymore. Qhawe: are you sure about that my love?

Me: yes I'm sure but I'm not putting everything out there. Our private lives will still remain private.

Qhawe: so what you are saying is that people can know we are dating but not beyond that.

Me: Yes that's what I'm saying babe. Also I want people to know



NOVELSGURU.COM

who is behind my marketing company the owner of the company. I want to expand it again the more people know about it the better it will be.

Qhawe: that doesn't sound bad at all. If you are sure you want to do then I'm with you. Me: Thank you.

As we leave the mall we bump into Sindiswa. Gosh this is the last person I want to see right now I am really not in the mood for her this girl is bringing nothing but unnecessary drama into our lives maybe she should be dealt with now rather than later.

Sindy: hi guys

Me: Hi (Qhawe is so not in the mood.) Qhawe: Can we go please.

Sindy: hayibo Qhawe I'm just being polite.

Qhawe: good for you. Baby please lets go. (he puts out his hand for me to take and I take it as we walk away. Sindy holds me back and says something.)

Sindy: Enjoy it while it lasts as I told you before he is mine.

Me: My King do you mind waiting for me in the car I need to deal with this.

Qhawe: Are you sure?

Me: yes baby I'm sure (he kisses my forehead and whispers in my ear: "kick her ass if you have too. I love you." I just smile at him and he walks away.) Sindiswa right? Let's find somewhere to sit it looks like you have a lot you want to say. (steers was close by and we find ourselves a table and sit. The smell is making me crave their hot chips and I order for myself.)

Me: what do you want

from me Sindy: I want

you to leave Qhawe. Me:

Ok. What about his

kids?

Sindy: you can take them with you his ex wife told me you are good for the kids.

Me: You do know that Qhawe can't live without his kids and the mere fact that you spoke to Anelisa that tells me you know what will happen to you should you carry on pursuing this idea of yours.

Sindy: I'm not scared of you I want what I want and I am going to get it. (I get up getting ready to leave as I pay for my chips.)

Me: Listen carefully dear

Sponsored

He is Mine and I am His not even death can separate us. If I

were you I would think really hard about the things Anelisa told you. This game that I am letting you play with me right is going to end and it's not going to end well for you darling. Keep that in mind with whatever you do. ( I walk away leaving her there and find my King waiting for me in the car. When we get home we relax watching movies in our bedroom and having a good conversation.)

LONWABO

Me: so how do you guys feel about mom being pregnant

Zenande: I'm worried that the babies will get more attention than us when they are here I look forward to being a big sister but at the same time I am scared.

Lisakhanya: I am scared that they will love the babies more than they love us

Me: I felt the same way when you guys came into our lives I didn't think mom would be able to divide her attention amongst us equally but she did and I think they'll be able to do it even if the babies are here.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sibahle: I think so too but then again we are talking about five new babies

Ntando: I still can't believe she is having Quintuplets. She is going to be looking like a hippo by the time she is seven months pregnant.

Zenande: Hayi Ntando you can't talk like that. Lwanele: it's true nje she will looking be like one.

Lonwabo: you can't be talking like that. if she ever hears you she won't talk you for a long time.

Sibahle: has anyone noticed how emotional she is lately maybe it's the pregnancy I read somewhere that it can make you emotional.

Ntando: Maybe it is. But on a serious note I don't think having new babies will change anything it's a blessing and our family is growing and those babies will be lucky to have us as siblings and we are going to be doing a lot of babysitting.

Lonwabo: which we need to make sure that we get paid for.

There'll no free babysitting Lwanele: I also don't mind as long as we still get our time with me. Definitely no free babysitting.

Sibahle: You guys love money.

Zenande: No Sibahle it's not that we are talking about babysitting five little human being that will be a full time job sisi.

Ntando: At least we'll be working for the money. Sibahle

talking about mom being emotional even dad these days he is emotional.

Lisakhanya: You are definitely right about that.

Sibahle: Maybe we should thinking about moving in with Khaya until the babies are here. This is going to be a long nine months (we all just laugh at her expression when she said that.)

SIMA

I can't believe I am here right now this is the last place I ever thought I'd come to. I wish I had done things differently maybe if I did he wouldn't be here. I can't believe the things he did to Khanyi that is not the man I fell in love with and married. How is it possible it can't true can it. Maybe his father knew he would end up in jail someday maybe that's why he told me to start my own business. They bring him and he sits opposite me

Zweli: You look beautiful

Sima: You are not too bad

yourself considering. Zweli: I

try. How are the twins doing?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sima: they are fine. Khanyi called asking me to take them to her house for a visit. Their siblings miss them. I'm not sure about going back there again.

Zweli: You have to take them there. They need to know each other. You can never keep the twins away from them.

Whenever they want to see them you take them for a visit do you understand me.

Me: I do. Are you ok in here

Zweli: I'm ok baby. I just want this trial to be over and done with. When last did you speak to mom?

Me: Yesterday she is planning on coming for a visit soon. She wants to go to Khanyi's house. Zweli: did she say why.

Me: she just said she misses her grand kids.

Zweli: Sima I want you to know that I love you very much and I will always love you. I know you have questions and one day I will answer them. I want you to know that how things turned out between me and Khanyi was never your fault the way I was with her had nothing to do with you or anyone else it is all on me and I can't blame anyone one but myself. I lost her and my kids because of my own stupidity but Sima I can't lose you and the twins I've lost too much already. I can't lose the only family I have left.

Me: You won't lose us. I love you too Zweli. (I have seen Zweli emotional but this what I am seeing today is beyond what I have seen before he is even holding back tears.)

## CHAPTER 61

FRIDAY

SIMA

I finally decided to take the twins to visit their siblings. I wish I had someone who can take the kids there for me right now I don't think I can face Khanyi after everything that has happened and how I behaved towards I'm even surprised she wants my kids around her kids but then again she was right about one thing the kids are innocent in all this. She even referred me to someone who can help me start my business. I have to do this for my babies and for myself. I just finished packing and we are ready to go. This is going to be a quiet weekend for me without them. My phone rings and it's not someone I'm interested in talking to.

Me: Hello

Him: I hear your mission failed and your husband ended up getting arrested.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: You head correct.

Him: I warned you didn't I Sima but you didn't want to listen and now you've attracted unnecessary attention to yourself.

ME: what do you mean by unnecessary attention?

Him: He wants to see you he thinks you have potential and with a little training you can take over your husbands businesses.

Me: you can tell him I'm not interested. The only reason I did what I did I wanted control of my kids' trust fund which in all honesty I should have just trusted their grandfather's decision and why he decided to things the way he did. I am also not willing to put my life in danger and my kids' lives. I did that and it didn't work out very well for me. You should know by now that I always learn my lesson.

Him: I know you do. I was also following orders. I will tell him you are not interested but you must know that he is not going to stop trying. He wants something Sima and he can only get it through you.

Me: whatever it is I'm sure he can manage without me he always did.

Him: not this time Sima but know that I have your back

I'm watching over you and I'm glad you learned not to

mess with Khanyi. You should try and have her as an ally

she's well connected her people are well connected you will need her in the future.

ME: she's already helping me with my business.

Him: just know that you are going to need her help more. Make peace with her. Me: what do you mean?

Him: Just do as I tell you and you'll be happy and safe with your kids. I'll check on you soon. Bye Sima. (he hangs up)

I wonder what he means by what he just said. I have no interest in taking over Zweli's illegal businesses I have kids to think about. I get the twins and drive off to Khanyi's place. They are so excited about spending the weekend there they can't wait to see their siblings. The entire drive is about all the things they are going to do with them. I must say I haven't seen my kids this happy about something in a while. Their happiness makes me happy. I think it's good that they have their siblings especially since their father will no longer be a part of their lives but I'll never let them forget him and they can still visit him. I park the car and get the kids out with their bags. Khanyi really has a beautiful house. She opens the

door at lets us in.

Khanyi: I thought you changed  
your mind. How are you? Me: I  
almost did but I couldn't disappoint  
them.

Khanyi: Hey babies how are you?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Twins: hi aunti

Me: I've packed everything that they are going to need and I'm also potty training them they only use nappies at night

Khanyi: That's fine. Their room is not far from mine. I also have baby monitors. We are going to be fine.

Sibahle: Mom (she calls out for her while walking down the stairs.) Sorry mom I didn't realise you had a guest. I wanted to talk to you about something.

Khanyi: it's ok sweetie we'll talk later. For now please do me a favour and take the twins upstairs with their bags.

Sibahle: ok mom. Come boys let's go. (I say my goodbyes and they walk upstairs with Sibahle.) Me: You have a beautiful family Khanyi. Thank you for taking them. I'll fetch them on Sunday in the afternoon.

Khanyi: No problem. We'll see you Sunday then.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

**SIZWE**

ME: how have you been how's my baby?

Anelisa: We are good daddy to be we are really good. I'm glad to see you happy.

ME: that's only because I'm looking forward to being a father. (I pause a little and look at her) Why didn't you want to give us a chance? I could have made you happy you know that right. Anelisa: I blinded myself by the obsession that I had over Qhawe when I realised that he could never love me the way he loves her it was too late to make things right between us. The decision I took in that moment is a decision I will always regret because it led me here it led me to a life with no future. Even though that may be I'm glad there's something good coming out of this situation and that is this baby I'm carrying for you. Although I wish I was not in here so that you can get to experience the pregnancy. I'm really sorry that it had to be like this.

Me: I would have really loved to go through it with you in a way I think I am. I have strange cravings lately. Lately I have a thing for brown bread with butter and coffee.

Anelisa: You should try it with Avacado. And thank you for buying me my cravings I really appreciate it. I wish things were different.

ME: Me too but we are here and there's nothing we can do. (I'm lying

Sponsored

there is something that can be done but I'm not sure it's a card I want to play right now. I don't fully trust her yet.)

Anelisa: Oh my God Sizwe he is kicking. (I quickly get up sit next to her and put my hand on her tummy and the baby moved again.) Sizwe the guards.

Me: They won't say anything. She's kicking again. This feels great. (I kiss her tummy while talking to the baby.)

Hey Princess are you good in there I can't wait to meet you my Angel. You must be good and not give mommy any trouble ok. Daddy loves you very much. (when I look up my eyes are met by Anelisa's crying eyes. I look into her eyes and I see sadness.) Why are you sad? (I ask wiping her tears)

Anelisa: I don't know if I'm sad or happy. I really wish things were different Sizwe but I promise that I will take care of myself and give birth to a healthy baby.

Me: That's all I ask.

Anelisa: Sizwe I need to

tell you something ME:

what is it?

Anelisa: There's a lady that came here to visit me I don't know her and I think she found out about me because she was digging into Khanyi's life or Qhawe's life.

Me: what does she want?

Anelisa: she wanted to know why I was in here she wants Qhawe and she wants Khanyi out of the way. I don't think she wants to kill her though.

Me: did you tell what happened to you?

Anelisa: I did and to be honest I don't think she cares. I think there's something wrong with her but I couldn't put my finger on it. Her name is Sindiswa. Maybe you should talk to Qhawe about it and I know he doesn't want her otherwise if he did she wouldn't have taken the time to come visit me.

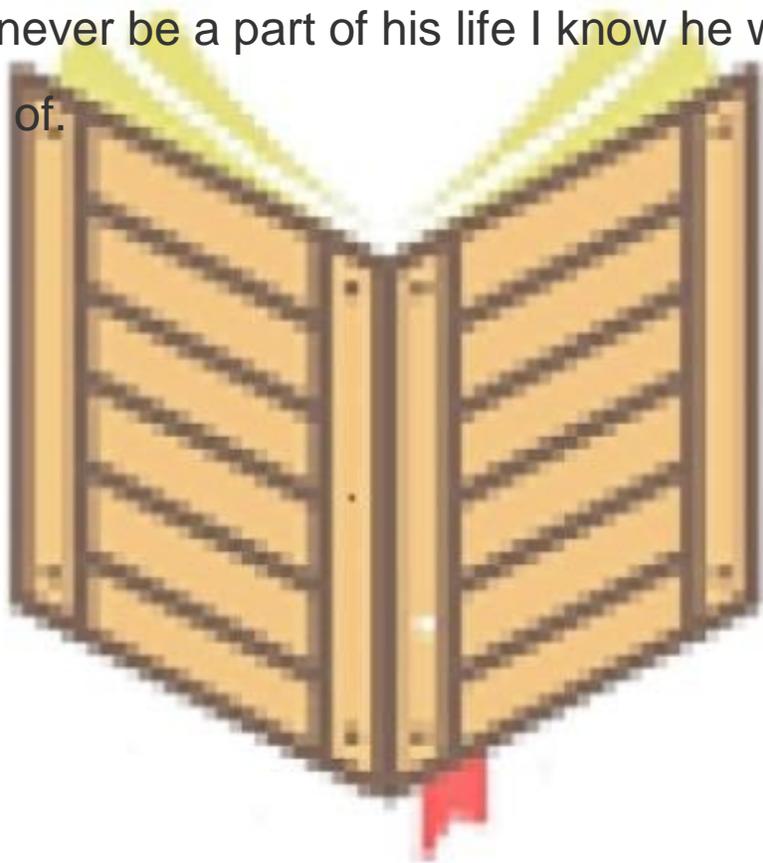
Me: Why are you telling me this?

Anelisa: I guess I'm being selfish. My kids love Khanyi and I don't want them to lose her. She has been a good mother to them and she has never speaks ill of me to my kids she is even willing to bring them here for visits. She's bringing the girls here soon because the girls want to talk me about the shooting. If this Sindiswa woman hurts Khanyi in anyway. She won't only be hurting Khanyi she'll

be hurting my kids too.

Me: I'll look into it and I'll speak to Qhawe about it.

Anelisa: Sizwe I'm not keeping this baby because you threatened my kids I know you would never hurt them. I'm keeping this baby for you the excitement you have about being a father is the reason why I'm keeping it even though I'll never be a part of his life I know he will be taken care of.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: This is not how I wanted to have a baby Anelisa. Getting you pregnant was not my intention at that time. I was so focused on punishing you for what you did only later did I think that you could be pregnant. Having a child is one of the things I've always in my life and this is not how imagined it happening but what can I say it happened and we are here now.

Anelisa: I'm really sorry Sizwe. (I just give a hug and let her cry .)

Me: don't cry ok. We are here because of the choices we made. I could have made different choices but I didn't. I have to go now. don't cry about this again ok. I'll come see you guys soon again. Please take care of my Princess. (I get up and kiss her forehead and leave.)

NCESH

A lot has been happening especially in Khanyi's life and now she is pregnant. We never thought she could have kids again. It's an amazing miracle but I feel for my friend but we are going to be there for her every step of the way. A few months back Bandile asked me to move to Durban move my business there and I accepted. We've been

getting everything ready. The business is set up already I bought an apartment as well in La Lucia. Khanyi doesn't know that Thando and I we've decided to move to Durban we are surprising her. In a few days we'll be in Durban. I love Bandile and I hope things work out. I really feel like he is the one I've looking. The man treats me like a Queen. He also calls me his Queen just like Qhawe calls Khanyi. I think it's their thing because Lwazi also calls Thando his Queen. The two are so crazy.

Thando: Lwazi is on his way here with Bandile they say they want to help with the move.

Me: I told Bandile they didn't have to but these men are so stubborn. I can't wait to see Khanyi and the kids.

Thando: I can't wait to here them talk about the babies. What are we going to do with all these babies.

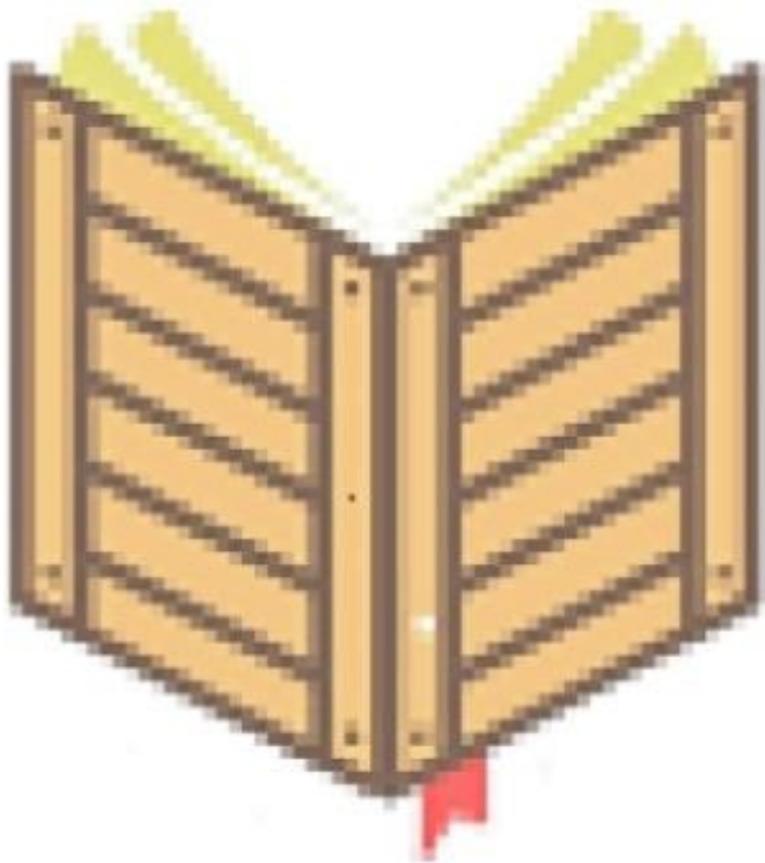
Me: we are going to take of them.

Thando: Ncesh remember Khanyi telling us about this Sindiswa woman Me: yes she said she was becoming a pain.

Thando: I think I know her I think it's the same Sindiswa from two years ago. Me: it can't be could it be

Thando: I don't know Ncesh and if it's her I don't know what kind of trouble she is stirring up.

Me: Khanyi also said that she went to high school with Qhawe and she's had a crush on him since then. This girl is really obsessed.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Thando: I'm scared for Khanyi. She is only human Ncesh and she can only take so much and I hope and pray for Sindiswa's sake Khanyi doesn't blow up. She loves Qhawe even though she still has doubts sometimes I know she loves him and she will break this Sindiswa woman.

Me: let's hope it won't to get to that and I hope it's not the same sindiswa. I'll ask her for a picture of her.

Thando: if it's the same Sindiswa then her mom really has

no shame even Sindiswa has no shame. Me: Let's wait and see.

CHAPTER 62

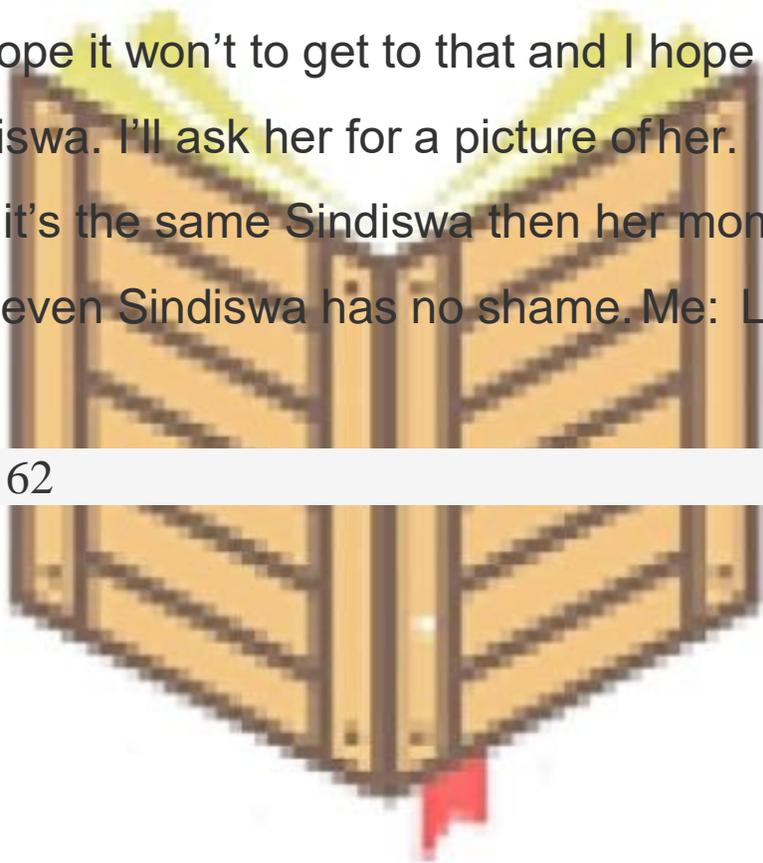
SUND

AY

QHA

WE

The weekend has been great. Sima fetched the twins this morning after breakfast she didn't want to stay for lunch but we understand. Khaya is also on his way he is bringing Lungi and



NOVELSGURU.COM

Banele is fetching Lina from the airport. The guys are also here we just having a chilled out Sunday as a family. We have decided that as the guys we'll cook lunch in fact it's a late lunch. Lwazi and Bandile are also on their way with Ncesh and Thando and Khanyi doesn't know they are coming. I finally got her what she wanted when I took her shopping months back on the day she got shot. I hope she doesn't faint on me two surprises in one day. I'm busy in the kitchen when Sizwe walks in.

Sizwe: I need to talk to you about something  
Me: sounds serious.

Sizwe: In a way it is. I went to see Anelisa on Friday. I try to go there as much as I can to bond with the baby.

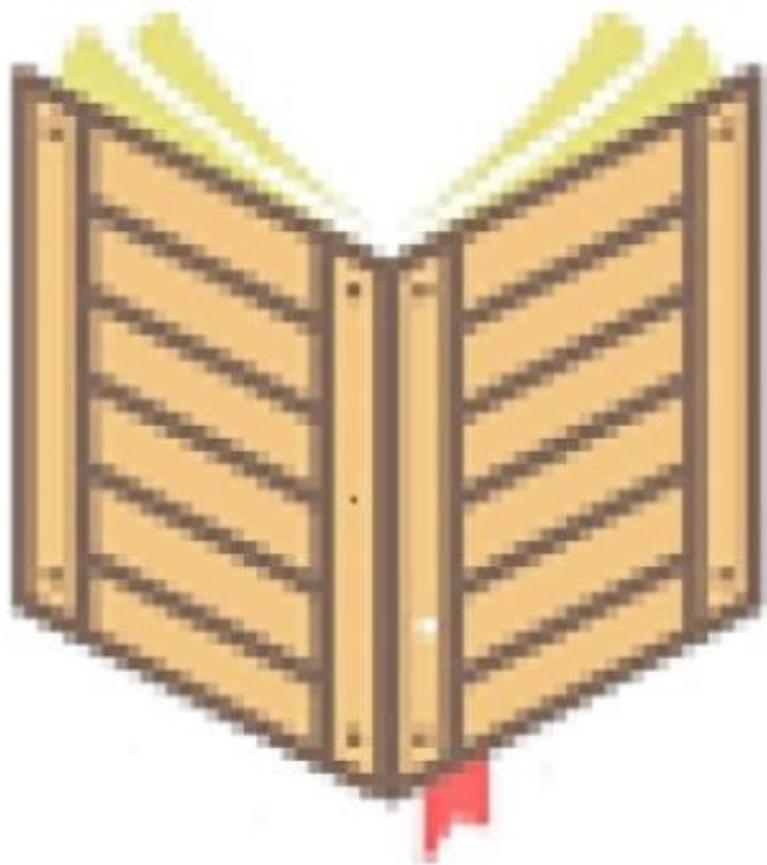
Me: is everything ok is the baby ok?

Sizwe: everything is ok. The baby kicked for the first time on Friday and I was there I got to feel my baby's first kick man.

This is not how imagined experiencing this process

Me: congratulations man. I know the feeling. You know we can do something about right. Sizwe: I know we can do something but I don't know if that's something I want to do mainly because I don't know if I should trust her completely and you know what's strange is that I still care about her. I though after everything I did to her and everything she did I wouldn't care but I do.

Me: things always have a funny way of working out man.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sizwe: anyway when I was with her on Friday she told me about a visit she had from some woman called Sindiswa.

ME: Sindiswa went to see her why? (I am shocked at this moment) do they know each other? Sizwe: they don't know each other. This woman went there wanting to know about what happened to Anelisa. The fact that she knows about Anelisa means she's been digging and I'm sure she hired someone.

Me: This woman doesn't listen we have told her so many times to back. I don't know what it is about these women and what they want from me. Worse this Sindiswa woman we've never dated I've never even slept with me. She's always had a crush on me since high school and now it's no longer a crush now it's purely an obsession.

Sizwe: I think we need to take care of this woman before she causes any damage. Remember Khanyi is pregnant now and this will affect her even if she says it won't and I'm sure she wants to deal with her her own way. Talk to Khanyi she needs to think of herself and the babies now. Me: I'll speak to her.

Why did Anelisa tell you about this I would have thought that she would be a fan of anyone who wants to get rid of Khanyi.

Sizwe: She doesn't want her kids to lose the only mother they have. They lost her already so they can't lose Khanyi.

Me: I never thought I'd see the day that Anelisa would be Khanyi's fan. (Eddie and Andile walk in with shopping bags)

Eddie: Never again will I go shopping with Andile. He is like a

woman. If I went alone I would have been back a long time ago. I'd rather go shopping with Khanyi. I swear she hates shopping.

Me: I know. She walks into a shop and takes what she wants and leaves just like Lisakhanya.

Andile: “ mxm”. Where is the lady of the house anyway? Me: Napping upstairs.

Andile: I think we should start getting the food ready. (Khaya and Lungi just arrived as well as Bandile Lwazi Thando and Ncesh Banele and Lina) Everyone is here.

“but how can you say everyone is here and I'm not.”

Me: This is a nice surprise. Hey man you are back you've gone for weeks. Luyanda: it hasn't been that long man. But I won my case and now I am back.

Me: Ncesh Thando she doesn't know you are here. She was sleeping upstairs that's if she still is. She is probably awake from all his noise you guys are making.

Thando: We'll go check on her and the kids. ( they walk upstairs)

Khaya: bhut' Luyanda haven't seen you in a while you missed out on a lot of drama. Luyanda: I heard about the drama man but as long as you are ok I'm happy.

Khaya: We are ok. By the way this is Lungiswa my girlfriend.

Luyanda: finally you bring a girl home she must be the

one. Hello Lungi how are you? Lungi: I'm good bhuti and how are you?

Luyanda: I'm good.

Khaya: Lungi this Bhut' Luyanda the family lawyer and one of these crazy uncles.

Luyanda: Khaya don't call us crazy. I spoke to Lungelo a few days back he seems to be good overseas.

Me: yes he is I also spoke to him not too long ago. He's

coming home for Christmas. Lungi: Khaya please take me upstairs to the other ladies.

Me: Princess why don't you go upstairs too I promise we will have our time together before you go back to school just the two of us. (she's been holding my hand ever since she arrived)

LIna: do you promise?

Me: I promise my Princess. Mommy also needs to see her Princess and she has something tell you. (we haven't told her about the pregnancy yet. She reaches for my face and kisses my chick and walks out.) Ok guys lets get started.

NOVELSGURU.COM

THANDO

When we walk into her room she was awake already and it looked like she just woke up. She is so beautiful. Sexy without

even trying.

Me: Hey Mama Bear

Khanyi: Oh my God you guys!!! What are you doing here? Why didn't you tell you were coming? I am going to kill Qhawe for not telling me.

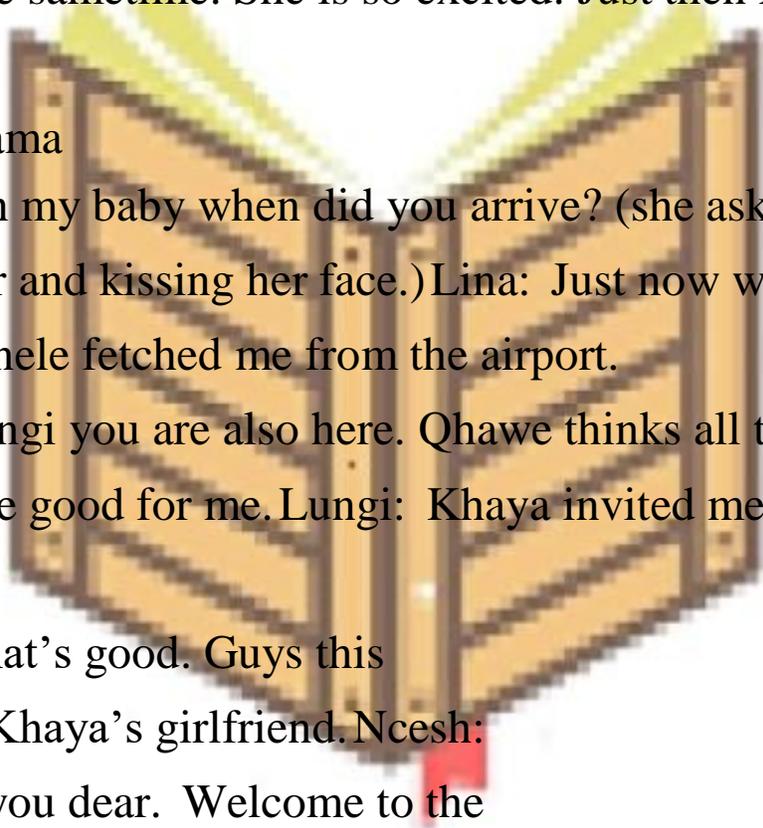
Ncesh: We wanted to surprise you Mama Bear. Leave the man alone we asked him not to tell you. (she is busy hugging us and crying at the sametime. She is so excited. Just then Lina walks in.)

Lina: hi mama

Khanyi: Oh my baby when did you arrive? (she asks hugging her and kissing her face.) Lina: Just now with the Aunties Banele fetched me from the airport.

Khanyi: Lungi you are also here. Qhawe thinks all these surprises are good for me. Lungi: Khaya invited me for lunch.

Khanyi: That's good. Guys this Lungiswa Khaya's girlfriend. Ncesh: Nice meet you dear. Welcome to the family.



Me: Khanyi how have you dear? (she told us that they haven't told Lina yet about the pregnancy.)

Khanyi: I've been good just busy trying to sort out these businesses. I'll be hiring a new CEO

Sponsored

Khaya's girlfriend.

Ncesh: Nice meet you dear. Welcome to the family.

Me: Khanyi how have you dear? (she told us that they haven't told Lina yet about the pregnancy.)

Khanyi: I've been good just busy trying to sort out these businesses. I'll be hiring a new CEO I'm stepping down.

There's too much on my plate and I need to minimize my work load.

Ncesh: isn't Qhawe helping?

Khanyi: He is helping a lot but still I need to work less now.

How's school Lina are you done with your tests?

Lina: School is great mom I have two tests left. I'm going back to school on Tuesday I'm writing on Wednesday. (Qhawe walks in looking at Khanyi's picture that's above the bed. I must say it's a beautiful big picture.)

Qhawe: ladies I have left some refreshments for you in the tv room.

Khanyi: thanks babe. Can you please sit (she pats next to her

he sits and makes her sit on his lap.) We have to tell her now before someone else does.

Lina: Tell what to who?

Qhawe: Princess we have something to tell you Me:

Brace yourself Princess this is big.

Ncesh: Thando stop it you are just like Lwazi. (they all laugh at that statement. Khanyi looks at Qhawe and nods. I don't know how these two manage to communicate and understand each other just by looking at each other)

Qhawe: Lina mom has a bun in the oven. In fact she has more than one bun in the oven. Lina: Yhoooo!!! When did this happen but how I thought you couldn't have any more buns.

Khanyi: I thought so too but here we are. (if anyone walked in on this conversation and I mean someone who is not part of this family they would be totally lost.)

Lina: wait dad said more than one bun how many buns are we talking exactly. (they look at each other then at Lina and smile at her at nervously.)

Khanyi & Qhawe: Five buns (Lina just froze and stared at them for a while and the room is quiet.)

Lina: I don't know if I heard correctly did you just say five buns? Qhawe: yes Princess you did. (she keeps quiet again)

Khanyi: are you ok Lina?

Me: I think she needs time to process this. (Ncesh is just looking at Lina and enjoying her reaction)

Lina: I'm fine aunt Thando. So you guys you thought baking five buns would be the best thing for this family. Why didn't you fill up the tray and just make it six. This behaviour of yours of being all over each other led to you baking five buns. Oh my God. Couldn't you make it two at least if you badly wanted to have more than one. What are we going to do with them this is crazy it can't be true it's impossible.

Ncesh: it's not impossible baby. She is really baking five buns in that oven of hers. Come here sweetie (she walks over to her) you don't have to worry you know that. nothing is going to change they are still going to love you just the same.

Lina: I'm not worried about us I'm worried about them. (she looks at her parents and smiles) Qhawe: You don't have to worry about Princess we are going to be fine.

Lina: I really am it's going to be a full rugby team you do realise that right. Dad you had to be that powerful and just make it five. Yhooooo ( she gets kisses on cheeks and leaves

the room before the parent could say anything)

Qhawe: Let me go back to the guys before they come looking for me. (he kisses Khanyi and leaves.)

Me: are you ok Khanyi?

Khanyi: I'm ok. Just this pregnancy is making me very clingy especially with Qhawe. Me: You are going to be fine we are here for you and the good news is that we are staying. Khanyi: What do you mean you are staying?

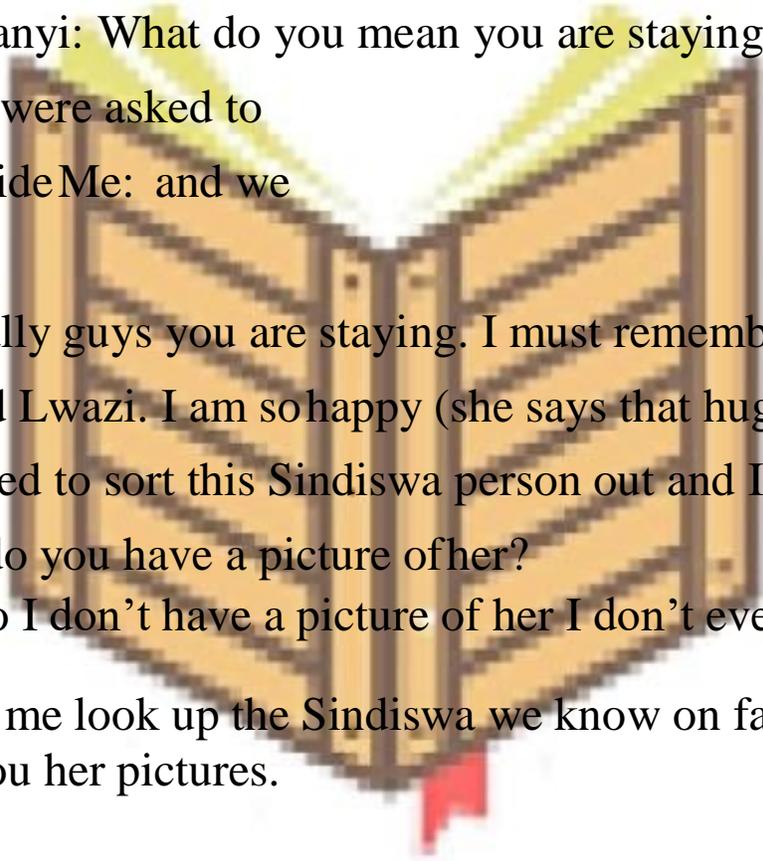
Ncesh: We were asked to move this side Me: and we said yes

Khanyi: really guys you are staying. I must remember to thank Bandile and Lwazi. I am so happy (she says that hugging us.)

Me: We need to sort this Sindiswa person out and I think we know her. do you have a picture of her?

Khanyi: No I don't have a picture of her I don't even know her last name.

Ncesh: Let me look up the Sindiswa we know on facebook and I'll show you her pictures.



Khanyi: she's one of those tall girls with a medium sized body not too dark too much make up thinks the world revolves around her.

Ncesh: is this her?

Khanyi: That's her that's exactly her.

Me: Don't play games with her Khanyi she needs to be dealt with as soon as possible. Her mother is a psycho.

SINDISWA

I've been thinking a lot about the things that Qhawe's ex-wife told me about what happened to me. Am I really prepared to lose my life because of my mother. Do I even love Qhawe as much as I say I do or am I allowing my mother to manipulate me. I've never walked away from something my mother told me to do but this time I have doubts. I can't help but feel that this is out of my league. Do I really want to be on Qhawe's wrong side. I haven't even thought of Qhawe until my mother brought him up. Everything just changed so fast all of a sudden not I can't stop thinking about Qhawe all of a sudden now I want him. It's like someone flipped a switch on me and everything changed just like that. Maybe Siphos is right maybe I should leave all this alone but I can't. I feel like something is pushing me to do this and I break away from it. I really don't know what's going.

## CHAPTER 63

MONDAY

ZWELIBANZI

I have asked to see my lawyer I need him to sort out my businesses. Right now at this very moment anything is possible on my side. I've stepped on a lot of toes in this business to get to where I am and most of the people I stepped didn't take kindly to that some of them ended up in jail and some ended up dead. If there's one thing I learned is that whatever happens to me I must make sure my kids are taken care of. The guard interrupts my thoughts calling out my name telling me I have a visitor. I walk with him to the visitor's area and it's my lawyer.

Me: Jonathan how are you?

Jonathan: I'm good. What do

you need me to do? Me: I

need you to draft a will for me

Jonathan: You've never had to worry about having a will what changed? Me: In here anything is possible I could die just after this conversation. Jonathan: I here you. What do you need?

I tell him everything I need what I need to be on the will. Jonathan: I'll do it tonight and I'll bring it tomorrow for you to sign. Me: thanks I'd appreciate that. the sooner the better.

Jonathan: I'll see you tomorrow. (he gets up and leaves. When I am about to leave I am told I have more visitors. When I turn around I am really surprised I was not expecting them. I thought they were coming over the weekend. Is it after school already. She looks amazing is she putting on weight?)

Me: hi guys

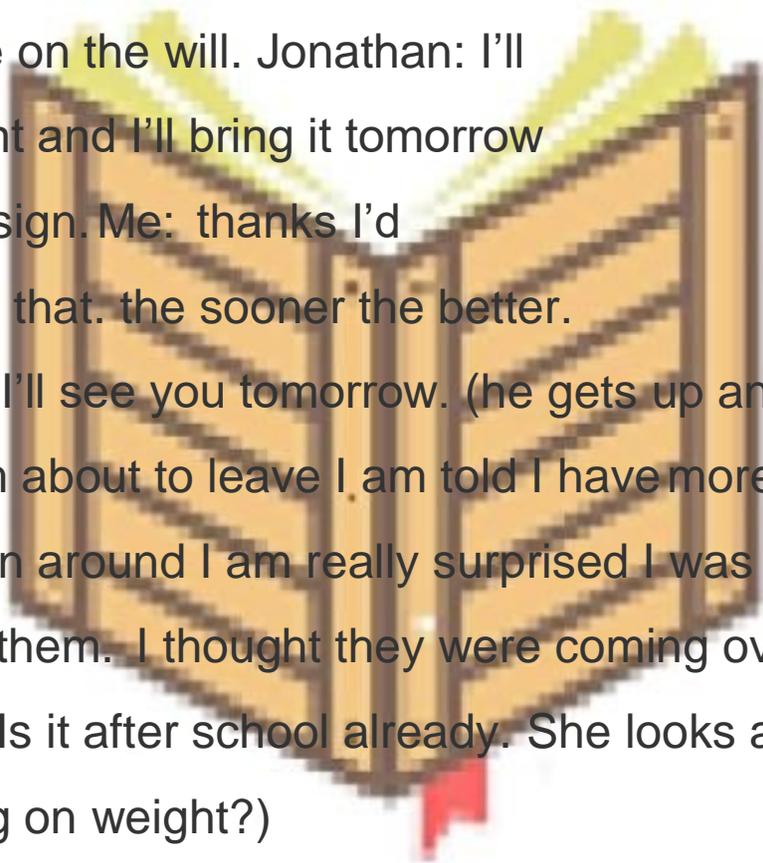
Khanyi: How are

you Zwelibanzi? Me:

I'm ok. Kids how

are you?

Ntando: we are fine. (they follow their



NOVELSGURU.COM

mom and sit down opposite me.)

Lonwabo: Why? (I expected that and how am I going to answer)

Me: Greed. I guess my father was right when he said I was greedy and I didn't want to believe him. I didn't want to believe that I was greedy but I was and because of that here I am.

Lonwabo: did you hate us that much?

Me: I didn't hate you I don't hate you. I could never hate you even if I wanted to. I didn't know how to show you that I love you without being afraid of hurting Sima.

Ntando: Mom loved you we loved you why couldn't you be honest with us. Me: to be honest I was scared of losing you guys.

Lonwabo: so you chose to treat us like trash.

Ntando: do you know what hurts the most is that you chose to be a good father to the twins and to us you were an animal. Don't get me wrong we love the twins and we will have a relationship with them. They are family after all. I just fail to understand how you can treat your kids so differently. Lonwabo: you made a choice to be the way you were towards us including mom whatever drove you

to do that is your business. We are here to tell you that you shouldn't expect us to visit you we don't see the need. You broke the deal you made with us and the judge in court so we see no need why we should keep trying to be your kids when you obviously don't have an interest to be our father.

Me: guys I am truly sorry for everything that I've put you through. I know an apology will not change anything but I really do hope that one day you will forgive me. Where is Lwanele? (Khanyi is so quiet I guess I understand)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lonwabo: she is in the car with dad. She didn't want to come.

Me: Oh I see. (I must admit it always did hurt when they call him "dad") Ntando:

We have to go thank you for your time.

Me: thank you for coming.

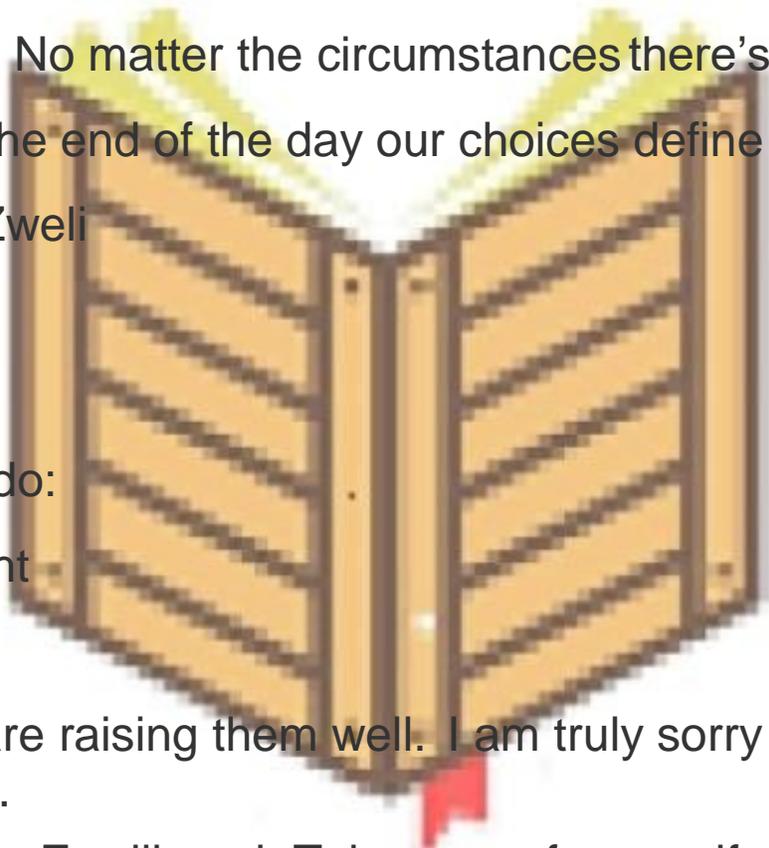
Lonwabo: you are who you are because of the choices you made. No matter the circumstances there's always a choice at the end of the day our choices define who we are. Bye Zweli

Me: who  
tought you  
that? Ntando:

Mom tought  
us.

Me: You are raising them well. I am truly sorry for everything.

Khanyi: bye Zwelibanzi. Take care of yourself. Come on guys let's go. (I watch them walk away. The boys have taken my height they are taller than their mother. They look good. I really missed out. Dad was right they are not boys they are men.)



NOVELSGURU.COM

## KHANYISILE

After the visit with Zwelibanzi Qhawe took us out for dinner. He wanted to cheer up the kids and I must say it worked. When we got home they were in a better mood.

Qhawe: Baby girl remember the surprise you were suppose to get yesterday  
Me: yes I do

My King

Qhawe: Come with me (I get off the bed and put on my slippers. All of a sudden he lifts me and wraps my legs around his waist and walks out.) You moving too slow for my liking right now.

ME: You want Lonwabo to call another meeting for us I see.

Qhawe: he won't I'm just carrying you wer are not doing anything. (when we get to the front

door he puts me down and we both walk out and all the kids are outside even Lungi is here. It looks like her and

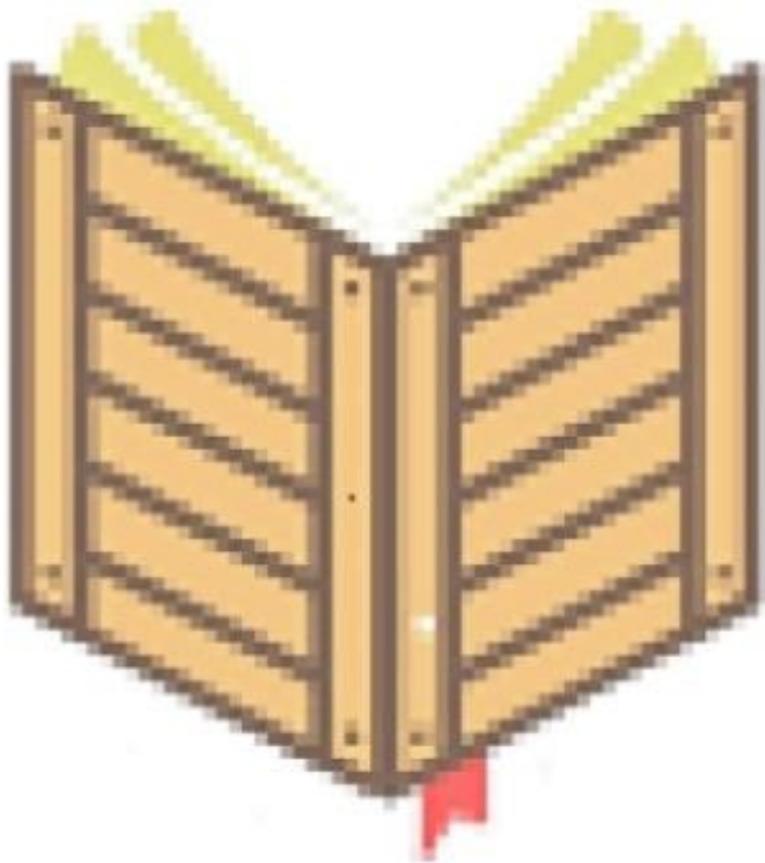
Lina are getting close.

Bandile(Twin): Mom we have something tell you t but dad will go first. Dad over to you.

Qhawe: As you see us out here we decided that today we

should show appreciation to the woman who has always been there for us. We know you are not perfect but to us you perfect with your imperfections

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

sometimes you can be pain but we have never doubted that you love us because you have put up with a lot from us. Just to say thank you for being the best woman in my life. ( he hands me a small box) before you open it the kids want to say something.

Banele: I know that we haven't really told you how we feel. Today we want you to know that we love you and we appreciate you

Bandile: When you came into our lives we didn't really believe that you would be able to cope with us. We thought you would be like Anelisa and get tired of us and walk away we were afraid to love you.

Sibahle: But as time went on you proved to us that you are not only accepting dad to be a part of your life but you are accepting us too and you showed us love. You wiped our tears even when you didn't understand why we were crying you didn't judge us you were just there for us.

Zenande: you became our friend before you became our mother you earned our trust you showed us that you are not here replace our mother but also showed us that we can count on you all the time.

Lisakhanya: because of you we have the best family. We

feel loved every day. Dad is happier than he has ever been in his life. Thank you Khanyisile for being the best you can be the best mom and a best friend to us and thank you for loving us and our dad.

(tears have been flowing since they started talking. God what did I do to deserve this. They really don't have to do all this they really don't and right now I'm so speechless I really have no words.)

Khaya: Mom I'll be speaking on behalf of the other half of your kids. You have been through a lot with us you have put up with a lot especially with me but you never gave up on us you made sure that we know what is right and what is wrong. When you met Qhawe I was happy we were happy that you finally decided to date. You had put your life on hold for a long time. Thank you for everything mom thank you for being there and protecting us. Thank you for the new family we have as crazy as we are it is the best gift you could have ever given us. We love you. (Lwanele walks up to me and hands me a small box too.)

Qhawe: open the boxes baby (I do as I am told and what I find in these boxes is amazing. It's keys and they both have a picture of the kids on one side and Qhawe's

picture on the other side. They switch on the rest of the lights as it was dark and when the rest of the lights go on I understand why they kept them off.)

Me: Oh my God what did you guys do I don't know what to say. Qhawe: Mine is not really a surprise since it is what you wanted. Me: baby it's a Jaguar I really didn't think you would buy it.

Qhawe: I'll do whatever I can for you. (I just hug him and kiss him.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: but Qhawe you know by the time I'm five months pregnant I won't be able to drive this car. Qhawe: I know baby hence the kids came up with a back up. Look closely at the second key and remove the sticker on it.

Me: It's a key for an Audi.

Lonwabo: not just any Audi (another set of lights goes on. I am ready to collapse. I'm sure these people are trying to kill me.

Qhawe: we noticed how much you enjoyed my dad's one when we were in the eastern cape and when he was here. so the kids and my dad got together and bought that for you. This is the real reason why Lina had to come home. She wanted to be here for this. (I just break down and cry in Qhawe's arms. I feel so overwhelmed right now I don't even know what to say them. This is too much for one person to handle. I feel so emotional. They all come to us and form a group hug.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

**BANDILE**

Ncesh wanted to come see Khanyi before we go to my house she's spending a few days there. As we drive into

Khanyi's driveway I see two cars that I've never seen there before. Maybe they have visitors. I park next to Khaya's car. As we walk into the house we can hear loud laughter coming from the lounge. I stand there and just watch them they haven't noticed us. As Ncesh walks in I hold her back. It's just them and their kids and they look so happy. Right now I just feel like we have deprived them of these moments by being here all the time.

Qhawe notices us

Qhawe: hey guys when did you get here

Me: just now. I came to fetch Ncesh. She is going to be spending a few days at my house. She wanted to see Khanyi before we leave. (Ncesh walks over to Khanyi and Qhawe and I we go to the kitchen.) I can't remember the last time I've seen you this happy she is really good for you

Qhawe: Just like Ncesh is good for

you. I am happy man. Me: and the two cars outside I thought you had

visitors Qhawe: they are hers. We bought them for her.

Me: We? Who is we?

Qhawe: Me and the kids. My

dad helped the kids. Me:

which one did you buy for

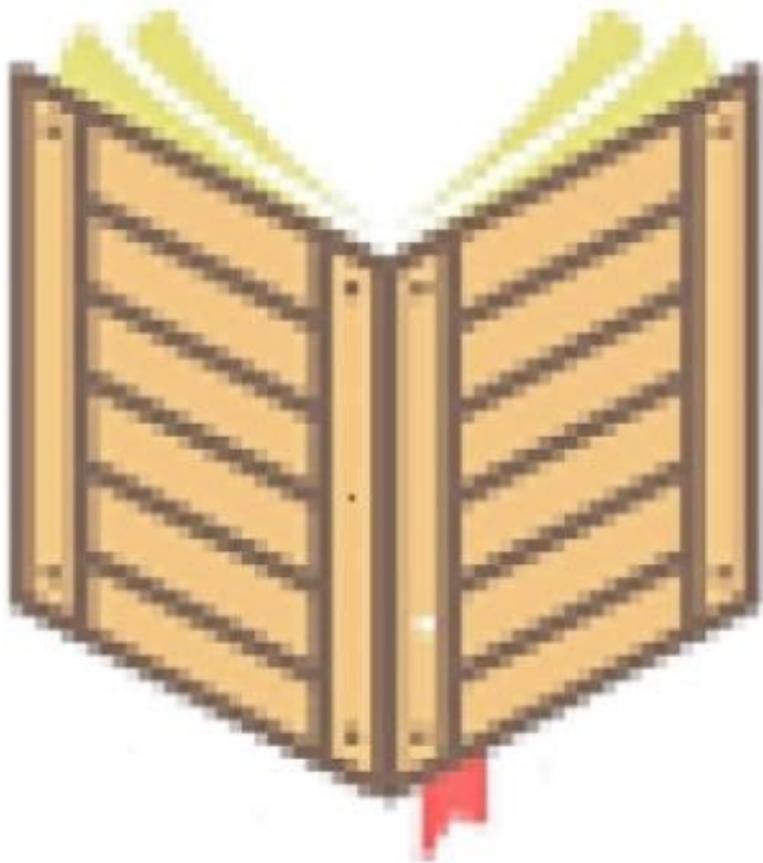
her?

Qhawe: the Jaguar (this man smiles like it's nothing.)

Me: You really love this woman because if this was

Anelisa you would have never bought that kind of car for

her.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: She is my world. They are my world.

Me: we need to take care of this Sindiswa woman before she ruins things for you.

Qhawe: I know man. We need to find a way to get her to back off. I really don't want this to be another Anelisa situation.

Me: we will figure something out don't worry. We'll have to try and keep Khanyi out of it. Qhawe: we definitely have to.

Me: listen we have to go I'll see you tomorrow at the office. Ncebakazi come let's go baby and leave this happy family. (she walks out the lounge with Khanyi and they walk us out. We say our good byes and drive off.)

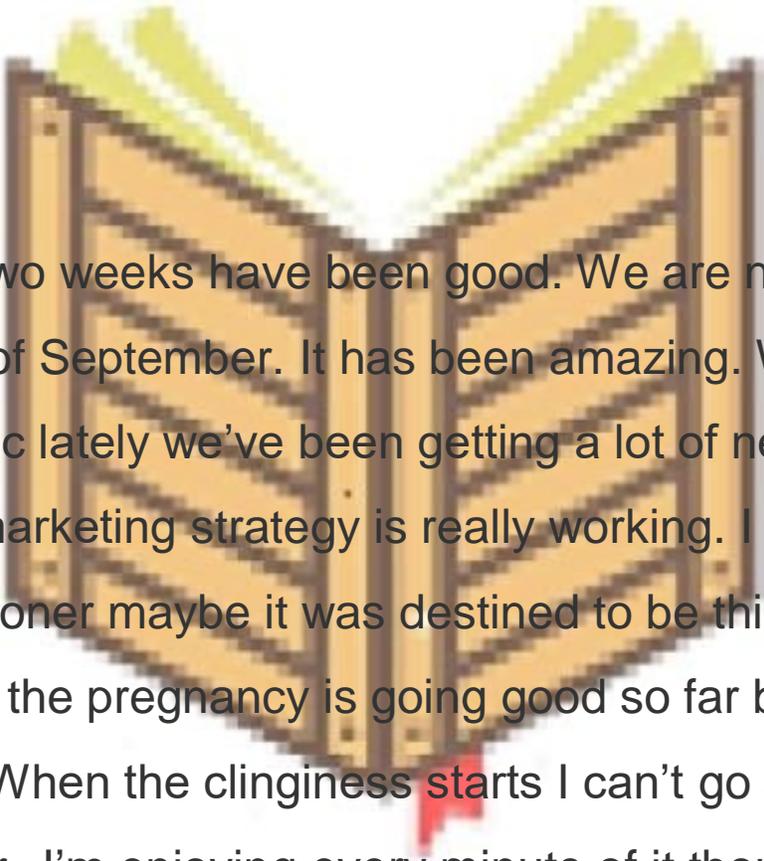
Ncesh: Can you believe Qhawe bought her a car a Jaguar baby.

Me: he told me. He really loves me trust if that was anything other woman he wouldn't have done than.

Ncesh: I'm just happy she finally has someone to take care of in fact we all do. Our lives have been quite a journey and today we are all happy living the lives we've always wanted to live with men that love and take care of us.

TWO  
WEEKS  
LATER  
SATURDAY

QHAWE

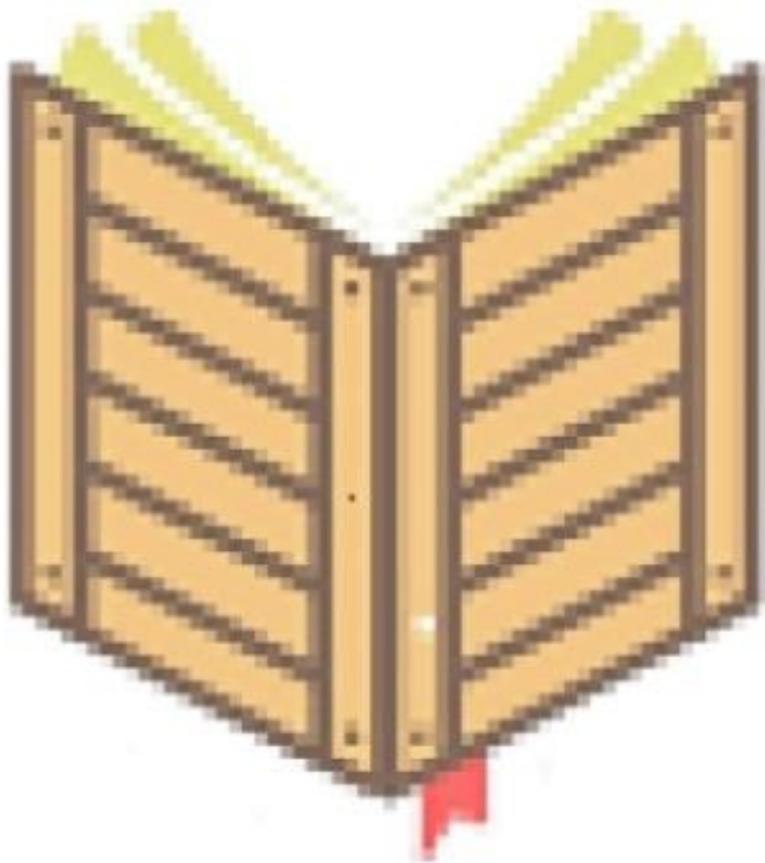


The past two weeks have been good. We are now on the last week of September. It has been amazing. Work is really hectic lately we've been getting a lot of new clients. Khanyi's marketing strategy is really working. I wish I had met her sooner maybe it was destined to be this way. She is amazing the pregnancy is going good so far but she is so clingy. When the clinginess starts I can't go anywhere without her. I'm enjoying every minute of it though. She always just wants me around. She is also still looking for her replacement. Ibanathi didn't want the position saying it's too much responsibility but he will take the CFO position since the current CFO has resigned. The kids are doing great and today we are taking the girls to see

Anelisa we've been putting off this trip for a while now.

Sibahle: Dad we are ready we'll be in the kitchen.

(she shouts outside our bedroom door) Me: We'll be there. Babe are you ready let's go.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: I'm ready but are you sure you want me to come with you.

Me: Yes I'm sure the girls want you to come and she also asked if you could come. Khanyi: Let's go.

The girls were waiting downstairs for us and they look nervous about this whole thing. I grab the car keys and we leave. She walks in she looks pregnant she's probably four or five months pregnant now. No pregnant woman should be in prison. It must be difficult for her and she looks different she looks peaceful. Khanyi decided not to sit with us she wanted to give the girls and Anelisa their time. Anelisa: Hi

Me: hi how are you?

Anelisa: I'm good. Where is Khanyi? (I point at the table she is sitting at.) Can she please join us. (I walk over to her and take her hand and walk back to our table.)

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sibahle: You look good mommy

Anelisa: thank you Bahle and you guys also look amazing.

Look at your hair all of you it's beautiful and you are keeping it natural.

Lisakhanya: Mom does our hair and she

always says we have grandma's hair. Me: she is right you have your grandma's beautiful hair.

Anelisa: how have you girls been?

Zenande: We've been good we are happy and we are seeing a therapist twice a month now. Anelisa: Why are you seeing a therapist?

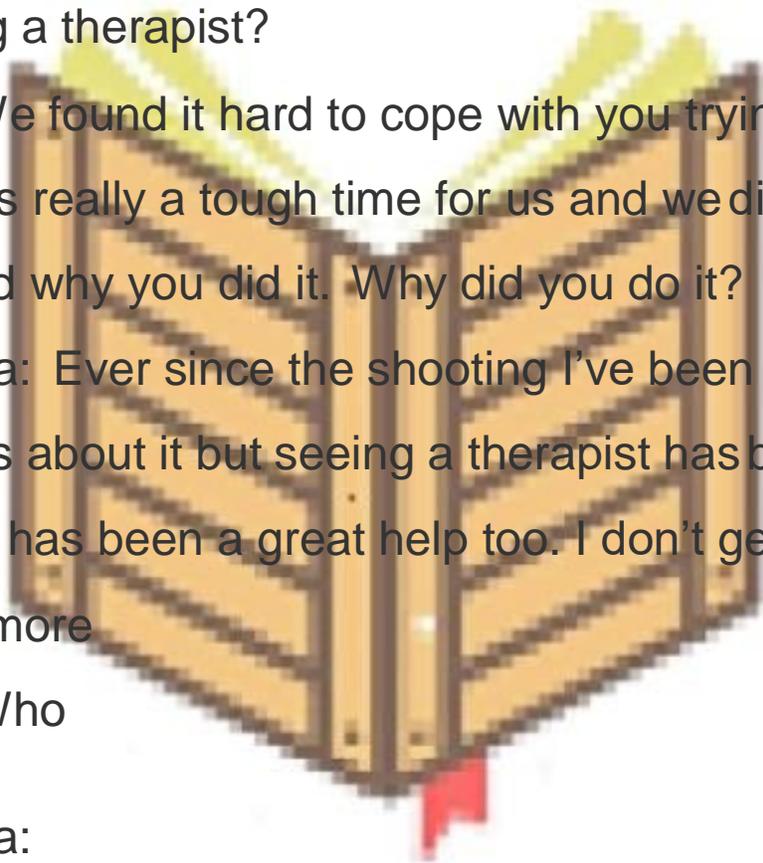
Sibahle: We found it hard to cope with you trying to kill mom it was really a tough time for us and we didn't even understand why you did it. Why did you do it?

Lisakhanya: Ever since the shooting I've been having nightmares about it but seeing a therapist has been helping and Wabo has been a great help too. I don't get them that much anymore

Anelisa: Who is Wabo?

Lisakhanya: My brother.

Anelisa: I see. Sibahle I did what I did because I was jealous that your father was happy with someone other than me. I wanted him to be happy with him. I didn't like that someone else could make him so happy and I couldn't.



Zenande: you do realise that if she had died you have taken his happiness away and not his but ours too.

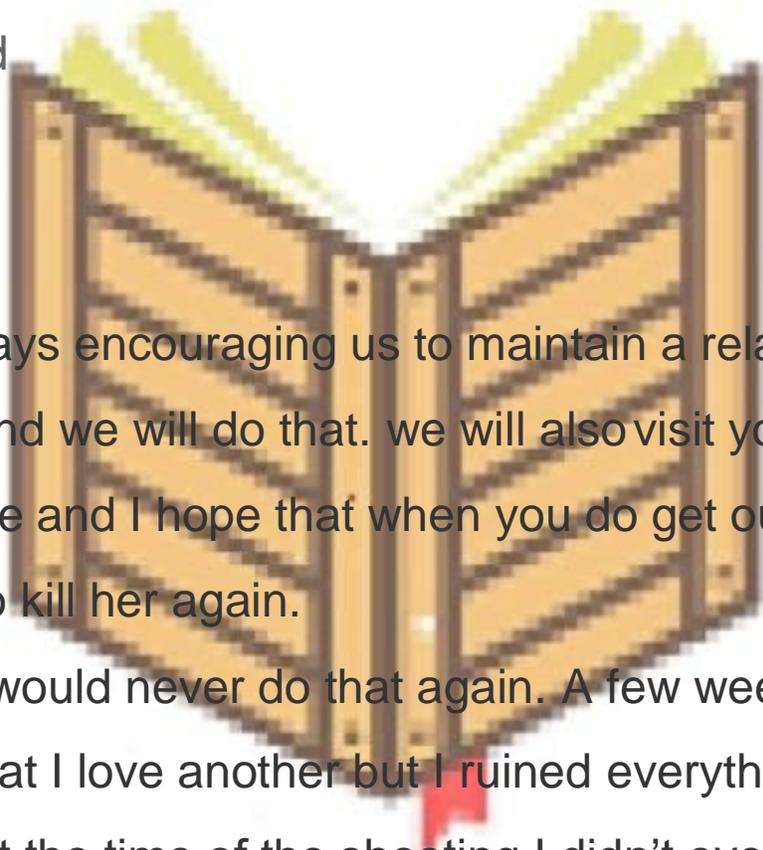
Anelisa: I realise that and I am truly sorry. I'm sorry that I was never the mother you needed me to be I was too caught up in what I wanted. I really hope that one day when I get out of here you will give me a chance.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sibahle: we love you we've always wanted to have a mother-daughter relationship with you but you never gave it a chance. We have that with Khanyi. Don't get me wrong. I'm not saying we won't try to have a relationship with you we will but you must not compare with mom. She has never tried to replace you

Sponsored



she is always encouraging us to maintain a relationship with you and we will do that. we will also visit you from time to time and I hope that when you do get out you won't try to kill her again.

Anelisa: I would never do that again. A few weeks back I realised that I love another but I ruined everything because at the time of the shooting I didn't even know that I loved him because when he asked me to give him a chance I was too caught in getting your father back and now I've lost him forever.

Thank you so much for giving me a chance. Believe me I do love you very much and I am really sorry.

Khanyi I am truly sorry for what I did. Being in here has me realise a lot of things and I've also learned a lot about myself and I am happy to say that I have discovered who I really am. To be honest I have been seeing a therapist too and it has helped a lot. Qhawe I'm also sorry for everything I've put you through especially with kids. I know you loved and cared for me and I betrayed you. I am sure though you would never love me the way you love her she is your soul mate anyone can see it.

Lisakhanya: we forgive you mommy

Khanyi: she is right we do forgive you. Anelisa all I want is for them to be happy and be content of who they are and be content with their family.

Me : and they are. They are happy and content.

Anelisa: thank you Khanyi for giving them what I couldn't I hope one day we can be friends. Khanyi: maybe only time will tell.

Sibahle: We love you and the twins love you. They will come see you soon if their big brother has anything to do with it.

Zenande: We are also getting more siblings.

Anelisa: What do you mean. ( Khanyi

looks at me and I nod) Khanyi: I'm pregnant

Anelisa: wow! Congratulations. She said siblings are you having twins?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sibahle: More like Quinstuplets ( the shock on her face is priceless she looks at me in disbelief and I just nod to confirm what Sibahle said.)

Anelisa: Qhawe what did you do? 5 babies at the same the same time. Yhooooo Khanyi: I know right. It's amazing.

Me: I didn't do anything she didn't want me to do. Anelisa we have to go. Sizwe said he'll come by tomorrow. Take care of yourself.

The said their goodbyes and hugged their mom and we left.

SIYANDA (QHAWE'S MOM)

I don't know how I'm going to get myself out of this situation. I think I'll have to tell my husband. This will destroy my marriage. My son will definitely never want to speak to me again. Wineka is becoming a pain in my ass now threatening me. We had this arrangement years ago what could have happened that made her want to bring up that owed her. This is a mess. Now that I think about it it was very stupid of me to make that kind of a deal with this woman. What am I

suppose to tell my husband and my son this will definitely destroy my family and I can't let that happen. When I think about it I even had the nerve to judge Khanyi and the only thing the woman has done is love my son and grandchildren in a way they've never been loved.

All my life I've dedicated my life to my son and husband.

I've always been a housewife which is something I've wanted even when I was a little girl and I was lucky enough to meet someone who wanted to have a housewife. There's nothing my husband doesn't do for me. He paid for my studies when I was still in varsity. He always said to me "It's all good to be a housewife and be taken care of but I must have something to fall back on should things go side ways" but they never did. Even now in as much as I know that my husband won't divorce me but he will be disappointed very disappointed and I know

he won't talk to me for a while. I need to fix this and hopefully I can fix it without having to tell them. Maybe I should speak to Khanyi and see if her guys can't help and I'm sure Cindy is still in Durban and I'm sure she is not aware of what her mother is doing to her which I found out today. Wineka is very cruel how can she do that to her

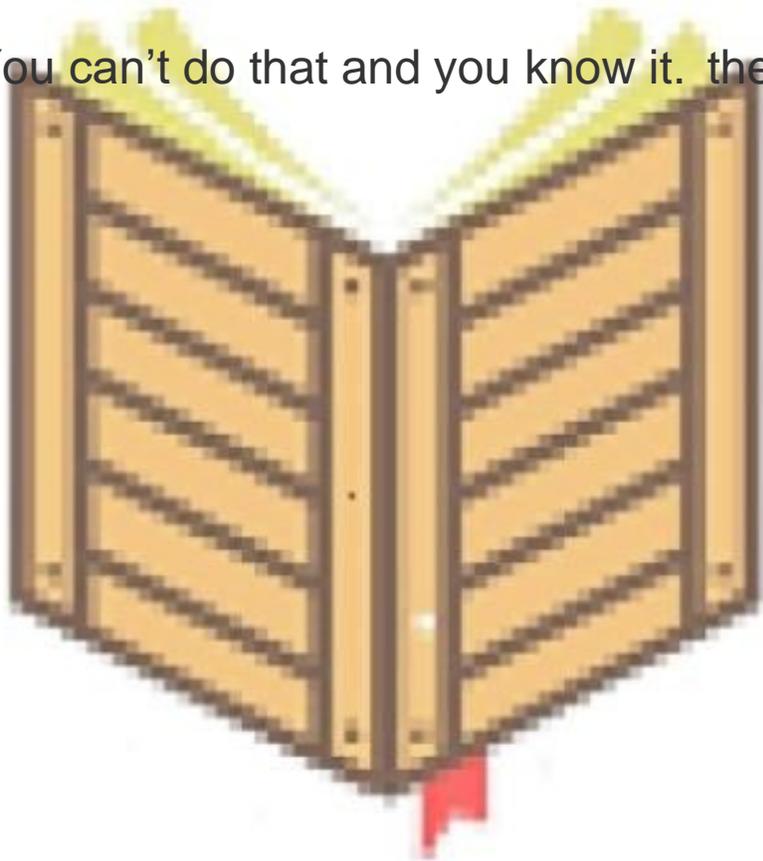
own child. My phone rings.

Me: What do you want?

Wineka: You need to go back to Durban my daughter can't do this alone.

Me: I told your daughter I wouldn't help her. Wineka I'm not losing my family over this. I am going to tell Loyiso everything.

Wineka: You can't do that and you know it. they will disown you.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: even if they do at least I'll be free of you and your daughter needs to know what you are doing to her.

Wineka: You are not going to tell my daughter anything.

Me: If I lose my family then you lose your daughter.

There is so much that you don't know about her. I took some time and investigated her a bit which is why I decided against helping her get Qhawe because I realised your daughter doesn't love my son she never did. You are manipulating her to think she does. Your daughter has someone who cares a lot about her but because of you she can't see that and this man is the one that is going to tell Sindy about you not me. if you keep pushing your daughter towards Qhawe you will lose her.

Wineka: Is that a threat Siyanda?

Me: it's not a threat it is a fact my dear. Think about it.

Bare in mind that Sindiswa is not the first woman to go after Qhawe and Anelisa ended up being in jail for a very long time because she tried to kill Khanyi.

Wineka: that will not happen to my daughter.

Me: for an old woman you are very naïve Wineka. You are putting your daughter's life at risk because of money.

Look I'm not going to carry on with this conversation it is obvious you don't want to listen.  
Bye Wineka. Don't call me again.

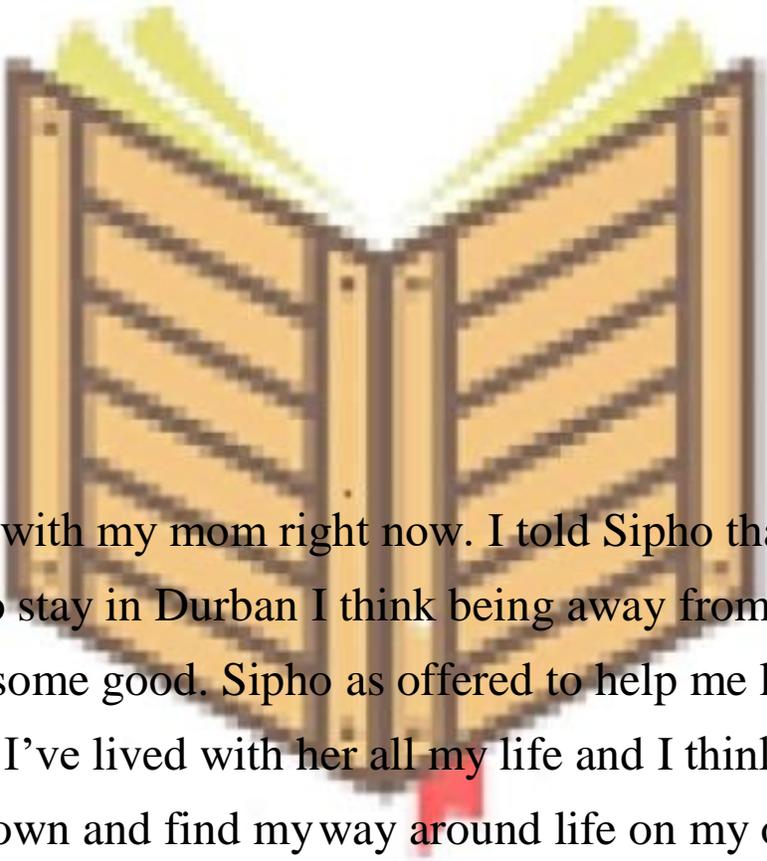
## CHAPTER 65

SUND

AY

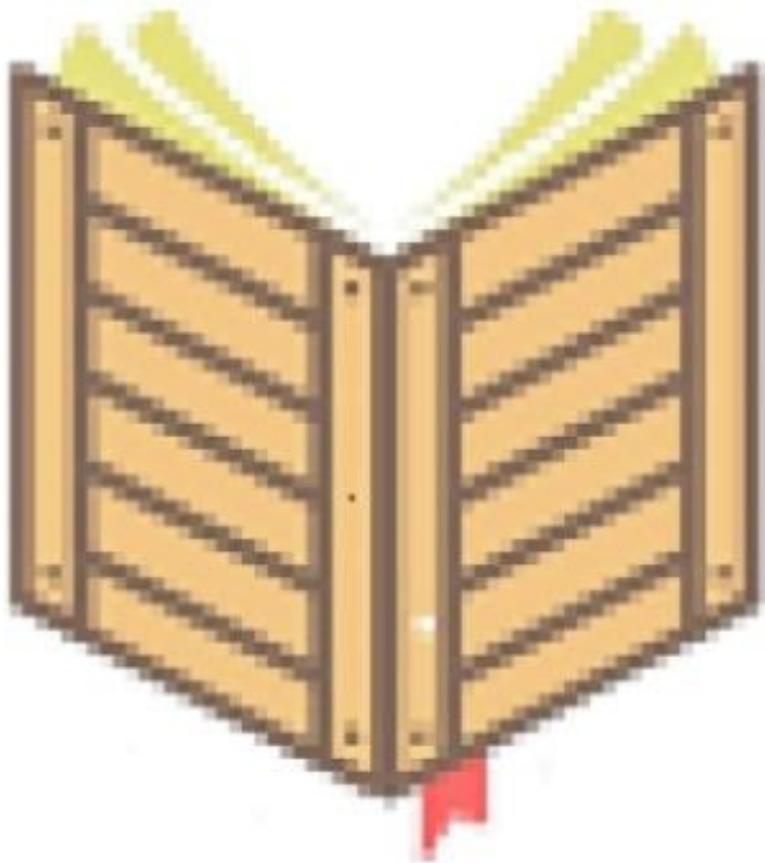
SINDIS

WA



I can't deal with my mom right now. I told Siphos that I might be looking into staying in Durban I think being away from my mother will do me some good. Siphos as offered to help me look for a job this decide. I've lived with her all my life and I think it's time I live on my own and find my way around life on my own. I know it won't be easy but I am going to make it. I'm still torn though a big part of me doesn't want to let go of Qhawe and I have this little voice in my head that keeps telling me to let it go but I can't seem to and my mother's phone calls are not helping and the worst part is that she's insisting on coming here. Sometimes I feel like something doesn't add up I'm always confused about

everything in my life most of the time I don't even know if I'm coming or going. My thoughts are interrupted by a knock on the door.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Hey

Sipho: hey may I come in?

Me: yes please come in. Would you like something to drink?

Sipho: not now maybe later. How are you doing Sindiswa? (he sits on the one sitter couch and makes himself comfortable. He is handsome and attractive.)

Me: I'm ok just confused about a lot of things.

Sipho: what things are those? (he pats his lap indicating I should sit on it. I do as he requests) Me: a lot of things Sipho especially when it comes to my mother. Sometimes I feel like she is not my mother. The way she treats me and the things she expects me to do are not things a mother would want her daughter to do. I know what I want out o life but I never get to do the things I want to do. It always feels like something is holding me back. Every time I take a step towards what I want it always feels like I'm three steps backwards.

Sipho: Tell me something do you feel the same way you felt about Qhawe when you arrived here?

Me: that's the thing Sipho I don't know. Right now I'm not sure of how I feel about him I am so confused. I also think that I'm in love with someone else but Qhawe is over shadowing everything. I had a crush on him in high school and i know I haven't felt anything for him until my mom started talking about him about almost a year ago.

Sipho: does your mom know you are confused about your feelings? Me: No she doesn't know

Sipho: don't tell her. I am going to tell you something that your mother has been doing to you. Me: What do you mean?

Sipho: Come with. (I stand and he stands and takes my hand we walk to my bedroom and out the sliding door and sit on the balcony.) Your mother is your mother. The way she has been treating you is because she is hungry for money. Your mother wants to be rich but she is using you to do that. The reason why she is able to control you like that is because she is giving you a certain type of anti-depressants without your knowledge. The pills she is giving you make it easy for her to manipulate you. They alter your moods and your neurotic system. I don't know much about these things but that's what I could manage to find out. (I am in shock right now about everything he is saying and looks like there's still a lot he wants to say I'm not saying anything at the moment just listening). Your mother lied to you about your father. Your father didn't leave you she left him. When he tried to be a part of your life she wouldn't let him. He wanted to have a relationship with you but she wouldn't allow him because he wasn't the rich

man she wanted. Back then your father earned minimum wage financially he did everything he could to take care of you but it was never enough to your mother. Your father is a successful man now he earns good money got married and he has been trying to get your mother to take you to him so that you can meet your other siblings. The busary you had at varsity. That was not a busary that was your dad paying for your fees

Sponsored



that was your dad paying for your fees but it had to be like that to hide it from your mom.

Me: Siphon how do you know all these things? (I am really amazed at what he is telling me right now and I don't even know what to say)

Siphon: I'm private investigator remember.

Me: Why now why are you telling me now I'm sure you've known for a long time

Siphon: You are right I've know for a while and I was hoping your mother would come to her sense and tell you the truth at least about your father but it seams like she is never going to do that. I'm telling you now because she is throwing you in the lions den. Khanyi is not to be played with Sindy. That woman is surrounded by men who would die protecting her and she would die protecting them. That is one family you don't want to

mess with and your mother has no clue who she is messing with. There is a lot more that you need to know but for now you need to digest what I have just told you.

Your father wants to meet you. He has been keeping an eye on you for a long time and I hope that when you guys do meet you will try and understand his side of the story.

Me: this is a lot to take in. how can my mother keep me away from my father and lie to me about it. What did I ever do to her to deserve all this.

Sipho: you are confused because the effect of the pills is waring off and soon you'll be able think straight.

Me: my mother wants to come this side Sipho. What am I suppose to do?

Sipho: let her come but if she does come you need to be careful you can't eat or drink anything she makes for you.

Me: that won't be easy Sipho. She is going to be suspicious of my sudden change. Sipho: Don't worry

we'll work something out.

## KHANYISILE

Ok this pregnancy is driving me crazy. I wake up in the middle of the night craving a peanut butter and jam sandwich with warm milk. Even Qhawe. It seems like this is our favourite food with this pregnancy. We are about to have a family meeting everyone is here. We are in the kitchen as usual and I'm making myself my favourite sandwich and Qhawe needs to get me my ice cream after this meeting.

Qhawe: Babe can we start? (he asks as I finish up making the food and take my sit next to him.) Me: yes my King we can start (I say taking a bite and everyone is looking at like I've gone mad.)

Guys this meeting is basically about business related issues not so much about family issues.

Firstly I am looking for my replacement as I am stepping down as CEO of my own

company. Reason for that is that I want to focus more on the businesses that your grandfather left you guys and I would like Qhawe to help with businesses since he knows more about them than I do and uncle Sizwe too but we'll talk to him about it when he comes over again.

Ntando: I don't mind if dad helps I would actually love that. at least in that way we will get to learn more about how the

business works and by the time we finish school we will be ready to run the businesses.

Sibahle: that is so true

Me: Ok guys since you know that I am pregnant from now on I'll be working from home and on weekends We'll be working on you businesses so that you know what's what.

Qhawe: I'm glad that you agree with the Proposal of me helping you out. Sibahle: well dad you don't really have a choice you just have to do it.

Qhawe: I know Princess and it's not going to be easy guys. Running a business is not easy. At least you are starting early in your lives thanks to your grandfather. We also had a choice to just let you study and after your studies you can start learning about the business but we thought it will be better this way. Plus with the babies coming we might just need your help here and there. Lonwabo: we will definitely help out when required to.

Lwanele: I would like to give Lisakhanya some shares from the hotel that grandpa left me. Qhawe: That's amazing princess how much were you thinking?

Lwanele: I don't know much about business but from what I know I would like to give her 20%. Lisakhanya: Nele are you about that?

Nele: Yes I'm sure

Lonwabo: Ntando and I we also want to give Sibahle and Zenande 20% each of our companies. (I can see the shock in the girls faces this is something they didn't expect and this is so overwhelming and I can feel my tears flowing down my face.)

Qhawe: Mama Bear are you ok.

Why are you crying? Me: it's all your fault.

Qhawe: what did I do now? Me: You made me pregnant.

Qhawe: Hayibo Khanyi it's not like you didn't want what was ..... (the kids don't let him finish)

Sibahle: ok dad I think you've said enough. There's kids in the room

Ntando: She's right. We really don't want hear how she got pregnant. We are still too young to be listening to those kind of stories.

(we go on with the meeting planning how everything will work out and we have decided to have these meetings at least once a month. The kids are happy we are happy and I pray and hope that our happiness is going to last.. I pray that no one will burst our family bubble.)

## CHAPTER 66

MONDAY

NCESH

Ever since Thando and I moved to Durban things have been so hectic. Settling in and setting up my nail salon has definitely not been easy because I decided to add a coffee to it and it looks

amazing. Bandile has been great too. He is an amazing guy and I really do love him. I hope he is the one because I'm really tired of kissing frogs now I hope he is my prince charming. Khanyi and Qhawe have also been very supportive. I can safely say life in Durban has been amazing so

far. Today was a very long day at the salon and it was very busy all I want to take a long bath relax and watch a movie until I fall asleep.

Bandile:

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

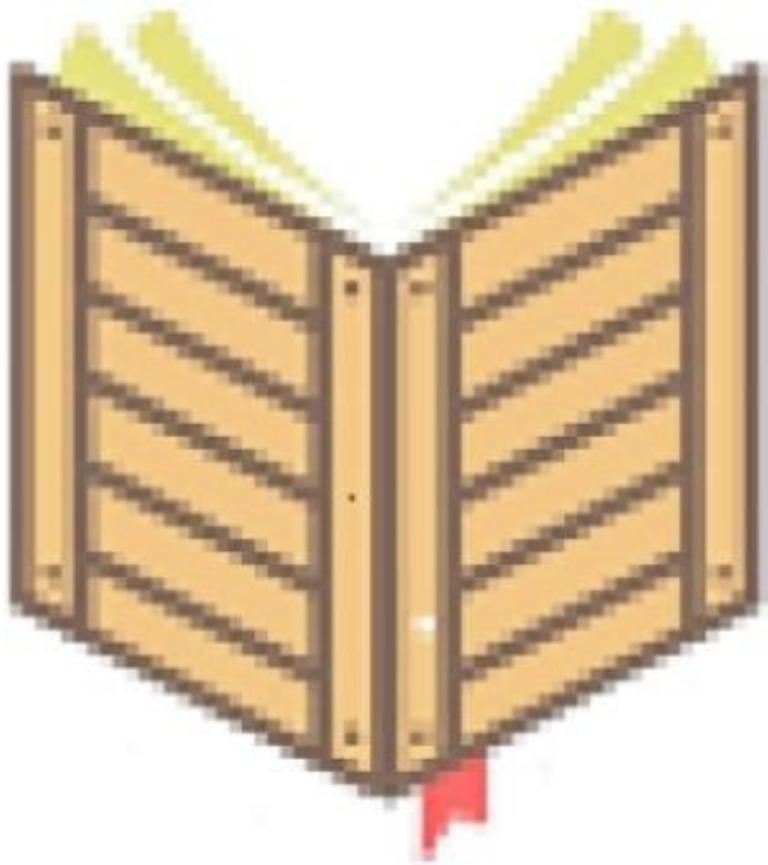
Ncesh

Me: Yes

babe

Bandile: come your bath water is ready and after that we are having dinner then a watch a movie until we fall

asleep.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: you read my mind that is exactly what I was thinking right now. (I walk up to him put my arms around his neck and stand on my toes to kiss him and he lowers his face to mine and kisses me.) Are you going to join me for a bath?

Bandile: Nope I've showered already enjoy your bath and relax. I'll check on the food in the mean time. (he kisses my forehead and walks out of the room. I take my bath and soak myself in it. I can't stop thinking about Sindiswa there's something very familiar about her. She actually looks like someone I've seen before and I just can't put my finger on it. The picture of her that I saw on facebook reminded me of that. Khanyi also told me that she hasn't bothered them now in a while and I hope it stays like that. Khanyi and Qhawe really have a lot on their plates lately. They don't need the likes of Sindy to be interfering with their lives. That was a nice long bath as I walk downstairs Bandile is walking up.)

ME: I was just coming to you.

Bandile: and I was going up to check on you.

ME: let's go to the kitchen. This habit of Khanyi and the family eating in the kitchen is rubbing off on me. I actually

like it.

BAndile: I fell in love with it the first time I went to her house. Lwazi and I ate there a lot and she made us buy groceries. Apparantly everyone pitches in when it comes to groceries.

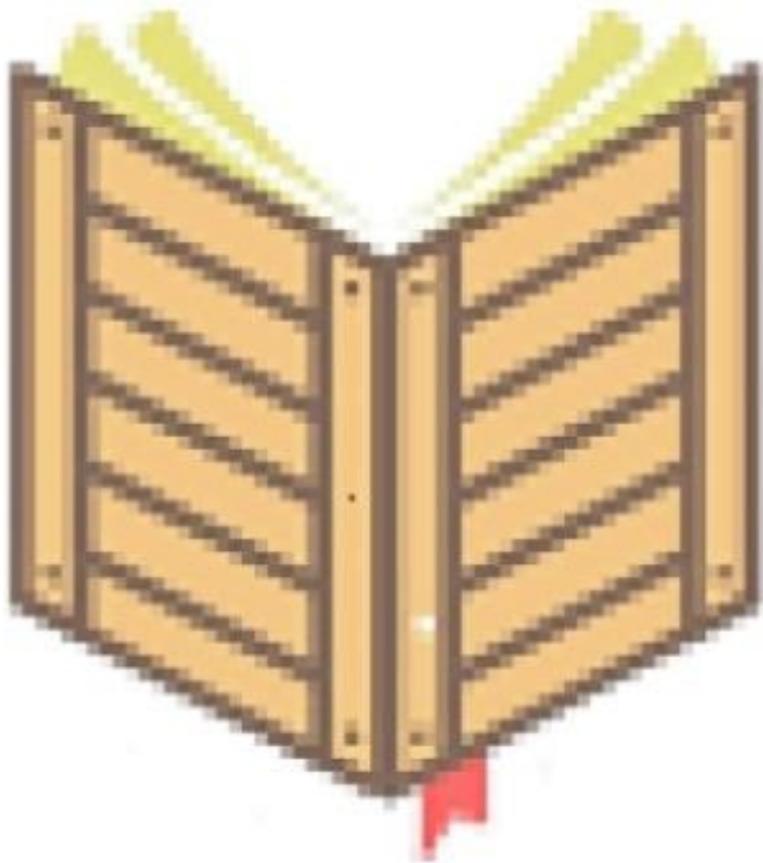
Me: I don't blame her you guys eat a lot.

Bandile: "mxm" let us be. (I just laugh at him.) there something I want to say Me: what is that?

BAndile: the first day I saw you; you took my breath away. I couldn't stop looking at you and I told myself that I am going to make you mine and I did. Ncebakazi Nzolo I love you. You have become my life line I can't breathe without I can't live without you I need you to be a part of my life for an eternity. You are it for me in you I found what I have been looking for. (he moves his chair closer to mine and turns me making me face him and he puts his forehead on mine.) Will you do me the honor of being my wife be a mother to my kids. (right now I am speechless I just have tears streaming down my face and he keeps wiping them. ) I don't want anyone else but you Ncesh please be my wife

Me: I love you too so so much and yes I will marry you.

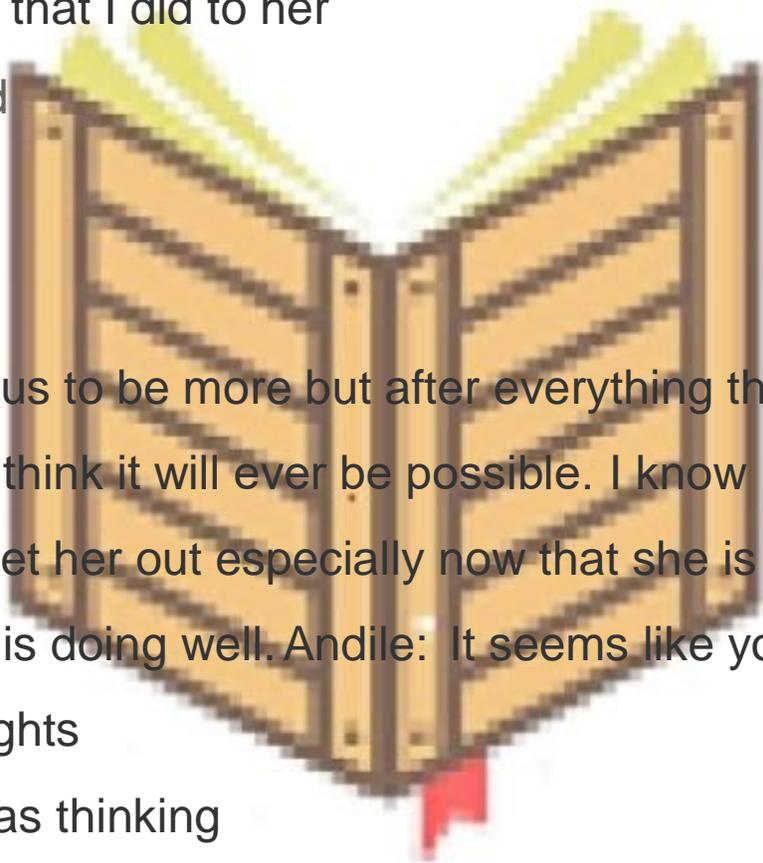
SIZWE



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Anelisa and the baby are doing well she is five months pregnant. A lot has changed between us. We are getting closer with each visit. The baby kicks every time I'm visiting them. I don't know what to make of the closeness. I know for sure that I care about her and I still want more I still want us to be more but after everything that I did to her

Sponsored



I still want us to be more but after everything that I did to her I don't think it will ever be possible. I know I have an option to get her out especially now that she is doing well. She really is doing well. Andile: It seems like you are in deep thoughts

Sizwe: I was thinking

about Anelisa Eddie:

What about her

ME: we are getting closer with each visit and I believe that she has moved past Qhawe she is really focusing on herself and the baby. I found myself kissing the last time I was visiting her. after everything that I've done to her I

NOVELSGURU.COM

don't think she would want to be with me and I understand that fully. I know it sounds crazy.

Andile: it doesn't sound crazy at all.

Eddie: it sounds to me like you care about her you might even love her.

Andile: Eddie is right I think you may love her and her love may just be what you need and your love may just be what she needs.

Eddie: we meet the ones we love in the most unexpected ways and unexpected places look at Khanyi and Qhawe. Look at me and Elza. Your story with Anelisa is the same as mine you know that and look at us now. we've never looked back at what happened. We spoke about it and understood why it happened and today we love each other like there's no tomorrow. We find love with the most unlikely person as well.

Andile: Look at me and Ibanathi our story may not be hectic as yours but it shows that where there is love any thing is possible and you can see that around the family that we have. When Khanyi met us it was just work but as time went on we became the family that we are the family you recently joined and that is all because of her love.

Zwelibanzi may have been a monster to her but he never destroyed the love she has in her she didn't allow him to.

Me: I here you guys. I just have to be sure of what I feel for her.

Eddie: You know exactly what you feel for her just go and talk to her and clear the air. Me: I think you are right. I should just go talk to her it won't hurt talking to her right.

Andile: You sound like you are scared of talking to her about this.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: the problem is that before everything that happened I wanted her to give me a chance but she was so obsessed about Qhawe she ended up braking up with me. I think she is over him though she is over the obsession. I think she has realised that she can't have him.

Eddie: She knows she can't have him and she knows deep down in her that she loves you and I'm sure she is as afraid as you are. Just go talk to her and take it from them

Me: Thank you for listening. I'll talk to her.

QHAWE

Khanyi wanted to go to the beach. It's funny how she always wants me next to her. I really don't know how I am going to manage work and her needs for the next 8 months. Andile offered to take her to the beach while I was at work and she didn't want to hear it. She told him she would wait for me to come back and here we are on our way to the beach. I didn't even change my clothes.

Khanyi: why didn't you change your clothes my King I

would have waited.

Me: I didn't want to keep my Queen waiting any longer she's been waiting the whole day for this. (she looks at me and smiles. Seeing her smile like that warms my heart. I never thought I would love again I never thought I would want to get married again but right now when I look at her I don't see anyone else in my life she is all I want. The mother of my unborn babies.)

Khanyi: I appreciate that you are here. I just wanted to spend time with you.

Me: and I'm glad that I am here. (my phone beeps and it's a message. {You were promised to another and you will be hers. Enjoy your little fling while it lasts.} Ok what the hell is this what's going on here I just froze looking at my phone and I just don't know what to say to her)

Khanyi: Babe what's wrong?

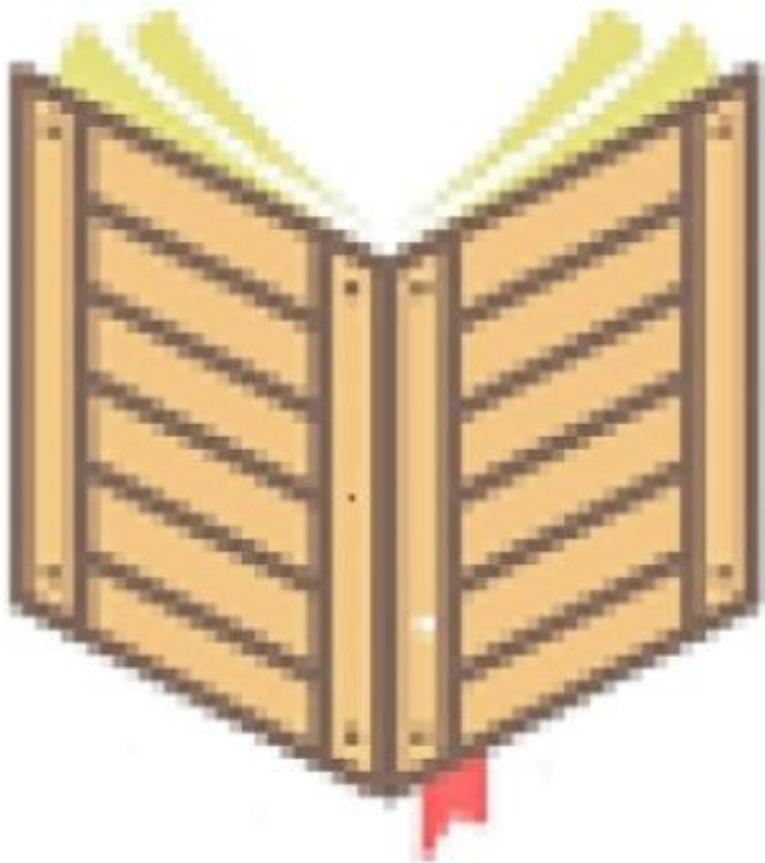
Me: Honestly I don't know. I am confused right now. (I just take my phone and hand it to her to read the message.

Khanyi: why can't we just be left alone. I'm pregnant for crying out loud I don't need this shit. We should have the guys trace the number. What do they mean you were

promised to another?

Me: You know what lets deal with this tomorrow right now I want my Queen to enjoy her walk on the beach. Race you to the ice cream shop.

Khanyi: No way you are going to cheat. You can carry me on your back.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I can do that. (I crouch for her) come climb on (she does as she is told and gets on my back and I walk towards the ice cream shop and she whisper an “I love you” in my ear.) I love you too baby.

The guys need to find who sent me this message. I can't have Khanyi going through difficulties with this pregnancy. I'll never understand why our happiness is so shortlived.

## CHAPTER 67

TUESDAY

NKOSIKHONA (KHAYA AND LINA'S FATHER) ALSO KNOWN AS THE SPERM DONOR

\*  
\*  
\*

Things are really not going well for me. My wife told me a long time ago to be a part of my kids' life. Khanyi has begged me for so long to be part of their lives that's all she ever asked of me. Never asked me for money harassed me about what the kids need all she ever wanted from me was to have a relationship with them and I couldn't even do that. I don't know why I was so stubborn at the same time pride got the

better of me. Now my kids are calling another man “dad”. This guy stepped up and became a father to my kids not even her ex-husband was this

close to my kids. This man stepped when I couldn't or rather wouldn't. My family wants to meet my kids and they said that the kids need to be introduced to my ancestors. My family is also very angry with me that I never brought the kids to meet them. My uncles are on my case they even want to talk to Khanyi themselves and I know Khanyi won't have any of that. My wife walks in she is such a humble woman just like Khanyi but she is angry with me at the moment about the choices I made regarding the kids and I don't blame her because she never tried to keep me away from Lina and Khaya.

Her: Your uncles and your sister will be here soon.

Are you ready for them? Me: I'll never be ready for this meeting they are going to crucify me for this.

Her: you brought it upon yourself my love and now you have to face the consequences. You'll be fine don't worry.

Me: Khanyi will never agree to this this is one decision she we never leave up to the kids this once decision she'll never allow them to make on their own.

Her: Can you blame her Nkosi. You can't blame her she tried by all means to make you a part of their lives I tried too but you let your pride get in the way.

Me: I know that and right now I don't need you to remind me of what I did. We need a solution to all this.

Her: you have a solution and the solution needs you to put your pride aside and beg that woman. She is not heartless she wouldn't want to see you suffer.

Me: that's what you don't understand. She is fed of people taking advantage of her kindness she is at the point where she doesn't give a damn about what happens to me. (there's knock at the door and I know it's my uncles and my sister. My wife lets them in. My sister walks up to me and hugs me I know my uncles they won't even greet me that's how mad they are with me.)

Me: Molweni Malume (hello uncle)

Uncle Nceba: Nkosikhona you know why we are here. What is going on?

Me: It's like I told you over the phone uncle. Khanyi doesn't want to have anything to do with this she is refusing to let kids come here.

Uncle Nceba: That's because you are stupid. Why didn't you do as she asked look at the situation now.

Uncle Mxolisi: Now we have to go and talk to her ourselves for something you should have done a long time ago. Your parents

died wanting you to bring those kids home. Do you even know that your parents saw your kids at least once a month before they died (that's news to me I didn't know.) Even your sister gets to see the kids from time to time. Your parents could have done the ceremonies for your kids but their mother refused saying that if you are not part of their lives then what's the point. Uncle Nceba: you are lucky she never told the kids you died.

You are lucky she had the heart to tell them about you and their family at least they know where their roots are.

Sbongile: Nkosikhona I'm your sister and I love you but the honest truth is that you can be very stupid and what you did with the kids was stupid.

Uncle Mxolisi: You know that things will only get worse for you. The ancestors are very angry with you.

Me: how did my parents manage to see the kids and they never told me about that.

Uncle Nceba: why would they tell you anything when it is obvious that you don't care. Even now you are only making these efforts because you need to fix your problems and I don't even know why we are bothering with you. We should just let you be and you can suffer.

Me: Uncle Nceba please you can't speak like that Khanyi has to allow this otherwise my family will suffer.

Sbongile: You are being selfish Nkosi you can't expect her to do anything for you. Me: she has too. She has too those are my kids too.

Sbonginile: no they are not you were never there for them so they are not your kids.

Uncle Mxolisi: You will have to give us her address tomorrow we'll go see her and we have to go there without telling her that we are coming because she will refuse to see us. Your wife will be coming too.

Me: Hayibo malume(uncle) what is Nokhaya going to do there?

Uncle Nceba: she can tell Khanyi that she never kept you away from your kids maybe just maybe that will soften her heart.

ME: I doubt very much. I have to go. I'll see you guys later.

\*

\*

\*

**KHAYI**

**SILE**

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*

\*

\*

I'm at the office today with Khaya. The new CEO is starting today. I don't have an assistant anymore. Ibanathi has started in his new post as the CFO. I don't know how I'm going to get

through this day without Ibanathi.

Qhawe: What's wrong?

Me: Just thinking about how I'm going to get through this day without ibanathi.

Qhawe: You'll be fine my darling. I'm here you have nothing to worry about. (the new guy walks in just as Qhawe was kissing me. Doesn't he know about knocking.)

Him: I'm sorry the door was

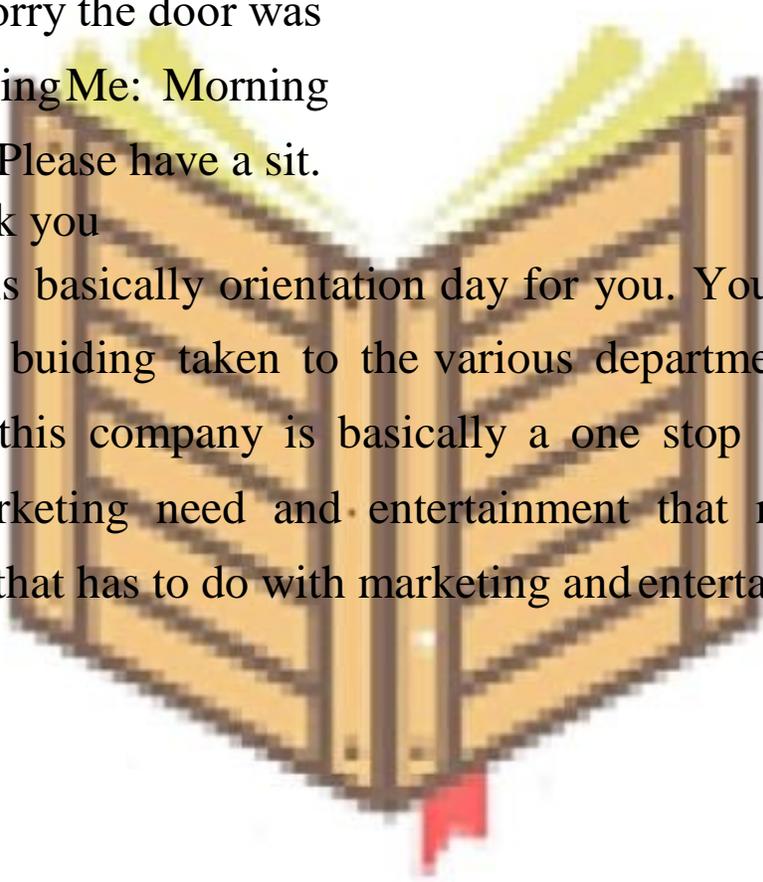
open. MorningMe: Morning

to you too. Please have a sit.

Him: Thank you

Me: today is basically orientation day for you. You'll be shown around the buiding taken to the various departments. As you know that this company is basically a one stop shop for our clients' marketing need and entertainment that mean we do everything that has to do with marketing and entertainment

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

that mean we do everything that has to do with marketing and entertainment also public relations. All the departments have their HOD's those are the people you will be working closely with. You will be introduced to everyone today that is what we are going to do next. There's only one project that you are not going to work with and that is the QM Architectures project.

Him: May I ask why?

Qhawe: that's her project she is the only one who can work on it. the client personally asked for her to work on the project.

Him: Ok. I understand.

Qhawe: I actually need to go up to marketing I need to talk to them about something. I'll see you later.

Me: Ok. I'll be in the boardroom doing introductions. (he kisses my forehead and walks away.) It's time for you to meet the people you will be working with. You have your own office. You won't be using this one. This will remain office and I'll pop in to check on things atleast once a week until you find your feet. If there's anything you don't understand you can always call me. (When we get to the boardroom all the HOD's were there.)

Morning guys.

Them: Morning Lady K (I just smile at them)

Me: As you know I have stepped down as the CEO and today I

am introducing you to the new guy and I hope you will show him the same respect you showed me and work well together. This is Mcebisi Mkhize as from today he is the new CEO. You will have to show him around show him how everything works around here. I leave him in your cable hands.

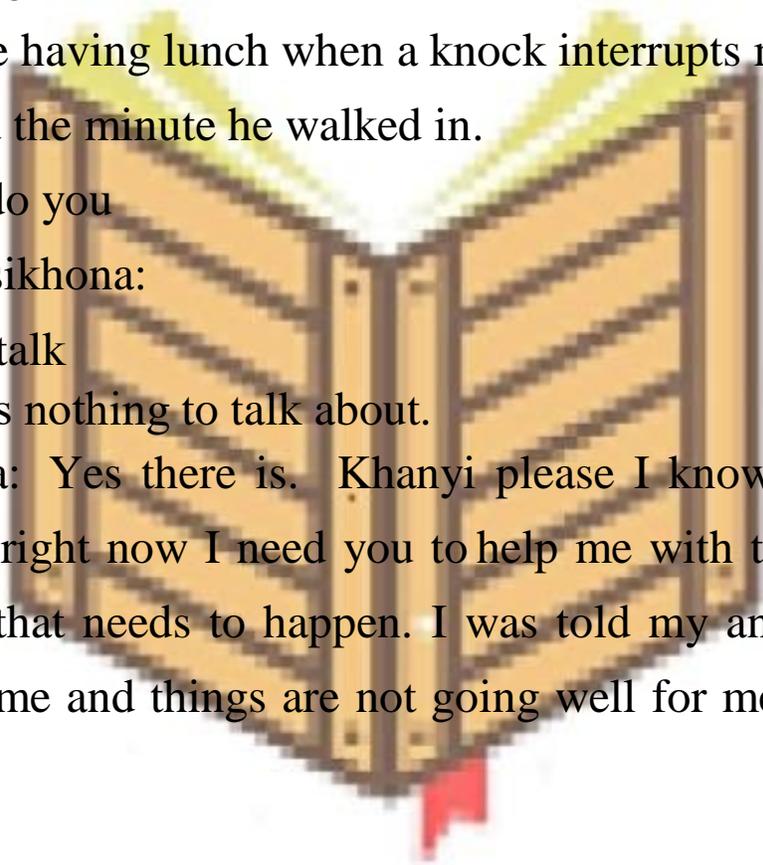
(the day went on handing over to Mcebisi until lunch time and Qhawe had gone back to his office he had a client. I'm sitting in my office having lunch when a knock interrupts me. I just got irritated the minute he walked in.

Me: What do you want? Nkosikhona:

we have to talk

ME: there's nothing to talk about.

Nkosikhona: Yes there is. Khanyi please I know I did you wrong and right now I need you to help me with this. This is something that needs to happen. I was told my ancestors are angry with me and things are not going well for me. I need to do this.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: basically you are being selfish you want this so things can right for you kumnandi ukubanguwe mos. (it's nice to be you mos)

Nkosikhona: it's not like that Khanyi. I want to be a part of their lives I want to be a father to them

Me: Don't you think it's a bit too late for that? Nkosikhona:

No it's not.

Me: You see Nkosikhona first you wanted them to forgive you and they did and you disappeared probably things were going well for you then and now things are getting worse and now you need my kids again. Do you really think that I am that foolish Nkosikhona. Do you really I am going to let you use my kids like that. My kids don't have issues they are fine. Go deal with your ancestral issues somewhere else and leave my kids out of your troubles.

Nkosikhona: I can't do that I need ( he doesn't finish what he is about to say and I scream

from the pain in my lower abdomen going around my lower back.) Khanyi what's wrong. Me: Aaaaahhhh (the pain intensifies and just then Mcebisi walks in.)

Mcebisi: what's wrong?

Me: Take me to the hospital now. Aaaaahhhhhhhhhh. It hurts.

Mcebisi: come (he carries and walks out of the office and to the elevataor when we get to the car he drives off.)

Me: give me your phone (he hands it to me without asking

any questions and dial Qhawe's number and he picks up immediately)

Me: I'm on my way to the hospital

Qhawe: What's wrong baby why are you going to the hospital

Me: I think.... Aaaaaaaaahhhhhhhhhh shit" I think

something is wrong with the babies Qhawe: I'm on my way there I'll meet you there. I love you my Queen hang in there everything is going to be fine.

Me: it hurts my King it hurts so much.

Qhawe: I know baby you guys are going to be ok.

Me: I think I'm bleeding I'm scared baby. I can't lose these babies

Qhawe: You won't lose them. That is our miracle it won't be taken from us.

Mcebisi: We are here (he gets me out of the car and carries me in and calls for help and I see a nursing rushing to us and it's Lungi)

Me: we are at the hospital please hurry I need you here. ( ooooouuuch) Qhawe: I'm almost there hang in there my Queen

Lungi: take the phone (she says looking at Mcebisi) What's wrong?

Me: I think something is wrong with the babies Lungi. It hurts  
Lungi I can't lose my babies Lungi.

Lungi: I promise you won't. Where is Qhawe?

Mcebisi: I think he is coming. I think she was  
speaking to him on the phone. (the doctor walks in  
and gives something for the pain)

Doctor: You are going to be fine. The babies will be fine.

## CHAPTER 68

STILL

TUESDAY

QHAWE

I drove like crazy to the hospital worried about my people. What  
could have happened to

her. she was perfectly fine when I left her at her office. When I  
get to the hospital I see Mcebisi. ME: Where is she

Mcebisi: they took her in. I've been waiting ever since. (just

then Lungi walked up to us) Lungi: Hey you can go wait in the  
waiting room the doctor is still busy with her.

Me: What's wrong with her Lungi?

Lungi: I'm not sure but I promise I'll update you as soon as I  
know anything. Don't worry she is going to be fine the babies  
will be fine. Just take a sit and breathe I don't want you having  
another panic attack.

Me: I can't lose them Lungi I just can't.

Lungi: And you won't. I'll be back (and she walks away. I take a sit and right now I don't feel like talking to anyone. I can't lose them I just can't. I take my phone and call Bandile)

\*\*\*\*\* phone

conversation\*\*\*\*\*

Bandile: what's up man?

Me: She's in hospital man. Khanyi is in hospital. She called crying that she is pain. I don't know what happened.

Bandile: we are on our way.

\*\*\*\*\*

She can't lose the babies. Those babies are our miracle. Why is it that everytime we start enjoying our relationship something has to happen to ruin our happy moment. When does it stop. I need her to hang in there I need her to be strong for the babies. Everyone would be

broken should anything happen to her and those babies. It didn't take Bandile and Lwazi to arrive they must have been close by.

As soon as they see me in the waiting room they walk up to me.

Bandile: we are here. What happened ? (I turn to look at Mcebisi with a raised eyebrow wanting him to explain.

Mcebisi: I don't know what happened. I was in my office when she screamed in pain and I ran to her office to check and she was with some other guy and she looked very angry at him.

She just told me to bring her to the hospital which is what I did.

Lwazi: would you be able to identify this guy if you saw him again.

Mcebisi: Yes I would. In fact it won't have to take that long because he just walked in. (I've never actually met this guy but I've seen him in photos. What was he doing in Khanyi's office. He was told to never go back there. I need to keep calm right now. He is holding Khanyi's bag in his hand

Me: what are you doing with that?

Nkosikhona: this idiot left it in her office when he carried her out.

Mcebisi: who are you calling an idiot when you were just standing there while she cried out in pain. I have a good mind to connect my fist with your face right now.

Qhawe: so you are standing here calling the man who saved the mother of my kids an

idiot. What were you doing in her office? (I'm angry right now and I just want to punch him)

Lwazi: Qhawe you need to keep your cool I don't want you getting arrested for assault.

Qhawe: No Lwazi this man needs to explain himself. He knows he is not allowed anywhere near Khanyi. What was he doing in her office.

Mcebisi: someone needs to let me deal with this fool. Bandile:

Nkosikhona you need leave right now.

Nkosikhona: I am not going anywhere. She is the mother of my kids and I need to know if she is ok.

Qhawe: You don't need to know anything about her and as far as I am concerned you don't have kids. I am the father to those kids. The only man they know as their father and that is how it is and it's how it's going to stay. Leave right now

Nkosikhona: like I said I am not leaving and those kids are mine.

Qhawe: hee iyadelele lendoda Bandile and ndizoyibetha ibize umama wayo makahambe apha. (I'll beat him up until he cries for his mother he needs to leave.)

“Yes you are leaving you have no right to be here. I don't see any of your kids here and the woman in there had a sperm donor.” That was Khaya walking in with Eddie Andile and Sizwe.

Nkosikhona: How can you say you that? You are my son.

Khaya: I'm not your son. I'm his son (he says that pointing at me) I'm only your son because you want something. If you don't mind please leave us in peace. (Nkosikhona walks up to Khaya but Mcebisi grabs his arm pulls him back.)

Mcebisi: I believe you were told to leave now step off. Nkosikhona: let go of my arm

Eddie: Nkosikhona leave while you still can. The child you claim to be yours has asked you to leave you are not welcomed here.

Andile: and if you think about coming back here again you will get what's coming to you. Sizwe: You are not needed here. I don't know what more you want and I believe Khanyi told you to never come back but you keep coming back and I'm telling you now you are digging your own grave.

Nkosikhona: Sizwe stop thinking you are the father to my kids.

Sizwe: You see that's where you are getting wrong. I don't think I am. I am a father to them I'm even a better uncle. I was there for those kids all their lives so as for you to walk in here and claim to be their father is an insult to us men who stepped up and played a role of a father in their lives. (Sizwe is very calm but you can tell he is very angry and walks up to him very slowly) I want you to understand that Qhawe is Khaya's father. When Khaya was going through shit blaming himself for you

not being a part of his life Qhawe was there (Khaya is not ok right now he is hurt and I think Mcebisi noticed and he just grabbed Khaya and got him out of the room.) I was there when he didn't know how to deal with life when he didn't understand why his father didn't want him and his sister. Qhawe picked up the pieces when Khaya broke down started hanging out with wrong crowd drinking excessively using drugs. Qhawe was the man getting the midnight calls to fetch Khaya at some bar because he was too drunk to drive home. Qhawe was there helping Khanyi with Khaya back then she didn't even know about him. She didn't even know she would end up dating him. Eddie and Andile were there protecting the kids you claim to be yours for the past four years. Bandile and Lwazi came into the picture and became the uncles they never had. And now you are here claiming you have kids. Tell me something Nkosikhona who is their role model what is their favourite food?..

Bandile: what is their favourite tv show

Sponsored

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

what is their favourite food?..

Bandile: what is their favourite tv show their favourite snack their favourite PS game.

Me: What are their shoe sizes what do they hate the most what makes them cry their favourite restaurant their hobbies. You may have your blood running through their veins but you are nothing to them. As you see us here we are their family and trust me when I tell you that we would die for those kids and you will die before you even think of hurting them. Those are my kids they are my life and you have the balls to walk in here and claim what doesn't belong to you. Leave Nkosikhona right now before this gets ugly for you. And if anything happens to her and our babies that she is carrying I swear I will make you regret the day you were born.

Andile: Get out before I make you we don't need hospital security we can do it ourselves. So to save you the embarrassment you better leave.

Nkosikhona: This is not over. I'll be back. They are my kids. (I don't know what happened next thing I know Nkosikhona is on the floor trying to get up. Lwazi punched him. He punched him again as he tried to get up. He didn't give him a chance to get up and we all just stood there and watched.)

Lwazi: it's man like you that give the rest of us a bad name we are being called trash because of trash like you (The doctor walked in.)

Dr Nkosi: What's going on here?

\*

\*

\*

SINDIS

WA

\*

\*

\*

I decided to spend my day indoors today. I'm not feeling well at all. Siphos says I'm suffering from withdrawals of the antidepressants my mother has been giving me. He's been at my place everyday since I started feeling sick and even took me to a doctor. If I'm not better in a week the doctor will have to drain the drugs out of my system. He actually said that I could have suffered brain damage since my mother was giving me a very high dosage and the fact that I don't know how long she's been giving me the pills probably since I started living with her after varsity and that is a long time.

A knock interrupts me. When I open the door I can't believe she is standing on my door step. I don't remember giving her my address.

Me: mama what are you doing here

Wineka: Are you going to let me in? (I hesitate a bit but I let her in) Me: How did you know where I stay?

Wineka: you gave me your address. (I really don't remember doing that) Me: Ok. How long are you staying?

Wineka: Until you get Qhawe. It's time to be serious now. he was promised to you and you will have him. (I remember what Siphos told me that I must go along with everything she says like I used to and not question her.)

Me: alright then. (I have to tell Siphos that my mom is here. Another knock at the door and this time it's Siphos I walk up to him hug him and whisper in his ear that my mom is here before I let him in.)

Siphos: how long has she been here? Me: She just arrived.

Siphos: OK. Remember what you need to do? Me: Yes I do.

Act normal her normal that is.

Siphos: Hello ma (he greets as we walk into the lounge Wineka: Hello my boy and who are you?

Siphos: I'm Siphos ma and Sindy's friend I've been helping her with a few things this side before she goes home. When are you

going home Cindy?

Me: I don't know yet but it will be soon.

Wineka: there's no need for her to rush going home since her fiance' is here. Siphon: I didn't know you were engaged. (he looks at me and gives me a slight nod)

Me: Yes I am but it's complicated.

Siphon: Seeing that you have company let me go home. I brought you meds for your flu. Me: Thank you. I'll see you soon. (I walk him out and say my goodbyes.)

Wineka: Cindy we need to put our plan into action now before we run out of time. This needs to happen fast. Qhawe was promised to you a long time ago and you've been sidelined for too long now. The life the women in his life have been living is your life. It's the life you should be living with him but the only problem that we'll have with him is that he has kids and you are not ready to be a mother so maybe we can convince him to take the kids to boarding school. You don't have to worry about that Khanyi woman and her kids. I have a plan to get rid of her and then Qhawe will be all yours.

Me: what do you mean get rid of her? I hope you are not talking about killing her. Wineka: No we are not killing anyone you don't have to worry about that.

Me: as long as we are not killing anyone then I'm good. ( this is going to be harder than I thought. I am really not feeling this whole thing. Siphos really needs to come up with something and I so want to ask her about my father but that is going to ruin to everything she will know something is up since I hardly ever asked about him.

\*

\*

\*

SIP

HO

\*

\*

Sindy is really not safe with her mother and she has been doing so well and I can't have her taking those pills again or being in that state of mind where she can't think for herself. Right now I don't know what to do. If Sindy goes back to doing everything her mother tells her she will lose her life she might not die but she will lose in a bad way and I can't have her behind bars. I care too much to see her losing her life over someone who doesn't love her and her mother's greed. I don't why her mother doesn't just sell herself off the way she is selling off Sindy. I need help with this maybe I should give him a call I haven't spoken to him in a while and I think it's time I speak to him. I pick up the phone and call him.

\*\*\*\*\*phone conversation\*\*\*\*\*

ME: She is in danger man. Her mom just rocked up in town.

Him: How does this woman sleep at night knowing she is selling off her daughter to the highest bidder. Couldn't she find other ways to get rich

ME: Apparently she hasn't and she is a lazy old woman. I need to protect Cindy

Him: the only way to protect her is to tell the people they are trying to destroy the truth about what's going on.

Me: Cindy already got on their wrong side trying to get to the guy how is that going to help. Him: it will help trust me. They have to believe that she is innocent in all this that she is also a victim of circumstance.

Me: this is going to be difficult. You know that there is a lot involved here but I'll try. Him: You really care about?

Me: it's more than that I love her and she doesn't even see it.

Him: you have to tell her. you've been feeling like this

for a very long time now. Me: When this is all over

then I'll see about telling her.

Him: don't think about telling her just tell her that's the only way you will know how she feels about you.

Me: I hear you. Back to business. You need to connect me with someone in that family so that I can tell them what's going on.

Him: I'll hook you up with Khanyi. I'll talk to her and see when she can meet you. Me: I'll be waiting for your call.

## CHAPTER 69

WEDNESDAY

QHAWE

It's early hours of the morning and I can't sleep. I'm just sitting on this small couch watching my Queen sleep. The doctor said that she is going to be fine and the babies are fine too all of

them. She almost miscarried if Mcebisi didn't get here when he did we would have lost the babies. She needs to avoid stress and I don't know how we are going to do that when there's people like Nkosikhona who just pop up. I know for sure that he is the reason she is here whatever

he said to her led to her being here. I must remember to thank Mcebisi. His first day at work didn't go so well. I also need to talk to the guys about the sms I got and find out who sent that message. I love this beautiful soul in front of me right now and I can't let anything happen to her happen. I watch her as she slowly opens her eyes when she sees me she smiles and sits up and places her hands on her stomach and the smile changes to fear. I take her hand making get off the bed and make her sit on my lap.

Me: they are fine all five of them they are fine and you are also fine. (she places her arms around my neck and places her head on my shoulder.)

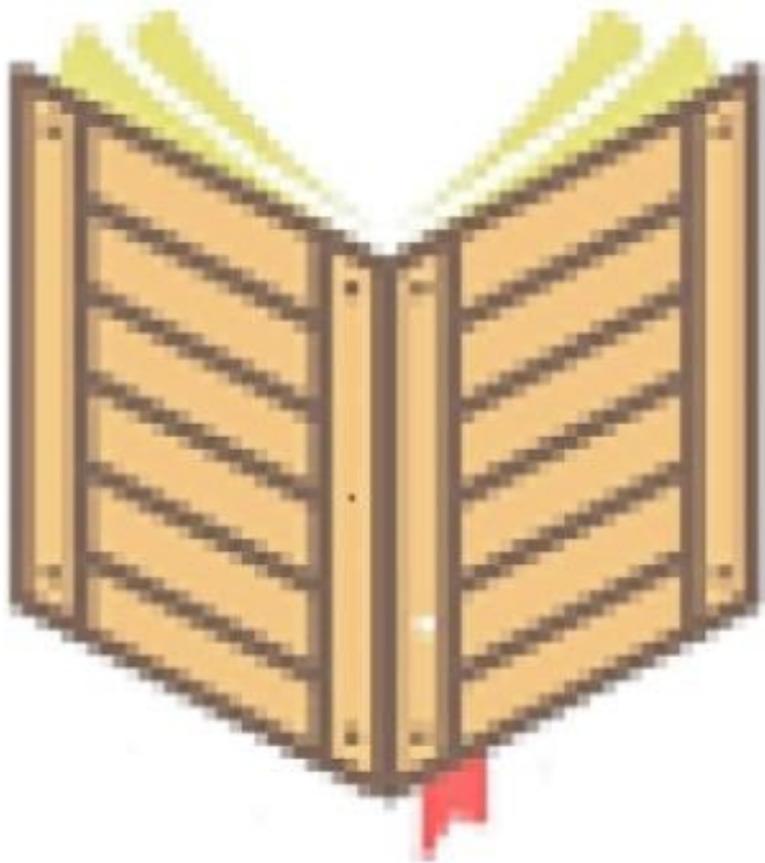
Khanyi: I was so scared that I was going to lose them. The pain was too much. I hate him Qhawe I hate him. I almost lost our little Boovs because him.

Me: don't worry about him. He'll be delt with. But really Khanyi you are calling my babies Boovs what if they come out purple? (she lifts her head to look at me and she just laughs at me.) Khanyi: Purple really babe. They won't come out purple just because I call them Boovs. They'll come out looking like their mom because they

are all Princesses and they are going to love the movie just like the rest of the kids. (she smiles and kisses my cheek)

Me: They can't all be girls Baby Girl at least one Prince.

Khanyi: there's enough man in this family more than women. So we need more girls.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: yhooh there goes my money  
on shopping sprees. Khanyi:  
don't be stingy they are your  
babies.

Me: Not when they are going to be spending too much  
money.

Khanyi: you should be worried about sleepless nights when  
they are born.

Me: yhooh there's that. No I'm going to relocate and  
come back when they are a year old (she looks at me and  
pouts and she is close to tears.) I'm joking Baby Girl I'll be  
here with you every step of the way. I've also been  
thinking about buying a farm (she takes my face in her  
hands and kisses me all over my face I'm guessing she is  
loving the idea) Also I have a suggestion. I haven't been  
to my house for a very long time now how about we just  
move in permanently in your house and make it official  
and if you are ok with that I want to sell the house.

Khanyi: I love the farm idea we should absolutely get it.  
I've always wanted one and I want horses too. As for  
moving in I thought you were never going to ask  
considering that my house is bigger and has a bigger yard  
I'm not sure about selling your house though. How about

we keep it and we can use it as a getaway house when we want to be alone.

Me: in that case how about a beach house in Mhlanga or maybe Shelly Beach  
Khanyi: I like Shelly beach.

Me: It is settled then beach house in Shelly Beach coming up. Khanyi:

Thank you my King (she kisses me)

Me: For what my Queen

Khanyi: For being who you are for being here for me everytime I need you for loving me for loving us for taking care of us. I am truly grateful to have you in my life. (I take her place her on the bed and stand between her legs looking down on her beautiful face she doesn't realise how easy she is making it for me to love her. I bend to her face and kiss her like there's no tomorrow. She lets go of me lies on her back and I continue kissing her. I stop when she moans softly in my mouth)

Qhawe: You make it so easy for me to do all these things and I am happy you are allowing me to take care of you. (she wraps her legs around my waist and pulls me in for a kiss)

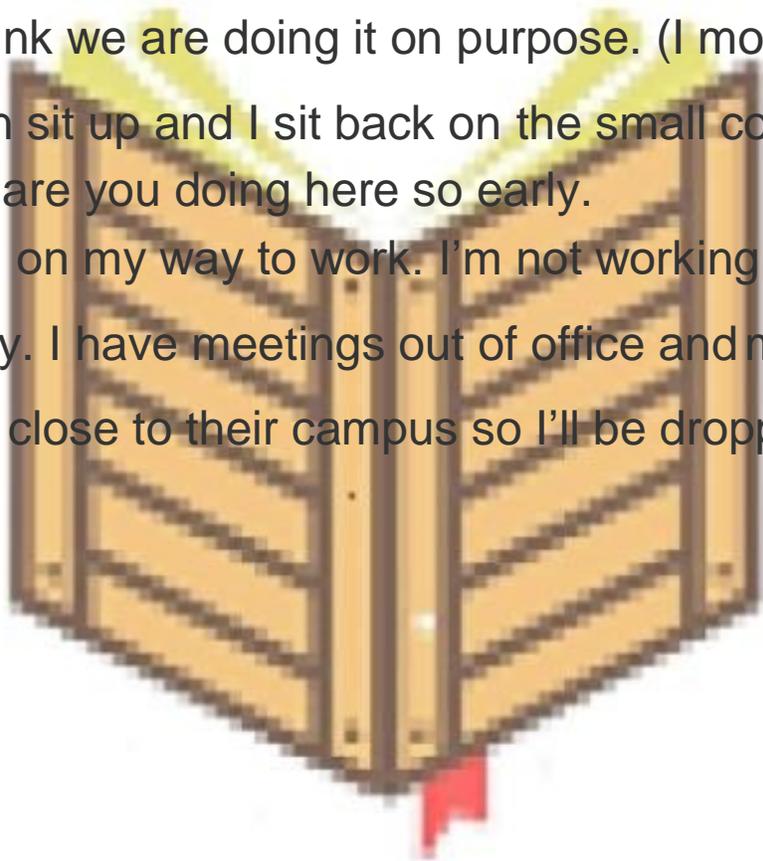
“And you wonder why you pregnant with so many babies.”

(that was Khaya and the twins. What are they doing here so early. It's not visiting hour yet. I swear the timing of these kids sucks)

Banele: How did you even get pregnant because we always walk in on you all over each other one would actually think we are doing it on purpose. (I move so that Khanyi can sit up and I sit back on the small couch.)

Me: What are you doing here so early.

Khaya: I'm on my way to work. I'm not working in the office today. I have meetings out of office and my first meeting is close to their campus so I'll be dropping them off.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: they normally drive themselves to campus.

Bandile: Dad what's the point of having a big brother if we can't use the privileges that come with having a big brother. Since big brother is dating a nurse it was easy to get in here that's another big brother privilege. (he smiles looking at me)

Banele: See what he means about Big Brother Privileges. (he says it with a mischievous smile on his face.)

Khaya: They are using me because they know I love them and I can't say No to them. Actually they are abusing me

Me: Do not abuse my son you two.

Banele: Eish Khaya you just had to be daddy's boy right now.

Khaya: See what I mean they even lack respect these days (he pouts and goes to sit next to his mom and places his head on her shoulder and pretends to cry. The twins just break out in laughter.)

Bandile: And how is our Queen and our little Boovs (they walk up to her and hug her)

Qhawe: You got them to call my babies Boovs too. This is not right. My babies are not Boovs. Khanyi: Nevermind your father here but we are fine. We are very fine. I'm sure we'll go home today. Banele: They are whatever we call

them dad. Mom it's good that you are ok. We always miss you when you are not home. The uncles are too much when you are not there. No one can keep them under control like you. Aunt Ncesh and Aunt Thando failed to do that dismally last night.

Khanyi: Did everyone sleep at our house last night. Khaya: yep they did.

Bandile: Uncle Eddie said we can't stay alone. He's exact words were "I know your father is going to sleep at the hospital. The man can't stay away from that woman. You guys can't sleep here alone.)

Banele: Uncle Lwazi agreed with him and that was it.

Khaya: You are going to be in trouble for getting your uncles in trouble by telling on them. We have to go otherwise I'll be late for my meeting. (they their mother goodbye and the hug me. I swear we are a crazy bunch of people..)

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*

\*

\*

SINDI

SWA

\*

\*

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

I hope the decision that I've made doesn't back fire on me. I've decided to tell Qhawe everything about why I was going after him and right now I am hoping he will agree to see me. At least my mother is out. I pick up the phone and call him:

\*\*\*\*\*Phone

conversation\*\*\*\*\*

Qhawe: Hello

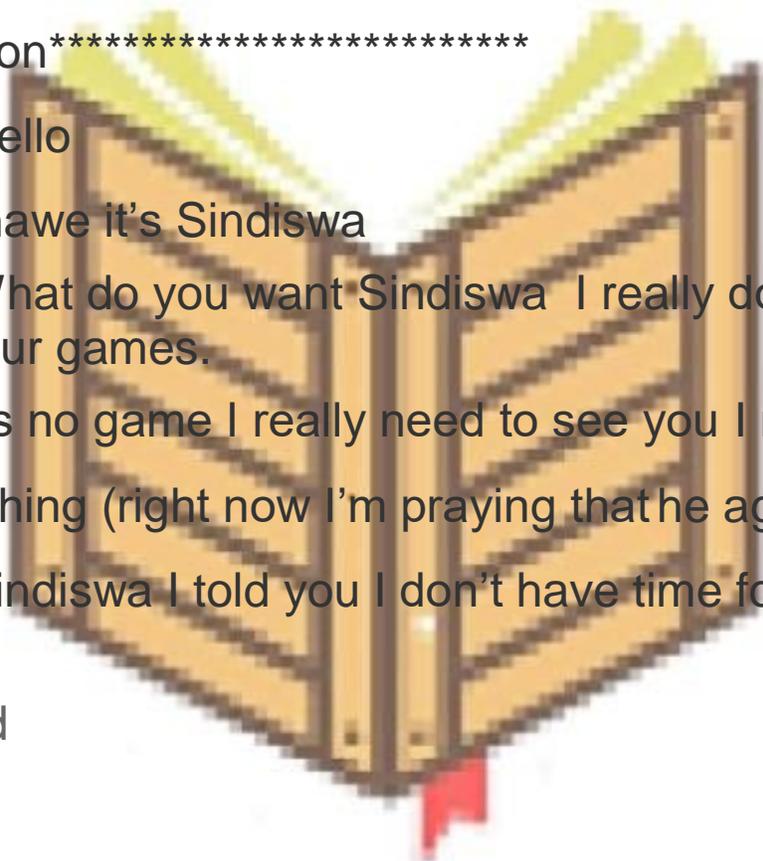
ME: Hi Qhawe it's Sindiswa

Qhawe: What do you want Sindiswa I really don't have time for your games.

Me: there's no game I really need to see you I need to tell you something (right now I'm praying that he agrees.)

Qhawe: Sindiswa I told you I don't have time for your games

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I am very busy so if you don't have anything else to say bye

ME: Qhawe wait I swear this is not a game not even a trick. Please Qhawe this is important. It's not about us.

Please I'm begging you.

Qhawe: fine. Where are you?

Me: we can meet at the La

Lucia mall at Wimpy. Qhawe:

fine be there in two hours.

ME: Thank you (he hangs up)

\*\*\*\*\*

I really can't do this with my mom. Pretending to agree with everything she says is going to be harder everyday. I can't do it and I can't wait for Siphos to come up with a plan. How am I ever going to forgive my mother for this how am I going to move on with my life how am I going to heal from this. My mom walks in that was quick I thought she was going to be out for a while.

Me: that was quick. Where did you go?

Wineka: I just went for a walk I need to clear my head and think things through. Me: and did it work.

Wineka: yes it did.

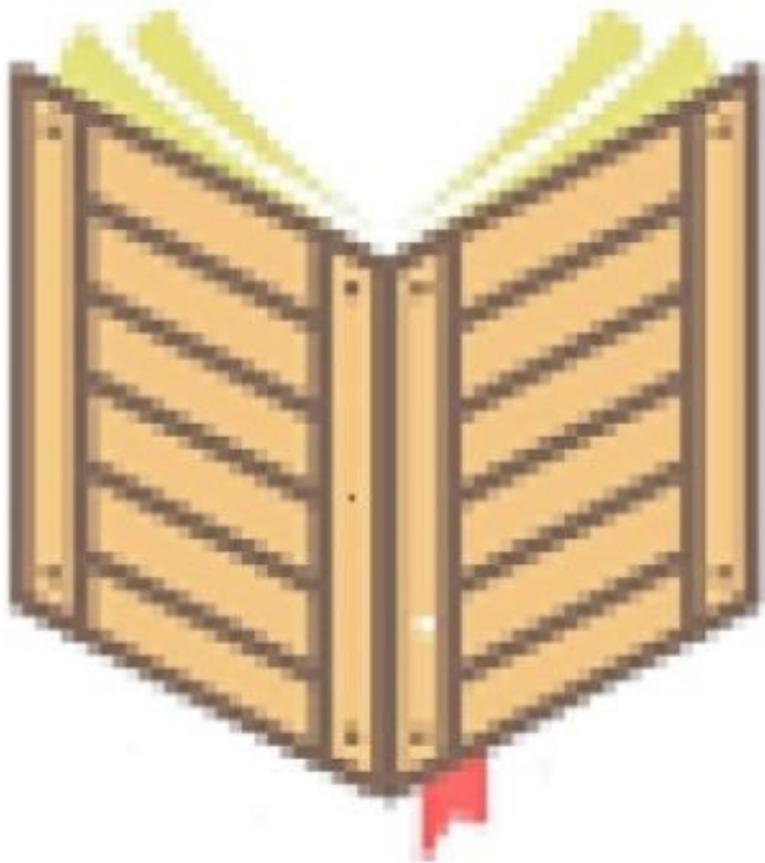
ME: ok but I have to go. I have a date with

Qhawe in less than two hours. Wineka: Oh

really that's great.

Me: it looks like he is having a change of heart. He called

earlier asking to see me. (she is actually believing my lies)  
Wineka: looks like he's making things easy for my plan.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I have to go mama. I'll see you later.

\*

\*

TWO HOURS LATER

\*

\*

He walks in at Wimpy and I stand and wave so that he can see me. Khanyi is very lucky. Qhawe: Sindiswa

Me: Hi let's sit. Would you like something to eat

Qhawe: well I won't say no to free food. (he calls for a waitress) Me:

How are you?

Qhawe: I'm good and you?

(ok he is being civil) Me: I'm good.

Waitress: Morning My name is Anele and I'll be your waitress. May I take your order ME: I'll have the Sunrise breakfast with a well done egg and a cuppacino

Qhawe: I'll have the Streaky with a soft egg and after that I would like you to bring me a peanut butter and jam sandwich apricot jam please with decaf cuppacino

Waitress: We don't have that on the menu sir I'll have to

ask my manager.

Qhawe: Please bring your manager I'll talk to him. (the waitress nods and walks away.) I'm sure I'm not here for the food so please tell me why I am here.

Me: it's about us (he attempts to stand and leave) Please sit it's not like that. Just hear me out. (he sits and waits for me to speak. The waitress comes with the manager before I could say anything) Qhawe: Sabelo how are you doing?

Sabelo: I'm good man. I heard you wanted to see me what's up

Qhawe: Can you guys make a peanut butter and jam sandwich you can charge it up as one of the sandwiches you have on the menu.

Sabelo: that's not a problem for you I can do that. you are actually the only person I would do that for. Anyway I never new you as a man who eats peanut butter sandwiches what happened.

Qhawe: Got my Queen pregnant. (Sabelo guy laughs and looks at me) Sabelo: and this?

Qhawe: don't worry this is business. You know I would never do her like that.

Sabelo: Yeah I know. Just had to ask. Catch you later man. I'll have them make your sandwich. (he walks away and the waitress brings our food.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: My mom has been drugging me with anti-depressants probably ever since after varsity when I moved back home. During my final year I went home for the December holidays with plans of coming back to Durban and find myself a job related to what I studied but I never left home I found myself doing everything my mother told me to do I found myself being very obedient to her and not questioning anything she tells me to do. right now I'm detoxing hence I am able to think for myself and make decisions for myself. It's not me who wants you Qhawe it's my mother. She wants me to be Mrs Mtimkhulu only because you have money. This is what she has been making me do all my life selling me off to rich man. Two years ago I ended up in a psych ward because the guy she wanted me to be with didn't want me. The guy almost had me arrested because I couldn't let him go because my mother kept pushing me to him.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Qhawe: so what you are saying is that your mother has been giving you these pills to manipulate and make you submissive to whatever she says

ME: Yes that's what I'm saying(I continue telling him everything including the plan my mom has. Qhawe: is she

really your mother how could she do all this to her own child. Where is your father Sindiswa: I don't know Qhawe but I know I'll meet him soon.

Qhawe: I'll speak to Khanyi and the guys and see what we can do to help you.

Me: thank you. (he takes out his phone and shows me a message and the number is my mother's number.)

Qhawe: is this your mother's number?

Me: Yes it is. When did you get the message?

Qhawe: the day before yesterday. What does she mean by me being promised to you. Sindiswa: I really don't Qhawe. She said the same thing to me and when I asked her she didn't answer me.

Qhawe: Ok. I'll let you know what we come up with. I have to go we'll talk later.

## CHAPTER 70

### STILL WEDNESDAY

\*

\*

\*

QHA

WE

\*

\*

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Hey beautiful

Khanyi: You are back. Hi

babe how did it go?Me: it was

definitely not what we thought.

Khanyi: What do you mean?

Me: Firstly what are you making I'm hungry too

Khanyi: Noodles with chicken strips topped with a spicy

mushroom sauce and a salad.Me: Sounds delicious I

hope there's enough for me too.

Khanyi: Always sthandwa sam. Now tell me what happened with Sindiswa

Me: Apparently it's not her that wants me it's her mother. In fact her mother is selling her of to rich men and right now I'm the the target. The message I got was from her mother.

Sindiswa

also doesn't know what she meant by it. Apparently she said the same thing to her as well. (I carry on telling her about what her mom does to her with the pills and everything.)

Khanyi: How can a mother do that to her own child. Is she really her child maybe she is adopted. This woman is so cruel. (she dishes up and hands me my food gives me a quick kiss and sits next to me.)

Me: this is devine babe. You should show me how to make it.

Khanyi: I'll show you tomorrow when you come home from work. What are we going to do with Sindiswa's mom. I have an idea of what I want to do with her (she gives me her

sinister smile. This woman of mine is crazy)

Me: Apparently her mom is in town and staying with her and she is not safe with her. Sindiswa said that she is detoxing the drugs and her mom will definitely start giving them to her again she always insists on making Sindiswa's food . I want to speak to the guys and see what we can do. "Speak to the guys about what?" (that's Lwazi he is with Bandile and the girls.)

Me: does it hurt to knock or ring the bell.

Lwazi: No it doesn't we just like waltzing in without attracting attention of someone to open the door for us.

Khanyi: Really Lwazi you know what very soon I am going to ban you from coming here. Thando can come here alone.

Lwazi: Qhawe say something your woman is being unfair. Me: What do you want me to say?

Thando: honestly what do you want him to say you brought this upon yourself and your big mouth.

Lwazi: Even my woman is turning against me yhoouo ku rough. (we all laugh) Bandile: She has always been against you I don't know why you are surprised.

Ncesh: The problem is that he thinks Thando will defend his nonsense  
Khanyi: I would be careful if I were you about what I say and do around me.

Lwazi: ok fine I'm quiet. What are we eating (he says opening the pots on the stove) hayibo guys you finished the food.

ME: It was enough for seven people if you are hungry you can go ahead and prepare yourself something.

Lwazi: I want what you guys are eating it looks good. What do you mean seven people there's only two of you here?

Qhawe: She is eating for six people now.

five babies and herself. Khanyi: too bad you don't eat spicy food Lwazi.

Lwazi: is that a new craving you guys have it's funny how you crave the same food.

Ncesh: Hayi Lwazi stop being a nuisance. We'll prepare dinner and we'll make you something to munch on.

Bandile: Where are Andile and Eddie?

Khanyi: they are fetching the kids from school. (Ncesh looks at Bandile with a smile and he nods looking at her with the

biggest smile. My friend is happy about something)

Ncesh: We have something to tell you

Thando: what is it you guys are looking

very goofy right now Ncesh: Bandile

asked me to marry him

Bandile: and she said Yes

Khanyi: Oh my God Ncesh finally. No wonder you had a smile

on your face since you walked in here. Congratulations my sweet. I can't wait to tell Lungelo he is going to be so happy. After everything you've been through .

Ncesh: This is it Khanyi. I don't want anyone else but him (Ncesh is in tears tears of joy and soon Khanyi will start crying too. Thando walks over to them and she is also in tears)

Thando: the pain the hurt that we had to suffer all these years who knew that we would be here today happy beyond measure.

Lwazi: and we will do our best to keep you happy.

Bandile: if we ever hurt you in a way know that it would not be intentional

Qhawe: I'm happy you are crying tears of joy. We've also been through a lot in our lives we also suffered a lot of pain caused by women we dated in the past and us being with you has taught us that not all women are evil.

Khanyi: And not all men are evil. (she walks over to me and stands between my legs.) I love you my King.

(this moment just became a beautiful emotional moment.

Thando is crying in Lwazi's arms Ncesh and Bandile too.)

Lwazi: hey stop crying now. You guys are Queens and you will be treated as such. (Sizwe walks in)

Sizwe: What did you do to my girls

Sponsored

Ncesh and Bandile too.)

Lwazi: hey stop crying now. You guys are Queens and you will be treated as such. (Sizwe walks in)

Sizwe: What did you do to my girls why are they crying. Ladies what's wrong do you need me to beat up these idiots.

Thando: not this time. Ncesh and Bandile are getting married. We are just crying tears of joy and the moment just became emotional.

Sizwe: That's good. Congratulations guys (he hugs Ncesh and Bandile) Ncesh: Thando let's prepare a snack and start on dinner.

Sizwe: How about a braai and celebrate the happy couple Bandile: Sounds good to me.

Khanyi: Braai it is then.

\*  
\*  
\*

ED

DIE

\*

\*

\*

Andile and I just got back from fetching the kids from school and we walk into people preparing for a braai

Me: what are we celebrating?

Lwazi: What makes you think we are celebrating something?

Andile: it's the middle of the week and we are about to do something we normally do on weekends



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sizwe: Bandile is getting married.

Eddie: Yhooo you popped the question. Congratulations man  
(he gives him a hug and Andile too)

Andile: well let's get this party started then.

Qhawe: it's not a party Andile. We are just chilling with  
our brother and celebrating him. Where are my kids?

Andile: kids are upstairs.

Qhawe: I need to talk to you  
about something

Me: Sounds  
serious

Qhawe: it is serious man. It's about Sindiswa

Me: the woman you told us about. What about her?

Qhawe: this whole thing of her coming after me is her  
mother's idea. (I go ahead and tell them everything that  
Sindiswa told me.)

Bandile: so this woman is getting rich by getting her daughter  
to date rich man. She messed with the wrong one this time. We  
need to come up with a plan before she starts feeding her the  
pills again.

Qhawe: Khanyi had an idea she didn't say what it was but I  
think I have an idea of what it is. I have an idea too but I want to  
hear what you guys have in mind first

Me: the best thing to do with someone like that is to let her  
think that her plan is working. I think it would be a good idea  
to take Sindy and let her leave in your house at the moment just  
to keep her away from her mother and in that way she will

think that her plan is working plus I don't think she knows you live here with Khanyi.

Qhawe: that's the exactly what I was thinking

Sizwe: I think that could work but the question remains what do we do with the old hag. Andile: let's get Sindiswa out first and deal with the old woman later.

Lwazi: we can decide what to do with her tomorrow. Right now let's enjoy our braai.

Sizwe: yes let's do that but there's something familiar about this Sindy woman. She looks like someone I know but I can't place her.

Me: You are right about that. argh we can figure it out later.

Congratulations brother. (they lift their glasses to Bandile Khaya walks in with the twins. I swear Khanya spends more time here than he does at his place even now that he has a girlfriend nothing has changed)

Khaya: gentlemen how are you doing? What are we celebrating

Me: We are good kid. We are celebrating Bandile he is getting married.

Bandile(twin): it was bound to happen the way you are with each other. I know someone else who is going to be popping the question I don't know what he is scared of. (he says that looking at his father with serious look on his face)

Khaya: congratulation Bhut' Bandile. The family is really getting bigger. When I look back at myself two years ago I never thought I would be here today to witness all this love and it's all thanks to you guys.

Me: we did what was required of us to do and we wanted to do it because we care and love you. Banele: I also never thought this much love from people who were not my blood family could exist. It is true what they say that to be a family you don't have to be related by blood. This is family with so much love . I'm not saying dad didn't show us love he did a lot of it and what we have right now is more and beyond measure it shows that it truly takes a village to raise a child. Sizwe: I have family but we are not close. I had a step mother who didn't care about me and my sister who abused us and my dad never believed us when we told him what was happening when he was not home instead he shipped us off to boarding school. This is new to me. When I met Khanyi I learned what love is and what it meant to be part of a family.

Bhut' Bandile: When they met I never thought in a million years it would result into something so wonderful having brothers that would do anything to protect me and be there for me always. I

met the woman of my dreams through this family my sons can't wait to meet her. Their mother hurt me to a point that I never thought I would fall in love again look at me now in love and getting married.

Lwazi: it has been a rough ride filled with pain loss and fear. Our previous painful experiences brought us together. I'm learning what love is through you guys I'm learning how to love my woman right. I never new how to love a woman right I never had a father to teach me that. my father was an abusive man who beat me and my mother whenever he felt like it. I want to say thank you to Qhawe for finally having the guts to ask Khanyi out and fall in love with her.

Qhawe: it hasn't been an easy road. But here we are successful and happy. (he raises his glass) TO US

Everyone: TO US

## CHAPTER 71

THURSDAY

\*

\*

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

## SINDISWA

\*

\*

\*

It felt good to tell Qhawe everything and now I hope I can keep up this act until Sipho comes up with a plan to get me out of here or Qhawe does something .

Wineka: how did it go with

Qhawe yesterday Me: it

went very well mama.

Wineka: I'm glad it did. When are you seeing him again?

Me: I'm not sure mama. He said he would call

sometime today. (there's a knock on the door) Me: I

thought you were coming later. Hi

Sipho: Hi to you too. I decided to come

earlier. Where is your mom Me:

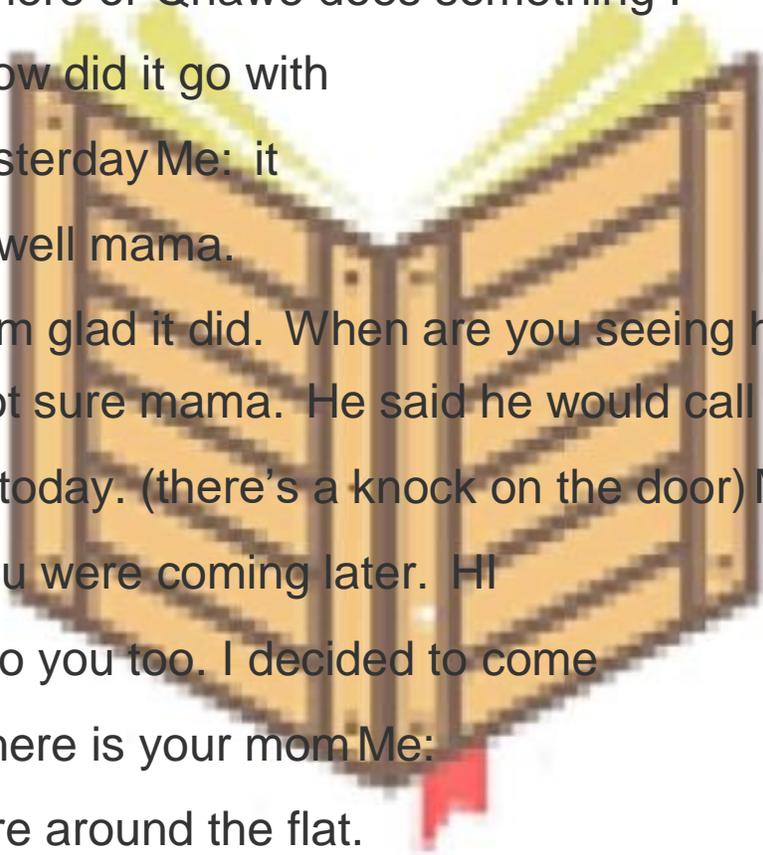
Somewhere around the flat.

Sipho: we need to talk

Me: We can go to your car it's fine. Mom I'll be back. (I shout as I walk out with Sipho.)

Sipho: your dad wants to meet you and I think you should move in with me for a while until your mom leaves.

Me: I met with Qhawe yesterday and I told him everything



about what's happening with mom and they are going to help.

Sipho: I was going to suggest the same thing and I still think you should move in with me for a while.

Me: she will know. The minute I mention moving out she will know Sipho. I think she has a way of tracking me too.

Sipho: Your mother really has serious control issues

Sindy. Look I hope Qhawe and his people come up with something because right now I'm running out of ideas.

Me: tell me about my father

Sipho: Well he is from the Eastern Cape in East London he is one of three brothers but there's only two of them left. His older brother died about two months back. Your father is Mncedi Tom he is uncle to Zwelibanzi Tom who is Khanyi's ex-husband.

Me: what are you being serious. You mean to tell me that Mzimkhulu Tom was my unclce? Sipho: yes he was you knew him

Me: I knew him. His company did most of our construction work at work that's how I knew him. He was always nice to me always checked up on me even if he had no meeting with us he would just

come by and check up on. He once offered to help me with an apartment when I decided to move out of my mother's house and that was impossible back then.

Sipho: At least now you know you have a family other than your mother.

Me: Thank you Sipho for everything that you have done for me I really do appreciate it.

Sipho: it's only my pleasure darling. (I kiss his cheek but he turns to hold my face in his hands and pulls me in for a kiss. He kisses me like he has never kissed me before and I am liking it.)

Me: I have to go back before my mother gets suspicious. (he kisses me again)

Sipho: I'll see you soon and I am going to try and talk to Qhawe and see where I can help.

Me: thank you. (he opens the door for me I get out of the car and walk back to my apartment. My mother was sitting in lounge watching tv.)

Wineka: who was here?

Me: that was Sipho ma. He just came to check up on me since he brought me flue meds yesterday.

Wineka: You need to watch yourself Sindy. I don't think Qhawe would like to see you chatting with other man.

Me: Qhawe knows Sipho ma he is ok

with him being my friend. Wineka:  
that's good then. (my phone rings and  
it's Qhawe)

\*\*\*\*\*phone

conversation)\*\*\*\*\*

Me: Hi babe how are you?

Qhawe: I'm guessing  
your mom is around Me:

Yes my love.

Qhawe: Pack your things I'm coming to  
fetch you. Send me your location Me: Ok.

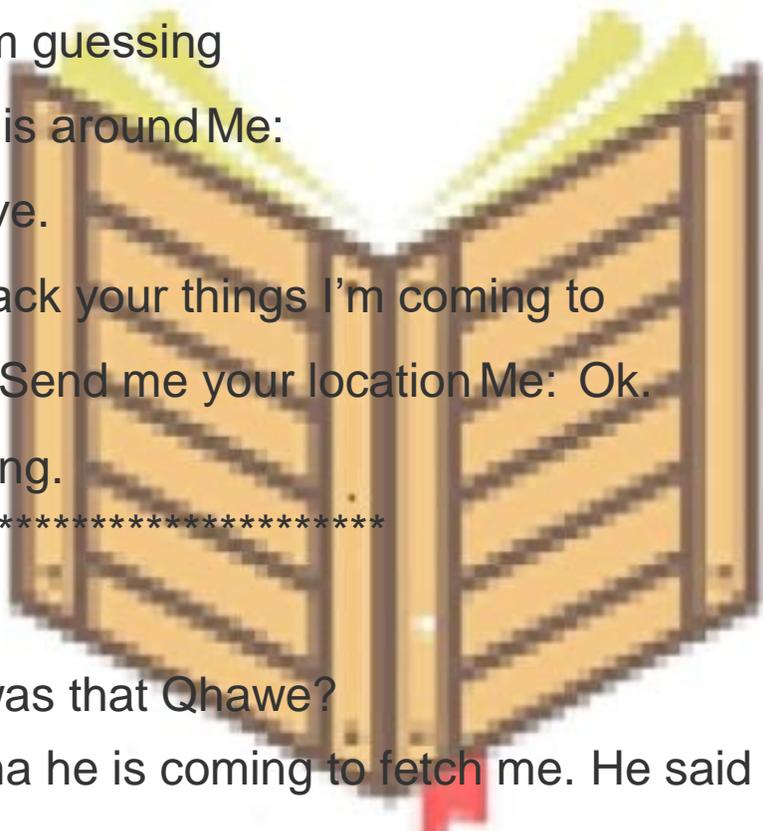
I'll be waiting.

\*\*\*\*\*

Wineka: was that Qhawe?

Me: Yes ma he is coming to fetch me. He said I should  
pack a bag. I'll go pack. I don't want to keep him waiting  
when he get here.

Wineka: Yes baby go pack. How  
long are you leaving for. Me: He  
didn't say but I'm sure it's just a  
couple of days.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Wineka: behave yourself and remember you have to do everything he tells you.

Me: Yes mom. I'll always remember. ( I say walking to my room to start packing my things and I can't pack everything because I also don't know how long I'll be gone. I take my phone and call Sipho)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*\*\*\*\*phone

conversation\*\*\*\*\*

Sipho: hey beautiful

Sponsored

miss me already

Me: Yes I miss you. Qhawe just called he is coming to fetch me he said I should pack my things I don't know how long I'll be gone.

Sipho: don't worry about that my Angel. I'll see you tonight. I just hope whatever he is planning works.

Me: I hope it works too.

See you later then. Sipho:

bye beautiful.

\*\*\*\*\*

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

What's going on with me and Sipho and whatever is going on I think I like it. He has changed. The way he treats me has changed and it feels like it's more than just sex now. My mom walks into my room and she has the biggest

smile on her face.

Wineka: Qhawe is here

are you done? Me: yes

mama I'm done. I'm

ready to go.

Wineka: Let's go don't keep him waiting. (we out and

there he is waiting in the lounge.) Qhawe: You look

beautiful

Me: Thank you. You don't too bad yourself. (my mother is actually falling for all of this I just hope that she doesn't catch on anytime soon. We say our goodbyes and leave.)

\*

\*

\*

SIP

HO

\*

\*

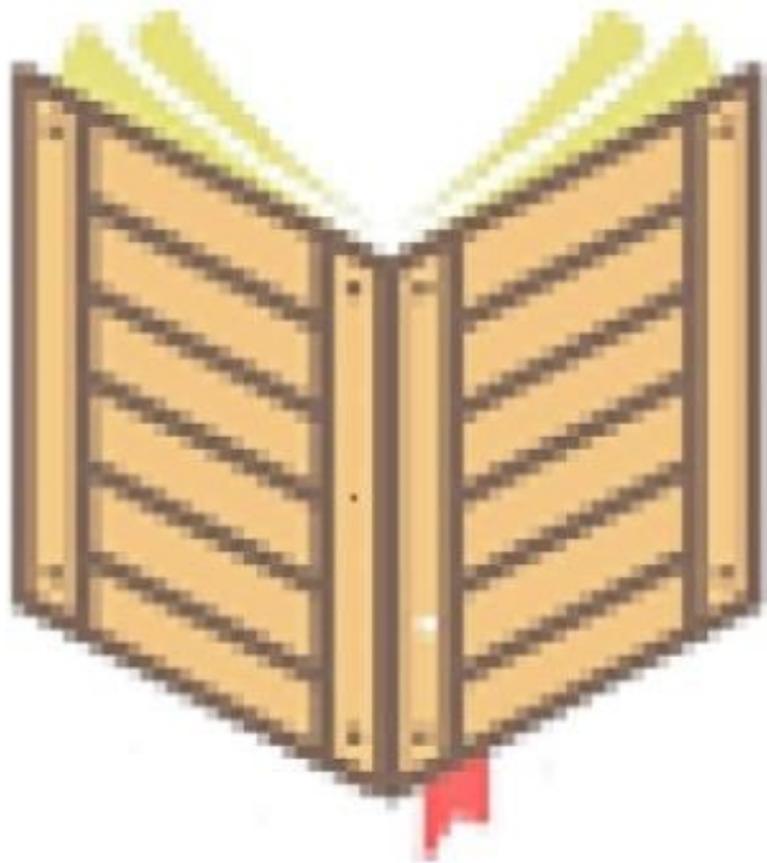
\*

Me: I've done what you asked me to do. I told her about you and now it's your turn. Qhawe and Khanyi have taken her in for the meantime to keep her safe from her mother.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mncedi: thank you Sipho for everything. I really wouldn't have been able to do this without you. I have been trying for years to get to her but her mother always made sure that I don't.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sipho: Your mistake was always telling her first when you wanted to see your daughter and that was giving her an opportunity to block your attempts.

Mncedi: did you speak to Qhawe?

Sipho: Yes I did. I'll be helping them to deal with that ex of yours. Mncedi: You really love my daughter don't you?

Sipho: I love her too much and I think she is picking up on it. Mncedi: As long as she is happy I'm happy.

Sipho: I have to go. I have a few things I need to do before I go to see her. I'll see you soon. Mncedi: thanks again (and I walk out get into my car and drive off. things are really changing and I hope they are changing for the better. Sindy seems to be getting back to normal. She is different now. She thinks fast now. I didn't think she would go and tell Qhawe everything but she did and I'm really proud of her for doing that. she made things move a whole lot quicker. I really hope that she is going to be ok after all this. She has a lot that she needs to adjust to especially living on her own.

\*

\*

\*

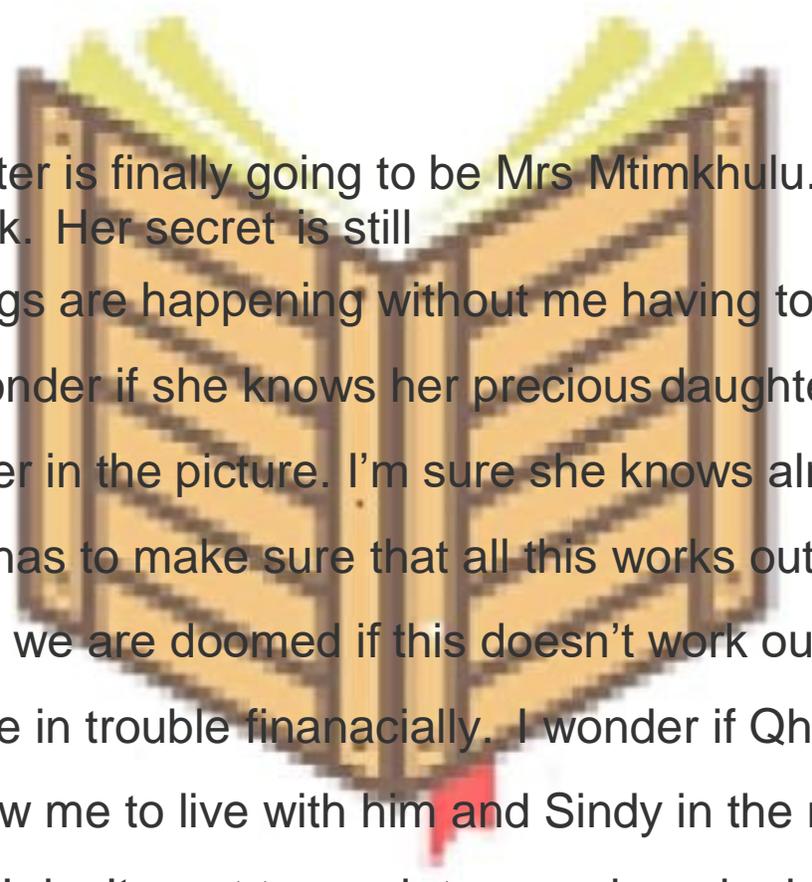
WIN

EKA

\*

\*

\*



My daughter is finally going to be Mrs Mtimkhulu. Siyanda is very lucky. Her secret is still safe. Things are happening without me having to force her hand. I wonder if she knows her precious daughter in law is no longer in the picture. I'm sure she knows already. Sindiswa has to make sure that all this works out. Otherwise we are doomed if this doesn't work out I am going to be in trouble financially. I wonder if Qhawe would allow me to live with him and Sindy in the near future but I don't want to push too much and ruin things.

NOVELSGURU.COM  
\*\*\*\*\*phone

conversation\*\*\*\*\* Me:

How are you Siyanda

Siyanda: How many times must I tell you not to call me?

Me: Oh come on breathe a little. Did you know that you

precious daughter in law is no longer in the picture.  
Qhawe is moving on with his life with Sindy. At least your  
secrete is still safe with me.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Siyanda: Well that's what you think. I told my husband everything. Yes he is mad at me but we are ok. Only Qhawe doesn't know. He is also going to find out soon enough. You see Wineka I am one or two steps ahead of you. Your mistake was thinking you know me but you don't dear.

Your precious Sindy is not going to last very long she is not the kind of woman Qhawe needs right now.

me: My daughter is exactly what your son needs. I hear wedding bells soon.

Siyanda: you are really losing your mind and I feel sorry for you. Once Qhawe finds you you are going to regret what you did. You see Wineka you are going to end up in a loony bin. Like I said to you before don't call me again. (she hangs up on me)

If she has really told her husband about everything that means I am going to be in trouble. I know Loyiso loves his wife and is protective of her. no matter how wrong she can be he doesn't stop loving her. Even this is not Siyanda's fault. She doesn't even know that I drugged when she agreed to the deal. I've always wanted Loyiso

but he loves his precious Siyanda too much. The only option I have is his son marrying my daughter. Come hell or high water they will get married.

## CHAPTER 72

FRIDAY

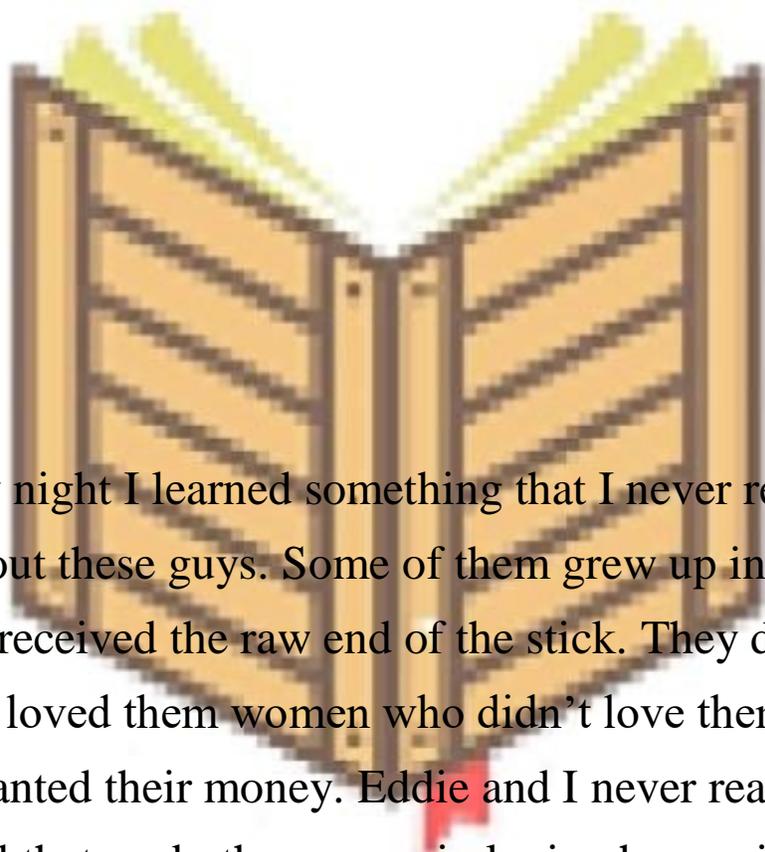
\*  
\*  
\*

ANDI

LE

\*  
\*  
\*

Wednesday night I learned something that I never really realised about these guys. Some of them grew up in terrible homes and received the raw end of the stick. They dated women and loved them women who didn't love them women who just wanted their money. Eddie and I never really experienced that we both grew up in loving homes just like Qhawe. Qhawe had a wife who didn't love him a woman that didn't care about her kids. Experiences like that normally make a person to hate the other species but with these guys it's different they are giving love a chance and acknowledging that not everyone will treat them same way they were treated by others. I've notice that one of the things they



NOVELSGURU.COM

have in common we actually all have in common is that we don't stand for abuse. It doesn't matter who is abusing who we just don't



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

stand for it. Now we have to teach Sindy's mom a lesson and I am paying her a visit this morning. She is going to learn that you should never hurt your family. She broke Sindy it will take time for her to heal.

As I knock on the door  
and she opens  
Me: Hello  
mama may I come in

Wineka: hello who are  
you?

Me: I'm Andile Qhawe's friend.

Wineka: Ok. Come in have a sit (she points to the couch)

Would you like something to drink? Me: Oh no ma thank you.  
I don't like taking drinks from people people are very cruel out there I could end up being drugged and I wouldn't even know about it. (I can see the fear in her eyes but she is hiding it well.)

Wineka: What can I do for you Andile?

Me: Well I am here about Sindiswa. She is with Qhawe right now and we had to get our doctor to come check out because she got sick and we found out that she's taking some kind of drugs. I came here to find out if you know anything about that.

Wineka: I don't know anything about that and besides my daughter would never use drugs she knows better.

Me: maybe I shouldn't have used the word drugs since there's a lot that falls under it. she has been ingesting certain pills pills that should be issued by a doctor with a prescription and she told

us that she hasn't been taking any pills she doesn't have a condition that requires her to take pills everyday.

Wineka: she is right about that.

Me: ok I see. Another question. Two years ago she was admitted in a psych hospital what happened to her

Wineka: She loved someone who didn't love her and when he rejected her she had a breakdown. Me: is it true that you the one that pushed her to date that man because he is rich?

Wineka: I did no such thing.

Me: is it true that you have been using your daughter to get money from rich people after you spent all the money in her trust fund that your dearly departed husband left her. Is true that you hated the fact that your husband died and left everything to her because he knew you were slowly poisoning him the same way you are poisoning your daughter. You fed your husband pills the way you doing with your daughter and you knew that the pills you gave him would one day kill him.

Wineka: I don't know what you are talking about. Get out of my house (she stands walking to the door as I remain sitted)

Me: Come back and sit down we are not done talking. Wineka: I said leave

Andile: OLD WOMAN COME BACK AND SIT YOUR ASS DOWN I WILL NOT REPEAT

MYSELF AGAIN (I said in a very firm angry voice. She is really starting to piss me off now. she walks back to the couch and sits.) Your daughter doesn't even know the house belongs to her that she had money and you spent it all she doesn't know that your dead husband actually cared about her. You have created so much debt for yourself because you want a lavish lifestyle that your husband provided for you. Maybe if you had told your daughter the truth she would have taken care of you. You you're your husband's company you are such a stupid woman. It's a shame that Sindiswa was still a minor when your husband died. You and his lawyer screwed her over.

Wineka: how do you know all this?

Me: a certain private inverstigator brought all this to our attention and I must say he is really good because he also managed to find out who Sindiswa's father. The man you didn't want because he was poor. I hate women like you. Women are being called goldiggers because of women like you.

You manipulated your daughter into thinking that Qhawe wants her. You pushed her to go for him knowing very well that

Qhawe has a woman in his life. Let me tell you something; you just threw your daughter in the lions den and now she is going to suffer the consequences of your actions and she doesn't know that and anything that happens to her from here on will be your fault and trust me when I tell you that you messed with the wrong rich man this time around. I wonder what Qhawe is going to say when he finds out.

Wineka: no please don't hurt my daughter she is all I have.

Please I am begging you don't hurt. (she is crying her eyes out and I'm watching this woman and I must she really is a good actress)

Lwazi: You should have thought about that before you lied to her. (he says as he walks with plastic bags) Do you have food in this place? I'm hungry. You can sit there and think about everything that we are going to do to you and your daughter while we make ourselves something to eat. Come Andile let's eat.

Andile: Do you trust the food in this place?

Lwazi: hayibo Andile what do you take me for I brought food and beer. I don't want to die anytime soon. I still have a woman to love marry her and have lots of babies with her.

Andile: let's eat then.

\*

\*

\*

**KHANYI**

**SILE**

\*

\*

\*

I'm almost two months pregnant and I think I am going to start showing soon. I can't believe Qhawe made me pregnant with five babies at the same time how does that even happen these are the things you only see on tv and it's actually happening to me. My doctors are so excited. They were so worried when I was in hospital and almost lost my little Boovs. Qhawe will be home early today. I still can't believe the things Sindiswa's mom is doing to her. How does a mother do that. I feel sorry for Sindiswa it's going to take sometime for her to recover from this. Lina is coming home today for the weekend.

Kids: Mom! Where are you? (I really don't know why they are shouting. If they are here that means their dad is home too. He said he would fetch them from school.)

Me: I'm in the kitchen.

Lonwabo: You are always in the kitchen (he walks up to me and kisses my cheek followed by Ntando)

Ntando: Queen mother how are you (the girls walk over to me as well hugging me) Me: I'm ok darling how was

your day

Sibahle: It was good. We just missed you that's all. (their dad walks up to me and kisses me senseless)

Qhawe: I missed

you too. Me: I'm

still missing you

Sponsored



how was your day

Sibahle: It was good. We just missed you that's all. (their dad walks up to me and kisses me senseless)

Qhawe: I missed you too.

Me: I'm still missing you I want a repeat of last night. (I whisper all that in his ear so that the kids can't hear. He smiles his naughty smile and whisper back)

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: I love the sound of that and you will get it all night long.  
(I can't help but giggle.)Lwanele: You guys are just hopeless.  
Always all over each other.

Lisakhanya: mom what's for lunch. I'm hungry

Zenande: You are following in Uncle Lwazi's footsteps Khanya  
eating a lot and you are not even gaining weight.

Me: Zenande just let her be.

Qhawe: babe I invited Mcebisi over for dinner tomorrow night  
just as a thank you. I hope you don't mind since I didn't ask you  
first.

Me: I don't mind my love. Kids go upstairs and take off your  
uniform lunch will be ready  
soon. (they run all the way out of the kitchen. Followed by their  
father he can be so childish and he sees me as childish. Who's  
being childish right now. Mam' Mavis walks in)

Mam' Mavis: Security says there's people at the  
gate that want to see you Me: Who are they?

Mam' Mavis: it's the Dayi's

Me: goodness what do they want why can't everyone just let  
me be with my family and just enjoy my pregnancy. I might as  
well just deal with them once and for all. You can tell them to  
let them in ma. Thank you very much. Where is Qhawe I need  
him to be here.

Sizwe: why do you need him never mind don't answer that. ever  
since you got pregnant you can't stay away from him. What am  
I saying you couldn't stay away from him from the day first day

he kissed you (he says all of that walking over and kisses my cheek.)

Me: it's not that Sizwe jeez. The Dayi's are here. Sizwe: hayibo what do they want here?

Me: is it not obvious this all Nkosikhona's doing.

Qhawe: Is the food ready we are ready. Sizwe how are you?

Sizwe: I'm good man. Guys why don't you go to the kitchen so long (he says looking at the kitchen)

Zenande: I thought we were going to eat together. Me: we have guests honey we'll join you later.

Qhawe: are you ok my Queen?

Me: As long as you guys are here I'm ok. (we walk to the lounge and they were already seated.) Good afternoon gentlemen.

Sizwe: how can we help you

Uncle Mxolisi: we are here to talk to Khanyi.

Me: if this is about Nkosikhona and his troubles with ancestors then I don't want to hear it.

Uncle Mxolisi: please my child this could destroy him.

Qhawe: why should she care what happens to him where were you when Khanyi was having trouble with the kids and now all of a sudden your son is having problems in his life because he ignored his kids and only now you remember that you have kids. I'm sorry but I find that very disrespectful . I really don't know what you expect Khanyi to do about that. Your son made his choices and now karma is catching up with him and what's unbelievable is that you now want the kids to be introduced to you as their family. 25 years of their lives you were quiet not saying anything and I'm sure you were not even worried about what they were eating where they were sleeping. I am sure that if your son was not experiencing the problems he is experiencing now you wouldn't be sitting here now.

Uncle Nceba: This is not just for our son it's also for those kids so that they know their roots. Sizwe: that's where you got it. their mother made sure they know who their father is where they are from they know their roots they know your family tree. They know exactly where they are from but the thing is they also know where they belong.

Uncle Mxolisi: if this is not done they might have problems in the future as well with the ancestors

Me: they way I see it your ancestors are not angry with my kids they are angry with you for not caring for not doing what you were suppose to do in the first place and traditionally you are

not even suppose to be talking to me about this. You are suppose to be talking to my parents and they are all the way in East London. Don't bother yourself by going to them either because they will tell you everything that you are hearing from us. The two men you see here are the fathers to those kids I do what they say when it comes to those kids. Nkosikhona can deal with his

demons alone please don't involve my kids in that nonsense.

Uncle Mxolisi: Please sisi we know we did you wrong but please do this for us.

Qhawe: you know in everything that you have said I didn't even hear you apologise about your sons behaviour. Please leave my house before things get out of hand and please don't come back here again. My wife is pregnant and she doesn't need all this stress you are bringing (they look at me with the hope that I would say something but I look at them and keep my mouth shut the man of the house has spoken. Lina walks in with Khaya carrying her bag they greet and walk pass the lounge)

Uncle Mxolisi: What has Nkosikhona don they look so much like him. (he shakes his head in disbelief) let's go Nceba.

Nkosikhona will have to deal with the consequences of his actions I'm not bothering with this again. Khanyi my child we are truly sorry for everything you had to go through with the kids. (with that said they walk out)

## CHAPTER 73

### SATURDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

QHA

WE

\*  
\*  
\*

I feel Her soft small lips on mine wake me up but I don't open my eyes. I know it's before 5:00am because my alarm hasn't gone off yet.

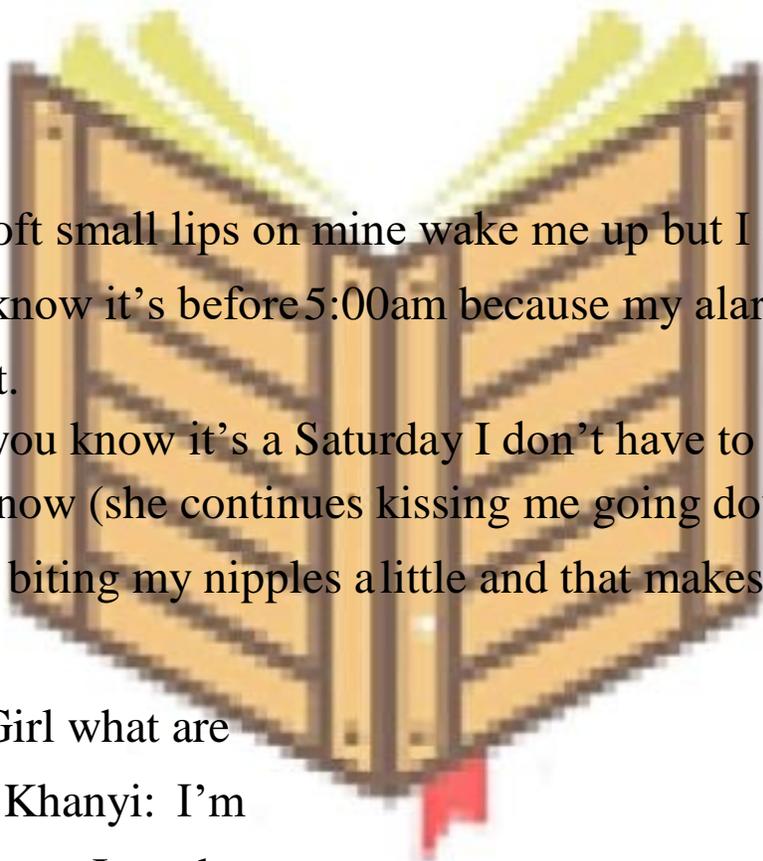
Me: Baby you know it's a Saturday I don't have to go to work.

Khanyi: I know (she continues kissing me going down my neck to my chest biting my nipples a little and that makes me a little weak.)

Me: Baby Girl what are you doing? Khanyi: I'm waking you up. I need you.

(she continues the torture of having me feel her lips on my body and she moves lower to my v- line and play there for a bit and stops and I can feel myself getting really hard. She helps me out of my pyjama pants and my rod comes out to play. She looks at me and smiles)

Khanyi: very naughty Mtimkhulu



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You started it I hope you can finish what you started. Khanyi: Is that a challenge

Me: it definitely is a challenge

(she doesn't waste any time. She opens my legs gets in between them and kneels. She brings her face to my already hard dick she licks the head as if she's licking ice cream off a cone and plants soft wet kisses around it with her right hand gently playing with my balls. Her hand moves from my balls to the ridge between my balls and my anus and she uses her thumb to press on it moving her thumb up and I feel myself getting harder. She stops and takes my dick with both her hands rubbing it between her hands back and forth like she's trying to warm her hands. She is driving me crazy right now all I want is to be inside her. She switches still using both hands moving them up down my rod one after the other after a while she takes me into her mouth but she can't take all of me. She takes me in as far as she can moving up and down and then plays with tip sucking it as if sucking on a nipple. Right now I'm wondering why I never allowed her to give me a BJ. I can't take it anymore and the way she is going I can feel that I am about to

come and I don't want to not yet. I stop her and pull her up to my face kissing her and I flip her so that I am on top. I open her legs as wide as they can go and gently play with tip of my dick on her clit. Gently moving it to her hole teasing her by just putting in the tip. Right now she is about to call me Que and beg me to be inside her)

Khanyi: Que please (she moans as I continue with my torture) Me: Please what Baby Girl?

Khanyi: I want you inside Que please (with that said I try to push myself in her. I always struggle to go in. after the third try I'm in only halfway and I start moving slowly back and forth.)

Khanyi: deeper Que please

(I open her legs wider and fully push myself in after which I take both her legs and put them on my shoulder and effortlessly she wraps her legs around my neck she knows I love it when she does that. she pulls me in for a kiss and that allows me to pump her even deeper slowly and she is a moaning mess and I gradually up my pace taking her left leg from my shoulder and placing it between my legs and I slightly move to the side and pump her hard and fast. She tells me to go faster and I do just that and we are both about to come.

Khanyi: I'm coming baby. (that's music to my ears. I go deep twice and the third time she comes and I carry on pumping her through her organism and she is holding me so tight like her life

depended on it and after a few minutes I come too. I slowly move her right leg from my shoulder and she wraps around my waist and I flop on top of her with half of my body weight on her. She enjoys playing with her hands on my back it's as if it's her way of apologising for every scratch she gives me when she holds on tight and she has this thing of not wanting me to pull out immediately after we make love and I've gotten used to it and actually love

it. Sometimes we even fall asleep like this. Khanyi: I never been who wanted to be

I never felt completely free

No one's ever had all of me

Or made me feel so beautiful and sexy

Now I'm flying like an airplane Now I'm riding on the open

range Now I'm living out my destiny

I know the truth

I got it all in you and me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Oh I'm giving myself  
over to you Body and  
soul  
I'm giving it over  
I'm giving myself over to you now

Like a brand new day  
Now you and I we're the  
face of fame Ain't  
nobody got nothing to  
say no And from my  
feelings  
I never have to  
run away No  
more

'Cause he's  
here Holding  
me tight

Everyday and  
night Oh baby

can't you see  
I don't wanna be without you anymore

I'm giving myself  
over to you Body



NOVELSGURU.COM

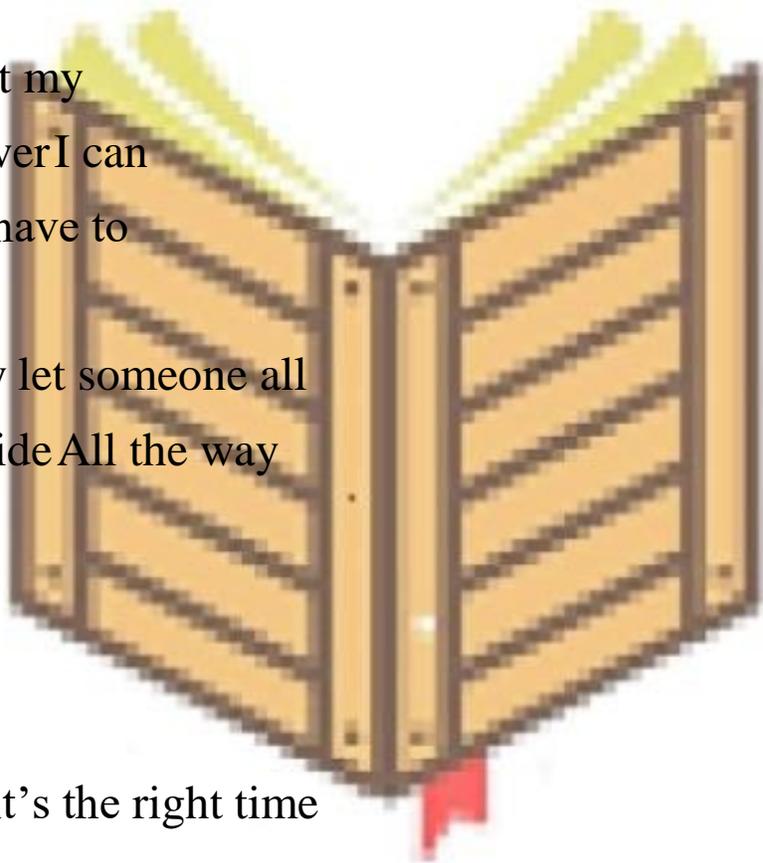
and soul  
I'm giving it over  
I'm giving myself over to you

For the first time  
I can stand in front  
of someone Finally I  
can be me

I can just let my  
love spill over I can  
cry I don't have to  
lie

I can finally let someone all  
the way inside All the way  
All the  
way All  
the way

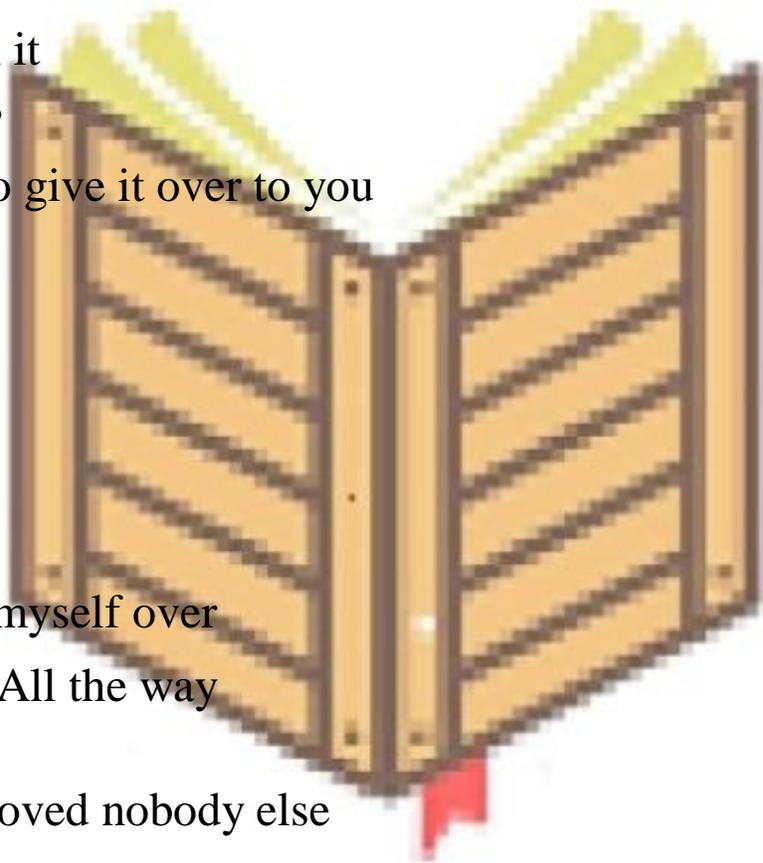
You know it's the right time



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I know it's the  
right night I  
know it's the  
right life  
I know you're the man  
I know I'm the  
right girl Come  
on now feel it  
You feel it?  
I'm ready to give it over to you

Body and  
soul I'm  
giving it  
over  
I'm giving myself over  
to you now All the way  
All the way  
I've never loved nobody else



I love you Mkhwemte Dabane Gqabaza Ncibane Qhonqolo  
Venge. I don't want to go through the rest of my life without.  
Right now at this very moment I know I cannot live without you  
I have no doubt that you are mine and I am yours. I've been  
holding back but right now I give my heart take care of. You  
complete me. ( that's what she say after singing the song to me.

I'm not a man who cries but with this woman tears just easily fall. I have tears running down my face I'm looking her deep in eyes and I know she means every word of what she is saying.

All of this is happening while I'm still inside she doesn't allow me to pull out. I didn't even know she knew my clan names)

Me: I didn't know you knew my clan names (she smile at me)

Khanyi: Your father has been teaching me ( I smile at her I have no words all I can do right now is kiss her senseless as I continue kissing her I can my dick growing inside her.)

Me: I love you too my Queen your heart is safe with me I promise to take care of it always.

\*

\*

\*

WINE

KA

\*

\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ok I think I can safely say that I am screwed. How did they manage to know so much about me who is this PI that has been helping them. At lease they said that Qhawe doesn't know yet and I'm sure they will tell him. By the looks of things I've just killed my daughter. I'm being kept prisoner in this flat. There's guys watching me I can't go anywhere they even took my phone. I don't even know how Cindy is doing. They don't even tell me what's going on with her. This Lwazi would ask me why do I care what happens to her. They don't get that I am nothing without her. If she ever found out what I did to her she'll never forgive me. She'll hate me forever and probably disown me. She can't know I'm the one that has been drugging her.

\*

\*

\*

KHANYI

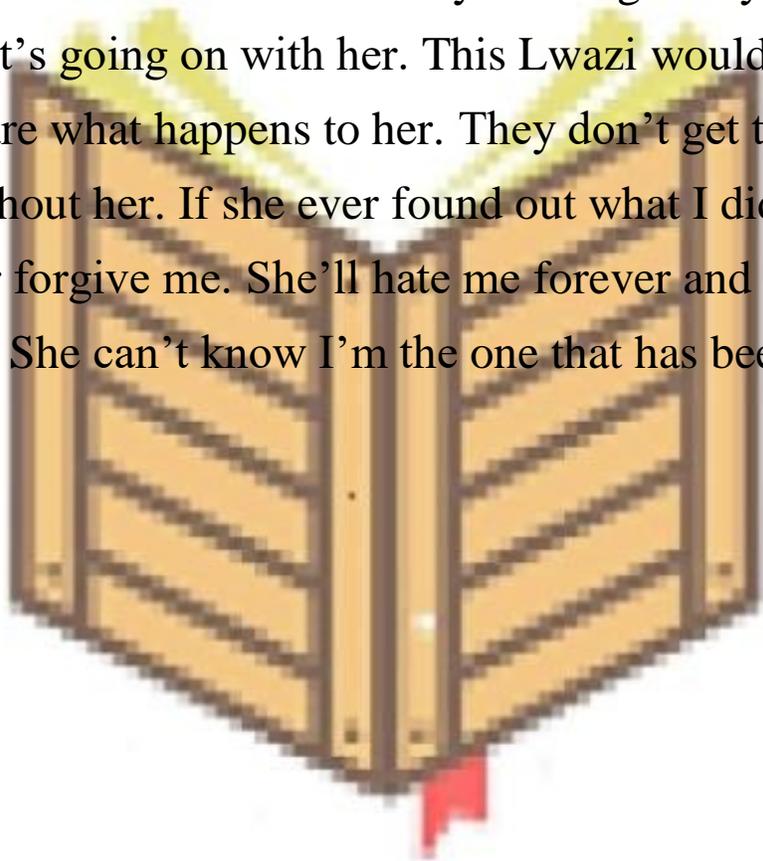
SILE

\*

\*

\*

We decided to have another braai today the guys are outside setting up getting the fire ready the boys are even outside helping. I'm in the kitchen with the girls. I was just told to sit down and they are going to prepare everything. We are



NOVELSGURU.COM

listening to Lina telling us about school and everything.

Lina: Mom there's something I need to tell you. Me: ok do you want to do it now?

Lina: Yes mama it's fine you are going to tell Aunt Ncesh and Aunt Thando anyway. They might as well hear it from me. Lungi and Khanya already know.

Ncesh: What's the big secret baby I hope you are not pregnant. Lina: No aunt Ncesh I'm not pregnant I'm still a virgin.

Thando: That's good.

Lungi: ladies can you please let her speak. (they quickly keep quiet and listen)

Lina: I have a boyfriend and we've been dating for a year now. (she stops talking looks at me I think she is waiting for my reaction. I mean yes it was bound to happen I knew that but I was not prepared I always thought she would stay single for the rest of her life. I know it's a ridiculous thought but as a parent you don't want your kids going through the shit you went through.) Mom please say something.

Me: I don't know what to say Princess right now I'm just about your dad's reaction when he finds out. Lungi you knew and you didn't tell me.

Lungi: I was asked not to tell and I kept my promise. Lina: You can't tell him. I'll tell him myself tomorrow.

Thando: where did you guys meet?

Lina: I met him at school he was guest speaker at one of the events that I was part of. He asked me out for dinner and we've been seeing each other ever since.

Ncesh: how do you feel about him

Lina: Honestly I think I love him and I know he loves me. Me: are you sure he loves you

Lina: yes mom I'm sure (she smiles at me) Me: how old is he

Lina: Please don't freak out he is 27

Me: that's a seven years gap between you

Lina: yes mom it is. And I like that he is much older than me

Ncesh: it's really not a bad thing but that means he is more experienced than you.

Lungi: Khaya is 4 years older than me and I like it that way too. I'm just as in experienced as Lina and Khaya is very patient with me

Lina: Yes aunty and he is very

patient with me. Me: at least  
that's good. What does he do?

Lina: He just moved to Durban he got a really good job this  
side at some company I haven't really asked him the details.  
I've been so busy with school work and he's been busy with the  
move and we are meeting up tomorrow for lunch.

Me: I hear you. Can you please go upstairs and check on the  
girls for me. (she kisses my cheek and runs off.)

Ncesh: you don't look happy about it.

Me: would you be happy about it. besides you guys are also not  
happy about it. she's not only my daughter she is yours too.

Thando: I personally don't mind I'm just happy she is still intact.

Lungi: Khaya and I have met him and he seems like a good  
guy. Him and Khaya are getting close

Me: at least that's a plus for the guy. The fact that he  
hasn't broken the cookie for a year. (Qhawe walks in)

Qhawe: Babe where did you put the meat that's already spiced?

Me: there it is on the table. (he walks to the table and takes the bowls of meet and walks over to me and gives a long kiss which makes me moan softly in his mouth and he stops)

Qhawe: I love you My Queen and I want you to do that thing again tonight. (he walks out leaving me blushing and all smiles.)

Lungi: this is the kind of love I want with Khaya.

Thando: Lungi wait a minute I want to know what thing is that it must have been good. Ncesh: come girl spill the beans.

Me: BJ (it comes out as whisper but loud enough for them to hear me) I gave it to him for the first time this morning.

Lungi: I'll be upstairs checking on the girls. I can't torture my ears with this conversation. Thando: You are going to have to one these days. You can't run from it forever. Hayibo Khanyi you guys have been doing the deed for so long almost everyday and you only gave him a bj for the first time today. Yithi uyadlala (say you are playing) You gave it Zwelibanzi frequently

Me: I'm serious. Guys you don't get it Qhawe is really gifted down there. My mouth is too small and he even struggles with nuna

Ncesh: I don't want to be you. I could never deal with that. do you enjoy it

Me: very much once he is in he knows how to make me comfortable and make me enjoy every bit of him. (our conversation is interrupted by the door bell ringing. And I was

saved by the bell from this conversation. I get up to go get the door and it's Mcebisi)

Please come in. How are you?

Mcebisi: I am good and how are you and the babies

Me: We are fine. Thank you for asking. (Lina walks down the stairs as we walk towards the kitchen and she freezes halfway down the stairs)

Lina: OH MY  
GOD!!!!!!

Mcebisi: HOLLY  
SHIT!!!!

(Ok what the hell is going on here???)

CHAPTER 74

STILL STURDAY

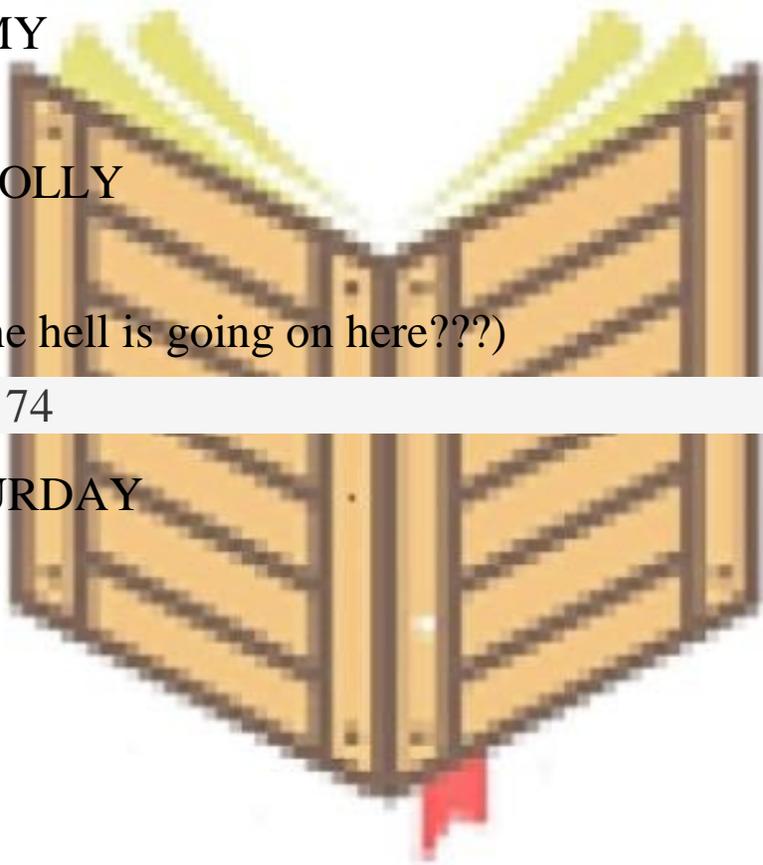
\*

\*

\*

LINAMA

NDLA



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

\*

Mcebisi: What is she is doing here?

Khanyi: what do you mean what is she doing here? That's my daughter. (I don't think he meant to say that question out loud

Me: What are you doing here (I ask while we are both walking towards each other and he takes my face in his hands and kisses me) You haven't answered my question.

Mcebisi: I was invited for dinner.

Me: Oh my God you are the new CEO. Oh shit. Mcebisi:

Language babe.

Khanyi: someone needs to tell me what's going on right now Me: Mom this is the guy I was just telling you about

Mcebisi: wait this is your mom? (I just nod) shit I never connected the dots and you never showed me pictures of your mom. I'm in deep shit nhe (he whispers that last part to me.)

Khanyi: You are definitely in deep shit.

Me: You can't tell him mom

Khanyi: Oh no sweetie I'm not the one telling him you guys are and you are doing it tonight. Me: Mom please not tonight maybe tomorrow

Khanyi: how stupid do you think your father is. Look at the way you guys looks at each other. It's written all over you.

Mcebisi: your mom is right Lina. Let's just do it and know that it's done.

Me: right now you are going to be walking in to the lions den those guys out there are going to eat you alive. What you went through with Khaya is nothing compared to what you are going to go through now.

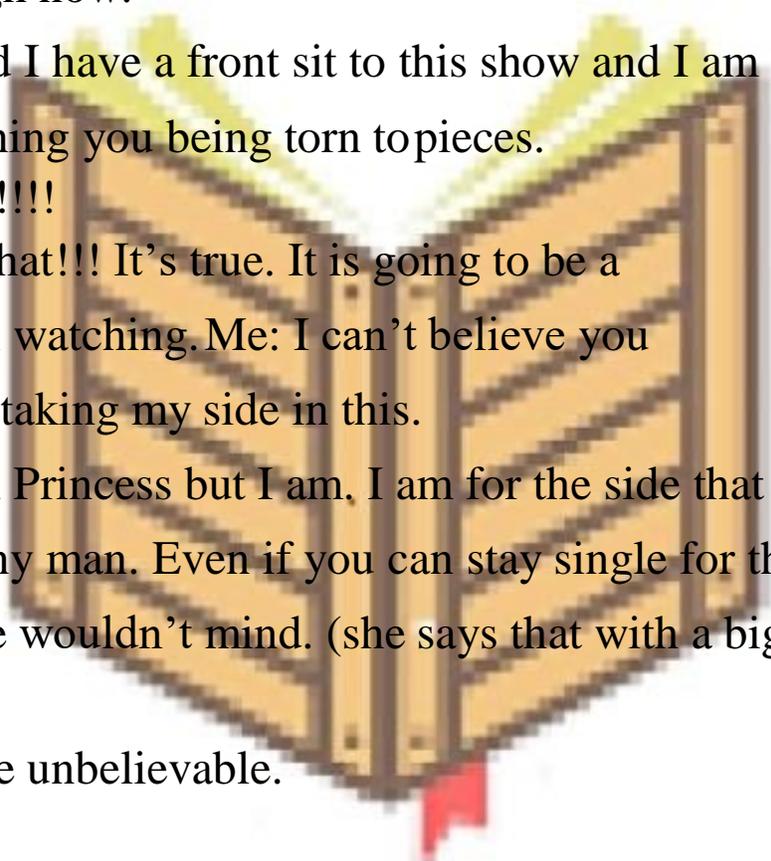
Khanyi: and I have a front sit to this show and I am going to enjoy watching you being torn topieces.

Me: MOM!!!!

Khanyi: What!!! It's true. It is going to be a show worth watching. Me: I can't believe you you should taking my side in this.

Khanyi: Oh Princess but I am, I am for the side that protects you from any man. Even if you can stay single for the rest of your life we wouldn't mind. (she says that with a big smile on herface)

Me: you are unbelievable.



Khanyi: I know right.

Mcebisi: Hey look at me don't worry about me I'll be fine.

Your mom likes me already. The fact that she hired me to run her company means that she trusts me and she likes me.

Khanyi: My daughter and my business those are two very different things. I can't wait for her dad to deep fry you.

Qhawe: who am I deep frying? (he asks as he walks in probably on his way upstairs.) Hey Mcebisi you are here. How are you?

Mcebisi: I'm good and you

Qhawe: I'm good. So who am I deep frying. Wait hold that thought I'll be back just now. (He says going upstairs.)

Khanyi: AYEYEYE!!!! (My mother is really enjoying this) come let's go to the kitchen (as soon as we walk into the kitchen Lungi is the first one to notice Mcebisi.)

Lungi: SHIT!!! SHIT!!!! (and she drops the glass she was holding)

Ncesh: Hayibo Lungi what is wrong with you what happened?

Khanyi: She just went into shock (and my mom laughs after saying that statement and Khaya walks in as well and immediately sees Mcebisi)

Khaya: EISHA!!!! We are dead. Thando: what is

wrong with these kids.

Khanyi: I told you they just went into shock  
Ncesh:

someone please explain.

Me: Aunt Ncesh

Sponsored

Aunt Thando; this is the guy I was telling you guys about Mcebisi Mkhize. Babe these are my aunts.

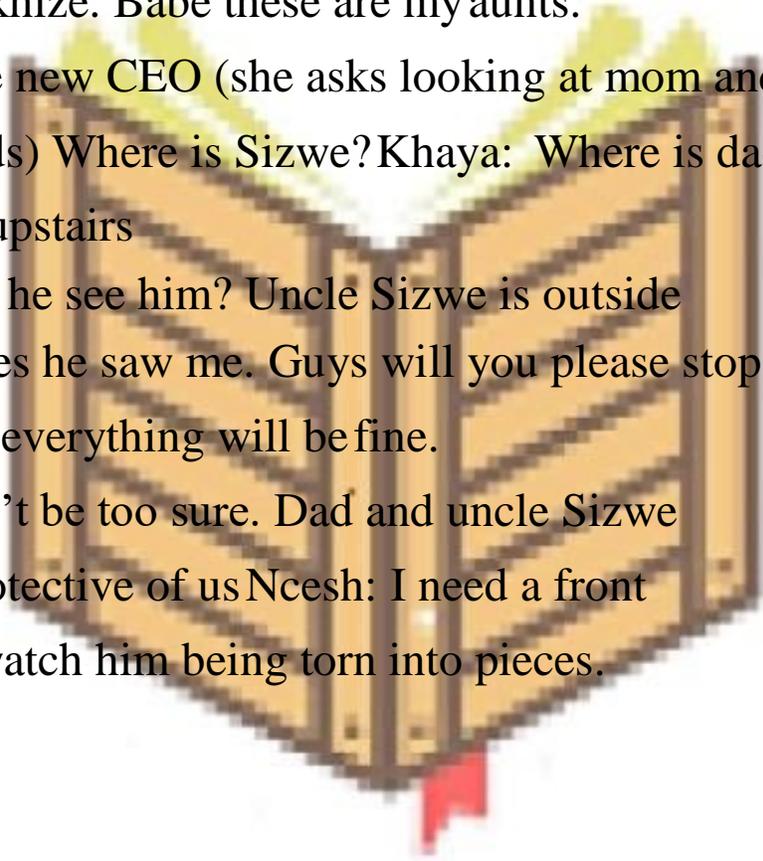
Ncesh: The new CEO (she asks looking at mom and she just nods) Where is Sizwe? Khaya: Where is dad?

Me: He is upstairs

Khaya: did he see him? Uncle Sizwe is outside

Mcebisi: Yes he saw me. Guys will you please stop worrying. He likes so everything will be fine.

Khaya: don't be too sure. Dad and uncle Sizwe are very protective of us Ncesh: I need a front row sit to watch him being torn into pieces.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mcebisi: Lina can I at least have something to munch on before I'm thrown into the den. Thando: Oh God we have another Lwazi

Mcebisi: is that a bad thing?

Ncesh: we definitely have another Lwazi.

Me: am I the only one scared out of her mind right now.

Thando: why are you scared you heard your man say he is going to be fine because your dad likes him since he is like your uncle Lwazi I'm definitely sure he is going to ok. (my aunt is being sarcastic right now)

Khaya: You know that is not true.

Lwazi: I heard my name what's going on? Hey Mcebisi you are here. Join us outside. Khaya where are the glasses hurry up your woman is fine around these women although she looks like she's seen a ghost right now.

Mcebisi: she is going to be fine I'm sure. (and they walk out)

Khanyi: definitely another Lwazi. You really know how to choose you had to choose one of your uncles in your boyfriend. You could have at least chosen another Bandile.

Qhawe: what boyfriend? (hayike this is it for me. I might as well get ready for my funeral. Mom turns to look at me and then dad and then me) Princess what's going on? You have a boyfriend (he grabs a seat and sits down and pats a seat next to him for me to sit. Everyone in the kitchen is looking at us and Mcebisi is outside with the guys)

Me: Yes dad I have a boyfriend and you don't have to worry

I'm still a virgin and he 27 years old.

Qhawe: that's a 7 years gap Princess are you comfortable with that. it makes him more experienced than you and probably more matured depending on how he was raised and his personality. (ok this is taking a different turn I wonder how is he going to feel when he finds who it is.) How long have you been dating?

Me: a year now.

Qhawe: a whole year Princess and you didn't tell me about him.

Khanyi: don't worry my King you are not the only she didn't tell. I also just found out today but your older son and his girlfriend know about him they've even met him

Qhawe: oh! When am I

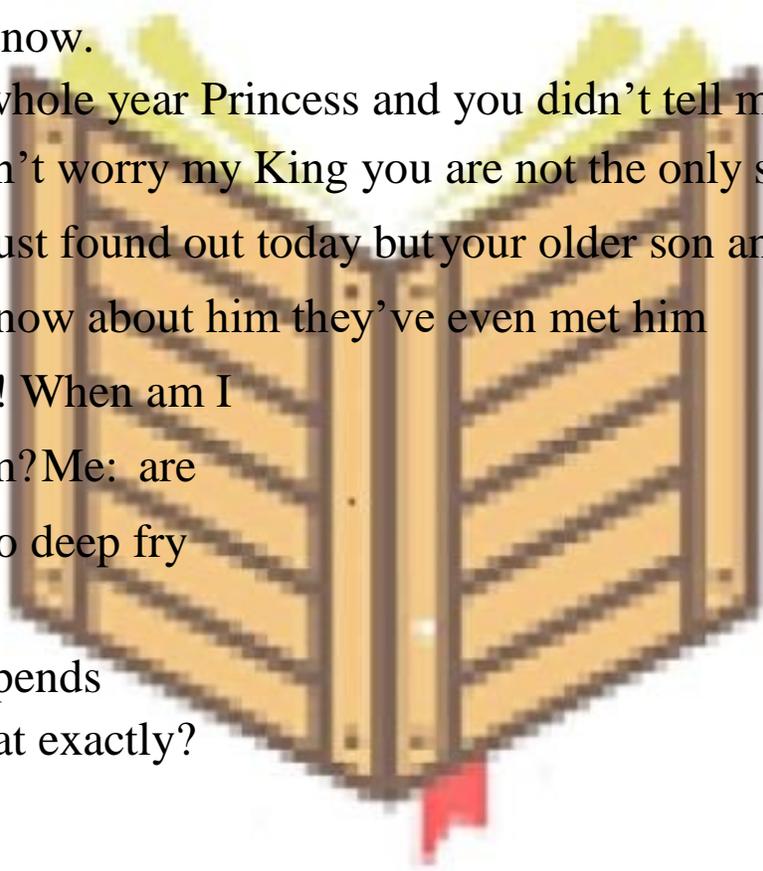
meeting him? Me: are

you going to deep fry

him?

Qhawe: depends

Me: on what exactly?



Qhawe: if I like him or not. So who is he and what does he do for a living? I have to know that he can take care of you no matter what he does for a living.

Thando: oh you don't have to worry about that. he will definitely be able to take care of her. (Just then Mcebisi walks in and everyone turns to look at him)

Mcebisi: HOLY CRAP!!!!

Qhawe: and then what's wrong with you? Ncesh: I think he just went into shock.

Qhawe: shock from what?

Me: dad remember you asked me who my boyfriend was (I turn to look at Mcebisi and the my dad and I don't think he's connecting the dots) he is mom's new CEO

Qhawe: WHAT!!! Him?? (he asks looking at Mcebisi) Me: Yes dad

him

Qhawe: You had to choose someone who's like your uncle Lwazi. I should kill him right now we don't need another Lwazi in our lives.

Me: but you said it depends if you like him or not and I know you like him. The way you are looking at him right now doesn't say you want to kill him. Dad I really love him and I would really appreciate it if you gave us your blessing.

Mcebisi: did you just say you love me? (I turn to look at him and I look at Lungi who is smiling at me and she nods)

Linamandla did you just say you love me? (I look at him and just nod my head.) I can't hear you Princess

Me: yes I did. (he walks close to me lifts and spins me around. He puts me down and looks me in the eyes with my face in his hands and kisses the life out of me.)

Qhawe: ok that's enough. She is still my daughter. (he gets up from his chair and kisses my cheek.) I love you Princess.

Mcebisi come with me (and they both walk outside to the other guys.)

Ncesh: Let the show begin....

## CHAPTER 75

### THE LION'S DEN

\*

\*

\*

MCE

BISI

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

When Lina told me about her family being over protective I thought she was exaggerating never thought her mom could be my boss. I just never connected the dots. Now I'm sitting with all these men in front me and I'm about to be grilled. If I said I wasn't scared I would be lying but I have to man up because I love this girl. I've dated girls but all they ever wanted was my money was for me to do things for them and Lina is different. Yes she is still in school she never asks me anything. Anything I do for her I do it because I want to do. I take care of her because I want to. I know she gets an allowance from her parents I mean they do everything for her but I still take care of her.

Qhawe: Gentlemen you remember Mcebisi right

Bandile: yes we met at the hospital. I must say I was impressed with how he wanted to deal with Nkosikhona I'm sure if he didn't walk out with Khaya at that moment he probably would have given Nkosikhona that beating.

Eddie: he is just like Lwazi. They'll probably be best friends.

(these guys are talking about me like I'm not even here.

Lina's mom and her aunts are really enjoying this.)

Andile: and thank you for your quick acting that day. Mama bear and her babies are ok.

Me: it was nothing really. I did what any of you would have done. Do you mind if I have something to drink.

Andile: Beer?

Me: No thanks anything

non-alcoholic. Andile:

what you don't drink

alcohol

Me: actually I do I just have a rugby game tomorrow  
Lwazi: I see.

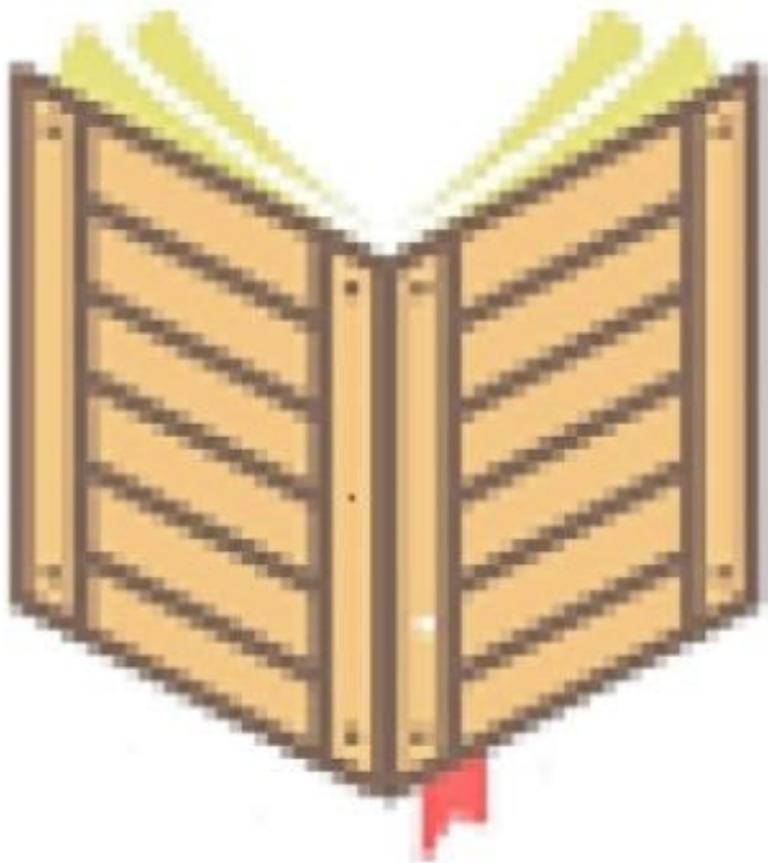
Qhawe: Lina you know what he drinks please bring him his drink. (my baby immediately gets up and goes to the kitchen and everyone is quiet until Lina comes back and she does what she always does when she serves me. She gives me my glass of juice placed on a small tray looking at me and slightly bending her knees as if to bow at me.)

Bandile: did she just?????

Qhawe: Yep exactly how her mom serves me.

Sizwe: wait a minute what's going on are you dating my niece? That kind of respect is not just given she wouldn't bow unless.....

Qhawe: yes he is dating my daughter



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sizwe: Who are you again just so I know what to put on your tombstone? (Lina and Khaya were not lying these guys are hectic. I take a sip of my juice)

Me: I'm Mcebisi Mkhize born and bred in KZN moved to Cape Town when I went to varsity been living there ever since. My parents are here they live in Tongaat.

Lwazi: is my niece still intact boy? Me: very much so.

Lwazi: what's wrong with you are you gay and using my niece to hide it. Me: no I'm not. I just respect her. she says she's not ready so I'll wait. Bandile: How long have you been dating her?

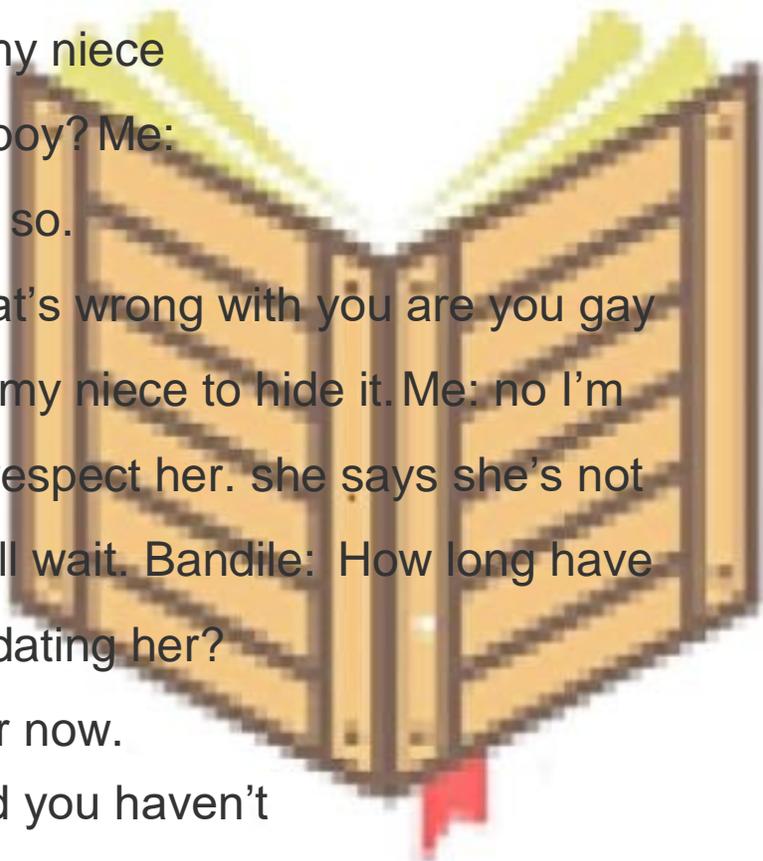
Me: a year now.

Sizwe: and you haven't

had sex in year? Eddie:

that's impossible

Me: actually it's not when you truly love someone. It's not that I didn't try to have sex with someone. I did with one of my ex fuck buddies and I couldn't get it up. All I could see was Lina's face all I could hear was her voice. And



NOVELSGURU.COM

yes she knows about it I told her about the incident I must say the punishment I got made me never to look at another woman.

Andile: what punishment.

Me: she told her brother and I would rather not talk about what happened afterwards. (I look at Khaya and he shrugs and gave me that look that says I told you so.)

Qhawe: Good. You are not breaking that cookie ever. I don't care if she doesn't give me grandbabies I have enough kids

Lina: DAD!!!

Qhawe: what Princess it's true. I don't want him touching you that way I can't deal with it. Lina: You

and mom are being impossible. I want to have kids and that's not up to you Khanyi: Hayibo Princess I

didn't say anything (just then the sisters walk in and they are so shocked. I met them on a video call they had with Lina a few weeks ago they saw me in the background and wanted to know who I was and Lina had to tell them)

Them: OH MY GOD!!!!

Khanyi: wait you know him you knew and

none of you said anything Zenande: it was not our news to tell mom and you know it.

Sibahle: it's true it was not our place to say anything. Lisakhanya: I want to watch this. He's getting deep fried tonight

Lwanele: Unless he talks his way out of it just like uncle Lwazi who always tries to talk his way out of a sticky situation but somehow remain in that sticky situation.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwazi: How did this become about me

Me: It's not they are just comparing me to you I don't even know why we are nothing alike. Lwazi: you can say that again.

Me: We are nothing alike. (khaya looks at me with a raised eyebrow) what? He said I should say it again.

Khaya: not literally you dim wit

Eddie: we definitely do not need another Lwazi in our lives let's get rid of him.

Me: You can't do that. ( I look at Lina and she smiles and nods. She taught me a few things about her uncles and right now I might just be able to save my ass.

Qhawe: and exactly why not?

Me: I love her so much that I don't see a future without her in it let's get rid of him.

Me: You can't do that. ( I look at Lina and she smiles and nods. She taught me a few things about her uncles and right now I might just be able to save my ass.

Qhawe: and exactly why not?

Me: I love her so much that I don't see a future without her in it plus you love your Princess and you wouldn't hurt her like that.

Sizwe: she'll get over it she probably hasn't told you she

loves you yet you are probably just a learning curve

Me: No she won't get over it because

she loves me ask her dad Qhawe: she

told me she loves him

Little man: I like this one he is better than you uncle

Lwazi. Looks like he's getting out of this one alive. Let's

keep him.

Lina: Lonwabo why would say it like as if he is some kind of pet. (oh this is one of the little brothers the one that comes after.)

Lonwabo: hey don't complain I'm helping you out unless you want to spend the next month sleeping on a wet pillow.

Lina: Mxm. He is doing fine on his own

Little man2: not for long dear sister he needs to do better than this. I'm Ntando by the way and that's Lonwabo we

are the little brothers and the twins are Bandile and

Banele. They are the big brothers they come after Khaya.

They are just waiting for you to say all the wrong things so that they can kill you. So far I must say you are doing

good keeping yourself alive but the question is for how

long. (I have come to a conclusion that everyone in this

house is simply just crazy.)

Bandile (Twin): Thank you Ntando for that statement and for the introduction



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Zenande: I'm with Lonwabo let's keep him look at how he is standing up to you you've got to admire his courage.

Sibahle: I must say he met the family in the most unconventional way. Eddie: I'm still not convinced

Me: Oh come on what could I possibly say more than what I've already said to convince you. You are being impossible. That woman is my future I die where she dies.

Andile: the kids are vouching for you they want us to keep you maybe we should .

Me: (I turn to look at Lina) You have one crazy family babe. ( she walks up to me stands between my legs and hugs me.)

Lina: I'm so sorry babe for my family besides all this they like you they really do. Thando: hayibo

Lina don't speak for us we didn't say we like him.

Qhawe: I'm putting him on probation?

Lina: dad come on probation for what? You know what you hurting me now. this is enough I can't take it anymore you've tortured him enough now.

Khanyi: Hayi Lina don't be so dramatic. We haven't done anything to him. We are just talking to the man

besides I don't see anything wrong with putting him on probation.

Me: babe look at me. I can take it. I

handle this. Don't worry. Banele: what are your intentions?

Me: (Lina moves back to her seat) I want to make her my wife I want to have a family with her I want to take care of her as I am already taking care of her. I want to love only her for the rest of our lives grow old together.

Sizwe: You are getting three months probation one screw up and you are gone. Me: probation period accepted. Can we eat I am hungry from all this talking.

Bandile: definitely another Lwazi. Are you sure you two are not related

Me: No we are not related. He's ugly and I'm handsome so we definitely not related Eddie:

Definitely another Lwazi and he is going to make it for us to get rid of him Me: can we continue

later I'm really hungry and I can't concentrate when I'm hungry

(her mom looks at me and shakes her head with a smile on her face. I guess I was right they like me.)

\*

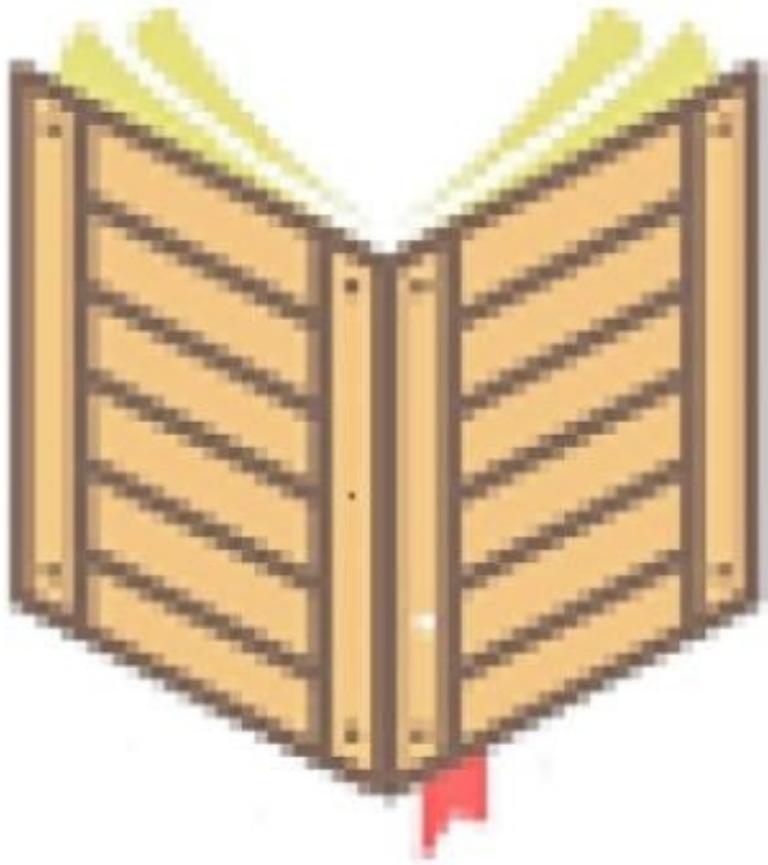
\*

\*

SINDI

SWA

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

\*

I'm getting better everyday. I've been staying at Qhawe's house. I haven't spoken to my mom since I came here and I must say it feels good not to hear her voice in my head everyday. I don't think I'll be able to sleep tonight.

Tomorrow I am meeting my father and I am so nervous. I wanted to speak to Khanyi and find out a little bit more about him since she knows him but they haven't told her that Mncedi Tom is my father. I am so scared. I'm starting a new chapter in my life and it really scares me but there's one thing I know for sure I am not going back to stay with my mother. I have never felt so free and amazingly enough the people I tried to destroy are the ones helping me now to get better and get on my feet. Siphosaid that meeting my father is the first I have to take on this road to healing.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*

\*

\*

## MNCEDI TOM

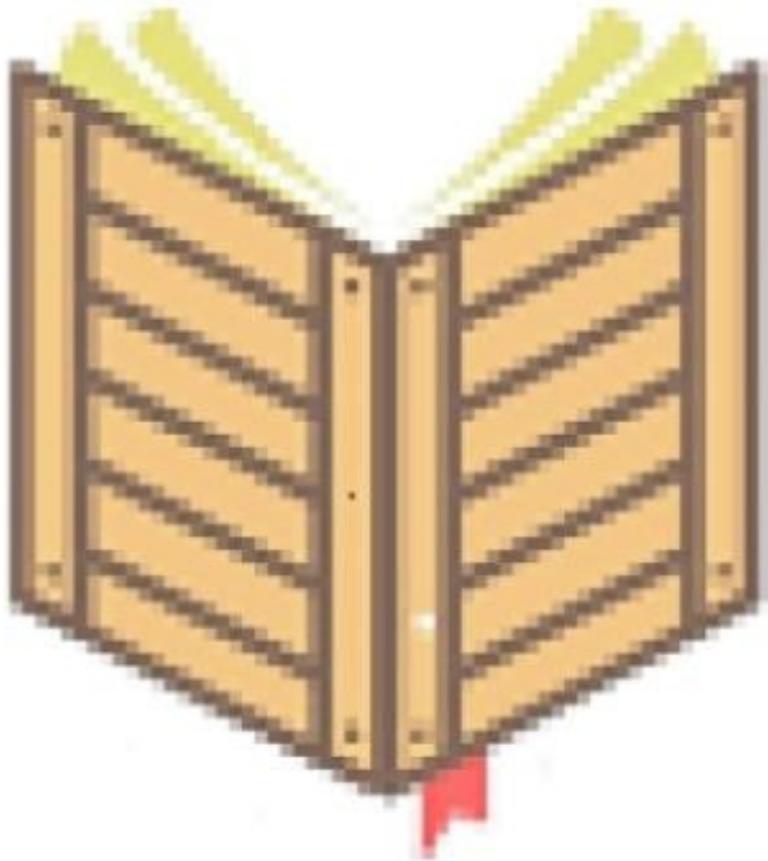
\*  
\*  
\*

Finally I am going to meet my daughter. I have watched her grow from a distance. She is such a beautiful woman and I pray and hope that Siphon will be good to her. I have fought for her and protected her from a distance but I failed to protect her from her own mother. Wineka is a very cold hearted person. She kept her away from me. I tried so hard to be a part of her life but her mother wouldn't have me in her life. Why did I expect her to when she broke up with me because I was poor she left me for a rich man that she ended up killing. I'm glad she left me otherwise that would have been me. I have been so scared to get close to my daughter scared of rejection mostly. I hope that she will accept me and accept my apology. I know I should have fought harder but I didn't and that's probably one of the questions she is going to ask. I can't wait for tomorrow.

SUNDAY

\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

SINDI

SWA

\*

\*

\*

I'm sitting at Spur at the mall I'm early way too early and I am so nervous. Apparently my father also requested that Siphos join us and that will make things easy for me. I wonder if we are going to get along I wonder what's he like what kind of relationship would we have had had we had a chance to have to one. What kind of relationship are we going to have now. I know one thing that it won't be easy and apparently I have two brothers and I'm the only girl. I wonder if I'll get along with all of them will they like me I am really nervous and I need to stop over thinking this whole thing. I should just go with the flow.

Siphos walks in and walks to the table where I am sitting.

Siphos: You look beautiful (he gives a hug and a kiss) Me: You don't look too bad yourself.

Siphos: Have been you

been here long? Me:

Not really just thirty

minutes.

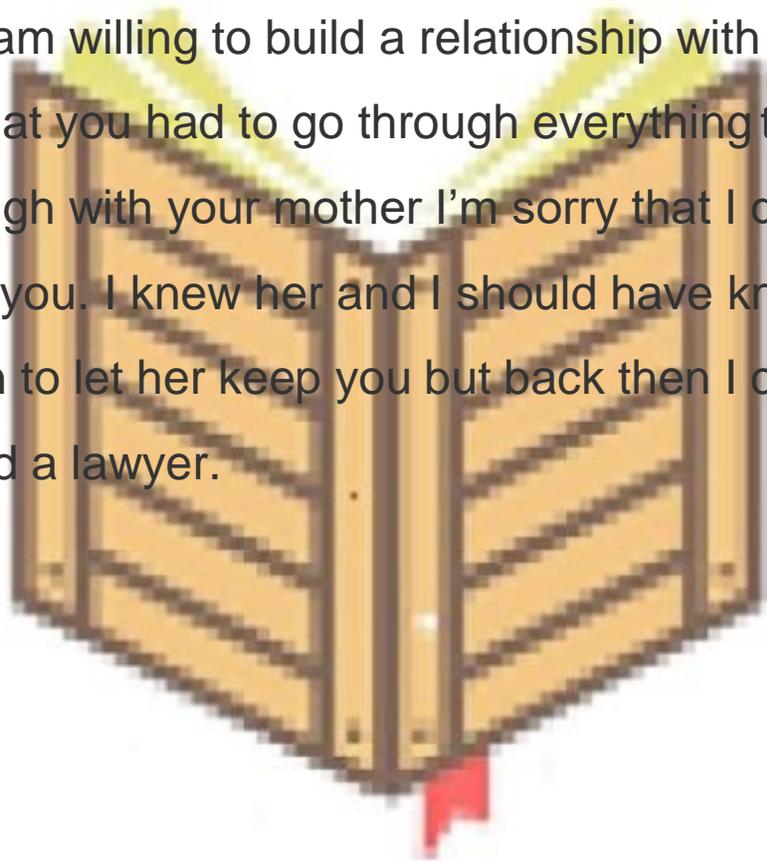
Sipho: you must be really nervous. Just don't over think the whole situation. (just then I see a man walking over to us and he looks like me. Oh my God we look so much alike. He comes and stands next me I stand as well looking at him and I am almost as tall as him. I guess I take after him which makes me wonder if it's the reason why my mother has been treating me like this. I remind her of something that she lost had she been patient and supported him she would probably be the one married to my father right now.

Him: you are so beautiful and you look so much like me (he hugs me tight and I think he is crying) I have wanted to do this for so long. The time I have lost with you. I should have fought harder I should have never thought you would safe with her. (he pulls out of the hug with tears in his eyes and kisses both my cheeks and we all sit down.) How are you doing?

Me: I'm fine and how are you?

Mncedi: I'm happy now that I am finally sitting in front of

my daughter and talking to her. You know you are the only daughter I have and you have two younger brothers who can't wait to meet you. I didn't want to overwhelm you today by meeting everyone. My wife also wants to meet you. She is so excited that we are finally going to be father and daughter. I know it is going to take some time but I am willing to build a relationship with you. I am so sorry that you had to go through everything that you went through with your mother I'm sorry that I didn't fight harder for you. I knew her and I should have known better than to let her keep you but back then I could n't even afford a lawyer.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: what happened between you and mom?

Mncedi: when I met your mother I had a job where I was earning a minum wage. For a year in our relationship things were fine we were happy. I took care of her did everything for her. She got pregnant in the second year of our relationship and she started changing. She kept telling me about her friends who get expensive stuff from their man and at that time one of the women had a car which her husband bought for her. I tried talking to her to try and make her see reason and it looked like she understood but little did I know that she was cheating on me whilst pregnant with you but to cut the story short. She left when you about 2 years old she got married to a man that had money he had his own company basically the man was a better option for her. She left me for a guy who had more money than I did and took you away from me saying that she won't have her child grow up poor like she did.

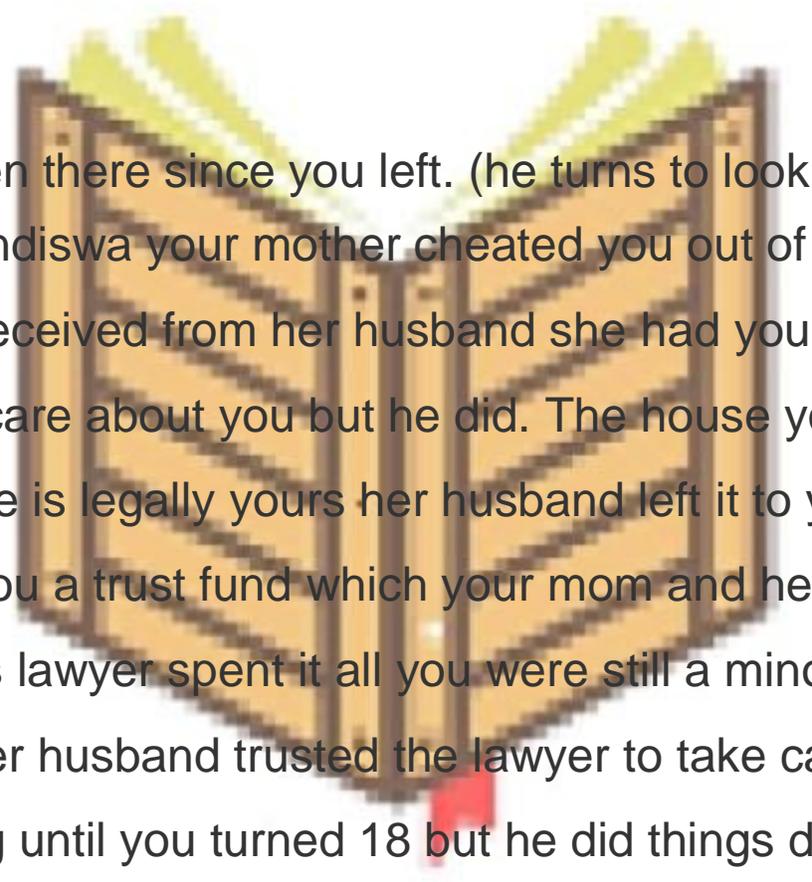
Me: wow this woman loves money.

Sipho: there's omething that you need to know about your mother

Mncedi: I am not trying to turn you against your mother by

telling you all these things I just want you to be well informed when you make the decisions that you are going to have to make for your life. As we speak your mother has been held hostage in your apartment

Sponsored

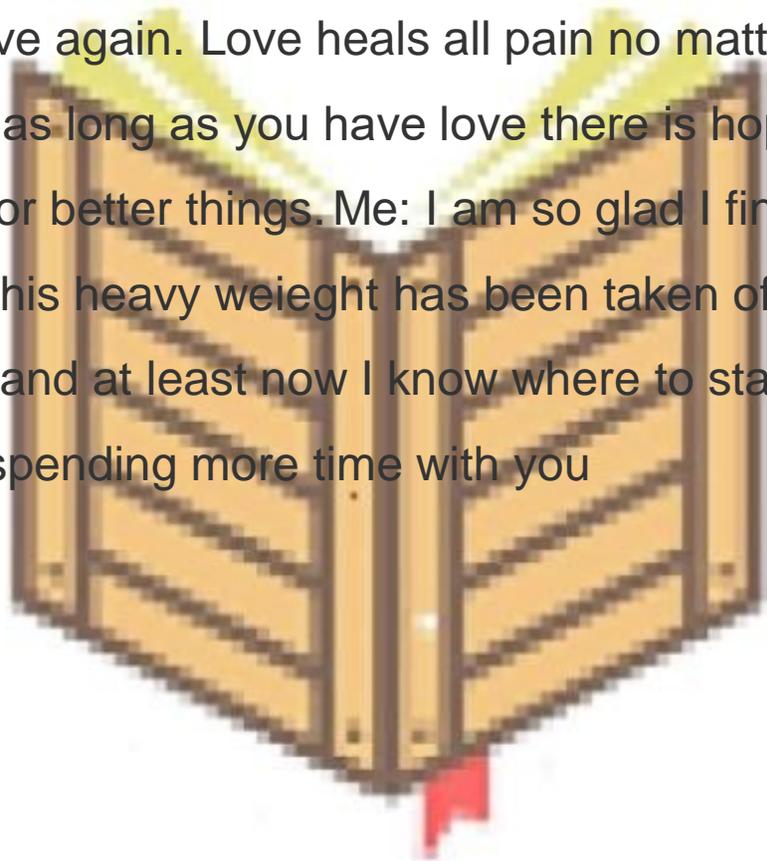


she 's been there since you left. (he turns to look Siph)

Siph: Sindiswa your mother cheated you out of money that you received from her husband she had you think that he didn't care about you but he did. The house you stay in back home is legally yours her husband left it to you. He also left you a trust fund which your mom and her husband's lawyer spent it all you were still a minor when he died her husband trusted the lawyer to take care of everything until you turned 18 but he did things differently and spent the money with your mother. Me: I really don't know what to say I'm trying to get my head around everything you guys are telling. Mncedi: at least now you know. All I want right now is to try and build a relationship with you but I won't put any pressure on you. I am so

sorry. She did everything in her power to keep me away from you but I never gave up on you. I knew that one day I will have a chance to be with you again even if it's for two minutes. I love you Sindiswa very much that's why I never gave up on

you. Please my child don't hold any grudges open your heart to love again. Love heals all pain no matter how bad things are as long as you have love there is hope there's still hope for better things. Me: I am so glad I finally met you I feel this heavy weight has been taken off my shoulders and at least now I know where to start and that would be spending more time with you



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*

\*

\*

QHA

WE

\*

\*

\*

Last night turned to be a surprise. My daughter has a boyfriend and he works for us now and he is Seven years older than the Princess which truly scares me because he is has more experienced. I walk into Lina's room

Me: may I come in

Lina": yes dad you may come in.

Me: let's sit I want us to talk (she comes and sits next to me.) You are my Princess and that means I will do everything in my to protect you hence we are here now.

He is much older than you and that makes him more experienced than you but I want you to never allow him to put you under pressure about anything. If you are not ready for anything he needs to understand and if he doesn't understand then you walk away.

Lina: I know dad. He doesn't put me under pressure

about anything dad. Instead I learn from him he has taught me a lot too about life. I know that you love me and you want to protect me and I appreciate that. but dad you need to know that I am growing up. I want to get married one day and have kids of my own. Even if that may be so I will always be your princess no matter what.

Me: Do you love him?

Lina: yes dad I love him and I know he loves me too. The way he handled himself with you guys tells me that he loves me.

Me: don't get me wrong baby. I like the guy and I think that he'll be good for you. He might be another Lazwi but I think he is perfect for you but that doesn't mean I won't break his jaw when he hurts you. I want you to feel free to talk to me Princess about anything ok.

Lina: yes dad. If he hurts me **than** I'll definitely tell you and you will have my permission to break more than just his jaw.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: He can only come here by invitation or if your mom or me grant you permission to bring him over just like we do with Khaya and Lungi. He can never sleepover at this house unless he makes you his wife. He can never lay a

hand on you and if he does you tell me. Lina I may not be your biological father but I love you like you are my own child. In fact you are my child in everyway and I



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

am glad your father screwed up because it meant that I get to gain a wonderful daughter and wonderful son. I love you Princess.

Lina: you are my father in every way possible no one can tell me otherwise. I loved you the minute you decided that you wanted to be a part of our lives. I am grateful to have you in my life and I will always cherish the relationship we have and you will always have my respect as my father. I love you too daddy.

## CHAPTER 77

MON

DAY

ANDI

LE

NOVELSGURU.COM

What's taking Luyanda so long? I swear this guy has a woman and he is not telling us about it. Speak of the devil.

Me: what took you so long I've been waiting for you  
Luyanda: I'll

explain later

Me: who ever she is she is really keeping you busy you must really be into her if you are spending so much time with her. we haven't seen you in a while and Khanyi is about to send a search party out for you.

Luyanda: Khanyi can be dramatic at times. I think it's worse now that she is pregnant. Me: she's not being dramatic and she's very clingy now on all of us especially with Qhawe. (Lwazi walks in as well)

Lwazi: I don't understand why we have to suffer we are not the ones that made her pregnant. Qhawe must deal with her moods.

Luyanda: As long as we are the family we are we are going to suffer but I do feel for Qhawe because he suffers more.

Lwazi: who told you Qhawe was suffering. Sukuthetha into ingekhoyo apha (don't speak nonsense) Qhawe is enjoying every minute of this. They even crave the same food can you imagine. Those two are going to be looking like elephants soon.

Me: don't ever say that in front of Khanyi if you want to keep your head. Come on let's go. We have a lot to do. (we leave my on our way to see Wineka.)

Lwazi: I thought we were going to have something eat first. I can't deal with that woman hungry.

Me: I don't understand why you didn't eat at Thando's place since you slept over there last night didn't she make you breakfast.

Lwazi: She did and that was two hours ago.

Luyanda: you need to be checked something is wrong with you. I hear there's a mini you in the family

Lwazi: why is every body comparing me to this kid. Me:

because you guys are just alike.

Luyanda: did you guys look him up is he good for our Princess? Me: We looked him up and he looks good.

Lwazi: Plus he is on a three months probation. I can't wait for him to screw up. Lina is too young to be dating she shouldn't date period.

Me: that's what Qhawe and Sizwe were saying but we can't keep her from dating actually we can't keep all of them from dating we just have to be there for them when they need us.

(when we get to Sindy's apartment her mom was having breakfast) Morning

Wineka: Morning when am I getting out of here? Me: today if

you do everything we tell you.

Wineka: and what exactly do I need to do?

Lwazi: before we tell you that we want you to understand

something wait is there more food Wineka: in the kitchen. (he quickly goes to the kitchen and dishes up for himself and comes back.)

Lwazi: As I was saying we want you to understand that we don't like what you did to your daughter

Wineka: what it's it to you she is my daughter you don't even know her why should you care what happens to her?

Me: your daughter almost got hurt because of you you sent her to go after the wrong man if she hadn't told us about what you were doing to her we wouldn't be here now protecting her making sure that it doesn't happen again.

Wineka: She couldn't have told you she didn't know I was drugging.

Luyanda: You would be surprised at what she knows. We are not cruel people. We protect our own and those that need to be protected and your daughter needed us to protect her from you.

Me: this is going to be simple your daughter doesn't want to see you right now you are going to leave and go back to the Eastern Cape alone she is staying here. We spoke to her previous boss you start work next week so that she doesn't have to deal with phone calls from you asking for money. For your sake it is imperative that you do everything we tell you.

Luyanda.

Luyanda: Ever since she started working she has been saving money for you she opened an account in your name and she has been saving for you should anything happen to her and now she is giving you the card to that account what you do with the money in that is up to you and that is almost R150 000. She has also been taking care of the house which now you will continue to do since you will be working. You need sign these as well.

Wineka: What are those?

Luyanda: these are transfere papers to the house. You are transferring ownership of the house to her it is her house after all.

Wineka: then if I do that I'm left with nothing

Lwazi: As it was intended to be by your husband. It's punishment for your cruel ways. I admire your dear husband punishing you from beyond the grave. Sign the papers dear this is not open for discussion and we don't have all day.

Luyanda: She is still letting you stay in the house you should be thankful of that. Lwazi: if it was me I would be charging you rent.

Wineka: I need to talk to ..... (Luyanda interrupts her before she could say anything) Luyanda: Like Lwazi said none of this is open for discussion just sign the papers.

Me: you need to start packing as well. You need to be at the airport in two hours. Your flight leaves in two hours.

Wineka: I need to see my daughter.

Luyanda: Like we said before she doesn't want to see you she

will call when she is ready. You are leaving without seeing her. be thankful you are walking away and that she is not burying you. If it wasn't for her asking us not hurt you you would dead right now. I hate people like you if it was up to me you would be in jail. Sindy should have just allowed me to have you arrested for attempted murder. NXA

Lwazi: Pack up your ride is already here. Wineka:

where is she?

Me: Qhawe's house and you need to be out of here before she comes back. Wineka: at least got him

Me: that's what you think. You don't get it do you I feel sorry for you.

\*

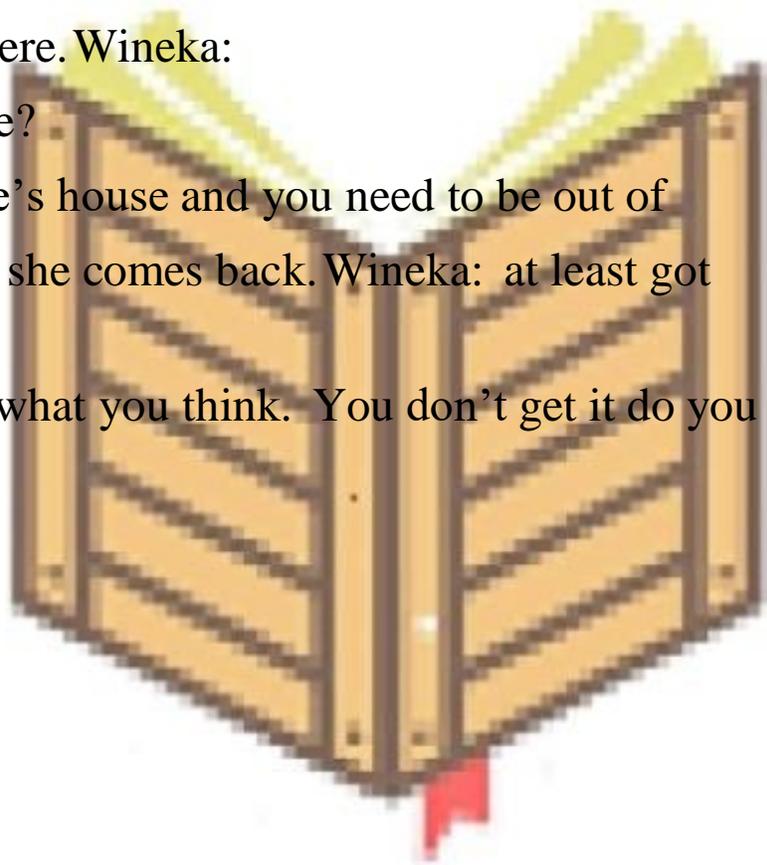
\*

\*

KHA

YA

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

Life has been good so far. Lungi is an awesome woman she has been great. At least now the family knows about Mcebisi. As I walk into the building security is still tight as ever but the guys know me.

Me: I'm here to see Mcebisi Mkhize

Receptionist: Let me see if he is available (I wait as she checks if he is available and she hasn't taken her eyes off me since I spoke to her and she is smiling from ear to ear. This girl has had a crush on me for a while now

Sponsored

security is still tight as ever but the guys know me. Me: I'm here to see Mcebisi Mkhize

Receptionist: Let me see if he is available (I wait as she checks if he is available and she hasn't taken her eyes off me since I spoke to her and she is smiling from ear to ear. This girl has had a crush on me for a while now she really needs to get over it. it's not cute anymore.) You can go through he will see you.

Me: thank you (I say heading towards the elevator.) You've here been what a week and mom already has you buried in

paper work.

Mcebisi: I think this is punishment for dating your sister.

Me: You'll survive. Don't try too hard to convince them you love her. Let them see it for themselves like you did with me you already have their approval the probation thing is just a scare tactic just relax man. All they want is for their kids to be happy.

Mcebisi: to honest with you I have never seen anything like that. You guys are really united for a bunch of people who are not related to each other and how the guys love you guys as if you were their own kids it's amazing and my mom will get along with your mom and the aunts.

Me: You are still going to see a whole more. We have our problems just like everybody else and we don't always agree with each other on things but we try to deal with things in a way that doesn't cause conflict. We talk things through. The golden rule of my family is that we never go to bed angry at each other.

Mcebisi: that's awesome man.

Me: I wanted to check if you were still alive after Saturday.

Mcebisi: I'm still alive and settling in well. I love the apartment the company gave me it's awesome.

Me: what are you doing this weekend? Mcebisi: I have plans with Lina why?

Me: how about we make it a double date then I was going to ask you guys to join me and Lungi Mcebisi: I'm sure Lina won't mind. How about we go out for lunch the mall is not far from here I need to get a few things as well.

Me: No problem. (he grabs his stuff and we leave.)

Mcebisi: I want to ask you about this project that you have with your brothers (he asks as we settle in our table at Spur.)

Me: what do you want to know.

Mcebisi: Nothing really I already know what the project is all about I saw the file in the office since the company is one of the sponsors. I would like to join you guys. I love what it stands for.

Me: I'll have to speak to my brothers about it and I'm sure they won't have a problem. (and my eyes land on someone I never thought I would see again and she walks over to our table.)

Her: Khaya how are you? Me: I'm good.

Her: I've been trying to get a hold of you you

blocked me everywhere. ME: that's because we have nothing to talk about

Her: what do you mean we have nothing to talk about you never even let me explain.

Me: explain what exactly the fact that I caught you in bed with another knowing very well I had a key to your apartment. So tell me dear what the hell is there to talk about.

Mcebisi: let me get this straight you gave him the key to your apartment then you decide to sleep with another man knowing that some else has a key and they can walk in anytime.

Me: It still puzzles me too.

Mcebisi: and you have the nerve to stand here and say he never gave you a chance to explain explain what? (just then the waitress brings our food) thank you (he says looking at the waitress)

Me: Look there is nothing to talk about. Please leave and let us eat our food in peace. Her: Khaya please I still love you and I want us to try again.

Mcebisi: like the man said please leave

us alone Barbie Her: this has nothing to do with you and don't call me that.

Mcebisi: why not you look like one (she takes out a piece of paper and writes something on it.

Her: Khaya take this that's my number please call me. (Mcebisi takes the paper put it in his mouth and chews it.

Mcebisi: he won't be doing that at anytime. After this he is going to see his fiancé.

Her: you are getting married? (she looks shocked and I don't understand. Did she really think I would still be sulking over what she did.

Mcebisi: in two weeks time. Don't bother him again. (she looks at me with tears her eyes) Me: Bye Barbie. (she walks away)

Mcebisi: you dated that?

Me: don't say anything. Let's eat.

\*

\*

\*

SIZ

WE

\*

\*

\*

Me: how are you guys doing?

Anelisa: we are good and how are you? This is not a scheduled visit what's going on?

Me: I'm good. I have good news for you. My lawyer has been working on your case and you are going to be released but you are going to be place under house arrest.

Anelisa: how is that possible Sizwe?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: it took a lot of work and lot of convincing that you are doing well and it helped that Khanyi and Qhawe were willing drop the charges against you but because they didn't lay the charges on you and detective Nxele is the one that opened the case since the police were called to the scene when the shooting happened. Eventually he also agreed to the house arrest.

Anelisa: Thank you so much baby thank you thank you. (she says hugging and kissed me but she quickly pulled back.) I'm sorry I didn't mean to call you that and I'm sorry I kissed you. (I look at her for a while and she tries to walk away and go sit on the other side of the table but I grab her hand and pull her closer to me and kiss the living day light out of her. I pull out of the kiss when she moans and the guard clears his throat.)

Me: Don't be sorry. I know that i hurt you I did terrible things to you but right now at this very moment I want to know if you could ever forgive me and give us a chance because I love you

Anelisa: I understand why you did what you did to me and I have forgiven you a long time ago because I love you too I've always loved you Sizwe just that my obsession with Qhawe kept me

from seeing a good thing in front of me. I don't understand why you want to be with me knowing my history with Qhawe. I cheated on him twice and even though I didn't love him as much as I love you and couldn't handle his size I should have stayed loyal Qhawe never cheated on me not even once he is just one of those men who can't cheat. How do you know I won't do the same to you?

Me: Anelisa you have changed as I would like to believe I have changed too and this is not about what you did in the past this is about what type of woman you want to be from here on this is about the future about what we both we want. Back then you didn't know what you wanted. I would like to believe that right now you know what you want and where you want to be in life.

Anelisa: Yes I know what I want. I want second chance to to be a mother I want a second chance at love I want to be love and appreciated. Most importantly I want your love Sizwe I want to be a part of this child's life. I want to raise this baby with you.

Me: then it's official we are trying this. (she smiles at me and I just kiss her. it's a good thing she is getting out otherwise my visits would be stopped because of breaking the rules.)

## CHAPTER 78

3MONTHS LATER

\*

\*

\*

BAND

ILE

\*

\*

\*

It's been a peaceful three months no drama. Who am I kidding we have a pregnant woman in the family and she is very demanding. I think Qhawe should take leave and take care of his woman or work from home. She works from home now and when ever Qhawe is not home and we around we have to put up with her demands but she makes it fun. Anelisa on the other was released and placed under house arrest. She is not allowed to go anywhere if Sizwe needs to go somewhere with her they need to be accompanied by prison officials they can't break the rules otherwise she will go back to prison. she doesn't seem to have mood swings with her pregnancy she is actually very relaxed she doesn't even eat that much. Sizwe has to force her to eat.

Apparently that's how she was when she was pregnant with Lisakhanya. My beautiful Queen

NOVELSGURU.COM

has been amazing her business is doing well and sometime next she is going to open another one. Thando's lingerie shop is also doing well. Sima's twins have been spending a lot of time with Khanyi lately. Lina is back from school since it's December holidays. they will be going to the Eastern Cape soon. We finally told Khanyi who Sindiswa's father is and she was so shocked. My son's are coming for a visit and I'm on my way to fetch them from the airport. They are meeting Ncesh this weekend. I can't wait. Maybe they should consider moving back to Durban. Ayanda my first born 25 and Asive 22.

Me: you finally landed. (I say hugging them my boys have grown. Their mom has been a nightmare through out their lives making it difficult for us to spend time together but she let up when I threatened to take the kids away from her she has tried to get between us but we never gave up until they told her they wanted to come and live with me because they are tired of how she lived. Story for another day.)

Ayanda: it's a good thing you were young when you had us otherwise we would be calling you old man right now. How are you dad?

Me: I'm good son and how are you guys? Asive: we are good.

We missed you that's all.

Me: I missed you too. Let's get going. We are having a braai

tonight at aunt Khanyi's and Qhawe's house but you are going to meet Ncesh first before we go there and we have a few things to buy otherwise Ncesh will kill me if I don't come home with the stuff she gave me a list for.

Asive: I like her already she's got you going to the shops for her. can't wait to meet her.

I drive off with them telling about their lives in JHB. They have started their own Accounting firm and apparently it is going well. They are going to be pitching their services to us on Sunday. WE bought everything I was asked to buy and we are going back to the house.

Ayanda: it looks amazing here it shows there's woman around here. Me: haa Ayanda it looked amazing even before.

Ayanda: but now it has a female touch and a bit of brightness to it. Me: you are such a traitor.

Ayanda: dad come on don't be like that.

Are you really sulking. Asive: I think he is.

Me: go put your bags in your rooms freshen up and come down stairs to meet your step mother. Asive: He is sulking. He's not talking to you for the next hour.

Ayanda: he picked the wrong time to sulk he still has to introduce us he'll just have to suck it up and man up.

Me: I heard that. (I say as they walk away to their rooms. My baby was in the kitchen when I walk in.)

Ncesh: you're

back. Hi Me: Hi

(and I give a kiss.)

Ncesh: Where are

my boys Me:

Upstairs

freshening up.

“DAD!!!” that's Asive shouting from upstairs. We go upstairs to his room and Ayanda is there too.

Asive: what happened to our rooms?

Me: we changed them what don't you like them (Ncesh is standing right next me and she is not saying anything.)

Asive: are you kidding me I love mine. And I know this was not your doing

Me: you are right about that. she was responsible for it. (I say pointing at Ncesh.) Guys meet your step mom and My Queen Ncebakazi Ndzolo babe these are my sons Ayanda and Asive.

Ncesh: Nice to meet you guys (she holds out her hand for a handshake but they just pull her in for a group hug.

Ayanda: it's nice finally meet the woman that has his heart.

Dad talks about you all the time. Asive: at some point when he would call it would just be to talk about you. (these kids are making her blush.)

Me: oh come on it was not like that. Besides you need to stop

you making her blush. Come on we have a braai to get ready for. You will get a chance to get to know each other as time goes on. Asive: how did you know that we would like the changes you made in our rooms?

Ncesh: just as as your father talks about me to you he talks about you guys a lot. Ayanda: it looks like we are going to get along just fine. What's for breakfast

\*  
\*  
\*

KHA

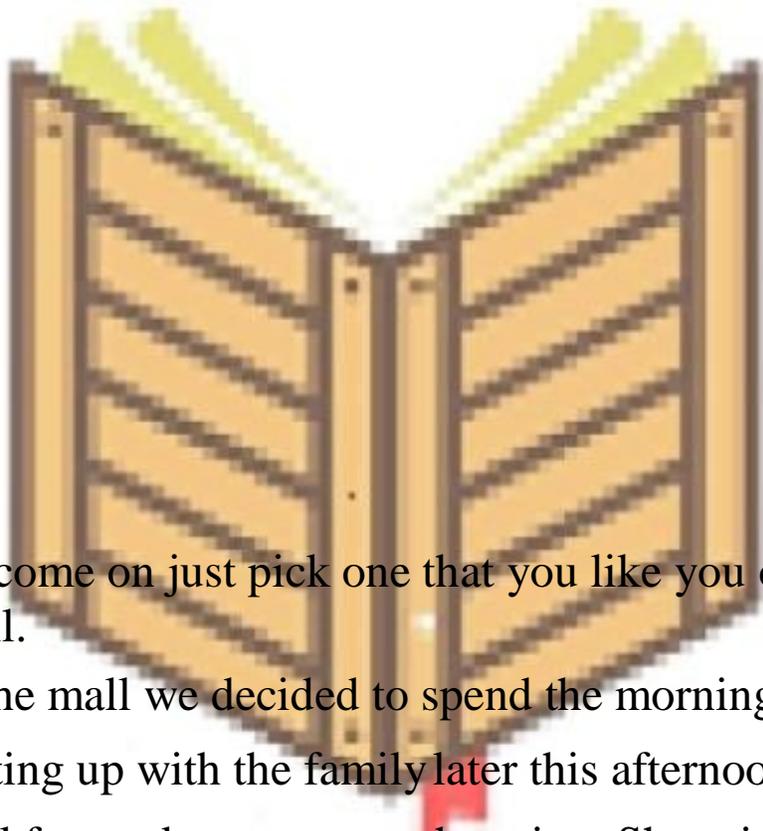
YA

\*  
\*  
\*

Me: Lungi come on just pick one that you like you can't possibly like them all.

(we are at the mall we decided to spend the morning together before meeting up with the family later this afternoon. We went out for breakfast and now we are shopping. She said she needed a

NOVELSGURU.COM



few things and looks like we are going to spend the whole day in this mall. This woman can shop. I am never bringing her shopping again. She will just have to come with Lina and Sibahle.)

Lungi: I like them all babe and I don't know which one to choose.

Me: No man Lungi how hard can it be choose the one you like most ke. Lungi: don't rush me Khaya.

Me: I'm never taking you shopping again.

"you've never really had the patience for it." (I know this voice and it belongs to my ex. I don't need this woman's drama right now.)

Me: What do you want?

Her: I'm also doing my shopping.

ME: good for you. If you'll excuse us we are busy.

Her: is this the finance`. Hi I'm the ex-girlfriend who wants him back and by the looks of things It looks like getting him back will be easy. You are definitely not his type. (I was about to say something when Lungi stopped me.)

Lungi: don't worry babe I'll deal with this one. It's Barbie right. Her: the name is

Zukiswa please don't call me that.

Lungi: Listen Barbie girl if you were his type

Sponsored

you would right where I am standing with next to him shopping and irritating the living day lights out of him because I can't really choose what I want. I want you to understand something I am not about to embarrass him and myself by having a fight with you in public. Obviously it is your thing. And another thing is that you are nothing compared to me. Since it looks like you are hear shopping as well I suggest you go find the man that is paying for you shopping. Some of us are paying for ourselves. (and my baby walks away and continues with her shopping.)

Me: If she cries or you try to do anything that will hurt I promise you I'll make you regret the day you met me. Think about that before you start acting stupid and embarrassing yourself. That right there is the Queen of my heart don't mess with her. (I walk away to join Lungi I hug her from behind when I get to her and kiss her neck.) Are you ok baby?

Lungi: I'm ok. (I turn her around so that I can look at her.)

Me: Are you sure? (she puts her arms around my neck and stand on her toes to kiss me)

Lungi: Yes I am sure.

Me: trust me you have nothing to worry about. I am all yours my love.

Lungi: and I am all yours. now kiss me please. ( I do as told and we continue with our shopping)

When we leave we bump into Mcebisi who is also leaving. Me: Hey man

Mcebisi: guys how are you

Lungi: we are good. I hope you good too.

Mcebisi: I'm good. I just came to get something for Lina. I felt like spoiling her today. Me: Are you coming to the braai?

Mcebisi: definitely I was invited. The probation period is over things are really good. Your dad is still being tough though.

Me: he won't stop. You better get used to it..

Mcebisi: listen we'll talk later let me rush I still have a few things to do before going to your house.

Me: we'll see you later then. (and he runs off to his car.) Lungi: he is really

a nice guy.

Me: yes he is.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lungi: babe I think I'm ready I'm a bit confused now what is he talking about?) Me: ready? Ready for what babe

Lungi: You know what I haven't been ready for I think I'm ready for it. ME: Lungi just .... Oh my

God you mean that ready are sure about that babe.

Lungi: I am sure I want to and I want you to be the only one. I m don't want to wait anymore I know that I love you I know I want to spend the rest of my life with out you. You are my everything.

Me: and you had to choose this moment to tell me all this whilst I'm driving now how am I suppose to kiss you I can't even pull over here.

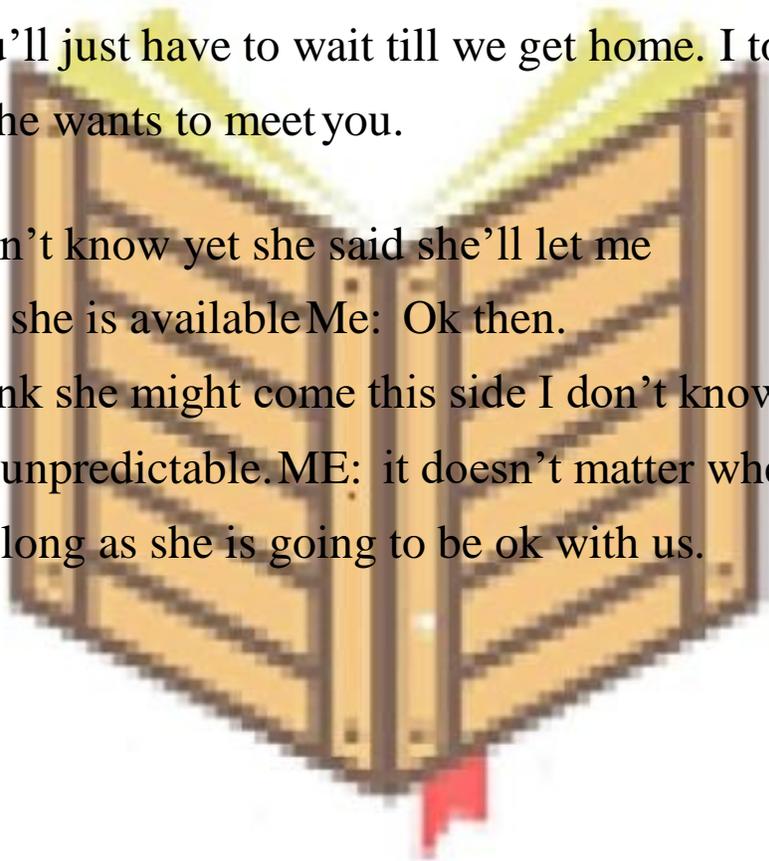
Lungi: You'll just have to wait till we get home. I told my mom about and she wants to meet you.

Me: when

Lungi: I don't know yet she said she'll let me know when she is available Me: Ok then.

Lungi: I think she might come this side I don't know.

She is very unpredictable. ME: it doesn't matter where we meet as long as she is going to be ok with us.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lungi: she is ok she wants to put a face to the man I am always talking about. Me: I love you my Queen  
Lung: I love you too my King.

## CHAPTER 79

### FRIDAY EVENING

\*

\*

\*

KHANY

ISILE

\*

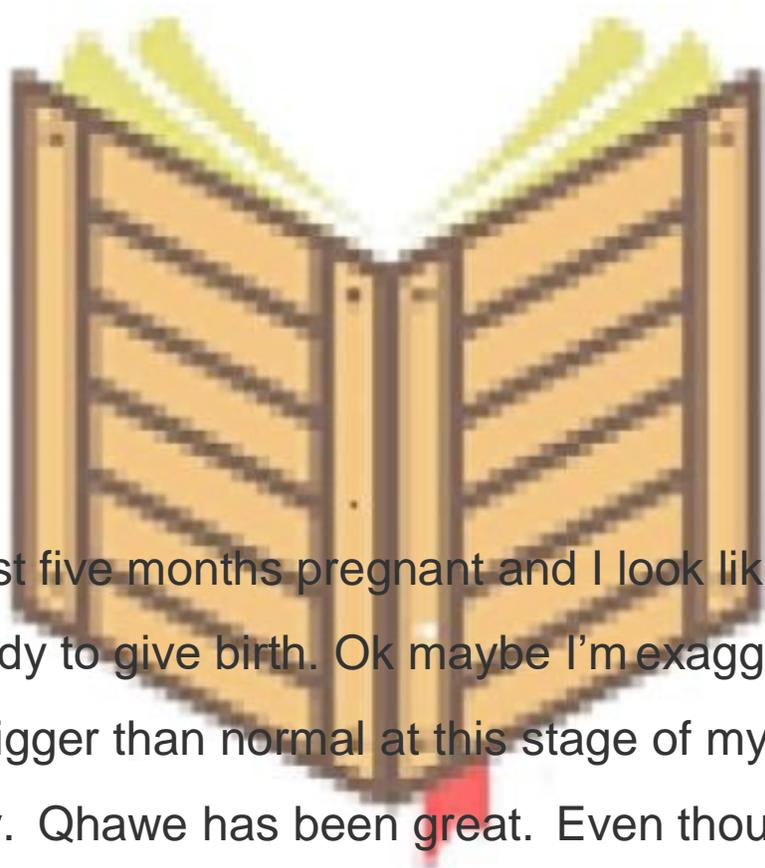
\*

\*

I am almost five months pregnant and I look like Anelisa who is ready to give birth. Ok maybe I'm exaggerating but I am bigger than normal at this stage of my pregnancy. Qhawe has been great. Even though I can be difficult at times but he puts up with me and the guys too they have

been great. Even the kids have been awesome they like playing with my stomach and talking to the babies.

Lwanele and Lisakhanya take turns to read bed time stories for them. Zenande likes singing to them and the



NOVELSGURU.COM

rest would just talk them telling them about their day and everything. It's been amazing. Qhawe speaks to them every morning when we wake up when he leaves for work he kiss them goodbye and when he comes back from work. And the most ridiculous thing he does is when he calls and asks me to put the phone on my stomach so that he can talk to his babies. I find that to be absolutely ridiculous. Apparently it's something he did with all his kids. He is crazy if you ask me. When we visit Sizwe he would have me sit next to Anelisa and introduce the babies to his baby. Him and Qhawe have just gone crazy over these pregnancies. I must say my relationship with Anelisa is getting better she is really trying even with her kids she is trying and eventually they will get there. Tonight everyone is here we are having a braai no special occasion just something we like to do to spend time together as a family. We also invited Sindiswa and she is bringing someone with her. Uncle Mncedi asked to look out for her since he is in the Eastern Cape. He flies in once a month to visit her. He always comes with Zwelibanzi's mother who loves spending time with her grandkids.

Qhawe: My Queen. (he walks up to me  
kisses and kisses my stomach too) Me: My  
King. You are home. How was your day?

Qhawe: my day was good. What are you doing here alone  
when everyone is by the pool.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I came to change into a dress I just wanted to be comfortable.

Qhawe: and you look very sexy and very yummy I could eat you up right now. ( he walks close and I walk until I fall on the bed) You should know by now that you can't runaway from me I will always catch you. (he says that hovering over me kissing me every where on my face except my lips. I really love the attention he gives me I love the fact that he is clingy as I am. He picks me and sits on the bed making me sit on top of him with my legs wrapped around his waist.) I need help taking my shirt off.

Me: I think you can manage on your own my love.

Qhawe: I'm too tired I need you to help me.

(I think the babies just moved.) Me: did you feel that?

Qhawe: did they just move?

Me: I think so. (they move again) give me your hand. (he does and I put it on my stomach and they move again.) they are moving baby this is the first time they move. They are moving.

Qhawe: it feels wonderful baby I think we have soccer players. Oh my God they are moving again. Is the

moving not causing discomfort?

Me: Not now maybe when they are bigger. I'll start feeling it. (he grabs my face and kisses me.) Qhawe: thank you for carrying them and I'll be here always. You never have to raise them alone. Lwanele: can I feel too?

Qhawe: how long have you been here long enough to take pictures and a short video. (Lwanele has taken it upon herself to take pictures of every moment of this pregnancy.)

Lwanele: wow mom they are moving. Does it hurt. Me: No baby it doesn't.

Lwanele: they stopped now. that was awesome.

Me: come let's go downstairs and give daddy space so that he can change. We'll see you downstairs (I kiss him and walk out of the bedroom with my daughter.)

Lwanele: When are we going to the Eastern Cape I miss the grandparents. Me: you are going next weekend

Lwanele: I can't wait. ( As we walk out to the pool where everyone was sitting) hey guys I just felt the babies move.

Lonwabo: and you didn't call us (he says walking up to me

and touching my stomach)

Lwanele: we were upstairs and you were here. Besides I only found out because I went up to take some pictures of her and daddy.

Lwazi: when are we seeing these pictures you are taking. Lwanele:

When I have enough pictures uncle Lwazi.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ntando: I want to  
feel them move.

Zenande: Me too

Me: You know what when they move again tonight while  
we are still here I'll tell you. I see you are done with the  
salads

Thando: Yes we are done. They are busy with the meat  
and ii think they'll be done soon. (Qhawe walks in; he is in  
his shorts and a t-shirt no shoes just like me. It is a hot  
day.)

The evening continues and it is nothing but fun. Sindiswa  
arrived with her boyfriend I think his name is Siphos  
apparently he has met some of the guys. We also met  
Bandile's sons Asive and Ayanda who also seem to be  
getting along with the other kids. Sizwe is here too except  
for Anelisa. We enjoy ourselves and the conversations are  
flowing Mcebisi and Siphos are fitting in well with the guys.  
The babies move again and everyone was taking turns  
feeling them move. This is just a precious moment for me  
and everyone in this family. I swear these babies are  
going to be spoiled.

\*

\*

\*

QHA

WE

\*

\*

\*

I was sitting with the guys when

Lungi walked up to me. Lungi:

can I talk you for a second.

Me: sure no problem have a sit

Lungi: actually in private. If you don't mind can

we go to the lounge. (I look at Khaya) Me: Khaya

what did you do

Khaya: Nothing I also don't know why she wants to talk to you.

Me: You better be sure you did nothing wrong otherwise

you are going to get it. ( I get up and we walk to the

lounge leaving everyone confused. As we settle on the

couch) What's wrong Lungi did he hurt you?

Lungi: he's been nothing but a gentlemen

Sponsored

did he hurt you?

Lungi: he's been nothing but a gentlemen I just need some advice that's all.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: ok what's up?

Lungi: Well I mentioned to Khaya earlier today that I think I am ready. ( she pauses a bit leaving me confused a bit as well. What is she ready for I wait for her to say something and I think she can see my confusion) I'm ready to give myself to Khaya.

ME: OH!!! You mean that kind of ready. Shouldn't you be talking to the other ladies about this are you sure you want to talk to me about it. (I'm actually not sure this is the conversation I want to have with her but then again she chose me for a reason.)

Lungi: Yes I'm sure I want to talk to you about this and you seem to understand Khaya better than everyone else plus i'm talking to you because I want to hear a male's point of view. It will be my first time and I am sure that I want Khaya to be the one. I love him and I know he loves me but sometimes I get the sense that he was actually glad that I wasn't ready for it even though I know he's been suffering.

Me: to any decent good guy it would be a precious moment a precious gift especially if he loves that woman. He might seem like he is glad that you are not ready but

it's not that it's the respect he has for you and understanding how you feel and that when you are ready you won't hesitate.

Knowing my son he is probably excited that you chose him at the same he is scared wondering if you going to enjoy it and most of all he is scared of hurting you.

Lungi: I heard that the first time hurts.

ME: yes it does but you will have to speak to the ladies about that they will be able to tell you how it feels exactly.

Tell me something Lungi don't you talk to your mom about these things

Lungi: My mom is not one those women who talks to her child about staff like this and I also don't have that many friends and the ones I havel don't talk about my personal life with them. I asked to talk to you because I have learned that sometimes with these things it is good to get advice from a man as well.

As ready as I am, I am also scared

ME: You don't have to be I'm sure he'll be gentle. He is also scared trust me and he won't break up with you afterwards if that's what you are worried about. He loves you too much to hurt you like that. Lungi: He has

experience lots of experience what if I don't satisfy (Sizwe walks in)

Me: Khaya is a gentleman he understands that it's your first time and he doesn't expect you to go into this knowing everything you need to do. He will teach.

Sizwe: that's what any good guy should do. You shouldn't worry so much just relax and go with the flow. Shouldn't you be having this conversation with the ladies?

Qhawe: she wanted advice from a man

Sizwe: and she chose to talk you



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: Why not me?

Sizwe: you are too emotional these day.

Qhawe: ayikho lento uyithethayo. Unomona qha wena. (that's nonsense you are just jealous) Lungi: ok guys wait are you really going to argue about who I should have chosen.

Qhawe: No we are not. This one is just jealous that's all.

Lungi: let's move on. I have another problem. Khaya's ex. We saw her today at the mall while we were shopping and she said that she wanted Khaya back but we dealt with her. but I have this feeling that I can't shake that she is going to cause problems for us and I don't know what to do.

Sizwe: Khaya mentioned it to me earlier and he has the same feeling and worried about it.

Qhawe: let's wait and see if she makes another move and if she does you guys must tell us and we'll deal with her.

Do not and I repeat Do not tell Khanyi I don't want her stressing she doesn't like that girl.

Sizwe: I really don't understand that girl and don't think I ever will. I don't even know what Khaya saw in her.

Lungi: don't judge he saw something leave my man alone.

Anyway thank you for your advice and thank you for

listening.

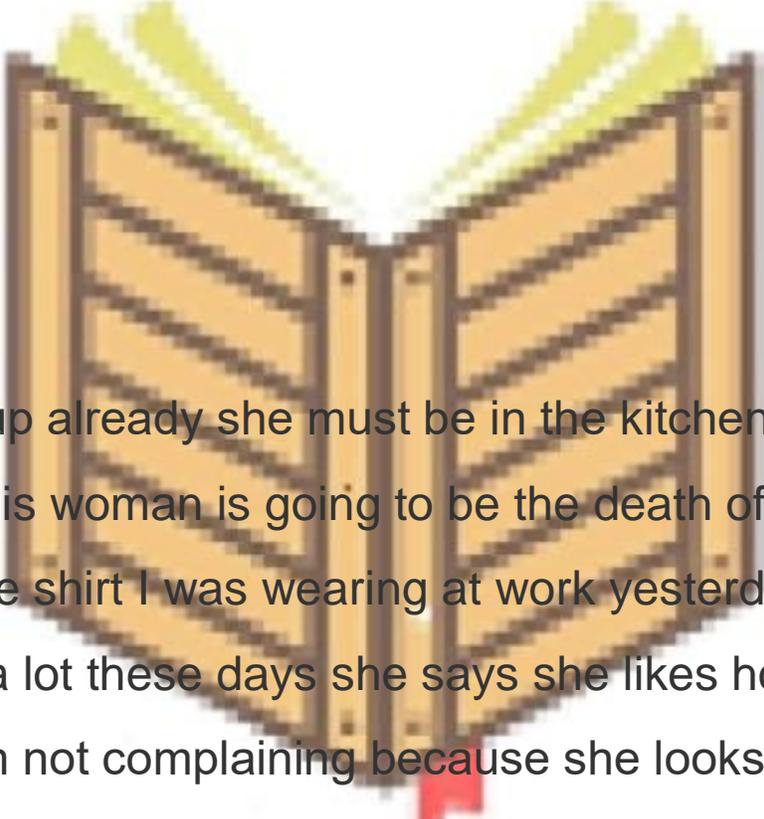
SATURDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

QHA

WE

\*  
\*  
\*

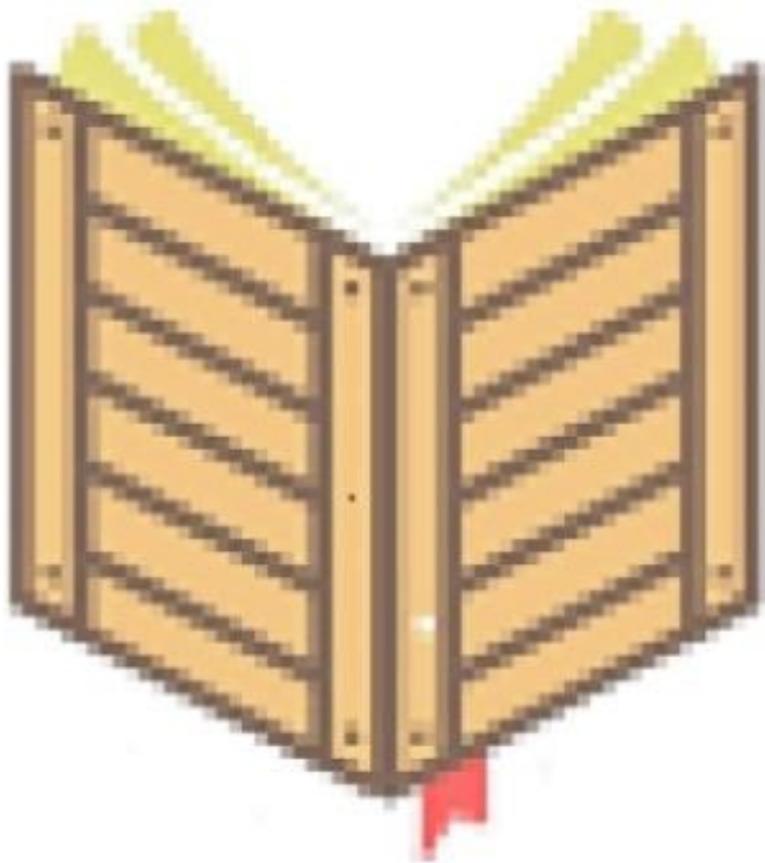


Khanyi is up already she must be in the kitchen I'm hungry. This woman is going to be the death of me. She is wearing the shirt I was wearing at work yesterday. She does that a lot these days she says she likes how I smell not that I'm not complaining because she looks sexy as hell in them and right now the fact that she is naked under that shirt is not helping me. After last night I still want her I can never have enough of her. I walk in and kiss her cheek get myself some water and sit.

Me: what are you making?

Khanyi: Eggs bacon sausage and spicy salsa.

Me: sounds good. It's a good thing everyone is still asleep.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: at least we can eat peacefully.

Me: I had an interesting conversation with Lungi last night. Khanyi: I saw you guys talking it looked serious.

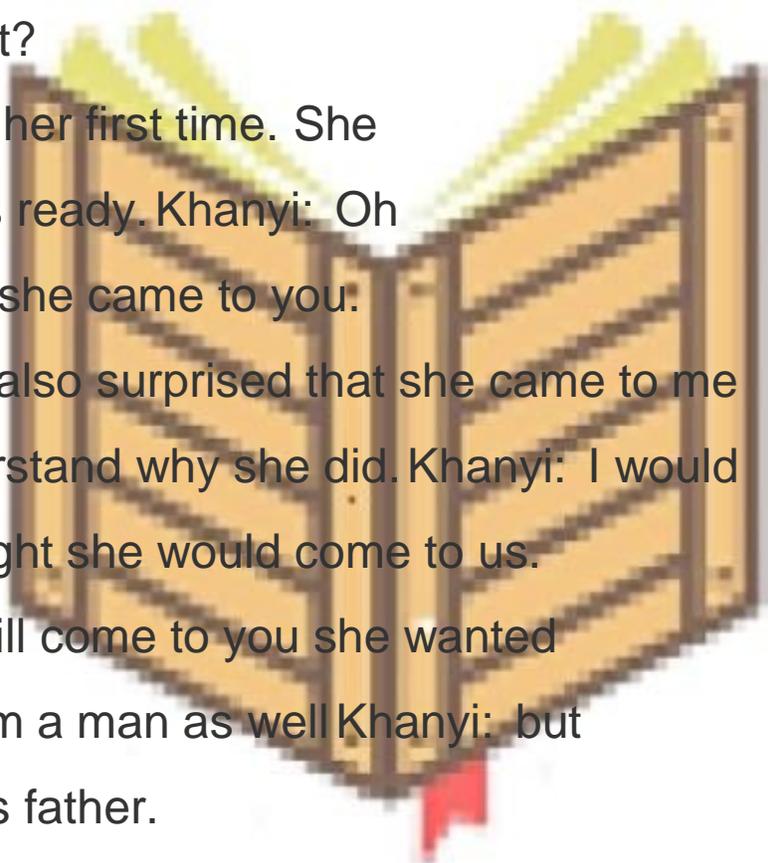
Me: in a way it was. She needed advice Khanyi: about what?

Me: about her first time. She said she is ready. Khanyi: Oh really and she came to you.

Me: I was also surprised that she came to me but I understand why she did. Khanyi: I would have thought she would come to us.

Me: she will come to you she wanted advice from a man as well Khanyi: but you are his father.

Me: yes I am but don't look at it that way. Before I am a father in law I am a man a man she saw fit to talk to her. A man she sees as the man who understands her man better than any other man in this house. She knows I am a father in law but she also sees me as human as someone she can talk to. I was honoured that she actually



NOVELSGURU.COM

chose to talk to me. She needed know how man feel about it and what they expect and I think she knows that women tend to over exaggerate things. When she comes to talk to you about it remember that she wants to hear how it feels what she should expect don't get too excited about the fact she decided to do it rather focus on what she wants to hear and what she needs to hear and her man will do the rest. I don't blame her for coming to me. I created this comfort zone because I spoke to her about Khaya when Khaya had just introduced her to us.

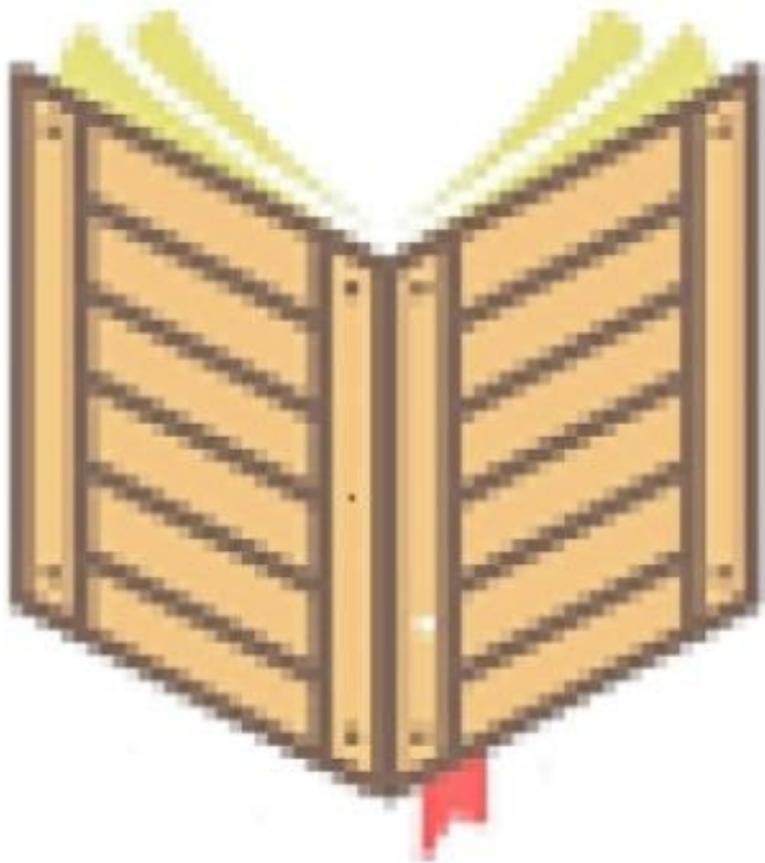
Khanyi: I hear you and I understand. I know that she is not that close to her mother as well. Here's your food.

Qhawe: Thank you my Queen.

Khanyi: I also know that she sees you to be more than just a father in law she sees you as the father she never had. She once told me that the relationship she has with you is the kind of relationship she would have wanted to have with her if she had a chance to know him. And I was not suppose to tell you that so you can't say anything to her about it.

Me: I promise I won't say anything. Look babe I don't want my daughters in law to be afraid to talk me I want

them to be able to come to me if they can't come to you. We have too many sons in this house and at some point they are going to screw up in their relationships like we all do their women must be able to talk to us about anything even with the uncles. They should feel comfortable safe and feel like they are part of the family.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: you guys really portray a different side of man a side that is not seen very often and I love that about you guys and I think that's why we are the family that we are. The loyalty we have towards each other is amazing.

Me: what happened to Lungi's father?

Khanyi: apparently he died when she was about a year old.

Me: I get the feeling that there's more to it than that. maybe I am being paranoid. Can you pass me another slice of toast

Khanyi: I don't really know she doesn't talk much about him and it seems like she doesn't know much about him either probably because her mother doesn't talk much about him either.

Me: I hear you. So what do you want to do today?

Khanyi: I want to go shopping for baby things. Babe when are you guys starting with the renovations of the house? The renovations have to be done by the time the babies come. Me: they are starting when the kids leave for the Eastern Cape.

Khanyi: ok that's great. ( Khaya walks in just as I finish washing the dishes) Khaya:

Morning parents

Me: Morning

son Khanyi:

Morning

baby

Khaya: it's a good thing that  
you are both here. Me: why  
what's wrong?

Khaya: nothing is wrong.

It's about Lungi Khanyi:  
what happened?

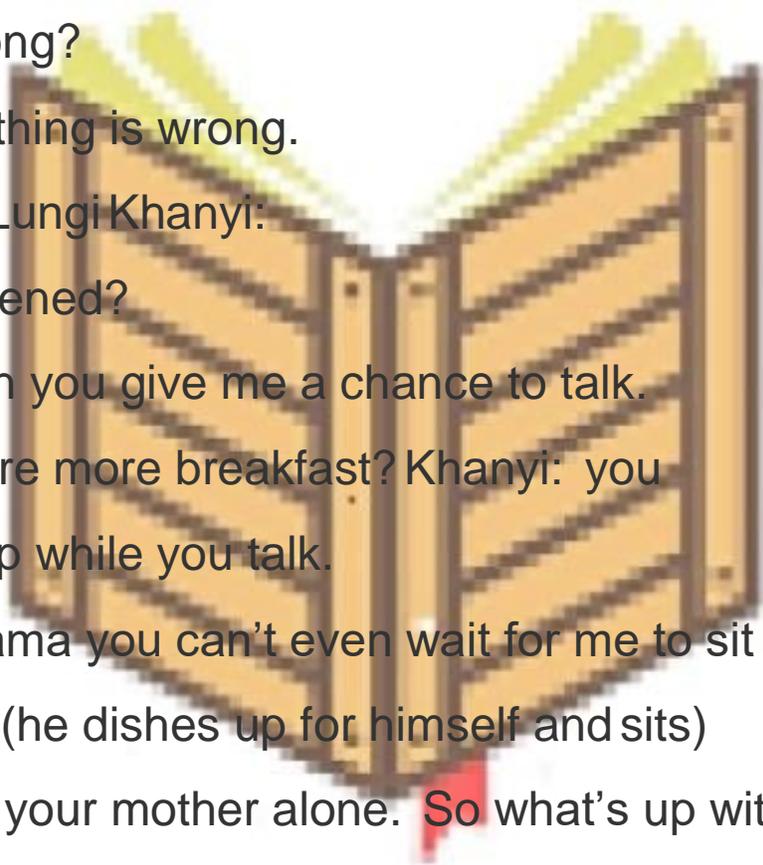
Khaya: can you give me a chance to talk.

First is there more breakfast? Khanyi: you  
can dish up while you talk.

Khaya: mama you can't even wait for me to sit down. You  
like news. (he dishes up for himself and sits)

Me: leave your mother alone. So what's up with you and  
Lungi?

Khaya: she told me why she wanted to talk to you last  
night and I want to ask her to marry me. I want to wife  
her. I want her to wait until we are married I know she  
said she was ready but I want to marry her first preferably  
a winter wedding next year.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: did you speak to  
her about this? Khaya: I  
haven't

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I know she said she was ready but I want to marry her first preferably a winter wedding next year. Me: did you speak to her about this?

Khaya: I haven't I wanted to talk to you guys first.

Khanyi: are you sure you are ready to be married and is it not too soon

Khaya: I love her mom I love her more than life itself waiting to marry her is not going to change that and she loves me and I know you've seen how she loves me plus she fits in perfectly with the family you guys already consider her your daughter and I know she will say yes. I want her to be my wife when I pop it it will make it even more special.

Me: I don't see a problem.

Where is she now? Khaya:

I took her home last night as usual.

Khanyi: you have our blessing. You'll have to tell your dad as soon as she says yes so that they can make arrangements for the lobola negotiations. When are you planning on asking her?

Khaya: I'm

asking her

tonight. Me: you

have the ring?

Khaya: yes dad I do.

Me: good luck son. Not that you need it.

Khaya: I know she will say yes and thank you

guys. What are you guys doing today? Me: I'm taking your mom shopping.

Khaya: at least she is not like the rest of the women in this house your money is safe she won't even put a dent on your bank account.

Me: This time I think she will. We are shopping for baby things. Khaya: good luck then. Thank you and I love you.

We'll talk later. Khanyi: we love you too.

\*

\*

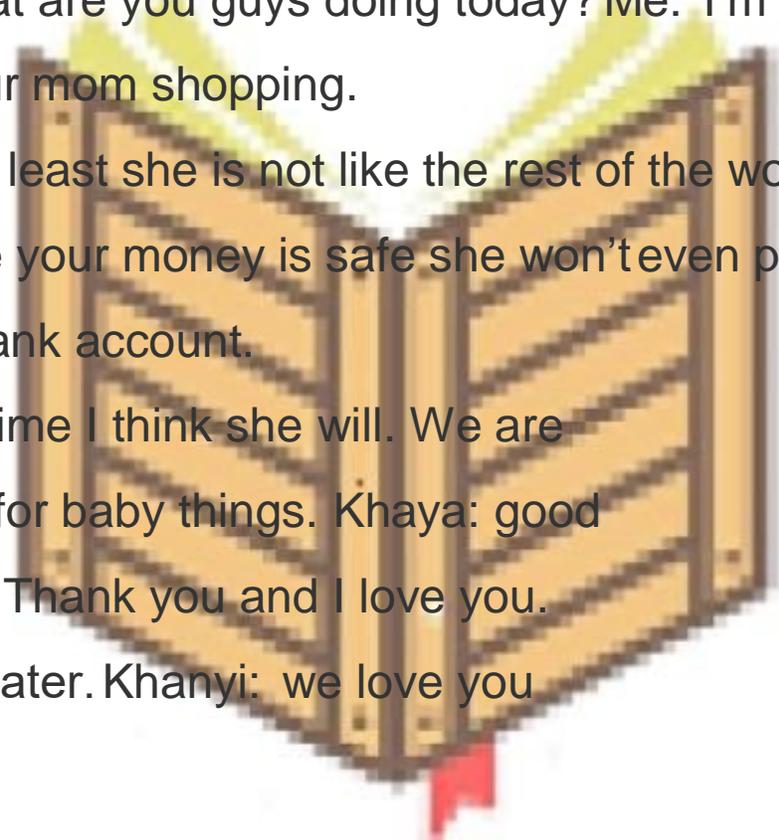
\*

NC

ESH

\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

I called Thando and she came right over because I was in a panic and I didn't know what to do after the call I received earlier today. Khanyi is on her way too.

Thando: What's wrong Ncesh what happened?

Me: she called Thando and I don't know what to do.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Thando: You know Khanyi is the one good with these kind of situations did you call her Ncesh: I did she is on her way.

Thando: why now after everything she did to you why is she calling you now. Me: she is not just calling me Thando she is coming to Durban.

Thando: how did she know you were here. Ncesh: the business remember

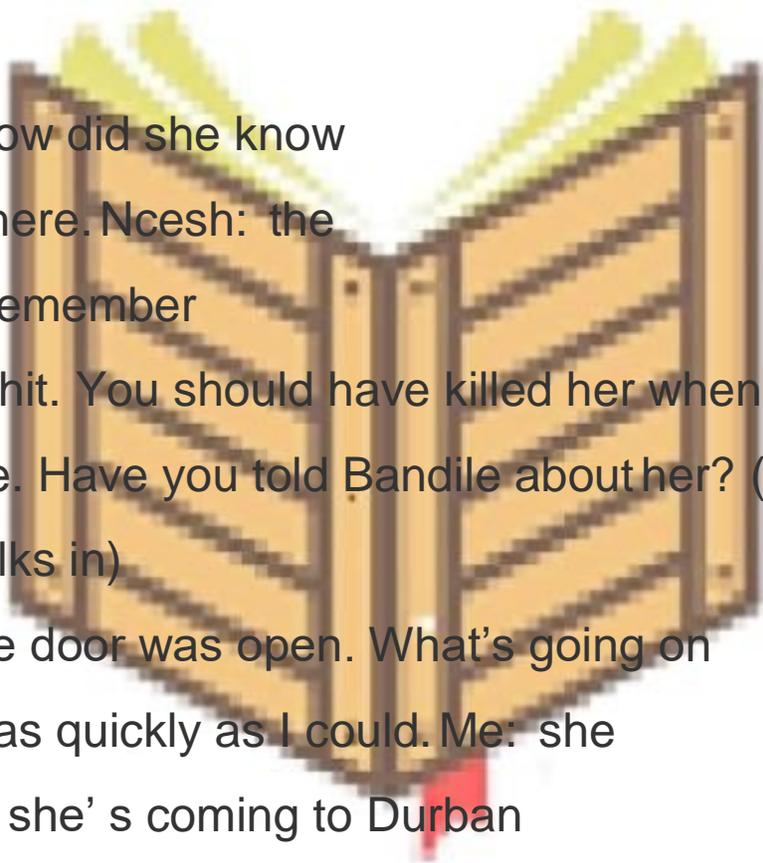
Thando: Shit. You should have killed her when you had the chance. Have you told Bandile about her? (just then Khanyi walks in)

Khanyi: the door was open. What's going on I got here as quickly as I could. Me: she called and she's coming to Durban

Khanyi: who called?

Thando: hayibo Khanyi who else can make her panic like this?

Khanyi: NOOOO!! How did she know you are in Durban and when did she get out. me: the business gave away my location as for when she



got out I don't know.

Khanyi: does Bandile know about her?

Me: No he doesn't and I thought I would never have to deal with her again. I don't know what to do?

Khanyi: You need to tell Bandile he needs to know. I hope you are not planning on letting her stay with you.

Me: No I'm not and she has a way of finding out where I stay anyway I don't know how she does

it. when she is here I know she will show up at my door step. (I notice that Khanyi is starting to have difficulty breathing)

Khanyi: we need to tell Bandile and the guys. I'm pregnant I can't be dealing with all this. Thando:

Khanyi you need to breathe

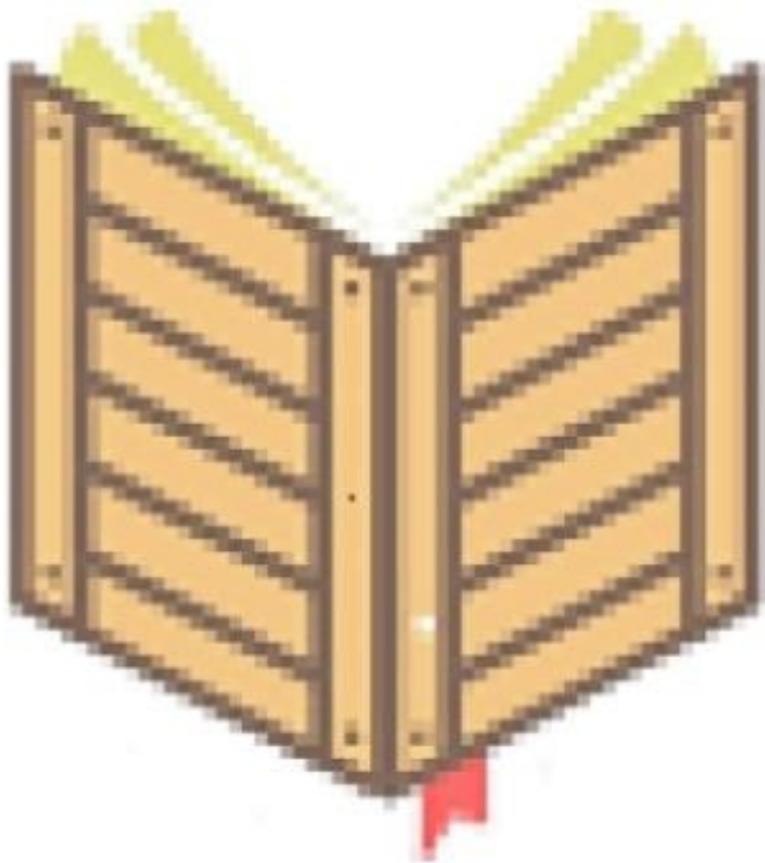
Khanyi: I am breathing. Lungi spoke to Qhawe about being ready for her first time with Khaya Thando: really

she did. (I know she is trying to distract us from the current situation but it's also a sign that she is panicking.)

Me: I would have thought she would come to us.

Khanyi: Qhawe says she will and we must not be too excited about it we need to tell her what she wants to hear and what she needs to hear and we shouldn't encourage her we just need to give her advice that's all.

Thando: I don't blame her for going to Qhawe. Qhawe has created that comfort zone around him that says you can talk to me anytime. I talk to him about Lwazi mainly because he knows and understands him and i think that's why Lungi spoke to him. Qhawe knows and understands Khaya



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

better than anyone. You must also remember that even though Qhawe is the father now he is not the biological father and that's what made it easy for Lungi to talk to him. I must say the girl is very unconventional.

Khanyi: is there anything conventional about this family.

Look at the trouble that's coming now. we can't just be

happy in peace. Something just always has to happen. I

wish you had killed her when you had the chance. Guys I can't breathe I feel dizzy.

Me: Sit Khanyi and stop pacing around.

Thando: I think she is about to faint. She's having a panic attack. (thando walks over to Khanyi and helps her to sit on the couch) Khanyi breathe

Khanyi: I can't it's too much (I think she fainted. Qhawe is going to kill us) Me: Call Qhawe and tell him to bring the doctor with him.

Thando: so much for being able to deal

with these kind of situations Me: Give her

a break she is pregnant.

CHAPTER 81

STILL SATURDAY

\*

\*

\*

NCE

SH

\*

\*

\*

Me: You do know that Qhawe is not going to be happy with us when he gets here. We should have kept her out of this.

Thando: How were we suppose to know she was going to go into panic mode and faint? ME: Still Thando we should have kept her out of it. (Bandile walks in with the boys)

Bandile: What happened?

Me: She fainted

Bandile: she couldn't have just fainted I ask again what happened? Ayanda: dad please calm down.

Bandile: hayi Ayanda don't tell me to calm down do you know what Qhawe is going to do when he gets here he is going to shoot first and ask questions later.

Me: I received a phone a call earlier that caused me to panic and I called them and told them what happened and Khanyi had a panic attack.

Bandile: Jesus Ncesh I know she is your friend if the news were that hectic you should have kept her out of it.

Thando: she would have had to tell her sooner or later

Bandile this is something important to Ncesh and we are worried that history is going to repeat itself.

Bandile: what are you talking about?

Me: it's a long story I'll tell you later about it. Qhawe should be here (just as i finish saying that he walks with the doctor. They both rush straight to her)

Qhawe: What happened?

Asive: dad I thought you said he was going to ask questions later? Qhawe: do you want me to?

Asive: I'm quiet.

Qhawe: someone needs to tell me what

happened? (he looks at Bandile) Bandile: don't

look at she was like that when I got here.

Dr Nkosi: She is fine what happened

Me: She fainted. She had a panic attack and fainted.

Dr Nkosi: What caused it? (I look at Qhawe and he is

waiting for me to say something) Me: I shared some news that's what cause the panic attack.

Qhawe: Jesus Christ!! Ncebakazi couldn't you have kept the

news from for her. (he is not shouting but you can tell he is angry very angry) We are trying to have a smooth pregnancy here. The first trimester went well. are you trying to kill her and the babies. You should have kept it from.

Me: I couldn't (I walk over to Qhawe and kneel in front him holding his hand.) I couldn't. I had to tell her. someone hurt me really bad in the past and I thought I would never have to deal with her again but now she is back and I don't know why. (by now I have tears running down my face) Khanyi was there to help me pick up the million pieces of my life. She helped me to be who I am and be where I am today. Yes Thando was there but she was also broken. She was there Qhawe she was my strength she was my everything. If it wasn't for her I would have given up on life. She was there for me and Thando she is all we have. She is all I have. I am truly sorry but I had to tell her. (he made me stand and hugged me)

Qhawe: don't cry I understand what you are saying but I'm also scared of losing them. It's ok don't cry. Bandile take her.

Dr Nkosi: She is fine. I won't wake her. just let her sleep for now. if she is not awake in two hours call me. The babies are also fine. You can bring her in tomorrow for a scan. Did she fall when she fainted.

Thando: no she didn't she sat down when she started feeling dizzy.

Dr Nkosi: that's good. I'm going to leave now but remember if she is not awake in two hours call me.

Qhawe: thanks doc. (he walks him out) Bandile: what happened baby?

Me: it all happened eight years ago it was the worst experience of my life. Bandile: Ayanda Asive do you mind going upstairs.

Me: no let them stay it's fine. They are old enough to hear and understand everything I'm about say.

Asive: Are you sure?

Me: Yes. (Khanyi is still passed out Qhawe walks in and takes a sit on the couch where Khanyi is and he puts her legs on top of him and massages her feet.) Bandile I never told you this because I never felt ready to talk about it. that last time I spoke about this was five years ago with my therapist at that time.

Now I have to tell you

Bandile: it's ok my pumpkin I get it.

Eight years ago I was in love engaged to be married and I had

just had a baby. My baby was a week old when Zolani suggested that my sister comes and lives with us since I was not coping with the baby. I didn't like the idea because we didn't get along very well we were just civil with each other. My sister always told me that I think I am better than her just because I was doing well for myself. She never finished her degree in accounting. She's been working dead end jobs basically she couldn't use what little she had to make something of herself. She is the only family I have so I ended up agreeing to it and at that time she was unemployed and Zolani was willing to pay her and she was going to use the the granny flat we had. I asked Zolani to give her a three months contract because I didn't want her staying with us very long. He did just that. She moved in and helped with the baby. Nothing changed with our relationship we didn't get any closer. I didn't trust her because I knew how she was her friends used to tell me how she wanted their man after they introduce them to her. I was alert about everything she did. She had this obsession that she had over me. Everywhere I went she was there even when I move to a different town she would always find me I don't know how she did it. Two months went by smoothly on the the third month I started noticing some changes from her. they way she dressed

changed she started wearing short around the house which is something she didn't do she was wearing clothes that were revealing taking her baths just before Zolani got home. Zolani also noticed the changes and he asked me what was up with her and I told him I didn't know. "I hope she's not trying to get to me with these changes she's making otherwise she must go." That's what Zolani said and I was happy that he was seeing the truth of what I told him about my sister. One Saturday I woke up and Zolani was not in bed. I went to check on the baby and he was asleep.

I went to the kitchen and Zolani was there arguing with my sister so I just stood outside and listened.

\*\*\*\*\*FLASHBACK\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\* Zolani: what do you think you are doing Andiswa?

Andiswa: what does it look like. I am kissing you. I want you.

Zolani: I said stop it. in fact go pack your things you are leaving. How do you do something like this to your own sister.

Andiswa: if you haven't noticed you are the man I want right now and I don't mind sharing you with her.

Zolani: guess what I mind sharing myself with you. I don't want you. Just get out of here.

I decided to walk in and when I did she was trying to kiss him and he was pushing her away and she was so shocked to see me. Zolani just continued to tell her to leave. She walked over to me and told me that if she can't have him then I can't have

him either. I didn't care about what she said. I was just happy she was finally leaving.

Ayanda: if you don't mind me asking where are your parents.

Me: our parents died in a car accident when I was 15 and she was 12. My aunt took care of us and she did a great job. Can I continue? (everyone just nodded.)

A week after she left Zolani started changing. One minute he wanted me and next minute I disgusted him sometimes he wouldn't sleep at home I suspected that he was cheating. The way he did things was just surprising to me. Zolani was the type of person that even if he cheated he would make sure I don't find out about it. he would make sure that I don't suspect anything that's just the person he was. But the person I was seeing at that time was not the Zolani I know. Saying hurtful things to me accusing me of cheating and that the baby was not his. As time went on I received a message from my sister with Zolani's picture at a restaurant sitting with one of his friends. " I TOLD YOU I WANT HIM AND I'M GOING TO HAVE HIM. HE DOESN'T EVEN KNOW WHAT'S GOING WITH HIM HE DOESN'T UNDERSTAND WHY HE IS TREATING YOU THE WAY HE IS."

I didn't know what to make of this message but one thing was clear

Sponsored

my sister was behind everything. This went on for about two months and I decided to tell my aunt who advised me to take Zolani to a traditional healer and told me to wait for him to be in a good mood and tell him. I did exactly that. I waited for him to be his normal self which was rare because things were getting worse. He agreed to go and when we got there we were told that he was fed some kind of muthi that would make him not want me and want someone else but the muthi doesn't work with immediate effect it takes time. Eventually he would have started beating me if I continued staying with him like that. I had to leave him there so that he can be cleansed. He stayed there for two days and I was called to fetch him and he looked good. Everything was back to normal and he kept apologising for what happened. For eighteen months things were good really good until my sister rocked up at my door step it was a weekend and Zolani was home as well. That was the beginning of the nightmare. Zolani walked in with my sister pointing a gun at him. She made him sit on one of the dining table chairs and tied him. She turned and pointed the gun at me and told me to put the

baby in the play cot and luckiy he was asleep. She also tied me up .

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*

Andiswa: I told you big sis if I can't have him then you can't have him. You can't have it all when I have nothing.

Me: how is that my fault Andiswa?

Andiswa: You have a business you have a man that wants to marry and you have a child. You are miss little perfect who always thinks that she is better than me. Today you are going to learn that you can not have it all. I am going to take your happy ever after from you. You won the first round and today I'm ending it all. Before I kill him I am going to make him fuck me as you watch and after that you are going to watch him die and your son too.

Zolani: come on Andiswa you can't be seri.....

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\* He never finished what he was saying she slapped him. My baby woke up crying and she went to fetch his bottle in the kitchen and gave it to him and he went back to sleep again I think she drugged him. I'm all tears at this moment I can't do anything to save my family. Zolani tries to wiggle his way out of the ropes but they are too tight. She comes back with a glass of juice and

forces Zolani to drink it after drinking the juice Zolani told me he loved me and I think he knew that it was going to end. after he said that he seemed to not recognise me he was disorientated and I could see his boner in his pants. My sister stayed true to her word. She made Zolani fuck her telling him what to do how to do it she was controlling him and it's like he had no control over what he was doing. I couldn't stop crying Zolani was gone that was not my Zolani. My screams went unheard. After she was done with him she looked at me "I TOLD YOU THAT I AM TAKING YOUR HAPPILY EVER AFTER". I looked at Zolani's eyes they looked empty he looked like a Zombie. Say your goodbyes and she shot him twice I cried so much and screamed as she went over to my baby she just looked at him and came to sit next me.

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*

Andiswa: even when mom and dad were still alive you were always the favourite. You were always miss goody two shoes. All I ever wanted was to be like you have what you have. I tried so hard but nothing ever worked out for me and now we are the same. You are a broken soul. Do you know what the sad thing about this is. I'm your half sister. Mom cheated on your dad and in the process I was concived I never got to meet my dad. She died without telling

me who my dad is. I hated the fact your father loved you so much I hated the fact that even when your dad begged her to tell me who my father is she never did I hated the fact you were his precious princess and I was no one's princess.

Me: he treated you like you were his own child hence I never knew about you not being his daughter. He gave you the same opportunities he gave me but you were so hung up on the fact that you were not his child you didn't see the love he had for you.

Andiswa: he never loved me. Can you hear that. the police are coming and now for the day's finale.

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\* She gets up and walks over to the baby takes him and brings him to me and tells me to kiss him goodbye. Right then I knew my baby was gone she poisoned his bottle. After I kissed him she took him and placed him on the baby cot she sat on the floor facing the front door with the gun in front and said that her job was done.

\*\*\*\*\*

Me: this is what I couldn't tell you I was just not ready to relive the pain and now she is out of jail and I don't know what she wants from me. You know I never believed in witchcraft until my own sister showed me that it does exist.

CHAPTER 82



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

SUNDAY

\*

\*

\*

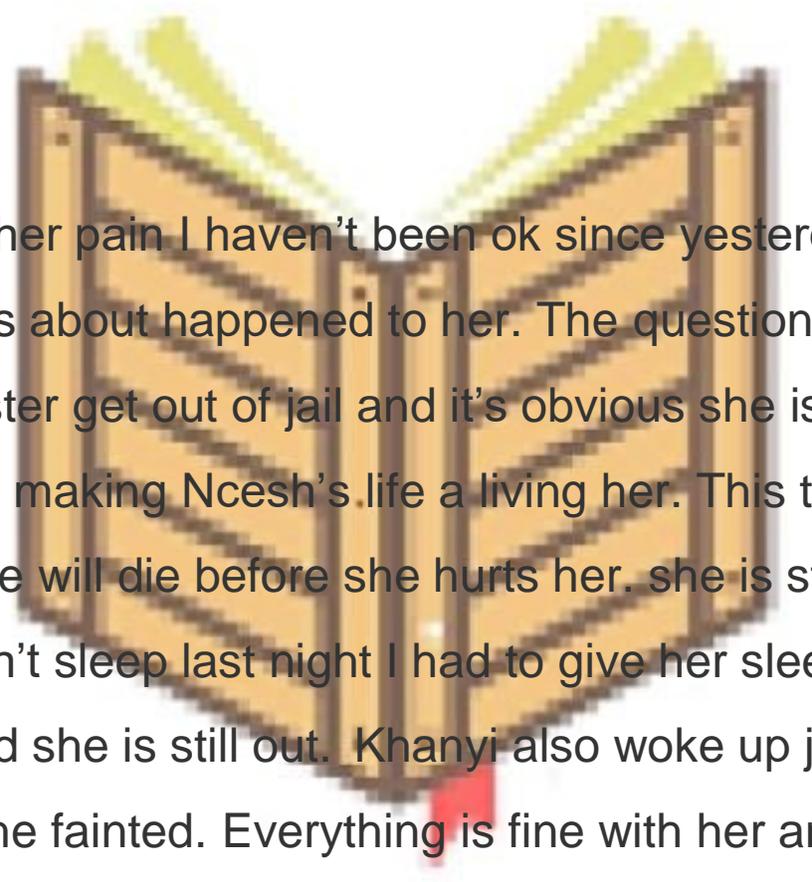
BAN

DILE

\*

\*

\*



I can feel her pain I haven't been ok since yesterday when she told us about happened to her. The question is how did her sister get out of jail and it's obvious she is on a mission of making Ncesh's life a living hell. This time around she will die before she hurts her. she is still asleep she couldn't sleep last night I had to give her sleeping tablets and she is still out. Khanyi also woke up just after an hour she fainted. Everything is fine with her and the babies. I'm just glad she was still passed out when Ncesh was telling us her story. Qhawe is heart broken about the whole thing even my sons are feeling the pain. We all are and we don't even know what to do and the worst part is not knowing where Andiswa is. Qhawe suggested we talk to Eddie and bring Sindy's PI in. Ayanda suggested that

we find Andiswa before she finds Ncesh that we'll have the upper hand at whatever she is planning. Andiswa also doesn't know about us for sure but we can't take that for granted. We also need to talk to Luyanda he needs to find out why this woman was released from prison he needs to use his contacts.

Ayanda: Dad are you ok?

Me: I'm ok. Just worried about Ncesh. Ayanda:

Where is she?

ME: she is upstairs still sleeping

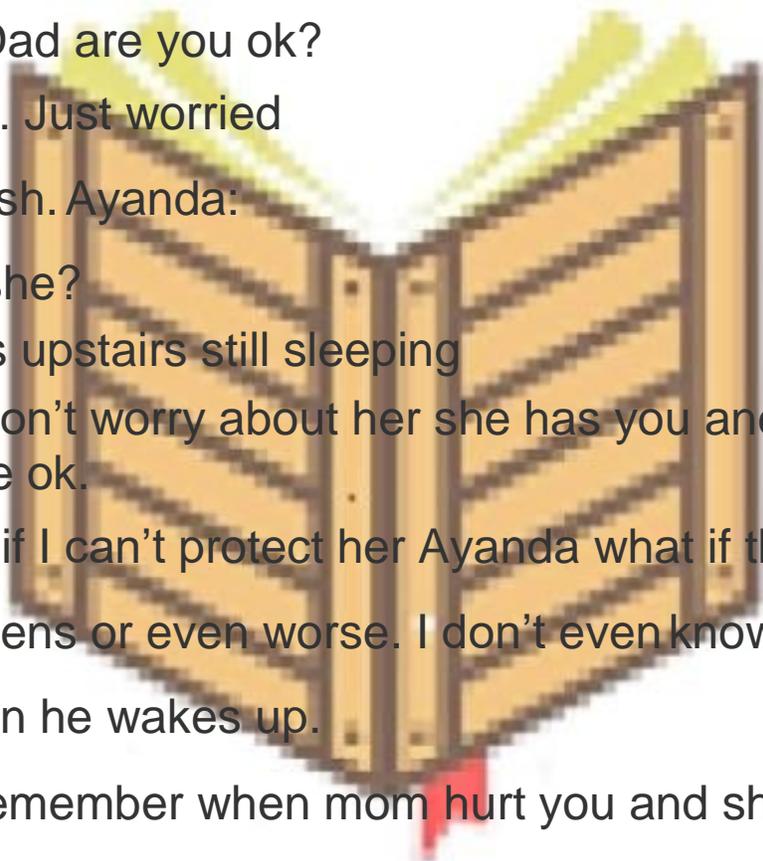
Ayanda: don't worry about her she has you and she is going to be ok.

Me: What if I can't protect her Ayanda what if the same thing happens or even worse. I don't even know what to say to her when he wakes up.

Ayanda: remember when mom hurt you and she left with us. Remember how I use to say I don't know what to say to you to make you feel better. Remember what you use to say to me.

Me: I remember.

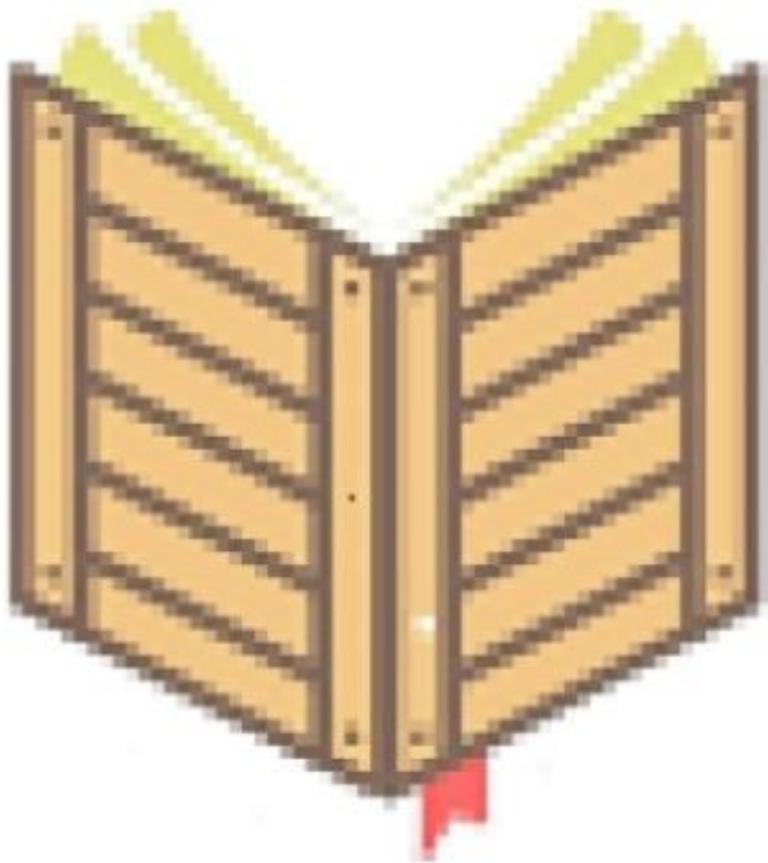
Ayanda: same thing applies to you. "You don't have to say anything she just needs to know that you are there for



NOVELSGURU.COM

her.” And from what I have seen so far with you guys  
Andiswa doesn’t stand a chance.

Me: I never thought you were listening to me.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ayanda: we always listen to everything you say dad. How do you think we got to be where we are now. we always listen. And now it's time for you to listen to us.

Asive: You make her breakfast in bed we all chill together watch movies all day. We'll go get some junk food including ice cream.

Me: I think she is going to love that.

Asive: We don't think we know she is going to love it.

Me: You've known her two minutes and now you think you know what she wants. Yazi nina. Ayanda: it's not about knowing her it's about knowing what women like to do at a time like this. Take our advice and she will love you more.

Me: Mxm fine whatever. You can go and buy everything while I make breakfast. Ayanda: Your bank card please or cash if you have it

ME: Use your own money you guys came up with this idea.

Ayanda: she is your woman and we are trying to make you look good to her and this will be earning you extra points but ke we don't mind taking all the credit and she is going to be asking you why you didn't think of it.

Me: Fine my wallet is the lounge take the Absa card.

Asive: that's good thinking dad. See you later. Let's go

Ayanda. Text us the pin dad.

These two are going to be the death of me including Ncesh. I've missed them though and I'm actually happy that they are here. I really don't know how I would have dealt with this situation.

\*

\*

\*

LU

NGI

\*

\*

\*



I have decided to do it today. I'm at Khaya's place I'm waiting for him to arrive he slept over at his parent's house. He never sleeps here unless I am here he says it's too quiet. I am so nervous and scared at the same time. I don't know how he is going to react. But I'm wearing his favourite dress and matching underwear he always says I drive him crazy when I wear this dress. I've set up an indoor breakfast picnic in the lounge. I really want to do

this and I hope he feels the same way. I



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

know that the oral sex is not enough for him I think he has suffered long enough now besides that I also want it.

I feel his arms around my waist from behind when did he get in I didn't hear the door. Him: morning my munchie

Me: Morning my sweet how are you?

Khaya: I am ok now that I see you I've missed you. (he says as he kisses my neck.)

Me: I missed you too. (he turns me around and I put my arms around his neck and he kisses me.) Khaya: What are you making>

Me: just a breakfast picnic. I've set up in the lounge. Khaya:

What's the occasion?

Me: No occasion just felt like spoiling my man.

Khaya: mmhhh I like that. let me go change and wear something comfortable. And this dress you are trying to kill me woman. (he squeezes my waist a little and brings me close to him and kisses me again and it gets heated.

He stops and looks at me and smiles he reaches for the stove and switches it off and lifts me wrapping my legs around his waist. He walks to the bedroom carrying me and gently throws me on the bed. He hovers over me looking me in the eyes. )

Khaya: You look very sexy in this dress and I can't resist you in it. I don't think you should wear it again after today.

Me: it's not the only thing you can't resist me in.

Khaya: I know but maybe we should get rid of all those things (he kisses me slowly while he lifts my dress he stops and takes my dress off and I help him out of his shirt and unbutton his jeans revealing his trunk. This man is sexy body to die for. He slowly takes off my bra and then my panties leaving me stark naked and he stands between my legs looking at my body giving me a naughty smile.) you absolutely look beautiful. (he hovers again and kisses me slowly he moves from my lips to my neck to my chest between my boobs. He squeezes my boobs with both hands taking turns sucking on them while he gently squeezes them and the attention he gives my boobs is making me wet right now. everything I know right now about sex he taught me. He moves from boobs to my stomach he plays with my belly button a bit and he moves all the way down to cookie. My legs are open and dangling on the edge of the bed and he is now kneeling on the floor between my legs. He pulls me to the edge of the bed. he lifts my legs and places my feet right on the edge of the

mattres where my ass is as well he holds my knees and opens me up even more and blows hot air on my cookie which makes me moan softly. Without notice I feel his tongue inside me he is slowly moving it around inside my cookie and he it feels so good so wet and warm. He switches and moves his tongue up and down on cookiehe sucks on my clit and stops to lick it my juice are just flowing uncontrollably. I am a moaning begging him not to stop I can feel my orgasm coming. He sucks on



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

my clit again gently grazing it with his teeth and that has me exploding in no time. He carries on sucking me through my orgasm. He stops and stands looking at me and kisses me again pulling up on the bed.)

Khaya: I'm not done with you yet. We are going to trying something different today. I am going to lie on my back and I am going to have tongue inside you and suck you till you beg me stop while you suck my dick. That is called a 69 position. So do you want to try it?

(he smiles his naughty smile. I don't say anything and I assume the position. I first lick his dick making it wet with my saliva and he uses both his hands to open me up squeezing on my ass. The pleasure is making it difficult to suck on his dick but eventually I get the hang of it. he slowly pushes his dick in mouth as I suck it and rubbing it at the same time sucking on the tip which makes him maon in my cookie. He is sucking on clit again with one of his fingers moving around on my hole my orgasm is coming and he tells me he is coming too and we both explode at the same time. I feel a bit tired but I still want to feel him inside me.)

Khaya: come here (he makes lie on top of

him) I love you you know that right Me: Yes I know.

Khaya: I can't live my life without you I want you to be wife. ( I get up from his chest still sitting on top of him. Looking at him surprised. He holds my waist and extends one of his arms to open the drawer of his bedside table and he takes out a small navy box. He opens the box and takes out what's inside.)

Marry me Lungi I want to spend my life with you have lots of kids grow old with you. Please be my wife. i have my hands on my mouth and tears running down my face. He is proposing after a very steamy session I'm naked on top of him.)

Me: really Khaya you are going to propose while I'm naked on top you

Khaya: what's wrong with that. just say yes woman and don't focus too much on how I proposed. It will be a funny story to tell our kids when they are old enough besides you know I don't things the same way as other people. This is originalit's yours alone. It's your own funny story (he laughs a little making me laugh too.)

Me: yes I'll marry you. I love you so much. (he puts the

ring on my finger and I kiss him. He flips me over so that I am under him. He takes my legs and wraps them around his waist and I can feel his dick rubbing on my clit.

Khaya: I am not going to put it in it's not time yet. Me: but I want you to.

Khaya: I know you but I want to be inside on our wedding night when you are officially my wife. can you wait until July next year.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I can wait my lollipop. (he kisses me gently and slowly.)

Khaya: You do know that people will ask why you call me Lollipop. I love you soon to be Mrs Sondlo.

Me: . I know and that is for me to know and for them to find out. How about we get dressed and we go have our breakfast Mr Sondlo.

Khaya: how about you take care of this first I take care of the itch you have right now and we can have breakfast.

It's probably lunch now. ( he says looking at his dick that's rubbing against my clit) Me: Let's try the 69 again. (he smiles at me)

Khaya: I think I have created a naughty you. ( and the rest is history.

CHAPTER 83

MONDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

LINAMA

NDLA

\*  
\*  
\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: afternoon I'm here to see Mcebisi Mkhize

Receptionist: let me check if he is available. (he picks up the phone and calls him) who shall I say is looking for him

Me: Lina

Receptionist: there's a Lina looking for you Sir. Ok. I'll do so. (drops the call. You can go up dear he's on the sixth floor. His office is right next door to Miss Sondlo's office.

Me: Thank you. (I walk to the elevator and when I get to the sixth floor the desk meant for the assistant is empty and looks like it hasn't been in use for a while. I wonder why he hasn't hired an assistant yet. He had better hire a gay guy and some old woman. His door is open he likes keeping his door open even in Cape Town he always kept his office door open.) Afternoon Mr Mkhize. (I greet standing by the door leaning against the wall)

Mcebisi: This is a nice surprise.

How are you Princess? Me: I'm

good Pebbles and how are you?

Mcebisi: I'm good happy to see you. (he walks over to me presses my back against the wall. One hand holding my waist slightly pulling me closer to him and the other hand is above my head against the wall and he kisses me so passionately. I missed him so much.) I missed you

Me: I missed you too. I brought you lunch. Spur ribs made with love by yours truly Mcebisi: are you joining me for lunch

Me: if you want me too there's enough food for three here you can save some of it for dinner. Mcebisi: I was hoping you could come by today.

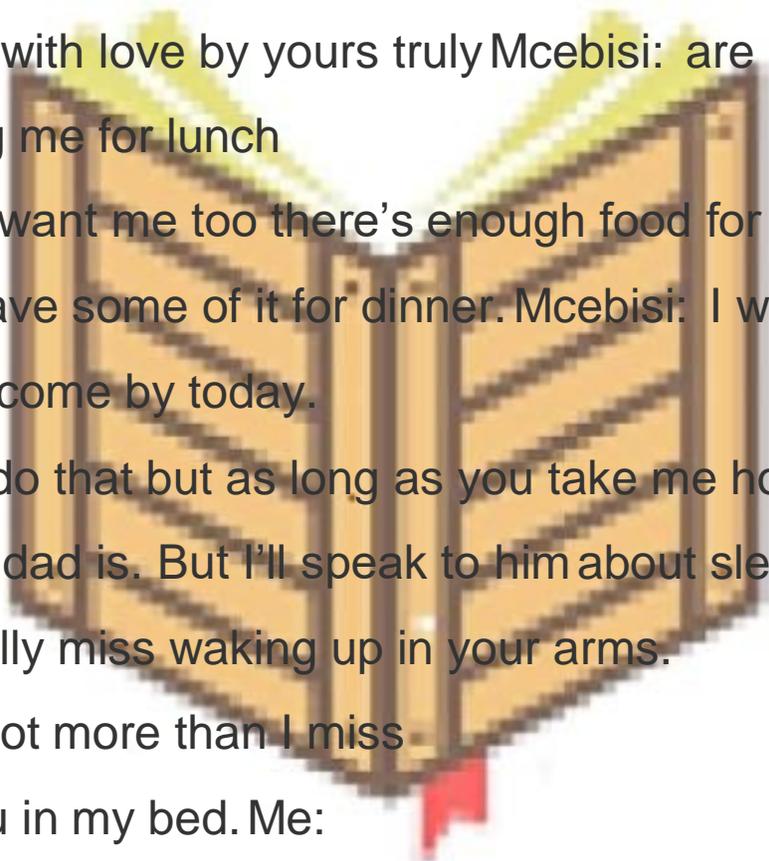
Me: I can do that but as long as you take me home. You know how dad is. But I'll speak to him about sleeping over. I really miss waking up in your arms.

Mcebisi: not more than I miss having you in my bed. Me:

Pebbles

Mcebisi: Yes Princess

Me: I'm thinking of moving here next year. I've spoken to the Dean and he said if I can get into one of the univeristies here he will gladly write recommendation letter and a transfer letter.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mcebisi: are you sure about moving here. I know we spoke about it before I moved here and you were not so kin on it. I really don't mind flying out every weekend or we can alternate the weekends. Me: I want to. It's not just about us anymore. I've realised how much I miss being around my family especially now that the family is even bigger and there's new babies coming and I don't want to miss out on being a part of their lives I want to be around to help out mom with the babies. I don't think I can handle being away from them and being away from you. You got me used to seeing you everyday and now I'm addicted.

Mcebisi: I understand what you are saying and I am addicted to you. The week would be very long before I could see you on the weekend. I know what I'm about to say may sound as a cliché but it's the truth. I have never met a woman like you you are so confident crazy in your own special way you don't care about what people think of you you do your own thing the way you want and I admire that about you. I will live my days making sure that you don't have regrets about us. I love you Miss Sodlo no matter how stupid I act sometimes no matter what mistakes I make don't ever leave me.

Me: the only reason I would ever leave you is if you cheat on me.

Mcebisi: that is something you never have to worry about. My father has taught me the same lesson your dad teaches your brothers. One woman is enough. If I get 80% from you and I want more then I should find ways to make that 80% a 100%. Believe when I tell you you are enough for me and besides my dad will have my head if he ever found out I cheated or laid my hand on a woman.

Me: I am glad to hear that. I'm worried about Ncesh Pebbles.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mcebisi: I know Princess but I think your uncles have got this handled. I can even call my dad and ask him for help. Before he retired

Sponsored

but I think your uncles have got this handled. I can even call my dad and ask him for help. Before he retired he was in the army special forces. Maybe he can call in a favour or something.

Me: I think bhut' Bandile would really appreciate that.

Mcebisi: I'll speak to him tonight. Very soon I want to introduce you to them. We've been dating for over a year it's time you meet them and I don't want to date you for years and have a long engagement as well. I don't need five years to get to know you before I marry you.

Me: what are you saying Mcebisi

Mcebisi: yhooh I'm not Pebbles anymore. Haaa!!! I'm saying that my intentions are to make you my wife in about a year.

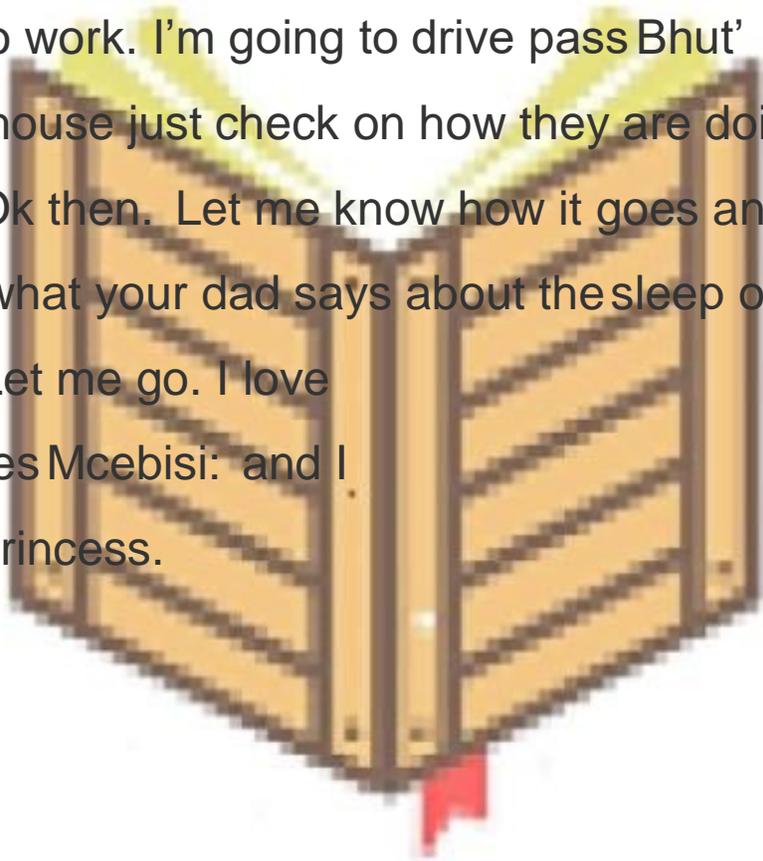
ME: what about school I want to finish my studies and work on my career.

Mcebisi: I would never take you out of school. Even if we are married you can continue with your studies and work if you want to. You can study until you ninety I don't care as long as you are mine and I am yours we stand by each other and support each other.

Me: Sounds good to me. I have to go now and let you get back to work. I'm going to drive pass Bhut' Bandile's house just check on how they are doing.

Mcebisi: Ok then. Let me know how it goes and also let me know what your dad says about the sleep over.

Me: I will Let me go. I love you Pebbles Mcebisi: and I love you Princess.



\*  
\*  
\*

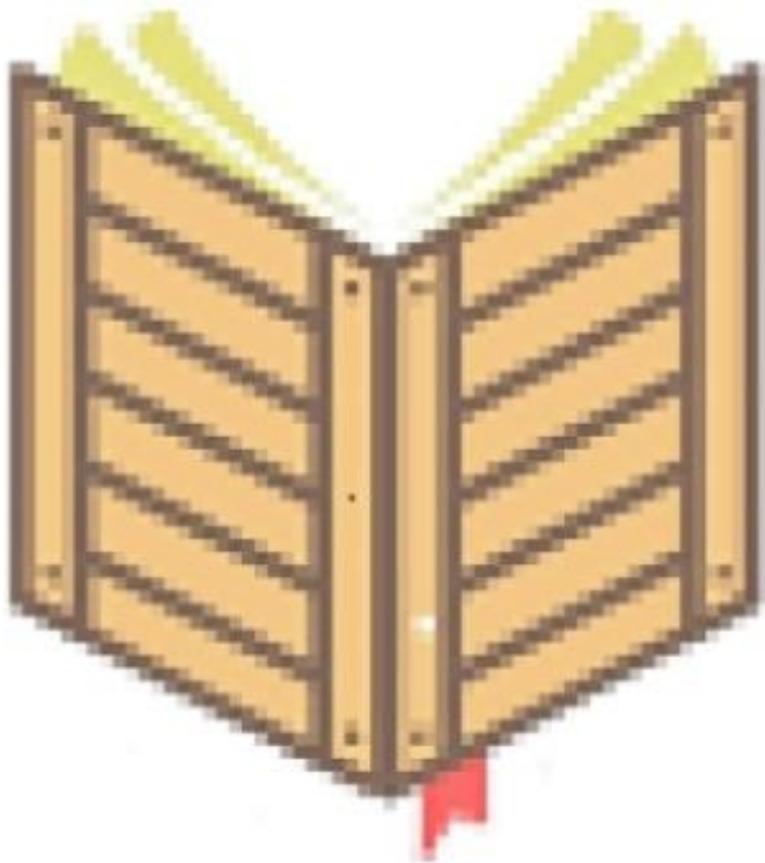
THA  
NDO

\*  
\*  
\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

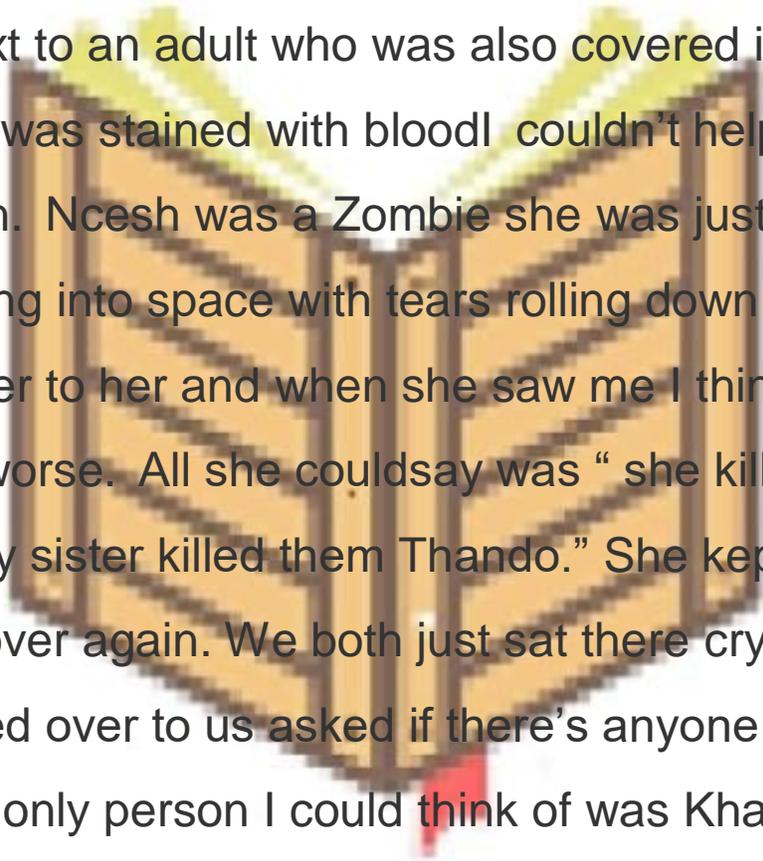
Andiswa coming into our lives again is a huge set back

for me and Ncesh I can't imagine how Khanyi is feeling she had to watch us drown in pain and she had pull us out and she did and



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

helped us through this. Ncesh blamed herself for the death of my son eight years ago she never tells that part of the story. She never even told her therapist. Ncesh was baby sitting for me that day. Her sister not only killed her son but she also killed my son. When I got there to pick up my son and saw two little bodies covered in white sheets next to an adult who was also covered in a white sheet that was stained with blood I couldn't help but breakdown. Ncesh was a Zombie she was just sitting there staring into space with tears rolling down her eyes. I walked over to her and when she saw me I think it made the tears worse. All she could say was " she killed them Thando my sister killed them Thando." She kept saying it over and over again. We both just sat there crying and this man walked over to us asked if there's anyone he can call for us and only person I could think of was Khanyi. They took the bodies to the morgue. When Khanyi got there there were only just a few people left. She packed a few things for Ncesh and she took us her parent's house asked her parents if they could accommodate us for while. She couldn't stay with us because of that husband of her. at that time she was also dealing with her own with her ex



NOVELSGURU.COM

husband who was abusing her. when ever I asked if she was ok she always said that her problems can wait.

Ncesh was really out of it. after the funerals Khanyi had her admitted into a Psychiatric hospital I was also a patient at the hospital but I was an out patient. My therapist said I didn't need to be admitted. We were broken beyond broken. We are still broken all three of us only now that we have started healing experiencing love and living life to the fullest. Even though Khanyi had her own shit to deal with she made sure we got the help we needed. For three years I had nightmares about seeing my son laying on the floor covered like that the pain was too much. I tried taking my own life a few times. I wished I was the one dead I wanted to be the one who is dead instead of those two

boys. My son was almost three years old when he died. It felt weird not to have him around anymore. I kept hearing his voice in around our apartment I ended up moving out and that didn't help either. Ncesh never wants to talk about son the guilt became too much for her. Over the years she got better she stopped blaming herself and that made me happy. Right now I am praying and hoping that

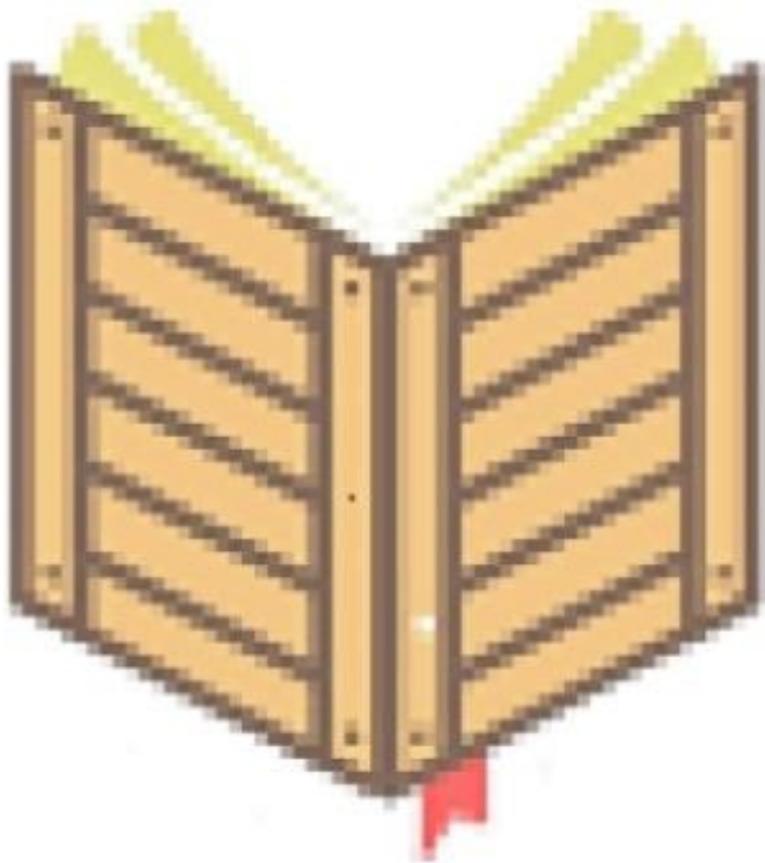
the guys find Andiswa first.

i.m sure they will.

CHAPTER 84

TUESDAY

KHANYISILE



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

This pregnancy is different compared to all my other kids. My behaviour is different and what I've noticed is that I'm too emotional with this pregnancy this is the first pregnancy to affect my emotions maybe because I'm enjoying it and the person that made me pregnant is here everyday. I am so grateful for this man and what I've noticed is that he would go to the ends of the earth for us. He took my kids in and made them his such things are rare I can safely say he is a rare breed and I was lucky to find him and I have no intentions of letting him go or losing him in any way. I can finally say I love him whole heartedly and the way he was so scared when I had another panic attack at Bandile's house I find his overprotectiveness over me cute. I've never had this not with anyone. I always had doubts if such love existed and he has proven that it does. He has proven that man can love whole heartedly and be loyal. In fact all these guys that are in my house right now have proven that a man can be loyal to one woman they are proof that there are good man out there man who deserve to be called Kings.

Qhawe:

Baby Girl

Me: Que

Qhawe: the ladies are here to see you. Are you ok? You looked very distant when I walked in.

Me: I'm ok I was just thinking about how lucky I am to have you in my life. You are an amazing man Qhawelomzi and I love you very much. Promise me that no matter how difficult I can be promise me you'll never live me. (he walks over to the bed sits next to me and makes me sit on top of him with my legs around his waist and kisses me.)

Qhawe: I could never leave you I love you too much. Remember I die where you die. (and he kisses me again and carries me downstairs to the pool where the ladies are sitting. my stomach is getting bigger and him carrying me like this is going to get difficult. He puts me down kisses me my fore head and leaves me with the ladies.)

Ncesh: You lucky bitch (and she laughs it's actually good to see her laughing)

Me: You can say that again.

Thando: You lucky bitch. (we turn to look at her) what?!!

Me: Never mind. You Lwazi and Mcebisi same whatsapp group (and we just laugh. It feels to good to laugh like this.)

Me: how are you doing?

Thando: We are ok. We can't let her bring us down we can't let her take away our smiles we simply cannot just let her have power over us. We have come too far to allow her to do that to us.

Ncesh: I'm too happy to let her bring me down like this Khanyi. It took a lot of years to get over what happened and she is not taking us back there and this time if she thinks she's going to walk into our lives and do as she pleases then she has another thing coming. On Sunday my boys



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

cheered me up they bought all the junk food you can think of and my favourite ice cream. We chilled indoors the whole day watching movies and series.

Thando: so his  
sons like you

Ncesh: I believe  
they do

Me: why wouldn't they you are an amazing person.

Ncesh: I like them they are very sweet  
and very much like their dad. Me:

Especially Ayanda.

Ncesh: I had the guys talking they want to try and find  
Andiswa before she finds me.

Me: that would work better. they would have the upper  
hand. I know that Luyanda is going to be here today as  
well and he is bringing his girlfriend.

Thando: Luyanda has a girlfriend?

Me: Apparently so. I just hope it's not one of these stupid  
girls he normally dates.

Ncesh: Luyanda has never really been in a serious  
relationship he is the only one that's actually not committed.

Me: let's hope that he has decided to settle down  
now or maybe he will soon. Thando: not anytime

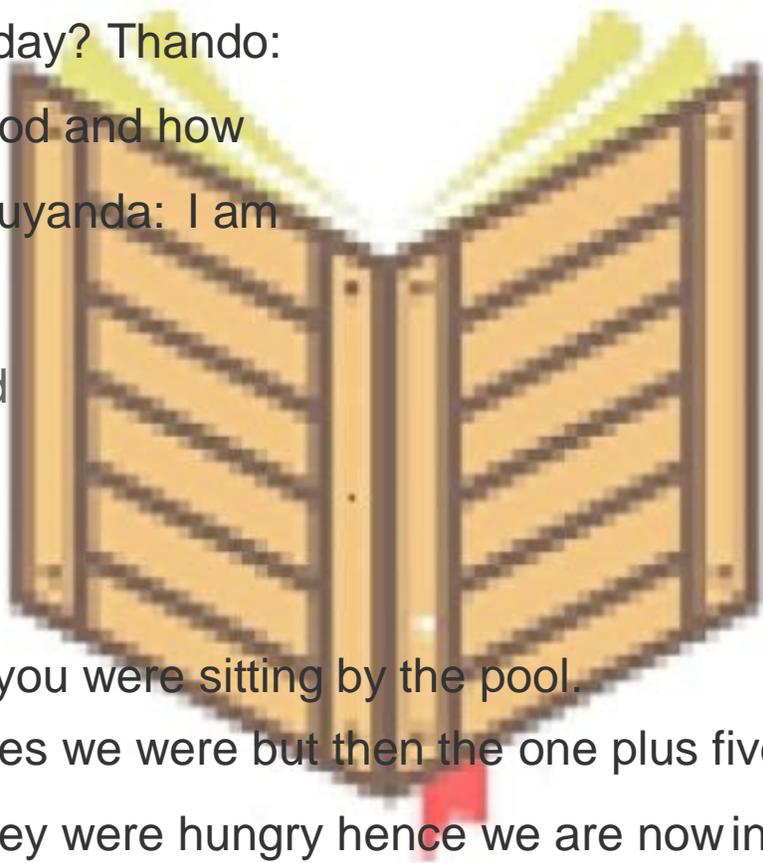
soon.

Me: I'm hungry let's go to kitchen to make something to eat. (Just as we get to the kitchen Luyanda walks in with a woman. She looks beautiful one of those tall girls she has a nice body makeup not too much and she has braids.)

Luyanda: Ladies how are you today? Thando:

We are good and how are you? Luyanda: I am good

Sponsored



I was told you were sitting by the pool.

Thando: Yes we were but then the one plus five squad decided they were hungry hence we are now in the kitchen.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

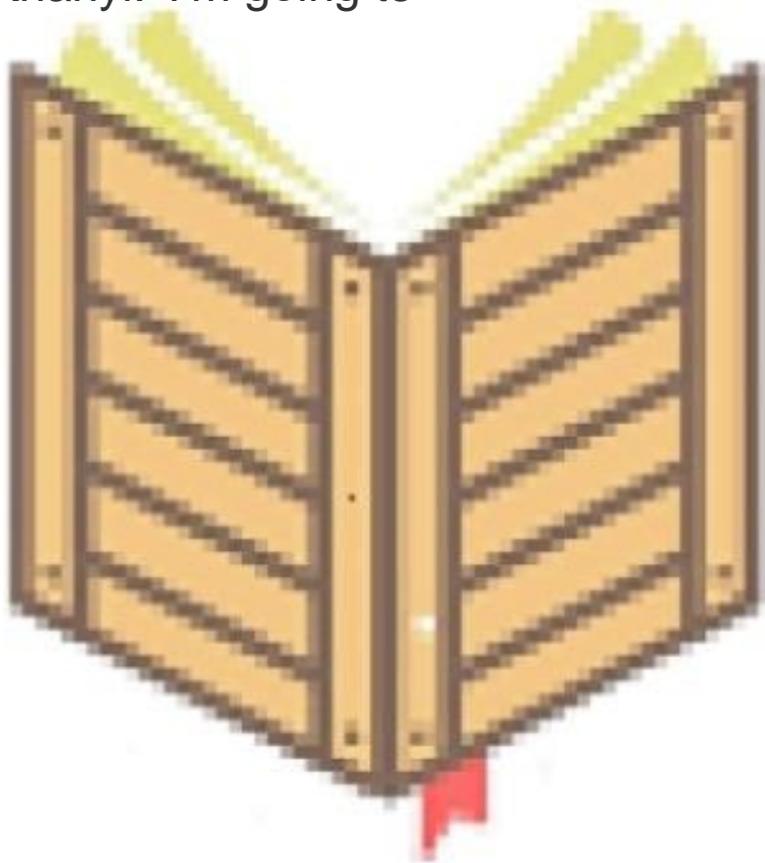
Luyanda: so you ladies also suffer just like us

Ncesh: I think it's only going to get worse.

Luyanda: Mama Bear ngekhe uyasibulala.

Me: please leave me alone. Anyway aren't you going to introduce us

Luyanda: Oh yes I almost forgot. Ladies this is Lwandle my lady and Lwandle these are the ladies I told you about that is Ncesh that one is Thando and that is the lady of thehouse Khanyi. I'm going to



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

leave you in their capable hands. I have a meeting with the guys and you will meet them later. (he kisses her cheek and walks out.)

Lwandle: It's nice to finally meet Luyanda has told me a lot about you.

Thando: don't take this the wrong way but Luyanda has not said much about you in fact he has not told us anything.

Me: THANDO!!!

Lwandle: I know he told me he wanted to surprise you he said you probably think that he is dating some bimbo. (we all laugh because that's Exactly what we thought.)

\*

\*

\*

THE LION'S DEN

\*

\*

\*

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: Ok guys in whatever we are doing just remember that I am trying to keep Khanyi out of this as much as possible. We need to make sure that she survives this pregnancy and I told the ladies the same thing.

Eddie: I think it's best to keep all of them out of this that way they stay safe and Khanyi and the babies stay safe. The less they know the better because they won't have much to share with Khanyi. She stresses very easily lately which is something she never used to do. this pregnancy has change her a lot. But we are going to need them to brief us about everything they know.

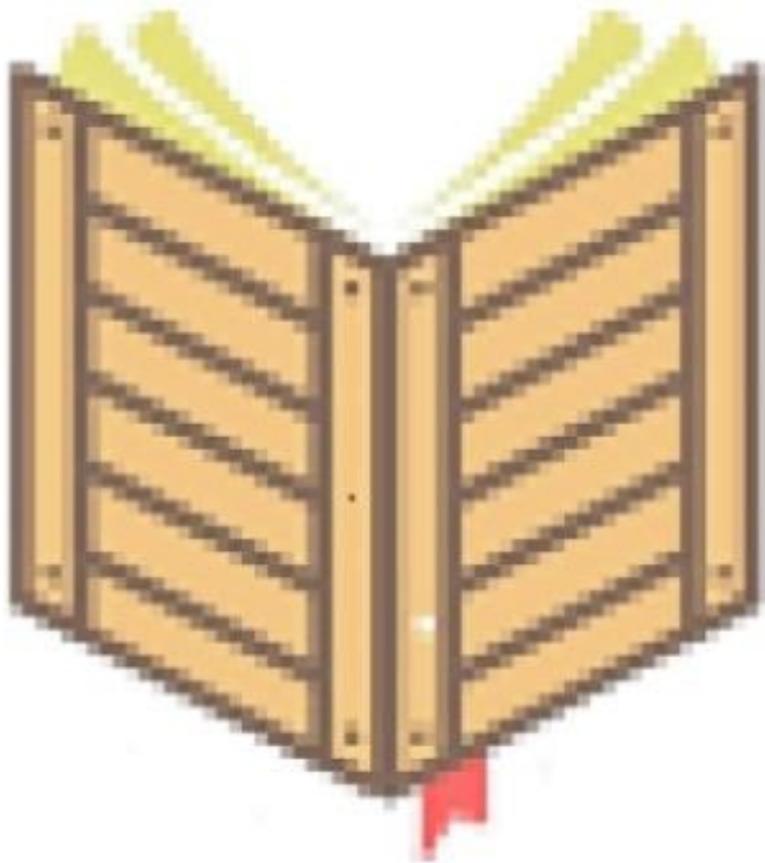
Andile: for now let's see what we know. So far we know that she was in jail and now she is out. What we need to know is how she got out how long was she suppose to be in there in the first place and Luyanda that's your department.

Luyanda: I already have info on that. ncesh never attended the court case since she was admitted in a psychiatric hospital. Andiswa pleaded guilty and the case was based on temporal insanity she was sentenced twenty five years in a psychiatric hospital but how she got out after 8 years is a still mistery to me but I am working on.

“it also a mistery to me too. It's like someone is behind this whole thing>”

Qhawe: Siphon you are later.

Sipho: Apologies Sindiswa was not really comfortable coming here it took some convincing. Bandile: why wouldn't she be comfortable. We are over what happened and we understand it was not entirely her fault. We are not holding it against her.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sipho: it's not that. she feels guilty that one of her couplings is the cause of Khanyi's pain.

Lwazi: that's all in the past man. She can't be feeling guilty about Zwelibanzi's behaviour and besides Khanyi is not on that Zwelibanzi tip anymore. She is all over Qhawe and us like nobody's business. Oh and Sipho today it's your turn to get her whatever she wants. We are on leave today. Sipho: Hayibo Lwazi you can't do that.

Andile: he can and he just did. Even the Baby daddy is taking a break today. The pregnant lady is all yours. Now back to the business at hand. Have you managed to locate this Andiswa woman Sipho: I have. She is still in East London and she is making plans of coming here.

Eddie: We need to keep track of her and if possible we need to get to her the day she arrives. We also need to find out who her father is.

Sipho: I'm on it but I need someone to track a cellphone number for me. Qhawe: don't worry we have guys for that.

Sipho: Sweet.

Bandile: is it wise to let her come to Durban.

Qhawe: it is wise Durban is more our playground than it is

hers it will be easier for us to capture her here and she won't be expecting.

Sipho: plus it doesn't look like she knows much about Ncesh's life here. All she knows is that Ncesh moved the business to Durban for expansion and I don't think she is happy with her progress I think she thought Ncesh would still be broken.

Eddie: Hence we need to be very vigilant and make sure she doesn't slip through our fingers. Andile: she doesn't have a chance in hell. Bandile I think Ncesh should stay with you until this whole thing blows over. Your boys can use her apartment until then.

Bandile: I'll speak to her.

Luyanda: Something is not adding up with this woman's case. I feel like someone else is pulling the strings here someone powerful and it's a lawyer or a judge.

Sipho: I know what you mean. Let's keep looking. We'll find something and I don't think Andiswa is aware of someone pulling the strings on this. Someone is using her this time and she doesn't know it.

Qhawe: Let's find out who that is. I've taken a two weeks leave from work so I'll be available whenever you need

me.

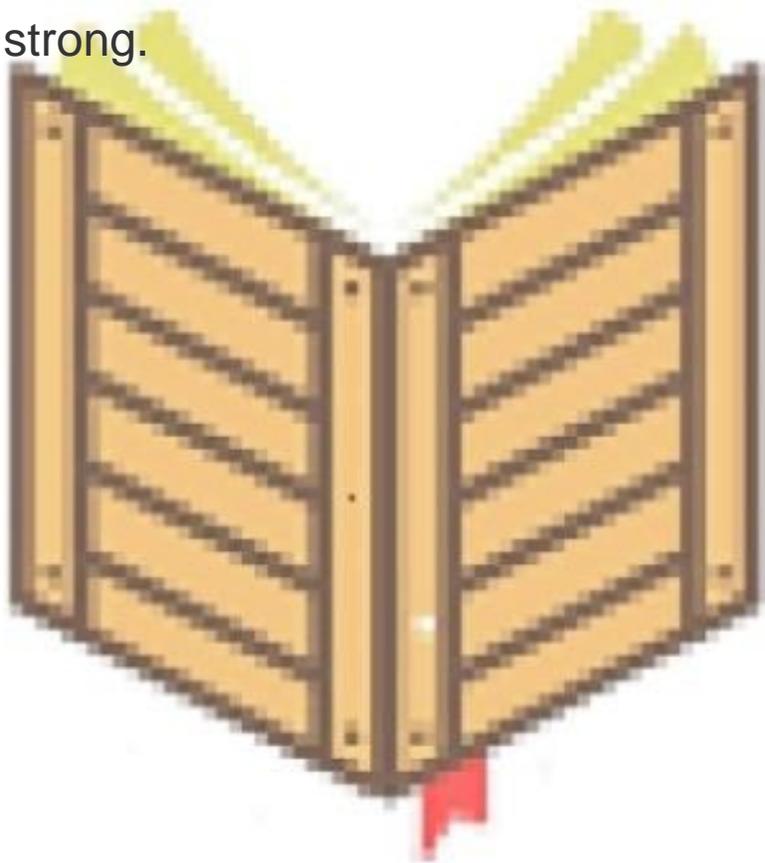
Lwazi: don't say whenever we need you. You know very well Khanyi is going to use all this time to her advantage.

Eddie: Lwazi is right. That woman is your weakness

especially now that she is pregnant. Siphon: How did

you do it man. Five babies at the same time yhoouo

!!! you are strong.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: when did this meeting change to be about me now? just let me be I'm enjoying our pregnancy you guys are just jealous.

## CHAPTER 85

### TUESDAY NIGHT

\*

\*

\*

### THE KIDS

\*

\*

\*

Bandile(twin): ok guys Christmas is coming up soon and we would like to do something special for the parents especially mom.

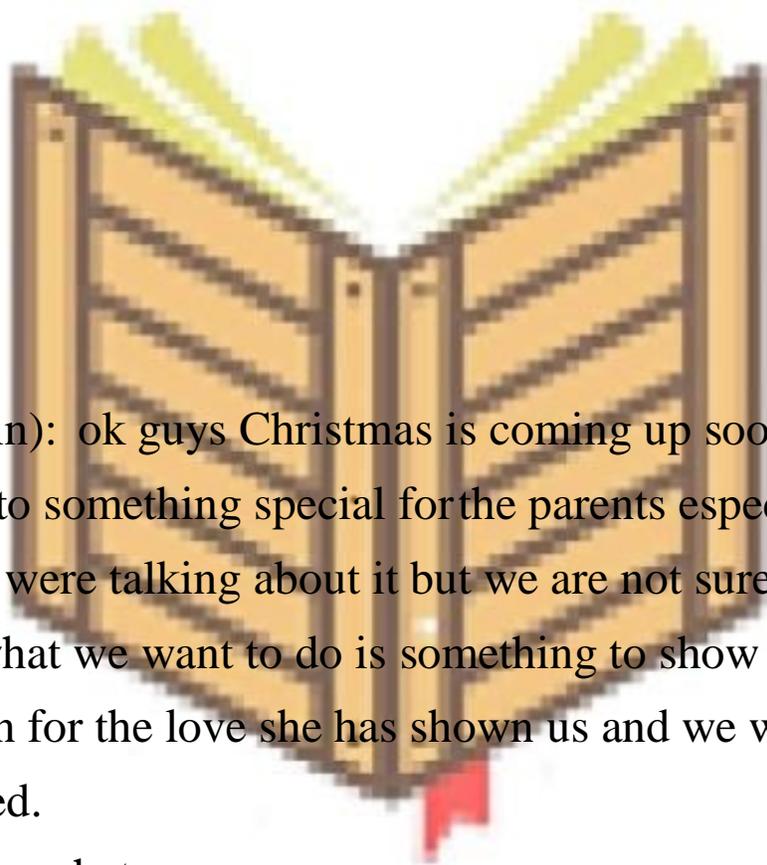
Banele: we were talking about it but we are not sure what to.

Basically what we want to do is something to show mom our appreciation for the love she has shown us and we want all the kids involved.

Lonwabo: so what were you thinking? Banele: we are not sure hence this meeting?

Sibahle: How about a baby shower but with a twist. I know the aunts probably want to do one for her at some point but we can do it.

Zenande: I think the baby shower is



NOVELSGURU.COM

a good idea  
Linamandla: Me too.

Bandile: Ok then but this has to be a surprise she must not know about it.

Ntando: ok I don't see a problem with that but we have to plan who is going to be responsible for what and when but most importantly we need to decide when we are going to it how about next weekend.

Lonwabo: I don't think it will work. Something is going on with the adults they are very distracted lately. Dad has taken leave for two weeks and it's not just because of mom. There's more going on here and we haven't been told and I doubt very much that we will be told. How are about we do it after the new year and remember we are going to the Eastern Cape for Christmas and New Year.

Bandile: I think that will work and it will also give us sometime to plan it properly.  
Ntando: ok guys are we done we have a game to finish.

Banele: seriously Ntando we are discussing something important and you are thinking about a game.

Ntando: hayibo what else is there all that's left to discuss is the date of when we are doing this whole thing.

Lonwabo: yes we need to decide on the date and I think the first weekend of January. Lwanele: I like Wabo's suggestion.

Lisakhanya: Me too.

Zenande: will we be back from the Eastern Cape then? Bandile: yes we will.

Lisakhanya: it is settled then. The first weekend of January it is then. Linamandla: Mcebisi's birthday is in January guys on the 28th

Lonwabo: hayi Lina we are making plans for the parents and you bring up your boyfriend's birthday.

Banele: We enter no where sisi you can plan what you are going to do on your own or with your sisters leave us out of it. we'll just be at the party.

Linamandla: you guys are so cruel.

Bandile: hayibo Lina we are your brother's we can't be helping you plan your boyfriend's birthday a boyfriend that you shouldn't have in the first place.

Ntando: I agree with the twins. Tell us when the celebration is and we'll be there. Linamandla: yho so much

for having supportive and loving brothers.

Lonwabo: don't get it twisted my dear sister. We are supportive and loving. We just don't like the idea of you girls having boyfriends that's all.

Zenande: you sound just like dad. Just let us be. We also want to get married someday and have our families too.

Banele: Yes someday maybe when you turn 40 or something.

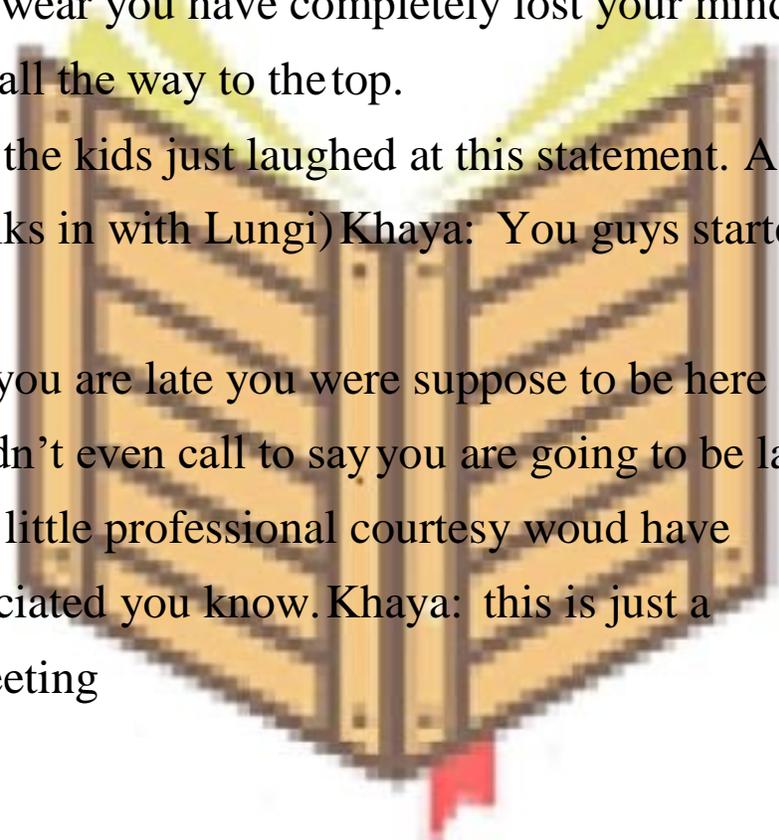
Sibahle: I swear you have completely lost your mind. Your tree doesn't go all the way to the top.

(the rest of the kids just laughed at this statement. As their big brother walks in with Lungi) Khaya: You guys started without me why?

Lonwabo: you are late you were suppose to be here an hour ago and you didn't even call to say you are going to be late.

Ntando: A little professional courtesy woud have been appreciated you know. Khaya: this is just a siblings meeting

Sponsored



you were suppose to be here an hour ago and you didn't even call to say you are going to be late.

Ntando: A little professional courtesy woud have been appreciated you know.

Khaya: this is just a sibilings meeting what professional courtesy are you talking about? Bandile: You know Khaya for someone who has meetings almost everyday you can be very slow. Maybe Lungi is the reason you are so slow today.

Lungi: why does it have to be me?

Lonwabo: our brother here doesn't think straight when you are around. Lungi: Argh you guys are just exaggerating things.

Sibahle&Lina: What is that Lungi? Lungi:

What is what?

Lina: what is that on your finger?

Lungi: oh this it's nothing your brother gave it me.

Zenandle: on what grounds he can't just give you a ring and you wear it on your left ring finger. Lungi: he asked me to marry him and I said yes

Ntando: heeee Khaya you are proposing without even telling us first Khaya: I told the parents nje

Lwanele: and you side lined us. Are we not important enough that we have to find out after you have proposed. What if we decide we don't like Lungi.

Khaya: hayibo guys

Lisakhanya: Don't say hayibo. You should have told us before you proposed. Lonwabo: it's obvious that we are not that important.

Ntando: most definitely

Sibahle: for sure

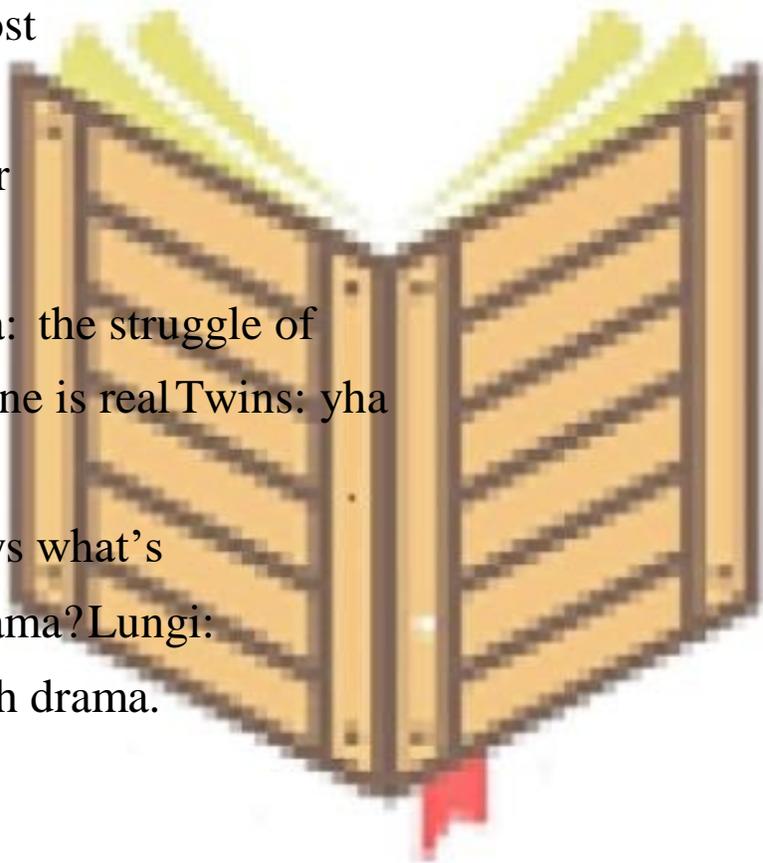
Linamandla: the struggle of being sideline is real  
Twins: yha nhe!

Khaya: guys what's with the drama?  
Lungi: and so much drama.

\*  
\*  
\*

NKOSIK

HONA



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

\*

Instead of things getting better they are getting worse. This is all because Khanyi is refusing for the kids to come here. I really need to find a way to have those kids to agree to coming here. I can't carry on like this. This is just too much. My wife walks in and interrupts my thoughts.

Her: You really should find another way to appease your ancestors. Cracking your brains thinking about how you are going to get Khanyi and her kids to agree to coming here and help you is not going to help. If I was Khanyi I would have done the something.

Me: there is no other way my love.

Her: there's always a way out of any situation and this situation has another way out you just have to find it.

Me: the only way out for me is those kids.

Her: forget about Khanyi and her kids like you have for the past 25 years. I told you a long time ago to make things right between you and those kids. If you had done what I told you to do you would not be here today but you chose to be hard headed about it. even now I am telling you that you can find another way out but you are being hard headed again.

Me: that's because there's no other way.

Her: you haven't looked for another way. If I was Khanyi I would do exactly the same thing she is doing. You did her

wrong in so many ways and you are refusing to see that.

Me: I just don't know anymore. We can't live like this anymore

Her: it doesn't matter. We are not going to die but leave

Khanyisile and her kids alone. Don't bother them and if you do

I swear I will divorce you and leave you with nothing.

Me: you wouldn't do that you are my wife why are you taking her side.

Her: Because those kids and their mother have been through a

lot in their lives and they don't need you complicating things

for them and creating unnecessary drama for them. what's

worse is that you are not even trying to get the kids I have with

you to meet their siblings all you care about is yourself and

your ancestors will keep punishing you until you wake up and

smell the coffee.

(with that said my walked out of the room. I have never seen her this angry before.)

## CHAPTER 86

WEDNESDAY

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

ANDI

SWA

\*

\*

\*

When I found out that my father was not my father I was broken to the core. My mom had an affair and I was the result of the affair. She never told me who my father is she died without telling me that. Her husband never really loved me and I think he knew even before my mom confessed the truth. He tried to get her to tell me the truth about my father but she refused saying that she would rather destroy her marriage than destroy someone else's which told me that the affair was with a married man. I started hating my sister I wanted everything she had especially the love she got from her father the way he treated her. I made myself a promise that she would never be happy until I find my father. She got everything from her father she was treated like royalty even her fiancé treated her like royalty and all the men I met treated me like trash. When her father died he left most of his

things in her name. she has money that she is not using from her father she has her own business and what do I have nothing only because my mother decided to be a whore. Well she can suffer for her mother's sins.

Everything her father left her should also be mine we are sisters after all and we grew up together. Yes I got my share but it was not equal to hers. I'm glad I never spent it all I kept some for a rainy day and I am going to destroy her one last time and this time she will never recover. I need a PI though I need to find out what she is up too. I know she moved to Durban and operating her business there I need need to know more about her new life. Right now my biggest concern is who is playing with my life right now. I was suppose to be in that hospital for 25 years and I was suppose to spend 10 years in there before I can be reviewed and be moved to a normal prison. who ever it is they are giving a roof over my head a fully furnished apartment with groceries being delivered every week.

They gave me my sister's number and some address which I am assuming is her address I'll find out when I go to Durban. Maybe this is someone who knows my father it's all confusing. I keep getting bits and pieces of

information about my sister and I need to go to Durban to find out what's the real story. I think this is someone who wants my sister out of the way and they are using me to do it and this is someone who knows how I feel about her. My phone beeps and it's a message.

“YOU WILL FIND OUT WHO I AM WHEN THE TIME IS RIGHT AND I WILL INTRODUCE YOU TO YOUR FATHER. YOU HAVE AN APARTMENT WAITING FOR YOU IN DURBAN AND YOU WILL



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

RECEIVE WEEKLY GROCERIES AS WELL I HOPE YOU WILL FIND IT COMFORTABLE. HAVE YOU MANAGED TO FIND YOUR SISTER I'M SURE YOU NEED YOUR FAMILY RIGHT NOW. YOU SHOULD BE PAYING HER A VISIT SOON."

This is my life this is how this person communicates with me. I really don't know what they want from me. Who ever this is got me out and obviously they want something from me. There's a PI that comes highly recommended in Durban and apparently the mayor's office uses him a lot. Let me call him and see if he can get me what I need.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*phone  
\*\*\*\*\*  
conversation\*\*\*\*\*

Me: hello am I speaking to Sipho Dlamini?

Him: Yes you are what can I do for you ma'am? (no one has ever called me ma'am before. He is so polite.)

Me: I need you find out some information about someone for me

Him: that is my business. What kind of

information do you have that I can use Me:

Her name what I think is her address and where she works.

Him: what is her name?

Me: Her name is Ncebakazi Ndzolo those who are close to her call her Ncesh. (I continue to give him all the information I have on my sister.)

Him: Ok. I charge R5000 for investigations I do and you will have to pay a deposit of R2500 and the rest you pay when I deliver the information that is if you are local and if I have to travel my charges exclude travel costs. Travel costs include fuel flights and accommodation. Or you can collect the information from me yourself. I never send information electronically or any other way. It's either I deliver or you collect.

Me: I'll collect I am coming to Durban this weekend.

Him: alright then I will have your information ready by

then but that depends on when you the deposit. I also

need your details so that I can be able to contact you

your full name and address as well for my file and if you

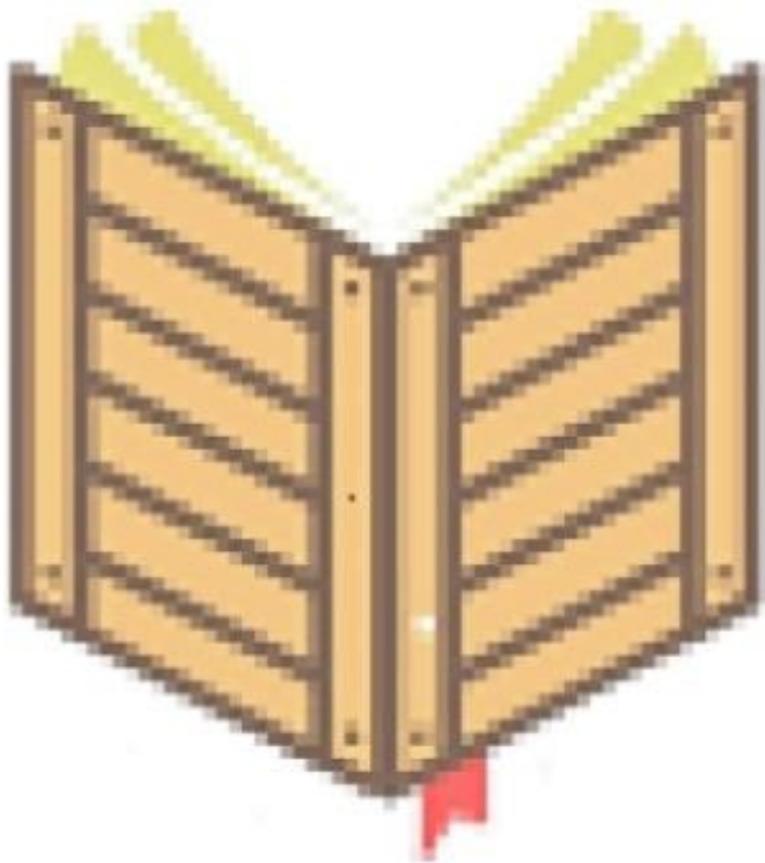
don't mind me asking how did you find me?

Me: google you came highly recommended. I'll pay you

now just sms me you banking details. Him: I will do so. I'll

keep in touch. Thank you for calling and using our services. (he hangs up and shortly after I receive an sms with banking details. This guy is very efficient. Let's see what he comes up with.)

\*



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*

\*

SIP

HO

\*

\*

\*

I grab my keys and drive to Khanyi's house I called Bandile and he said he was there something about Khanyi needing him. I don't know Khanyi that well but this woman is so clingy to these guys and very demanding and the strange thing is that their women don't complain. I wonder how Sindy is going to deal with it it looks we are going to be spending lots of time with these people. The security in this house is very tight and I like it. this is one of the safest houses I've been to here.

Me: hey guys

Bandile: Siphoh what's up man it sounded very urgent over the phone.

Me: I have a new client and she wants to

know everything about your woman. Lwazi:

what do you mean

Me: Exactly that Lwazi and

it's her sister. Qhawe: How did she find you?

Me: I come highly recommended. She googled me at least that's what she says. Bandile: and she doesn't know you know Ncesh already

Sponsored



it sounded very urgent over the phone.

Me: I have a new client and she wants to know everything about your woman. Lwazi: what do you mean

Me: Exactly that Lwazi and it's her sister. Qhawe: How did she find you?

Me: I come highly recommended. She googled me at least that's what she says. Bandile: and she doesn't know you know Ncesh already this could be good.

Lwazi: how on earth can this be good?(this guys is always eating. He is busy eating a sandwich right now

and Qhawe is having some sort of pasta Bandile is the only one not eating?)

Me: Why are you guys the only ones eating didn't Bandile want the food?

Lwazi: it's this pregnancy thing that we have going in this house if you know what I mean.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: How is it affecting you are probably the natural food killer in this family and you were probably eating a lot even before the pregnancy so how is it affecting?

Qhawe: “Natural food killer” now that is a way to describe your eating habits Lwazi and please answer the man’s question how is it my wife’s pregnancy affecting you since I am the one that made her pregnant and I can honestly say it affecting me in a way.

Lwazi: hayibo she is your wife now If I remember correctly she is our wife those were her words when that Zwelibanzi piece of nonsense was annoying her.

Bandile: ok I agree with Lwazi there she did say we were her husband and she’s a very demanding wife. When are you proposing it’s obvious you want to wife her it’s been obvious for a long time now?

Me: ok guys we are drifting away from the actual reason I am here. BAndile:

yes we are.

Me: I wanted to ask you about the mother of your sons what does she do for a living?

Bandile: she is an advocate now she specializes in criminal law. You can’t think that she is behind Andiswa’s release.

Me: No I'm not saying she is but I'm looking at all the possibilities. I need info about her later on. Look we can't leave any stones unturned if we want to beat Andiswa and she is coming to Durban this weekend and I am suppose to have her information ready for her.

Qhawe: give it to her but leave us out of it. Don't tell her about us. Make it look like she is still a lonely woman who is focused on nothing but her business.

Bandile: Qhawe this is my woman's life we are talking about here. (Eddie walks in)

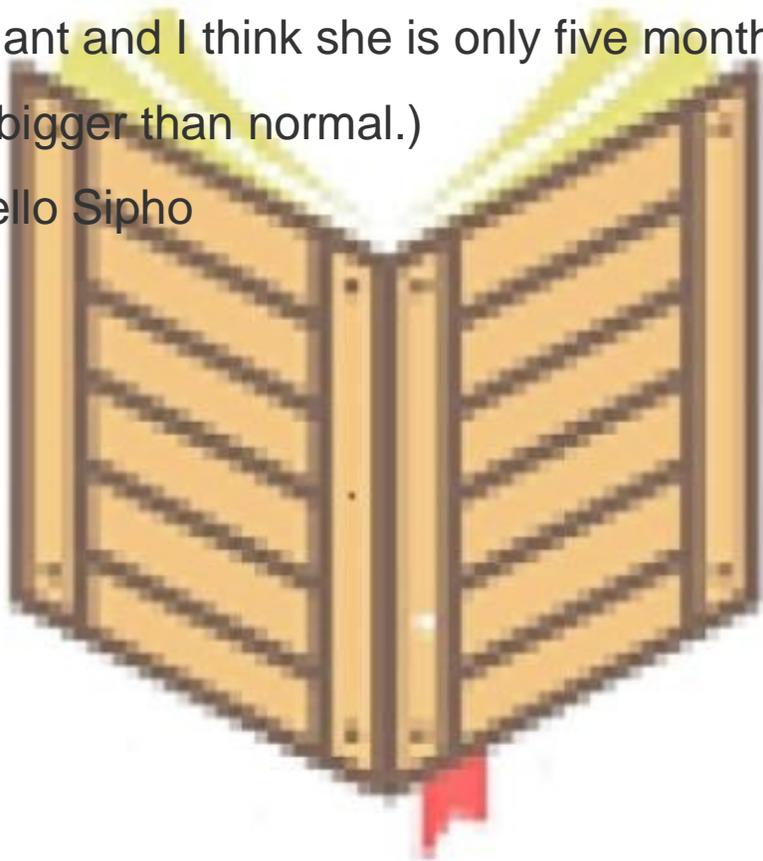
Eddie: and why didn't you call us this is part of our job you know protecting you guys. Qhawe is right. Let her have the info that way we don't have to plan how to capture her. Since she is going to be here this weekend it doesn't give us much time to plan so the best plan is to let her play right into our hands. All have to do is keep tabs on her when she get here. She probably already has people following her around already since we suspecting that she is being used.

Andile: don't make a loney woman. Tell he she has a boyfriend that will definitely draw her she is going to be

curious she is going to want to see the boyfriend and how happy they are and she will probably ask you to follow them around which I suggest you accept the job when she does make an offer.

Me: She has your address Bandile and she will obviously come knocking at your door step. (Khanyi walks in looking very pregnant and I think she is only five months pregnant but she is bigger than normal.)

Khanyi: hello Siph



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Khanyi how are you?

Khanyi: I'm good just tired. (she walks to Qhawe stands between his legs with him busy kissing her stomach and talking to the babies she sits on his lap) what did you bring me Sipho? (that's another thing you can't come to this house without bringing something for the pregnant lady. I give her the small plastic bag I was carrying when I walked in. she looks inside and smiles the biggest smile I've seen her smile and she kisses my cheek.) thank you

Me: Anything to keep you happy. (she whispers something into Qhawe as ear and judging by his smile she wants his dick. Just like that Qhawe kisses her gets up and they walk out together. Qhawe turns to look us)

Qhawe: I'll be back. The Queen needs me. (with that said he leaves.)

Bandile: those two are going to be the death of us I tell you. Back to business. I hear what you guys are saying but I'm scared of putting her at risk like that.

Eddie: I understand your fears but this is going to work best. Sipho will follow her around with the help of my guys and on the day she decides to show up at your door we

will be there. She won't know what hit her.

## CHAPTER 87

WEDNESDAY

\*

\*

\*

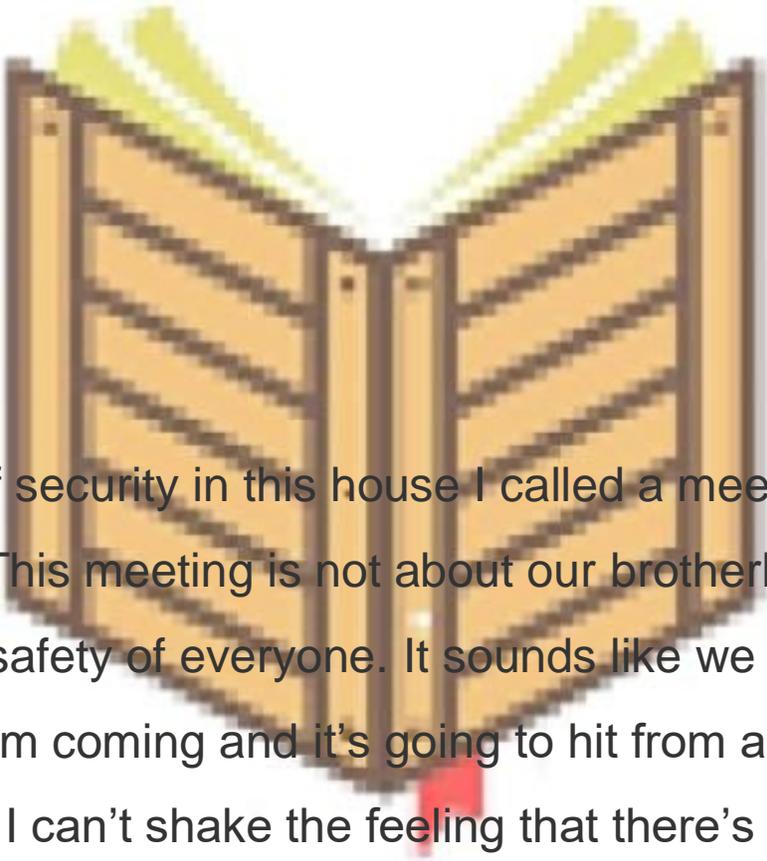
ED

DIE

\*

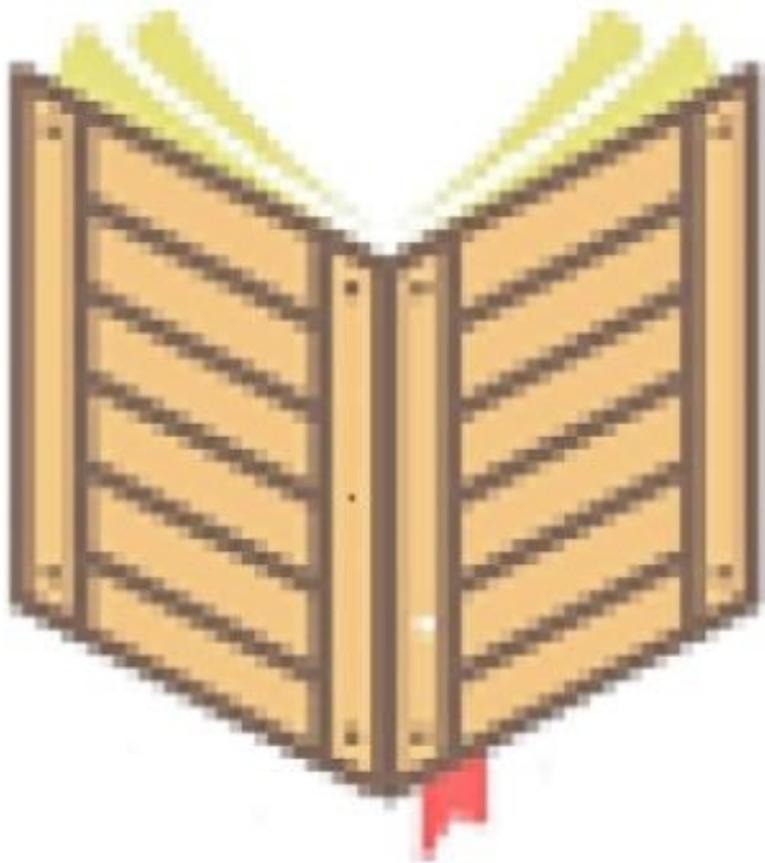
\*

\*



As head of security in this house I called a meeting with the guys. This meeting is not about our brotherhood this is about the safety of everyone. It sounds like we have a bigger storm coming and it's going to hit from all directions. I can't shake the feeling that there's more than this Andiswa woman coming. I feel like something else is going to happen but I don't know what it is. There's been a strange car parked two houses away from us for the past week. I think someone is trying is trying to understand the routine in this house. I need to check with

Qhawe if the farm house is ready for moving in. it's meant to be a surprise for Khanyi. Even though they spoke about it she doesn't



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

know he bought it. the guys will be finishing up with the installation of the security system. Qhawe and Khanyi walk into the kitchen while I am making myself a sandwich.

Them: what are

you making? Me:

Sandwich

Khanyi:  
which one?

Me: ham  
and cheese.

Khanyi: no  
thank you.

Me: it's like I was making it for you.

Khanyi: since you are the one busy with food can you make me a peanut and jam sandwich I'll make the coffee.

Qhawe: Make that two sandwiches and don't

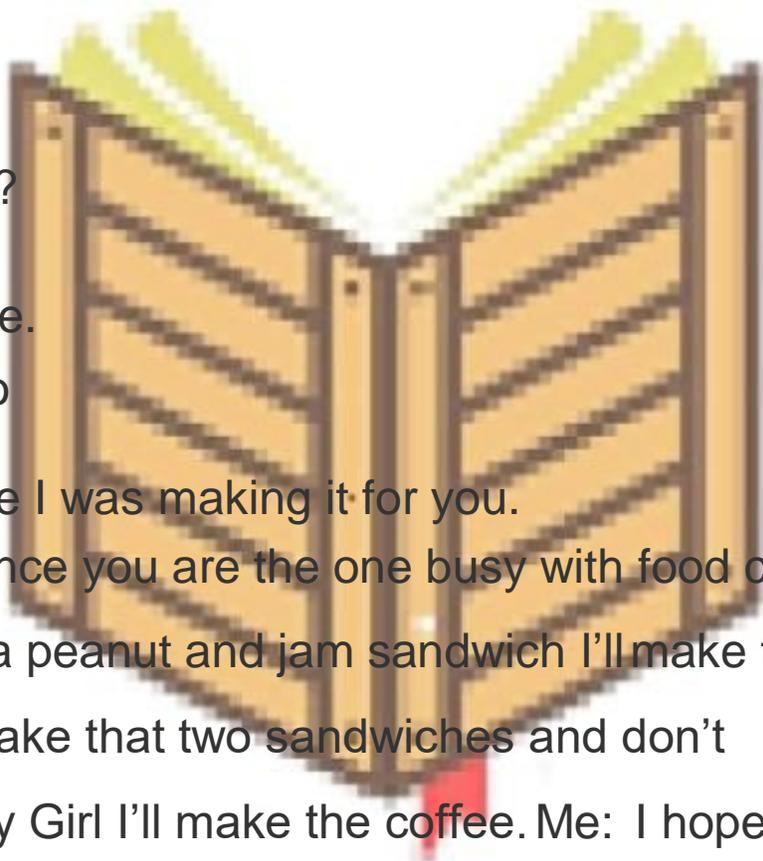
worry Baby Girl I'll make the coffee. Me: I hope that's decaf coffee.

Khanyi: of course it is what do you take us for. (I just

laugh at her she can be so dramatic) Qhawe: what's with the urgent meetings today?

Me: You'll find out as soon as everyone gets here and

Khanyi I need you to relax it's nothing to panic about



NOVELSGURU.COM

just changes in security.

Khanyi: who said I was going to panic? (just then everyone walks in including Mcebisi and Sipho and I give Khanyi and Qhawe their sandwiches holding their cups of coffee already.)

Lwazi: Can I aslo have whatever you guys are having

Me: You can make it yourself or ask Thando to make it for you.

Thando: I just fed him three hours ago if he wants something he can make it himself.

Mcebisi: I need something last time I ate was lunch time busy day today. (he walks over to me and I move to make space for him so that he make his own sandwich.

Ncebakazi pours wine for everyone except Qhawe Khanyi and Mcebisi.)

Lwazi: Can you make one for me too please.

Why are you refusing a glass of wine. Mcebisi: I'll have it when I finish my sandwich.

Me: the reason I called you all here (Luyanda walks in)

Luyanda you are a lawyer and always on time in court why is it so difficult for you to be on time for our meetings?

Luyanda: I was held up in the office I have info for you guys.

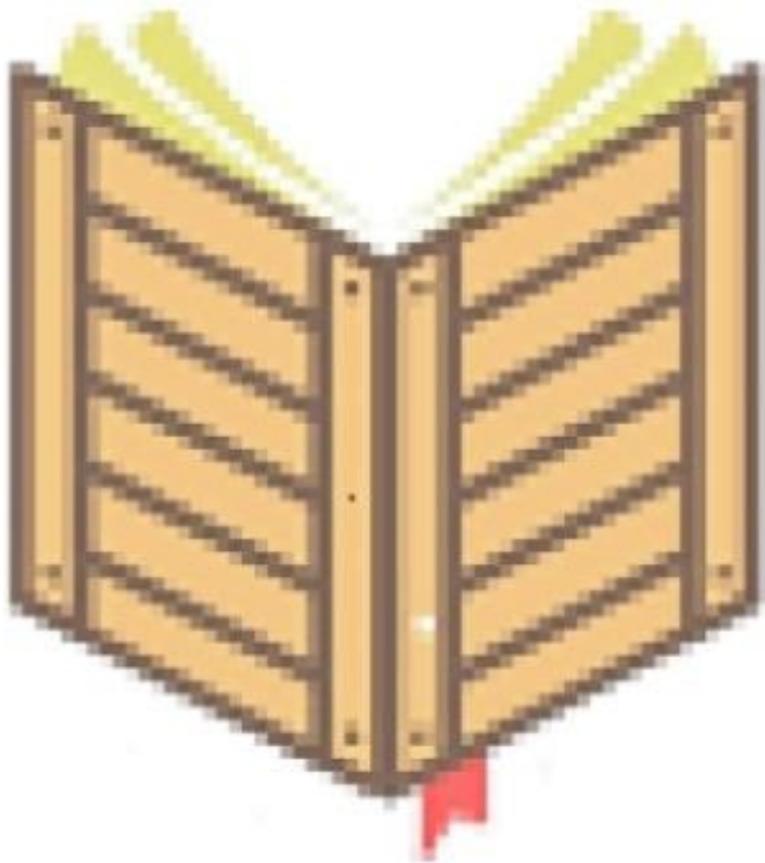
Me: you can share that when I'm done. Ok guys I am going to tighten security for everyone and please I want no arguments. Ladies as you know Andiswa is coming to town and it is sooner than we expected.

Khanyi: How

soon? Me:

this

weekend.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ncesh: that's soon. What's her hurry.

Me: I don't think she is a hurry for anything I think she wants to find out more about you. Siphon: I really think she is a puppet also in someone else's plan. The judge that approved her release was bribed.

Luyanda: how did you know that that's the same info I have but I can't seem to unlock the door that leads to who is behind the bribery. We find out who bribed the judge and we'll have the master mind of this plan.

Me: guys I want you all to be aware that this is someone who has something against Ncesh or Bandile. I've made changes in our security. Bandile Lwazi Mcebisi Siphon Sizwe Luyanda even though you guys don't live here your security is still my responsibility. So for your own protection you have to follow my orders

Lwazi: I'm not very good with following orders as you all know but I promise I'll try my best.

Me: that's all I need from you Lwazi. We have to play it safe especially when I have this feeling that I can't shake.

Khanyi: No Eddie you can't have one of those not now Eddie not while I'm pregnant. Eddie: I'm sorry Khanyi but you know I'm always right when

I get this feeling.

Khanyi: Jesus Eddie you had to choose now to have one of your feelings  
Me: you know I don't choose for this to happen.

Qhawe: what on earth are you talking about?

Khanyi: this is not just about Andiswa there something more coming for us that's what it normally means when Eddie gets one his feelings that he can't shake.

Qhawe: oh I see.

Me: guys I know you are not happy with me putting everything out in the open like that I just didn't think it will be best to keep the ladies in the dark they need to know what's going on so that they can be able to accommodate the changes. The kids need to finish packing they are leaving tomorrow for the Eastern Cape not this weekend and they are going to be using a private jet. I called in favour with one of my very rich clients and he has agreed to help. You are all going to fly to the Eastern for Christmas on Christmas eve and you are going to come back on the 3rd without the kids. To all those going to the Eastern Cape I need you to keep a low profile. Guys it is imperative that you do as I say right now.

Bandile:

Understood.

Me: good.

Mcebisi

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I need you to keep a low profile. Guys it is imperative that you do as I say right now. Bandile: Understood.

Me: good. Mcebisi you are new in this family if you haven't caught on yet this is family drama. I know you are spending the holidays with your parents but if you make any changes to those plans you need to let me know because I am going to have guys on you and your family. I know you keep your relationship with Lina as private as possible but people know she is yours since you post her on instagram. We need to be careful.

Mcebisi: so posting our relationship on social media is not safe?

Me: You can post as much as you like even if you don't post people will have a way of finding out just like they did with Qhawe and Khanyi. Sizwe are you going to be around for the holidays.

Sizwe: yes I am. Anelisa can't travel anymore she is too far along. She can give birth anytime. Khanyi: I can't wait to meet the little princess.

Sizwe: how do you know it's a princess

Khanyi: because God knows we need to balance out this family. We don't need anymore males. Sizwe: what if your five babies are boys

Khanyi: then I'll die. We can't have anymore males here. No it's too much. Ncesh: It is too much. I also want a princess when I get pregnant.

Bandile: what if I want a boy?

Ncesh: that's your problem don't make your problems mine please. If you want to survive our marriage you better make sure I get a girl.

Thando: me I want a boy shame.

Lwazi: Now you are talking a boy it is for us. You know

Thando I've met women in my life good women bad women but I've never met one like you until I met you. As frozen as my heart was in a way you've managed to melt it and made me fall in love you with you. I love you my

Punkie.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Thando: I love you too my joker.

(I honestly have no idea how these meetings manage to spiral out context really I don't somehow they always do.)

\*

\*

\*

LU  
NGI

\*

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

I've never had a good relationship with my mother. She is not easy to talk to. We never have conversations that last for hours like I do with Qhawe's mom. Sometimes I feel like my mom is hiding something from me. Apparently my dad didn't love her and he married someone else but he died when I was little. There's gaps when she tells the story and it sounds rehearsed. I even stopped asking her about him because I feel like she is not telling me the whole truth about him. I do wish he was alive though maybe I would have the same kind of relationship with him I have with Khaya's dad. I'm thankful that his parents treat me like one of their kids I never feel like an outsider. My mom has been wanting to meet Qhawe and I have been delaying it but now I can't delay it anymore.

Me: Mom may I have a word with you? (that's how formal the relationship is between me and her) Her: sure

Me: Remember I told you I was

seeing someone Khaya Sondlo Her:

yes I remember. When am I meeting him?

Me: well soon mom. He asked me to marry him and I said

yes.

Her: are you pregnant? (that's my mom for you. A man can't simply ask a woman to marry him unless she is pregnant.)

Me: no mom. In fact I am still a virgin. Mom his family is going to send a letter requesting to come for lobola negotiations.

Her: hayibo who sends letters in our days. They can just send a text or an email.

Me: they are a very modern family mom but there are certain traditions that they like to maintain and this is one of them.

Her: mmhhh I see..so when do you think they might come?

Me: they are planning to come in Feb because we want to get married in July. Her:

Lungi it's so soon are you sure you are not pregnant?

Me: Mama he is marrying me because he loves and wants to spend his life with him and I want the same. I love him.

Her: there's no such thing as

love. It doesn't exist. Me: so

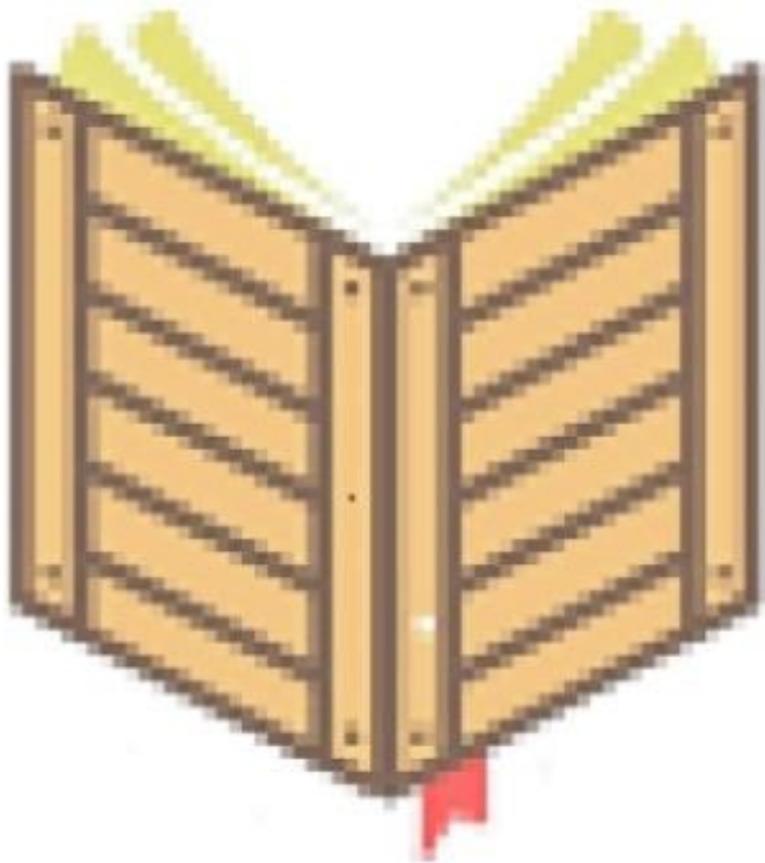
you are saying that you don't

love me.

Her: that's not what I am saying

Me: but you just said that there's no such thing as love.

Her: your dad ..... Never mind. (that's what she does all the time when it comes to my dad.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: mom I want my dad's family to be involved in my lobola negotiations. You told me they had accepted me as their child I still don't understand why you kept me from them I would like them to be involved

Her: No Lungi. They haven't been a part of your life for a very long time and they are not about to start now.

ME: who's fault is it mom? Why are they not part of my life. If they accepted and once loved me then what changed mama?

Her: a lot changed Lungi he fell in love with someone else.. I don't want to talk about it.

Me: this is what you do all the time. I know bits and pieces about my father and his family. You never want to talk about them. Don't you think I deserve to know the truth mama. He was my father after all they are my family. Why did you keep me away from them why mama why?

Her: because I broke up with the one that loved me and cared for me chasing your father only to realise that he didn't love me. I blame myself. He made it clear from the beginning that we were just having a fling and I went and fell in love and he was in love with someone else. He was happy when he found that I was pregnant. He told his family and fiancé. They accepted you and did everything

for you but I was so obsessed with him I wanted him all to myself which created problems between me and his fiancé and him. I ran away with you because I couldn't handle the rejection and never kept in touch with them. I heard that he tried looking for us and he was so broken and suffered from depression for a few years but I couldn't take you back I just couldn't go back there. The only person that knew where we were died and even today no one knows where we are or even my family.

Me: you lied to me when you said you had no family you had no one. You lied to me when you said that it is just you and me. Is my father even dead mama? (at this time I can't even control the tears and she is looking at me not saying anything but I can read between the lines.) Oh my God mama how could you?

Her: I'm sorry Lungie. (I just got up took my car keys and left her there)

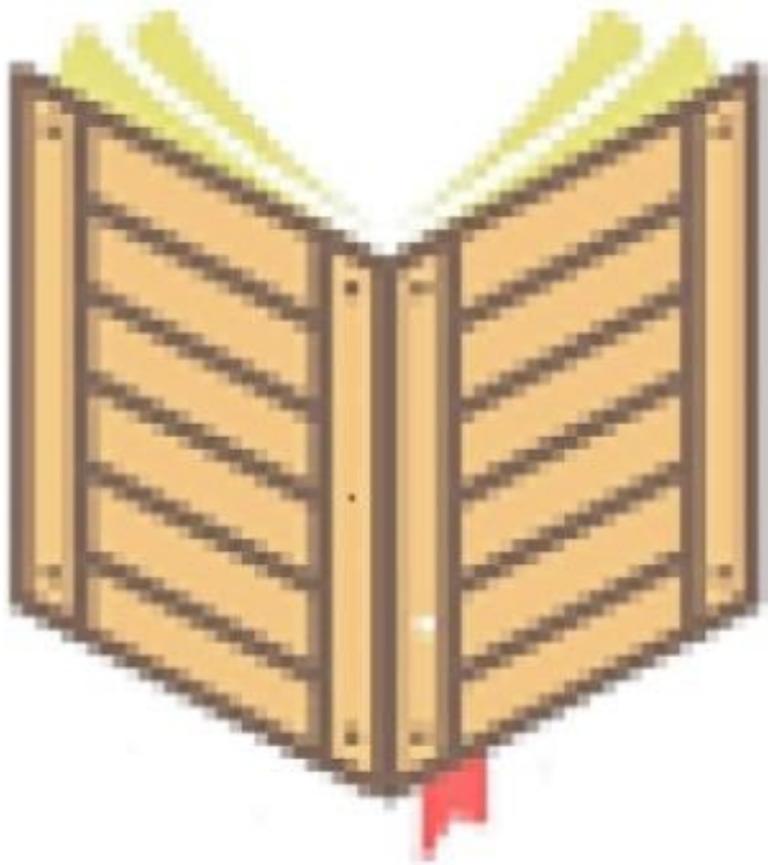
## CHAPTER 88

### THURSDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

KHA

YA  
\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

\*

Last night I decided to sleep over at my apartment. Since I am now an engaged man I need to spend more time here with Lungi in fact I should buy a house house a house big enough for three people for now. we really don't need a big house it's just the two of us. Speaking of Lungi she walked in angry as ever last night crying her eyeballs out she couldn't even speak. I just tried to calm her down and eventually she fell asleep from all the crying. It's a good thing I don't have to be at work today. We are closed for the December holidays now. Yesterday was my last

day. Lungi is still asleep and today I am suppose to go the Eastern Cape with my siblings I guess I'll have to postpone. She looks so peaceful like she has no worries in this world. She is a wonderful soul her face is so beautiful that natural beauty that beauty that most people would consider average. Out of all the girls I've dated she is the first one that doesn't wear makeup and she absolutely doesn't need it. Even some of those girls didn't need it but hey.... She slowly opens her eyes as I am busy admiring her.

Lungi: Morning

Lollipop Me:

Morning Mrs

Sondlo

Lungi: I could get used to being called that everyday. (she says it with a big smile and her voices is always very husky and slightly deep when she wakes up in the morning.)

Me: you better get used to it. July is around the corner. How are you feeling today? (she gets up slowly sits up and crosses her legs under the blankets.)

Lungi: Honestly I am not ok. I had the longest conversation that I've ever had with mom and I found out that she lied about my father.

Me: what do you mean she lied what did she lie about?

Lungi: My father is alive somewhere Lollipop (she is about to cry and I don't want her to cry she doesn't stop when she starts crying and my baby is really hurt.) she kept me away from my family because my dad was in love with someone else. She has family babe. It's not just me and her like she always said. I have aunts uncles cousins and probably grandparents too. I have a family Khaya and she kept me away from them because of her selfish reasons. She kept me away from my father Khaya.

Me: did she tell you where they are where your father is?

Lungi: I was so angry that she lied to me I didn't want stay I didn't want to say anything I would regret later. I am going back after we have breakfast and talk to her. I'll come back here afterwards and get some rest before I start my shift tonight.

Me: are you sure you are going to be ok to work tonight?

Lungi: Yes I will be ok sweets. Let's go make breakfast but you have to carry me to the kitchen.

Me: Let's go hop on my back then and I'll carry you. (she does as I say giggling like a child. She is so much like my mom. Mom really enjoys it when dad does these little things that make her feel like a child. Dad really treats her like a Baby Girl as he calls her. I put her down when we get to the kitchen she comes and stands in front of me and kisses me. )

Lungi: thank you for the piggy back ride. I love you Khaya.

Me: it was my pleasure. You know Siphos is a private investigator you can always ask him to find your father if your mom refuses to tell you who he is.

Lungi: I'll keep that in mind. You could have won a t-shirt you are really distracting me.

Me: says someone who is wearing the pyjamas that I specifically told her to stop wearing until we get married because I won't held responsible for what I do to her. ( I walk close to her and she points at me shaking her head laughing and I know she wants to run.)

Lungi: Khaya don't stop right there (she is laughing enjoying this. I'm just happy she is smiling. I carry on walking towards she finds a gap and runs from me. We are disturbed by a knock at the door she runs towards the front door and I'm right behind her but she gets to the door before I could grab her. she opens while breathing heavily and we get the surprise

of the day. Lungi and I stand at the door looking at the person in front of us and we keep looking at each other.)

Me: What in God's name are you doing here dressed like that? Barbie: I'm here to see you (Lungi looks at me)

Lungi: dressed like that? maybe she wants to join us for a three sum what do you think Lollipop do you think we should invite her in?

Me: I don't think so Mrs Sondlo. Look at me (I say looking down at my pj pants) I don't even have a boner she doesn't do it for me anymore. I'll just have to enjoy the show between the two of you or she can watch our show what do you think? (Lungi looks at Zukiswa)

Lungi: What do you think Zuki are you up for watching a show. Nice underwear by the way. Barbie: Khaya please don't do this.

Me: I guess she is not interested Mrs Sondlo. ( I turn to look at her and smile)

Lungi: Leave now before I beat the crap out of you. (she looks at me wanting me to say something.)

Me: You heard me call her Mrs Sondlo right. Leave now. (she turns to walk away) Zukiswa!!!(she turns and smiles as I call her name) If you ever come back here or go to my office and try

these little trick of yours I swear I'll kill you where you stand with bare hands. I fake Lungi's

hand and close the door.) now where were we before we were rudely interrupted. (she looks at me and smiles)

Lungi: Last one to the kitchen makes breakfast (she says all this running to the kitchen and I'm still standing in the lounge.)

Me: You cheated babe.

Lungi: no I didn't. (I grab her and pull her close to me and kiss her)

\*

\*

\*

KHANYI

SILE

\*

\*

\*

Me: you look like you are ready to pop

Anelisa: you have no idea. How many months are you? You are almost as big as me

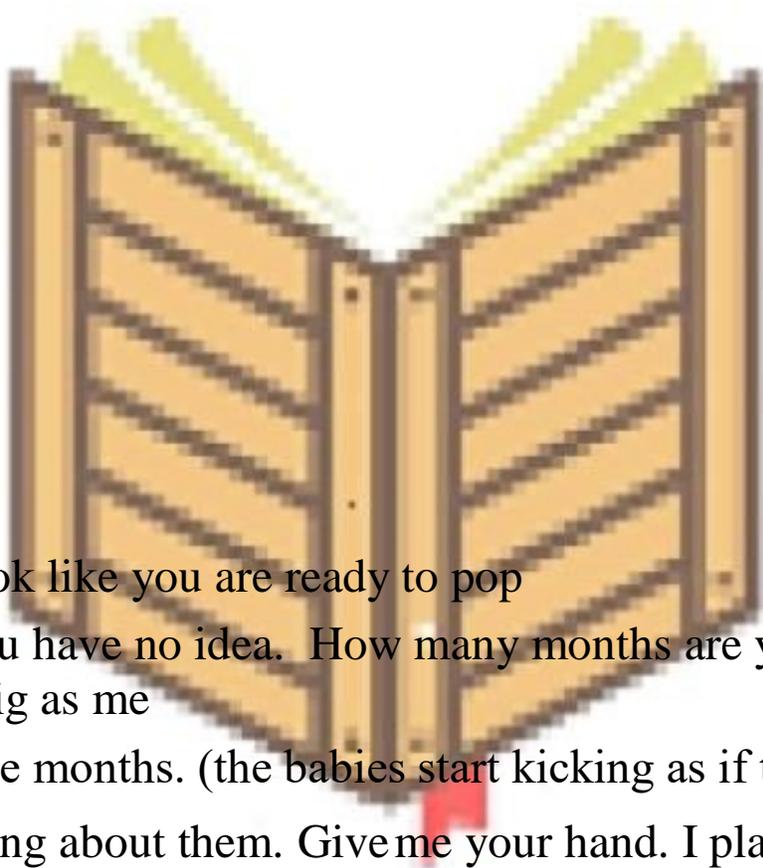
Me: I'm five months. (the babies start kicking as if they know we are talking about them. Give me your hand. I place her hand on my stomach so that she can feel the babies kick.)

Anelisa: it feels strange they probably all kicking at the same time. Does it hurt?

Me: Not really but the doctor said as they get bigger I will start feeling some discomfort but for now I'm ok.

Anelisa: ok I see. Would you like something to drink?

Me: no I'm ok. I can see that the twins are warming up to you again.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Anelisa: yes they are. Lisakhanya though is not. She is her daddy's girl and yours. She really doesn't like me anymore.

Me: it's not that. she is still hurting don't give up on her she will warm up to you eventually. Anelisa: You really don't get it

do you Khanyi. The way they are towards me is not only because I tried to have you killed that made things worse. This is from when I was still married to their father. I was never a good mother to them. I never showed them the love a mother is

suppose to show her kids. I was not ready to be a mom but I became one anyway. Qhawe was willing to wait to have kids but when I got pregnant the first time he was so excited the joy he had was amazing just like he is with your pregnancy. I

thought that when I give birth I would be ready I would be able to love them the way they deserved to be loved but I couldn't.

Qhawe's mom helped a lot with the kids that's why they are so close to her. I loved Qhawe but not the way I love Sizwe.

Qhawe was always there for me and the kids especially the kids.

He became

a mother to them when I couldn't to perform my duties. I was self absorbed Khanyi I cared only about me. I cheated on Qhawe twice.

Me: I though you cheated once

Anelisa: let me finish. ( I keep quiet and listen) I cheated on him twice. He doesn't know about the first time I cheated the kids caught me in the guest bedroom in our house. They came home early from school that day I didn't know they would be home early. I begged them not to tell their father and they agreed. I've put those kids through a lot. When I cheated the second time things became even more rocky between us and especially when I asked Qhawe for a divorce.

He was willing to forgive me but I just couldn't put him through another scandal. I couldn't handle his dick Khanyi even though he made sure I was enjoying myself but I just couldn't that man is just too big I don't know how you do it. that's also one of the reasons I cheated and why I decided to divorce him. after the divorce the kids became more distant I aslo think they couldn't keep my secrete. I think they told their father and he chose not to say anything and I wasn't putting in any effort to make things better between us hence they are they way they are towards me. When I tried to have you killed they saw it as a selfish act I tried to take away the one woman who showed them what a mother's love feels like and that cut deep in their

hearts. Lisakhanya is very attached to you and very protective of you she doesn't trust me

yet. Now do you understand why things have been the way they are between me and those kids. Me: I understand but don't give up on them. They are already warming to you again. Just don't hurt them again because if you do I will kill you myself.

Anelisa: I don't doubt that you will. I have been given a second chance Khanyi. A second chance at love and a second chance to be a better mother and I have no intentions of ruining it. I am going to make the most of it.

Me: that's good because Sizwe really loves you.

Anelisa: I know and I love him Khanyi very much. He makes me happy. Me: I have good news for you and Sizwe where is he?

Anelisa: he was in the study. ( just then he walks into the lounge) Sizwe: You are looking for me what did I do?

Me: why do you think you did something?

Sizwe: with her I never know. I need her to give birth now Me: You'll survive.

Anyway I have good news for you guys

Sizwe: after everything that is happening I think we can use a bit of good news.

Me: Anelisa is a free woman now. the charges have been dropped and the case dismissed. Sizwe: I thought Nxele didn't want to drop the charges.

Me: it took a lot of convincing eventually he agreed mainly because we helped him with the biggest case he had this year.

Sizwe: baby do you hear that we can go anywhere we want. Anelisa: not with this big stomach.

Sizwe: I know baby. (he kisses her and comes to me and gives me the tightest hug) I love you little sis.

Me: I love you too.

Sizwe: when are the kids leaving?

Me: later tonight. Khaya is not going anymore something about being there for Lungi he said he would update us later.

Sizwe: Qhawe is still letting you drive?

Me: he has no choice. He bought me a car and his kids also bought me a car who's going to drive those cars if he doesn't allow me to drive. I love my cars and I'm driving them whether he likes it or not.

Sizwe: this pregnancy has made you more stubborn and made him a softie.

Me: just let me be Sizwe. I have to go. Bye love birds. Enjoy your freedom. Oh come over for dinner tonight.

## CHAPTER 89

FRIDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

LUN

GI

\*

\*

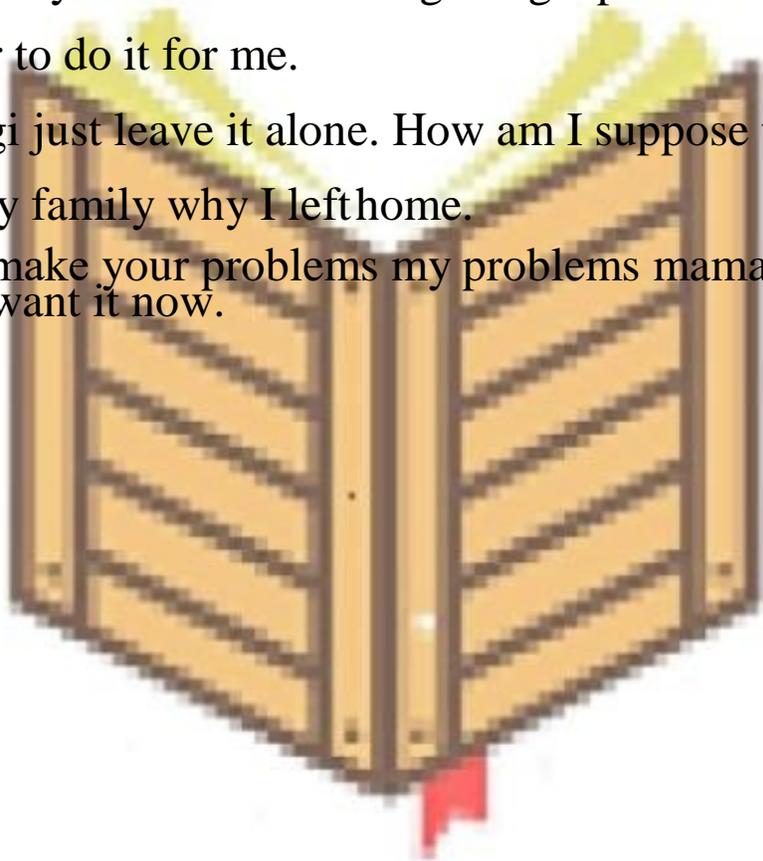
\*

Me: I was suppose to come here yesterday but I was too angry I couldn't come back

here. Today you are going to tell me everything I need to know about my father or else I'm getting a private investigator to do it for me.

Mom: Lungi just leave it alone. How am I suppose to explain all of this to my family why I left home.

Me: don't make your problems my problems mama. I want the truth and I want it now.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: Lungi usungaze ukhulume kanjalo no ma wakho.

(How can you speak to your mother like that Lungi?)

Me: I'm sorry for being out of line but please I need the truth. Do you know that I have a better relationship with my mother in law than I do with you. She can talk to me and give me advice something I have always wanted to have with you but you just refuse to.

Mom: I'm old and not as morden. I'll talk to you about things I need to talk you about and that's it.

Me: really mom you are only 42 years old my mother in law is 2 years younger than you if not three. It has nothing to do with age. Since you say that you will talk to me about things you need to talk to me about talk to me about my father because you need to tell me the truth. I'm not leaving here until you do.

Mom: His surname is Langa he was 24 when I met him and he had just finished varsity and I was 20 doing my third year at varsity when I met him. We met at a sports event he was one of the rugby players. I was immediately attracted to him at that time it was just lust. He introduced himself and I introduced myself. He was open about what he wanted. He said it was just fun no strings attached we meet up we have sex and that's it. I agreed to it. it was simple enough plus I was not a virgin anyway so I didn't mind. After a few months of us doing this I fell in love but I never told him how I felt until I found that I was pregnant and he was to be married. I lied when I said that he

was in love with his fiancé. He was not in love. His father was forcing him to get married so that when his father dies he can get his inheritance basically it was an arranged marriage. I left because I created problems for him and that girl because she didn't want to accept that I was having his child. I wanted him to marry me instead of her. he didn't want to. He told me that he wasn't going to marry her either because he didn't love her and he is not about to sacrifice his happiness so that he get his father's inheritance. I don't know if he ever married her. His family loved you they did right by family and by you. They paid damages to my family. They did all the ceremonies that were required to be done for you to be introduced to their ancestors. His father is or was a very traditional man. He wanted everything to be done properly for you. Your father loved you and I denied you that love because of my selfish reasons. Your father is Xhosa he is from the Eastern Cape that's where his family is. We've been there a few times you and i. I stopped going when you were about a year old. That's when I ran away with you. I was never happy ever since we got to Durban I've never really had peace. When you were three years old I started having dreams about an old man who kept telling that I need to take you home I just couldn't bring myself to do it. I still get the dreams but they are not as often as they used to be. I've even gotten used to them. A traditional healer once

told me that things will only improve in my life when I take you home. I didn't believe him. ( I don't even have tears to cry right now. I am looking at her and wondering how she can be so selfish. How can she allow me to miss out on so much.)

Me: What about your family? Did they care about me?

Mom: they did Lungi everyone loved you. You were their first grandchild. My parents were very disappointed but that didn't stop them from loving you.

Me: Why couldn't you just accept that he didn't love you. Why were you forcing him to love you? It's obvious that he was not ready for a commitment to someone he didn't love he didn't even want to marry his arranged wife what made you think he would want to marry you ma. He made things clear to you from the beginning. You should have just let things be or you should have just left me with him and you leave by yourself. Look at all that I have I missed out on ma. I'm getting married soon and I only just found out I have family.

Mom: I'm sorry Lungi and I hope that one day you will find it in your heart to forgive me. Me: Where is your family?

Mom: they are in JHB. That's where we met your father and I. He was studying in JHB. Me: who is he mama?

Mom: He is Luyanda Langa he is a lawyer doing well for himself and he lives here in

Durban. You don't look much like him you look more like me. Sometimes I wished you looked more like him. I decided to google him just to see if there would any information on him

that's how I know he is here(my brain froze at the mention of his name I didn't hear anything else she was saying it all just became a blur.) Lungi are you ok?

Me: I'm fine. I can't believe I've been around him and I didn't even know he is my father. I remember when he first met me he looked at me funny but I think he brushed it off. Oh My God!

All this time he was right under my nose.

Mom: Lungi what are you talking about

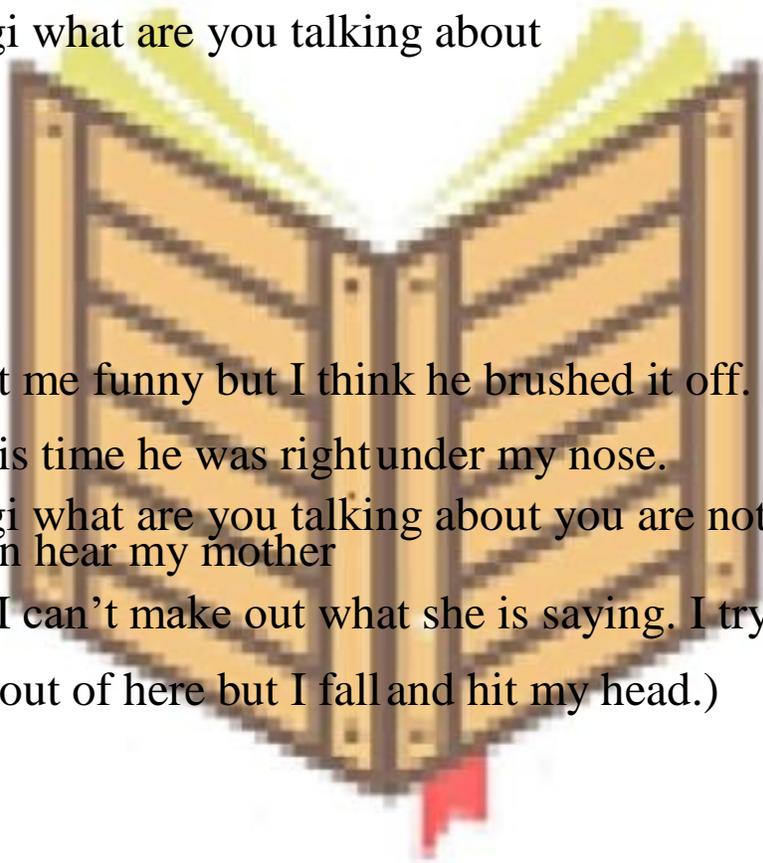
Sponsored

he looked at me funny but I think he brushed it off. Oh My God! All this time he was right under my nose.

Mom: Lungi what are you talking about you are not making sense. (I can hear my mother

talking but I can't make out what she is saying. I try getting up I need to get out of here but I fall and hit my head.)

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

QHA

WE

\*

\*

\*

I just got a call from Khaya that he is in hospital with Lungi he didn't say what happened. Khanyi: did he say what happened?

Me: No Baby Girl he didn't. we'll find out when we get there. Are you ok?

Khanyi: I'm fine. I'm just jealous he didn't call me first. (and she pouts looking cute. Khanyi really knows how to let the child in her come out to play.)

Me: you know if you were not pregnant he probably would have called you.

Khanyi: so basically it is your fault that my kids don't come running to me anymore even the twins.

Me: and how exactly is it my fault My Queen?

Khanyi: You are the one that made me pregnant and now everyone is walking on eggshells around because I can't be under any stress.

Me: I don't remember you complaining during all the times that we've made love or fucked you senseless. If I remember correctly is you asking for more begging me not to stop and go deeper. Even last night you were like "Que don't please don't

stop I'm about to come" So tell me my dear how is it my fault I was doing what I was asked to do.

Khanyi: I did complain and told you I'm never doing it again but I think you are using some voodoo magic on me that always makes want you. (I laugh so hard tilting my head on the

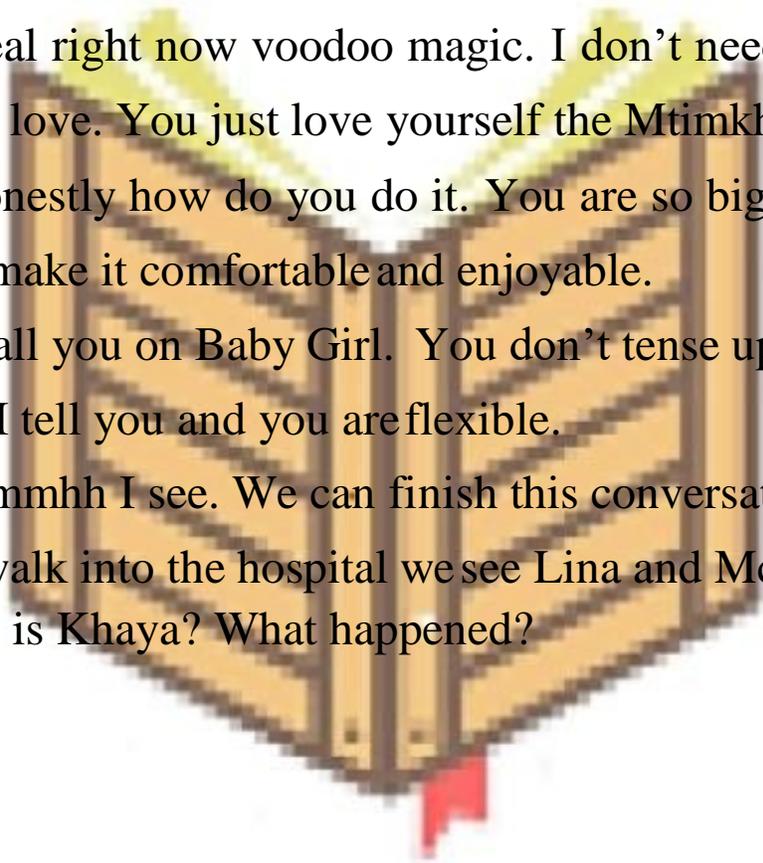
side. She smiles and I can see she is holding in her laughter and she looks outside the window.) Me: Baby Girl are you being for real right now voodoo magic. I don't need to use that staff on you love. You just love yourself the Mtimkhulu dick.

Khanyi: Honestly how do you do it. You are so big and yet you manage to make it comfortable and enjoyable.

Me: that's all you on Baby Girl. You don't tense up you do everything I tell you and you are flexible.

Khanyi: Mmmhh I see. We can finish this conversation later (when we walk into the hospital we see Lina and Mcebisi)

Me: Where is Khaya? What happened?



Mcebisi: Khaya is in the bathroom. The doctor is busy with Lungi. Maybe her mom can tell you what happened.

Khanyi: where is she?

Lina: in the waiting room. We can go there now. (when we walk in she looks at us worry is written all over her face.)

ME: Hi

Khanyi: I'm Khanyi and this Qhawe we are Khaya's parents. That's Lina my daughter and my son in law Mcebisi.

Lungi's Mom: Nice to meet you all. I'm S'phesihle but you can call me Sihle. Me: what happened?

Sihle: I think she fainted and when she fell she hit her head. Khanyi: what caused her to faint?

Sihle: she found out something today and I think she was shocked. (the doctor walks in and Khaya walks in right after him)

Khaya: How is she doc?

Doctor: she is fine. She did hit her head though when she fell but she is fine. She is going to wake up with a banging headache when she wakes up. She just fainted so there's nothing to worry about.

Khaya: can we see her?

Doctor: yes but only for a few minutes then you can come back during visiting hours.

Khaya: Excuse me doc she was suppose to work tonight so can.... (the doctor doesn't let him finish.)

Doctor: don't worry I'll have it sorted. Ever since she started in January she has never missed a day of work. I'm also going to book her off for a few days.

Khaya: thank you very much doc. (we all walk to Lungi's room but the doctor stop us) Doctor: I know you guys I mean it when I say just a few minutes with her and come back later.

Mcebisi: Got it doc.

Doctor: You are new and you are just like them I can tell. (with that said he walks away leaving Mcebisi with his mouth hanging open.)

Mcebisi: so you guys have a reputation in this hospital Khaya: Something like that and this is where I met her.

Mcebisi: I see. Can we listen to the doctor today I don't want to be labelled as a rebel by the doctors here. (we sit in Lungi's room for a minutes and we leave. Her mother has been so quiet all this time.)

Khaya: Did you tell her the truth is that why she fainted. (we were now sitting in the waitingroom)

Sihle: Yes it is.

Khaya: why did it take you so long?

Sihle: Selfish reasons. (Just then Bandile Lwazi Sizwe and Andile walk in Lwazi making noise as usual.)

Me: who called you?

Lwazi: Your son did. You seem to forget she is our niece.

Me: I didn't forget. Can you keep it down do you have to be so loud the whole hospital probably knows we are here now.

Lwazi: they'll survive.

Bandile: What's wrong with Lungi

Mcebisi: She fainted. I don't know what it is with you people and fainting maybe it runs in this family. (just then Luyanda and Eddie walk. Luyanda's eyes land on Sihle)

Luyanda: This is not happening maybe I am hallucinating. I was thinking about her today and now I'm seeing her she can't be real. Eddie please tell me the woman I'm looking at right now is a figment of my imagination.

Eddie: She looks very real to me why what's wrong? (he doesn't answer Eddie instead he walks up to Sihle and looks at her)

Luyanda: Give one good reason why I shouldn't kill right here and now and bury you in a shallow grave later on.

Khanyi: yhoouo this family and drama

what is it now. Mcebisi: you can say that

again (Thando and Ncesh walk in)

Thando: say what again?

Ncesh: Sihle what are you doing here?

## CHAPTER 90

FRIDAY EVENING

STILL AT THE HOSPITAL

\*

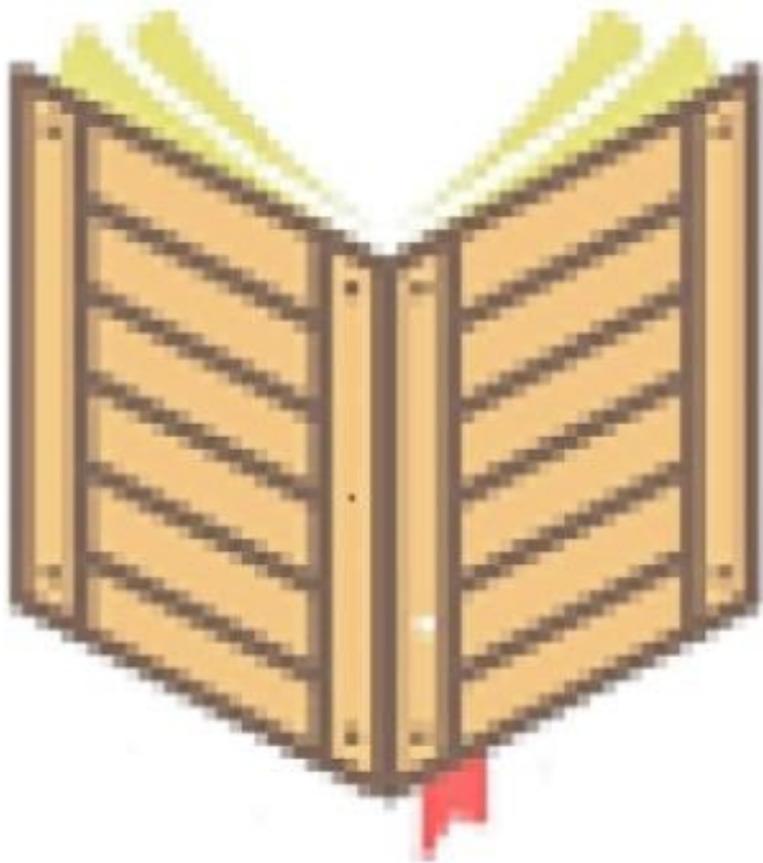
\*

\*

LUYA

NDA

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

Me: How do you know Ncesh?

Ncesh: she is one of my regular clients at the salon. ( I turn to look at Sihle) Me: I said to you give me a good reason why I shouldn't kill you now.

Sihle: she is alive Luyanda. She never died she is very much alive. Me: don't play with me woman I am not in the mood.

Sihle: I sent that letter I wanted you to stop looking for us for her. she is alive. Me: why Sihle tell me why?

Sihle: I was selfish ( I walk more closer to her and right now I am ready to strangle her) Lwazi: am I the only one confused right now?

Everyone: SHHHHHHHH LWAZI MAN!!!!

Lwazi: please don't bite my head off.

you guys like news yhooo. Thando:

just like you.

Qhawe: Luyanda you need to calm down man and tell us what happened.

Me: I can't Qhawe woman. This woman killed me inside it was a slow painful death. For years I was dead inside until I met Khanyi and her kids. Somehow spending time with them revived me it gave me hope. All I did with my life was work every day. I didn't even have a social life. It was just me and work didn't make time for anyone or anything else. She doesn't deserve to breathe and the only explanation she is giving me is that she was selfish.

Sihle: I loved you I wanted you to marry me instead of her and she didn't want her she didn't want her to be a part of your life I just couldn't deal with it and I couldn't deal with the rejection.

Me: it was not up to her Sihle. She was mine Sihle and you took her from me I love her with every single fibre of my body Sihle and you took her from me. You took away the love of my life Sihle.

Sihle: I know and I know that no amount of sorries could make up for what I did.

Qhawe: Luyanda you need to breathe and calm down(he holds me and I breakdown in his arms) Me: I can't she took her from me she took the love of my life from me and told me that she died and now she is telling me she is

alive. Qhawe she is telling me today that my daughter is alive. I can't calm down Qhawe I want to see her suffer they way she made me suffer.

Bandile: And she will suffer how could you do something like that and the only explanation you have is that you were selfish. I pieced it together while you were talking.

Lwazi: You ran away with his daughter balance me here woman what did she have to do with your feelings for her daddy.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sihle: nothing at all. I fell in love with Luyanda before I found out I was pregnant. When I found I was pregnant I also told him how I felt and he told me how he felt which was the same way he felt when we met I was nothing but a fling to him. I wanted him to marry me instead of her and I was hoping he would since I was pregnant with his child I thought since his father wanted him to marry a complete stranger he might convince him that he could marry me that would have made his father happy too.

(Qhawe let's go of me and looks me)

Qhawe: You know what go ahead kill her (he says that going back to his seat and he is pissed off.) Lwazi: wait we can't do it here too many witnesses.

Khanyi: we could use my basement. She doesn't have to die. She can just suffer just like he wants her too. I have all the toys to make that happen.

Eddie: Now you are talking.

Lina: Mom come on you can't do that. Uncle Luyanda what happened?

Me: I met her in varsity and I just wanted her to be my fuck my buddy and that I was it. I was simply not ready to be in committed relationship and I told her that. Gqi gqi

(all of a sudden) she is pregnant and in love with me and at this time my father is busy wanting me to marry some bimbo who was one of his daughter's friends and I was not about my sacrifice my happiness by marrying someone I didn't love. Little did I know that the mother of my child was going to take my happiness from me my world from me. I refused to marry the woman my father wanted to me to marry. I didn't care if I got his inheritance or not. I was going to work hard for my money and which is exactly what I did after two years of suffering from depression my family didn't even know what to do with me until one my uncles suggested I be taken for therapy. For two after I received the letter telling me my daughter was dead I thought of nothing but the things we could have done together how old she would be what kind of hairstyle she would want. I would have conversations with her because I would see her she would be sitting next to me or lying in bed with me or cooking with me. I went crazy. I gave up looking for her because I was told she was dead.

Someone once told me they saw you here in Durban but I never believed them I didn't want to believe them

Sponsored

even if I did believe them what would be the point of me trying to find you when I knew my daughter was dead. You were not who I wanted I wanted so much for my daughter to be alive. Those were the words I wanted to hear years ago. Someone to tell me my daughter is alive. Eventually I had to



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

accept that I would never see her again. Ever since I accepted that she was dead every year on her birthday I would lit a chinnesse lantern and let it float to the sky. I would write the same message every year ad place it inside the lantern I always asked them to make the lantern Blue hoping that her favourite colour would have been blue just like me. I know she would have been a rugby fan because I would have taken her to every game I played. Every game I played was for her imagining her cheering for me. I stand in the court room and win every case I handle because I know she would have been proud of me. I believed in every I do that she would have been my biggest supporter she would have been my daughter but she would have been my best friend too. And you took it all away from me Sihle. You had 21 years to tell me Sihle but you chose not to. You said she was alive where is she?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sihle: she's here in this hospital.

Khanyi: OH SHITFUCK ME SIDE WAYS AND BEND ME OVER!!!!

Bandile: hayibo Khanyi there's kids here. You and Qhawe can get a room.

Khanyi: that's not it Bandile. Think about it. we are here

for Lungi Sihle is here for Lungi she is Lungi's mom and  
Sihle just said Luyanda's daughter is here in this hospital.

Lina: Our Lungi no  
ways HOLY SHIT!!!

Sizwe: Princess  
language...

Lina: Sorry uncle Sizwe.

Me: is it true Sihle is she my daughter?

Sihle: yes she is. She mumble something about you  
before she fainted and I knew that she had met you but  
didn't know anything about you.

Me: I brushed it off when I first met her. I told myself my  
daughter was dead and it couldn't be  
her. everytime I saw her I couldn't help but wonder if she  
was not related to you. I didn't want to get my hopes up  
only to be disappointed. I see a bit of me in her but I just  
couldn't let myself go there.

Khaya: basically you are no longer my  
uncle you are my father in law Me: I  
guess so.

Khaya: Mom dad I might just need your help with the lobola  
I don't think my budget is going to be enough. This man is  
going to charge me an arm and a leg for his daughter.

Qhawe: He won't you don't have  
to worry about that. Me: how do  
you know I won't

Qhawe: because you know she is in good hands.

Lwazi: he shouldn't even charge you  
lobola we are already family. Mcebisi: I  
agree with Lwazi.

Lwazi: finally someone who thinks like me.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ncesh: Oh please he was thinking like you from the first day he got to this family. Yerrr you guys have drama.

Mcebisi: what do you mean you guys I hope that doesn't include I don't bring drama I have no drama.

Lwazi:

Me too

Eddie:

Me three.

Khanyi: Yhoooo I give up. You are all crazy. Oh my the babies are kicking

Qhawe: they want attention. (everyone takes turns feeling them kick.) does It hurt? Khanyi: No baby it doesn't. we are ok.

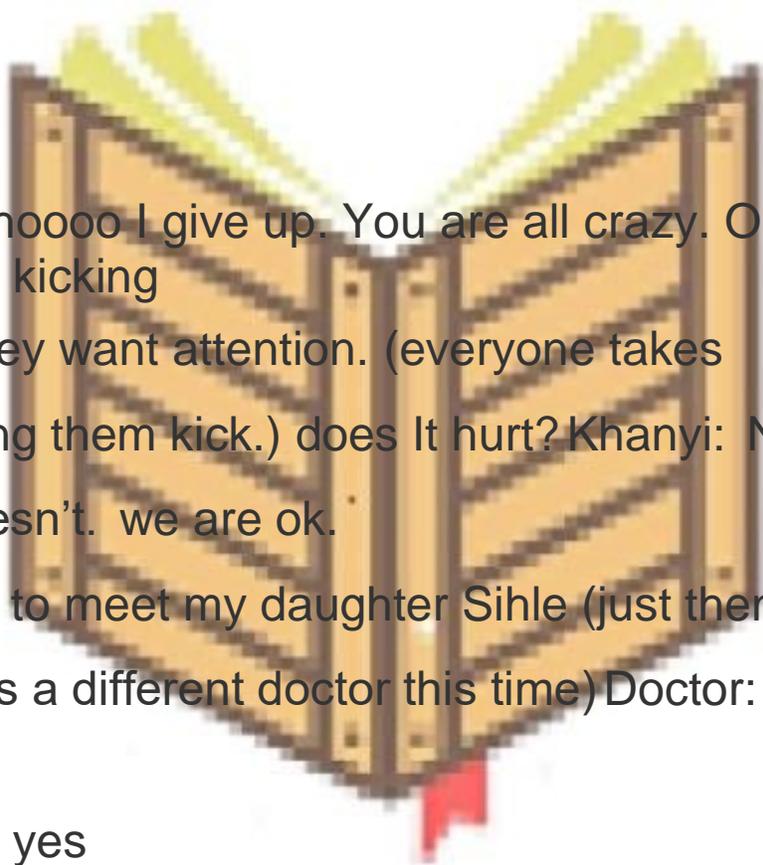
Me: I want to meet my daughter Sihle (just then the doctor walks in it's a different doctor this time) Doctor: Lungi's family

Everyone: yes

Doctor: she wants to see her fiancé and her father (I look at Khaya and he nods. We walk out following the doctor to Lungi's room. When we got there Khaya went to her and gave her a hug kissing her forehead.)

Khaya: how are you feeling?

Lungi: I'm ok just a headache. The doctor gave me some



NOVELSGURU.COM

pain killers I should be ok in no time. (she starts crying I don't think she noticed that I'm here) why did she have to be so selfish Khaya why did she deprive me of my father's she deprived me of the one thing she knew I wanted more than anything in this life. ( that just cut deep in me)

Me: I am here now we can make up for the time we lost. (she looked up and Khaya let go of her and moved away from her making space for me. I sat next to her on the bed

facing her.) you look more beautiful than I imagined you would. I always thought you would grow up looking like me. You looked so much like me when you were a baby I guess with age you changed. (she just hugged and cried. I also couldn't help myself I just broke down.)

STAURDAY

\*

\*

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

NKOSIK

HONA

\*

\*

\*

I've been thinking of going back to Durban again I need to try and speak to Khanyi again. My life is falling apart even my wife is threatening to leave if I bother Khanyi and the kids again but I know she won't. she needs me in her life just as much as I need her. My aunt Nomzamo walks in. she is a sangoma but you can never say. She dresses nice she has a high paying job a car and a very beautiful house with a hut that she uses for consultations and all. Today she is wearing the attire that she normally wears when she consults and she is carrying a sash and that small stick of hers that's covered with beads. She must have had a client to see close by.

Aunt Nomzamo: Nkosikhona

how are you my child? Me: I'm fine auntie and how are you?

Aunt Nomzamo: I'm good. (she takes her grass mat that she was carrying also and lays it on the floor and sits on it.) sit down Nkosikhona I am here to see you

Me: hayibo why Auntie?

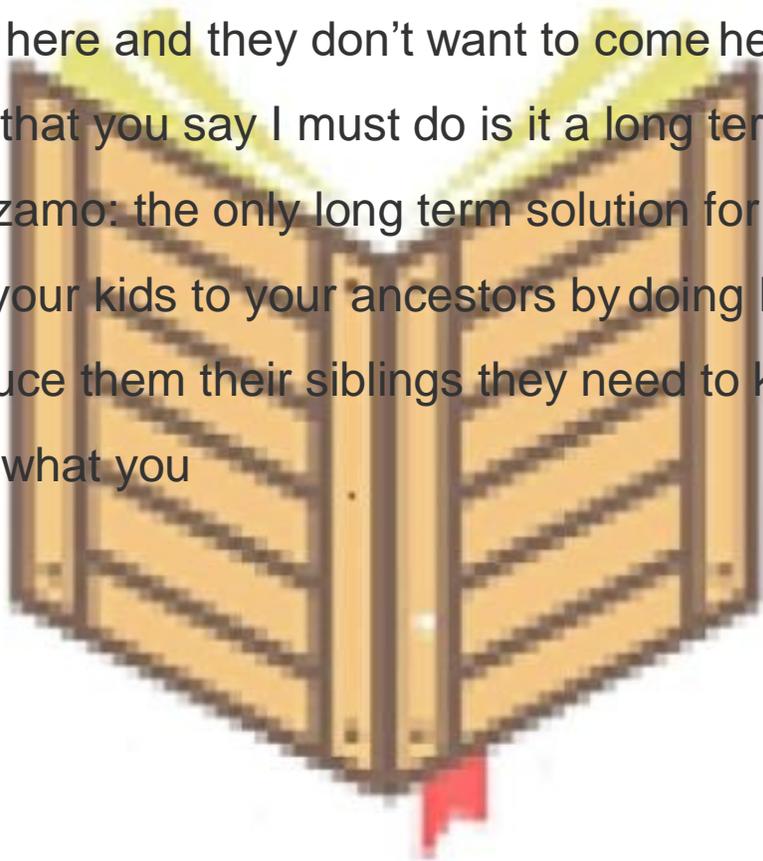
Aunt Nomzamo: Nkosikkona you need to do what is required of you to do. You need to do a small ceremony

for the ancestors ask for forgiveness that you never did right by your kids. Your ancestors are not happy that you never did IMBELEKO for Khaya and Linamandla. The mothers family did it on their side and the kids were introduced to their ancestors and their ancestors are with them all the time those kids are recognised in that family and they allowed them to use your clan name so that they don't lose sense of who they are. Do as I tell you and things will be better for you if you don't then your life will continue falling apart. You won't have direction in life. Nkosikhona as a parent you don't ignore your kids and not expect consequences. Everything that is happening to you is because of the pain you caused that woman and her kids. Their tears are coming back to you ten times more. Karma is a bitch my child and there's not much any of us can do you for you. Put **your** pride aside and humble yourself to that woman and remember she is within her rights to refuse you because she knows nothing will happen to her kids. You are going about this wrong way. You need to send your uncles to her parents and plead your case with them. She can't agree to anything without talking to her parents. Put your pride aside and humble

yourself to that family. Pay damages Nkosikhona do what was required to be done a long time ago. I don't understand why your parents let you get away with this. They are dead now and we are left to deal with their stupid stubborn child.

Me: But Auntie I spoke to Khanyi and she won't let the kids come here and they don't want to come here. This ceremony that you say I must do is it a long term solution.

Aunt Nomzamo: the only long term solution for you is to introduce your kids to your ancestors by doing IMBELEKO and introduce them their siblings they need to know each other. Do what you



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

should have done years ago and things will be better otherwise you are still going to have problems in life. Remember what I said “Karma is a bitch” and right now Karma is having fun with you. The wheel turns my child and you thought it would never turn for you. We love you Nkosikhona and you need to start listening to us and do as we tell you stop being so hard headed.

Me: I hear you Auntie.

Auntie Nomzamo: You heard me as well the last time I had this conversation with you and look where you are now you don't even know if you coming or going.

Me: I don't want short term solutions auntie. I need for things to go back to normal. Lately I don't even know what I do with the money I have and I keep losing money. My kids are acting up as well. Nothing is going right.

Aunt Nomzamo: there are no short cuts to this follow procedure and all will be well. Remember Nkosikhona what you are planning to do with those kids will have you killed. She won't hesitate to do it to protect her kids (with that said she stands and collects her things and leaves.) My family doesn't understand what I am going through. I don't really have time for this those kids need to come

here and we do IMBELEKO for them. I haven't even seen them around here maybe they are not coming to the Eastern Cape for the holidays. I need to try and speak to Khanyi before I send my uncles to her parents. I am going to Durban soon I need to do this before Christmas and that's only a week and a half away.

\*

\*

\*

SIH

LE

\*

\*

\*

Me: how are you feeling?

Lungi: I'm fine. What are you doing here? I

really don't want to talk to you. Me: you

don't have to talk you can just listen

Lungi: I don't want to do

that either mama. Me:

Please Lungi

Lungi: fine

Me: I am truly sorry for what I put you through I am sorry



NOVELSGURU.COM

that I lied to you and kept you from your father there's no valid reason for why I did it. I was just selfish because I got hurt and I don't blame your father either because he was always clear about his feelings. I really hope that you can find it



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

in your heart to forgive me someday and I hope your father will too. I'll be leaving for JHB

tomorrow. I'm going to my family. The truth is out and I have to tell them what happened and I need to ask your uncles to handle your lobola negotiations.

"I'm sorry Sihle that won't be happening." (that's Luyanda.) Me:

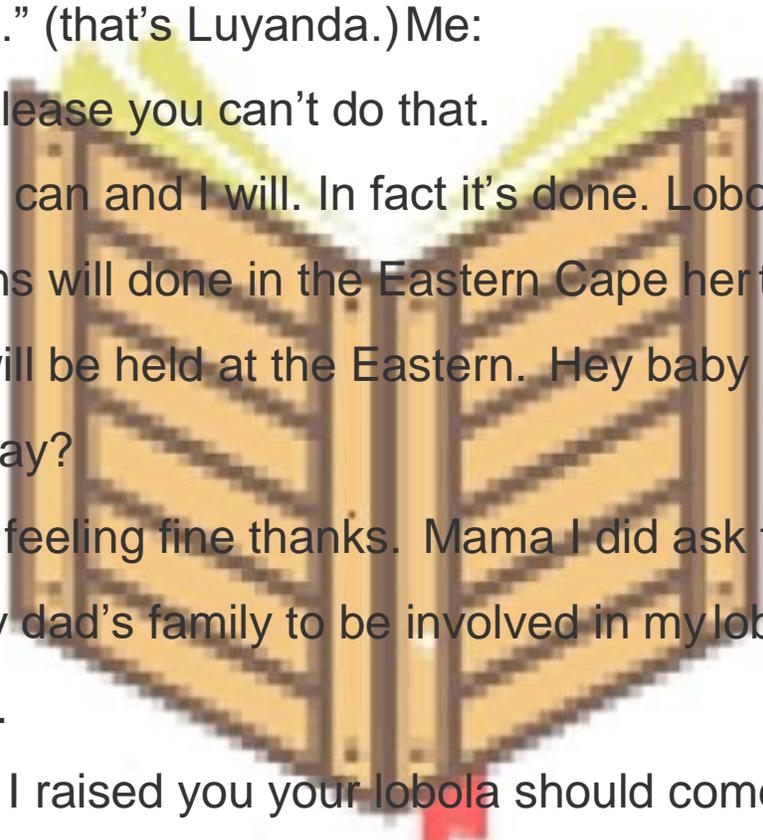
Luyanda please you can't do that.

Luyanda: I can and I will. In fact it's done. Lobola negotiations will done in the Eastern Cape her traditional wedding will be held at the Eastern. Hey baby how are you feeling today?

Lungi: I'm feeling fine thanks. Mama I did ask that I wanted my dad's family to be involved in my lobola negotiations.

Me: Lungi I raised you your lobola should come to me.

Luyanda: who's fault is that Sihle whose fault is it that you raised her alone. Let me tell you something that money is going into a trust fund for her so that she can be able to continue with her studies should she wish to do so. In fact everything that has to do with her wedding will be done in the Eastern Cape unless she chooses otherwise. Are you



ok with that Lungi? We can always discuss everything when you get out of here.

Lungi: actually that's what I've always wanted

Luyanda: let's talk outside (he says looking at me.) I'll be back just now. (he kisses Lungi on the forehead and we walk out. We go to the room next door to Lungi's it's empty)

Me: why are we here?

Luyanda: I want you to listen to me and I want you to listen very carefully. As from this moment you will have no say in Lungi's life. All decisions that need to be made by a parent

Sponsored

you will have no say in Lungi's life. All decisions that need to be made by a parent I will make them. Your family will have no say when it comes to her. for all I know your family knows that my daughter is alive or you confided in someone in your family and they watched me making a fool of myself going to them to see if you are not back and probably laughing at me. (at that moment I



NOVELSGURU.COM

looked down I couldn't look at him because he was telling the truth. I did confide in someone one of my aunts but she died and I don't know if she ever told my family.) You did tell someone didn't you?

( I couldn't say anything.) You know what it doesn't matter anymore. I do want you to know that you will suffer for what you did. You took her from me knowing very well how much I loved her how much my family loved her but you still took her from me.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

She is getting married next year and you will have no say I don't even want you to give input on what type of deco she should go for. I don't want you paying for anything. I'll take care of the wedding costs from her family side myself. As for the lobola money you won't get a cent out of awuzukuyinuka nokuyi nuka. (you won't even smell it.) you can go to JHB and tell your family and if they want to see she won't go to them they have to come to her.

Me: Kodwa Luyanda you are not being fair at least let her go to Johannesburg.

Luyanda: did you just say I am not being fair I am not being fair Sihle? Were you being fair when you disappeared off the face of the earth with my only child was it fair that I had to suffer so much pain because of your selfishness was it fair that I had to go crazy because of you. Was it fair that my parents had suffer because they couldn't see their grandchild. Balance this equation for me how is it that I am being unfair and you were being fair?

She is not going to Johannesburg not anytime soon and that is final. Yazi you are getting off easy I should kill you but that will also be too easy. Mark my words Sihle you will pay slowly and painfully you will beg me to kill you. Let's

go she is probably wondering where we are. (I keep quiet and follow him back to Lungi's room.)

Lungi: what took you so long?

Luyanda: we just had a few things to iron out.

Me: Like I said I'm leaving for Johannesburg tomorrow I'll probably stay a week. Will you be ok alone at the house.

Lungi: actually I was wondering if I could stay with father for a while that's if he is ok with that. (she turns to look at Luyanda who is all smiles.)

Luyanda: How long is a while?

Lungi: Until I get married if that's ok with you it will give us a chance to get to know each other better before I become someone's wife.

Me: That long Lungi no you can't

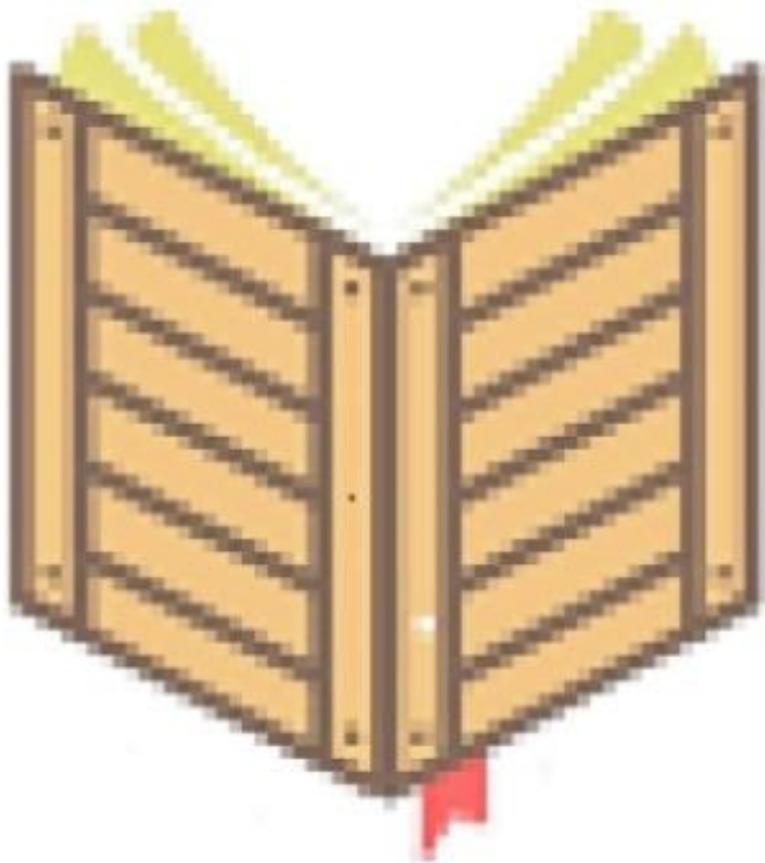
Lungi: why not. I don't see anything wrong with wanting to spend time with him. You had 22 years with me and what's a few months compared to that. I'm sorry mama I love you but this is one decision you don't get to make for me.

Luyanda: I am perfectly fine with that. The house is big enough for all of us and you'll get a chance to get to know your soon to be step mom. She likes you.

Lungi: I like her too.

Luyanda: we'll get a room ready for you. Sihle you can pack her things for her and I'll fetch them later.

Lungi: Actually I would like to do that myself. There's a few things I need to talk to mom about and my car is there so if you don't mind I'll drive myself.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Luyanda: No you won't. I'll go with Khaya he can drive your car. Lungi: Khaya hates driving my car he says it's too small.

Luyanda: it is too small I'll come with Lina she drives the same car.

Me: can't you at least sleep over tonight and leave tomorrow when I leave.

Lungi: If you don't mind mama I'd rather not. I'm still angry with you and I really don't feel like being around you.

THREE  
WEEKS  
LATER  
MONDAY

\*

\*

\*

NARA  
TED

\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

Andiswa arrived in Durban on a Saturday evening three weeks ago. She met up with Siphon on the Sunday and he gave her all the information Eddie gave to him about Ncesh and Bandile. She also went to the address that she was given which was Bandile's house but never went in. she goes there almost everyday watching how happy her sister is with the new man in her life. She has been keeping a low profile though. She is also not aware that they know she is in town and watching Bandile's house from time to time. The master mind behind her release as quiet as well and she is wondering why that is but that gives her time to focus on her plan and she wants to strike when they least expect. Little does she know that they are waiting for her to strike.

Eddie still has his feeling that he can't shake and trying his best not to focus too much on it. He is doing his best making sure that everyone is safe without being obvious that they know about Andiswa. Eddie made Siphon part of the security team since Sandiso moved to Zambia. Siphon is now the guy they are going to use for investigations.

Zack is still part of the team and doing a great job keeping track of Andiswa so that the guys don't have to follow her around. They are still unable to find out who is behind Andiswa's release whoever it is they are doing a great job staying anonymous.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi and the babies are doing great she has really been taking good care of herself and relaxing a lot. She's also been doing some exercises to help her relax with the help of Qhawe. She is still clingy as ever getting worse by the day. Even though they have all these trouble they have to deal with they are trying very hard that she stays calm all the time. Ncesh and Thando have been a great support system for her infact they are great support system for each other. Ncesh and Thando are not letting Andiswa being in Durban get them down. They are living their lives to the fullest and enjoying every minute. Khaya and Lungi are doing good. Lungi moved in with her father and so far they are doing good at least they haven't killed each other. Khaya is not allowed to go to Luyanda's house unless he is invited. Luyanda has the same rules that Qhawe has for Mcebisi. At least he allows Lungi to visit Khaya every now and again. Mcebisi and Lina are doing well although they haven't seen much of each other over the holidays since Mcebisi had to go home to his parents and Lina went to the Eastern cape. Lwazi is still Lwazi but he has become very protective of the women in this family especially Thando.

Lina managed to get a transfer from UCT to UKZN. Lonwabo and Sibahle will also be attending UKZN they opted to stay home. They said that they love Durban and they want to be close to their family and the kids postponed the baby shower. Sihle came back from Johannesburg a week later after she left. Things between her and Lungi haven't changed. Lungi is still angry at her mom and she doesn't know if she can forgive what she did. Luyanda is staying true to his word of punishing her slowly and painfully. Sihle hasn't been allowed to see or talk to Lungi since she got back from Johannesburg. She is watching her daughter building a relationship with her father and happy from a distance. She knows she has never seen Lungi that happy.

\*

\*

\*

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

SIZ

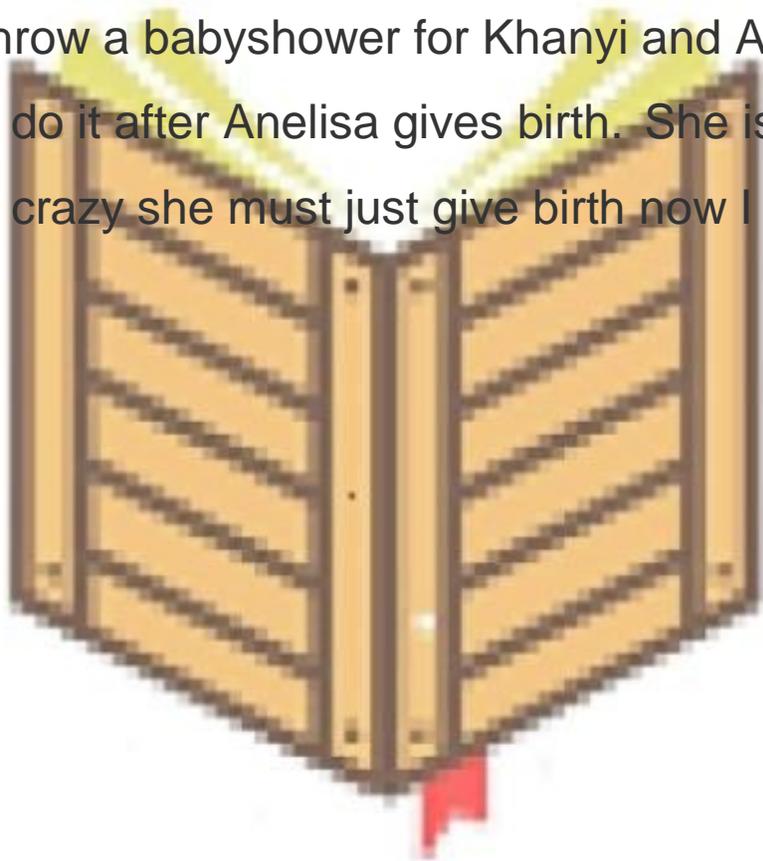
WE

\*

\*

\*

It is the second week of January and the holidays are over. We are all back at work. I am working from home since Anelisa is about to give birth. Qhawe is also working from home he says he can't be away from Khanyi for too long he worries about her a lot when he is at work. I understand but still anyway the kids have asked to use my house to throw a babyshower for Khanyi and Anelisa they decided to do it after Anelisa gives birth. She is really driving me crazy she must just give birth now!



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

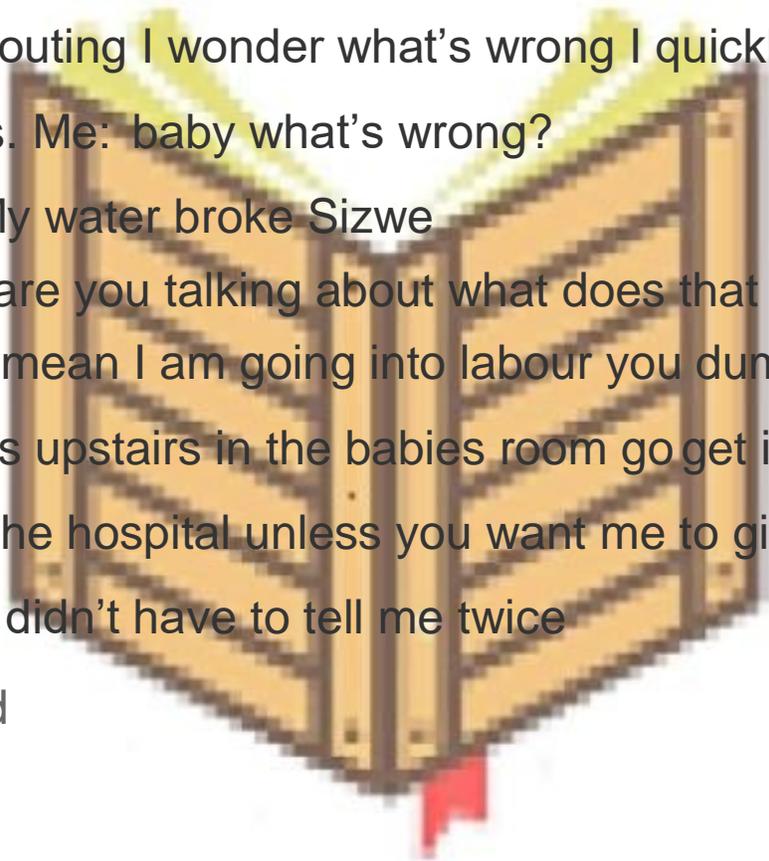
want to hold my princess. Our pregnancy is not the same as Qhawe and Khanyi where the couple is clinging on each other. We actually drive each other crazy and irritate each other. She once kicked me out and I ended up sleeping at Lwazi's house which was the biggest mistake of my life because I couldn't here the end of it. Why is Anelisa shouting I wonder what's wrong I quickly run downstairs. Me: baby what's wrong?

Anelisa: My water broke Sizwe

Me: what are you talking about what does that mean?

Anelisa: It mean I am going into labour you dummy. The baby bag is upstairs in the babies room go get it so that we can go to the hospital unless you want me to give birth here. (she didn't have to tell me twice

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I went upstairs got the bag and helped her to the car and drove off to the hospital and I must say the ride to the hospital was simply not fun. A swear word that she didn't use it's either she forgot about it or she doesn't know it

exists.)

Me: please stop swearing at and start doing your breathing exercises and we are here I'll go get some help just sit here

Anelisa: where else am I suppose to go. Aaaahhhhhhhhh Sizwe it hurts.

Me: let me go get some help baby we don't want you giving birth in the car and this is your car. (she lets go I run and come back with a nurse pushing a wheel chair and we help out of the car onto the chair and she is crying and I hate to see her cry.) it's going to be over soon baby just hang in there.

Nurse: are you going to be there for the delivery

Anelisa: of cause he is going to be there that's a stupid question to ask. Aaaaaaaahhhhhhhhh Nurse: serves

you right for being rude. Just breathe ok. Breathe in and out it will help with the pain. Anelisa: wait until I pop this baby I am killing you and this man next to me.

Me: what did I do I didn't say anything

Anelisa: you made me pregnant. You are never ever again having sex with me. I'll get a

vibrator. OH MY GOD!!!! Sizwe it hurts it hurts so much. I want to push it out. (the doctor walks in and checks her and she was right she was ready to push. She was told to

push three times and she popped a beautiful little Princess. The doctor had me cut the cord and put the baby on Anelisa's chest. Baby mama was tired she couldn't help but smile at me. )

Anelisa: I love you so much Sizwe thank you for being here.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I love you too baby mama. (funny how she hated me a few minutes ago.) I name her Oluthando

Anelisa: Sinalo

Me: Oluthando Sinalo Lwanele Qhina

Nurse: those are beautiful names. (she takes the baby from Anelisa and asks me to leave since they want to clean Anelisa up and move her to her room. When I get to the waiting room everyone was there and when I say everyone I mean everyone even the kids. I don't remember calling them maybe I did argh doesn't matter.

Lwazi: and?? We heard her screaming from here.

Me: it's a Princess. Princess Oluthando

Sinalo Lwanele Qhina. Khanyi: those are beautiful names.

Lwanele: You named her after me?

Me: Yes we did Princess (she runs to me and hugs me.) Lwanele: thank

you. I feel so honoured.

Me: You've always been my little Princess and I hope that the love you showed me you'll share it with her.

Lwanele: I definitely will uncle Sizwe.

CHAPTER 93

A WEEK

LATER

FRIDAY

\*

\*

\*

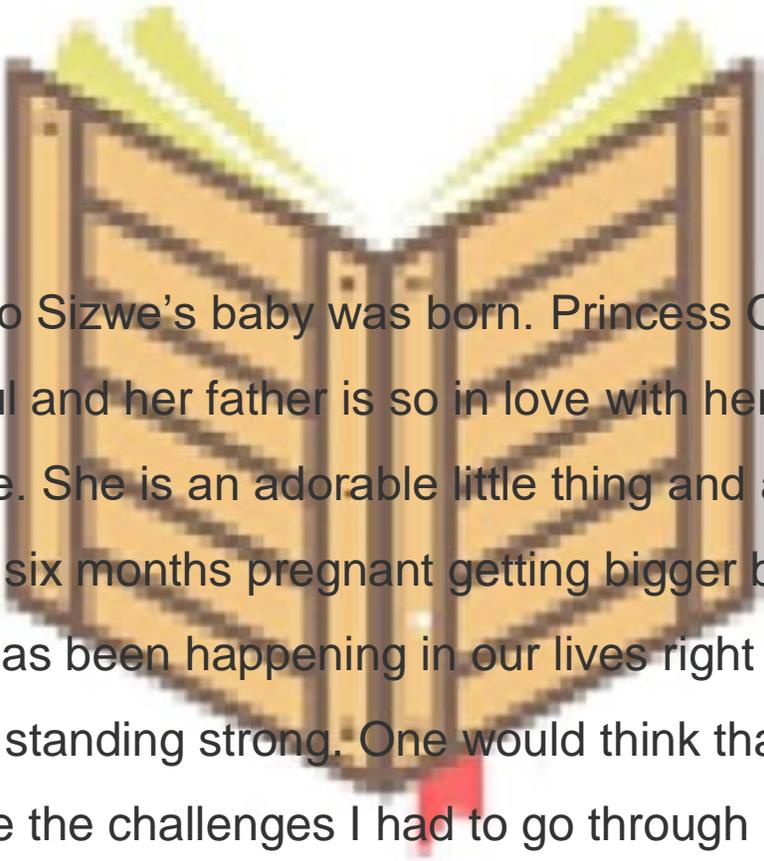
KHANY

ISILE

\*

\*

\*



A week ago Sizwe's baby was born. Princess Olu. She is so beautiful and her father is so in love with her. who wouldn't be. She is an adorable little thing and as for me I'm almost six months pregnant getting bigger by the day. So much has been happening in our lives right now but we are still standing strong. One would think that after you survive the challenges I had to go through before I came to Durban four years ago one would eventually get a break. I just want to be happy without any trouble. Just once I want to enjoy my happiness in peace. These babies have been

kicking non-stop today it's like they don't want me to work but I have to. My kids businesses are doing well that has been my focus since I have Mcebisi for my business and I must say he is doing well. Qhawe still doesn't want him to handle QM Architecture account he says I'm the best for his company. I just think he is going to miss our little meetings in his office when I hand the account to Mcebisi. Qhawe is also working from home he is only going to go back to the office when it starts getting busy. I must say I do enjoy having him around. He has been nothing but the best.

Life has thrown me so many curve balls served me so many lemons. I never thought in a million years I would be this happy and in love. Even though I never gave up on love I never really thought I would find it and be so complete. I always thought I would die an old spinster. I have the most amazing family and we all have learned that family is not just blood. Love trust and loyalty build a good family. We are who we are because of our life's experiences we stand up for what we believe in and fight for what we believe in and the ones we love. We are who

we are today because we never gave up. We didn't allow the bitterness of life to bring us down and today we are a Black Beautiful and Proud family with a whole lot to offer to the world. I just had an idea I should talk to Qhawe.

Eddie: You look far away are you ok?

Me: I'm ok. I was just thinking and these little ones were kicking. Eddie: they are kicking a lot these days they are going to be handful. Me: they will be.

Eddie: you know me and Elza we were blessed with one child and then we met you and you allowed us to make your kids our kids and we are grateful for that. we always wanted more kids but it never seemed possible. Juliet is coming back next month for a visit. I think I want her to come home permanently when she finishes with her studies overseas. We miss her so much.

ME: I can only imagine how you feel. I miss my brother I thought he was going to come home for Christmas but he couldn't he had to work and he is being offered a permanent position that side and I hoped he would work with Khaya in the new studio.

Eddie: has he decided if he is going to accept their offer?

Me: No he hasn't but I can sense that he is leaning towards accepting it.

Eddie: Let him he is gaining more experience that he will share with Khaya when he gets back. Me: I know but it's hard.

Eddie: where is Khaya I thought he would here by now?

Me: I was actually wondering the same thing I

haven't called him. Lina is also with him. Eddie: I wanted to talk to him about security at the studio and his office.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ME: have you tried calling him?

Eddie: I did but it takes me straight to voicemail.

Me: that is so unlike Khaya. Let me try his sister. (I pick up my phone and call Lina and it takes me straight to voicemail.) that's odd it takes me to voicemail. (my instincts are kicking in something is wrong.) Eddie something is wrong their phones are never off no matter what. They never switch off their phones.

Eddie: i know I told them never to switch their phones off we use the phones to track them should anything go wrong.

Me: Something is wrong.

Eddie: hey hey hey calm down (he says holding both my hands) calm down breathe Khanyi

Sponsored



breathe Khanyi breathe.

Me: you need to find my babies Eddie.

Eddie: Look at me Khanyi calm down breathe with me. In and out hey don't look down look at me breathe. Think of the babies you are carrying. Those phones being off

could be nothing let's not panic yet ok. (I just nod and we continue with breathing exercise and I feel better.)

Eddie: Are you ok now?

Me: Yes I am. Just find my babies.

Eddie: I will. Where is Qhawe I

need him to keep you calm. Me:

Upstairs in his office.

Eddie: I'll find him. You can go to the kitchen and get yourself some ice cream. ( we both walk out of my office and our separate ways.)

\*

\*

\*

ED

DIE

\*

\*

\*

Something is definitely not right those kids know their phones are not suppose to be off. what is going on? When I walk into Qhawe's office he's busy with paper work and busy on the phone. I wait for him to finish his call.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Qhawe: hey man what's up

Me: I don't know yet but I think something might be wrong with Lina and Khaya their phones are off. Qhawe: that's odd did they say they were going to have their phones off at some point today.

Me: they didn't. Look I just managed to calm Khanyi down she is in the kitchen having ice cream or something. I need her to stay calm and that is your job my friend. Don't call anyone yet. I'm going to give it an hour and see what happens. I'll have Zack track where they were last active. Go to the kitchen before that woman of yours drives herself crazy.

Qhawe: she knows how to drive herself crazy and me in the process. (he goes out to the kitchen and I stay to make a few calls.)

\*\*\*\*\*phone

converstion\*\*\*\*\*

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: zack

Zack: eddie what can I do for you?

Me: Lina and Khaya's phones are off. I need you to track them to when they were last active. I don't know how long they've off I only found out a few minutes ago I

was trying to call Khaya.

Zack: Ok give me a few minutes and I'll call you back. (he hangs up)

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

I just hopw that I ma wrong that they are ok wherever they are. I can't afford to have anything happen to them that will kill Khanyi. Zack calls back.

Zack: they were last active at the mall and that was three hours. Their cars are at the mall as well. Me: three hours ago that's long Zack. Anything could have happenened in three hours.

Zack: send guys to check out what's going on. Maybe they are still there maybe their batteries died. Me: both of them at the same time no it can't be. I smell a rat.

Zack: also speak to the security guys at the mall and see if they can't let you view their security footage if the kids are not at the mall.

ME: let's not say anything to anyone until we know we know for sure but I will have to tell Qhawe.. Zack: we'll talk later then.

\*

\*

\*

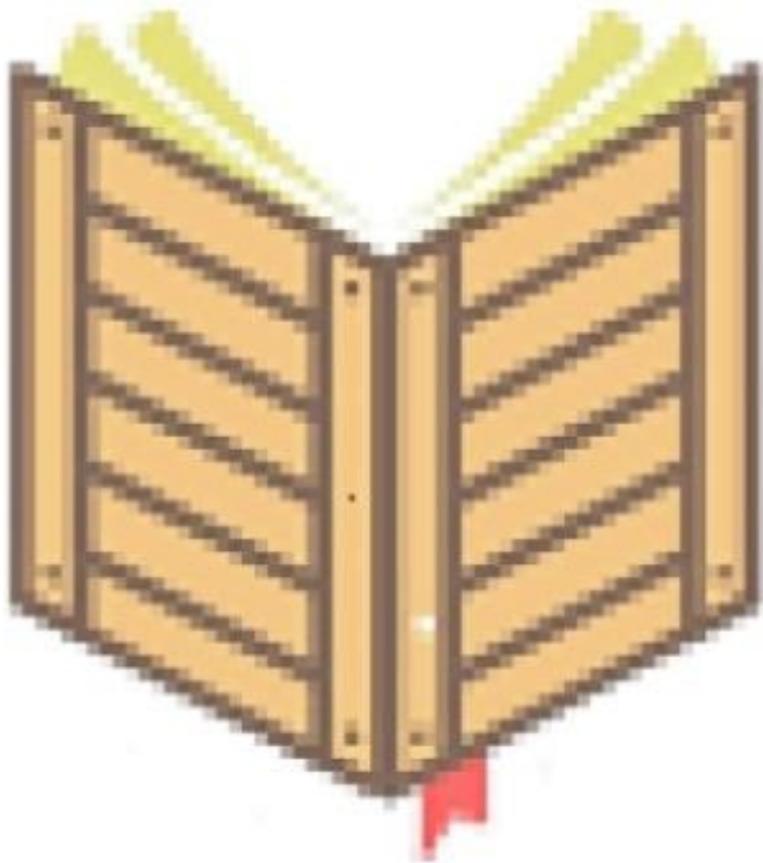
ANDI

SWA

\*

\*

\*



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I have been watching Ncesh. She has really moved on with her life she looks so in love with her new boyfriend. He looks like one of those guys who like women and easy to seduce. I should test the waters. I think I have everything I need to implement my plan but I need to find out what her plans are for Sunday. Maybe that Siphos guy can help he is good at what he does.

\*\*\*\*\*PHONE

CONVERSATION\*\*\*\*\*

Siphos: Hello

Me: I need you to find out what my sister is doing on Sunday where she is going to be and with who. Siphos: You know the drill I believe. Money first then I deliver.

ME: No problem. I'll pay the deposit now. Siphos: pleasure doing business with you.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: How come you never ask me what I am doing with the info I ask you for?

Siphos: what you do with it is really none of my business as long as it is not something illegal that will drag my name through the mud. Should I find out that you are using the

information for illegal purposes then I will be forced to call the Policce on you. So you see if you screw with me I screw with you even harder. No pun intended.

Me: I get you. I'll be waiting then. (I hang up)

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\* Let's make another call

Me: Dear sister

Ncesh: what do you want

Me: can't I just call to check on my sister and see how she is doing and plus I want to apologise. Ncesh: apologise for what?

Me: the past what I did to you and your friend.

Ncesh: do you really think I can forgive you for that if you think that then yoru are crazier than I thought.

Me: Oh Ncesh you only realise that now. I've always been crazy darling. I see you have found yourself a new man.

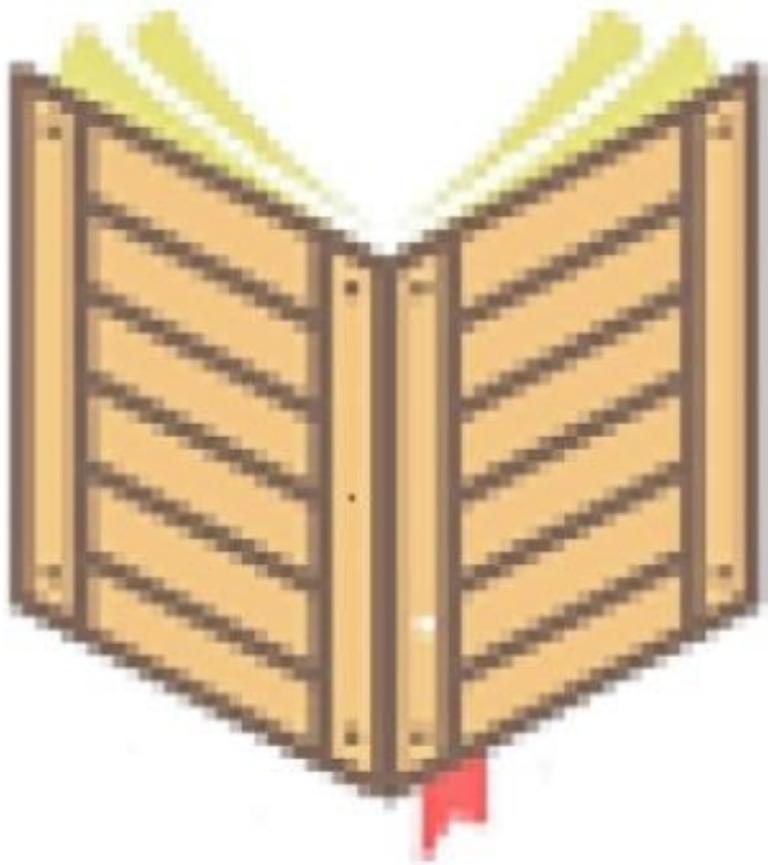
Ncesh: stay away from us. I don't even know how you know.

Me: I've always made it my life's mission to everything there is to know about you..we'll talk soon.

CHAPTER 94

FRIDAY EVENING

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

\*

QHA

WE

\*

\*

\*

Eddie: where is Khanyi

ME: in the game room with the kids.

Eddie: I need you to call her doctor

he needs to get here now. Me: why?

Eddie: this is not the time for you to be slow Qhawe. We haven't found the kids and we need to tell her and we need to have the doctor here.

Me: I'll call him (just then Eddie gets a call on his phone and that gives me the opportunity to call the doctor and he agrees to come. I guess they really want these babies to stay alive just as much as we do.)

Eddie: and?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: He is on his way.

Eddie: let's go to the kitchen I feel hungry. I haven't eaten all day. Qhawe as you can see this is not good and we have to tell her and you know she is not going to take it

well.

Me: it will kill her Eddie who could have done this. It looks like the guys that did it are professionals. Eddie: that's why I need the doctor here for when we tell her. I need him to sedate her afterwards. Me: I don't think that will be safe for the babies.

Eddie: it will be don't worry. (Khanyi walks in)

Khanyi: I'm hungry what are you guys eating? (I can she is stressed and she doesn't want to ask what's going on. I don't like this I don't like this at all.)

Eddie: I'm having a cheese and tomato sandwich would you like one?

Khanyi: yes please. (the door bell rings and I am sure that's the doctor. I let him in and offer him a sit in the lounge while I go get Eddie and Khanyi.)

Me: he is here let's go to the lounge. Khanyi:

Dr Nkosi how are you?

Dr Nkosi: I'm fine and how are you?

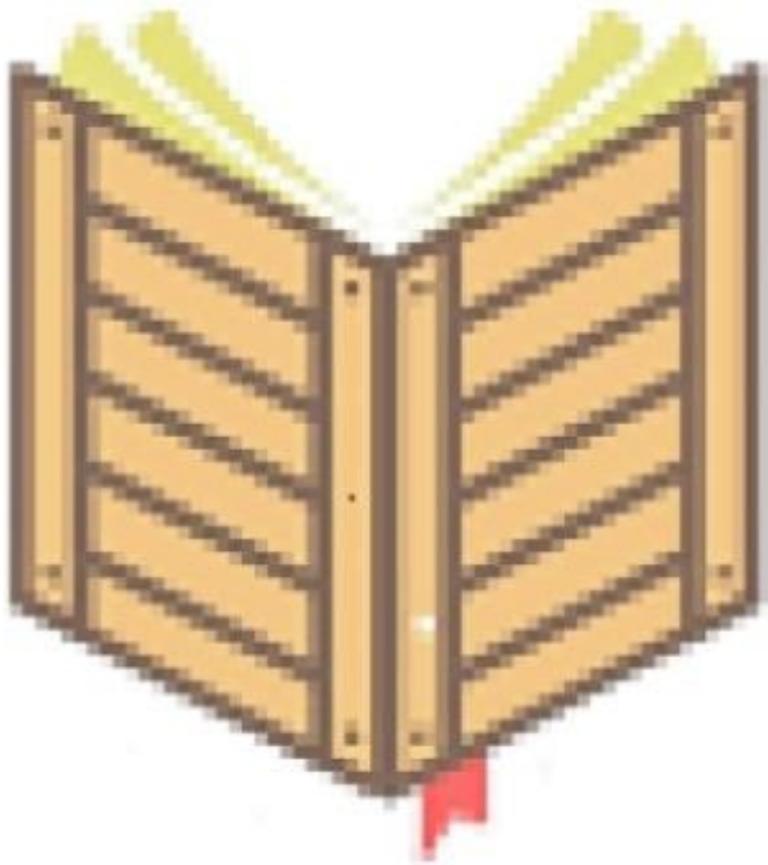
Khanyi: I'm fine and I'm sure Qhawe called you here. He worries too much.

Eddie: Doc we called you here because we need to tell her something and we are going to need you. Khanyi is



NOVELSGURU.COM

not someone who suffers from panic attacks but ever since the pregnancy they're



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

slowly becoming a constant thing and right now she is about to have one. Qhawe do you want to do it? (I move to the couch she is sitting sit next to her with one leg folded on the couch and I make her face me holding her hands.)

Me: Khanyi look at me (she does as told) we haven't found Lina and Khaya. Eddie found their cars parked at the mall their phones were last active when they were at his apartment earlier this afternoon. The security footage at the mall shows them getting out of their cars being forced into another car. We can't track the car they left in because it had no number plates. (she is silently crying while listening to every word I am saying to her. she is also starting to have difficulty breathing) Baby I need you to breathe look at me Khanyi breathe with me in and out baby

slowly (she does as told we do the breathing exercise for a few minutes but it doesn't seem to help. The doctor gets up and kneels in front of her)

Khanyi: Who took my kids Qhawe who took them?

(she talking like she's trying to catch her breath.)

Doctor: Khanyi look at me I am going to give you something that's going to help with the

breathing. (she nods really fast then gives her an injection and she slowly passes out.) she is going to be out for hours and don't worry the injection is safe for the babies and I am going to have to prescribe her anxiety tablets that will also be safe for her. I suggest you carry her upstairs she won't be completely comfortable on this couch. Another option that I can give you is having her admitted at the hospital so that we can monitor her closely. This is going to be too much for her to handle.

Me: it's fine doc we'll keep her here we'll bring her in should the need arise for that.

Doctor: Ok then. You have my number just call me if you need me and maybe you should ask Lungi to come stay with you guys since she is a nurse.

Eddie: she is already on her way.

Doctor: that's good. Let me leave you and please take her to bed. (he didn't need to tell me twice. I carried her upstairs and covered her with her favourite fleece blanket and quickly went back downstairs)

Eddie: don't worry man she is going to be fine and those babies will be fine. We are all going to pull through this and we are definitely going to find those kids.

Lwazi: What's with the emergency call guys you interrupted my quality time with my Queen here. (he says followed by everyone else.)

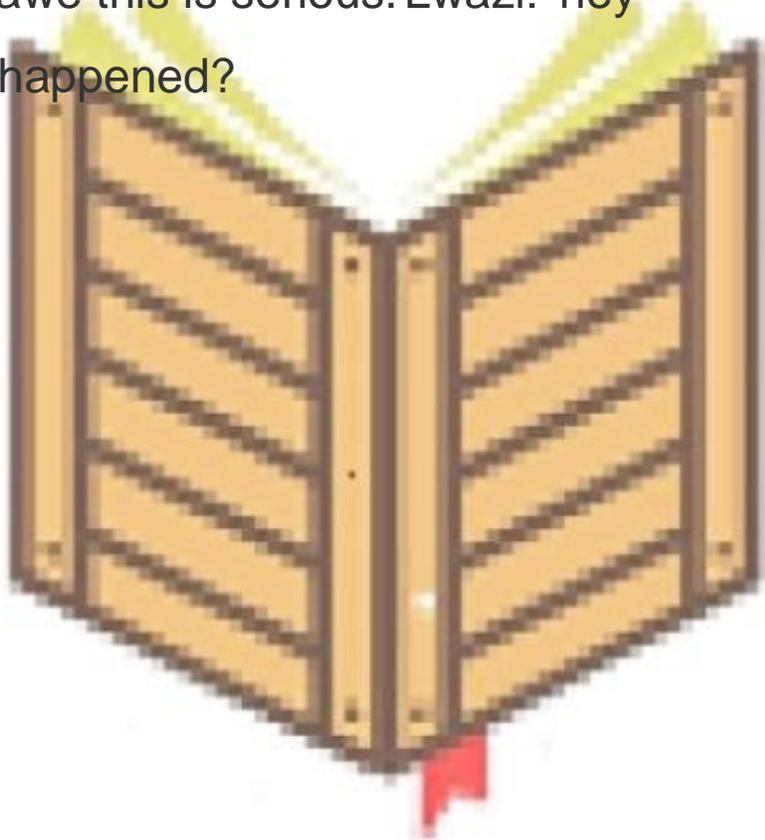
Thando: Lwazi stop it.

Lwazi: but baby it's true. We never interrupt them.

Bandile: Lwazi stop talking for a minute and

look at Qhawe this is serious. Lwazi: hey

man what happened?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sizwe: where's Khanyi is she ok? (I looked them and I just could say anything to them I had no words for them I felt my tears falling and I felt Sizwe's arms around me and I just couldn't stop the tears from falling. Who could have done this? That's only question going through my mind. Who is trying to destroy my family.)

Ncesh: hey Qhawe what happened. (I froze I couldn't say anything)

Eddie: Khaya and LIna have been kidnapped. They were taken earlier this afternoon at the mall. In fact it was made to look like they were taken at the mall.

Mcebisi: what do you mean they have been kidnapped?  
(he asks as he walks in with Luyanda and Lungi)

Eddie: I mean exactly that and who ever did it they were professional.

Lungi: You have to find them please find them (she breakdown in her father's arms)

Me: Lungi come here. (she walks over to me) I need you to be strong because I am going to need your help with Khanyi. She is upstairs right now sleeping

Sponsored

she has been sedated so she will be out for a while. Lungi:

who sedated her?

Me: Dr Nkosi was here we called to be here when we told her what happened. (she looks at with tears in her eyes)

Lungi: I can't lose him I really can't lose him both of them. She is the little sister I never had.

Me: You won't lose them. We won't lose them. We will find them. (I let her cry in my arms before she gets up and goes upstairs to check on Khanyi.)

"Why are you all looking gloomy who died? And who made Lungi cry"( that was Ntando walking in to the kitchen)

Ncesh: they have to be told we can't hide it from them not this Me: I know.

Ntando: what do we need to know? (Mcebisi has been very quiet looking down) Me: Go upstairs I'll be there in a minute. (he walks out)

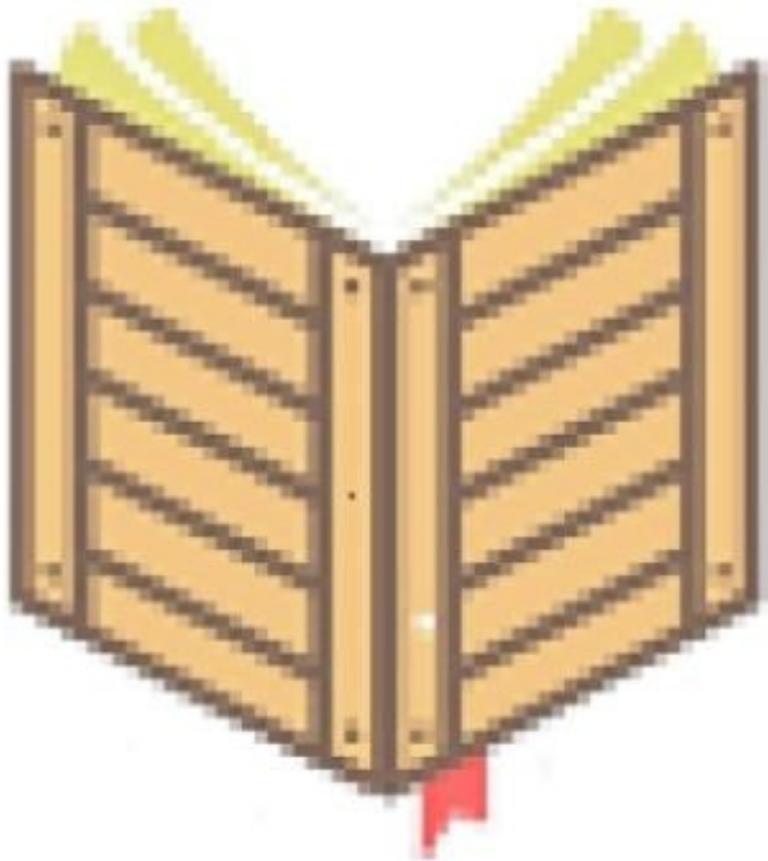
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sizwe: who ever did this really has a death wish. Mcebisi: they will wish they were never born.

\*

\*

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

ANDISWA

\*

\*

\*

I get an sms from my mystery person.

“IT’S TIME FOR YOU TO MEET YOUR FATHER. GO TO WIMPY AT THE MALL NOW BE THERE BEFORE THEY CLOSE”

I don’t waste anytime. I grab my keys and drive off. I get to wimpy an hour before they close. I find myself a private booth order coffee and I sit and wait. I didn’t have to wait long until someone walked over to my table.

Him: Good evening. (he looks good he looks like he is in fifties but he still looks good could this be him?)

Me: Good evening

Him: May I sit (I just nod. If it’s him then I know why my hair is like this. This guy is coloured. So my dad is coloured)

Me: are you the man I am suppose to meet here.

Him: I am. My name is Micheal Micheal

Arendse most people call me Mike. Me: I’m

Andiswa Ndzolo

Him: Nice to finally meet you. Your mother never wanted me to be a part of your life I guess she was

protecting you but she didn't know she was creating an animal at the same time. I must say your record is impressive for a woman.

Me: what do you mean she was protecting me

Him: She didn't want you to end up living the life I live.

Only if she knew now where you ended up with her trying to protect you.

Me: What kind of life is that?

Him: the life of crime. I have 3 daughters and you are the youngest. Your sisters were not all about this life but at some point they were hungry for revenge and they ended up here but they are smart about it. they do more legit work than they do criminal activities.

Me: what made them change?

Him: the same thing that made you you; REVENGE.

They were both married one is still married and the other is divorced but she can't get over her ex husband. The other one her husband is in jail. She wants revenge on the person that got her husband arrested. You see Andiswa when we found out about you we had to get you out of there. A lot was involved in getting you here and I

must say you are doing well so far you fitting into the plan so well as if you were there when we planned this.

Me: You are the mastermind behind all this. What is this master plan? Him: at the right time you will know. Just keep doing what you do.

Me: fine. So you and my mother?

Him: Your mother got herself in trouble with some people and she needed help. I was there to help and in return she was to be mine I tried to help her out but the people she messed with wanted her dead it was just unfortunate that her husband died in the same accident.

ME: I don't understand

Him: You won't. Your mom was an accountant for a certain company. She stumbled across something by accident she discovered that the company that she was working for was a front for something illegal and that it was used to clean the dirty money. She reported it to the police but that didn't work out well for her hence she is dead. Had she not gone to the police my plan to help her would have worked they would both be still alive but your mother was a very stubborn woman very feisty.

Me: I have two other sisters who are they?

Him: don't worry darling everything will be revealed.

By the way don't trust the PI you are using. Something doesn't add up with him.

Me: I don't need him anymore anyway.

Him: I see. (his phone rings he answers and talks for a few minutes and hangs up) I have to go darling. I'll keep in touch. Take this (he hands a card) you can contact me anytime. You look beautiful just like your mom. (and he walks out. What just happened I don't think that's the reunion I expected. )

## CHAPTER 95

TWO DAYS

LATER

MONDAY

\*

\*

\*

NKOSIK

HONA

\*

\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nokhaya: you've been acting strange the past two days what's going on? Me: I'm just frustrated with things not going right that's all.

Nokhaya: Nkosikhona why are you so stubborn. Your aunt told you exactly what you need to do why not do what you are told.

Me: it's going to take too long I'll find another way.

Nokhaya: I hope it's not something stupid otherwise you will lose everything. (we are interrupted by a knock on the door and it's my uncles.)

Uncle Mxolisi:

Molweni Nokhaya:

hello tata how are you?

Uncle Mxolisi: we are fine sisi. Nkosikhona why did you ask us to come.

Me: Nokhaya can you please go make us coffee. (she gets up and goes to the kitchen) I am ready to do the ceremony

Uncle Nceba: how are you ready with the kids not being here and most of all how are you ready when we haven't been to her home.

You do not that you have to pay damages first.

Me: Uncle Nceba with everything that is going on right now I want to do the ceremony first and pay damages later I can only do one at a time.

Uncle Mxolisi: then start with damages.

Me: but isn't the ceremony more important

than paying damages Uncle Mxolisi: they both are important.

Me: the kids will be here Wednesday can't we do the ceremony Uncle Mxolisi: and their mother?

Me: she won't be here

Uncle Nceba: Nkosikhona what did you do because I know that woman didn't agree to have those kids here. What would have made her change her mind between now and the last time we spoke to her? I hope you haven't done anything stupid otherwise you will be digging your own grave.

Me: I haven't done anything stupid. I just did what I had to do and that was talk to their mother. Nokhaya: I hope you are not lying Nkosikhona you have been acting strange. I am your wife and I know you. Here's the coffee. I'll go prepare the outside rooms for your uncles.

Me: NO! (I say it louder than necessary)

Uncle Mxolisi: Hayibo Nkosikhona we normally sleep in the outside rooms when we are here what's changed.

Uncle Nceba: Go Makoti and get the rooms ready. If this one thinks we are sleeping here with you and your kids he is crazy. I don't want to be hearing your sex sounds besides I'm single I might want to have someone to keep me company.

Nokhaya: Yhooo Uncle Nceba. (and she walks out. Shit this is not good at all. I didn't even think they would be sleeping over since they got here early.)

\*

\*

\*

NOKH

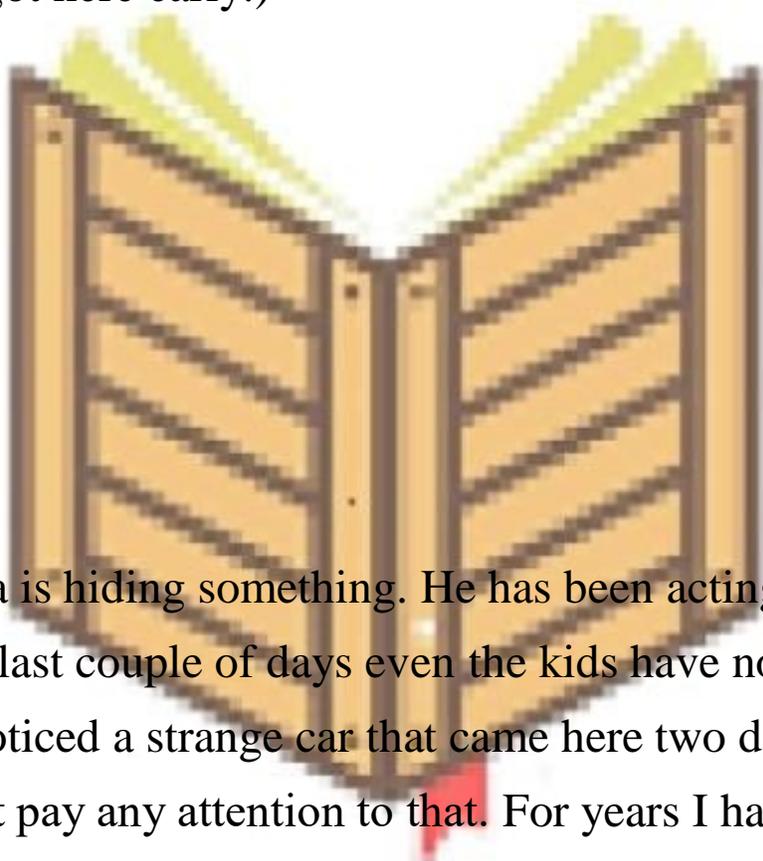
AYA

\*

\*

\*

Nkosikhona is hiding something. He has been acting very strange the last couple of days even the kids have noticed and they also noticed a strange car that came here two days ago but I really didn't pay any attention to that. For years I have been married to this man. I loved Nkosikhona vey much but the way he treated his kids has never set well with me. He always promised to make amends everytime I spoke to him about Lina and Khaya. Nkosikhona has amazing kids and he doesn't realise that he is missing out on a lot with them. They are probably dating now and Khaya will probably take a wife soon and Nkosikhona will never get to meet her or his grandchildren



NOVELSGURU.COM

because of his stubbornness and wanting to do things his way.

The love I have for him is slowly dying. He is killing it he is also becoming distant with the kids it's good they are not hear right now. I don't know what to do anymore. I have tried talking to him countless times to show him the way but he doesn't listen. Some people say that I am the reason why he doesn't have a relationship with his kids. Only if they knew the Nkosikhona I know. I don't know what happened to him he is changing for the worst and I don't think I can take it anymore. As person you can only help someone if they want to be helped and it is obvious that my husband doesn't need help.

Me: OH MY GOD! I can't believe what I am seeing. Oh Lord have mercy on

him. Nkosikhona what have you done. (as I open the door to one of the outside rooms and this one we hardly ever use it. I use the closets in this room to keep all the extra towels and bed linen.) How long have you been here?

Them: two days

we think. Khaya:

who are you?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm your  
dad's wife  
Line:  
did you know?

Me: No I didn't I promise you I didn't.

Khaya: funny that we have to meet for the first time like  
this. (I take out my phone) Me: give your mom's number.  
(I dial the number and it's answered on the second ring)

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\* Him:

Khanyi's phone hello

Me: May I speak to Khanyi my  
name is Nokhaya. Him: Hold on a  
sec

Khanyi: Khanyi hello (she sounds down tired even she  
must be really out of it.) Me: It's Nokhaya

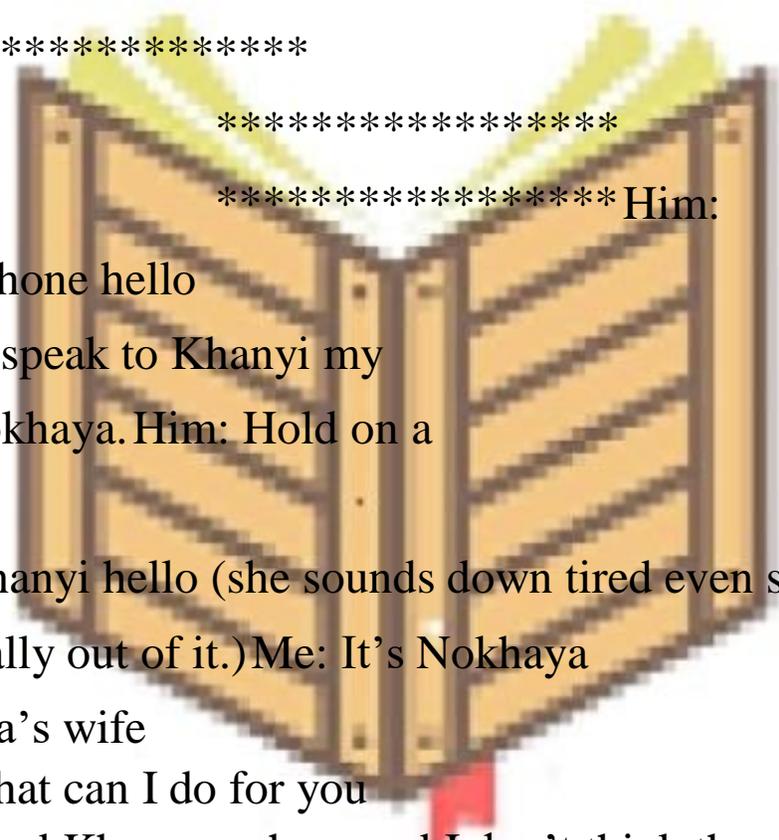
Nkosikhona's wife

Khanyi: what can I do for you

Me: Lina and Khaya are here and I don't think they were  
brought here wil..... (she doesn't let me finish)

Khanyi: what do you mean my kids are there

Sponsored



NOVELSGURU.COM

what are they doing there.

Me: I don't think they came willingly. I think their father kidnapped them. You have to come get them be quick. (I cut the call because I can here someone coming)

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*Me: Listen

don't tell him you saw me. I am going to lock the door and I'll hide in the closet. Don't worry everything is going to fine. (I kiss their cheeks and walk to the closet. The door to the room opens as soon as I close the the closet. That was close)

Lina: you know Nkosikhona you will not get away with this. They will find us. Nkosikhona: I don't plan on keeping you here long. I just want to do the ceremony and after that you are free to go.

Khaya: You do know that I will never forgive you for this. Even when you come crawling and begging for forgiveness I will never forgive you.

Nkosikhona: I hope one day you will understand why I had to this.

Lina: I don't care what you are dealing with this is not how you treat your kids. Argh what am I saying we are not your kids never were and never will. ( that statement really cut deep in me. Nkosikhona has lost these kids forever.)

Khaya: How could you how come that we were never important to you why didn't you want us because it is obvious you didn't want us. I doubt very much that mom kept us away from you otherwise she wouldn't have gone through all the trouble of making sure that we know our roots where we come from teach us your family tree. She never asked for anything. All she wanted was for you to have a relationship with your kids but then again your other kids are more important because you have a relationship with them. You never even bothered to introduce us to our siblings don't you think we deserve to know them don't you think we want them to be a part of our lives? You know what don't answer that. Just get out of this room. Do what you want to do and let us go.

Nkosikhona: I'm sorry that it had to be like this

Lina: not as sorry as you going to be when dad finds us.

Nkosikhona: it won't come to that. (with that said he walks out and lock s the door.)

Me: I hope they get here soon. I'll bring you something to eat later on. Just hang in there. Khaya: thank you. Can I ask you to do one thing for us send mom our location with our names on it.

Me: but she knows you are here.

Lina: it's just to let her know that we are ok.

Me: I'll do that. I have to go before he gets suspicious. (I walk out and lock. I really hope they get here tonight. Nkosikhona has gone and done the worst and he just sealed the fate of our relationship.

\*

\*

\*

KHANY

ISLE

\*

\*

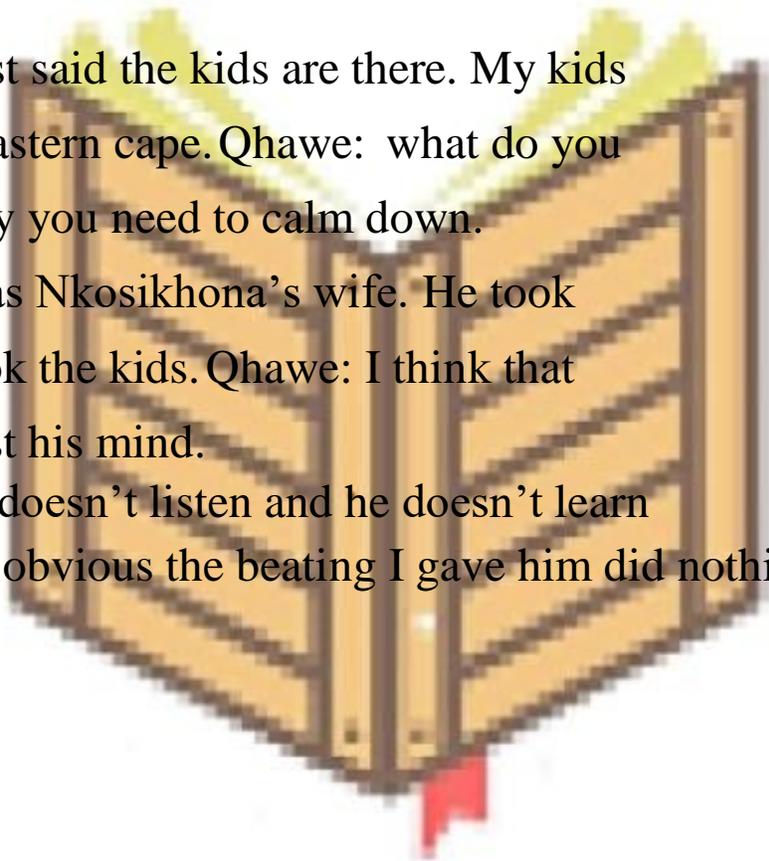
\*

Me: she just said the kids are there. My kids are in the eastern cape. Qhawe: what do you mean? Baby you need to calm down.

Me: that was Nkosikhona's wife. He took them he took the kids. Qhawe: I think that man has lost his mind.

Andile: he doesn't listen and he doesn't learn

Lwazi: it's obvious the beating I gave him did nothing.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mcebisi: this time he's getting more than a beating and he better make sure that Lina doesn't have a single scratch on her. even he didn't cause it he'll pay for it. nxaaa (it's my first time seeing him so angry and phone beeps and it's a location with their location.)

Me: my babies are ok. We need to go now and don't even think about telling me that I must stay here and wait for you to bring the kids back. Eddie call detective Nxele ask him for a contact that he trusts in King Williams Town police station.

Eddie: why?

Me: if Nkosikhona happens to survive after I shoot him then he is going to jail for kidnapping and attempted murder.

Qhawe: attempted murder??? I'm confused.

Me: what do you think would have happened to the Quintuplets if it wasn't for Lungi and Dr Nkosi. Baby I would have miscarried and it would have been his fault hence **ATTEMPTED MURDER.**

Lwazi: why don't we just kill him? Me: we are not killers

Mcebisi: there's a first time for everything. (he says that with a straight face and moves on like he just didn't say that) there's a flight available in an hour we should get going.

Eddie: don't worry about the flight we are going to use the same jet we used last year. Mcebisi: this client of yours

must really owe you big time to keep borrowing you his jet. Eddie: he would tell you that he owes me his life and I was just doing my job then.

Me: how about we continue with the conversation on our way to the airport. Sizwe: I'm not going with you I can't leave Anelisa and Olu.

Thando: Go We'll stay with her

Ncesh: Go we know how much you love those kids and I'm sure Anelisa will understand. (with that said we leave. When we get to the airport the jet was ready for us. The flight to East London seemed very short and now we are on my to King Williams town. Did he really think he was going to get away with it. I really don't understand his thinking. Why would he do this to himself. )

Me: Let's go to his house tomorrow morning. Let's find ourselves a BnB and book ourselves in for the night.

Qhawe: hayibo babe we can't let the kids spend another night there.

Me: trust me Qhawe. Why did he take them. He wants to do IMBELEKO for them remember when he kept nagging me to let him take them. He is probably going to do it tomorrow or Wednesday. He was never planning on keeping them here he wants to do the ceremony then let

them go. He has probably called his family especially the uncles but they are not aware that he kidnapped the kids and plus we still don't have the details of our police contact. I am going to shoot him in self defence for everyone to see. He is going to want to kill me tomorrow when we interrupt his little show. Qhawe: it's risky but I know you you are going to be stubborn about it so I'll let you be. Me: I promise nothing will happen to me and these babies.

## CHAPTER 96

TUESDAY MORNIG

\*

\*

\*

ED

DIE

\*

\*

\*

We are all awake and ready to go to Nkosikhona's house. At least Khanyi is a bit relaxed now although she is still angry what this guy did was just the last straw for her. she has put up with his bullshit for far too long and nothing will save him from him this. First I need to check



NOVELSGURU.COM

on Luyanda and Siphos since they didn't come with us. I wonder if they are surviving the ladies and the kids. Luyanda answers immediately I can hear the girls talking in the background

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

Lwanele: Uncle Lu please help me with this before Aunt Anelisa gets here it's for Oluthando Luyanda: Let me take this call first

Me: Looks like you have your hands full

Luyanda: How do Qhawe and Khanyi do it how do they survive this everyday? Me: you should ask them that. how are you guys doing?

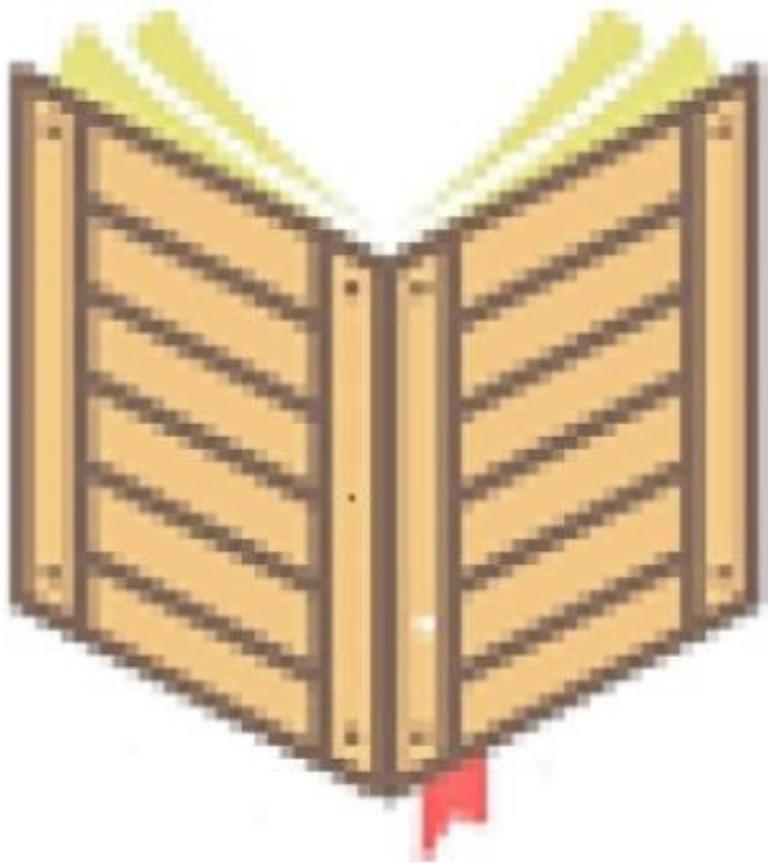
Luyanda: We are doing ok. Lungi is not ok though she can't stop worrying.

Me: we are going to fetch them now and we should be home tonight we don't plan on sleeping here. Luyanda: good hurry back we have new info you won't believe the shit Siphos found out.

Me: what are you talking about?

Luyanda: This goes deeper than we thought. Nkosikhona taking the kids is part of something bigger. You need to make him tell you who helped him.

Me: I'll do that. I have to go. We might see you this afternoon.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Luyanda: cool man. Hurry back otherwise these kids will kill me. ME: Get the twins to help you. They can manage them.

Luyanda: bandile and Banele are no different. I have to go before Lwanele kills me. She's been staring at me for the duration of this call. Talk later. (he hangs up. I wonder why they are giving him a hard time.)

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\* Me: guys

let's go

Khanyi: I heard you talking to Luyanda how are my kids

Me: You should be asking how Luyanda is doing? (Khanyi laughs a little) Khanyi: why what happened?

Me: I don't know but they seem to be giving him a hard time. Khanyi: He'll survive.

Me: he wants to know how you guys do it.

Khanyi: Honestly I don't know. As long as they are alive by the end of the day we know we did good we did



something right.

Me: that's a funny a way of putting it. let's get going. (it's a good thing we hired a mini bus. Lwazi is driving since he is very familiar with this town.)

Lwazi: Khanyi show me the location that the kids sent you. (she takes out her phone and gives it to him.) we are almost there.

Bandile: What's the plan?

Qhawe: we walk in there take my kids and walk out. Mcebisi: I think your plan is missing a little action.

Qhawe: Why is my daughter dating you and why haven't I killed yet?

Mcebisi: well she is dating me because she loves me I'm good looking and I'm good to her as for you not killing me that's because I'm the best son in law and you like me and you know I'll do anything for your daughter. Am I right or am I right. (Khanyi couldn't help herself she just broke into laughter.)

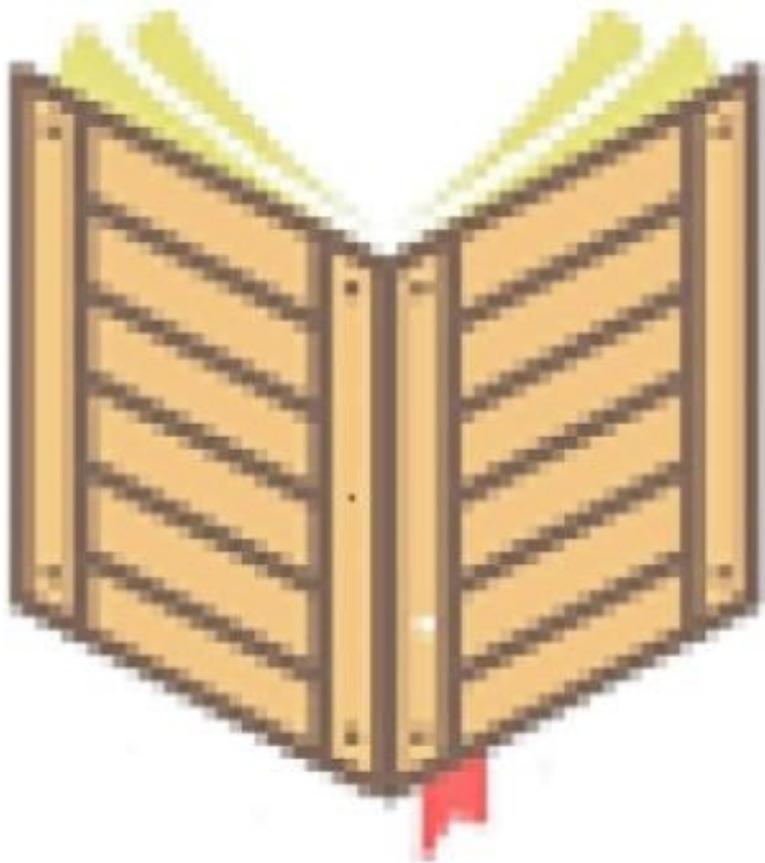
Khanyi: Waze wasenza Lina.

Bandile: Lwazi are you sure you guys are not related maybe he is a long lost brother or something. Lwazi

&Mcebisi: Not by a long shot.

Sizwe: Yhooo hayi I give up. Lina has done the worst in this family.

Qhawe: She absolutely has. I don't know how we are going to survive these two.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwazi: we are here and stop acting like you don't enjoy having us around. (he parks in front of the yard. It looks like Khanyi was right. There's lots of people here this is a big house too and a few outside rooms. An old man walks up to us

Old man: gentlemen how can we help you (Khanyi was following behind us)

Qhawe: I'm here for my kids. Linamandla and Khaya if you can just point us to the right direction we would appreciate it.

Old man: wait here (he walks away and comes back with another man and at this point Khanyi is standing next to Qhawe)

Khanyi: Uncle Mxolisi

Uncle Mxolisi: Khanyi I thought you were not coming and you are pregnant. Khanyi: Where are my kids tata

Uncle Mxolisi: Honestly I don't know

Sponsored

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I haven't seen them. Nkosikhona said the kids would be here anytime and you are not coming. Khanyi: My kids

have been here for almost 3 days and they were kidnapped. Your son kidnapped my kids and right now he doesn't know that I am here. I need to sit.

Uncle Mxolisi: Come with me. (we follow behind him and he leads us to this big tree where there were a few man and some old ladies sitting there and he gives Khanyi a chair to sit. He asks one one of the kids that were around to bring chairs for Me Qhawe and Sizwe. The rest of the guys are just wondering around the yard.)

Qhawe: with all due respect tata but unyana wenu uyandidelela udelela ne nkosikazi yam ngaphezulu. (your son is disrespecting me on top of it all he is disrespecting my wife)

Uncle Mxolisi: We apologize as the elders in this family we didn't know he kidnapped the kids. He told us he spoke to Khanyi and they came to an understanding.

Khanyi: I have put up with Nkosikhona's nonsense and I won't put with it anymore. I am going to have him arrested for kidnapping. The police are on their way.

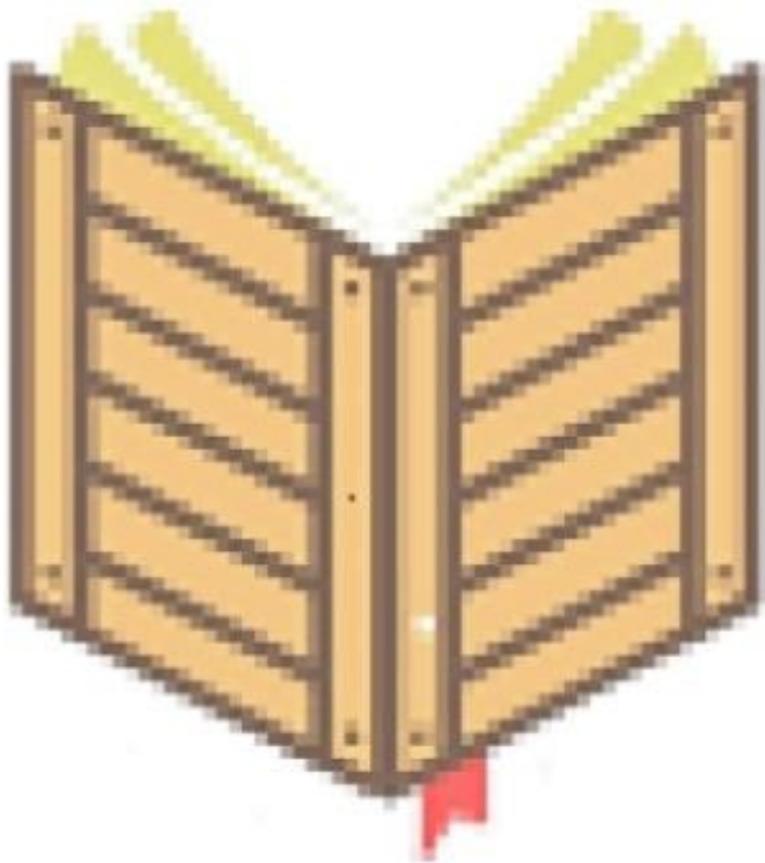
Nkosikhona: you couldn't stay away could you  
(I didn't even see him coming) Unlce Mxolisi:

is it true did you kidnap those kids Nkosikhona

Nkosikhona: yes I did only because she wouldn't let them

come here she wouldn't bring them here Uncle mxolisi: with  
good reason you idiot.

Khanyi: how many times did I tell you to stay away from my  
kids Nkosikhona



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Nkosikhona: I couldn't I had to get them here  
some how I did what I had to do. Qhawe: where  
are my kids Nkosikhona

Nkosikhona: they are not yours they are mine and I can do  
as I wish with them (I don't know when Qhawe got off his  
chair and started punching Nkosikhona like he was nothing.  
I pulled him off Lwazi and Bandile just got here and they  
take him away.)

Khanyi: what he just did is nothing compared to what I am  
going to do to you. (she says pulling out her gun from my  
waist.)

Uncle Nceba: Hayi Khanyi that's the way to handle this.

Khanyi: Your son doesn't listen and it looks like this is the  
way he is going to listen.

"Mama" (that was Lina's voice. Khanyi quickly hands the  
gun to me as the kids run to her. they hug her so tight Lina  
is all tears and her mom too. Andile was right behind  
them with some woman and Qhawe and Bandile.)

Khaya: we are ok mama. Sis' Nokhaya took care of us.

Khanyi: Khaya you are too tall mani. (he kneels in front her  
and she kisses him all over his face and does the same with  
Lina.) Are you sure you are ok.

Lina: we are fine mama. We are fine.

Mcebisi: Princess!!! (where did he come from we left him in the car)

Lina: Pebbles!!! (she goes to him and he hugs her tight spinning her around. With tears falling from his eyes.)

Mcebisi: baby are you ok

did he hurt you? Lina: I'm

fine. I promise I'm fine.

Khanyi: Mcebisi take

them to the car. Mcebisi:

but.... (I don't let him

finish)

Me: Do as she says no matter what you hear stay in the car)

Sizwe: I'll take them to the BnB so that they can freshen up. If I stay here someone is going to die. (Just then the

police showed up. Sizwe just walked to them with the

kids.) Mcebisi come on what are you waiting for?

(mcebisi tries to say something but decides to keep

quiet and follows Sizwe.)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Officers I would like to press charges of kidnapping. Let's

talk in the car (well played Sizwe. Khanyi needs to make

this quick before those rookies come back. Where is

Nxele's contact?

Khanyi: Eddie my gun please (I take it out and hand it to her. She pulls a chair sits and looks at Nkosikhona) here's a chair sit let's talk.

## CHAPTER 97



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

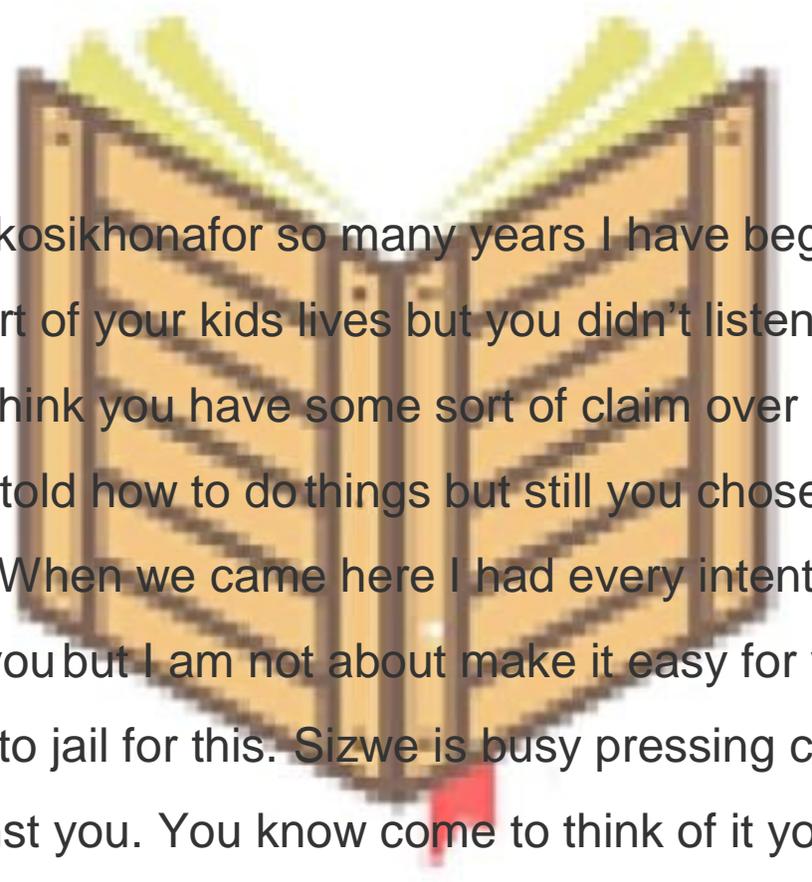
STILL TUESDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

KHANY

ISILE

\*  
\*  
\*



Khanyi: Nkosikhona for so many years I have begged you to be a part of your kids lives but you didn't listen to me. Now you think you have some sort of claim over them. You were told how to do things but still you chose to be stubborn. When we came here I had every intention of shooting you but I am not about make it easy for you. You are going to jail for this. Sizwe is busy pressing charges now against you. You know come to think of it you and Zwelibanzi are the same you always start something you can't finish with me and I end up having to finish it for you.

Nkosikhona: they are my kids too you had no right to refuse for them to come here.

Me: now that you need them you recognise them as your kids. Come to think of it again Zwelibanzi said the same

thing at some point in his life I also had a gun in my hand when he said it. Do you want to guess what happened to him wait I'll tell you I shot him. Nkosikhona for a man who is an accountant you can be very stupid at times. Do the math right now if you continue giving me the attitude that you are giving me now what do you think is going to happen? Let me put it in a way that you will understand. YOUR ATTITUDE + MY GUN = ???? think before you speak.

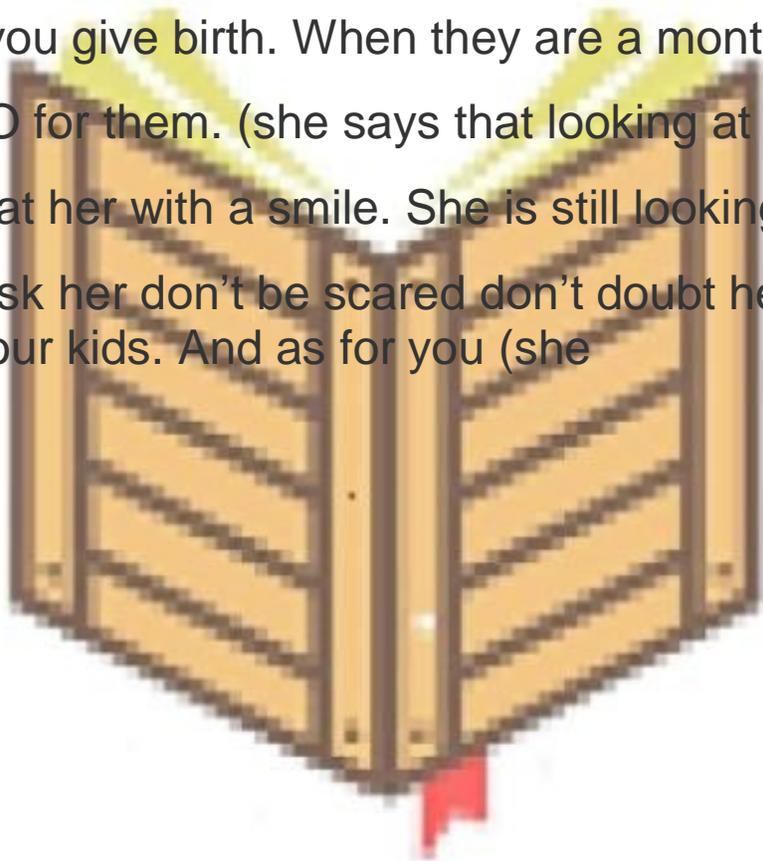
Eddie: I am more interested in knowing who helped you kidnap them (his aunt walk up to us and I recognise her she is the Sangoma yes Aunt Nomzamo)

Aunt Nomzamo: Khanyi (I quickly give the gun to Qhawe who was standing next me.) You look beautiful my child. (she walks up to me and kisses my cheek. She touches my stomach and closes her eyes.) You are truly blessed.

They are truly a miracle for you and they are all going to be

fine. You are all going to be fine because the one standing next to you still needs you and you need him more. He is your healing. All of you are each other's healing. Stand together as you always have don't let anything come

between your family and you will survive the storm that has begun. you are strong and you will survive. Take this Khanyi (I'm not really big in these kind of things but for some reason I have always trusted her. She gives a beautiful beaded bracelet. Wear it all the time. Never take it off until you give birth. When they are a month old do IMBELEKO for them. (she says that looking at Qhawe who nods at her with a smile. She is still looking at Qhawe) Ask her don't be scared don't doubt her love for you and your kids. And as for you (she



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

looks at Eddie) You will be blessed with another child soon. (she turns to look at me) all these people that you made your family you are all bound together by the love you have for each other your pasts brought you together it is the way it should be. These men are a healing to you your friends and your kids. Outside forces will try to break you but always stand together and you'll always win (she turns to look at Nkosikhona) I warned my son but you don't listen. You will not die by their hand but by another. (with that said she walked away and my babies started kicking like crazy. Aunt Nomzamo turns to look at) They are attention seekers (I couldn't help but smile at her. We all quickly turned to Nkosikhona like his was not just here)

Me: I believe Eddie asked you a question Nkosikhona and please we don't have all day we still have a long way to travel.

Qhawe: Please make it quick

Uncle Nceba: start talking Nkosikhona I can't believe you didn't listen to Nomzamo. Tell them what they need to know

Nkosikhona: there is nothing to tell

Uncle. I did this on my own. Lwazi:

Nkosikhona don't insult our intelligence please.

Andile: You don't have the precision to pull something like this off the only thing you are good at is numbers. So who helped you?

Nkosikhona: no one helped me. (Qhawe takes the gun and shoots him in the leg he screams in pain) YOU SHOT ME!! (everyone who was sitting where we are got up and ran to the house except his Uncle Nceba.

Uncle Nceba: You deserve it.

Qhawe: obviously talk who helped you

Me: Nkosikhona we don't have all day you know. (Eddie kneels in front of him and checks his wound. He presses his thumb on it and Nkosikhona screams in pain)

Eddie: who helped you?

Nkosikhona: I told you no one helped me.

Eddie: Lwazi call Nxele tell him we need his guy here now and call Sizwe to come back we need a ride. (Eddie takes out his pocket knife and opens it.) I am going to take this bullet out now and I am going to instruct Qhawe to put another bullet in your other leg I'll remove that one too and replace it with another. He removes the bullet with

Nkosikhona screaming hard.)

Uncle Nceba: I don't know why you are letting them torture you like this. You should tell them what they need to know.

Eddie: Qhawe please another bullet



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: with

pleasure

Nkosikhona: wait

please wait Me:

And????

Nkosikhona: Your ex sister wife Simamkele helped me.

Me: I think the wax in my ears just piled up blocking my hearing. Did he just say Sima help him? That woman doesn't listen no wonder she doesn't bring her twins to visit that often. She is testing me.

Uncle Nceba: are you talking about Simamkele Tom Nkosikhona?

Nkosikhona: yes I am (just then some guy walks up to us. And he looks very familiar) Him: What's going on here? Khanyi is that you?

Me: Malusi Jaxa you are still alive and still a cop

Malusi: when Det. Nxele called me I didn't think the Khanyi he was talking about was you. What are you doing with this idiot?

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: He kidnapped my kids

Malusi: Hayibo you

mean Lina and Khaya

Me: the one and only.

Malusi: If you had dated me you would be dealing with him. I hope he is not the father of that baby. Me: Not in this life. (I turn to look at Qhawe and smile)

Malusi: and the gunshot wound

Uncle Nceba: that's my doing (ok that was unexpected) this boy doesn't listen. What were you thinking getting mixed up with that Tom woman?

Malusi: and the bloods on your hand?

(he asks looking at Eddie) Uncle

Nceba: he was trying to stop the bleeding.

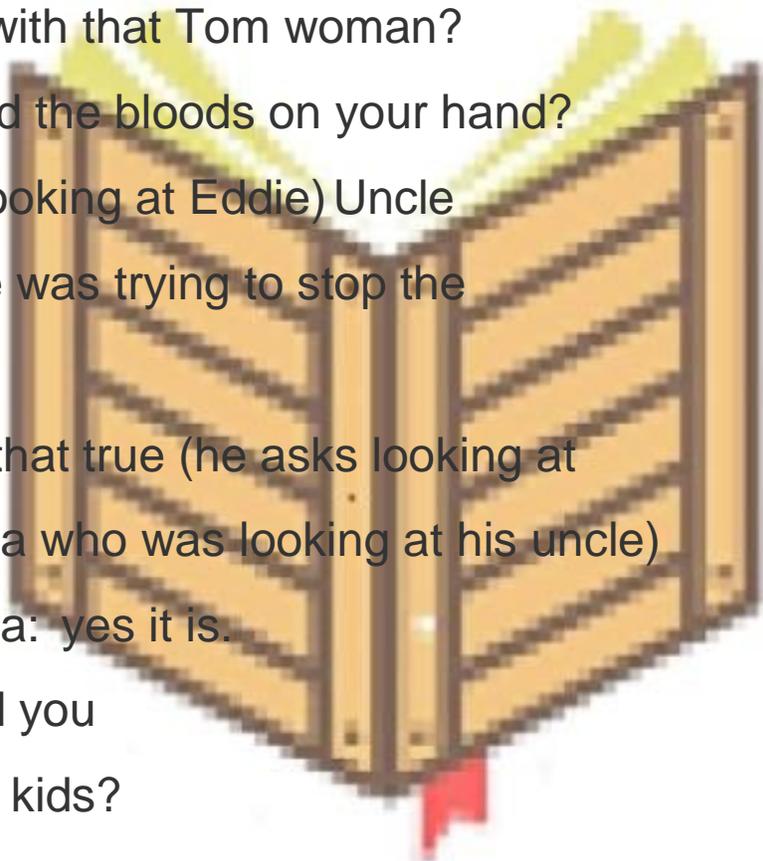
Malusi: is that true (he asks looking at Nkosikhona who was looking at his uncle)

Nkosikhona: yes it is.

Malusi: did you kidnap the kids?

Nkosikhona: Yes I did.

Malusi: you Nkosikhona I've always thought of you as stupid but I never figured you to be a retard. After everything I've been told today about Khanyi you have confirmed that you are stupid.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

You are under arrest for the Kidnapping of Linamandla and Khayaletu Sondlo. You have the right to remain silent you have a right to legal representation.....

(Nkosikhona doesn't let him finish) Nkosikhona: I know my rights. Let's just go.

Me: he had an accomplice Simamkele Tom

Malusi: Nkosikhona what are you doing getting mixed up with that woman. Wait a minute



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sponsored

no it can't be. Nkosikhona you!!!

No man it doesn't add up. Eddie:

what are you talking about?

Malusi: let's go. You can't

the missing link. Me:

Malusi what's going?

Malusi: it's a case I'm working. Look go back home. I'll deal with this one.

Me: there were two uniformed rookies here they took statements from my kids I think those guys are in his pocket as well.

Malusi: I'll look into it. Leave before I arrest you for shooting him.

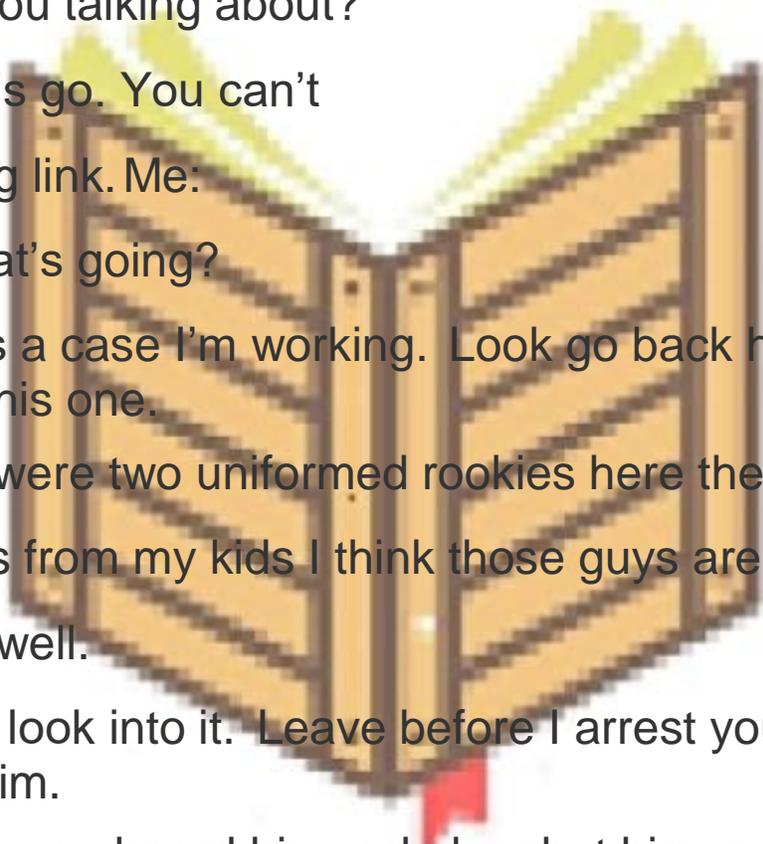
Me: hayibo you heard his uncle he shot him. sudlala ngathi wena (don't play with us. He looks at us and just smiles.

\*

\*

\*

FIVE



NOVELSGURU.COM

HOURS

LATER

QHAWE

\*

\*

\*

I knew Khaya was a mama's boy but today I saw something else. The connection they have with their mother is absolutely amazing. When we got home everyone was waiting for us. The scene was very heart warming the love was too much. Their siblings were so happy to see them. When we told them what to Khaya and Lina they were so distraught. These kids love each other so much. The twins even cried today when they saw them. I really don't know what we have done to deserve all this love around us. I can't help think about what Nkosikhona's aunt said. Khaya interrupts my thoughts.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khaya: can we talk to you

Me: yes you can. (they come sit next me

on the couch in our bedroom.) Lina:

where is mom?

Me: she is downstairs getting some ice cream for us  
Khaya: that gives us enough time to talk to you she's probably going to make something to eat while at it.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: What's  
going on guys?

Lina: nothing  
much. Khaya.

Khaya: we wanted tell you that we love you we appreciate you. We appreciate that you came into our lives and saw us as your kids and loved us the way you do. we never thought in our lives we would have a man that could be a role model to us a man that could teach us how a man should behave how a man should raise a child a man that could teach us everything that you have taught us. We appreciate your selflessness you went all the way to King Williams Town to find us not many could do that. we never had a father he was a father by name even our former step father was not a father to us. We truly don't know why he hates us so much we don't know what we've done to him to make him hate us so much to even go to the extent of kidnapping us. (he just broke down and cried)

Lina: I've wanted my father to treat me like a Princess I've always wanted to have a relationship with my father where I can talk to him about anything have him protect me from boys teach me how to act around boys scare away any

boys that want to date me but then he would know that the boy that stands up to my father will be worthy to have me. I never had that until mom met you. We want you to know that we are proud to call you our father.

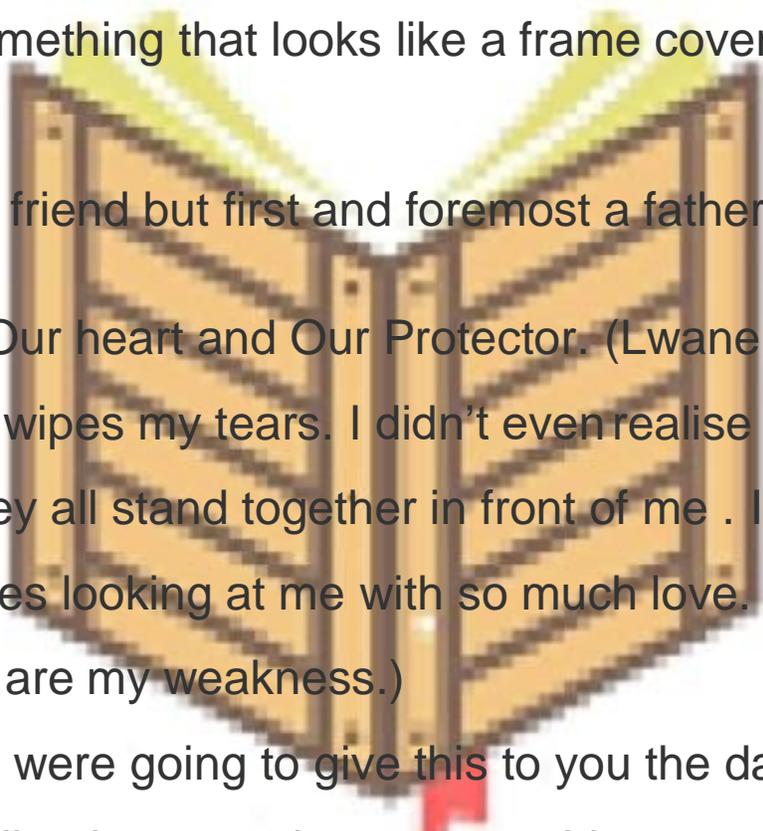
Lonwabo: You are the father we've always dreamt of.

A strict but loving father (he walks in with his siblings holding something that looks like a frame covered with a towel.

Ntando: A friend but first and foremost a father but most of all a dad

Lwanele: Our heart and Our Protector. (Lwanele walks up to me and wipes my tears. I didn't even realise I was crying. They all stand together in front of me . I have five pairs of eyes looking at me with so much love. I promise these kids are my weakness.)

Khaya: we were going to give this to you the day they took us. What happened to us gave this more sentimental value it showed us that no matter what no matter where and when no matter time it is we can always count on you. The other half of your kids know about this they helped us with it. (just then they walked in stood by the bed Khanyi walked in with a smile on her face and sat



NOVELSGURU.COM

on the bed. they removed the towel and the tears just fell again.)

Lina: it's for your office. (it's a big picture of us me and all the kids and they've managed to have a picture of the sonogram of the Quinstuplets fitted in there.)

Khaya: that's not all. (he takes the picture and puts it aside revealing a big wall clock. It's a custom made wall clock with pictures of Khaya Lina Lownwabo Ntando and Lwanele. My face is the background of the the watch as a watermark they have their pictures placed on 36912 and the lwanele's picture in the center of the watch. The frame of the watch had the word "OUR FOREVER"



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

engraved on it with my initials as well. I'm at loss for words. Now I understand why the Sangoma said I should not doubt their love for me I should not be scared)

WEDNESDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

QHA

WE

\*  
\*  
\*

We are still in bed naked. I can safely say last night was great. I'm laying my head on her stomach talking to my babies.

Me: hey babies how are you doing in there? I can't wait for your mom to give birth to you. I just want to hold you already. You know she thinks I'm crazy talking to you like this. I hope there's at list two Princes in there and your mom wants all of you to be Princesses but daddy wants at least one Prince. I love you so much. Mommy and daddy



NOVELSGURU.COM

are sorry about last night. We went overboard but that's how you were created anyway (they start kicking. I swear these babies kick a lot. Maybe they are loving the attention that they are getting from everyone.

Khanyi: I guess that's their way of responding to you.

Me: they already recognise their daddy's

voice. (I move up to kiss her) Khanyi: Last

night was a bit too much.

Me: I didn't hear you complaining and this morning.

Khanyi: Your babies are complaining maybe you should listen to them.

Me: hayi Khanyi you can't use the babies. they are just responding to the sound of my

voice. Come on let's go bath. (I hold her hand and help her up. I pull her to the mirror I take a moment and

admire her body playing with her big her stomach.) No

matter how big you get to me you always look sexy do

you want to know why?

Khanyi: Yes I do **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Because this body has given me the most beautiful gifts I could ever ask for from you. They were all natured in here before they became who they are today. I love you mama bear and thank you for letting me in into your

life. Let's go take a bath. (I run the bath water add the usual bath salts for her to ease the pain on her nuna. )



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: i love you too Papa Bear

Me: you know what the kids did yesterday that was the most touching and sentimental thing. I can't wait to put them up in my office. Honestly I never thought my relationship with them would reach this level I never thought they would show this much love for me especially when I found about their idiot fathers.

Khanyi: they have been through a lot and when you came into our lives you showed us that not all men are the same. I'm hungry .

Me: Me too. What do you feel like eating? Let's get dressed and it's hot today. Here wear this. Khanyi: where did that come from?

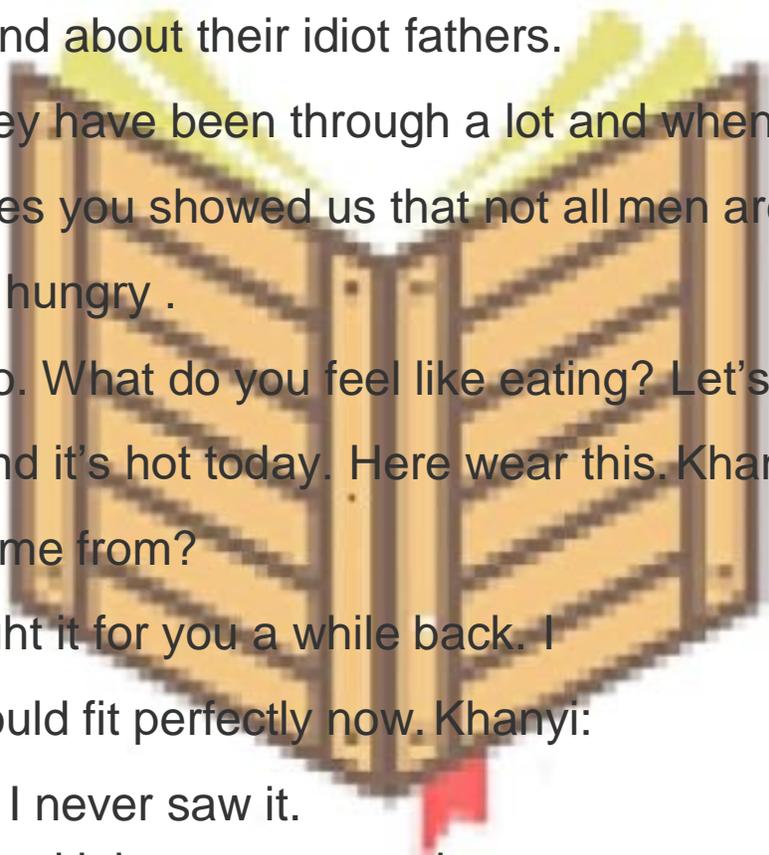
Me: I bought it for you a while back. I think it should fit perfectly now. Khanyi: how come I never saw it.

Me: I hanged it between my suits.

Khanyi: You never sieze to amaze me.

I love it and it fits perfectly. ME: You look absolutely amazing.

Khanyi: lets go to the kitchen. I'm really hungry. ( We go downstairs we are both walking barefoot. It's a



NOVELSGURU.COM

thing in this house.) Smells like someone is already in the kitchen.

Me: Lwazi what are you doing here

so early in the morning? Khanyi:

honestly Lwazi at this hour where is

Thando?

Thando: right here. You guys didn't answer your

phones when we called earlier Khanyi: we were

busy what do you want so early?

Lwazi: busy with what so

early in the morning Me:

same thing you should have

been busy with.

Lwazi: here eat up. I'm sure you are hungry from all that

activity. We have to be at Bandile's house. Sipho and

Luyanda called asking that we meet there and I was

instructed to come fetch you so that we don't have too

many cars parked there. In fact all cars that will there will

be parked in the back yard.

Me: what's going on?

Thando: we don't know yet. The kids are already

there we can't leave them alone here. Khanyi: good

thing Bandile has a big house.

Lwazi: not as big as this one. Let's go guys.

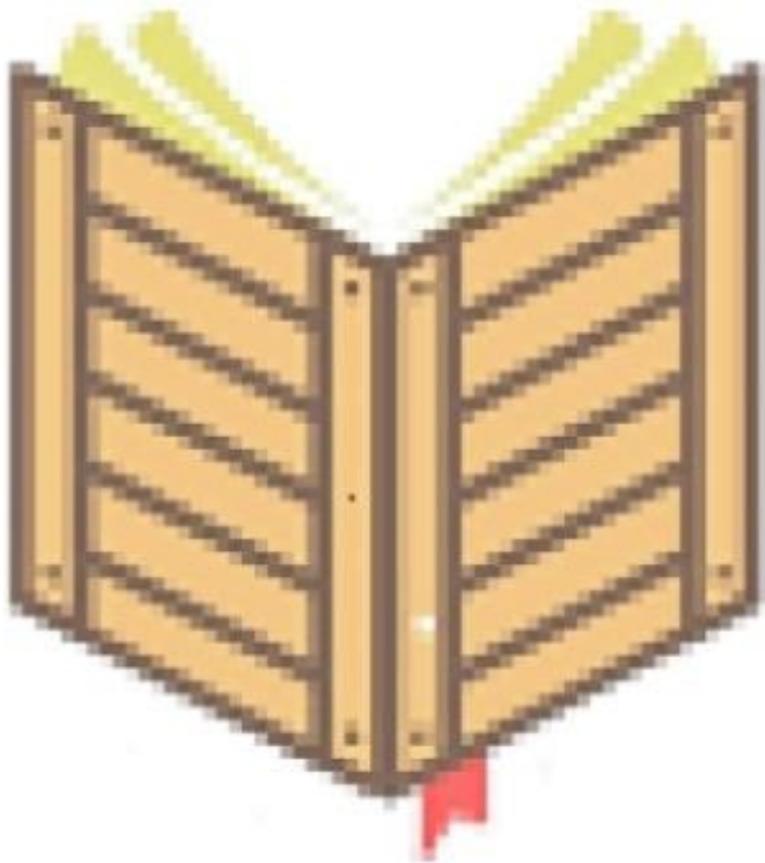
\*

\*

\*

SIP

HO



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

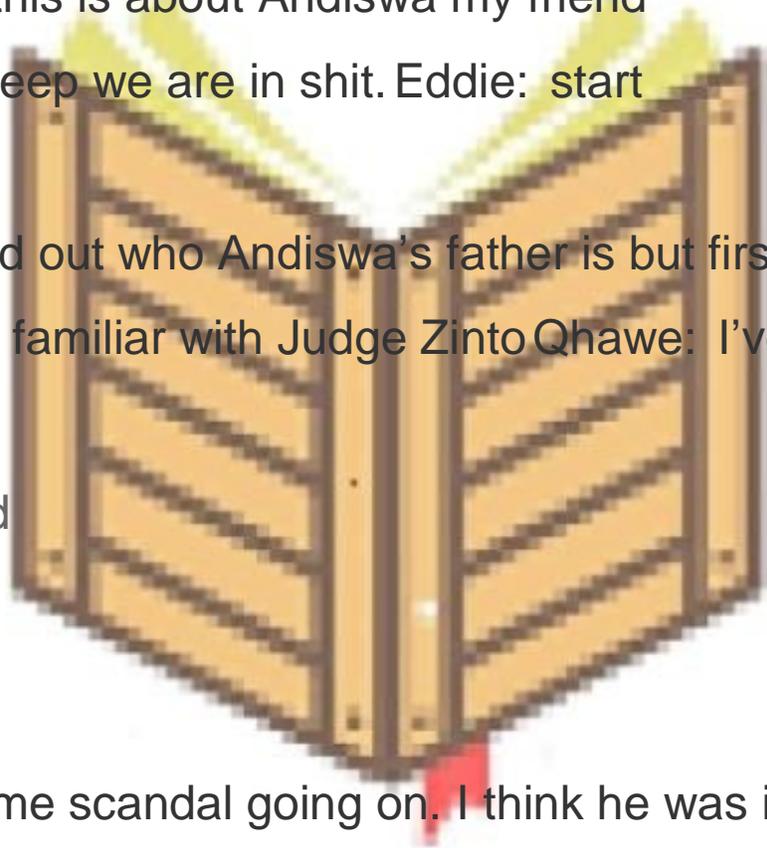
\*  
\*  
\*

Me: finally the love birds are here. We can start. Bandile: what's all this about?

Luyanda: this is about Andiswa my friend and how deep we are in shit. Eddie: start talking

Me: I found out who Andiswa's father is but first are any of you familiar with Judge Zinto Qhawe: I've heard about him

Sponsored



he had some scandal going on. I think he was involved in money laundering but there was no sufficient evidence and the case was dropped and he was reinstated to being a judge.

Luyanda: that is correct. He is the judge that was bribed to get Andiswa out. Someone who knew about his money laundering business and they had proof and threatened to

expose him.

Bandile: who is that someone?

Luyanda: wait we are getting to that. this is the same judge that found Andiswa guilty and sentenced her to a mental institution instead of prison because he was told to do so. This is the same judge that Zwelibanzi used for his cases that managed to get to court.

Me: You thought that Zwelibanzi was the big shot in all that he did when in fact he was not. Everything that Zwelibanzi was involved in has not stopped. He is still earning money while in jail hence he is still alive. They've even stopped trying to kill him now because he is being protected. He is taking the fall for someone and that someone is protecting him.

Luyanda: Khanyi the company you bought you had a silent partner that wanted to remain anonymous even to you.

Khanyi: correction Luyanda I have a silent partner.

Luyanda: He died last year he was your dearly departed former father in law and he left his shares to you and two more companies that he had. The lawyer was asked not reveal that to you until a certain time. Mr Zulu will be here tomorrow. As of tomorrow Miss Sondlo soon to be Mrs

Mtimkhulu once this idiot proposes you will no longer be just a millionare my darling. Mzimkhulu Tom has just made you one of the richest people in this country. Khanyi: you have jokes right. (he looks at her with a very serious look) You are not joking? Me: No he is not.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Eddie: It's true Khanyi.

Me: Your father in law is protecting you and his grandkids from beyond the grave. Remember when Sima tried to kill you but couldn't get a hit man to do it that was the old man's doing. That man knew more about his son's activities than he lead on. He trusted you to protect his legacy and make it grow and you are doing exactly that. there's lot of people who are not happy about that but they can't touch you thanks to the old man's connections to some of Eddie's clients.

Qhawe: Eddie you knew about all this?

Eddie: No I didn't. I found a few days ago when we went to East London for the kids the client that borrowed us the jet. He said that he is not only giving me the jet because he owed me. He is giving me the jet because he promised a close friend of his that he would always protect his daughter in law and his grandkids including the new family she has acquired for herself. It didn't make sense then until the guys told me yesterday.

Khanyi: so what you are saying is that my ex father in law is responsible for my protection in a way. Andile: partly yes. Remember when Eddie said that there was a car that

was always parked a few houses away from your house. Video footage shows someone spying on the house and taking pictures. Last night we went back to view the security footage of the house it showed someone trying to get it but they couldn't because Eddie had just changed the system.

Khanyi: who is this person.

Andile: we couldn't see the face because they were wearing a mask. You don't have to worry they can't get into the house.

Me: the car they used was a hired car and it was hired by a Simamkele Tom.

Sizwe: Sima is smart but not smart enough to pull off something like this on her own. Someone is definitely helping her. Her husband maybe.

Me: Zwelibanzi has no idea about what's going on right now he is being kept in the dark. Her father is helping her.

Micheal Arendse. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sizwe Khanyi & Bandile: WHAT!!!!!!

CHAPTER 99

STILL WEDNESDAY

\*

\*

\*

SIZ

WE



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

\*

\*

Me: You know when you mentioned someone helping Zweilibanzi in prison I thought of him but didn't want it to be true at that moment. I know that he was some how involved with Zweilibanzi's business I never thought he was the guy that was behind all of it.

Sipho: weren't you close friends with Zweilibanzi?

Me: I was until I found out he was selling people for their organs. That's when I turned against him and started working with the police. Micheal Arendse is a very dangerous man. He's been in this game for a very long time and with his involvement in all this we need to thread carefully. We need to stay 10 steps ahead of him otherwise we are dead. Bandile how do you know him?

Bandile: grandfather to my kids (he says

with a very low shocked voice.) Khanyi

what you are saying is that Sima and your ex wife are sisters.

Bandile: I guess that's

what I'm saying. Sipho:

that's not all

Thando: what could be more shocking than everything that you just said?

Luyanda: Nkosikhona works for one his companies cleaning the dirty money. When Nkosikhona found out they offered him more money to keep his mouth shut and as the idiot that he is he accepted but ever since Zwelibanzi's arrest things haven't been all sweet and roses and he's been having an affair with Sima.

Khanyi: Nkosikhona is ruining his life for what for that doll face that's going to dump him like hot potato when she is done with him. he is married to a good woman and he does this to her. he is more than an idiot I don't have word yet for what he is.

Qhawe: Knowing you you'll probably come up with one. (he laughs a little at that as she pouts. These too are just too cute.)

Sipho: when you look at all this Micheal wants you Khanyi and he wants you alive. The company you bought he wants it. All he knows is that you are not the only shareholder in that company they don't know who the other person is and they don't know that he is dead and you now own 100% of that company and that's how it has

to stay. He wants you so that you can sell him your shares in the hopes that you will also convince your silent partner who is now dead to sell too. He is using us to get to you to blackmailing you to sell.

Me: A man like him can be very manipulative. He wants some of us to turn against you in the hopes that it will make you weak. When you look at it he is going to continue playing these games with us



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

until you give in. he is trying to break us from within. I am assuming that his plan is to get us to hate for the things that he is going to do to us.

Lwazi: then he is more stupid than I thought. (he walks to Khanyi who was sitting next Qhawe leaning her head on his shoulder. He kneels in front of her and holds her hands) Mama Bear you have nothing to worry about. We have all been through a lot together and nothing and I mean nothing will ever make us hate you or leave you. We are all in this together. If that piece of shit thinks he can get to you using us then he has another storm coming his way. I love you (he gets up kisses her cheek and goes back to sit next to Thando who look at him proudly and with so much love.)

Khanyi: Thank you Lwazi.

Qhawe: hayi Lwazi you can't say that to her.

Lwazi: Qhawe khawuume ngomona yhoo siyamzi ngowakho kodwa ke nathi ngowethukwakutsho yena ke futhi. (Qhawe just hold on with your jealousy. We know she is you but she is also hours and she said it.) Lwazi gives Qhawe a naughty smile.

Sipho: there' something else ( we all look at him

waiting for him to continue. He clears his throat)

Micheal is also Andiswa's father. (the room goes silent for a few minutes)

Qhawe: FOR FUCK SAKES!!! Meaning that Amanda helped with Andiswa's case  
Ncesh: Who is Amanda?

Bandile: Baby mama.. she is a lawyer.

Khanyi: do you guys think she has met her sisters

Sipho: No she hasn't. She has met her father though.

They met the day Lina and Khaya went missing. He will probably be introducing her to them soon. (Bandile has very quiet he seems to be very deep in thought.)

Me: they know where we are staying and that's not good. And the plan we had of snatching Andiswa we have to throw that out the window and come up with a new plan. We need to catch the bigger fish.

Eddie: we need bait for the bigger fish and I doubt very much it's his daughters.

Andile: I also doubt very much it's them. I think they are just pons in this game of his. He is using them and when he is done with them he'll throw them out like nothing. I don't think a man like that has a weak spot.

Qhawe: trust me everyman has a weak spot.

We just have to find his quick. Bandile: NO  
MAN!!! This can't be can it is it possible?  
Me: What are you talking about?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Bandile: Amanda she is a lawyer and in most of her cases the Judge was this Zinto person and if he was the judge in almost all her cases that means she has been doing this for a while she could have been working for Zwelibanzi all along and Jonathan was just the lapdog he used for the legal

staff. Sizwe you know Jonathan and you must know that he didn't handle everything for Zwelibanzi only certain things.

Me: that's true. Jonathan always agreed with me when I called Zwelibanzi into order. He was not really involved with his illegal shit only the small things and I think that's why he lost the case.

Bandile: it was planned they wanted him to lose case. I think they are planning on getting Zwelibanzi out and they are keeping him in the dark about all of this on purpose maybe he would probably be against the plan since he dealt with us. Guys come on think about it. Ncesh you said your parents died in a car accident and I am willing to bet my life that it was no accident it was murder and I am sure it was meant for your mom. Your mom probably got herself mixed up with something and ended up asking for help from the wrong people. She probably didn't want

Andiswa to know her father because she knew what type of a person he was.

Me: that is a possibility.

Bandile: Micheal watched Andiswa grow to hate Ncesh from a distance

Sponsored

he watched her destroy her sister he probably groomed her to be who she is and he did it all from a distance by putting people in her path that would befriend her.

(Eddie's phone and he leaves to answer it.) I could be wrong about all of this.

Me: it's worth looking into Siphos can you do it.

Siphos: I can but I need to lay low for a while I don't want them catching on to me otherwise we'll be screwed. (Eddie walks back in.)

Eddie: that was Zack we have a visitor. Everyone needs to go upstairs except Bandile Ncesh and Thando. It's Andiswa. Let's let things play out for today and see what happens. Remember we have the upper hand. (we all go upstairs leaving them there)

\*

\*

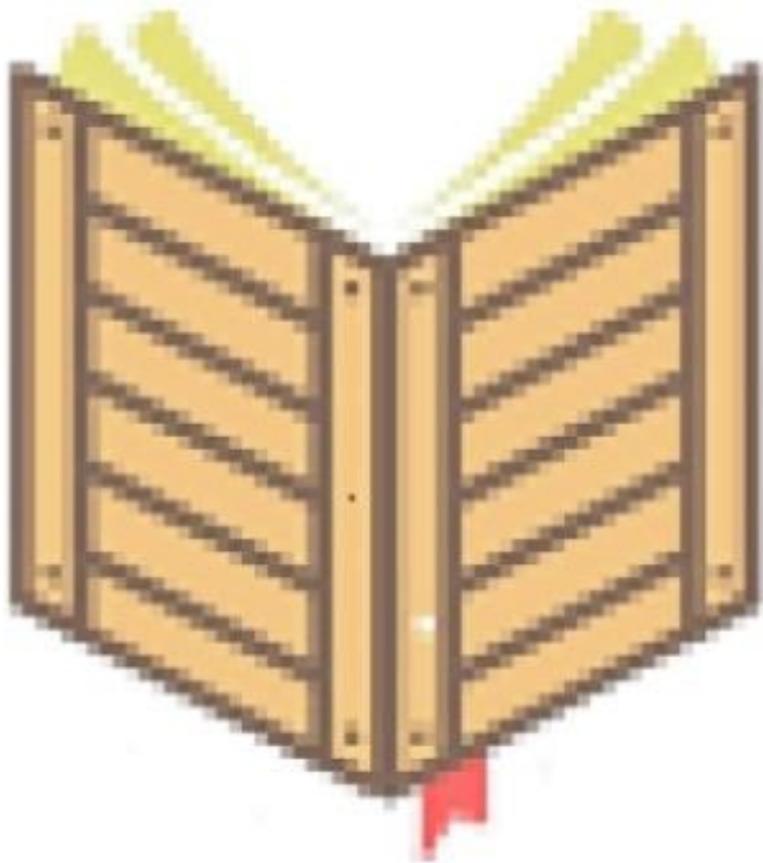
\*

ANDI

SWA

\*

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

As I walk to the door I can here people talking. I stand there deciding if I should knock or not. I knock and wait. A guy opens the door. I think this is the boyfriend. He looks more handsome up close.

Him: Hi can I help you?

Me: umm yes I am here to see Ncebakazi

Ndzolo I was told she lives here. Him: And you are?

Me: I'm sorry I'm her little sister Andiswa

Him: Please come in. (wow my sister is living it up.

This is really an upgrade from her ex.) Me: wow! This is a beautiful house it's amazing.

Him: thank you I guess. (we walk into what looks like a lounge but very casual they probably use it as a tv room there'a big tv and there's a movie playing. There's wine and some snacks as well. I'm probably interrupting chill time.)

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Ncesh: Babe who was at the door? (she walks in followed by her friend and freezes when she sees me. I can still see the fear in her eyes even her friend. They are scared of me. I smile at her walk to her and hug them both)

Me: hey sis how are you?

Ncesh: I'm fine what are you doing here? How did you know I live here?

Me: I came to see you I haven't seen you in a while (she is holding a bowl of popcorn and I notice a ring on her finger. History is definitely repeating itself. I notice there's four glasses of wine on the table. There must be someone else here) looks like you were expecting me. (I say looking at the glasses.)

Ncesh: there's four of us here. Thando walks over to where they were sitting and puts the bowl she is carrying on the table.

Thando: kanti what's taking Lwazi so long?

Ncesh: Babe (she says looking at him) This is my little sister Andiswa the one I told you about. (she told him about me I wonder what he was told.)

Andiswa that's my finance` Bandile. Bandile: Nice to finally meet you Ncesh has told me a lot about you.

Me: I hope it's all good things

(he smiles and nods) Bandile: I'll

go check on Lwazi

Thando: thanks

Me: You really have upgraded sis. He has more money and looks more handsome than Zolani. You guys are

really living it up.

Thando: honestly Andiswa what are you doing here?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I really wanted to see how my sister was doing after the pain she suffered 8 years ago and I can see you both have recovered well. (the fiancé walks in with another good looking gentlemen and walks over straight to Thando kissing her cheek. This must be the Lwazi they mentioned) Lwazi: Sorry I took so long babe.

Thando: it's ok. That's Andiswa Ncesh's little sister.

Lwazi: Oh hey nice to finally meet you. I am Lwazi Thando's husband. (I didn't notice a ring on her )

Me: Oh I didn't notice a ring. Thando: we are traditionally married.

Me: look I just came by take check on my sister but I can see I am interrupting something. So I'll be on my way.

Bandile: Nonsense I'm sure you want to catch up with your sister join us. Me: I don't want to impose.

Lwazi: you wouldn't be watch a movie with us. Do you drink wine I'll bring you a glass.

Me: No it's fine. We'll catch up some other time. I'll call you and maybe we can have lunch or something.

Ncesh: or something. (I walk out and my sister walks me out.)

Me: You guys just made it hard for me to choose. I think I like yours better. Ncesh:

You always did Andiswa what's new.

Me: I'll see you guys soon (I walk into my car and wave at her as she stands at the door. I can see she is scared even her friend is scared. I'm glad to see I still have that effect.)



THURSDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

BAN

DILE

\*  
\*  
\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: you did good yesterday babe.

Ncesh: she scares me Bandile and I am sure she could see that.

Me: it's good baby she needs to see it. it will motivate her. i think Eddie was right we should come up with another plan because if we continue with our original plan of kidnapping her we are giving away our position. Her father is involved now we need to act smart.

Ncesh: this is going to be difficult Bandile I really hope we can get through this.

Me: we will. I believe we will. We just need one single door to open for us. I also think Sizwe was right. Micheal is doing all this because he wants us to blame Khanyi for the hurt and pain he plans on bringing to us.

Ncesh: he really doesn't know us at all. He was too focused on ruining his daughters and he missed seeing that the only person who was there for us at that time was Khanyi if he really thinks I can hate her after all she has done for me then he really has another coming. (there a knock at the door)

Are you expecting anyone?

Me: No I'm not and we are all meeting at Khanyi and Qhawe's house today. (she goes to open and calls out for me.)

Ncesh: Bandile it's for you

Me: Who is it? (Oh God what is she doing here and I'm

sure she can see the shock in my face. I haven't seen her in a while.) Amanda what are you doing here?

Amanda: Is that any way to greet the mother of your kids (she walks to me and hugs me) Me: I asked you a question woman

Amanda: oh chill Bandile. Where are my kids they are not answering my calls I would like to see them.

Me: couldn't you have called me first before showing up at my house unannounced? Amanda: and ruin the surprise (she says walking to the lounge and she sits)

Ncesh: wow she is bold (she whispers that in my ear and laughs. )

Amanda: and this must be one of your flings.

(Ncesh smiles and looks at me) Ncesh: I'll let you deal with her (she kisses my lips) I'll get the kids for you.

Amanda: you introduced her to my kids.

Bandile: You seem to forget that your kids are grown men they are not babies. Why do you treat them like this? They never want to visit you because of this.

Amanda: No Bandile they don't want to visit me

because you poisoned them against me. Me: how did

I manage to do that. you know for a lawyer you are not very smart. And for your information Ncesh is not a fling. (just then my sons walk in)

Ayanda: she is his wife and that makes her our step mother. Please show a little respect ma. Asive: Mama how are? What are you doing here?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Amanda: I came to see you. I haven't seen you in a while I miss you and you don't answer my calls.

Ayanda: I don't understand you ma yazi. We wanted to come and see you but you were too busy to see us and now all of sudden you miss us. What changed? Is it because you don't like the fact that we are spending more time with dad and his new Mrs?

Asive: mama we love you you know that we respect you but sometimes you can be too much. Me: Ok guys that's enough.

Ayanda: but dad everytime we visit you she always want to ruin it. we can never enjoy our time with you without her showing up for nothing.

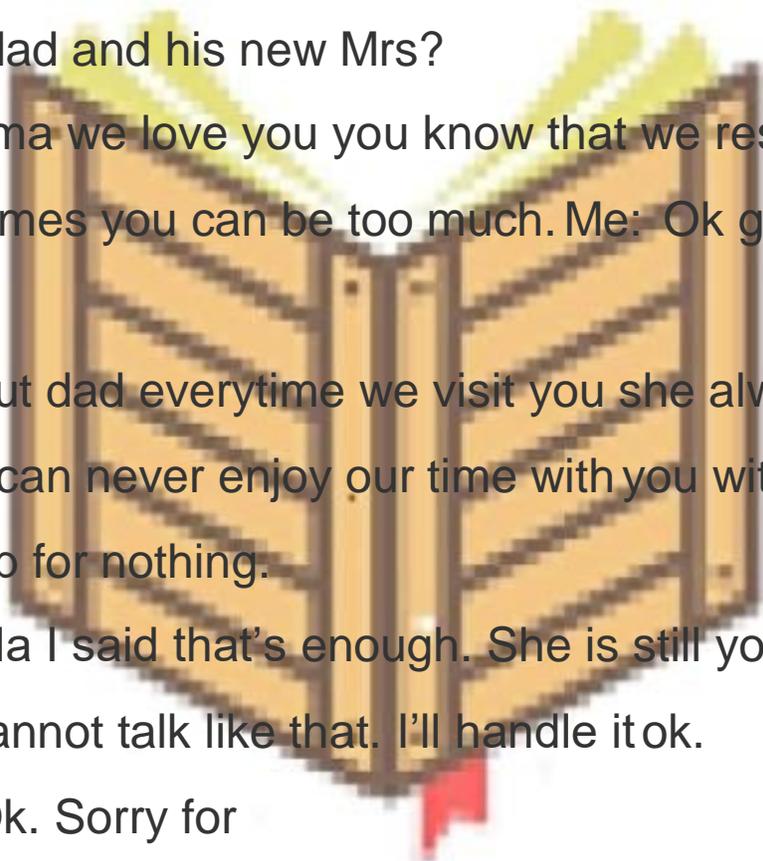
Me: Ayanda I said that's enough. She is still your mother and you cannot talk like that. I'll handle it ok.

Ayanda: Ok. Sorry for being out of line mom.

Asive: do I have to apologise?

Amanda: you must really like her for you to stand up for her like that.

Me: You guys can go. (they walk away.) Amanda I want



NOVELSGURU.COM

you to listen to me and listen good because I won't be repeating myself. If you ever step foot in my house unannounced again I'll kill you where you stand. If you ever disrespect my wife like again I'll chop up and feed you to my dogs. Stop treating my sons like kids. They are grown men treat them as such. If they want to spend more time with me stop fighting them. Let them be. You don't see me fighting you when they are with you why are you fighting me why can't you let me enjoy my time with them. (she wants to say something but I don't let her ) Please leave. Next time you want to come here make an appointment. You know infact I should just beef up the security around this house. I said leave Ayanda and Asive will come to you when they want to. Leave.

Amanda: Bandile please look I'm sorry ok. It will never happen again. (she walks up to me and tries to kiss me but I push her away.)

Me: LEAVE NOW!!!! AND DON'T EVER COME BACK HERE.

\*

\*

\*

ED

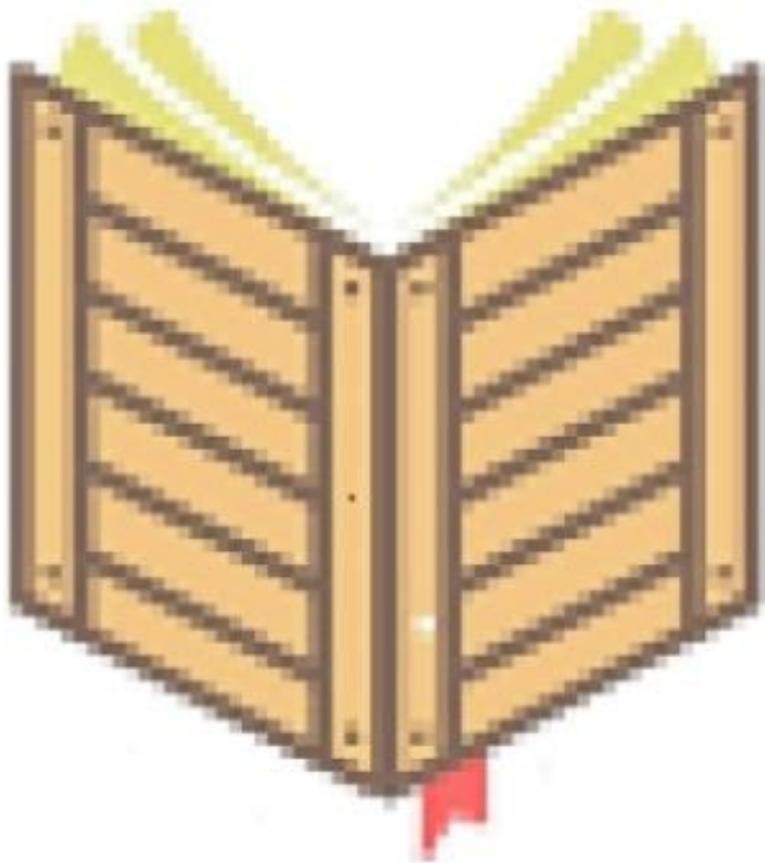
DIE

\*

\*

\*

Me: Qhawe is the farm house ready?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: yes it is. They finished last week. Is the security system completely installed.?

Me: it is I just need to activate it. we need to go to the farm. No one knows about it and it will be safe but we need to also have some activity here so that it's not noticeable that we are not

here. Sizwe and Anelisa's house already looks like there is no one living there. Sizwe always uses the back entrance. Lwazi is never at his house he is always at Thando's apartment

Sponsored

he is always at Thando's apartment so that will be easy as well besides the other guys are not being watched. Your house and Bandile's house are the main attraction.

Qhawe: I knew you would want us to move to the farm. i have moved some of our things there already so when ever you are ready for use to move you can just say the word.

Eddie: in all the years that I have been doing this job this is the fourth time I have been so scared that I would fail.

Qhawe: you are good at this and you've been with her for years you know what to do.

Me: that's the thing Qhawe if it was just her and the kids it would be easy because I always had a backup plan for them and now I have to tweek the plan for more people and I don't know if it's going to work.

Qhawe: whatever the plan is it will work we will all work with you to make sure it works. We will do everything you tell us to do.

Me: thanks for that. I really appreciate it.

Qhawe: we are family remember and family stands together no matter what. You know what's amazing is that ever since Khanyi was given that bracelet by Nkosikhona's aunt she hasn't had panic attacks in fact she has been so relaxed through out.

Me: you are actually right. Wait a minute.

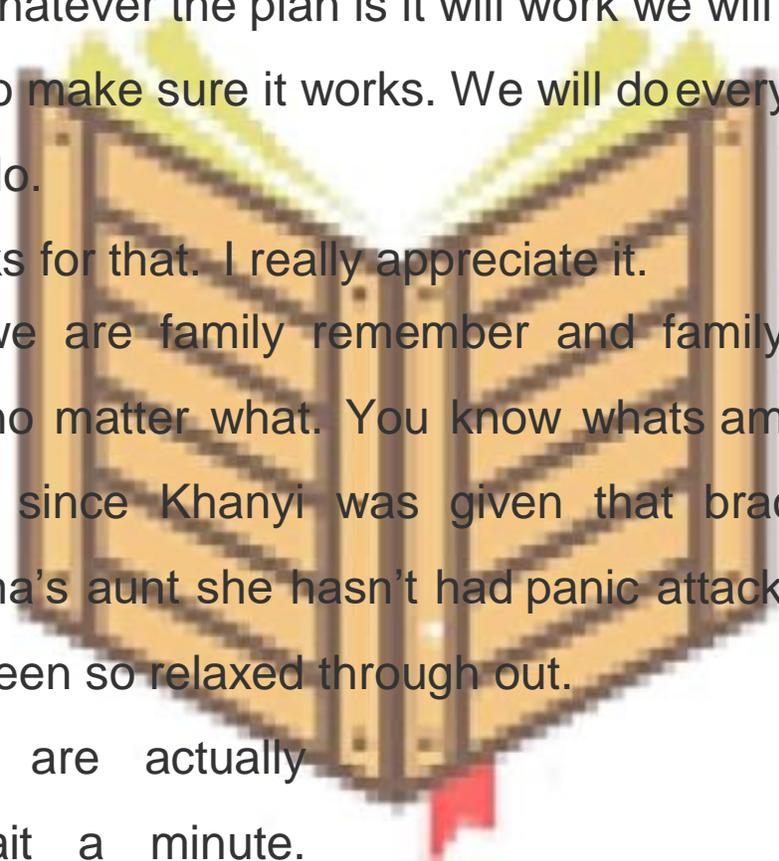
Qhawe: what is it?

Me: Nkosikhona

Qhawe: what about him?

Me: Nkosikhona didn't tell us everything he knew. Remember when Malusi was mumbling that

it was not possible that Nkosikhona was the man he was



NOVELSGURU.COM

looking for. Nkosikhona knows more than he is letting on. I'm sure he didn't kidnap the kids for just the ceremony. Yes he was going to do the ceremony but they were going to use them to force Khanyi to sell her shares and Sima also knows that Khanyi would do anything for her kids but Nokhaya ruined everything for them.

Qhawe: I don't understand how a man can use his children like that hurt them like that.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Not all men are like you Qhawe. We need to find a way to get Malusi to tell us what he knows. Qhawe: use Khanyi he seems to have a soft spot for her

Me: You do know she will kill you for selling her out like that. Qhawe: she doesn't have to know that I did that.

Me: I won't say anything on one condition though Qhawe: and what condition is that?

Me: there's a guy looking for a job take him as intern for a year and he'll find himself something permanent or start his own firm after the year of his intership but I just want him to learn how the architecture business works

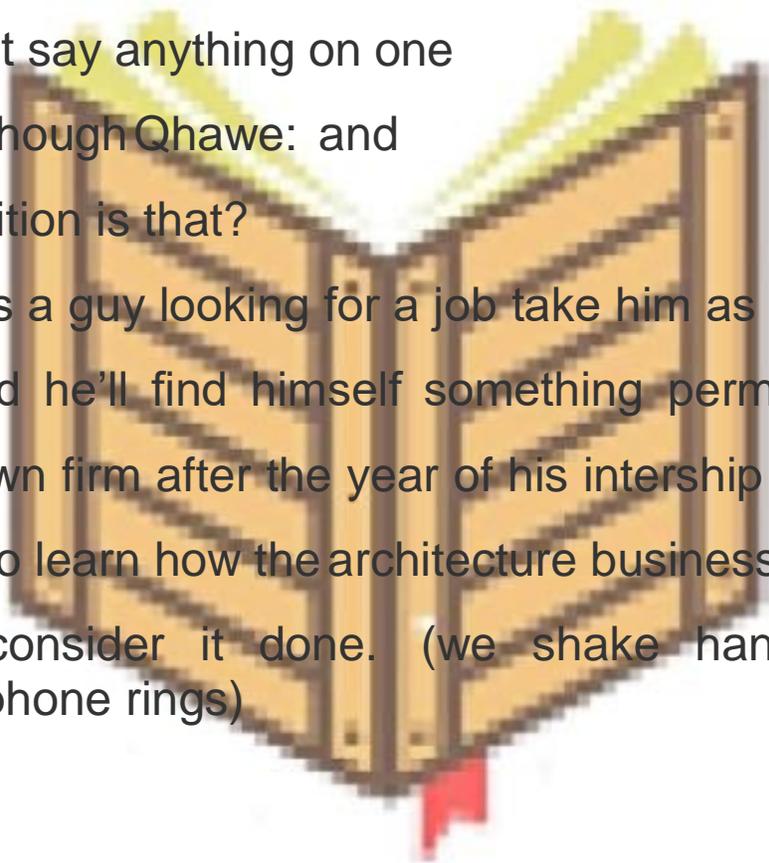
Qhawe: consider it done. (we shake hands and my business phone rings)

Me: Hello

Him: You are really good at what you do I just wonder how long you can protect them from me especially her.

Me: for as long I possibly can

Him: she is really lucky to have you but you need to let me see her I need to talk to her. she has something I want.



Me: why don't you talk to me about that and I'll pass on the message. Him: You can't protect her forever one way or the other I will get to her Me: we'll see about that.

Him: We definitely will Eddie. She chose well too. How did she find you you are a difficult man to find.

ME: she found me the same way you did. If there's nothing else I am rather busy. (I hang up.)

Qhawe: who was that?

Me: Micheal. We need to move soon and come up with a plan soon. He is getting to close for comfort.

Qhawe: Everyone is coming here. We can discuss all this when they get here. Oh and don't expect me to talk to Khanyi about talking to Malusi. You can do that yourself.

Me: You are such a coward.

Qhawe: I'm not a coward I just value my life I love my life and I am definitely not ready to die. You are on your own.

CHAPTER 101

SATURDAY

\*

\*

\*

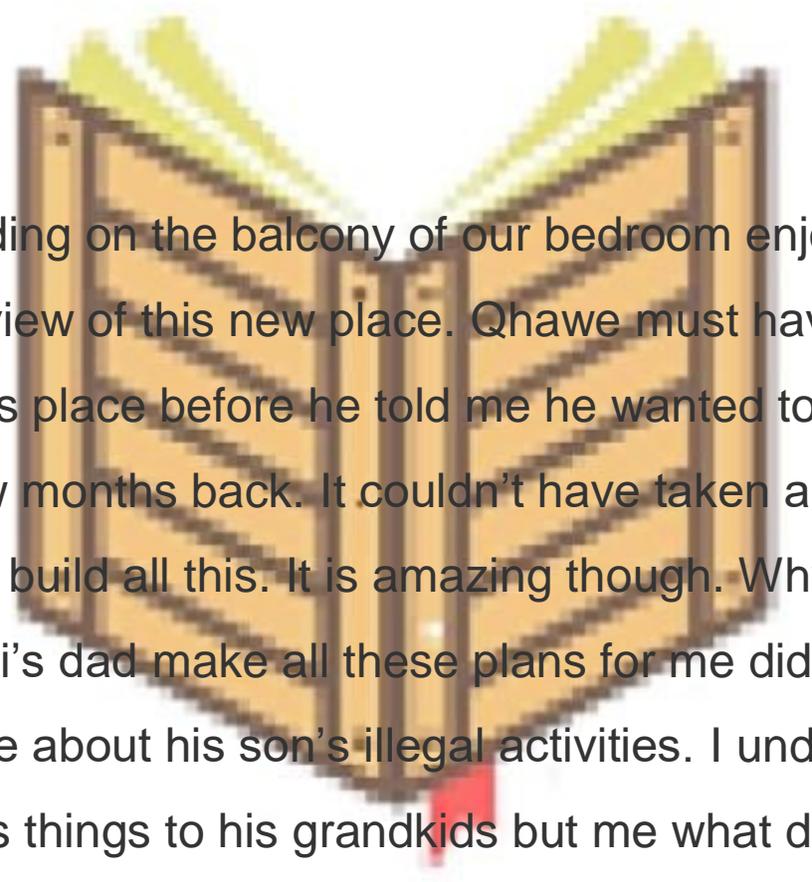
KHANY

ISILE

\*

\*

\*



I am standing on the balcony of our bedroom enjoying the amazing view of this new place. Qhawe must have bought this place before he told me he wanted to buy a farm a few months back. It couldn't have taken a few months to build all this. It is amazing though. Why did Zwelibanzi's dad make all these plans for me did he really know more about his son's illegal activities. I understand leaving his things to his grandkids but me what did I do for him to make him do all this for me. I just don't get it.

Qhawe: You really shouldn't over think it. He did it because he didn't want his grandkids to end up like their father he didn't want them to own anything that would be linked to their father at least this way he ensured that the kids would have a good and safe life.

Me: No not so safe when I have a psycho after me.

Qhawe: he won't get to you he will try but he'll die before he gets to you.

Me: We both know that we are not going to kill him. look what happened to Zwelivanzi we didn't kill him we just sent him to jail for the rest of his life and now his stupid family is thinking of getting him out.

Qhawe: they won't get the chance to.

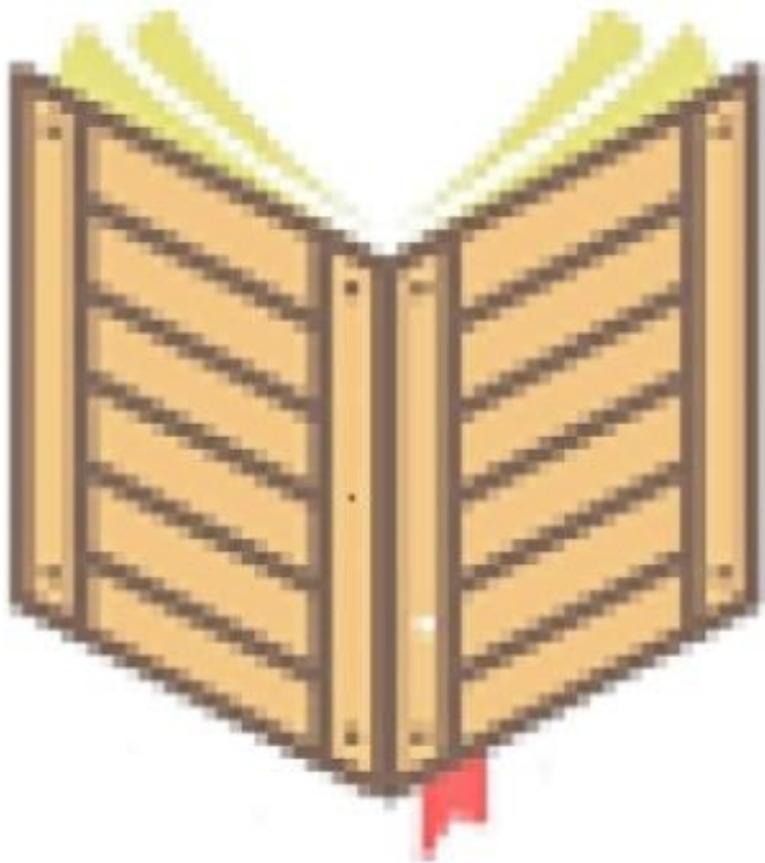
Me: I hope so my King. (he stands and holds me from behind brushing my stomach) I think I want to stay here permanently.

Qhawe: that's what the kids said too. I think it will be good for them. This place is big enough for all of us. I know the rest of the guys will go back to their places after this but I am sure that they will spend every weekend here. Lwazi is not going to be happy in fact he is going to kill us because he won't be able to drive here everyday.

Me: why is it that he doesn't like spending time at his house.

Qhawe: Lwazi has always been like that even in varsity during our first year he only slept in his room. For the second year and the rest of the duration of our varsity years we rented a three bedroomed apartment because

of him. it was nice though we respected each other's privacy and



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

space. The thing they have of not knocking is because of the fact that we lived together for so many years. I was the first to move out and I became Lwazi's victim he ate at my place all the time.

Me: I can imagine. You guys have a beautiful relationship  
Qhawe: we became brothers brothers we never had. Out of the three of us I'm the only one that had a good childhood but that didn't affect our relationship. We all worked hard for everything we have. My parents never gave me anything on a silver platter. Dad helped the three of us to start the businesses we have. He didn't give us money he showed us ways to get money and what we were short with he topped up.

Me: that's what you did with the boys when they came to us with their project.

Qhawe: Now they know how to get money from other business people. Bandile and Lwazi are more my brothers more than they are my friends. We've always been there for each other. We fight just like brothers do but we never stay angry at each other. (just then Eddie walked in.)

Eddie: morning love birds Qhawe can I have a word with Khanyi please and Bandile and Sizwe are looking for you.

Qhawe: You guys really don't know the meaning of quality time do you. (he turns me around and kisses me so passionately and I let out a soft moan after which he stops he smiles kisses my forehead and my stomach and walks away did he just leave me horny. I am going to kill him he did this on purpose.)

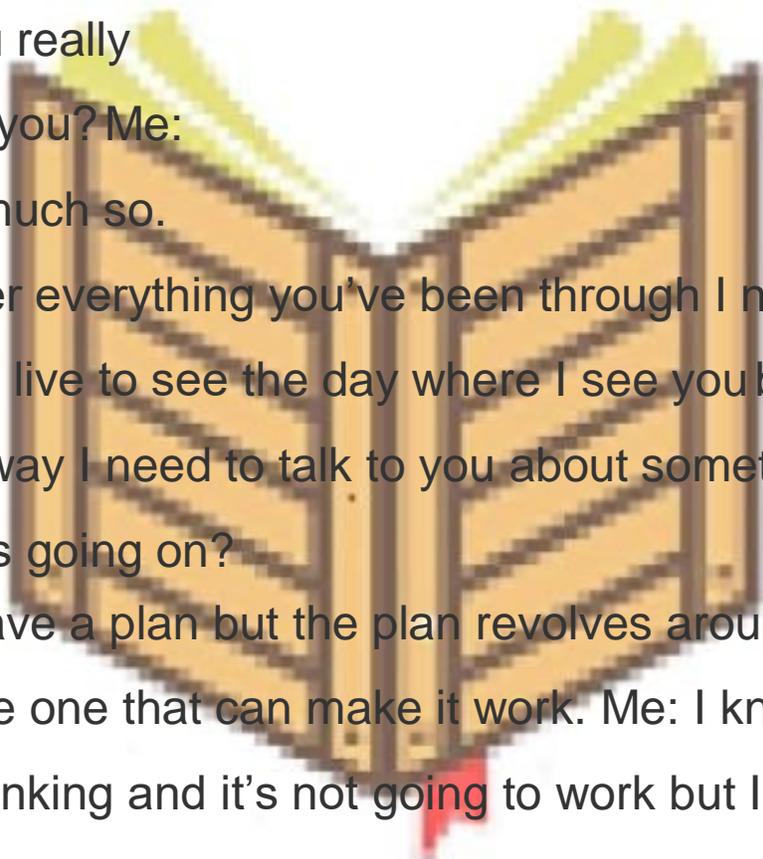
Eddie: you really love don't you? Me:

I do very much so.

Eddie: after everything you've been through I never thought I'd live to see the day where I see you being so in love. Anyway I need to talk to you about something.

Me: what's going on?

Eddie: I have a plan but the plan revolves around you and you are the one that can make it work. Me: I know what you are thinking and it's not going to work but I have been thinking of something and Micheal won't expect it especially from me. I have been doing my own little investigation and Micheal has been after me for a long time. He doesn't only want the company from me he wants something he's never had something he always wished he could have but it never happened and there's



NOVELSGURU.COM

Something else that you guys didn't know that I found out Micheal has four daughters. That one comes after Sima. Her mother ran off when she found out she was pregnant but Micheal knew she was pregnant he found her and brought her back to Durban she didn't live to see her daughter grow up. She died after giving birth. That child is his Poster child she is his pride and joy. That man loves his daughters and they are his weakness. The girl I'm talking about is Natasha

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

she is his pride and joy. That man loves his daughters and they are his weakness. The girl I'm talking about is Natasha she used to sleep with Qhawe before Qhawe met me and I think she is going to be used to get between me and Qhawe but that's not going to happen. I have a plan of my own. (I proceed to tell him my plan he looks at me like I've gone mad.)

Eddie: You do know that if I allow this plan of yours Qhawe will have both our heads  
Me: I know. But Micheal won't see this coming.

Eddie: Eish Khanyi as much as I hate to say it but you are right.  
Me: I know I am (I smile at him)

Eddie: Don't be cocky I might just change my mind. ( I look at him and pout.) that will work with Qhawe not me. Come let's go get some ice cream and chocolates.

\*

\*

\*

ANDI

SWA

\*

\*

\*

My phone beeps and it's a message: "MEET ME AT WIMPY IN TEN MINUTES" that's my father I wonder what's happening. Lucky for me I am already at the mall and he probably knew that. When I get there he is already there.

Me: Mike. How are you?

Mike: I'll feel better if you call me dad.

(he gives me a warm smile) Me: in time

I will. Why am I here

Mike: You are here to meet your sisters and they should be here anytime. Oh right on cue here they are. (I see these three ladies. We look so much alike and we all look like him. they are beautiful)

Them: Daddy (they hug and sit.)

Mike: I want you all to meet your sister Andiswa and Andiswa these are your sisters Sima Natasha and Amanda.

Me: Nice to meet you all. You look beautiful.

Amanda: nice to finally meet you too. So you are the baby of the family  
Mike: she is. Be nice to her.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sima: oh daddy when have we ever not been nice to anyone (she smiles at him)

Amanda: we already know about you and what happened to you so we won't bore you by asking you about all that. (thank God. I actually didn't want to talk about my past)

Me: I guess today is the day you tell me what the plan is. Amanda: Not yet but you need to put your plan into play.

Me: my plan is already in play. It's delayed a bit because the couples have gone away for the weekend. I'll be moving forward with it on Monday when they are back. You need to at least tell me why my plan fits into yours.

Sima: Khanyi had my husband arrested and I want her to pay for that and your sister is friends with her.

Amanda: your sister is getting married to my ex and that can't happen. (I've noticed that Natasha is not much of a talker she's been quiet all this time. I turn to look her)

Natasha: I was sleeping with a guy once at first it was just fun until I developed feeling for me which rarely happens for me. I never really fall for guys but I fell for this one he noticed that and broke up with me because he didn't have

feelings for me and he didn't want to lead me on but it was too late for me. A few months later I found out he was in love with someone. I started following him around which was not easy I stalked him on social media but he didn't post that much. I would see them at the mall or at the park and it hurt. She is living the life I should be living. I should be the one carrying his baby and making him smile everyday.

Me: mmmhhh I see. So me hurting my sister helps you how exactly.

Sima: You are very slow dear little sister. Khanyi and those people are a bunch of strangers who became a family a very strong and loyal family at that. but if the people close to her keep experiencing pain because of her they will eventually hate her and that will be a breaking point for her she will be weak she will want to do anything to have them back even sell the shares that daddy wants from her.

Me: so basically this

is about Khanyi Mike:

Yes it is.

Me: I see. I get it. Mike told me that you were not always

into this kind of life what changed? Natasha: I was always a part of this life. These two were not. They spend most of their time in boarding school and they went to varsity overseas so they were not really exposed to this life until they became hungry for revenge.

Me: so what do you guys do for a living?

Amanda: I am a lawyer Sima is an interior designer and accountant and Natasha is an IT technician but she is not that good at it she is good at other things though.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mike: Look just make sure your plan works. There's no hurry because they are not suspecting anything they are living their lives as per normal. Take your time so that there are no mistakes. I have to go I have other business to take care of. Now that you know the plan Andiswa there are things you might be required to do.

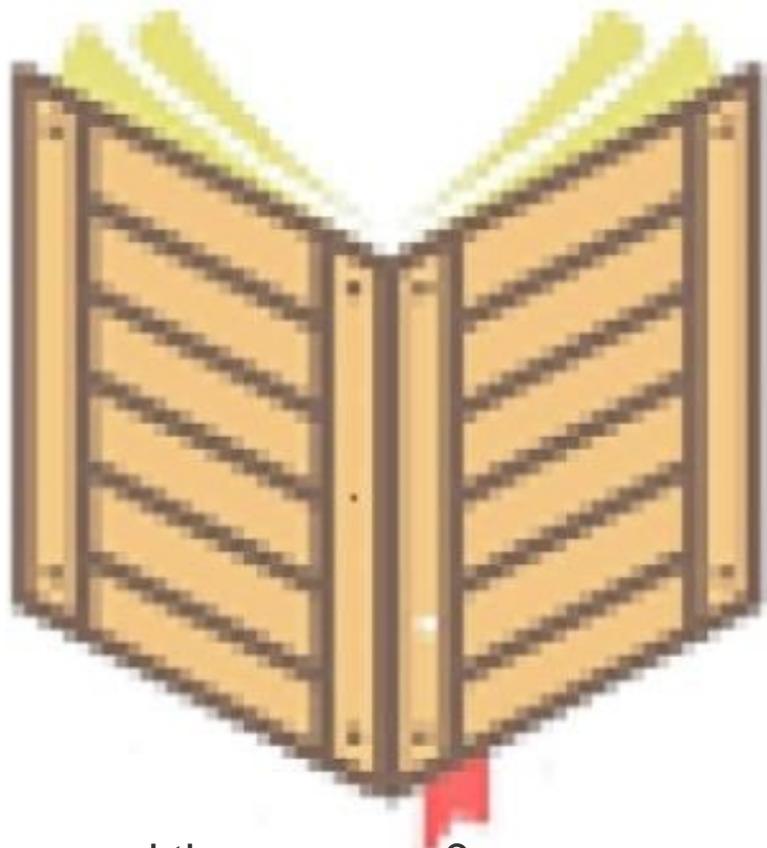
MONDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

KHANY

ISILE

\*  
\*  
\*



Me: Did you send the message?

Eddie: I did and we have to be there in two hours I just need find a way to separate Qhawe from you.

Me: Don't worry I've got that sorted out. They left earlier going to Bandile's house. You and I have all the time in the world. He is expecting you to be there right.

Eddie: I told him I have to be there otherwise he can't meet with you.

ME: ok then. Let's get going we don't want to keep our guest waiting. How about our other guests? Eddie: All

sorted just two missing and that will be handled as well.

(we drive off to my house in La Lucia when we get there

everything is still the same. Security is still in place. We

haven't been here for a few days and I miss Mam' Mavis.)

it's going to work Khanyi don't worry.

Me: I hope so Eddie I really hope so.

\*

\*

\*

QHA

WE

\*

\*

\*

ME: I think Eddie and Khanyi are up to something



Bandile: why do you say that?

Me: they are spending a lot of time together since this weekend.

Bandile: You are just being you there's nothing going on there. Let them be.

Lwazi: He just doesn't like that he is not with her. he always wants her close. I don't even think Khanyi is the clingy one anymore Qhawe is.

Andile: you are right about that. Where are Luyanda and Sipho Bandile: they are coming.

Me: Eversince Ncesh started spending more time here this house looks amazing. Bandile: what is it with you and Ayanda? This house looked amazing even before Ncesh.

Lwazi: OK fine it did but it has that thing if you know what I mean. (he does that girlish wave and snaps his fingers.)

Andile: you sound like Ibanathi don't do that again it doesn't suit you.

Me: how are things between you two? You must bring him for a visit Khanyi misses him

Andile: He misses her too but with everything that has been going on it's been difficult for them to meet.

Me: maybe you can tell us why Eddie insisted on us coming here.

Andile: he didn't tell me either. He just said we would know when the time comes. Me: I'm hungry. Can we go to the kitchen.

Lwazi: we are stuck with another Khanyi here.

Bandile: he is better than you (we all laugh at his facial expression. There's a knock on the front door on our way to the kitchen and Bandile asks me to check it out. When I open the door and see who is in front of me a thought crosses my mind. I think I have just figured out what Eddie wants us to do. )



\*  
\*  
\*

ANDI

SWA

\*  
\*  
\*

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

My sister Amanda just arrived she wanted to come to my apartment so we can talk. Me: how are you?

Amanda: I am good and you?

Me: I am good. So what can I do for you?

Amanda: I want us to talk about your plan. Me: what about my plan?

Amanda: your plan is to hurt Ncesh which I understand but I need you to stay away from Bandile that one is mine.

Me: Oh sis' you don't have to worry about that. I'm not interested in him I'm more interested in his friend but Ncesh doesn't know that.

Amanda: I see. Why do you hate her so much? I mean she never did anything to you. Why all this.

Me: Everytime I look at her I see mom. She looks so much like mom and I can't help myself but hate her and make her suffer for mom's sins.

Amanda: have you ever tried to look at her and see her for who she really is and not your mom? Me: I have but it's hard. Why do you ask.

Amanda: Look Andiswa you are new in this family and I want you to understand that at the end of the day all you will be left with is your family. Those people are smart and their strength lies in their unity hence we are trying to

break the unity. We are your sisters and we are here for you and we don't hurt each other and we don't take from each other that's the rule we have as sisters you are going to have to learn to trust us. I don't really care why you want to hurt Ncebakazi and how you feel about her but I want you to remember that she is your sister and she has never done anything to hurt you and should anything happen to us you will be left with her. Sima and I we are not the killing people hence the plan doesn't involve killing anyone. Natasha is not really part of this plan because she is a killer just like you and I think you too will get along just fine. She is actually one of dad's assassins. Dad raised her and our mom raised us but kept us in boarding schools so that we don't end up in this life but if she could only see us now. Natasha's mom died while giving birth to her.

Me: I don't really care about Ncebakazi Amanda. I don't care if I'm left all alone in this world it wouldn't make a difference to me. I am who I am and that will never change. Where is your mom? Amanda: She died years ago.

Me: Oh I see. I was about to go pay my sister a visit care to tag along?

Amanda: Sure why not I get a chance to see my ex. Even though he banned from going to his house uninvited I can't resist the temptation besides I've never really listened to him. Let's go. (This Amanda chick is crazy she might be crazier than Sima. So Natasha is an assassin no wonder she keeps to herself. We get to the house and knock a guy I have never seen before opens the door. Who is he damn he is hot.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: BANDILE I THINK THE STRIPPERS YOU ORDERED ARE HERE!!! (he shouts while still standing at the door.) Come in ladies.

Bandile: I didn't order any str..... (he freezes when he sees us and looks at his friend and then us) Amanda what are you doing here and what are you doing with Ncesh's sister

Amanda: She is my sister too she wanted to introduce me. Bandile: didn't I tell you never to come here uninvited?

Me: Guys come on what's with the hostility

His friend: stay out of it if you know what's good for you.

(another guy walks in and it's Lwazi) Lwazi: Ladies! Oh Shit Amanda is that you?

Amanda: in the flash Lwazi. Qhawe how are you? She asks the guy that opened the door for us. (Oh so she knows them.)

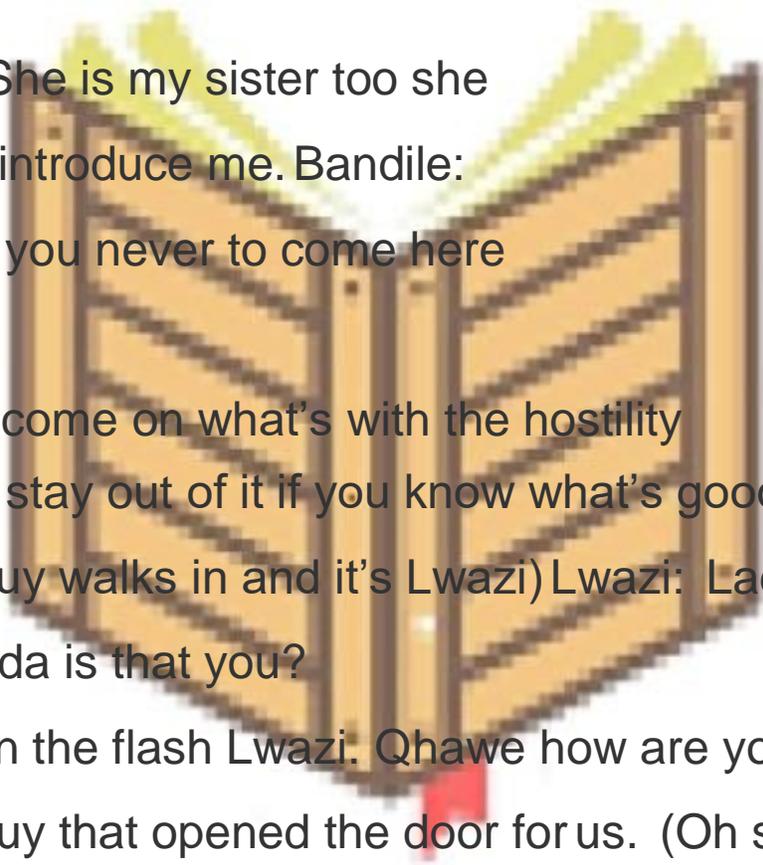
Me: You know them?

Amanda: Of cause I know them

they are friend with my ex. Me: oh

yes.

Lwazi: Drinks ladies li'll make something special for you.



NOVELSGURU.COM

(he winks at me and I swear I just blushed.)

\*  
\*  
\*

KHANY

ISILE

\*  
\*  
\*

Eddie: He is here. Just make sure you are comfortable I don't want you getting tired on me. Me: I won't be getting tired Eddie. I'll just be talking to the man.

Eddie: talking can be tiring.

Me: just stop it you being ridiculous. (One of the guards walks in with him) Eddie: have a sit.

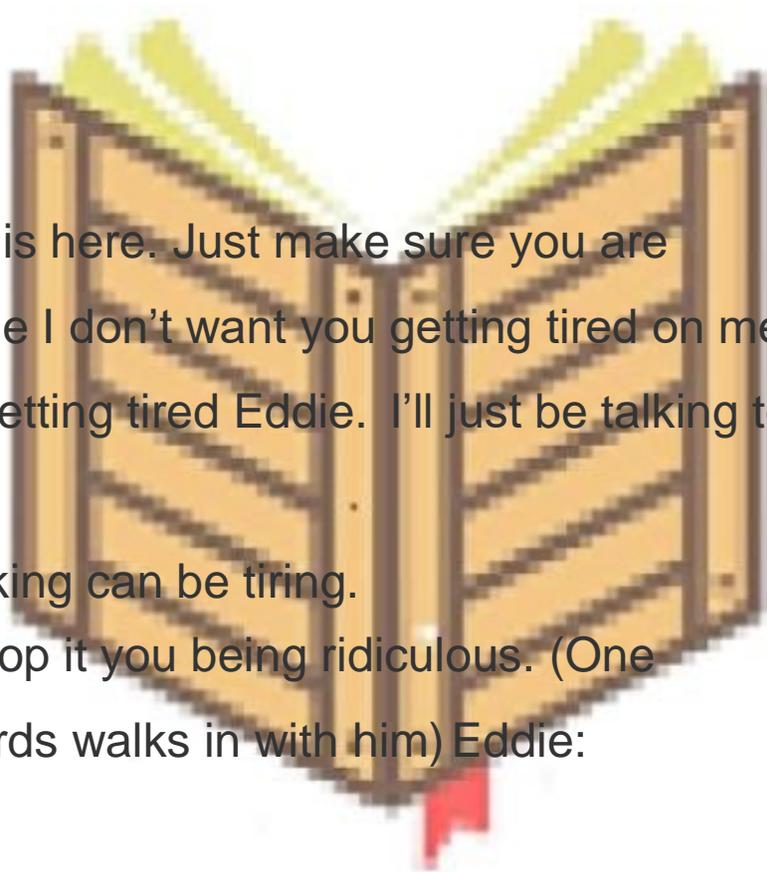
ME: Welcome to my home.

Mike: you have a beautiful. The security is impeccable.

You are really good at what you do Eddie. Me: thank you.

So why did I invite you to my house?

Mike: let's talk business. You have something I want and I am willing to pay you handsomely for it. Me: and what could



NOVELSGURU.COM

I have the Micheal Arendse could possibly want from me?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mike: The export company. I want to buy your shares and maybe you can convince your partnet to sell too.

Me: But we are not selling Mike. I'll speak for myself why would I want to sell my shares? I love that company and it's making good money.

Mike: I need it Khanyi and one way or the other you will sell to me.

Me: You know Zwelibanzi ended up in jail wanting the same company but we both know that's not all that you want from me. You know Mike I don't like it when people mess with my family to get to me

Sponsored

why would I want to sell my shares? I love that company and it's making good money. Mike: I need it Khanyi and one way or the other you will sell to me.

Me: You know Zwelibanzi ended up in jail wanting the same company but we both know that's not all that you want from me. You know Mike I don't like it when people mess with my family to get to me it annoys me to the core

it makes me do things I don't want to do. I am a peaceful person but I hate it when people disturb my peace.

Mike: Oh come on Khanyi you know they will end up in this life one way or the other.

Me: not if I have anything to do with it. the difference between you and me is that I would die protecting my family whereas you would kill them protecting yourself.

Are your daughters enjoying this life are you happy now that they are part of the family business. I'm sure they are doing you proud it's just a pity that they are not the sons you've always wanted. I know you've always wanted my sons to be part of this business I know you want them to replace their father in a few years and let me tell you that will never happen.

Mike: that's where you are wrong they will replace him one way or the other.

Me: then you don't know me very well. You will leave my kids alone Micheal or I will have Natasha's pretty little head served to me on a golden platter.

Mike: How did you know about Natasha. No knows she is my daughter.

Me: I always find out everything I can about my enemies. In as much as you like to pretend that they are not your

weakness I know they are and you were very happy when Sima and Amanda decided to join the family business but Natasha; Natasha is you pride her you would die for the other girls not so much. Finally father and daughters doing their things since you don't have sons. You are going to regret the day you decided to come after me. I know you've been after me for a while trying to get my boys. Now I know that Khaya being mixed up with the wrong crowd was your



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

doing. You took advantage of his vulnerability your plan worked for a while because I almost lost my son to your world and right now you hate the man that helped me save him. Get it through your thick skull Micheal you don't mess with my kids and live to tell the tale with a smile. The game you have started you will lose. Are you proud of little Andiswa you probably introduced her to the people that made her who she is today. What you thought I didn't know about her? I know everything there is to know about you Micheal. I know you and my ex-husband were partners. I know that you made a deal with him and in return he had to marry Sima and lucky for him he fell in love. I know you are keeping Sima's twins from visiting me and you guys used the visits to spy on us. I found a nanny cam in one of the teddies the twins left behind during their last visit. At that time I thought nothing of it. but when I found out that you were helping Sima I put two and two together and guess what I got FOUR and that's why you are sitting here. You are not sitting here because you wanted to. You are sitting here because I wanted you here. Eddie I'm hungry I think we should move this meeting to the kitchen.

Eddie: Let's go let me help you up. what do you feel like eating?

Me: I'm not sure we'll see when we get to the kitchen.

Micheal are you coming dear? Are you ok? You look like you've seen a ghost you've gone pale.

Eddie: I think he is in shock he wasn't aware you knew so much about him. I'm sure he'll be ok. Me: Would you like something to eat Micheal? Eddie here makes a very delicious toasted cheese and tomato sandwich.

Mike: No I'm fine. How did you know all this.

Eddie: the same way you know about her. (Mike looks at me and I just raise my eyebrow and shrug)

Me: After we finish eating there's something I want to show but in the mean time I want you to tell me why you thought Nkosikhona was ideal for the kidnapping.

Mike: He was not really ideal but I played into his desperation. He was going to do the ceremony after that he would hand the kids to me. I didn't count on you finding them so quick.

Me: Thanks to his wife we able to get there in time. Eddie can you please put some water in the sink for me. Mike I need your phone your watch your bracelet and your chain please.

Eddie: don't forget

the wallet. Mike:

Why?

Me: don't play dumb with me you know why. Let's make it quick we are running out of time and your belt too. (he gives me everything and I take it and put it in the sink that Eddie filled with water.) now we have all the time in the world. You see Mike I know that if you don't check in with



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

your guys in three hours they will start looking for you. Are we good or are we good? What do you think Eddie?

Eddie: We are the best. (he puts his hand up for a high five.) Here eat up we still have a lot to do. Me: we know that Nkosikhona works for you Mike he launders money for you same thing Sima is doing for you. Her accounting firm does that for you. Just like Andiswa's mother but she didn't know and when she found she told the police and soon after she died with her husband in a car accident how unfortunate. I wonder how Andiswa would feel about you if she found out you killed her mother. In fact I wonder how they all would feel about you if they knew you killed their mothers. Your first three daughters do they even know they share the same mother. You see Mike when you die it won't be by my hand or any of my family members your daughters will kill you when they find out what you did you trained them after all I'm sure the lawyer knows she is just playing your game waiting for the right moment to strike. Come with me I want to show you something.

Mike: Where are we going?

Me: Just my basement I want to show you my new toys.

(when we get to the basement he couldn't believe his eyes.)

Mike: WHAT HAVE YOU DONE???

ME: Me? This is not my doing Mike. This all your doing

darling. Please have a sit I don't want you fainting on me.

STILL MONDAY

\*

\*

\*

KHANY

ISILE

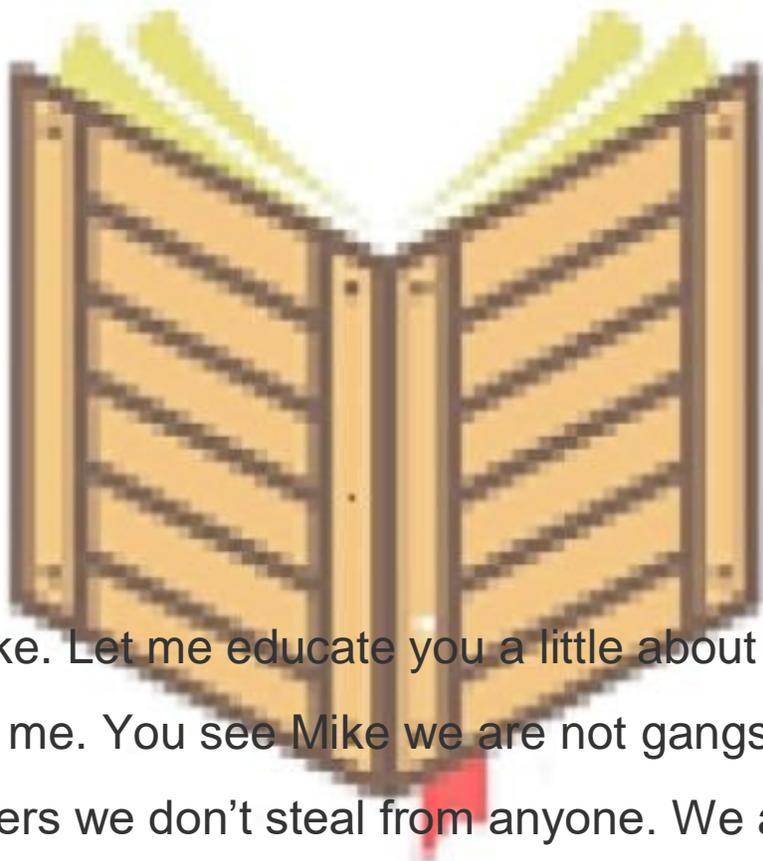
\*

\*

\*

Me: Sit Mike. Let me educate you a little about my little family and me. You see Mike we are not gangsters we are not killers we don't steal from anyone. We are just a normal family with money and we don't go around flashing our money and we let our money work for us.

You are here because I used the money I have to get you here. We all have legit businesses Mike we earn honest money and we work hard for it. Being the people we are we protect each other we protect the family we have and



NOVELSGURU.COM

no matter what comes at us we always stand together.  
So today you have



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

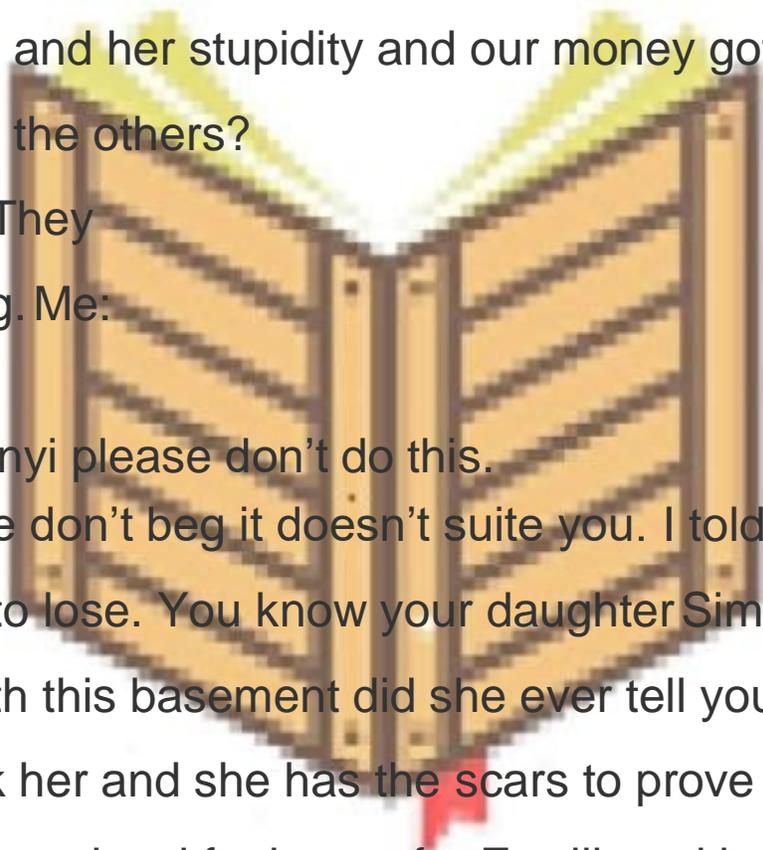
just learned that you messed with the wrong family. By the way meet my lawyer Luyanda and Sipho the PI I think you already know him since your daughter used him to get info on one of us. Are you grasping how this works Mike. We knew about your daughter Andiswa when she got out because she was stupid enough to want to check on Ncebakazi and her stupidity and our money got you here. Where are the others?

Luyanda: They are coming. Me:

Good.

Mike: Khanyi please don't do this.

Me: Please don't beg it doesn't suite you. I told you you are going to lose. You know your daughter Sima is very familiar with this basement did she ever tell you. You should ask her and she has the scars to prove it. you are going down today. i feel sorry for Zwelibanzi because he has no idea of what's going on and now he is going lose his protection in jail and he might die because of you since you were the one helping him to stay safe and now you are about to die. Oh well it might not be now but you will die eventually.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Luyanda: You know for someone who is suppose to be dangerous it was very easy to get you and you had a lot of loose ends in all that you did. It was tough at first but when Sipho broke through the first wall it was easy and it's all thanks to Andiswa. I really do feel sorry for you.

Nkosikhona is going to tell the police everything he knows about you and Sima. He made a deal with them. He turned state witness in return for immunity or a shorter jail sentence.

Me: If you had told Zwelibanzi about your plan you wouldn't be here he would have warned you against it. As for Sima she is a certified idiot. Here's what's going to happen Sima's twins are going to stay with their grandmother that's Zwelibanzi's mother. You are going to transfere money into her account that she is going to use to take care of the twins and pay for the nanny. You are going to make sure that Sima makes her the legal guardian for the twins. All legal documents pertaining to the twins she will hand them over to the grandmother. I would them myself but as you can see I am expecting my own.

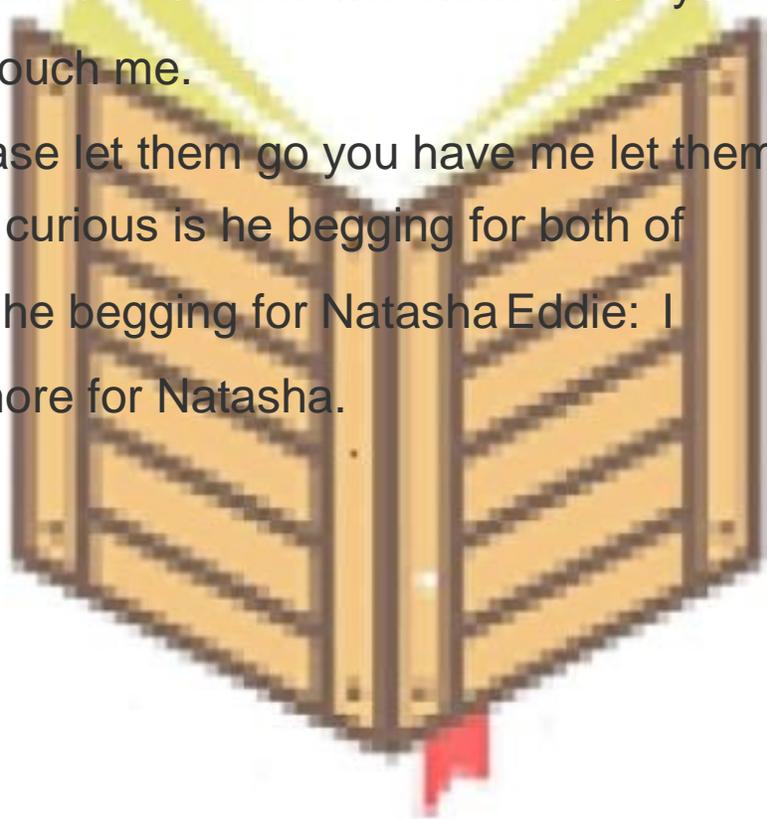
Mike: don't take her kids away from her she lives for those

kids

Me: how exactly is she living for those kids when she is going around trying to kill people and now she is going to jail she won't get off that easy this time. Amanda's kids are old they are grown they will get over their mother's arrest at some point. Look at them Mike this is all your fault. You should have left me alone when you were told you can't touch me.

Mike: Please let them go you have me let them go please.

Sipho: I'm curious is he begging for both of them or is he begging for Natasha Eddie: I think it's more for Natasha.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mike: What have you done to them?

Me: nothing yet they are just asleep. They should be awake soon I'm sure they will be happy to see you. We are going to have so much fun when they wake up.

\*

\*

\*

ANDI

SWA

\*

\*

\*

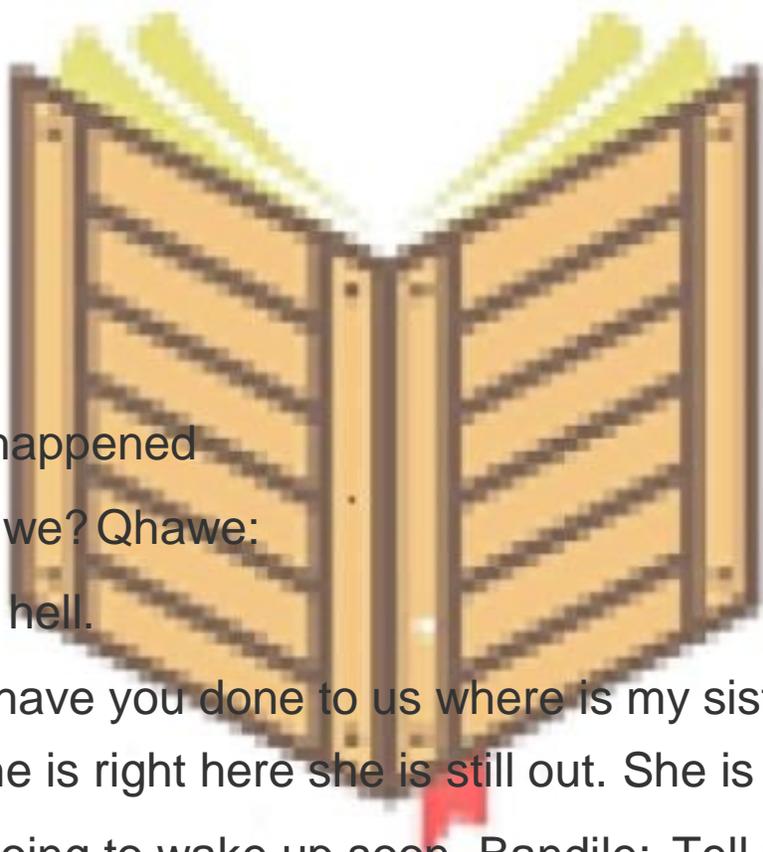
Me: what happened  
where are we? Qhawe:  
You are in hell.

Me: what have you done to us where is my sister?

Qhawe: she is right here she is still out. She is probably going to wake up soon. Bandile: Tell me

my dear sister in law did you really think your plan was going to work?

Lwazi: Never mind her plan did she really think I would fall for her no wait did she really think I would sleep with her.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How did you know about my plan?

Andile: I think the special cocktail is making her slow.

Should I tell her or do you guys want to do it? Qhawe: go ahead do it I want to see her reaction oh wait I think the lawyer is waking up.

Bandile: Hello sunshine

are you feeling ok.

Amanda: What happened

Sponsored

where am i?

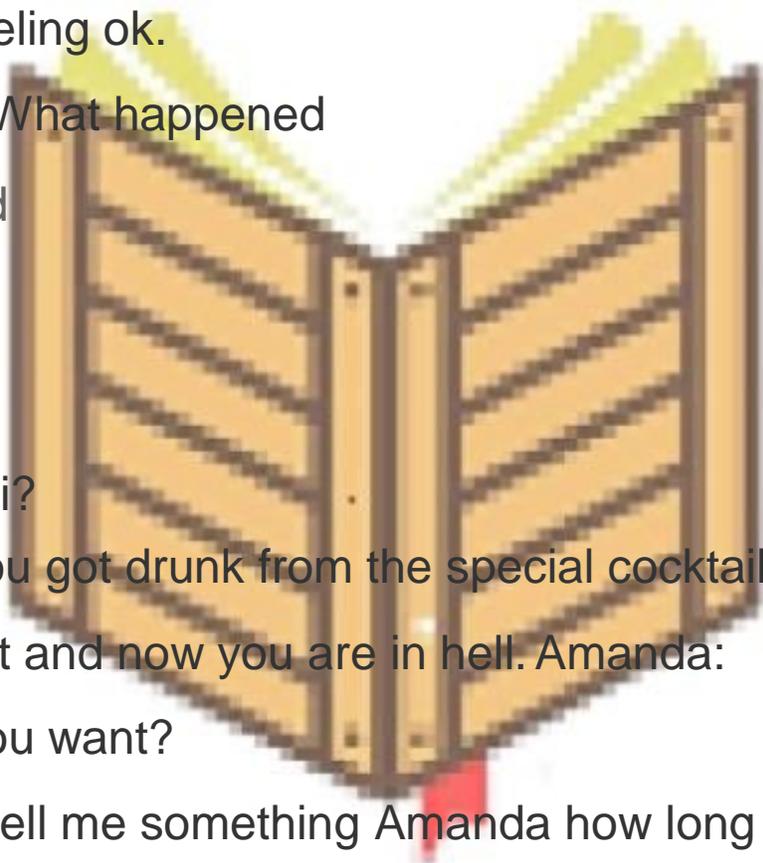
Qhawe: you got drunk from the special cocktail passed out and now you are in hell. Amanda:

what do you want?

Bandile: Tell me something Amanda how long have you been working for Zwelibanzi Tom? Amanda: How did you know about that?

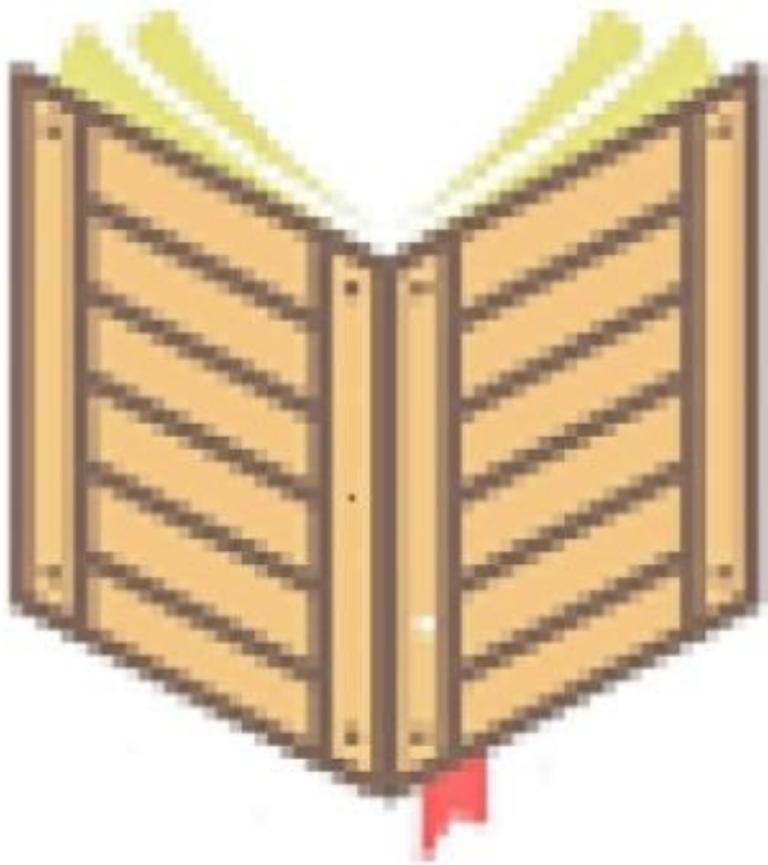
Bandile: I didn't you just confirmed it. All this time that we were together I didn't even notice. Amanda: You noticed but I was able to convince you otherwise.

Me: How did you know



NOVELSGURU.COM

about the plan? Amanda:  
You know about the plan?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Andile: you got out of the mental institution and you called your sister. She was so scared that she had to tell us the horrible things that you did to her and from there on we've been keeping tabs on you watching your every move.

Me: All this time she knew and she was pretending to be scared

Bandile: that's the thing she was not pretending she is scared of you and that played well for us because it boosted your ego. From the day you landed in Durban we've been watching you. We knew someone was making you their puppet and we did our own little investigation and found out about your sisters and your father. We knew about them before you did.

Qhawe: did you guys really think you could break us.

Come let's go. Luyanda is waiting for us in the basement. (they walk us through this beautiful to the basement and I can't believe my eyes.) Me: You what

are you doing here?

Sipho: Hello to you too darling. I work here.

Me: what are you doing with

him? Dad are you ok? Mike:

I'm fine are you guys ok?

Amanda: We are fine.

Khanyi: You can kill me later (she says that

hugging and kissing Qhawe) Qhawe: I

definitely will. You should have told me

Khanyi: if I did it wouldn't have worked

you would have tried to stop me. Qhawe:

are you guys ok have you eaten. I feel

hungry

Khanyi: Don't worry so much we are fine.

Luyanda is making us something to eat. Amanda:

can you stop with all this mooshy stuff. What

have you done to my sisters

Khanyi: Your sister are fine they'll wake up soon. Please

take your seats and it's time to have fun. Mike: what do

you mean?

Khanyi: You are going answer every question I ask and I

had better like the answer or else you get electricuted.

Me: You can't do that to him.

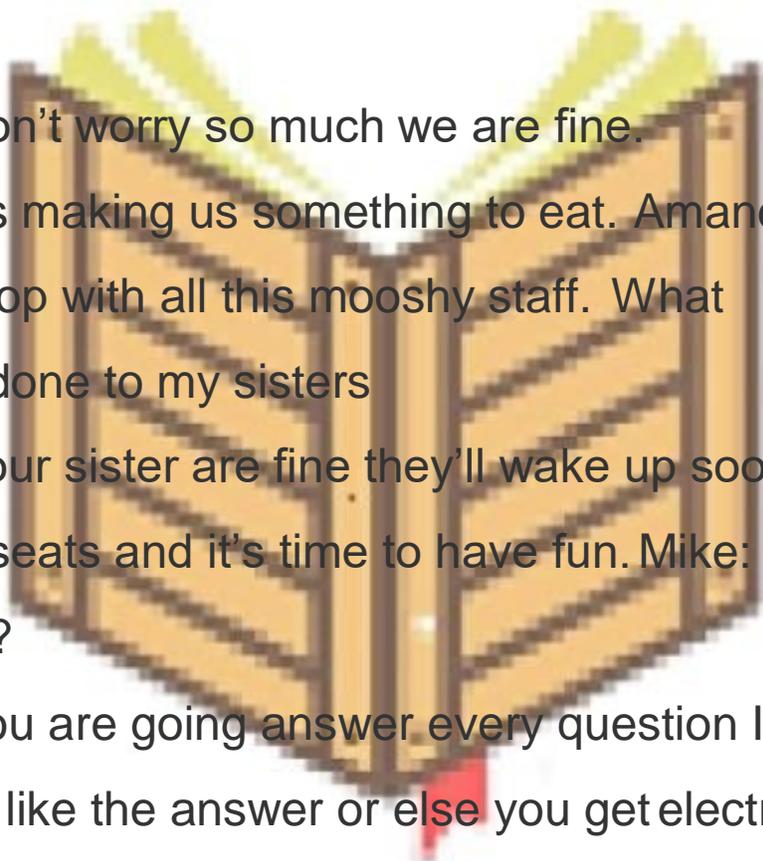
Qhawe: should we do it to you (I stay quiet and look

away) I thought so. (some other guy walks in with food

Khanyi takes the bowl and sits in front my dad holding

some kind of remote that she puts on her thighs as she

eats.)



NOVELSGURU.COM

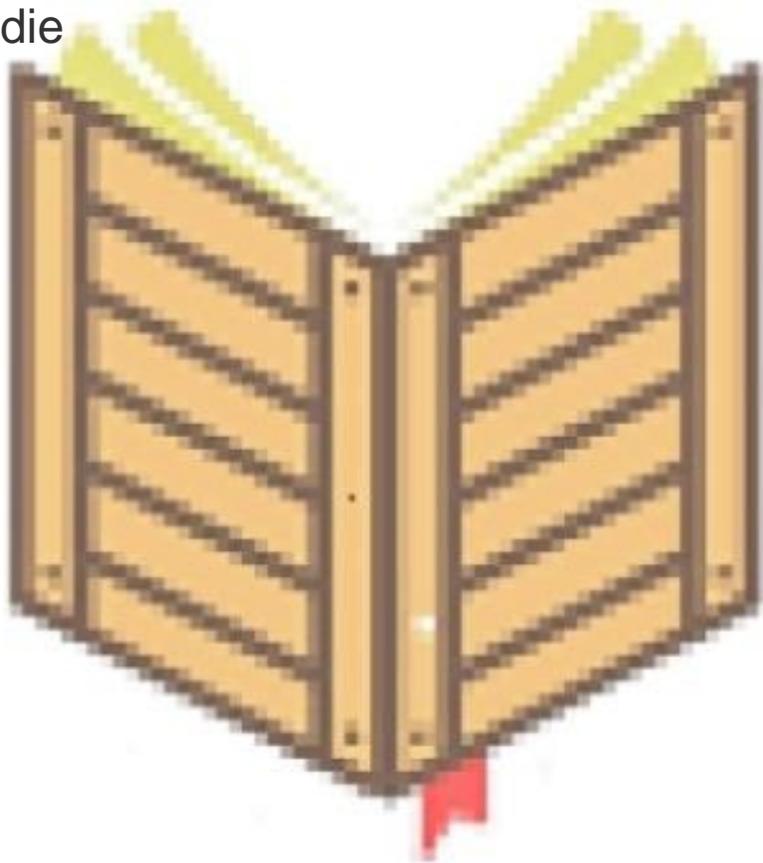
Khanyi: Why do you want my company Mike?

Mike: I need the money it makes. (she takes the remote and presses it and he screams in agony and that wakes my other sisters.)

Natasha: what's going on

why are we tied up? Lwazi:

Quiet Blondie



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: why do you want my company Mike? (She hands the remote to the guy standing next to her as carries on eating)

Mike: I need the money it makes (she takes the remote and presses it again and dad screams in pain again.)

Natasha: STOP IT YOU ARE HURTING HIM!!! I SWEAR I AM GOING TO KILL YOU

Lwazi: I said quiet blondie or you are going to get your own special chair. (he's calling her blondie because of her blond hair)

Khanyi: One more time. Why do you want my company Mike?

Mike: I need the money it makes (she presses the button again. Why doesn't he tell her what she wants to know he screams again)

Amanda: JUST STOP IT I'll tell you what you need to know.

Eddie: How sweet daughter coming to daddy's rescue. Do they know? Khanyi:

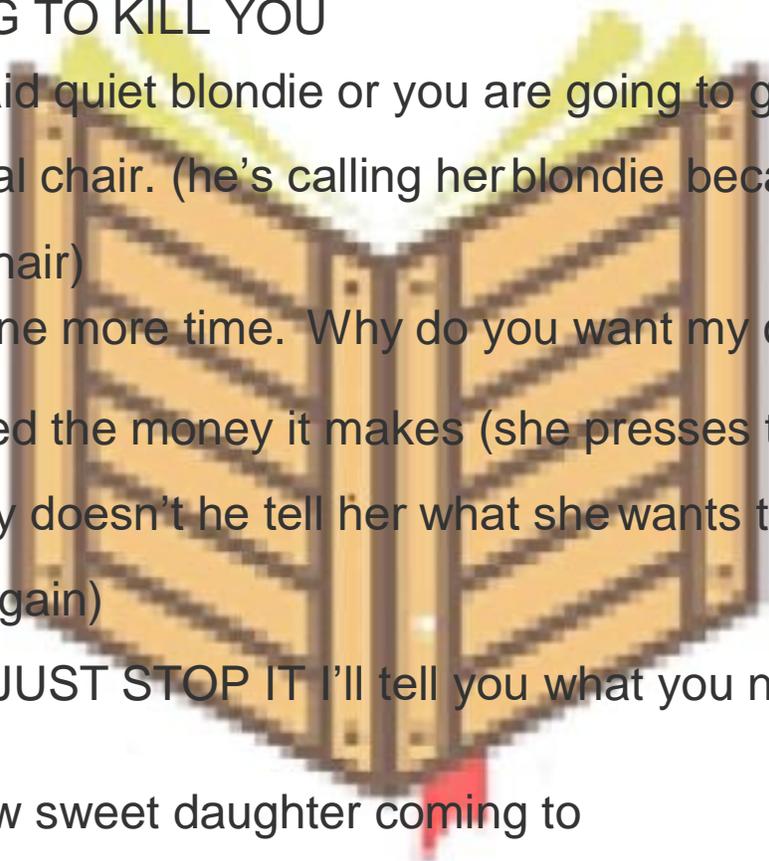
Not yet.

Sipho: should I tell them I

want to tell them Khanyi:

not yet Sipho. Amanda I'm

listening



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: Same reason Zwelibanzi wanted the company.

Khanyi: Oh and you girls were in on that damn you really are your father's daughters. Mike how many companies do have registered under my sons' names?

Mike: why would you think that (she presses the remote again) Sima:

Khanyi please stop this you are hurting him.

Khanyi: it was ok for you guys to hurt my family to traumatise my kids it was ok for you to do that you know what one of you is going to take his place since you feel sorry for him. Blondie is up next. Eddie please do the honors. (the Eddie guy takes my sister and puts her on the chair dad was sitting on and he puts him on her chair.) How many companies are registered in my sons' names Sima: Khanyi please don't do this

Khanyi: I don't like the answer (she presses the button again and she screams so loud she is in so much pain) I think you should tell them Siphho.

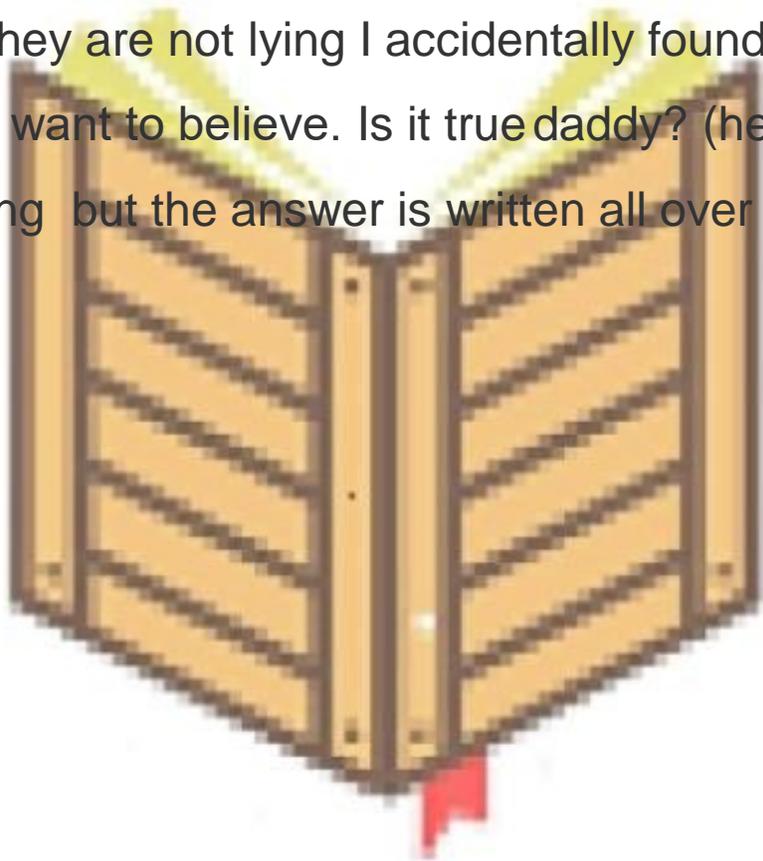
Siphho: I'm so excited. Andiswa you don't have a mother because her accident was not an accident your father killed

her for you three it's unfortunate that you didn't know you share the same

mother. She was killed after giving birth to Natasha and that was your father's doing.

Natasha: You are lying daddy please tell us they are lying

Amanda: they are not lying I accidentally found out about but I didn't want to believe. Is it true daddy? (he doesn't say anything but the answer is written all over his face.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: why? You better pray that the crazy pregnant woman kills us otherwise I swear I am going to kill you.

Qhawe: HEY! Don't ever in your entire existence call my wife crazy do we understand each other? Me: Yes

Khanyi: How many companies are in my sons' names? (she is about to press the button when Amanda speaks)

Amanda: three companies. (she presses the button and Natasha screams again in pain) I gave you an answer.

Khanyi: so what? I like this remote.

## CHAPTER 104

### STILL IN THE BASEMENT

\*

\*

\*

QHA

WE

\*

\*

\*

Me: I think my little Boovs have been exposed to this nonsense enough now.

Khanyi: are you kidding me. Your babies are enjoying

every minute of this. Come give me your hand. They've been moving around for a while now.

Me: Yhooo I'm defeated.

Khanyi: next time don't use the babies it's obvious they will betray you. Me: I can see that.

Khanyi: we would like some ice cream though

Lwazi: hayi Khanyi you are eating too much ice cream now. Khanyi: hayibo it's not me it's them (I say pointing to my stomach) Me: Baby no you can't blame my babies.

Khanyi: Who should I blame You? This is your fault Qhawe. I look like an elephant right now because of you in no time I won't even be able to see my feet bath myself or get out of bed and you know why because of you.

Me: You weren't complaining

Khanyi: don't give me that you didn't have to make me pregnant. (she is on the verge of crying but she is holding her tears)

Lwazi: Ok guys how did we get here she was all having fun with her new remote just now and Qhawe you just managed to make her cry. NO man. Mama bear come hear. (she gets up and walks to Lwazi who hugs her tight shushing her. I am so defeated. I have no words.) Do you want me to punch him for you? (she nods while sniffing on Lwazi's chest. He looks at me smiles and he is holding in his laughter just like the rest of the guys) if she cries again because of you I'll punch in the face.

Me: kanti what did I do?

Bandile: You still asking. Calm down Mama bear we'll get you your Ice cream (I was about to say something) Open your mouth again we are going to let her shoot you. (I kept quiet immediately) Siphon: how did we get here angisatholi kahle mina manje (I don't understand)

Eddie: Just leave it.

Sima: Khanyi you had my husband arrested you took him away from me and now you are here enjoying your life with your man he is here with you and your kids and my

husband can't even see his kids. (I don't know how she moved from Lwazi to slapping Sima) Ouch!!

Khanyi: Why are you making your problems my problems. Am I the one who said your husband should be a criminal am I the one who said he should start shit with me. You are turning yourselves into criminals and you have the balls to blame me for the consequences (she slaps her again.) Why is it ok for you guys to toy with me toy with my kids and toy with my family and when it's my turn to have a little fun with you I'm the bad guy honestly that's not fair. (she wants to cry now. what happened to her why is she emotional all of a sudden.) Please remove Blondie from the chair and put this one on it. my fingers are twitching to press the button on my remote. In the mean time I'll go get myself some ice cream in the kitchen. (she looks at me and shakes her head as she walks away.)

Me: ok someone needs to tell me what I did.

Eddie: you guys ganged up on her for having too much ice cream and you were the unlucky person that she lashed out on plus that's your seed.

Andiswa: this is madness she has what she wants why are we still here

Andile: and what gave the idea that we have everything we need from your family? Free piece of advice “Shut up”

Eddie: Mike time for you to make the transfere and tell your daughter that if she wants to live she needs to sign the guardianship document that Luyanda is preparing or else pretty little Natasha



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

loses her head or maybe the lawyer I can't seem to decide since you care more about them than you do the other two.

Mike: Please just let my daughters go. I brought them into this this was my plan please just let them go.

Eddie: You really didn't think that things will end like this did you? Mike:

Honestly no I didn't.

Eddie: We are not killing you we just handing you to the police

Andiswa: Why did you kill them Mike? (he looks at her for a while maybe thinking of what to say) Mike: because they didn't want me to be a part of your lives they were keeping you guys away from me and I hated that.

Andiswa: would it have been so bad for us to grow up and live a normal clean life just like they wanted and you had to kill them because they wanted the best for us?

Natasha: so what if he killed them

Sponsored

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

just like they wanted and you had to kill them

because they wanted the best for us? Natasha: so

what if he killed them we were bound to turn out like him anyway his blood runs through ours veins he would have found a way to bring us into this life.

Andiswa: You might be my father and all but you will pay for killing her. (Khanyi walks in with a bowl full of ice cream and now I'm craving it.)

Me: Do you want to share? (she looks at me and smiles and takes a spoon out of her pocket and gives it to me. This is why I love this woman. I take it pull a chair and sit next to her eating the ice cream)

Sipho: wasn't he just on her case about having too much ice cream?

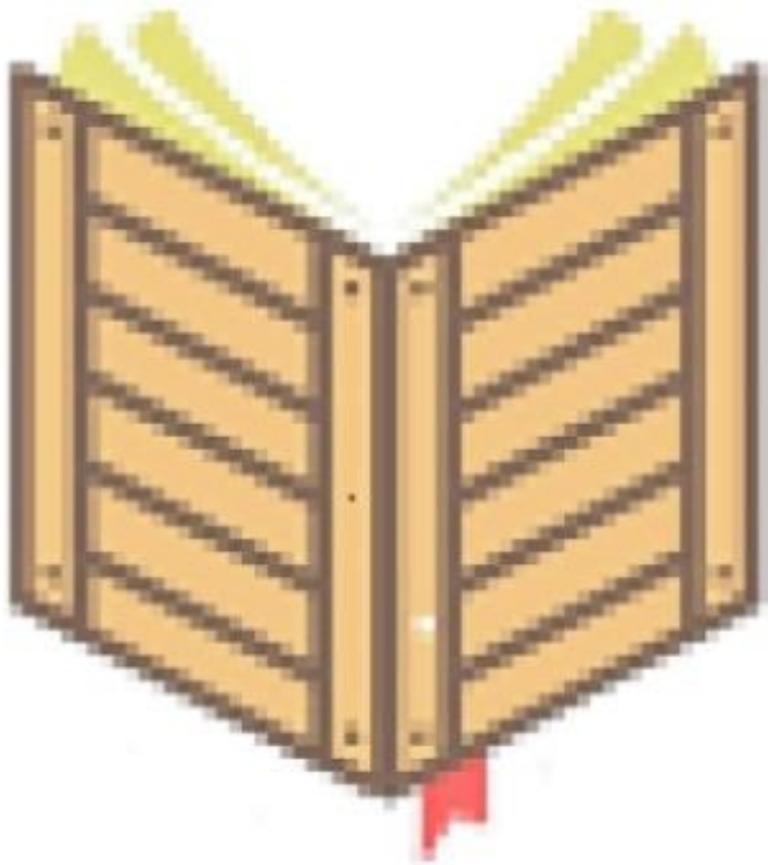
Lwazi: Jonga Sipho if ufuna ukuphila sukuyingena mfo ka bawo. (Look Sipho if you want to stay alive don't get involved.)

Andile: I give up.

Khanyi: Amanda as your father's lawyer you going to co-sign the documents that Luyanda is going to prepare for me transferring the three businesses to me.

Amanda: I'm not doing that. (she takes the remote without warning and presses the button making Sima scream like a mad woman.)

Sima: DAMMIT AMANDA JUT DO IT!!!



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Mike: do it Amanda. (Khanyi lifts her hand that has the remote and presses the button again looking at Amanda. Sima's screams are deafning)

Andiswa:

AMANDA!!!

Amanda:

fine I'll do it.

Andiswa: what are you going to do with those companies?

Khanyi: None of your business on second thought. I am going to use them the help the needy. I don't that money I might as well spend it on people who need it. I am going to turn one of the companies into a skills center. Are you happy now?

Andiswa: yeah

Khanyi: Good I'll pay you a visit in prison for you to sign the documents Amanda. Sima: khanyi please don't do this my babies need me.

Khanyi: You should have thought about that before messing with me the second time. I let you off easy the last time because of them and now I have a contingency plan for them and they will grow up happy without you and if at some point you all use those kids to get revenge on

me I'll sell you to be sex slaves. Eddie did you call Nxele?

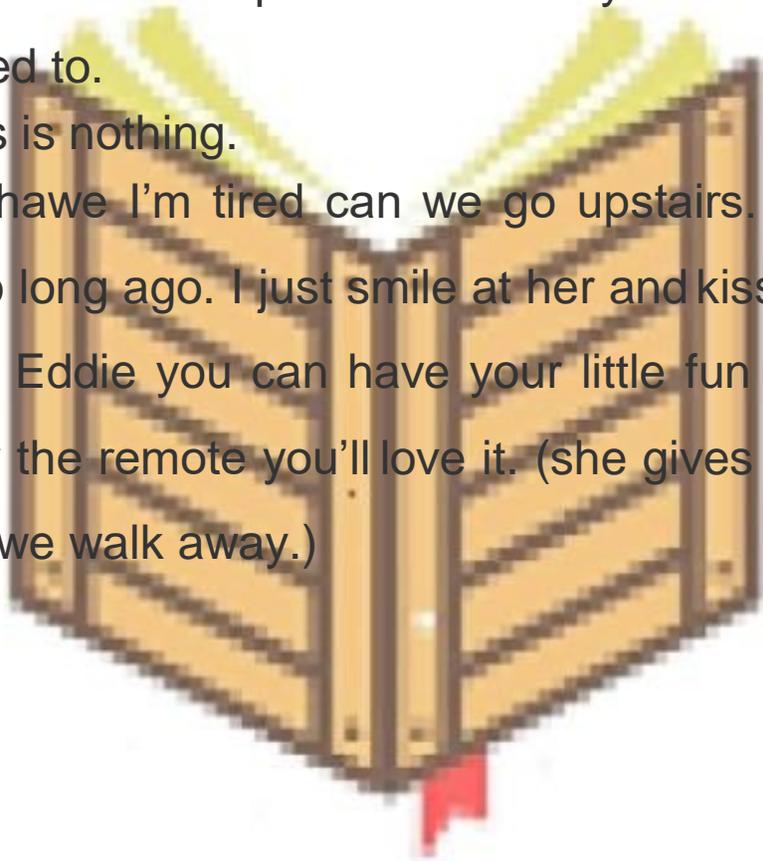
Eddie: I did. He'll be here .

Andile: we need to have them upstairs before he gets here  
Nxele can't see all this.

Sipho: you guys are hardcore I have never seen people  
who protect their own the way you guys do. I must say I  
am grateful I was accepted in this family. It's taking some  
getting used to.

Eddie: this is nothing.

Khanyi: Qhawe I'm tired can we go upstairs. (she hated  
me not too long ago. I just smile at her and kissed her fore  
head.) Oh Eddie you can have your little fun I know you  
want to try the remote you'll love it. (she gives Eddie a big  
smile and we walk away.)



\*

\*

\*

ED

NOVELSGURU.COM

DIE

\*

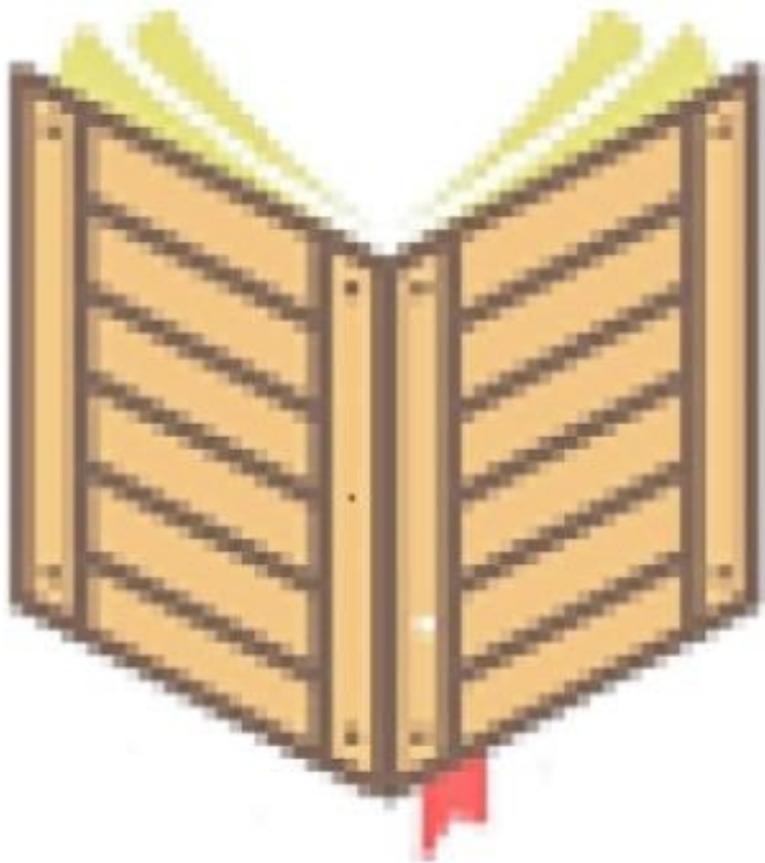
\*

\*

Me: how are you

Det. Nxele: I'm good and how are you?

Me: I'm good. Have you spoken to your colleague Malusi Jaxa?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Det. Nxele: yes I have and where are the people I'm suppose to arrest? (I take him to the lounge) why do they look like this?

Me: Ask no questions hear no lies Detective.

Det.Nxele: that is true but it's my job to ask questions but when it comes to guys I never seem to get the answers I need when it comes to my suspects.

Me: Even if that may be so you are going to be closing another big case because of us.

Det. Nxele: that is correct. Where is Khanyi may I see her before I leave with these people and you say this a father and his daughters?

Me: that is correct. I'll get Khanyi for you. (i just stand at the bottom of the stairs and call for her.) They first kidnapped Khanyi's eldest kids and they were trying to get to Khanyi by hurting some of us you know all this already. If they decide to press charges against us then they'll lose. We did whatever we did to them in self defence. That's basically it.

Det. Nxele: I doubt they will. The laste one didn't he was shit scared of you guys.

Khanyi: Detective how are you? (she walks over to him and gives him a hug which surprises the detective and we are

not surprised with Qhawe following behind her.)

Det. Nxele: I'm good and you are very pregnant and I was hoping to steal you from your man and make you mine.

Khanyi: not chance Det. Nxele. Not a chance. (he just gives her a warm smile.)

Det. Nxele: Looks like you guys did it again. I should consider making you my consultants for my big cases.

Qhawe: Actually Eddie here was thinking of putting a proposal for something like with the SAPS. Det. Nxele: is that so we should definitely talk about it then. I can set up a meeting with the commissioner.

Me: I would appreciate that.

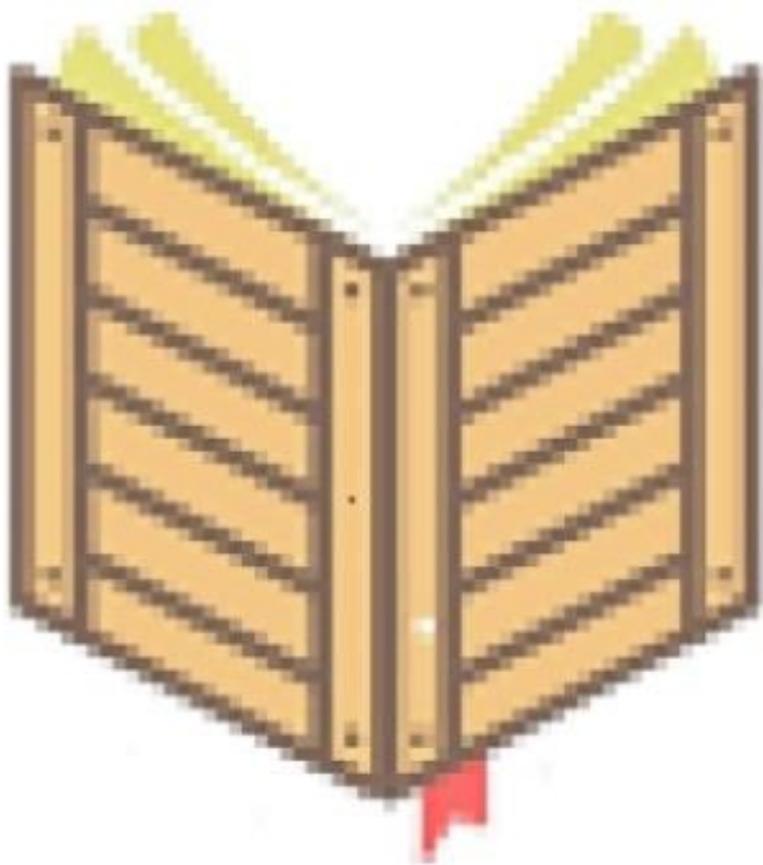
Det. Nxele: So none of you are going to tell me what happened to these guys (he asks pointing at the little family we just tortured.)

Khanyi: what do you mean? They look fine to me. Don't be ridiculous Detective. (he just smiles at that comment and a couple of uniformed police walk in and he instructs them to take the girls and their father.)

Me: They will tell you everthing you need to know. Det. Nxele: why am I not surprised. (Lwazi walks in) Lwazi: Oh Detective

you are here.

Det. Nxele: Ahh the crazy one is here too.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwazi: no man why do I have to be the crazy one now.  
You know what I was I going to invite you over for lunch  
this weekend you can forget it.

Det. Nxele: I was just playing man. Why do you have to be  
so sensitive.

Lwazi: You can blame it on her. (he says pointing at  
Khanyi. Yhooo and her eyes became teary immediately and  
she pouted and looked at Qhawe.)

Khanyi: You see everyone is blaming me for their emotions  
(her voice is breaking and the tears are falling. Oh my God  
Lwazi why? why?) this is all your fault Qhawe they hate me  
because of

you. (just then Bandile shows up and she runs to him and  
cry on his chest. Bandile looks at us with a questioning  
look while trying to calm the crying Khanyi)

Det. Nxele: what just happened? (looking very confused)

Bandile: Kanti nina why nimkhalisa u Khanyi namhlanje  
hayi mani. (why are you making Khanyi cry today no man)  
this is not on.

Me: It's Lwazi

Qhawe: Someone please tell me what I did wrong right  
now.

Andile: You made her pregnant. (come Mama bear let

me take you upstairs. She let's go of Bandile turns to look at me and Lwazi clicks her tongue and walks upstairs with Andile.)

Det. Nxele: that's not the Khanyi I met last year.

Lwazi: She's pregnant that's all I'm saying otherwise I'll find myself without a family.

Det. Nxele: I better go before I find myself losing a friend.

Thanks again guys hope that next time we'll work together.

Me: Hopefully so Det. Nxele. I'll be waiting for your call. (he walks out leaving us to clean up the house.)

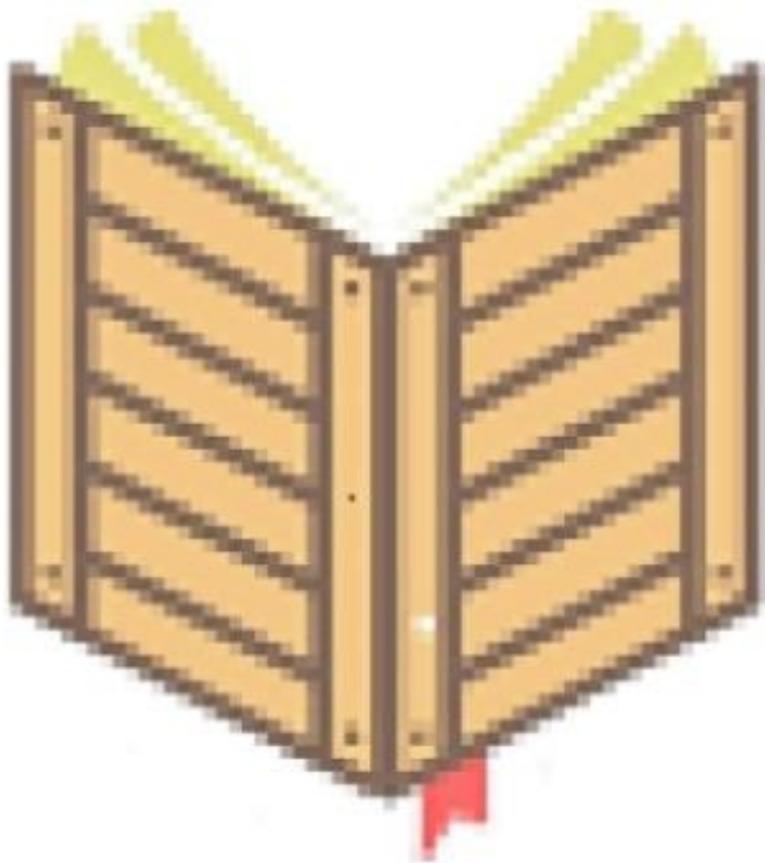
## CHAPTER 105

A MONTH LATER

\*  
\*  
\*

Micheal Arendse and Andiswa were sentenced to life in prison Sima and Nkosikhona got 15 years for money laundering and kidnapping. Natasha was sentenced to life as well for multiple murders she confessed to killing 4 people under her father's instructions. Amanda was stripped of her license to practise as a lawyer. She was

also sentenced to 20 years being an accessory to murder and kidnapping also for money laundering. Zwelibanzi is still living a comfortable life in jail he has found



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

his own way. Zwelibanzi asked to see the kids for his birthday and they went to visit him but Qhawe stayed behind this time.

\*\*\*\*\*

Zwelibanzi: You guys look good.

Lonwabo: You don't look too bad yourself

Zwelibanzi: Your mom is really doing a great job with you guys.

Ntando: yes she is. We try not to be difficult kids under the circumstances.

Lwanele: We got you something for your birthday

(Lwanele gave him a framed picture of the three of them with the twins. )

Lonwabo: Look at the back. (there was something written on it. "Trying to do better is better than not trying at all.")

Zwelibanzi: Khanyi you are really doing a great job with them. I wish I had been a better

father. Thank you so much for this and I really do hope that one day you will find it in your hearts to forgive me.

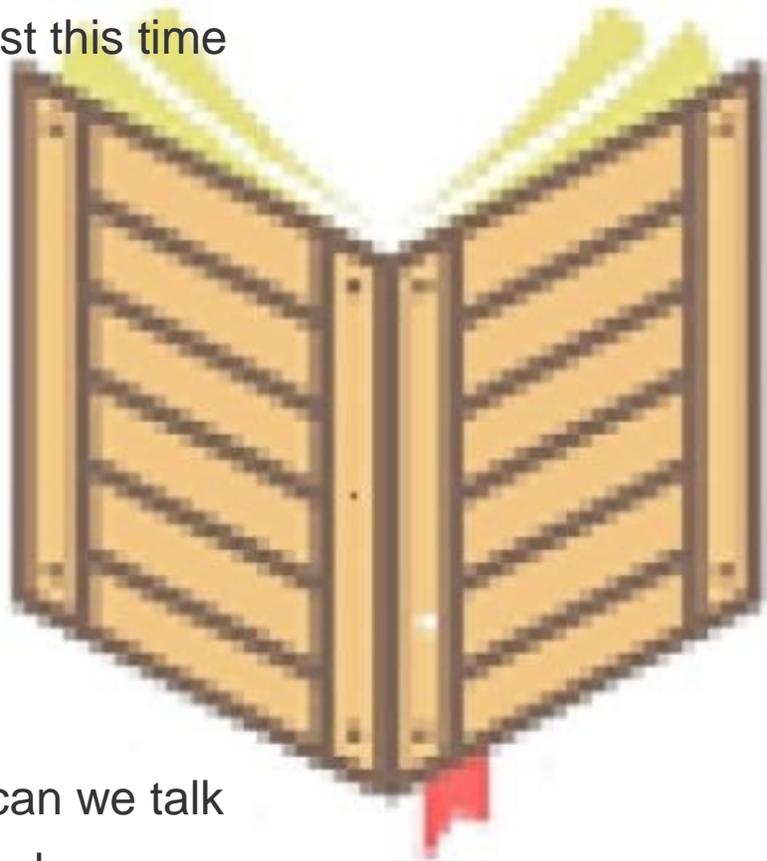
Lonwabo: we hope that picture will give you motivation to do better and yes maybe someday we will forgive you.

Happy birthday Banzi

Zwelibanzi: thank you.

\*\*\*\*\*

When they left that day and Zwelibanzi went back to his cell he couldn't help but let his tears fall. He knows how he has hurt them and how much he is missing out. Not listening to his father is something he will always regret. Everything has been going great for everyone they have been very happy but is their peace and happiness going to last this time



\*

\*

\*

KH

AYA

\*

\*

\*

ME: Dad can we talk

Qhawe: yeah sure

what's going on? Me:

it's about the lobola

negotiations

NOVELSGURU.COM

Qhawe: ok. What's on your mind?

Me: I would like us to prepare to go to the Eastern at the End of this month. You do know that uncle Luyanda is going to the Eastern Cape this weekend with Lungi to introduce her to the family and let them know that we will be coming. I would like you to send a letter to uncle Luyanda before he leaves giving him the date of when we will be going there so that they can discuss it when he is there.

Qhawe: You really have grown from the first time I met you. Who would have thought I would be your dad today and getting ready to marry you off to my friend's daughter. (we both laugh at that.) ok I'll send the letter to Luyanda. Who do you want to be part of the negotiations. Bare in my mind that your uncles are crazy and very protective of you.

Me: I was hoping you would choose them yourself or they can all go. I don't want to have some of them feeling left out. Mom can actually help with the choosing where is she?

Qhawe: Your mom doesn't like me very much today. Me: What

did you do?

Qhawe: honestly I have no idea. Lwazi has a tendency of saying things and I end being blamed.. Today is one of those days.

Me: am I going to have to go through this with Lungi?

Qhawe: maybe not. Pregnancies are not the same. She is eight months pregnant and she can give birth anytime I don't think she is going to make it to nine months. We even had to move our bedroom downstairs. So you can imagine why she doesn't like me. (my phone rings interrupting us and It's Lungi)

ME: Excuse me dad it's the wife to be. (he just smiles at me) Hello babe Lungi: My Lollipop how are you?

Me: good baby and you

Lungi: I'm good. Don't forget to pick up from work I'm almost done.

Me: I'm on my way. I just had a conversation with dad about the Lobolo negotiations Lungi: we'll talk about it when you are here. I love you see you soon.

Me: I love you too.

Qhawe: How are things between her and her mom.

Me: they are I still rocky she is finding it hard to forgive her and I understand how she feels she just needs time. Her and her dad are doing good though their relationship is working out.

Qhawe: Always stand by her and don't push her too hard to forgive her mom she will do that in her own time it has to come from her she must not be forced.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I hear you dad. Let me go otherwise she'll kill me if I'm late. I'll see you guys later. Go check on mom maybe she is ok now. (with that said I leave.)

\*

\*

\*

QHA

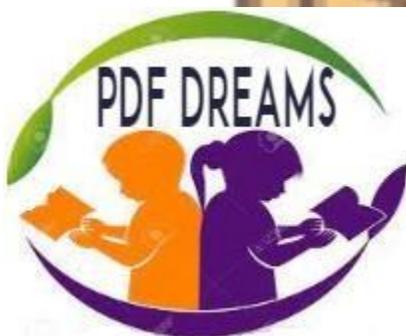
WE

\*

\*

\*\

Enjoy lot of African new novels click on image that mention below.



**Today  
eBooks**

You know I am going to ban Lwazi from talking to Khanyi because he always gets me into trouble. One minute she likes me and the next she doesn't. I can't keep up so I just let her be. I thought my food cravings would have stopped by now but they are still the same and we always crave the same things. Let me go check

NOVELSGURU.COM

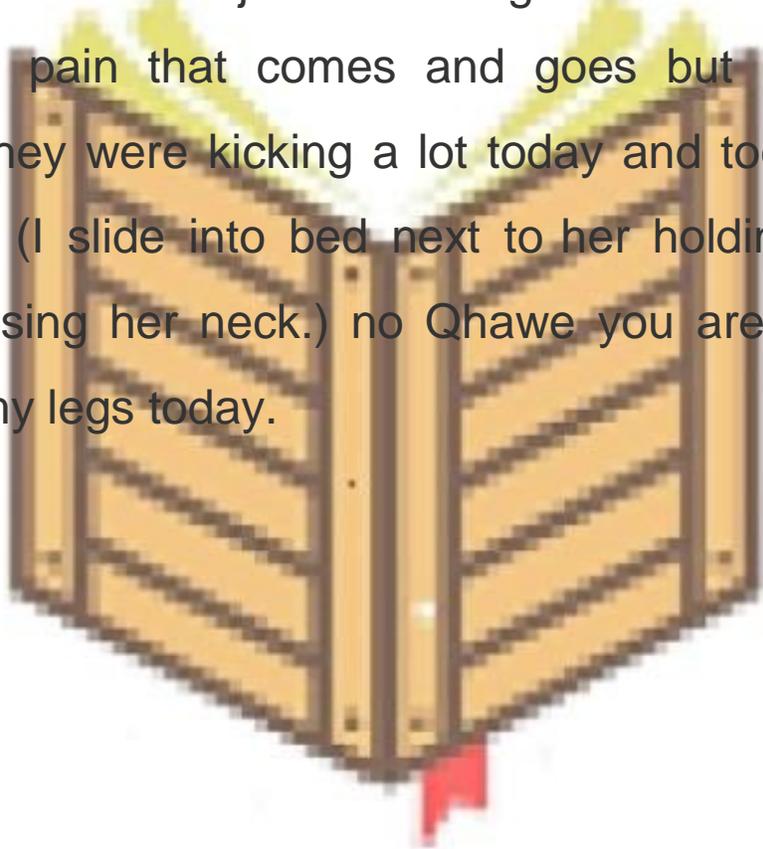
on her.

Me: Mama bear

Khanyi: Qhawe (she smiles at me.

That means we are good) Me: how  
are you feeling my love?

Khanyi: I feel tired. I just want to give birth now. I've had  
this sharp pain that comes and goes but I thinks it's  
because they were kicking a lot today and too much sex  
last night. (I slide into bed next to her holding her from  
behind kissing her neck.) no Qhawe you are not getting  
between my legs today.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: yes baby I'm not. I'm just being intimate with my woman. I want to enjoy this time with you before you hate me again. Lately I never know. Tell me darling how are the kids businesses doing Sponsored

I really haven't had the time to look at the financials that you sent me. We have been so busy at the office lately.

Khanyi: they are doing really good. But I can't tell you the figures you won't believe me so you'll have to look at the financial reports I sent you. I also sent you the financial report for my company and your company as well. So Mr Mthimkhulu you will have to make time and look at the reports. Me: I definitely will. (we continue talking about business and general staff. I don't know when we fell asleep but I felt her gently waking me up.)

Khanyi: Qhawe wake up mani.

Me: What's wrong my Queen (I ask with my eyes closed.) Khanyi:

I think the babies are coming.

Me: hayi Khanyi that's not something to joke about. (my

eyes still closed.)

Khanyi: Qhawe wake up and get the car this is not a joke. We need to go to the hospital. (she is so calm she doesn't sound like someone who is in labour. I roll over get off the bed putting my shoes on and I'm taking my time.)

OUCH!!! Qhawe hurry up. ( I look at her and she looks very serious.) ME: Oh my god you are serious. Why are you not screaming and shouting like all the other women.

Khanyi: I'm not other women I'm me. (she stops moving) mmmmmhhhhhh (she breathes in and out a few times.)

Me: Here get in the back I'll help you lie down. ( I do exactly that and it's a good thing we are not at the farm this week. I drive off as fast as I can and she keeps telling me she loves me and then she hates me what amazes me is that she is so calm she talks as she normally does and she hasn't used one single swear word. On the way to the hospital I call Bandile and tell him the babies are coming and Dr Nkosi. As soon as we get to the hospital Dr Nkosi and Johnson were already waiting for us at the entrance with a stretcher. They get her out of the car and we rush to the delivery room. Khanyi: Sibusiso I need you to take these babies out. Ooouch!!! I think my water just

broke.(the doctors quickly get her ready in the delivery room. Even though she was not screaming like a mad person I could tell she was in pain and the doctors kept saying she was not ready yet.)

You know I hate you right if you didn't make me enjoy the sex so much I wouldn't be in this situation.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: I know Baby Girl and I am sorry and I love you very much. Thank you for going through all this for me.

Khanyi: it hurts Qhawe it hurts so bad. I think the doctor should just cut me open and take these babies.

Immmmmhhhhhhhhhhh I feel like pushing

Doctor: When I tell you to push you must push ok. (she nods and looks at me)

Khanyi: thank you for being here (the doctor tells her to push. She pushes twice and the first baby is out and it's a boy. )

Me: the rest can be girls. Thank you my Queen. (she is told to push again second baby out she goes on and on until the fourth baby. )

Khanyi: Qhawe I can't anymore I'm tired. (she is really tired she can barely keep her eyes open she is really drained.)

Doctor: I just need one more push from her and the baby is out.

Me: You hear that my Queen. Just one more push and you are done. Look at me baby just take one deep breath and give it everything you've got. I'm here and I'm not going anywhere.(she does exactly what I tell her holding on to my hand and pushes hard and the baby is out.) You

did it baby you did it. (she gives me a faint smile and she closes her eyes and immediately I go into panic mode.) is she ok doc. I can't lose her.

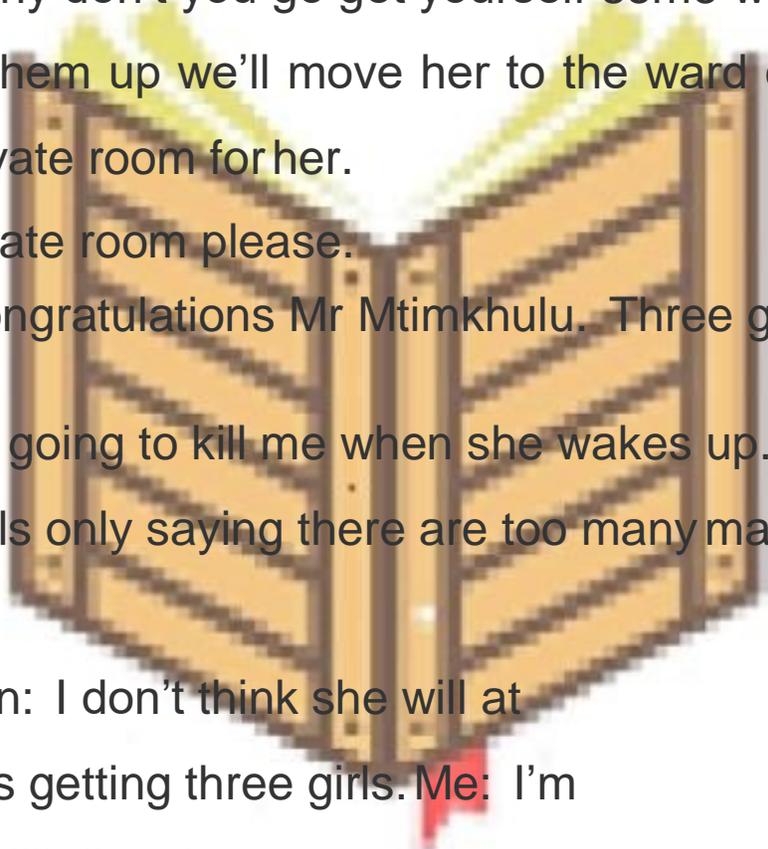
Doctor: don't worry she is ok. The machines would have indicated if there was anything wrong. She is just tired extremely tire. She will be out for a while. Why don't you go get yourself some water while we clean them up we'll move her to the ward or do you want a private room for her.

Me: A private room please.

Doctor: congratulations Mr Mtimkhulu. Three girls and two boys.

Me: she is going to kill me when she wakes up. She wanted girls only saying there are too many males in the house.

Dr Johnson: I don't think she will at least she is getting three girls. Me: I'm just happy I'll die a happy man.



NOVELSCLUB.COM

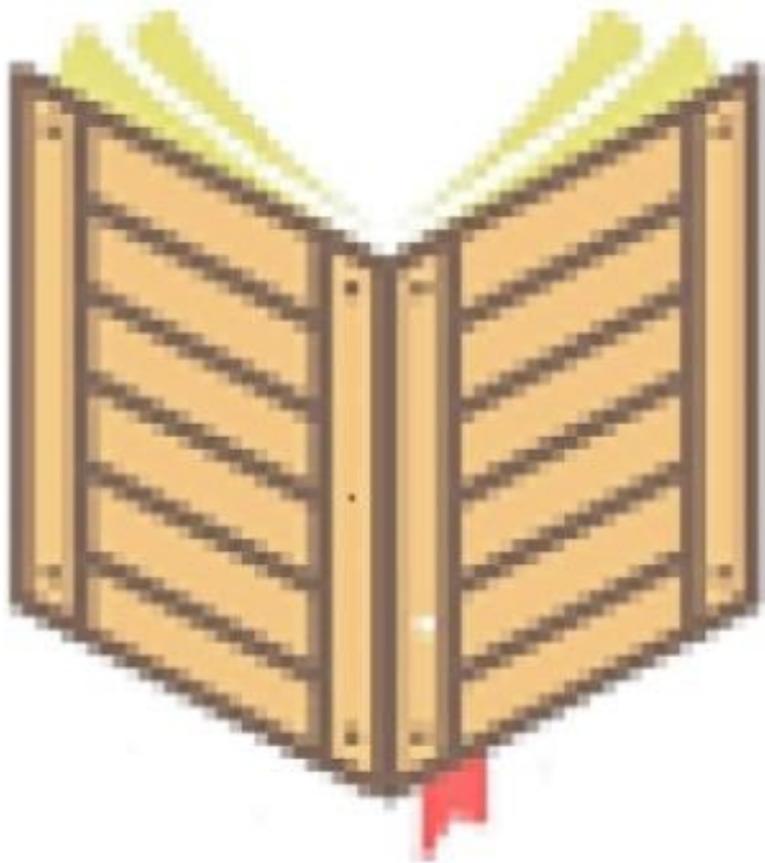
## CHAPTER 106

### STILL AT THE HOSPITAL

\*  
\*  
\*

BAND

ILE



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

\*

Qhawe called saying Khanyi is in labour we are all at the hospital waiting to here from the doctor. This would have been so easy if Lungi was on dutyshe went to find out what was going on and they told her that Khanyi was in the delivery room. I can't believe Khanyi wanted to deliver all these babies naturally. I pray and hope that she is ok..

Lungi: don't worry so much she is going to be fine. She has good doctors with her. Me: I called the parents and they are going to be here tomorrow.

Lwazi: I'm sure her mom is so excited.

Bandile: she is. You should have heard Qhawe's mom I almost went deaf from her screams on the phone.

Lwazi: Qhawe's mom can be extra sometimes. (Qhawe walks into the waiting room with a cup in his hand. Lwanele and Lisakhanya run to him.)

Lisakhanya: Uncle Bandile told us that mom is having babies where are they? Qhawe: Hello to you too Princess and yes mom gave birth to beautiful babies. Lisakhanya: hello daddy.

Lwanele: is it girls or

boys? Qhawe: two

boys and three girls.

Lwazi: that's  
wonderful man Me: it  
is absolutely  
wonderful.

Lungi: How are they?

Qhawe: they are ok. The babies are good and healthy just very small. Khanyi passed out. She was extremely tired. She might not be awake when they let us see them. They are still busy with them.

Lungi: I'll go check on them (she says  
as she walks out.) Eddie:  
congratulations man. The squad is  
now complete. Andile: Yes it is  
complete. (just then Ibanathi walks  
in)

Ibanathi: Hello good people how are you? (He walks over to  
Andile kisses his cheek.) how is the Queen?

Andile: she is fine we are just waiting to see them now.

Lonwabo: dad you do understand that there will be  
no free baby sitting right? Ntando: Most definitely.

Khaya: you guys are already thinking money you haven't even  
met the babies.

Mcebisi: they love money too much.

Lonwabo: we don't have to be paid in money

all the time you know. Banele: please count

me out. I'm not doing any babysitting

Thando: That's what you think. Should I tell him

or you guys will tell him Khaya: He'll find out on

his own. (Qhawe has been so quiet)

Me: Qhawe are you ok man? You are very quiet.

Qhawe: I'm ok I guess I don't know man (he starts pacing up and down) I'm scared I'm really scared. How are we going to handle five babies at the same time.

Lwazi: Qhawe look at me (he turns to look at him) breathe man just breathe. (Andile walks closer to him and slaps him)

Andile: You are not fainting on me again. Pull yourself together man. We are here. You guys are not alone in this. Stop panicking. Sit down and breathe.

Mcebisi: did you just slap him and he is letting you get away with it? Andile: Don't worry I'll pay for it later. (just then Lungi walks in)

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lungi: Come with me we can go see them. (we all walk out following Lungi. She leads us to a private room. The kids walk up to their mom and kiss her cheek. She is still out. She really looks tired)

Zenande: is she ok?

Lungi: She is fine she is just really tired she is going to be asleep for a while. Zenande: Where are the babies. (just then the nurses walk in with the babies.)

Lwanele: Oh my God they look so small they are so cute. I don't think I'll be able to hold them.

Ncesh: Eventually you will. They are

going to be big in no time. Eddie: names

Qhawe: we'll name them when she is awake.

Bandile (twin): we have five more siblings now. this is going to be a long road. Banele: Scared of your own sibling already?

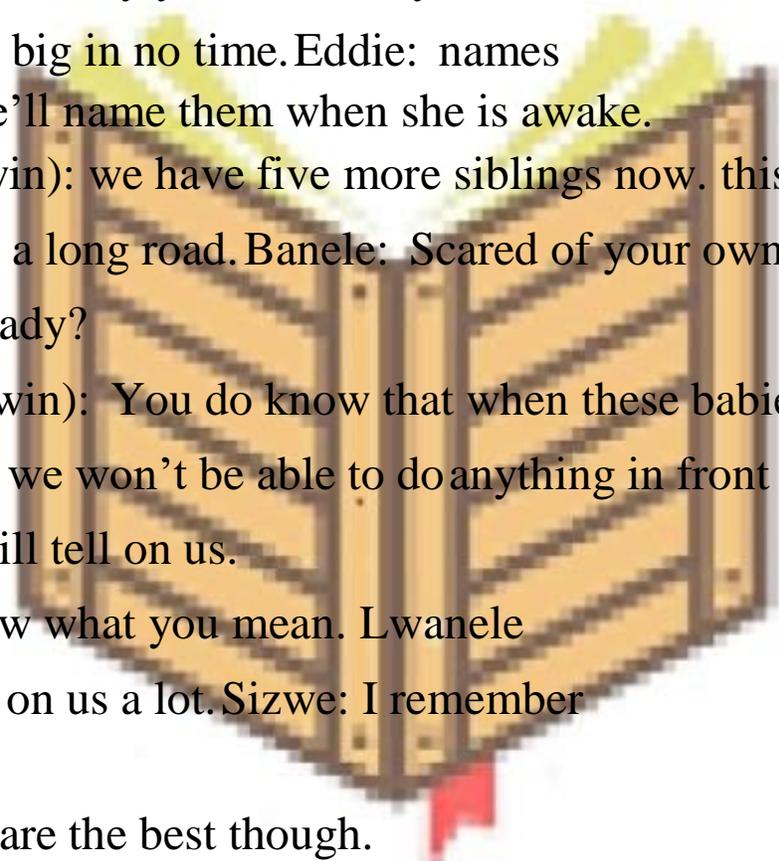
Bandile (Twin): You do know that when these babies get to four years we won't be able to do anything in front of them or else they will tell on us.

Lina: I know what you mean. Lwanele used to tell on us a lot. Sizwe: I remember those days.

Lina: they are the best though.

Mcebisi: sometimes I wish I had siblings

Me: Most of us here have no siblings we have found siblings in each other.



Sibahle: I think this one looks like mom.

Lwazi: they all look the same to me. Maybe they are going to be identical

Sponsored

that would be a problem.

Me: Imagine being unable to tell them apart. Yhooo!! And these babies are going to be a lot of trouble. We should go Khanyi should be awake when we come back tomorrow. (they all agree and we leave leaving Qhawe there. He is really scared but everything is going to be fine for them. We are here they are not going to do this alone.

\*

\*

\*

LUYA

NDA

\*

\*

\*

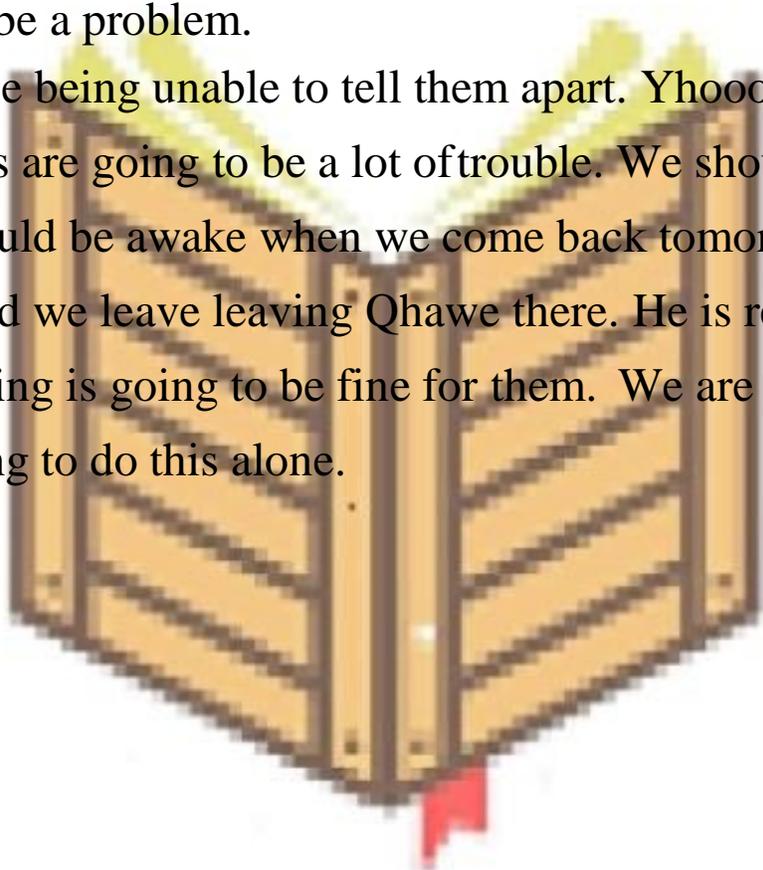
Lwandle walks in as I take a sip

of my whiskey. ME: Where is

Lungi?

Lwandle: she went to bed. Are you ok Khuboni?

Me: I don't know Lwandle. I still can't get over the fact that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sihle kept my baby from me just because I didn't love her and didn't want to marry. I don't know how a person can be so selfish. I've missed out on 21 years of her life Lwandle no matter how hard I try I can never make up for those years.

Lwandle: I can never claim to know how you feel but I understand but Khuboni you need to forgive her. (it does something to me when ever she calls me by clan name now I understand what Qhawe meant.)

Me: You know you really shouldn't call me by clan name it is going to become very dangerous for you. And yes I know I should forgive her but it's hard Munchies it really is.

Lwandle: just try it's for your own good. You and Lungi are doing good. Don't try to make up for the years you have lost live in the moment enjoy the time you have together. Soon she is going to be married and go live with her husband and have her own family these are the things you should be enjoying with her the now and the future. You still have a lot time with her.  
don't

dwelling too much on the past. She feels the same way you do and both of you will have to forgive Sihle at some point and move on with your lives. Punishing her will not change what she did.

Me: do you know what makes this so painful is that even when she says she is sorry she doesn't show that she is sorry. She still thinks I am being unfair by wanting to spend time with my daughter she thinks she doesn't deserve to be punished for what she did. she made me think my child was dead and she wants me to be fair to her.

Lwandle: It's like I said forget about what she thinks focus on what you have with Lungi. She is here now focus on her. she is a wonderful person I really like her. We get along well and by October of this year she is going to be a wonderful big sister to someone.

Me: She already is a big sister to Khanyi's kids and Oluthando. We should go visit Anelisa. She needs to start visiting us well now and stop being cooped up in that house. (Lwandle is looking at me like I've just missed something.) What's wrong.

Lwandle: did you hear

every I said to you Me: yes I did why?

Lwandle: What I just say to you?

Me: You said that Lungi is going to make a wonderful big sister by October. (she looks at me again intensely this time) OH MY

GOD!!!

Lwandle: shhhhh!!! You are going to wake Lungi

Me: are you saying what I think you are saying (she nods her head really fast) OH MY GOD. How long?

Lwandle: One month.

Me: come here (I make her sit on my lap and kiss the living day lights out of her.)

## CHAPTER 107

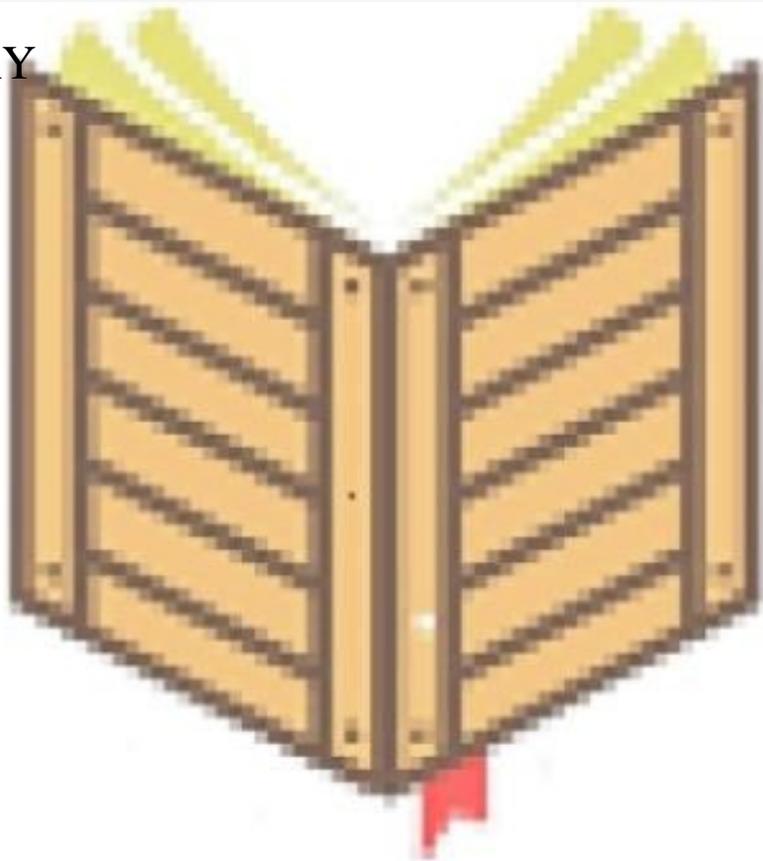
THURSDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

KHANYI

SILE

\*  
\*  
\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

My eyes felt so heavy I feel so tired. I slowly open my eyes I feel arms around me as I try to move I am so pressed and these arms can only belong to Qhawe. I try to move slowly so that I don't wake him but I fail.

Qhawe: What's wrong babe?

Me: I'm pressed I need to pee (he quickly gets up gets out of bed and helps me off the bed and helps me walk to the bathroom and helps me back to the bed when I'm done. I should have opted for the c-section. I still feel tired I can barely stand on my own.)

Qhawe: How are you feeling?

Me: I'm exhausted my love and I'm hungry. Where are my babies

Qhawe: I'm sure the nurses will bring the babies as soon as they see you are awake. I'll ask Thando and Ncesh to bring some food. Thank you Mama Bear. You gave birth to beautiful babies. two boys and three girls. (I give him a warm smile)

Me: You got your wish two boys.

Did you name them? Qhawe: I was waiting for you to wake up.

Me: I have a few names. Let's start with the boys. Qhawe:

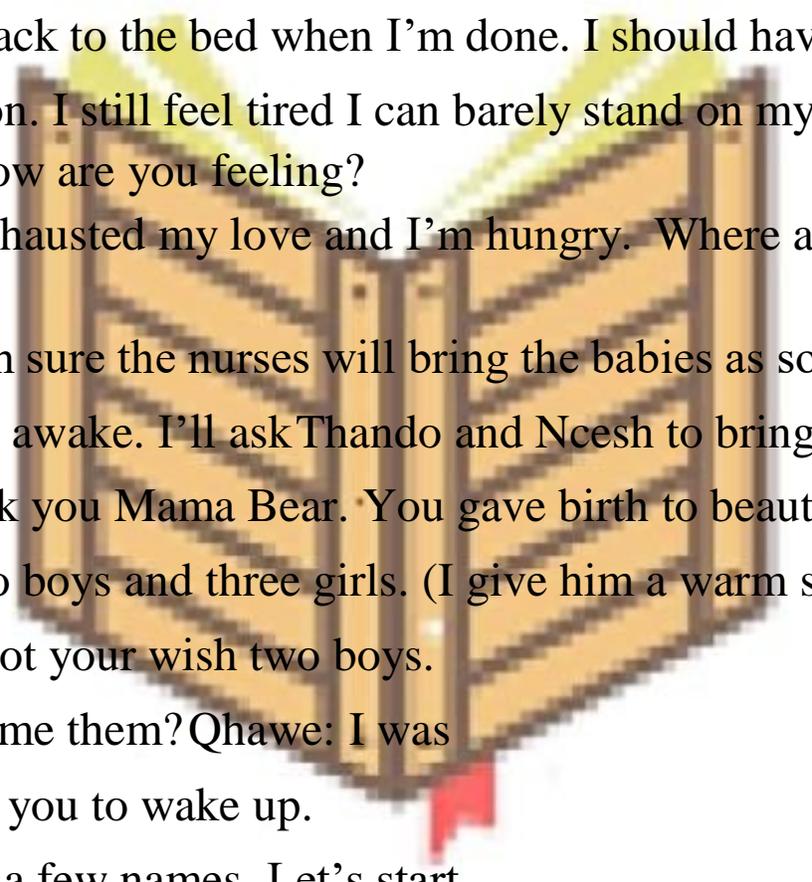
Thandolwethu and Thandokuhle

Me: Thandolwethu Oyama and

Thandokuhle Yongama Qhawe: I

love them. And the girls?

Me: Ahluma Amyoli and Alunamida



NOVELSGURU.COM

Qhawe: Ahluma Zenande Amyoli Mihlali and Alunamida Uyanda

Me: our parents are going to be sad that they didn't get to name the babies you know that right? Especially your mom.

Qhawe: I know. They will be here sometime today. I spoke to the doctor yesterday they want to keep you here a few more days just to make sure that every is ok with you and the babies.

Me: I hate being here already the few days will be terrible and how long is a few days? Qhawe: two or three more days. Hang in there babe do it for the Boovs.

Me: You call them Boovs now? (I ask laughing at him)

Qhawe: I might as well get accustomed to the name since everyone is calling them Boovs. (I lean towards him and kiss him. Thando and Ncesh walk in carrying food.)

Thando: You just gave birth and you are trying for another baby already. Qhawe: you know jealousy won't get you anywhere.

Ncesh: And I thought after birth you would stop being all over each other and we are not jealous.

Lwazi: whose jealous and why? (he asks as he walks in with Luyanda)

Me: Lwazi no man. Luyanda how are you? Lwazi you love news you know. Luyanda: I'm good Mama bear and how are you?

Me: I'm good just waiting for the nurse to bring my babies. Lwazi: have you named them

Me: yes we have and you'll hear the names when every one is here.

Luyanda: I'm sure that won't take long. Apparently Andile is on his way to the airport to pick up the parents. They took the first flight out.

Me: Yhooo they are in a hurry. (Qhawe dishes out some food for me and the nurses walk in with my babies in their little beds. They wheel them in and they give me a boy and I think this is the last born he is smaller than the others)

Nurse: He came out last. (she says placing him in my arms) I know you said you won't breast feed but I think you should breast feed this one he is struggling with the bottle and the others are fine. We just fed them we'll bring you their bottles when it's time to feed them again.

Me: thank you nurse. He is still sleeping. I'll feed him when he wakes up. Can you place him on his bed I just want to eat quickly before they wake up. Thank you. (she puts Thandokuhle in his bed and walks out.)

Ncesh: these babies look so beautiful. I think the girls will look like daddy. Thando: Ncesh it's too soon to

tell.

Luyanda: None the less. They are beautiful babies. Qhawe Lwazi can we talk outside. (they walk out leaving Ncesh and Thando arguing about who the babies are going to look like.)

\*

\*

\*

LUYA

NDA

\*

\*

\*

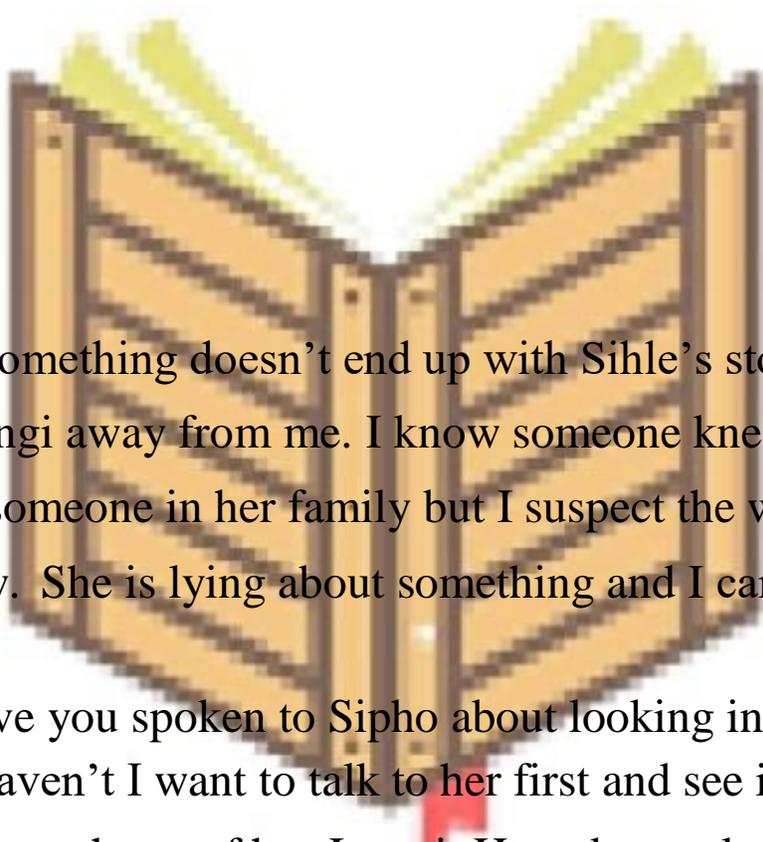
Me: Guys something doesn't end up with Sihle's story and keeping Lungi away from me. I know someone knew about her and Lungi someone in her family but I suspect the whole family knew. She is lying about something and I can't put my finger on it.

Qhawe: have you spoken to Sipho about looking into it?

Me: No I haven't I want to talk to her first and see if I can't get the truth out of her. Lwazi: How do you know

she is lying?

Me: I'm a lawyer man. I know when someone is lying to me.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwazi: to be honest with you I never believed her when she said her family didn't know. They knew and watched you going crazy but the question is "WHY?" Why would they do that knowing full well how much you loved your daughter?

Me: Lungi and I we are leaving for the Eastern Cape tomorrow morning for the weekend but when we come back I would like for you guys to help me with this.

Bandile: Help with what? (he asks as he walks into the waiting room where we were sitting followed by Andile Eddie

Sponsored

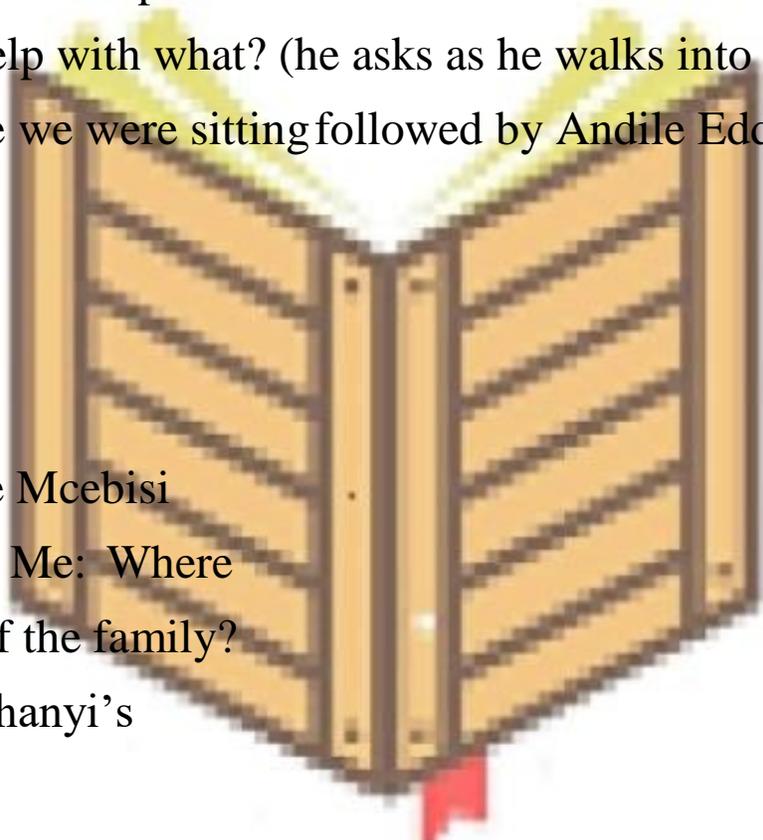
EddieSizwe Mcebisi  
and Khaya) Me: Where  
is the rest of the family?

Bandile: Khanyi's  
room.

Khaya: Don't even think about telling us to leave the room.  
We are old enough to be involved in protecting this family.

Mcebisi: You should start by protecting me from your  
father since he still has that thing of wanting to kill me.

Me: he won't kill you. He  
loves you too much. Qhawe:  
since when do I love him?



NOVELSOURU.COM

Me: Just stop it Qhawe you know he is good for her you know he'll do anything for her. he follows your every rule. Give him break.

Bandile: You mentioned something about needing help when we walked in.

Me: yes. I was telling them about how I think Sihle is hiding something about her family knowing about her and Lungi all these years. (I continue telling them everything I told the other guys.)

Eddie: Do you think she might cause trouble

Me: that's the thing Eddie I'm not sure and I hate this feeling I have. I don't want Sihle ruining things for Lungi. Lungi is happy and I want her to stay like that. I want this journey to her wedding to be a peaceful one. I really don't trust Sihle and her family. Maybe I'm just being paranoid.

Andile: Let's keep an eye on her and see what happens. If she knows what's good for her then she won't do anything stupid.

\*

\*

\*

LUN

GI

\*

\*

\*

I haven't spoken to my mom in a long time.

I've decided to talk to her. Me: Hi ma

Sihle: Lungi Baby

how are you? Me: I'm

ok ma and you?

Sihle: I'm good.

Me: Mama I want you to understand that I don't hate you. I love you you are my mother and I will always love you but that doesn't mean I cannot be angry with you. I am angry with you ma for lying to me about my dad and both families. Do you know what's sad that you kept me from him and you and I we've never had the best of relationships we've never had a mother- daughter relationship and I don't understand why you never wanted us to be that close.

Sihle: You always reminded me of your father. The way you are your personality you are just like him even your favourite food is his favourite food. I loved your father Lungi I still do why do you think I never married or been in a relationship it's because my heart still wants him and it always will.

Me: but mama he is not yours he is in love with another and they really love each other and I hope you won't do anything to ruin the relationship because I really like Lwandle she has been good to me.

Sihle: I know your father doesn't love me and no I won't do anything to ruin their relationship. I've done enough to hurt him by taking you away from him and watched him go crazy.

ME: What do you mean you watched him go crazy Sihle:

Nothing. How are things between you and him?

Me: they are good we get along like a house on fire. Mama at some point in this relationship of ours I will forgive you but please don't push me. What you did hurts it hurts more than you can imagine and I know that at some point I will get over it and forgive you.

Sihle: Are you still not going to involve me in your wedding plans?

Me: no mama I won't. I'm not writing you off mama. You will still be at the wedding as my mother but as for planning the wedding I'll do that with Khaya. We are going to plan our own wedding the way we want it to be. I really hope that you have told us the truth about everything

I hope there are no more secrets. (she swallows quickly and looks away and then at me again. I really hope she is not hiding anything.

## CHAPTER 108

FRIDAY

\*

\*

\*

LUYA

NDA

\*

\*

\*

Home sweet Home. It's always good to be home. We just got here and my daughter is so nervous. I am just happy I am finally bringing her home. I know my parents will be happy I'm also introducing Lwandle to my parents.

Me: Are you

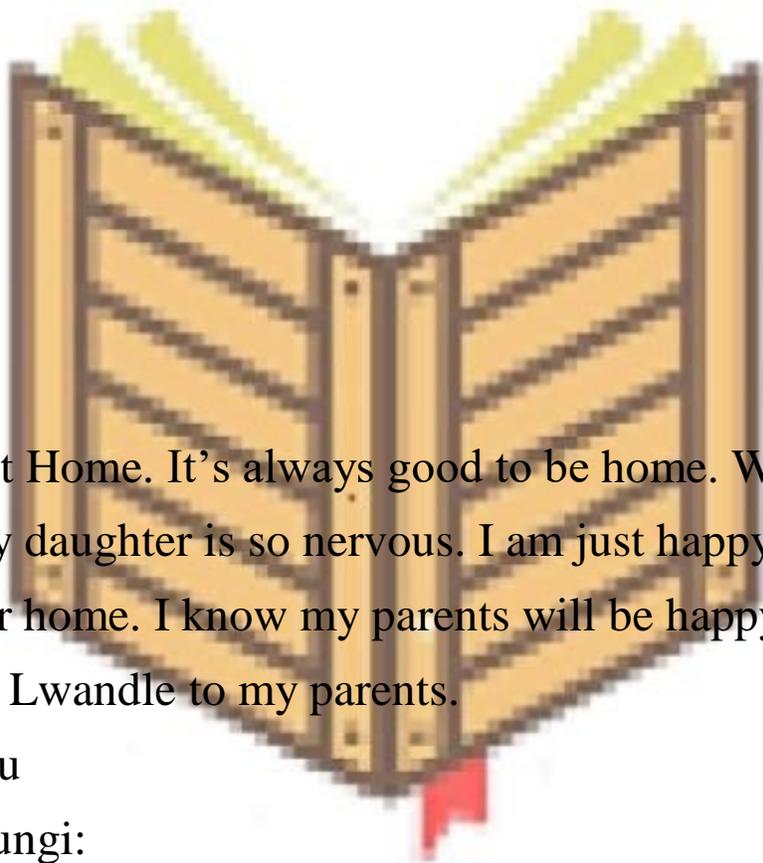
guys ok? Lungi:

I am very

nervous

Lwandle: I am too. I don't know why I let you talk me into this. I should have stayed in Durban. Can I just stay in the house and not go to your parent's house?

Me: don't be ridiculous Lwandle. You agreed because you



NOVELSGURU.COM

love me darling. You are going to be fine don't worry and besides my parents are old now they don't bite. Why don't you guys go freshen up and when you done we'll go to my parent's house. You have nothing to worry about I promise. Let me show you your rooms and I'll let you do your thing. I have a few calls to make. I love you guys and don't worry too much. (Lungi walks into her room as we walk to our room.) Lwandle we have to tell Lungi before we tell the parents about the baby.

Lwandle: we can tell her before we leave.  
Me: Ok. Do your thing I'll be in the kitchen I'm going to make myself a sandwich do you want one?

Lwandle: No thanks babe. (I kiss her forehead and leave her to it.)

+++++ phone conversation+++++

Me: Qhawe are you good man? Qhawe: I'm good.  
What do you need?

ME: there's an email that I am going to send you it's about info on the person I suspect helped Sihle out when she ran away. Can you talk to Sipho and ask him to look into it he can send his invoice to me

Qhawe: no problem. You think she had help.

Me: she had to have had help. She couldn't have just moved with the baby to some place new where she knows no one and not have someone help her. Someone helped her. she is hiding something I can feel it.

Qhawe: I'll speak to Sipho later. I'm still at the hospital with baby mama. They are getting discharged tomorrow.

Me: Say hi to her for me. I'll see them when we are back and I have some news to share with you

Qhawe: what news is that?

Me: Lwandle is a month pregnant

Qhawe: congratulations man. This family is getting big way too big. Babies everywhere. You guys need to buy bigger houses.

Me: we definitely need to. I have to go man. We are going to meet the parents. Please don't tell the others about the pregnancy.

Qhawe: My lips are sealed man. WE'll talk later then. (I hang up and Lungi and Lwandle walk in soon after.)

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

Me: Lungi please have a sit there's something we want to tell you  
Lungi: Ok. What's going

on?

Me: You are going to be a big sister to someone. Lungi: what do you mean dad?

Me: I mean exactly that Lungi

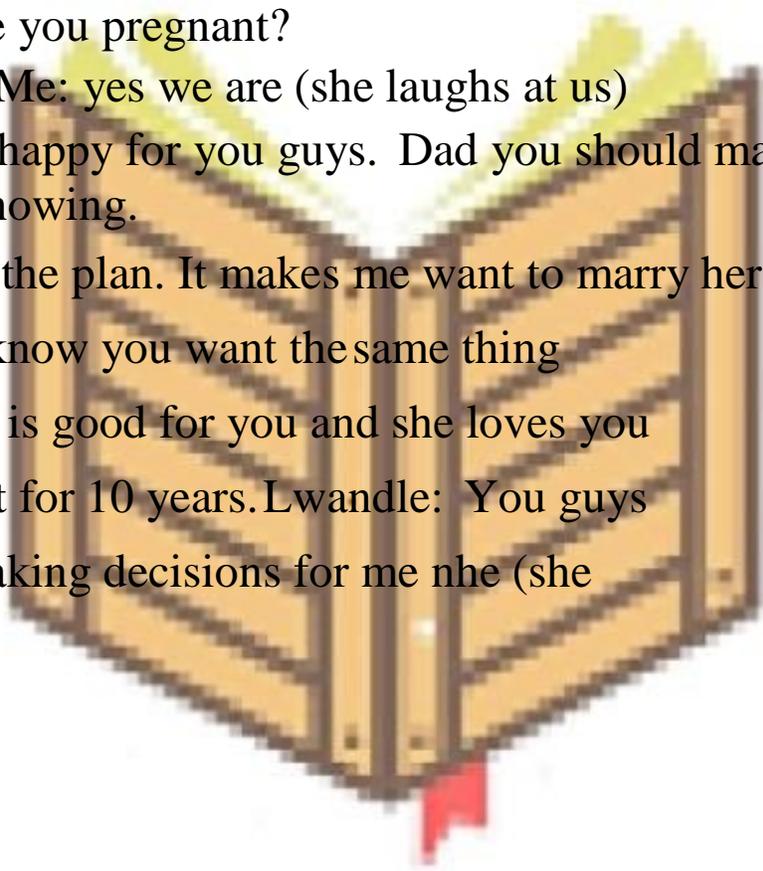
Lwandle: for a nurse you are very slow on this one. Lungi: Oh my word!!! Are you pregnant?

Lwandle & Me: yes we are (she laughs at us)

Lungi: I'm happy for you guys. Dad you should marry her before she starts showing.

Me: that is the plan. It makes me want to marry her even more now that I know you want the same thing

Lungi: She is good for you and she loves you so why wait for 10 years. Lwandle: You guys are busy making decisions for me nhe (she laughs)



Me: don't tell me you don't  
want to marry me  
Lwandle:  
even today I would marry you.

Me: It is settled then. We are  
getting married soon.  
Lwandle: was  
that a proposal?

Me: yes why?

Lungi: dad no flowers candle lit dinner or  
anything like that or close to that.  
Me: is that how  
Khaya proposed to you?

Lungi: You don't to want know how he proposed. (she smiles  
blushing and looks away. I wonder what did Khaya do.)

(lets go guys before my parents start panicking. We get into  
the car and drive off my parent's house. The ride there is very  
quiet. My ladies are very nervous. When we get there they  
were already waiingt for us. I'm glad they didn't invite anyone  
else today and it's just us. I do wish my sister was here though.  
At least she will be here tomorrow. I haven't seen her in a  
while.)  
Me: Mom dad how are you?

Dad: We are good son

how are you?  
Me: we  
are good.

Mom: let's go  
inside.  
Me:

Mom

Sponsored

dad this is Lungi your granddaughter.

Mom: She looks like her mom but she has a bit of you in her.

You look so beautiful. Come here child. (she walks over to her and hugs her. my mom can't even control her tears) Last time I saw you you were only a year old and now look at you. You are a fully grown woman. We thought you were dead my child.

Dad: come to your grandpa sweetie. (Lungi walks over to him and they hug.) Lungi: I'm sorry you had to go through all that.

Dad: it's not your fault my baby. You were only a baby you didn't even understand what was going on. We are just happy you are here and finally get to hold you. Sit here. (dad shifts a little patting the space between him and mom for Lungi to sit. I wish Lwanele was here as my camera lady I have to do that myself now.)

Mom: and who is this lady next to you?

Me: This is Lwandle future mother of my kids and the woman I want to marry.

Dad: Finally. You certainly took your time to take a wife.

Me: I was waiting for the right one dad and she is the right one.

Mom: she is beautiful. You are beautiful my dear. Do you get along with my granddaughter

Lwandle: Thank you ma and yes we get along very well. She is a wonderful woman.

Dad: That's good. So Lungi tell me

dear what do you dear? Lungi: I'm a nurse tata.

Dad: that's wonderful and single I presume

Lungi: Actually I'm engaged tata. (she is blushing. I swear anything that has to do with Khaya makes her blush.)

Dad: At your age your dad was running away from commitment you certainly have not taken after him with that regards to that. Who is this boy that wants to marry my granddaughter. I wish you could spend more time here. We would really love to get to know you.

Me: We'll come back dad when her leave is approved. Maybe she can come back with Lwandle if Lwandle is ok with that but we'll discuss it.

Lungi: Yes tata I will definitely come back and spend more time with you before I get married. Besides I'll also be back for the lobola negotiations.

Dad: Are the negotiations happening here?

Me: yes dad. That's how she wants it. the traditional wedding will be here too.

Mom: Wow that's wonderful. I have lot to prepare for.

Tomorrow night we are having a WELCOME HOME DINNER for Lungi. We need to have lunch now so that I can go shopping with the girls.

\*

\*

\*

SIH

LE

\*

\*

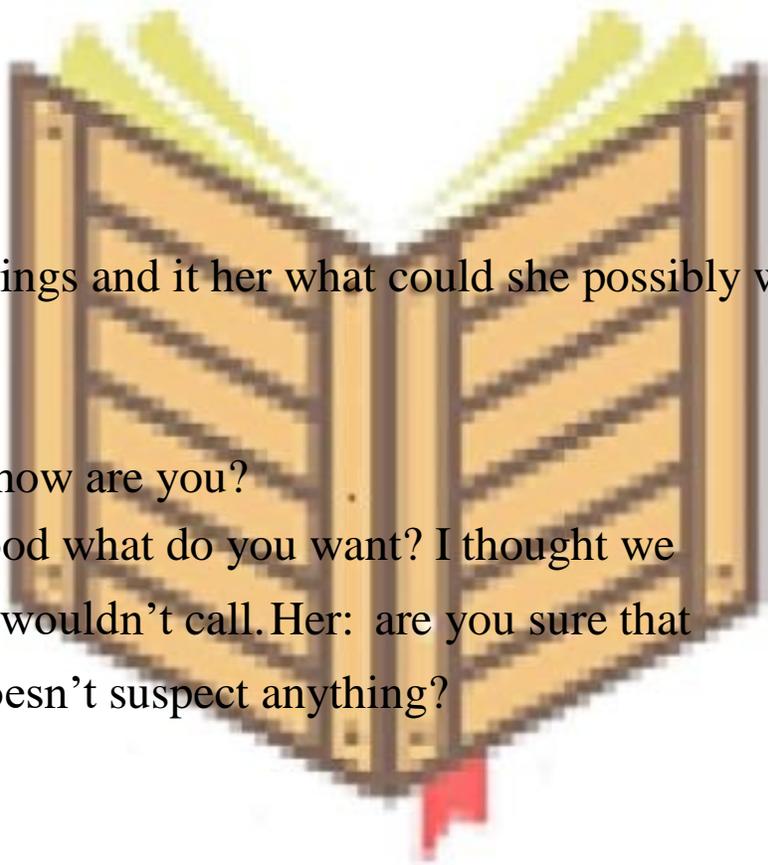
\*

My phone rings and it her what could she possibly want

Me: Hello

Her: Sihle how are you?

Me: I'm good what do you want? I thought we agreed you wouldn't call. Her: are you sure that Luyanda doesn't suspect anything?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: no he doesn't. I told him one of my aunts helped me runaway and now she is dead but he doesn't believe that my family didn't know.

Her: You told him that they didn't know that was stupid.

Me: You have no idea who he is now. He's not the Luyanda you knew all those years ago. He is a powerful lawyer now and has powerful friends. If he ever finds out that I lied to him about my family not knowing trust me that will be the end of me.

Her: what do you mean powerful friends?

Me: I mean exactly that. if the truth of how and why I kept Lungi away from him ever comes out we are both dead. I lied to Lungi telling her that I loved her father and we both know I didn't. Yes I once loved him but that ended when he made it clear that he doesn't love me and he wouldn't marry him. yes I was hurt but I got over that.

Her: The truth can never come out it can never come out Sihle. Me: Look I have to go. Just don't call again ok (I hang up)

\*\*\*\*\*  
NOVELSGURU.COM \*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*

This is one going to get us into trouble she really needs to cool down. We can't afford to have Luyanda finding out the truth and my family on the other hand is just giving me a headache

about Lungi's wedding. They want her to have a white wedding in Johannesburg and they don't understand why she doesn't want one. I'm just grateful that I will be at the wedding.

\*

\*

\*

UNKN

OWN

\*

\*

\*

Me: did you

find him? Her:

Yes sir I found

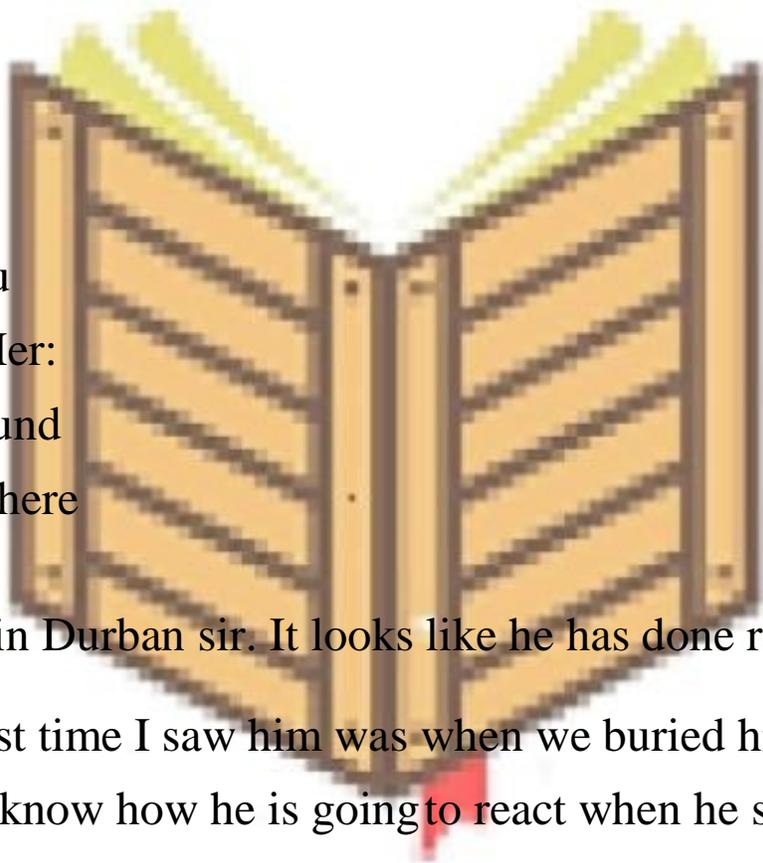
him Me: Where

is he:

Her: He is in Durban sir. It looks like he has done really well for himself.

Me: The last time I saw him was when we buried his mother and I don't know how he is going to react when he sees me again.

Her: Why is that sir?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Let's just say I was never a good father nor a good husband. I'm the reason his mother killed herself.

Her: But you are trying to make amends so he might give you a chance. It looks like he has a girl too.

Me: I'm happy he managed to move on with his life after everything I put him through.

## CHAPTER 109

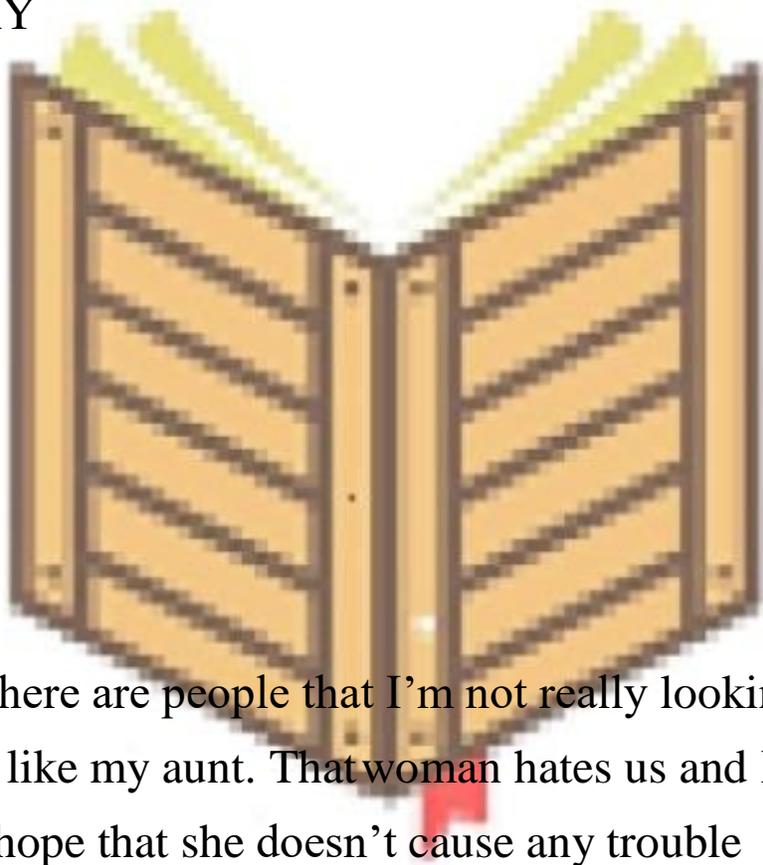
### SATURDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

LUYA

NDA

\*  
\*  
\*



I must say there are people that I'm not really looking forward to see today like my aunt. That woman hates us and I don't know why. I just hope that she doesn't cause any trouble today. This is my daughter's day and I don't want anyone ruining it for her. When I was growing up I wouldn't say life was easy for me but my parents made sure that I had everything I needed. They made sure I studied for what I loved. My parents worked hard for what they have and now that they are retired they are really enjoying being taken care of. When I started

working I helped my day renovate this house and added extra rooms and a few outside rooms. It always feels good to be home. Even though my relationship with dad was almost ruined because he wanted me to marry someone I didn't love. We argued and fought about that for a while and in the end he was able to see things from my pointed of view which I appreciated. At least now I am going to marry someone who means the world to me. My sister was on my side as well as mom and I think that's what made my dad give up on his idea of the arranged marriage. Come to think of it that girl was not happy when the wedding was called off but she had suck it up and take it like a man. My parents made a lot of sacrifices for us to make sure that we get to have a good and comfortable life. A knock interrupts me and it's my dad. I'm in my old room.

Dad: Are you ok son?

Me: I'm ok tata just thinking about the sacrifices you made for us and look at us now we are amongst the best in the country. You raised a lawyer and an electrical engineer.

Dad: I must say that I am proud of you and your sister. You guys really did good for yourselves and still doing good. When I die I'll die a happy man knowing that my children are not struggling and they are happy.

Me: thank you dad. (he walks over to me and hugs me.)

Dad: It was my job and my responsibility son to take care of you kids and your mother and I am glad to see that you are taking care of Lwandle and Lungi.

Me: I have to dad they are my world.

Dad: I can see that anyone can see it. It is written all over your face. You really love them. Me: I would die for them tata. Where are they?

Dad: In the kitchen with your mother and the guests should start arriving. I still don't know why you didn't want to slaughter a sheep for granddaughter.

Me: there's a lot of slaughtering that you are going to be doing dad. Don't worry too much about it. there's enough meat for the braai and more than enough drinks.

Dad: I can't help think that there is something bothering you

Me: It's nothing I can't handle dad. I just feel like I haven't been told everything regarding Lungi's disappearance with her mother.

Dad: I understand son. whatever else she is hiding let's be thankful that she told you about her. Come let's see who has arrived. (we walk out of my room and I know this is his way

of distracting me from thinking about this.)

\*

\*

\*

Lun

gi

\*

\*

\*

All my life I've always wondered what it would be like to have a dad and grandparents. If I hadn't met Khaya would I have met my family would mom have told me about me about my dad. Ever since we arrived here I have been treated like a Princess. My grandmother doesn't want me and Lwandle to do anything but we are helping her anyway. Honestly this is wonderful I feel so blessed and when I stop being angry at my mom she can take me to her family I also want to meet them. To know that I have a big family really feels wonderful. Yes Khaya has a big family and I know they love me but it didn't the void that I had and now now I feel complete I feel like I can take on the world. Lwandle is sitting on one of the high chairs in the kitchen

eating noodles this is the third bowl she has had today I was surprised to see that she had some in her bag. I guess it's her favourite pregnancy dish.

Me: You really should watch how you eat if you don't want my grandmother to know that you are pregnant.

Lwandle: I can't help myself Lungi I try to control myself but I just can't. Me: You do know that old people notice these things quickly.

Lwandle: I'm sure she has already noticed and it's just a matter of time before she asks me. Your dad should just tell them. (my grandmother walks into the kitchen carrying the plates she went to fetch. At least this is a braai so there's not much work to be done and we are almost done with the salads.)

Grandma: Tell who and what? (Lwandle just froze and just looked at her) If you are talking about you being pregnant then I already know. I can tell you are pregnant my dear and don't worry I haven't said anything. We'll wait for you guys to tell us. (I look at Lwandle and smile) Me: I told you.

Lwandle: Mxm go away. (she goes back to her noodles.

This other woman walks in) Her: Veronica how are you my sister?

Grandma: I'm fine sisi and how are you?

Her: I'm good. (you can tell there's no love loss between the two. There is tension between them something must have

happened for them to be like this) And who are these two ladies you are with you?

Grandma: that's my granddaughter Lungi and that's my daughter in law Lwandle. My children this is my sister.

Her: This is Lungi you look beautiful child and Lwandle too. But since when do you have a daughter in law. I thought Luyanda was not married.

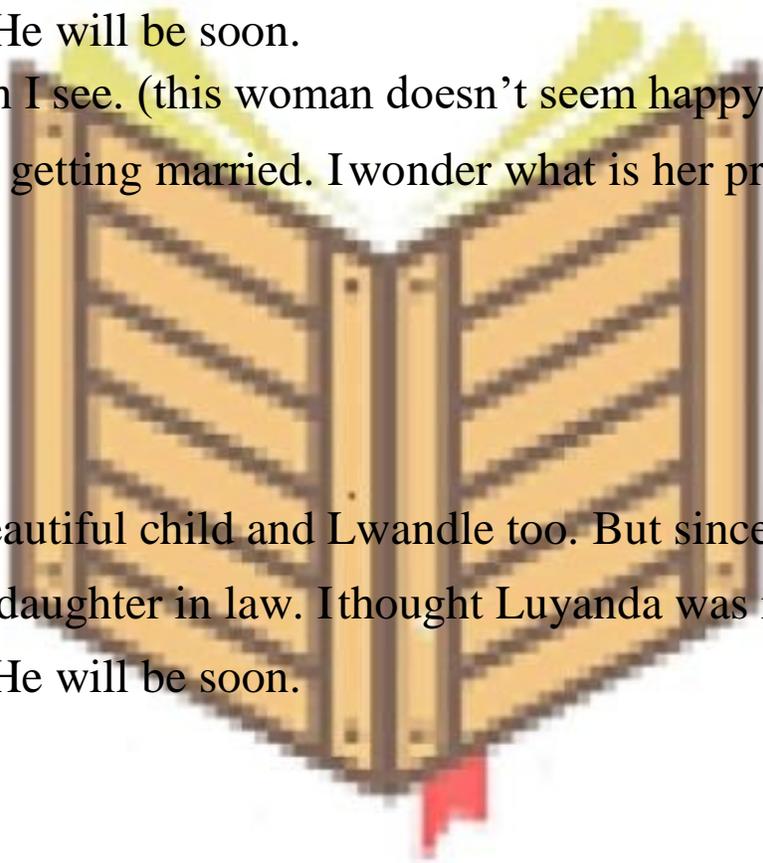
Grandma: He will be soon.

Her: Mhhhh I see. (this woman doesn't seem happy about her nephew getting married. I wonder what is her problem

Sponsored

you look beautiful child and Lwandle too. But since when do you have a daughter in law. I thought Luyanda was not married.

Grandma: He will be soon.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Her: Mhhhh I see. (this woman doesn't seem happy about her nephew getting married. I wonder what is her problem she definitely has one.)

Me: Mama may I be excused I want to talk to dad about something. Lwandle can you come with me please. (I think she also sensed the tension she got up from her chair like she couldn't wait to get out of there.) did you sense the tension? (I ask as we walk towards dad and grandpa but they were also sitting with another man.)

Lwandle: Molweni

(Hello) Him: Molo

sisi

Luyanda: Uncle this is my future my wife Lwandle and that's my daughter Lungi.

Uncle: Oh Luyanda she is so grown. I hate that woman for what she did to you and I am glad you finally have peace.

Molo Lungi and you Lwandle how are you?

Me: We good malume it is nice to meet. (I think this is the always drunk uncle of the family even now you can tell that he is a bit tipsy and already has a bottle in front of him.)

Uncle: Siya nini ukuyolobola umakoti mtshana (when are we going for the lobola negotiations nephew)

Dad: Soon malume. Very soon.

Uncle: that's good mtshana. Don't waste time otherwise these other vultures will eat her. You must be careful with these men here.

Dad: I'm not worried. She was meant for me uncle.

Uncle: mzikulu sondela ndikubone kakuhle. Uyafana nonyoko kodwa ndiyakubona ukuba ufuz' uyihlo. (grandchild come here let me look at you. You look like your mother but you take after your father.)

Me: how do you know I take after him malume? I've only been here for five minutes.

Uncle: I'm old my child I know these things. Look mtshana you must buy your uncle a bottle next time you visit.

Me: I definitely will. (my dad looks at me with that look that says no)

\*

\*

\*

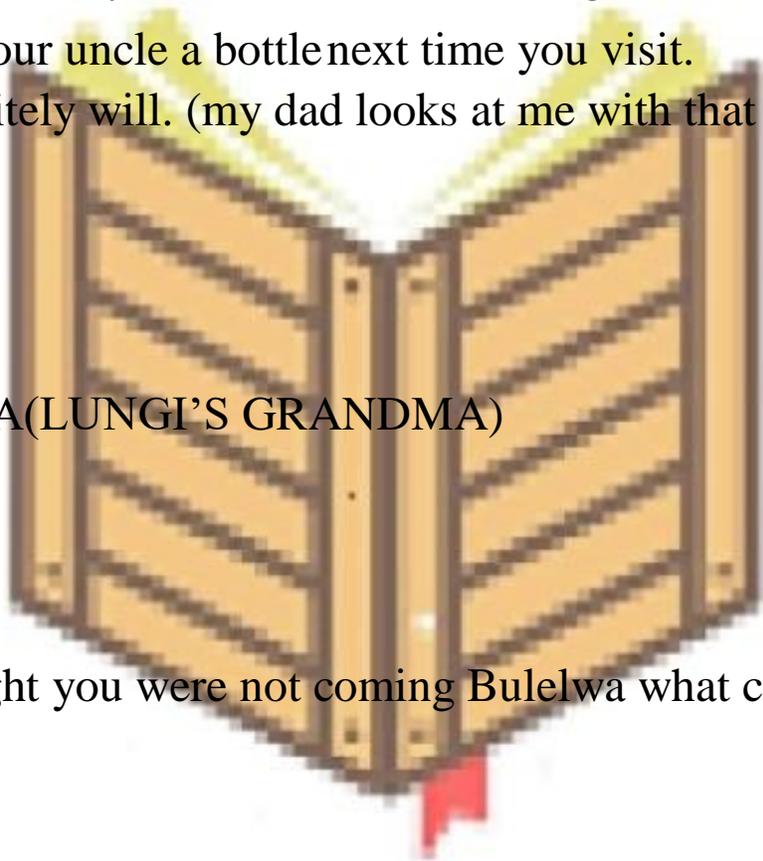
VERONICA(LUNGI'S GRANDMA)

\*

\*

\*

Me: I thought you were not coming Bulelwa what changed?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Bulelwa: I wanted to see this grandchild of yours I didn't anticipate that I would meet your daughter in law as well.

Me: you are something else. When are you going to stop with this nonsense of yours

Bulelwa? What did I ever do to you to make you hate me so much? Are you not tired of all this hate and negativity that you've been carrying around all these years.

Bulelwa: I don't hate

you Veronica. Me: You could have fooled me.

Bulelwa: You know that you took him from me right?

Me: how did I take him from you when you guys were not even dating? You need to get over this now Bulelwa. He chose me

and married me and the funny thing is that he never even attempted to date you he was not interested in you. I am really

not interested in having this conversation with you. If you'll excuse I need to get my girls so that we can finish preparing the

food before the man start braaing the meat and it's obvious you are not going to help. You might as well go home. I don't even

know why you came. Bulelwa if anything happens to my girls or my son I swear this time you won't live to tell the tale.

Bulelwa: Mxm

My sister has always had it in for me. I don't even know why.

She always says I stole my husband from her how when he didn't even know her name when I met him. This woman is

really pushing my buttons and she is pushing the wrong ones. She always blames me for her kids not doing well. In fact I wouldn't say her kids are not doing well. They are doing well they have good jobs their own houses and have cars. One of her daughters is married she married into a good and well off family. My kids never have peace when she is around. The kids get along so well. She is always the one with a problem her husband even became a drunkard because of her and she can't even see that she is destroying her own family.

## CHAPTER 110

MONDAY

\*

\*

\*

QHA

WE

\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

After Anelisa I never thought I would be this happy. Happiness is a choice. I had to choose between being dull and miserable all my life or take a risk and be happy. I must say my risk paid off. The bad experiences that we go through in life don't happen to bring us down. They happen so that we can learn from them. They teach us how the choices we make can lead us to certain paths hence when making decision you have to be diligent but at times you can be diligent and things can still go wrong but that doesn't mean it's the end of the world. When life brings you down you get up dust yourself off show life the finger and start over or move on. As a person you can't let bad experiences over power you you've got to over power them. Your current bad situation must not be permanent there's always an exit out of any situation you just have to find it.

The babies are behaving so far but Thandokuhle is a mama's boy and he is the only one breast feeding. Khanyi's parents and my parents are here spoiling my babies. They always want to have the babies in their hands and that needs to stop. We don't want the babies to get used to that otherwise they will give us problems. With them here helping out with the babies helps a lot at least Khanyi is getting some rest. She has recovered well also. I thought I was done having babies this is absolutely a miracle.

Dad: You are here but your mind is definitely not here. (he states as he walks in) Me: Just thinking of how blessed we are that's all.

Dad: You are definitely blessed. You know we never thought this family would grow to be so big with so many children. When we had you and your twin didn't make it we always told ourselves we are going to have more but it didn't happen we were never able to have more kids hence Bandile and Lwazi became more of our children than your friends. You have grown this family son. The Mtimkhulu clan is growing.

Me: It definitely is dad. Where's mom?

Dad: With Khanyi's mom bathing the babies. I can't seem to separate them from those babies. Khanyi's dad: You never will I stopped trying you should too otherwise you'll cause yourself unnecessary stress. Morning gentlemen. I need to talk to you both.

Me: Is everything ok Mr Sondlo?

Khanyi's Dad: I told you to stop calling me that next time you call that I'll break your jaw. ME: It won't happen again.

Khanyi's dad: Good. The subject that you and Khanyi brought up when you told us about the pregnancy. I spoke to the family elders and they don't have a problem with that if we as in me and her mom don't have a problem with that and we don't have a problem but because it is tradition we are going to do it but we are going to keep it small and private after that you can go ahead and do your thing.

Dad: Thank you for that. We really appreciate it.

Khanyi's dad: I want my daughter to be happy she has been through a lot in her life and if this is how she wants things then so be it. She seems to be really happy with you Qhawe. She was never like this with her ex husband. I think she married him because they had kids together Dad: Even Qhawe is beyond the word happy and especially with the new members of the family. I really don't know how you are going to cope with 15 kids in your life.

Me: We are going to be fine dad. (my phone rings interrupting the conversation) Excuse me gentlemen I have to take this call.

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

Me: Luyanda what's up man

Luyanda: Nothing much are you at the office? I need to see you.

Me: I'm working from home for the next three months so I'm at home. Come over.

Luyanda: that's fine then. I'll see you when I'm done with my

cases for today let's say around 15:00

Me: that's fine man. See

you later. Luyanda: Sure

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

Khanyi: hey babe

Me: come here give daddy a kiss. (with a big smile she walks closely to me stands in front of me looking up at me waiting for me to bend to her level.) You really are beautiful Baby Girl.

Khanyi: Thank you my King.

Me: We'll talk later my love I have the dads in my office. (I give her a smooch and spank her making her gasp a little.)

Khanyi: this is how those five little ones happened. Qhawe: we can make five more.

Khanyi: Yhooo hayi Qhawe (she walks away smiling at me.)

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

UNKN

OWN

\*

\*

\*

I spent years in a rehabilitation centre recovering from a drug and alcohol addiction. I have been now sober for five years and I have been trying to find my son and eventually I did. I don't even know how I am going to approach him. I need to make amends

Sponsored

waiting for me to bend to her level.) You really are beautiful Baby Girl. Khanyi: Thank you my King.

Me: We'll talk later my love I have the dads in my office. (I give her a smooch and spank her making her gasp a little.)

Khanyi: this is how those five little ones happened. Qhawe: we can make five more.

Khanyi: Yhooo hayi Qhawe (she walks away smiling at me.)

\*

\*

\*

UNKN

OWN

\*

\*

\*

I spent years in a rehabilitation centre recovering from a drug and alcohol addiction. I have been now sober for five years and I have been trying to find my son and eventually I did. I don't even know how I am going to approach him. I need to make amends I need to apologise for my wrongs. I know that an apology won't change anything but it's a step up towards doing the right thing. It might be too late but deep in me I don't believe that. It is never too late for anything as long as he is still alive I still have a chance no matter how small it is there is still a chance for me to do right by him.

NOVELSGURU.COM

All the things I have done to him I really hope he can forgive me. My son looks happy even has a girlfriend.

I was a monster to him and his mom. I took my stress out on them back then. Things were not going well in my life business was not doing good I couldn't even hold down a job because I would always be drunk. Now I've managed to get my shit together. The past five years have not been easy but here I am today and still going strong.

Her: Sir

Me: Yes Anita

Her: there's someone

here to see you Me:

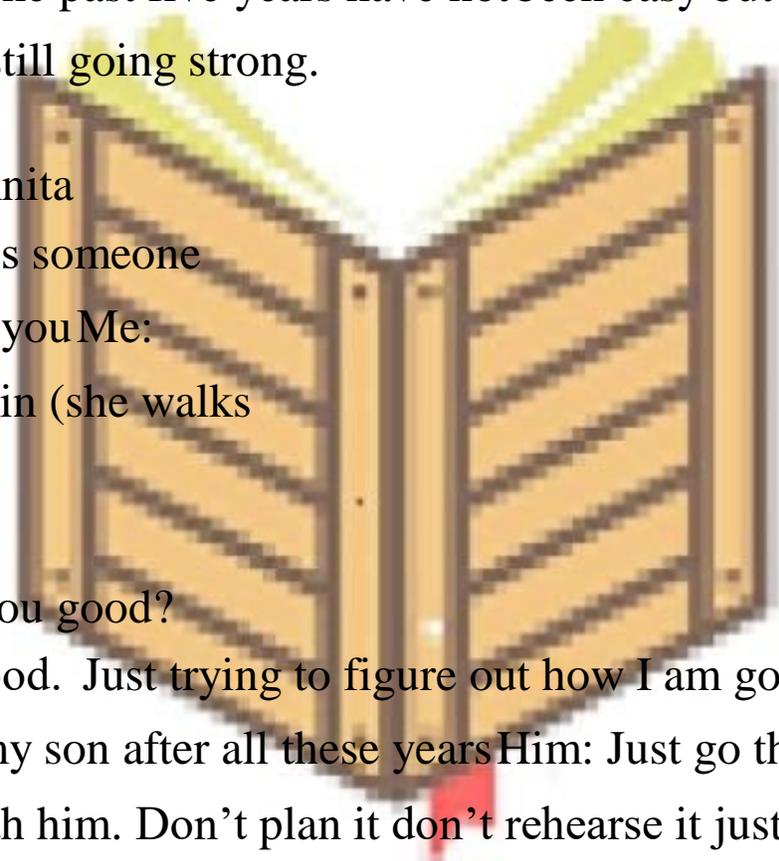
Send them in (she walks out.)

Him: are you good?

Me: I'm good. Just trying to figure out how I am going to approach my son after all these years Him: Just go there and be straight with him. Don't plan it don't rehearse it just do it.

Me: easier said than done my friend. thinking of everything he had to go through because of me.

Him: I understand and this is no time to be blaming yourself. You are doing it for yourself and I must say he has done very well for himself just do this and if you don't want to do it if you are going to keep doubting and blaming yourself you might as well go back



NOVELSGURU.COM

to CapeTown.

Me: No man I will do it. I'll

go see him. Him: that's

better. how about lunch?

Me: I could eat.

\*

\*

\*

SIH

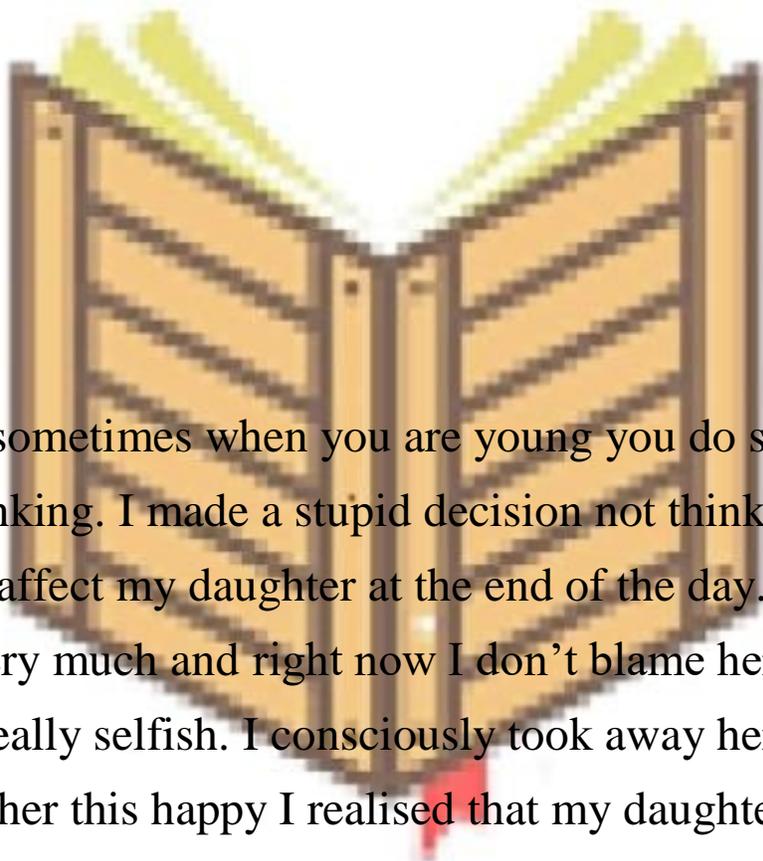
LE

\*

\*

\*

You know sometimes when you are young you do stupid things without thinking. I made a stupid decision not thinking about how it will affect my daughter at the end of the day. I love my daughter very much and right now I don't blame her for hating me. I was really selfish. I consciously took away her happiness. Looking at her this happy I realised that my daughter could have been this happy all her life had normal problems that other kids have she could have



NOVELSGURU.COM

been a normal happy teenager but I took all that away from her I stripped her of all that and I was able to live with myself. What of kind of a mother does that make me. I can tell she loves her father. In the short space of time that they have known each other she loves him very much and they have a wonderful relationship. I try to imagine the bond they could have had; had she had grown up around him. A call comes through

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\* Me:

Hello

Her: Sihle how are you

Me: I'm fine auntie and how are you?

Her: I'm fine. We are coming to see you tomorrow Sihle. WE'll be in Durban in the afternoon tomorrow. We need to talk about this situation. We need to make things right with the Langa family.

Me: How are we going to that Auntie? I kept their child away from them and my family knew where I was and didn't tell them.

Her: Our loyalty was with you Sihle even though you lied to us which I don't understand why you would lie to us. All that doesn't matter now. we need to make things right. Lungi is getting married and we can't not be part of her wedding because of your stupidity.

Me: let me know when you've landed tomorrow so

that I can pick you up from the airport. We'll talk then.

I need to think. (I hang up)

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*

Dammit! I am screwed. That's it I'm done

## CHAPTER 111

### STILL MONDAY

\*

\*

\*

KHA

NYI

\*

\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: mama you need to stop hoding these babies all the time.

We don't want them getting used it ma.

Mom: I know I just can't help myself.

They are so cute. Siyanda: they really are cute.

Me: what's going to happen when you are not here. I don't want my babies crying all the time when we put them down on their beds because they want to be held all the time.

Siyanda: You are right and

we going to try. Me: that's

all I ask. Thank you

Siyanda: Khanyi sit I want

to talk to you Me: is

something wrong ma?

Siyanda: No honey nothing is wrong. Khanyi I'm sorry about how I treated you without even giving you a chance and giving myself a chance to get to know you I judged you first and I am truly sorry for that. My son is happy my grandkids are happy and now we have been just blessed with 5 more grandkids. Thank you my child for this and thank you for taking care of them even when we are no more in this world we'll know that our son is happy.

Me: Thank you for raising him for me. He is a wonderful man.

Mom: he truly is. Khanyi your dad spoke to me and told what you wanted are you sure that's show you want things.

Me: Yes mom I'm sure even though I know dad won't really let it go but that's how I want it and I know I'm breaking tradition here but still I want it this way.

Siyanda: we understand but bare in mind that the man may not completely agree with what you want.

Me: I know ma but we'll wait and here from them.

Siyanda: When are you guys planning on doing IMBELEKO for them  
Me: when they are a month old.

Siyanda: ok then. You guys must just keep us informed.

Mom: Your father asked me to talk to you about something with regards to Nkosikhona. We can talk now if you are ok with Siyanda being here.

Me: it's fine. She is going to know anyway.

Mom: Nkosikhona's uncles came to see us and they have paid damages for Khaya and Lina.  
Me: When did they do that?

Mom: same day you gave birth to these bunnies.  
Me: wow

Mom: I know right. Nkosikhona's aunt the sangoma told them they need to stop listening to that good for nothing child of theirs and start doing things right. They have requested to have IMBELEKO done for them. We told them we would speak to you first. I know that we had done it for them but you know traditionally they were suppose to do it.

Me: I know mama. I don't have a problem at least they are doing things the right way which is what I've always asked of Nkosikhona. It's amazing how it had to take me to put him in jail for them to do things right.

Mom: It's not they didn't want to but they listened too much to their child.

Me: Mama you know that I have to speak to Qhawe about this. They are his kids now and I can't do this without telling him. I know he is not going to be against it but as the man of this house I need to talk to him about it. He's been a father to them from the first day he met them. Mom: I know baby I know.

Siyanda: You really treat my son like a King. Me: He treats me like a Queen ma.

\*

\*

\*

LUYA

NDA

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

Me: Qhawe are you good?

Qhawe: I'm good man let's go to the man cave. Lwazi

Bandile and Sipho are here Me: Man cave

Sponsored

Bandile and Sipho are here

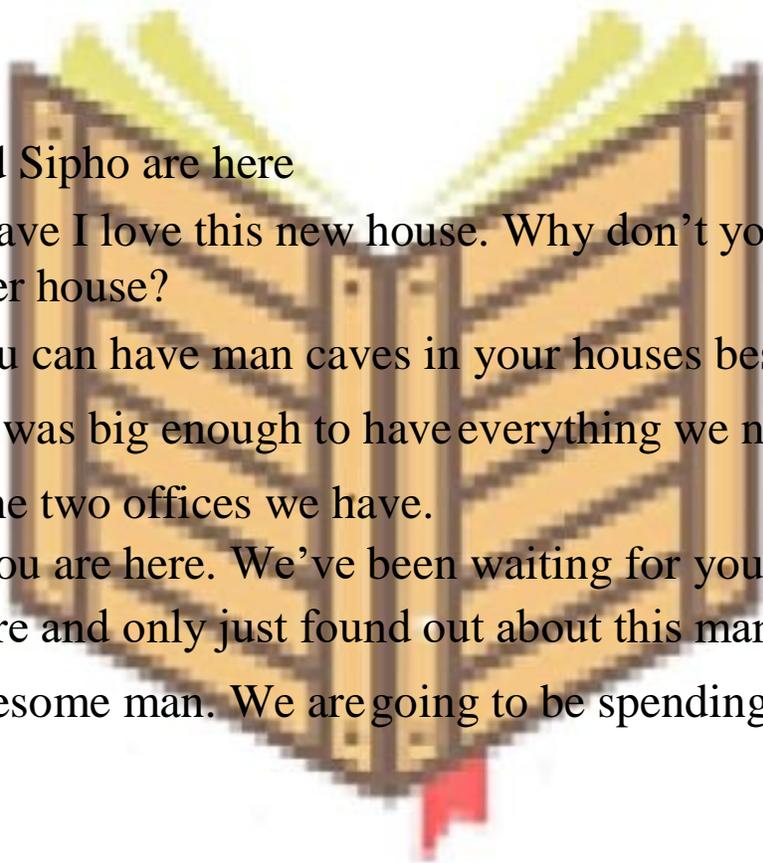
Me: Man cave I love this new house. Why don't you have a man in your other house?

Qhawe: You can have man caves in your houses besides this farm house was big enough to have everything we needed including the two offices we have.

Bandile: You are here. We've been waiting for you.

Me: I'm here and only just found out about this man cave.

It looks awesome man. We are going to be spending more time here.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Qhawe: the whole point of buying a farm was to stay away from you guys so that you can come over on weekends only (he laughs at his own statement.)

Lwazi: that's not funny Qhawe.

Qhawe: It's a good thing you can spend all this time focusing on Thando.

Lwazi: Thando and I are fine. We are good. We spend a lot of time together. She is awesome I need to spend time with my friends as well and when she is mad at me and kicks me out I have to think twice about driving to your place now because you are so far away.

ME: it's not that far. It's only takes thirty minutes to get here Lwazi: thirty minutes is a lot of time Luyanda a lot of time.

Qhawe: You are being childish now.

Bandile: you really are being childish. Actually you did the same thing when Qhawe moved out of the apartment we were staying in when we were still at school.

Sipho: He has attachment issues. Do you spend time alone Lwazi?

Lwazi: Why should I do that when there's people I can spend my time with. I get enough alone time when I'm at work in my office.

Me: enough about Lwazi. Sipho do you have anything for me? Bandile: What's going man?

Me: it's this Sihle situation. I have a feeling that Sihle is still lying to me.

Sipho: You are right about that. did you know that she finished her studies? She didn't leave Johannesburg as quickly as she claims she did. she didn't come straight to Durban. She stayed in Johannesburg for a while sorting out school transfer for herself. She transferred to Cape Town and finished her degree there. She stayed in Cape Town for about three years before she moved to Durban and you were still in Johannesburg then. I don't know who helped her yet but it's not the person you thought it was. I asked the tertiary institution she went to; to check who paid for her studies that was a long time ago so it will take some time hopefully they still have the records.

Me: this woman is really playing games with me. There's really more to what she claims. She didn't leave because I didn't want to marry her there's more.

Sipho: we'll definitely find out man.

Don't worry about it. Me: thanks guys.

Bandile: heywe are here for you (Khanyi walks in with three babies. ) Khanyi: the uncles are here. Can you babysit for a bit.

Lwazi: No problem Mama Bear.

Where are the others? Khanyi: I'll bring them now.

Me: don't worry I'll come with you

Khanyi: Thanks. (few minutes later I'm back at the man cave with the two girls)

Me: they are so adorable. I can't wait to hold my little one.

Bandile: what little one?

Me: Eish I forgot that I haven't

told you guys yet Qhawe: Here

are their sits you can put them

down. Lwazi: this man cave is

fully equipped nhe.

Qhawe: Mxm

Lwazi: You don't like it when Khanyi says that to you. I

remember the day she wanted us to rescue her from you. ( he

laughs) what do you do to the poor when you punish her?

Qhawe: That's between me and her. Luyanda you were to them something.

Lwazi: why do you say "them" and not say "us" do you know what he is about to tell us?

Me: can you shut up for a minute (Qhawe sticks his tongue out

to Lwazi. These two can be so childish at times.) Lwandle is

pregnant and we are getting married soon.

Bandile & Sipho: congratulations man

Bandile: a baby and a wedding. I want to marry Ncesh before

Khaya's wedding. After Khaya's lobola negotiations prepare yourselves for me.

Me: that's what we also want maybe we can just

make it a double wedding Bandile: I don't think Ncesh will mind but I'll talk to her about it.

Lwazi: I have a question for Luyanda (we all look at waiting for him to ask his question) Did you propose to her or did you tell her you were getting married?

Me: What difference does it make? what matters is that she wants to marry me that's all. Lwazi: a little romance won't kill you guys. Make it memorable.

Me: it will be memorable and a funny story to tell our grandkids. Lwazi: Congratulations my friend. Sipho the ball is in our court now.

Sipho: I'm in no hurry man. Besides Sindy is really doing good now after that fiasco with her mom I don't want to rush her into anything. I need her to heal first

Lwazi: We hear you man.

## CHAPTER 112

A WEEK

LATER

WEDNE

SDAY

\*

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

LW

AZI

\*

\*

\*

I know Thando is very worried about me. My nightmares are back again and I don't know why. My therapist said it's probably because I'm afraid of commitment. I also need to tell Thando about my past I don't even think I'm ready for her to know. These sleepless nights are not helping either because she is always asking what's causing the nightmares and I can't tell her. I can't even tell her what they are about.

Thando: You are up early for someone who didn't sleep much last night  
Me: I'm fine baby.

Thando: I am really worried about you maybe your therapist should prescribe some sleeping pills for you.

Me: I don't want to be dependent on them.

Thando: where are you going all

dressed up early today? Me: I

have a meeting at the office today

I told you about it . Thando: yes

you did sorry I forgot.

Me: what's for breakfast?

Thando: Your favourite. Baby sit I want to say something.

(I grab a chair and sit. She looks at me with eyes full of worry) Lwazi I love you and I think I have proven my love

for you and my loyalty to you. I know that there's something behind these nightmares of yours and I won't force you to

talk. When you are ready to talk I'll be here. You've been extremely over protective lately and Lwazi I won't lie I am very worried about you.

Me: I know baby and I promise when I'm ready to tell you everything I will right now I just don't feel ready. I've tried a couple of times but it never seems to be the right time or I never know what to say.

Thando: there will never be a right time baby and the best way is to just say what's on your mind. Me: I hear

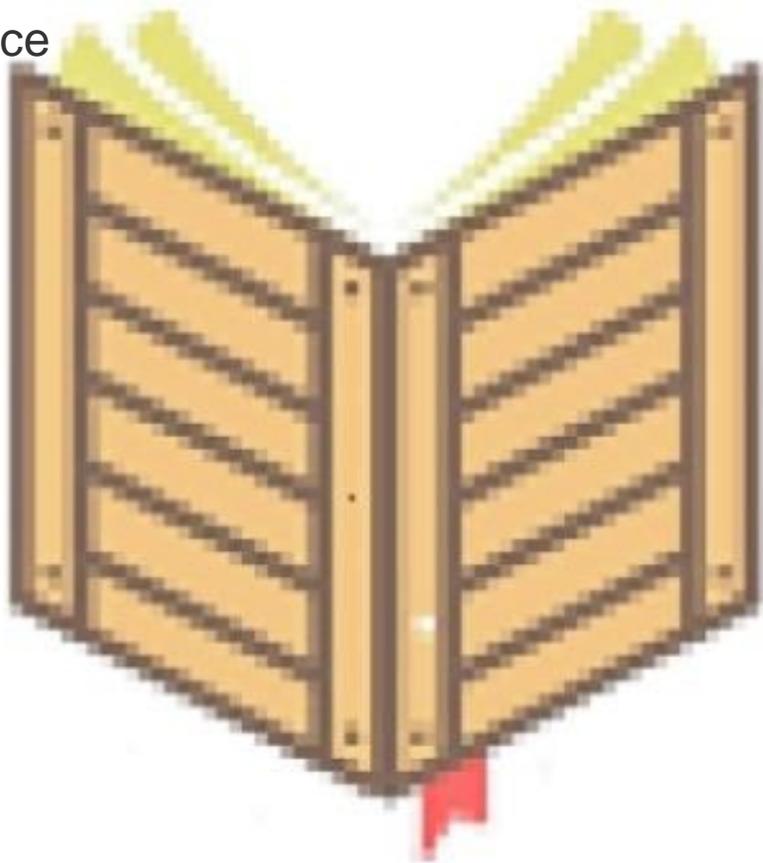
you. Let me go to work and I'll see you when I get back.

(I kiss her and leave. She is right though. There will never be a right time to talk to her about this. I should try

harder. When I walk into the reception area I notice that Bandile is here with Qhawe.) And then what are you guys doing here so early in the morning?

Qhawe: We came to see you.

Bandile: Let's go to your office



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: are you going to kill me if you are then I need to call Thando and say my goodbyes. Qhawe: will you stop being childish. (he states sitting down on the chair opposite me on my desk. Bandile is leaning against the closed office door.)

Bandile: are you having nightmares again? Me: how did you know?

Qhawe: we know you Lwazi. Start talking.

Me: ok fine. The nightmares are back and Thando has noticed that something is wrong and she's going to wait for me until I'm ready to talk.

Qhawe: Look man I am not going to force you to talk to her but you need to talk to her she needs to know. Your nightmares are probably back because you fear commitment.

Bandile: Qhawe is right you know.

Me: I know guys but I just don't know how to tell her.

Bandile: Look we are here for you and if you need us to be around when you talk to her we can do that. whatever it takes man otherwise this thing is going to eat you up and kill you slowly. You love that woman you shouldn't be

scared. Even when you tell her she is still going to love you she won't runaway if that's what you are afraid of.

Qhawe: that's true man. You shouldn't be afraid and I'm sure she is waiting for you to propose to her.

Me: I will but not yet though. I need to sort this out first.

Qhawe you should also be proposing too. Qhawe: I'm planning to. I was just scared that she might get tired and walk away I expected her to do so.

Bandile: she stayed man and on top of that she gave you five beautiful babies. Qhawe: I know guys. (my office phone rings)

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

Receptionist: Sir there's someone here to see you.

Me: It's fine you can send them up. Did they say what they want

NOVELSGURU.COM

Receptionist:  
He says he is looking to use our services.

Me: Ok fine send them up.

\*\*\*\*\*

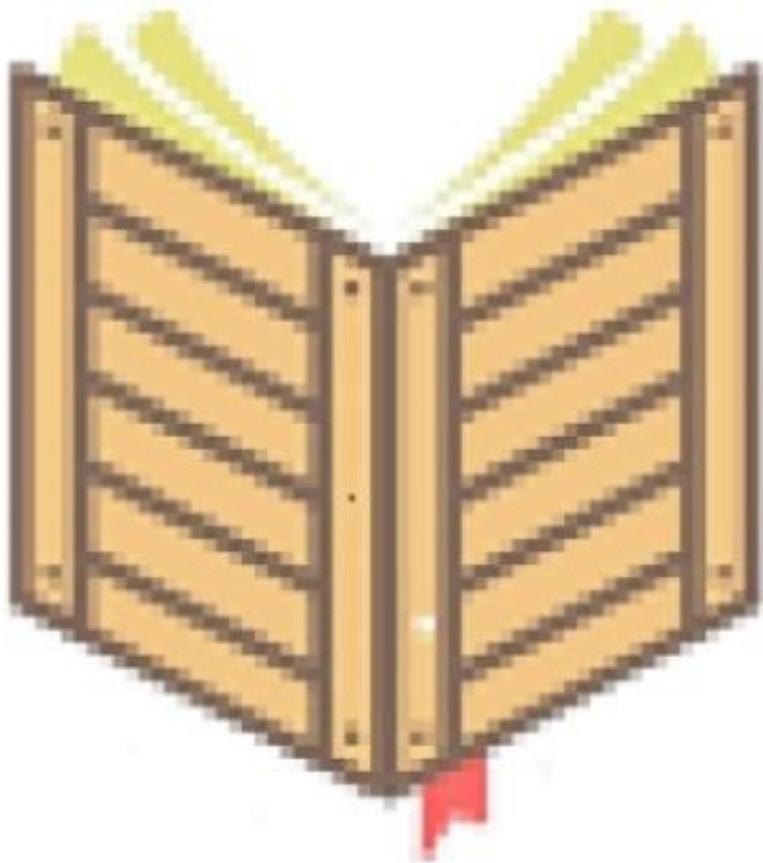
\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

Me: Guys I have a client coming you'll have to leave

Qhawe: No problem man as long as you promise that you will take care of yourself and talk to Thando.

Me: I will



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sponsored

you'll have to leave

Qhawe: No problem man as long as you promise that you will take care of yourself and talk to Thando.

Me: I will I promise. (Just before they walk out someone walks in)

Him: I'm sorry I didn't realise you had people in here. (I can see Bandile and Qhawe are shocked but not as much as I am. I'm frozen I can't move I can't breathe I feel trapped in my own body. I want to run but my feet are too heavy. I can feel the tears falling from my eyes. I am unable to speak. The only question going through my mind is "what the hell is he doing here?")

Qhawe: Lwazi are you ok? (I can hear him talk but now I'm more focused on the chest pains I am feeling my heart is beating too fast for my liking.) Bandile call an ambulance something is wrong Bandile: what are you doing here and how did you find him?

Him: I came to see him..

Qhawe: Bandile just stop with the twenty questions we

can deal with that later. Call the ambulance. Lwazi look at me I need you to sit. I think you are having a heart attack. Please man just try to calm down ok the ambulance will be here soon. (I look at him and I just closed my eyes)

\*

\*

\*

LUYA

NDA

\*

\*

\*

Me: Siphon you called.

Siphon: Yes I did. I have news for you. Sit let's talk Luyanda: so what's up?

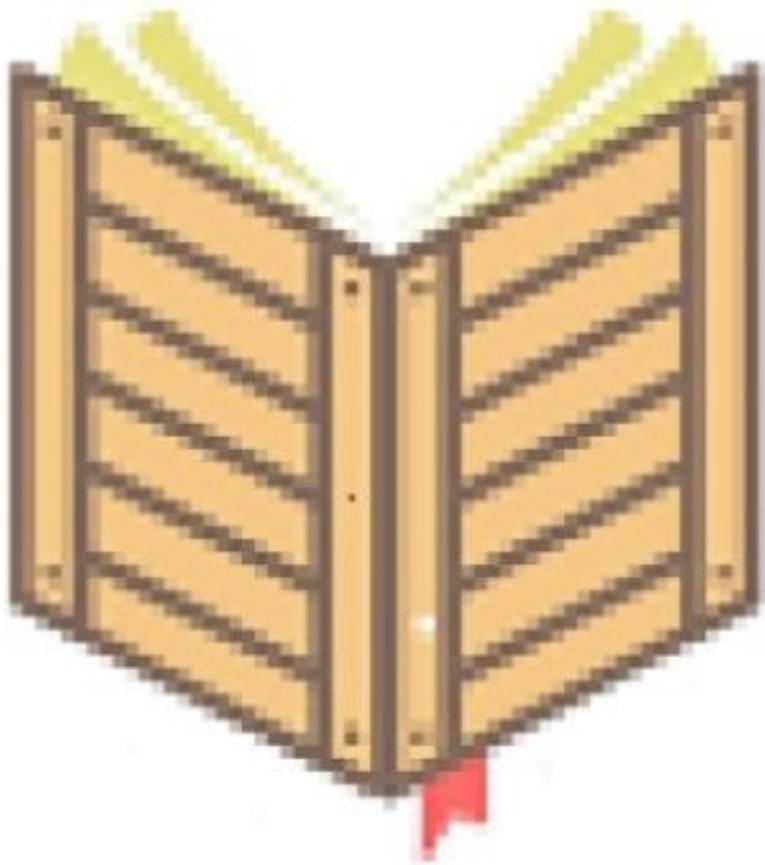
Siphon: I got the info that I was waiting for. The person who helped her pay for her fees is Luleka Gxaji. I looked into Luleka Gxaji and picked up that at that time she was in no position to pay for anyone's fees as she was still studying as well.

Me: Did you say Luleka Gxaji are you sure about that?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sipho: I am absolutely sure my friend.  
Why do you know her? Me: Just carry  
on



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sipho: Ok then. Like I said before she was in no position to pay for anyone's fees as she was still studying at that time. The money to pay for Sihle's fees was transferred into her account every three months without fail and it was transferred from a certain company using Sihle's name as the reference. The name of the company is NJONGO CONSTRUCTIONS.

Me: Why does that name sound familiar. I should ask Khanyi since she also deals with construction now.

Sipho: the company is based in the Eastern Cape maybe that's why the name sounds familiar. Me: maybe do you know who owns it?

Sipho: Not yet. When we find out who owns the company then we'll know exactly who was behind those payments.

Me: Sihle really played me for a fool you know. If she was not the mother of my child I would really kill her you know that. this whole thing was planned and she was part of this plan because she was vindictive.

Sipho: You are mumbling now.

Me: I'm just saying what the info you've given me reveals.

She planned the whole thing Sipho. She planned to take my baby from me.

Sipho: sometimes I don't know what drives people to do the cruel things they do to others and they expect to be forgiven just like that and expect the victim to forget. I'm sorry man and if it was me I would have killed her. it wouldn't have mattered if she is the mother of my kids for this she deserves to die. How the hell do you plan taking someone's child away from them without a valid reason.

Me: We'll never know how other people's minds work.

Sipho: Let me go. I'm meeting Sindy for lunch. I'll let you as soon as I have something on the company. I'll see you later.

S'phesihle what the hell were you thinking I can't believe this was actually a well thought out plan. It was a perfect plan. If it was not for Lungi insisting to know more about me and ending up in hospital in the process I would have never known that she was still **alive**. Lungi is going to be torn when she finds out about this. Sihle how can yo be so cruel to your own child nevermind me but your own child. May her Gods have mercy on her. I need to talk to my dad.

# STILL WEDNESDAY (AT THE HOSPITAL)

\*

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

BAN

DILE

\*

\*

\*

We've been at this hospital more times than I care to count. The nurses and the doctors already know us. I'm sure they've never had a family that frequents the hospital as much as we do. Lwazi was definitely not looking good when they took him. We can't lose him.

Me: He's going to be ok right?

Qhawe: he has to be Bandile. He can't die not yet.

Me: what was the old man doing there anyway what did he want?

Qhawe: (he looks up at the door of the waiting room as it opens) it looks we are about to find out? What are you doing here is it not enough that he is here because of you? **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: I just want to know if he is ok and I would like to talk to him when I can.

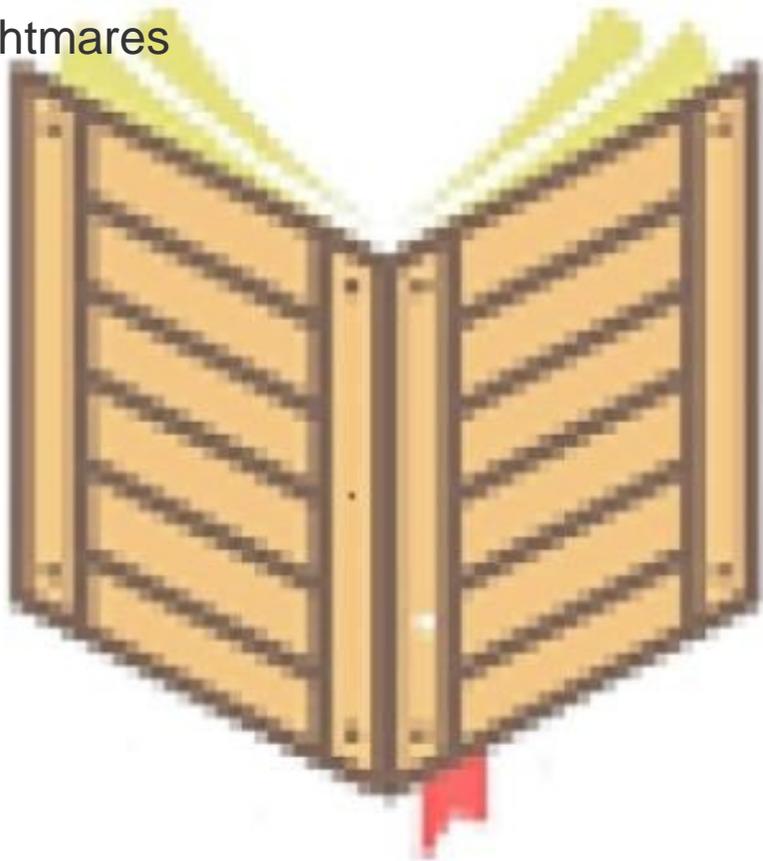
Me: why do you care if he is ok or not. Were you waiting for him to get his life together so that you can destroy him again?

Him: It's nothing like that. I want to apologise to him for everything that I did which I assume you know about. I'm an old man now I've learned new things in life I've gotten myself sober and realised the wrongs I've done and now I'm just trying to fix things. I know that he may never forgive me and that's ok I don't blame him. Even though I know that may be the case I still want to try and apologise.

Qhawe: I really don't know how you expect him to see you after what happened I don't even want to see you.

Me: I really don't understand how our parents hurt us so much and then all of sudden boom they want to be forgiven. Sure forgiveness is a good thing one has to forgive for their own sanity more than they need to forgive the person that did them wrong. You are taking advantage that. if my mother walked through that door and apologies do you want to know what I would tell her? I would tell her to take that apology shove it up where the sun doesn't shine which is what I think Lwazi should do with your sorry apology. In fact I should take you somewhere beat the living day lights out of you make you feel what you made him when he was just a kid. He was a child how do you do shit like that to your own child and

expect them to forgive you. (I could feel my tears falling and I can't control. I feel Lwazi's pain all over again. It brought back everything that my mother did to me I didn't even know my dad back then she never wanted to talk about him.) Tell me something old man do you know how much pain you have inflicted on Lwazi do you know that he has nightmares



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

everynight now because he is afraid of a long term commitment to his girlfriend and you walk into his life and ask for forgiveness how does your brain work. Let me tell you what I had t go through. My mother was an alcoholic and a drug addict maybe you know her since you had the same habits as her. she was drunk and high everyday slept with different men everyday just to get a fix. Do you know what else she would do if they didn't want to sleep with her? She sold me to them so that they can fuck me and she gets her fix. She didn't care as long as she had her alcohol and drugs she was good she was sorted. I cried out for her to help me to stop what she was doing but she didn't care. All she wanted was her alcohol and drugs. She watched as they did all these things to me she watched. (Qhawe walks up to me holds me and gets me to sit down.)

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: hey look at me. I need you to calm down. I can't lose both my brothers in one day. Do you know what that would to me. Please calm down and come back from that place. I'm here ok. (he holds me in his arms and he lets me cry in his arms. I never use to cry

but being around

Khanyi changed that. "You are human and you are allowed to show your emotions" that's what she always says. I pull out of Qhawe's arms and look at him he was also crying)

Qhawe: are you ok (he gets up to get me a glass water) here drink this. Me: I'll be ok.

Qhawe: As for you you need to leave now before I lose it. Him: I can't I have to know that he is ok.

Qhawe: go wait somewhere else just get out of here. Your presence here is not doing anyone any good. (the man gets up and walks out)

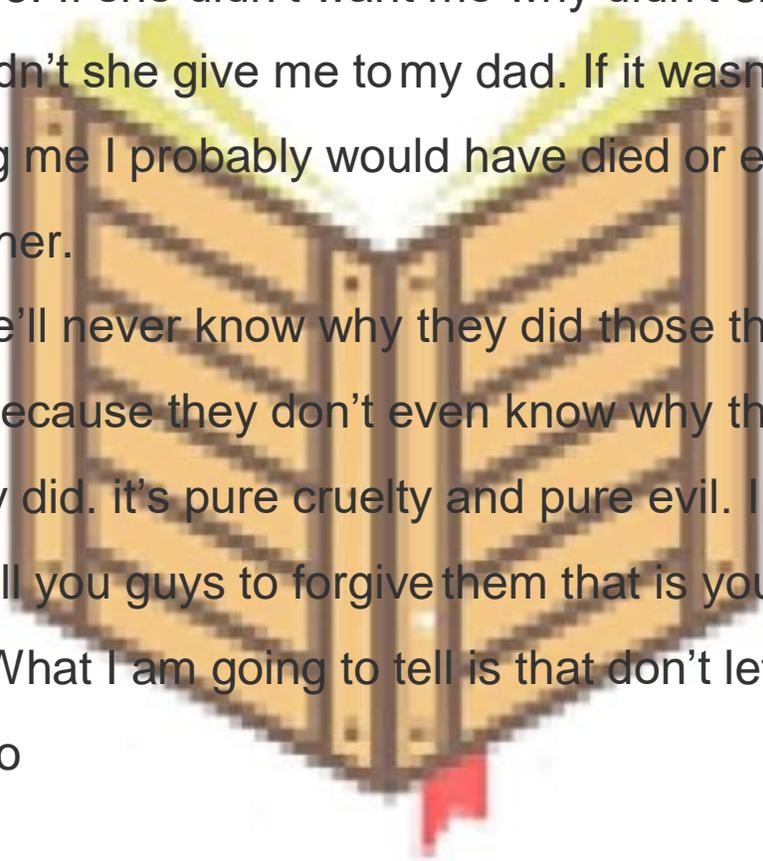
Me: Why Qhawe why do they do these things and come running for forgiveness why do they expect their children to always forgive them. He was suppose to protect him and his mother Qhawe instead he became the monster under their beds and they had no one to protect them.

She killed herself because of him she couldn't take it anymore and the only way out for her was to die. She didn't have to die Qhawe she did nothing wrong she was trying to protect her son but she couldn't

Sponsored

she was no match for his strength. My mother never protected me Qhawe she never cared she never even tried to care. If she didn't want me why didn't she abort me why didn't she give me to my dad. If it wasn't for my dad finding me I probably would have died or ended being like her.

Qhawe: we'll never know why they did those things probably because they don't even know why they did the things they did. it's pure cruelty and pure evil. I am not going to tell you guys to forgive them that is your decision to make. What I am going to tell is that don't let them take you back to



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

that dark hole. Look at you you've come too far to go back there I can't let you do that I won't let you do that. They are not worth the trouble and the tears. Just because my life was different from yours it doesn't mean I'll stop being your brother and your friend or I'll care less. I'm here for you

always. Go ahead and breakdown as much as you want I am here. Your mom didn't love you guess what I love you and losing you to this is not an option. Does Ncesh know about this?

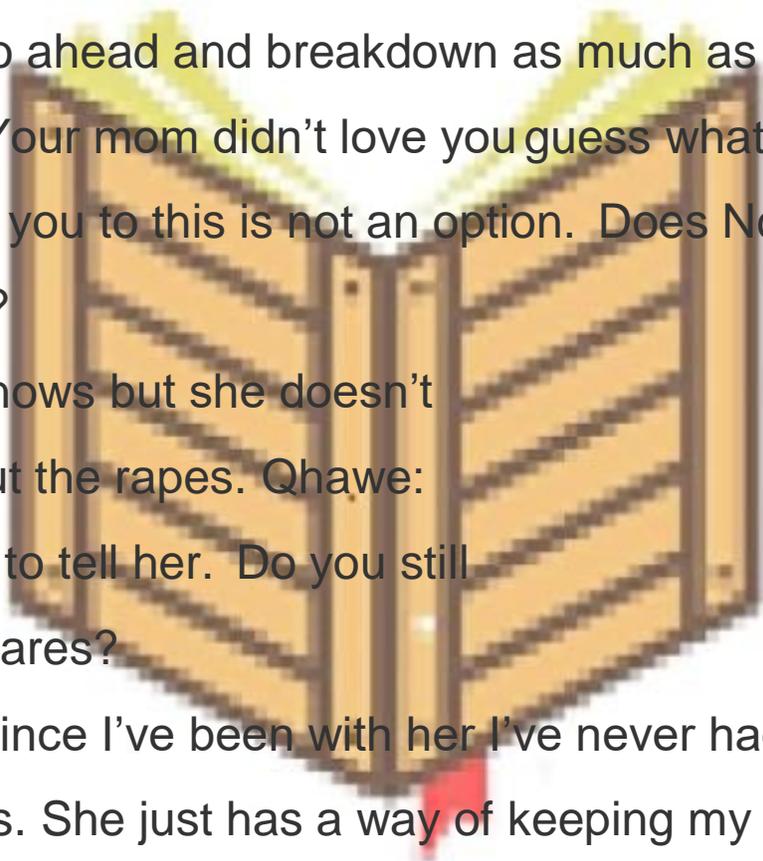
Me: she knows but she doesn't know about the rapes. Qhawe: find a way to tell her. Do you still get nightmares?

Me: ever since I've been with her I've never had nightmares. She just has a way of keeping my soul calm without even trying.

Qhawe: that is a good thing meaning that she is good for you. Doctor: Lwazi

Phato

Qhawe: Yes what's wrong with him. (the doctor walks up to us and sits next to Qhawe) Doctor: He suffered



NOVELSGURU.COM

a minor heart attack

Qhawe: does that mean he is going to have heart problems this is his first attack.

Doctor: Not necessarily. A heart attack is not always as obvious as chest pains it can happen without the person knowing they are having one at times you might think it's panic attack. He needs take care of himself. He has a strong healthy heart but he needs to avoid whatever caused this attack.

Qhawe: Thanks doc. Can we see him.

Doctor: You can see him he is awake but not for long. He asked to see his brothers. Me: that's us.

Doctor: You don't look ok. Come to my office before you live I'll give you something for the headache and something to help you sleep tonight. He is going to be fine. Take good care of him. he is waiting for you.

Qhawe: thanks doc.

\*

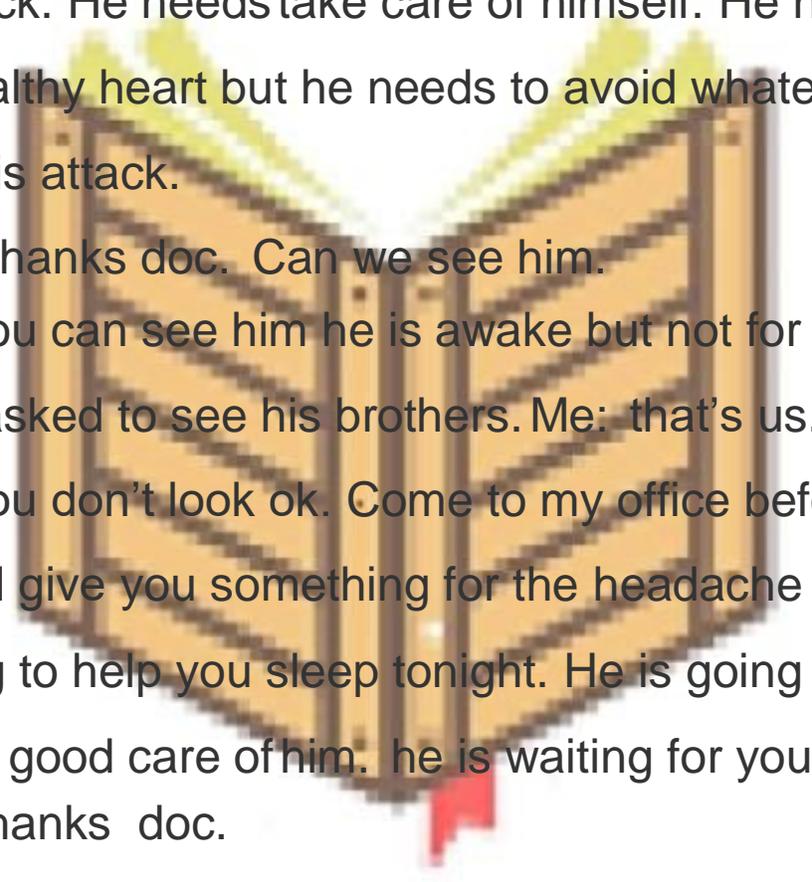
\*

\*

LUYA

NDA

\*

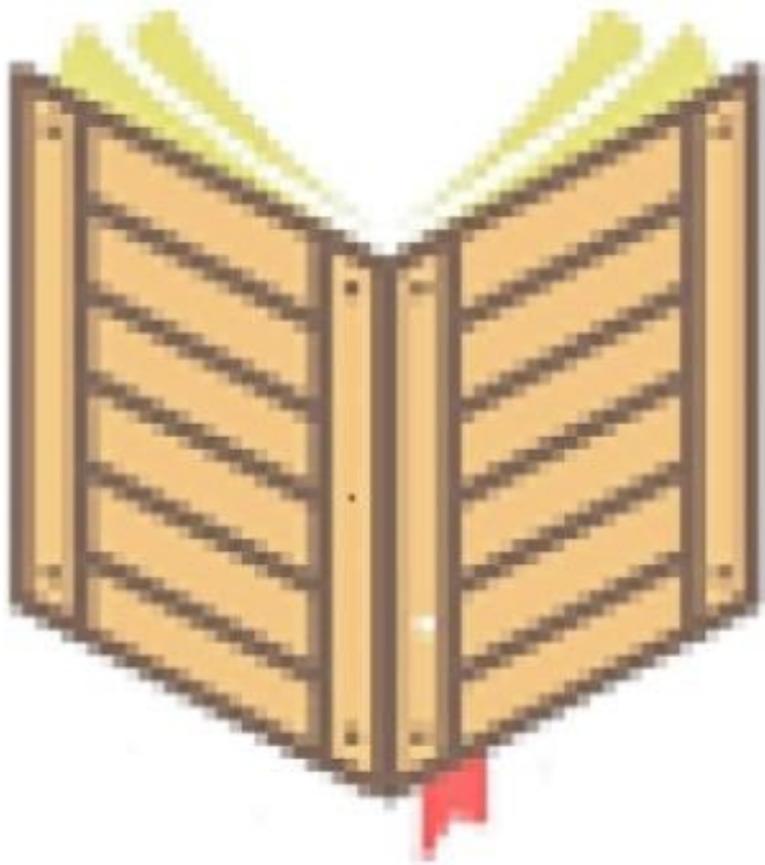


NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

Qhawe called about Lwazi being in hospital so we have to go there but first I need to call my dad and talk to Siphso. He should be here any minute.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*\*\*\*\* phone

conversation\*\*\*\*\*

Me: dad how are you?

Dad: I'm good son

how are you? Me:

Not good tata. Not

good at all. Dad:

what's wrong?

Me: dad do you remember Luleka Gxaji?

Dad: Yes but I haven't seen her or her family in years in fact I haven't seen them ever since Lungi went missing.

Me: she was involved in helping Sihle run away with my child tata. Sihle also had help from someone in the Njongo Construction Company

Dad: Are you trying to give me a heart attack

Luyanda. That company belongs to only one person

oh no!!!

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: dad they messed with the wrong father this time. I am going to destroy them and dad you can't tell anyone yet not even mom.

Dad: I understand.

Me: I have to go dad. A friend of mine is

in hospital I'll call you later. Dad: ok son.

I hope your friend is ok.

Me: I hope so. Talk later dad.

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\* Sipho: what happened to

Lwazi?

Me: I don't know yet. Let's go we'll find out when we get there.

Sipho: I take it you already know the owner of the company that paid for Sihle's fees. Me: I do I just found it hard to believe when you told me.

Sipho: I'm sorry man.

Me: it's fine. I am going to destroy them one by one.

Sipho: you need to talk to Sihle she needs to tell you exactly what happened.

Me: I know man and right now she is probably praying that I never found out the truth hence she never told me the whole story and opted to lie to me.

Sipho: Now she has no choice but to tell you everything oh and I found Luleka as well. She is here in Durban. I'll text you the address. She lives in Kwa Mashu.

Me: Thanks man. I haven't received your invoice

Sipho: let's sort this mess out then we can talk about the

invoice.

Me: Ok if you say so. (when we got to the waiting room they were not there.) excuse me nurse we looking for a patient that was admitted today his name is Lwazi Phota.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Nurse: Let me check for you and you are? There's a visitors and I have to make sure you are on the list.

Me: Luyanda Langa and Siphon Dlamini.

Nurse: ok. You can go to the second floor he is in room 205 Me: thank you very much.

Siphon: I'm sure you guys are already well known in this hospital and they probably know your needs.

Me: You can say that again. Lwazi what the hell man (I say as we walk in walking towards him and hug him) What happened?

Bandile: He had a heart attack.

Me: That's impossible Lwazi is as healthy as a horse what happened?

Qhawe: His father showed up at his office. (I felt defeated my body just got too heavy for me. I dropped myself on the chair next to me. Not everyone knows what happened to Lwazi I'm one of the few that know.)

ME: What did he want? Bandile:

He wants to apologies

Me: APOLOGIES! APOLOGIES! APOLOGIES for what?  
He can take his apology and shove it up where the sun  
doesn't shine. Apologies! Apologies my bloody ass.

Bandile: My  
sentiments exactly

Sipho: ok what's  
going on?

Qhawe: there's a lot you still have  
to know about us Sipho. Sipho: I  
get it.

Me: Lwazi how are you feeling?

Lwazi: I'll be ok. Where is

Thando I have to talk to her.

Bandile: they will here later on.

Lwazi: and Mama Bear?

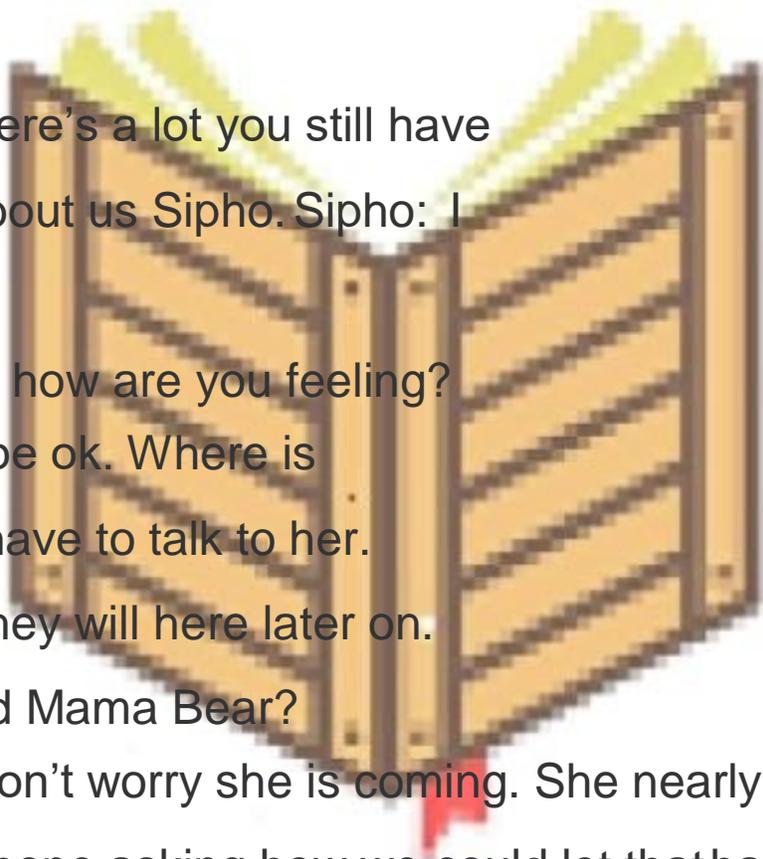
Qhawe: Don't worry she is coming. She nearly killed us  
over the phone asking how we could let that happen.

Lwazi: You have a wonderful woman  
there Qhawe. Hold on to her. Qhawe: I

intend to. You need to hold on to

Thando.

Lwazi: No doubt ( he closes his eyes)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Qhawe: he's been drifting in and out of sleep.

I think he is scared to sleep . Siphon: I hate seeing him like this.

Me: Where is this old man?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Bandile: We don't know Qhawe told him to leave.

Me: I don't want to see him if I do I swear I'll end up in a holding cell.

## CHAPTER 114

### THURSDAY

\*

\*

\*

LW

AZI

\*

\*

\*

I must have fallen asleep after the guys left. Why would he come back now? I don't need him in my life. How can he walk into my life and expect me to forgive him just like that.

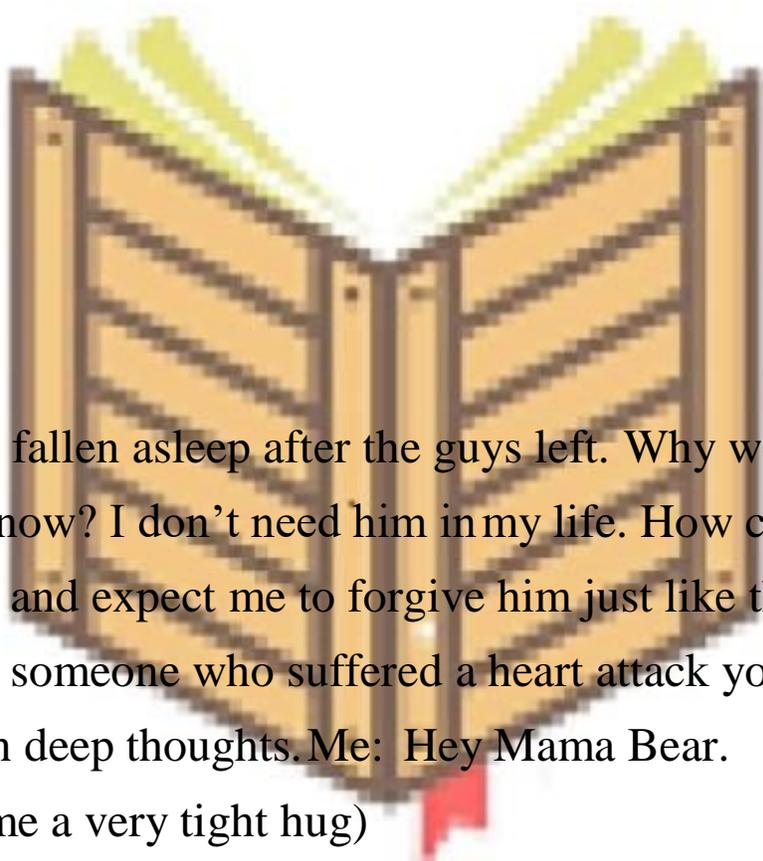
Khanyi: for someone who suffered a heart attack you are surely in deep thoughts. Me: Hey Mama Bear.

(she gives me a very tight hug)

Khanyi: I'm sorry I couldn't come yesterday your babies kept me busy. How are you feeling? Me: It's ok I understand. I don't know I really don't know.

Khanyi: Thando will be back soon she went home to shower and change. She is really worried about you. You have to tell her.

Me: I know Mama Bear I know. I didn't have any nightmares



NOVELSGURU.COM

last night I think having her next to me helped me relax last night.

Khanyi: As long as you got some sleep.

Me: I don't know why he is back Khanyi why now. the last time I saw him I had just finished writing my grade 12 final exam. That's when we buried my mother. I walked away and never looked back after my mother's death. I don't need him in my life I don't want his apology Khanyi.

Khanyi: hey calm down before you give yourself another heart attack. I won't tell you what you should do. What you do will completely be your decision and whatever you decide make sure it is right for you. At the end of the day you have to be happy you have to let go of the past and move on with your life. You are not alone we are here for you always. Remember we made a promise to each other that as the family that we are we will always stand by each other. **YOU ARE NOT ALONE.**

Mcebisi: She is right you know. (as he walks in.) Mother in law how are you? (kissing her cheek)

Khanyi: I'm good and you?

Mcebisi: I'm good just not happy that my partner in crime is lying in a hospital bed. You need to get out of here because my life is boring with you here. I can't irritate these people alone you know that right

Me: I know. I'll be out soon hopefully tomorrow. Mcebisi: that's good to

hear. So what caused the attack? Me:

Long story. Someday I'll tell you.

Mcebisi: fair enough. I'm not staying long I have a meeting close by so I thought I'd swing by here before going to the meeting.

Me: thanks man.

Mcebisi: I have to go. I'll come back later tonight

I'll bring us some food. Me: that would be awesome.

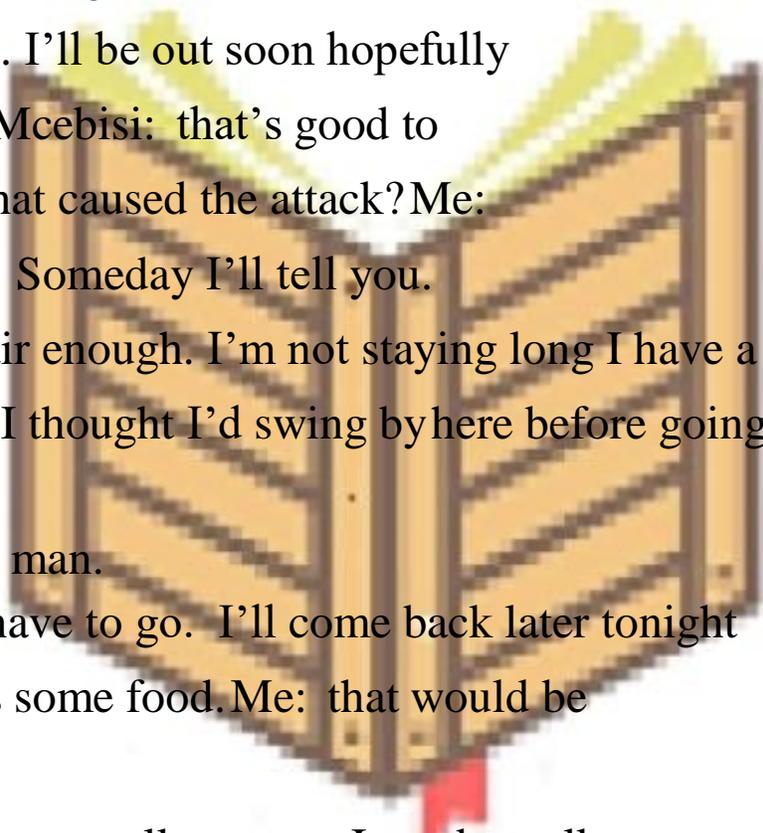
Khanyi: Let me walk you out I need to talk to you about something. I'll be back just now Lwazi.

Me: OK. (as they walk out

Thando walks in.) Thando:

Lwazi no 2 are you good?

Mcebisi: I'm good. I'll see you guys tonight. Thando:



Why not at lunch?

Mcebisi: I have a lunch date with my Lina. Thando: I see. Bye.

How are you feeling today? Me:

I'm ok I suppose.

Thando: I made your favourite breakfast.

Me: Wonderful but before I eat I want to talk to you. Come here. (I turn on my side and get here to lie next to me.) turn the other way I want to hold you from behind. Are you comfortable?

Thando: yes I am. You know it always feels good to be in your arms. So what do you want to tell me?

Me: When I was six year old I started noticing a lot of things around the house. I started noticing how my dad was treating my mom. One night he came home drunk as usual that night mom was not feeling well. I was watching tv. He went straight to his room and after a few minutes he came back and told me to go to my room. As I walked out he went to the kitchen maybe to warm his food I don't know. Sometime later he came into my room just as I was starting to fall asleep. He opened my covers and told to take off my clothes. As I was taking my

clothes off he told me that everytime he comes home and my mom is asleep I am going to satisfy his needs. I was so confused didn't understand what was going on. After I was done he made me kneel in front of him and took off his pants and his trunk and told me to suck him. I refused getting up I tried running to the door but he grabbed me and made me kneel again. "If you don't want me to hurt your mother do as I say." After saying that he slapped me seeing that I wasn't doing anything to do what he wanted. He slapped me again and I started crying he told to keep quiet I am going to wake up my mother. I cried silently still kneeling in front of him. He took off his tie and used it to tie my hands behind my back. He forcefully opened my mouth and he put it in my mouth. He held my head with both his hands holding it in place and started fucking my mouth when he was about to climax he took out and spilled his juices on my face. He looked at me and smiled. He took his pants put them on untied me and took my bath towel and wiped my face. He helped put my pyjamas on and tucked me in and told me tomorrow is another

day. He also threatened to kill my mother if I tell anyone. That's how it all began. The fourth time it happened we were alone in the house just me and him my mom was in hospital because he beat her so bad that she had to be hospitalised. I never told my mom what was going on. I didn't want her to die because of me. He came into my room and just said "you know what to do." He

did what he normally does but this time it was different. He stood me up and told me to bend over on the bed. I hesitated

Sponsored

I didn't understand. He bent me over himself and opened my legs and my but chucks and I felt a cold fluid flowing down my butthole soon I felt a finger going in. I have never cried so much in my life hoping that someone would hear and come help me. He took his finger out and fucked me senseless. There was so much blood the pain I was feeling was nothing like I've ever felt before. I kept thinking to myself that how can my own father do this to me? How can he say he loves me and do this to me. I hate him I hate him. that's all that was going through my head how much I hated and how I don't want him to kill my mother. Everyday that week my mother was in hospital and he would do as he pleases with me. My cries didn't help. (she is wiggling herself she wants to face me and I don't want her too.)

Please Thando don't just stay like this please.

Thando: Ok.

Me: My mother was discharged from hospital and he never even bothered to go fetch

her. When she came home she immediately noticed that something was wrong and she only

noticed because I was walking funny because of the pain. She didn't have to ask she looked and my tears just fell. "HE SAID HE WOULD KILL YOU IF I TOLD YOU." She tried to calm me down and asked me tell her everything and I did. she was in tears as well. She went and packed our stuff and we left but it didn't take long for him to find us because we never went far. He dragged us back home and beat us. He said "IF YOU TRY TO RUN AGAIN I WILL FIND YOU AND THIS WILL HAPPEN." He forced himself on both of us that night. He started with me in my room then my mom. Everytime we tried to run he would find us I don't know how. My mom had no family and we couldn't run to his family that was the first place he went to. This became our life until I was 15 and I was starting high school. My mom suggested I go to a boarding school. It took a lot of convincing from her side I don't know what kind of deal she made with him that made him to agree to let me go but he did. But it didn't stop. Whenever I went home for school holidays he would do the same thing and this time it was different because he would hold a gun against me so that I don't fight him. my mom tried to protect me she tried to take my punishments for me she really tried but he wouldn't have it. He wanted both of us to suffer. She lost two babies because of the beatings. When I was doing matric my mom told me that I have to make sure that I pass and told me not to come home for the holidays. She had an arrangement with one of the matrons that I

would spend the holidays with her. During my matric year I was safe from my father but I was worried about my mother how she was suffering. My father was not even allowed to visit me. I never saw him that year. During school holidays my mom would come visit me for a day and then go back. Everytime she came she had bruises she always looked like she was in pain. The last time she visited she reminded me that I had to pass my matric. She told me that after I finish my exams one of uncles from my father's side is going to fetch me from school and I am going to stay with him until I go to varsity. When I start varsity I'll be on my own. She said "I don't want you to stay with your uncle long because he will find you and he will take you from him. Lwazi please my child do everything as I tell and you will be safe from him. Your busary has been approved and it is going to pay for everything you need until you finish your studies. All you have to do my child is to make sure that you pass your exams. Your uncle will be available should you ever need him but do not contact him unless you have to. Do you understand Lwazi." This was two days before I started with my final exam. She gave me a lot of documents about my studies and my busary everything I needed and there was a bank card with a pin number wrote on the piece of paper.

"Lwazi do as I tell you and you will be safe. Remember contact your uncle only when you need to . He knows where you will be and he will visit when he can. I LOVE YOU my boy." She

held me so tight and that was the last time I saw her alive. She planned everything. When I finished my exams my uncle came to fetch me. He called my mother and told her I was with him and the following day we got news that my mother had killed herself. She used my dad's gun. The last time I saw my father was at my mother's funeral. He tried talking to me but my uncle stayed true to his word of protecting me against him. When the school year began he drove all the way to Durban helped get registered and everything else. Once a month he would come visit me until I started working and told me that it was my turn to visit him now that I am earning money and he is too old to travel. He kept me sane. His love kept me going. My mom died protecting me from a man who she thought would love us till the end. (at this point I couldn't control my tears. I let go of Thando and sat up trying to wipe my tears. She got up and sat on top of wrapping her legs around my waist holding me tight and letting me cry on her shoulder.)

Thando: Thank you for telling me. I know it was not easy but thank you for trusting me and telling me.

Me: I love you very much and keeping all this from you has been very hard. (she pulls away and wipes my tears.)

Thando: I'm never leaving. If you thought I was going to leave when you told me then you are wrong. You are stuck with me.

Me: I wouldn't have it any other way. Now I can eat. I'm hungry. (she gets off me and prepares the food for me just then

my father walked in.)

Thando: I'm sorry

who are you? Him:

I'm his father

Thando: you are not welcome

here please leave. Him: Lwazi

please.

Me: She said leave

Him: I'm sorry for everything Lwazi I'm sorry for the pain I caused you.

Thando: I said get out he doesn't need your sorries. (Just then Luyanda walked in) Luyanda: What's going on?

Thando: he doesn't want to leave. Please leave before this gets ugly for you. (Luyanda turns to look at me raising his eyebrow)

Me: he is my father. Please leave or this will turn ugly. I don't want to hear anything you have to say to me. You didn't listen to me when I begged and cried for you to stop. When my mother cried and begged you to stop. You never listened. Just leave. (Luyanda pulls out his gun but he doesn't point it at him)

Luyanda: Leave otherwise one of us is going to jail today. (my father looked at me and left.) Me: What kind of a lawyer are you why are carrying in a gun?

Luyanda: I just saved your ass from another heart attack just say thank you and stop with twenty questions. Can I also have some food.

## CHAPTER 115

FRIDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

LUYA

NDA

\*  
\*  
\*



Lwazi has been discharged today but he is going to have to miss out on the action. Sizwe is already here. We are starting the weekend off with a bang.

Me: where are the other?

Sizwe: they are coming. I have your package. (he says with a big smile on his face)

Me: Where is it?

Sizwe: In the car. Come. ( He opens the door and there she is and she looks like she has just seen a ghost.)

Me: how are you

my dear? Her:

how did you

find me?

Me: Oh darling it was easy. (I give her my hand to hold so that she can get out of the car.) Sizwe: You are awfully nice to her.

Me: Oh come on Sizwe she is going to die today I might as well be nice. We are probably the last people she is going to see today.

Sizwe: You might be right about that. Hopefully I'll get a chance to have a little fun with her. Her: Lu please don't do this. I am sorry.

Sizwe: what exactly are you sorry for my dear?

Me: don't ever call me that. Sizwe let's go inside we have other people to see inside. (I knock and turn to look at her and just smile. Right about now she is as confused as anything. The door opens after a few minutes. Bandile and Qhawe just walked up)

Sihle: Luyanda! What are you doing here? I wasn't expecting you.

Me: we are here to see you and I have a special guest with me. I move aside since she was standing behind me. (I could see fear creeping in) May we come in? (she hesitantly stands aside and let's us in.) Oh look another piece of the puzzle is here my work has been done for me I won't have to spend much time looking for you.

There's only one piece missing and it's probably on it's way. Gentlemen please make yourselves comfortable.

Sihle can you please bring us glasses. (I take the bottle of whisky I was holding and put on the coffee table. She walks in with the glasses and I pour drinks for me and my guys.)

Qhawe: This is nice. Baby mama the ex fiancé the aunt to baby mama. Ladies! (he lifts his glass towards them and smiles.)

Sihle: what are you doing here?

Sizwe: I think you know why we are here. By the time my drink gets to be half of what it was when Luyanda poured it for me you had better have told him what he wants to know otherwise shit is going to hit the fern. I would start talking if I were you.

Sihle's aunt: what is this what is

going on here Sihle? Sihle: I

don't know either.

Luleka: just stop it. We've been caught can't you see that.

it's over Sihle he knows. The mere fact that we are all here means he knows.

Sihle: You can start talking since this whole thing was your idea and I went along with it.

Me: You know Sihle Lungi's soon to be mother in law has this special room in her house. It has all these lovely toys we can use to torture you into talking my favourite thing in that room is the electrical chair it's a nice comfortable chair you wouldn't think it's a deadly weapon and it's got this cute little remote and she loves playing with it. if someone doesn't start telling me what I want to know I am moving this little party to her house put you in that chair and let her play with the remote. Sihle: Luyanda please don't do this.

Sizwe: it's funny how they start off by begging you not to do this and forget the pain they

caused you. The last woman I tortured is still alive. It was hard for me to do it. I dated her for a few months broke up with me and hurt someone I care deeply about. I ended up torturing her but I didn't kill her because I realised that I

couldn't kill someone I am falling in love with and she got pregnant and now we are happy with a daughter soon we'll be married. You see with you ladies here it's different I feel nothing for you I can easily put a bullet through your head. Lungi is my niece now and I love her and you've hurt her a lot. I want to hear someone talking.

Luleka: it was my idea

Bandile: we have discovered that move along.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Luleka: when you told me you were not going to marry me I was hurt I was more hurt that you made someone else pregnant. I saw how much you paid attention to your daughter when she was born it was like I never existed. Sihle was also broken by the fact that you didn't want to marry her. I went to her and told her that she should take the baby and go away. We both wanted to hurt you like you hurt us but we would wait until the baby was at least a year.

Me: You stayed with me knowing that you were planning on hurting me.

Luleka: I had to so that you don't suspect anything on my side. Luyanda I wanted to marry you I wanted to be with you your rejection hurt us. (at this moment I can feel myself boiling with anger. I take a sip of my whisky just to calm down.)

Qhawe: I want to understand something. Luyanda was honest with you from the beginning that he was not ready for a serious relationship let alone being ready for marriage right ( they nod) why did you make your problem of settling for less his problem. He made it clear and you still wanted to be with him both of you wanted more from

him which he couldn't give and you opted to settle for the little that he was offering why was that made his problem. You settled for less and that was your choice he didn't force you. As for you Sihle I'm pretty sure when you got pregnant you were both drunk and didn't use protection. Even then he didn't run away from his responsibility. He loved his daughter and took care of her.

Bandile: So your families knew and watched him make a fool of himself grieving for a child that is alive and well somewhere. I want to know why.

Sihle: I told my family that he didn't want us anymore that he was getting married and his new wife didn't want my daughter to visit Luyanda. I told them he was abusive towards me and I was scared for my child.

Lungi: You did what???? (when did she get here. She was not suppose to be here. DAMMIT!!!!) Me: Lungi what are you doing here?

Lungi: I came to see if I can talk to her maybe even forgive her for what she did but now I don't think that's going to happen. Who are these people?

Me: these are partners in crime.

Lungi: so what you are saying is

that everything was planned. Sizwe:

that's what we are telling you.

Lungi: I'll be back. (she walks out going to the direction of the kitchen comes back a few minutes later with a bottle of wine and a glass already filled halfway.) Dad I love you and I respect you you know that. I never drink in front of you but today please let me be. (I look at her. I take a cushion from the couch place on the floor between my legs and signal for her to sit. She deserves to know the truth anyway



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sponsored

place on the floor between my legs and signal for her to sit. She deserves to know the truth anyway she might as well hear it from the horse's mouth.) So your family thinks that my dad is an abuser?

Sihle: yes they do

Lungi: Why mama? Wait don't answer that I know what you are going to say. Who is this? (she asks looking at Luleka)

Sizwe: well my dear niece that is the woman your father was suppose to marry but refused. Your mom disappearing with you was her idea.

Lungi: Let me guess you wanted to hurt him because he rejected you. Tell me something why would you want to settle for less settle for a man who would never put you first in his life a man you would be nothing to. Were you that desperate that you would hurt your own child mama. I'm sure you never thought the truth would come out and right about you are wishing I had never met a man who wanted to marry me at least that way I wouldn't have

bothered you so much about wanting to know who my father was. You were still in school when you left right. How did you manage to finish your degree who helped you?

Bandile: I like this child. She is asking all the right the questions. Sihle: My aunt helped me. She paid for my fees.

Lungi: but how ma. I'm pretty sure your aunt wanted to remain anonymous in this whole thing and there's something missing in this story of yours. Your family can't go through all this trouble of staying quiet just because you were abused. (my daughter just came in and took charge of this party she is angry I have never seen her like this. Actually I have. She is me she really has taken my personality but she is too angry. Khaya needs to come get her.)

Me: excuse me I need to make a call. ( I make my call and go back to the lounge)

Sihle: Luleka paid the money herself. Every three months my aunt would transfer money into a company's account that company would transfer the money to Luleka who would pay the institution. (Khaya

walks in. that didn't take long.)

Me: Khaya  
take her.

Lungi: but  
dad.

Me: no Princess I don't want you to end up doing  
something you'll regret. Go with Khaya please Princess.

Khaya: Listen to your dad Lungi this is not going to end  
well. Let's go babe. (she gives in grabs her bag and  
leaves with Khaya. Sipho walks in with the last piece of  
the puzzle)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: good you are here we were just getting to the part where you were involved in this fiasco. I knew you hated us but to go to an extent of keeping my child from me. I know you hate my

mother and she never did anything to you we never did anything to you but here you are destroying us and for what for a man that was never yours in the first place a man that never even acknowledged your existence until he introduced you to my mother. Tell me aunt Bulelwa what did my daughter do to you?

Bulelwa: You guys couldn't keep your mouths shut.

Sipho: Oh don't blame them. They didn't say anything we did a little a digging and found the truth. Bandile: We are smart like that.

Me: So aunt Bulelwa you did this to have the pleasure of watching my parents and me suffer and the other two did it because I wouldn't marry them and the other one thought I was an abuser. You all stripped me of a chance to raise my daughter and give her all the she deserved you took that away from her. You watched me go crazy knowing very well that my daughter was alive. Sihle you watched being miserable everyday because she wanted

her dad. (I just couldn't continue talking.) Sizwe: this is how this is going to work. Sihle you were going to be part of the wedding as her mother that deal is off

Sihle: Luyanda please I can't miss her wedding day.

(without hesitation I shoot her on the arm) Me: If you don't shut up the next one goes through your head.

Sizwe: You are no longer invited to the wedding including your family. Luleka you have been relieved of your duties due to malpractice you will never work as a doctor again.

Don't say anything. Aunt Bulelwa please sign the documents that Sipho has for you. You no longer own Njongo Constructions. (she tries to say something but Sizwe waves his gun at her.) Sihle's Aunt I feel for you sign your boutique is no longer yours. The three of you that are married expect divorce papers soon from from your husbands. As it turns out your husbands don't condone what you did they find it unforgivable.

Me: I am going to take from you all bit by bit by the time I'm done with you; You will be begging me to kill you.

This is just the beginning. Dr Gxaji I'm sure you can manage to patch that bullet wound.

SATURDAY

\*  
\*  
\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

SIHLE

\*

\*

\*

Me: Please I'm begging you  
talk to him for me. Khanyi:

What do you want me to say to  
him?

Me: I just want to be part of Lungi's wedding that's all.

Khanyi: For you to even think that I would do that for you is very  
stupid. I have kids that I wish had a relationship with their fathers  
but I got myself involved with idiots but now they have a  
wonderful man in their lives. Now you want me to help you I'm  
sorry but I can't.

ME: please as a woman I'm sure you can understand the pain  
of having to miss out on your child's wedding day.

Khanyi: I can't believe you just said that. What about the pain  
you caused Luyanda and the daughter you claim to love. Why is  
it always about you. What about the people you've  
hurt. Next thing you know you are going to go around calling  
Luyanda a dog or trash forgetting that you are the reason he was  
never a part of his daughter's life. Leave now before I say  
something I'll regret. One more thing; if you ever label Luyanda  
as a bad father as a dog or trash or even a useless father you will  
be signing your death warrant. What he is doing to you now is

nothing compared to what I'll do to you if you ever hurt him again. GET OUT OF MY HOUSE AND NEVER COME BACK.

Me: Khanyi please. Our kids are getting married soon we are going to be in laws soon. Khanyi: As far as I am concerned Lungi doesn't have a mother. Please leave. (what she just said hurt. It hurt so much. I really didn't think and act like a mother. Come to think of it my daughter will never forgive me. As I walk out I bump into Lungi and Luyanda.)

Lungi: mama what are you doing here? (Luyanda just looked at me and walked away) Me: I want to be able to attend your wedding Lungi. You dad has excluded out.

Lungi: With good reason mama.

Me: Lungi please I can't miss out on the most important day of your life.

Lungi: What about all the other important days of my life that I didn't get to share with my father because of you. Mama you planned for me not to have my father present. Mama I never wanted the expensive schools you took me to the expensive gifts and all that. I wanted to have a relationship with my father I wanted to know him. you had all the time in the world to right your wrongs mama but you didn't. Instead you watched me suffer in silence missing something I never had. You allowed the void that I had to grow you watched me isolate myself you were not

even there. I didn't even have friends. You didn't even try to make it easy for me to talk to you. What hurts the most is that you planned it. I had to miss out on a lot of things with my dad and for what just because you were rejected and now you are going to stand here and ask for forgiveness. I never thought that my own mother would do this to me. Yes you are cold and all but this mama your own child I don't think I can forgive.

Me: Oh Lungi please my child don't talk like that. I'm sorry Lungi

Lungi: What do you want me say mama. Your apology is not going to change anything mama. You did what you for your own selfish reasons and in the process you were not only hurting the person you intended to hurt but you hurt me too. I was ready to forgive you mamabut finding out you planned the whole thing made me very angry ma. I am beyond angry with you.

Me: Lungi please I raised you it was just you and me. I was always there for you Lungi. I did the best I could raising you. Please forgive me my child. I was young and naïve.

Lungi: It was your choice that you raised me alone. Had you not kept me from my father and my family you wouldn't have had to do all that on your own. It was your choice. I can't have this conversation with you right now mama. (she says unable to control her tears and walks away from me.)

Me: Lungi please don't do this.

Luyanda: Please let her be. She is hurt and she has the right to be.

Please leave. (without saying anything I turn and walk out.)

\*

\*

\*

MCE

BISI

\*

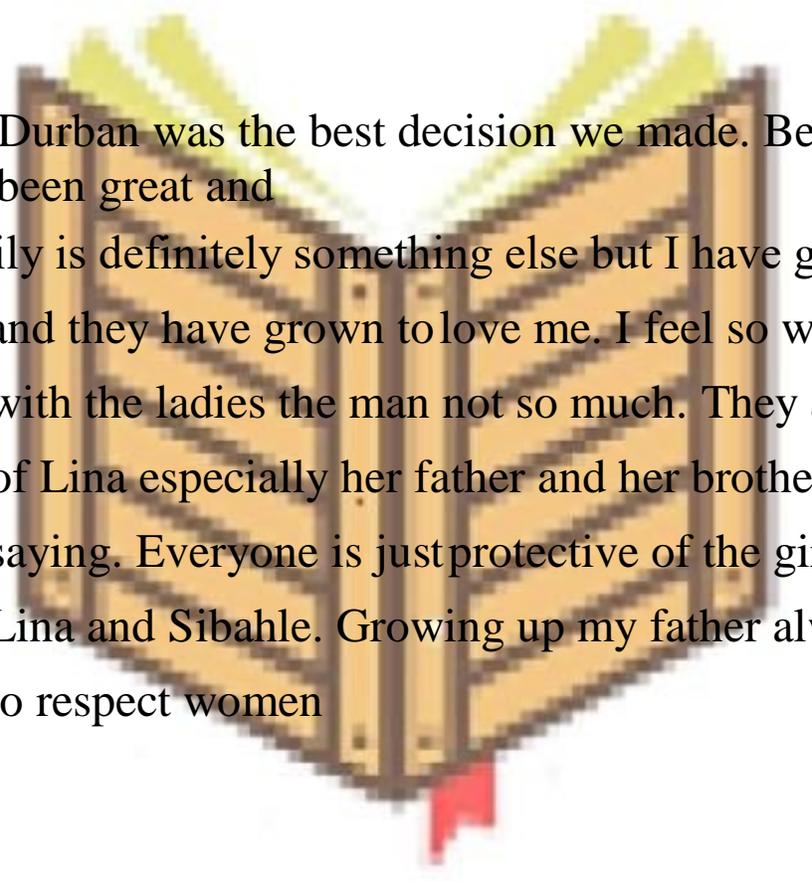
\*

\*

Moving to Durban was the best decision we made. Being close to family has been great and

Lina's family is definitely something else but I have grown to love them and they have grown to love me. I feel so welcomed especially with the ladies the man not so much. They are very protective of Lina especially her father and her brothers argh what am I saying. Everyone is just protective of the girls especially Lina and Sibahle. Growing up my father always taught me to respect women

Sponsored



NOVELSGURU.COM

argh what am I saying. Everyone is just protective of the girls especially Lina and

Sibahle. Growing up my father always taught me to respect women treat them like Queens and in as much as I treat my woman like a Queen she should also treat me like a King. Dad always taught me never to settle for less than what I want. Lina is everything I want in a woman and I am definitely going to wife her.

Dad: Mcebisi when are we meeting this girl of yours?

Me: She is scared Baba(dad) and I don't want to put pressure on her. She wants to meet you too but she is scared.

Dad: I want to meet her before we go to her home.

Have you spoken to her father? Me: Not yet Baba.

Ngizokhuluma naye kusasa. (I'll speak to him tomorrow)

Dad: Khabazela wenza kancane le ntombazane iyode ibonwe ngabanye abafana(Khabazela you are moving. This will eventually be noticed by other boys.)

Me: Never Baba. She is my Queen. You know Baba she likes calling me Singela Dad: uyazazi yini

izithakazelo zakho? (does she know your clan names)

Me: Ngiyamfundisa Baba. (I'm teaching her dad.) She is a fast learner too.

Dad: that's good to know. Talk to her father as a parent he will appreciate that and you must bring her so that we can meet her. I'm tired of looking at her pictures. Your mother also wants to meet her. she can't wait to have a daughter.

Me: I know Baba. I'll bring her soon.

\*

\*

\*

KHA

YA

\*

\*

\*

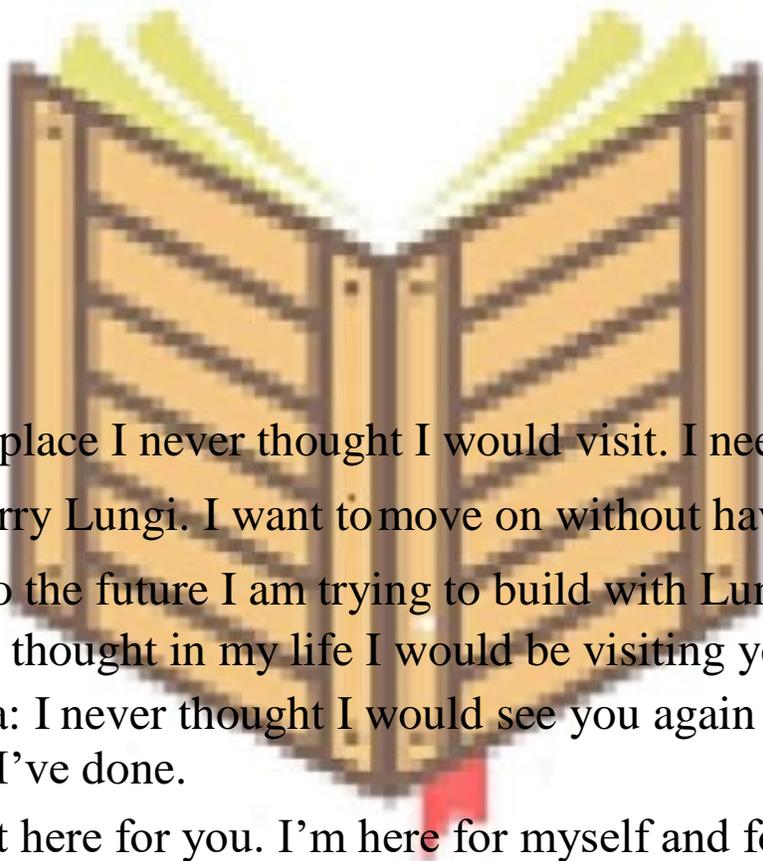
This is one place I never thought I would visit. I need to do this before I marry Lungi. I want to move on without having to drag my past into the future I am trying to build with Lungi.

Me: I never thought in my life I would be visiting you here.

Nkosikhona: I never thought I would see you again after everything I've done.

Me: I'm not here for you. I'm here for myself and for Lina. I know you don't love us you don't care even but I am starting a new chapter in my life and I don't want to drag my past into it.

I'm



getting married soon and I love her very much. Even though you were not around to talk to me about girls and how to treat them mom was there. As I sit in front of you right now I don't see you as my father I don't even know what I see when I look at you just as much as I feel nothing for you. For a long time I blamed myself for you not being a part of our lives. I always thought that I did something to keep you away from us. I turned a blind eye to everything my mother taught me until someone opened my eyes for me and made me look at life as it is. Life owes me nothing I owe life nothing. I shouldn't blame myself for your stupidity and your foolishness. I shouldn't blame myself that I am not important to you. It's a choice you made no one forced you to stay away from us. I don't need you Lina doesn't need you. We made it to where we are today without you and we are still going to achieve a whole lot more without you. You have made your choices in this life you showed us who was more important to you.

Nkosikhona: it's not that you were not important.....

Me: Please don't do that because if you loved us and if we were important you we wouldn't be here having this conversation now would we. When you get out of here don't try to find us and endlessly ask for forgiveness. We are no longer your children infact we were never your children. Because of your selfishness you are going to miss out on my wedding and Lina's boyfriend is planning on proposing soon. When you get out of

here don't looking for us wanting to meet your grandkids. You will never meet your grandkids. You have no one to blame but yourself. We forgive you and we are not forgiving you because you asked. We forgive you because we want to have a peaceful life we want peace of mind we want to be free from you and holding a grudge is going to keep us insane and you are not worth it.

Nkosikhona: I hear you and thank you for coming to see me and thank you for your forgiveness. Who is going to handle your lobola negotiations? I can always ask my uncles to help you.

Me: that's not why I'm here. Like I said before. I don't need you and your family. My dad and my grandfather are handling that. Mom always tells us that "YOUR ACTIONS MAKE YOU WHO YOU ARE" and your actions made you. I have to go and I doubt I'll ever see you again.

## CHAPTER 117

SUNDAY

\*

\*

\*

BAND

ILE

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

\*

Me: Babe

Ncesh:

mhhhh

Me: I need you to wake up

Ncesh: But Bandile it's so early and it's a Sunday

Me: I know my love I know and I'm sorry but I need to talk to you. Please turn around and look at me (she slowly turns around and looks at me with her lips pouted.) I'm sorry my Angel but I need to talk to you and it's important.

Ncesh: What's wrong?

Me: It's just that there's something that I never told about my past and I need to tell you before we get married. I would like us to get married soon. Soon as in before Khaya and Lungi get married if you are ok with that. L

Luyanda and Lwandle also want to be married before Khaya and Lina so Luyanda suggested a double wedding. What do you think.

Ncesh: I would love a double wedding. I always thought that me Thando and Khanyi we would share a wedding day.

Me: You never know anything is possible.

Ncesh: is that what you wanted to talk to me about?

Me: No babe. I want to talk about my past there's something I never told you. Ncesh: Ok I'm listening

Me: I told you how my mom was an alcoholic and everything else she did. What I didn't tell you is that she used to sell me to her dealers. They would have sex with me so that she can have her fix. It's something I don't like talking about unless I have to. It always hurts to go back there. If my dad had never found me I would be dead.

Ncesh: what happened between your parents?

Me: my parents were never married. They dated casually.

When she found out she was pregnant she never told him instead she left. Apparently my dad found out from one of mom's friends that she was pregnant. It was difficult for him to find us because she never stayed in one place for too long. Trying to find someone like that is never easy. He didn't have the kind of resources we have now he had to do it himself and it was costing him a lot of money that he didn't have. It took him a very long time to find me but eventually he did and here I am today. I don't know what happened to my mother and I could care less.

Ncesh: do you know what I love  
about you and Lwazi  
Me: What?

Ncesh: You didn't let your circumstances over shadow the good that's in you. You didn't let them bring you down you didn't dwell on them. You got up and made something of yourselves. You are living proof that no matter what happens in your life no matter how long it takes you can always find a way out of a bad situation. If you were any other person you would probably treat women like they are nothing because of what your mother did but you are not making women suffer because of the sins of the other and I love that about you and I want you to trust that I will always be here for you always.

I am sorry that you had to go through all that. No one deserves to experience such.

Me: hence we have decided to become ambassadors for men who had gone through the same and more. We have decided to join Khaya's Brotherhood project. Our main focus will be abuse towards men and Khanyi will be spearheading that for us basically she is going to be out publicist.

Ncesh: you couldn't have chosen a better person. She is good at that kind of staff. Bandile I love you I love you very much don't ever doubt that. What happened will never change how I feel about you or how I treat you.

Me: thank you for being here and I love you more.

Ncesh: we need to get up and get ready to go otherwise Khanyi will kill us if we are late for Sunday lunch. Oh and

next week it's our turn to host everyone for the weekend.

Me: Hayibo babe

Sponsored

I love you very much don't ever doubt that. What happened will never change how I feel about you or how I treat you.

Me: thank you for being here and I love you more.

Ncesh: we need to get up and get ready to go otherwise

Khanyi will kill us if we are late for Sunday lunch. Oh and next week it's our turn to host everyone for the weekend.

Me: Hayibo babe you know weekends are always better at Khanyi and Qhawe's house especially the farm house.

They can accommodate all of us..

Ncesh: babe we have to give them a break especially now that they have new babies. they can't always host us all the time.

Me: it's just that Qhawe has an awesome mancave.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ncesh: And I thought it was something better. Me: You'll never understand babe.

Ncesh: Whatever... Last one to the bathroom makes breakfast and drives to the farm. (she quickly jumps off the bed running to the bathroom. This one is crazy. In fact all these women are just crazy. Khanyi is the worst.)

\*  
\*  
\*

LINAMA

NDLA

\*  
\*  
\*

Me: Khaya

Khaya:

Mhhhh

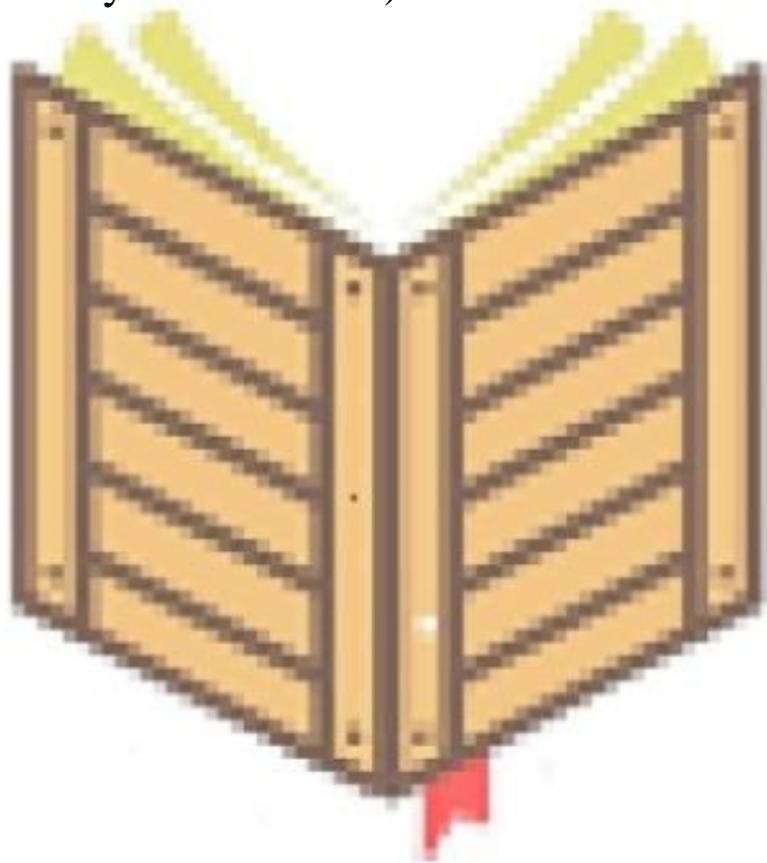
Me: can

we talk?

Khaya: What's up?

Me: How did you know Lungi was one the for you?

Khaya: that's easy. The minute I knew that I couldn't live without her I knew she was the one for me. I can't look at another woman without seeing her face. She is the first thing on my mind when I wake up in the morning and the last face I see



NOVELSGURU.COM

in my mind before I go to sleep. Why do you ask.

Lina: I love Mcebisi so much that I would do anything for him.

I don't see myself with anyone else but him. he understands me and I understand him. He has become my oxygen tank. He asked me yesterday how I felt about him and what I just said is what I told him. I didn't even need to think about it. I answered without thinking. My answer just flowed so easily.

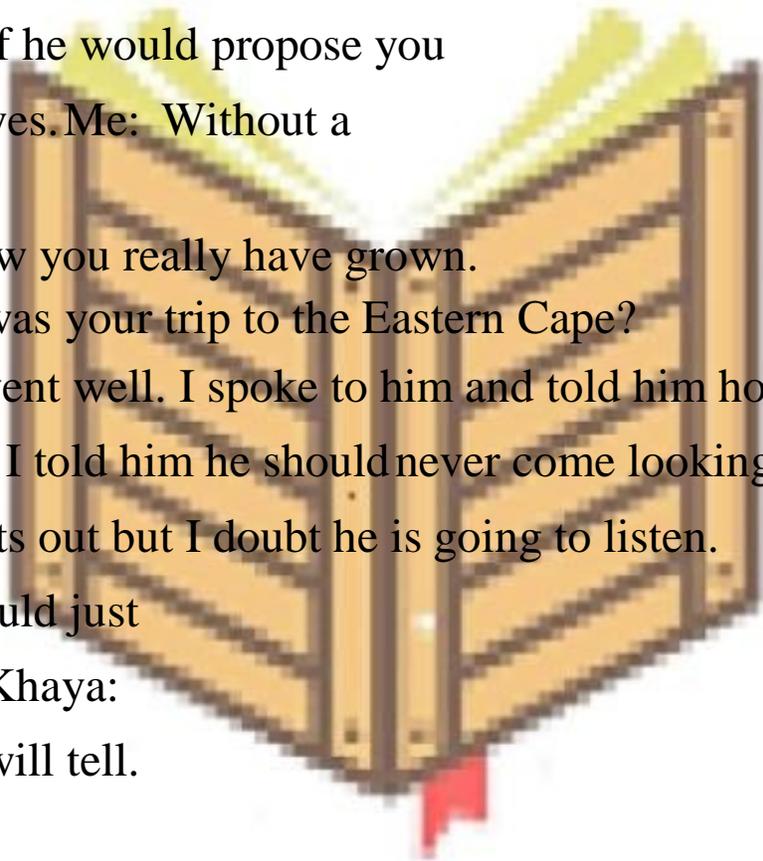
Khaya: so if he would propose you would say yes. Me: Without a doubt.

Khaya: wow you really have grown.

Me: How was your trip to the Eastern Cape?

Khaya: It went well. I spoke to him and told him how we felt and all. I told him he should never come looking for us when he gets out but I doubt he is going to listen.

Me: he should just stay away. Khaya: Only time will tell.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: he hurt us Khaya and now we are the ones forgiving him and he hasn't even apologised for what he did. I know an apology won't change what happened but the decency of apologising goes a long way. I don't want to see him. Qhawe is my dad he has been there for us from the day he met us.

Especially you he didn't even know that he would end up dating your mother let alone becoming a family and having more kids with her. When I have kids of my own I am going to do the same thing mom did with us. I am not going to hide him from my kids. I will tell them about him and his family so that they know both sides of the family. I think it worked with us it kept us grounded. I

Khaya: I think so too little sis. I am grateful that we have Qhawe in our lives. Who knew we would be here today.

Me: No matter how hard I try to understand Nkosikhona I will never understand the things he did. I just don't understand that we were never important. I don't understand how some men just don't care about their children. Having a child is one of the best things one could do in their lives and to just not be a part of that experience is just ridiculously stupid.

Khaya: it's ok Lina lets just move on with our lives in peace. We have all we need. We have finally settled in our lives we finally have peace baby sis. Let's enjoy what we have and look forward to a wonderful future.

\*

\*

\*

LW

AZI

\*

\*

\*

Me: Thando what are you doing? We are going to be late.

Thando: I'm coming babe. I just needed to get bag that has the staff I bought for the babies. Me: Ok. Let's go then ( she comes down carrying a bag full of God knows what. We get to the and drive off.)

Thando: I am glad that you and Bandile decided to take the negative part of your lives and turn it into something positive and I will support you and be by your side always.

Me: Thank you for that my Love. I would like your boutique and Ncesh's salon to be part of the sponsors for the Brotherhood project. I looked at your financials. The boutique is doing well so you can afford to sponsor and Bandile aslo said that Ncesh can afford to sponsor too.

Thando: I don't have a problem with that.

Me: Khanyi is also going to talk to you about hosting a gala dinner to raise funds to build another center for boys that have been through what we've been through and men who have had the same experiences with their childhood and have not spoken about it. We want them to have a safe place they can come to and talk about what happened or what's happening.

Thando: that sounds good babe. I'll definitely be a part of that. Me: Khanyi is going to be the publicist.

Thando: Even better. there aren't many projects that help and support abused males and I am happy to be a part of this.

Me: we are going to make it work. Thando: and it will work.

Me: I love you Thando. There was a time that I wasn't sure if I do love you. But right now at this very moment I am sure that I love you and I want you to always be a part of my life. You know knowing that my mom died protecting me gave me strength to go on and believe that my uncle loves me. His love was all I had until I met Bandile and Qhawe. Their love was all I had until I met Khanyi and then I met you.

Thando: and I am here to stay. We are here and we are on time but it looks like we are the last to arrive.

Me: I bet you my life that Luyanda is not here yet. (I say we get out of the car and walk towards the house. This place is

absolutely amazing. Qhawe has outdone himself. He should design my house.)

## CHAPTER 118

### TWO MONTHS LATER

\*

\*

\*

It is now the 1st of May everything has been going well with everyone. Khaya's lobola negotiations went well. At least he wasn't charged too much. After those negotiations it was Bandile and his after him it was Luyanda. In two weeks time the couples will be getting married. They opted to have a double wedding and Khaya and Lungi are getting married end of July. Everyone is busy with wedding plans. Khaya and Lina had to go to the Eastern Cape and Nkosikhona's family did the IMBELEKO for them they were asked to spend a few days there after the ceremony and in that two days Nokhaya did something that Nkosikhona should have done a long time ago. She introduced

them to her two kids who are younger than them Amandla and Siyabonga. It seems like they are going to have a good relationship but only time will tell.

After the revelation of Lwazi and Bandile's past the family has become even more united. They also shared their stories with kids since they wanted to be part of their project and that was a very sad moment. The girls couldn't control their tears. This was lesson for them a lesson that not only females get raped males get raped too. the girls are starting their campaign soon. "STAND UP FOR A GOOD MAN" that's what they call it. It is inspired by the men surrounding them the men in their lives. Everyone is also pitching in on this one and they plan to make it a nation wide project encouraging all the men who have been through abuse or are being abused to speak up and break their silence.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lonwabo and Sibahle are first year students at varsity and they are doing well so far and exams are coming up soon as well as Lina.

\*

\*

\*

LU

NGI

\*

\*

\*

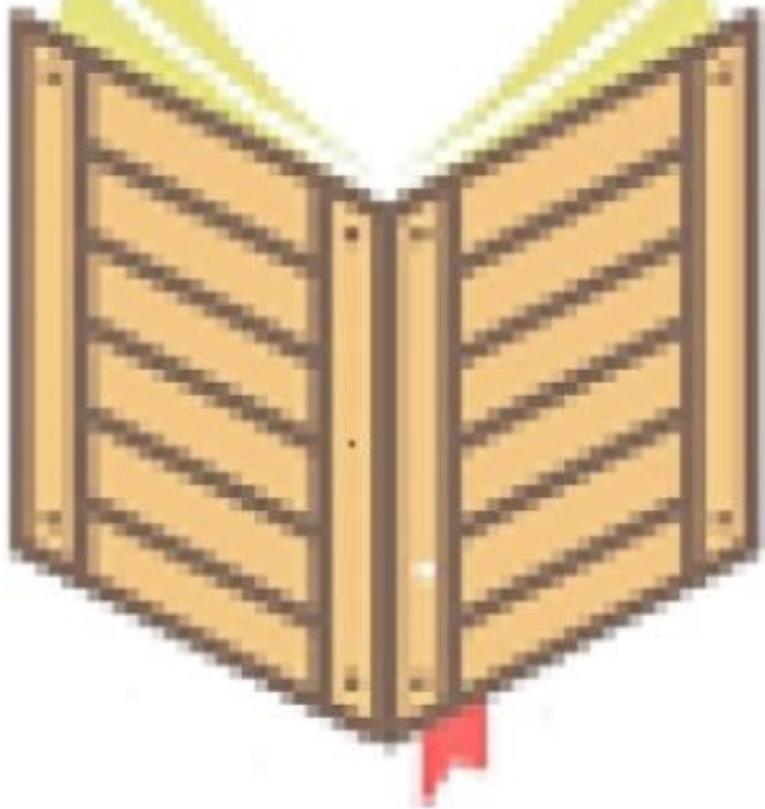
The lobola has been paid. Negotiations were two months back. Mom tried to make things difficult demanding the money to go to her but dad put her in her place telling her that she's not getting a cent out of that money. Dad put the money in a trust for me so that I can continue with my studies. Not a single cent is going to be spent on the wedding. He said he can afford to pay for the wedding. I am now traditionally Mrs Sondlo since he paid the lobola but we are not living together. He said we would live together after the wedding. I still live with my dad but now Khaya is allowed to come over and I go over to his place freely and it's been good. I'm out shopping with Lwandle. We are now sitting at Wimpy having lunch and there she is the last person I expected to see and she is coming to our table.

This woman doesn't even greet.

Her: You know you'll never be good enough for him. you are not his type. Me: is that so? Then why am I married to him and not you?

Lwandle: Lungi who is this?

Me: Zukiswa Khaya's ex. We call her Barbie



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwandle: it suits her. Look sisi we are busy here so step off before I beat that make up off you.

Her: Oh please you won't do anything to me. As for you I still say you are not good for

him. (Lwandle was about to say something and I stopped her. she must just let me handle this and besides she's

pregnant she can't go around beating people. Dad would kill me if I let her do

that. Just as I was about to say something Khaya walked in with Mcebisi. I swear those two are tied to the hip. They immediately walk over to us.)

Mcebisi: Oh look what we have here. Ladies how are you doing? (he asks kissing my cheek and Lwandle. Khaya does the same and looks at Zukiswa. I swear if looks could kill she would be dead.) You look familiar have we met? Oh wait I remember you. You are the Barbie. What are you doing here congratulating the new Mrs they look good together don't they?

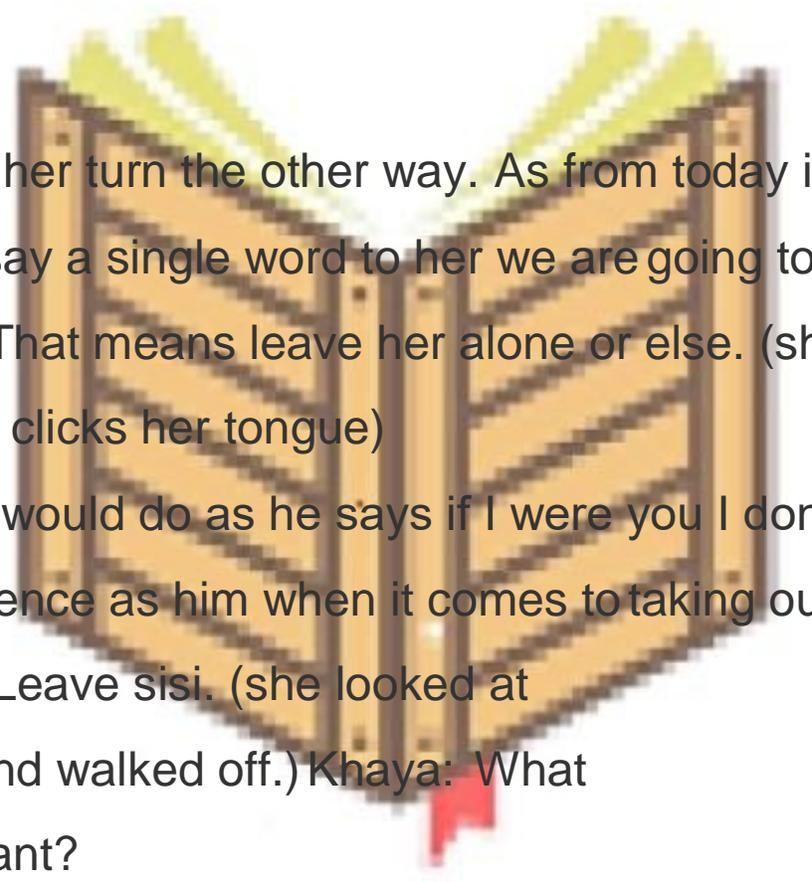
Her: it won't last.

Mcebisi: hayibo how do you know are you God now? anyway just leave the sight of you is exhausting. (she looks at Khaya hoping he is going to say something)

Khaya: Since you are looking at me like you want me to

say something I might as well say something. Zukiswa  
this Lungiswa my life my heart the new Mrs Sondlo. Stay  
away from her if you see her turn the other way. As from  
today

Sponsored



if you see her turn the other way. As from today if you so  
much as say a single word to her we are going to have a  
problem. That means leave her alone or else. (she looks  
at me and clicks her tongue)

Mcebisi: I would do as he says if I were you I don't have the  
same patience as him when it comes to taking out trash.

Lwandle: Leave sisi. (she looked at  
all of us and walked off.) Khaya: What  
did she want?

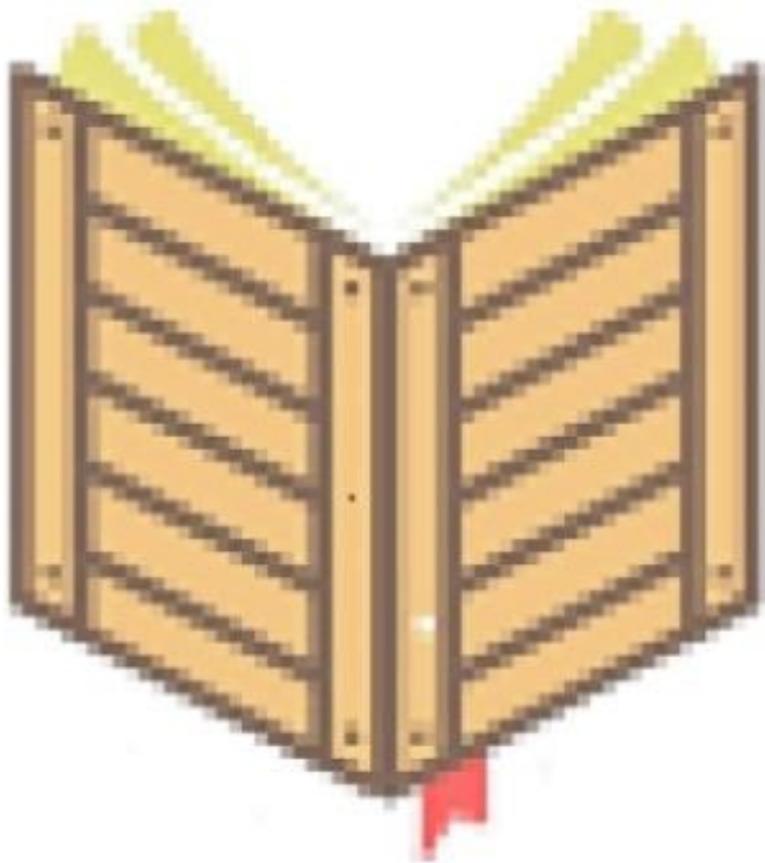
Lwandle: She was telling Lungi that she is not good for you

Khaya: I guess she thinks she is. Babe look at me. If you  
were not good for me if I didn't love as much as I do if I  
didn't see a future with you I wouldn't have asked you to  
marry me.

Mcebisi: we need to deal with her once and for all

Khaya: I know. I'm tired of her talking trash to Lungi every chance she gets. It is time I deal with her now.

Me: What are you going to do to her?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mcebisi: don't worry your pretty little head about that Mrs Sondlo. You just relax and we'll take the trash out for you.

Lwandle: You truly belong in this family. You just spokelike them. Your mother would be proud.

Mcebisi: why is it that everyone gets surprised by actions. I was meant to be part of this family. Look at me and Khaya we get along like a house on fire. You would swear I was the one married to him.

Khaya: too bad I don't do man otherwise you would make a good partner.

Mcebisi: I know darling I know. (he says imitating a girl's voice and waiving his hand around. We all just laugh.

Mcebisi is crazy.)

\*

\*

\*

LONW

ABO

\*

\*

\*

I walk into my parent's room and they were both sitting on the couch cuddling. I guess the babies are sleeping. I feel bad interrupting this moment.



NOVELSGURU.COM

ME: hey guys

Dad (Qhawe):

Wabo what's up?

Mom: Hey you. You  
are back.

Me: yes mom. Dad can

I talk you please. Dad:

Sure thing. Have a sit.

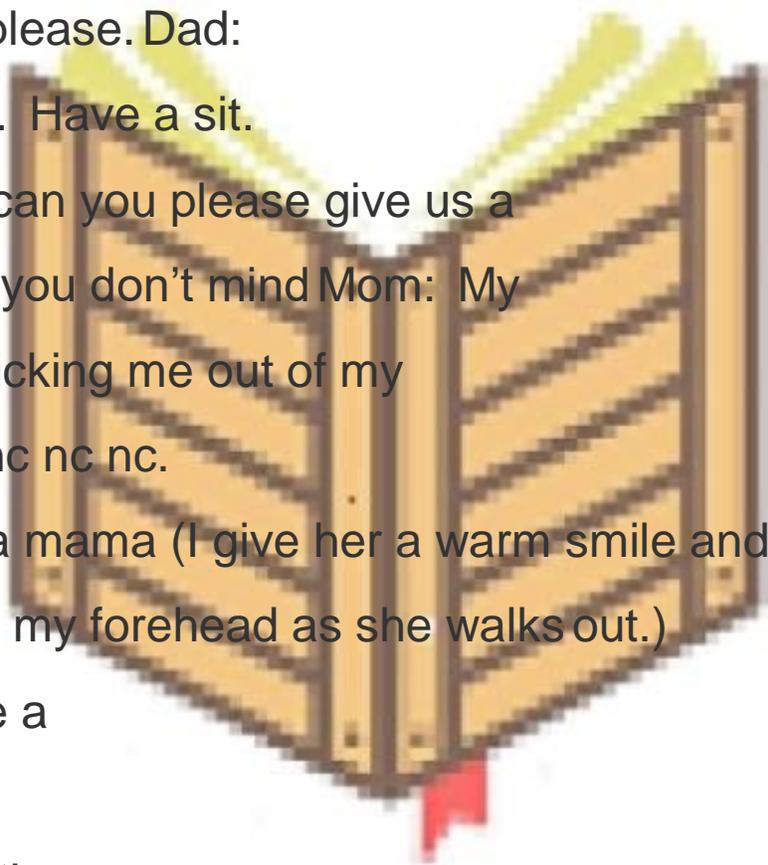
Me: Mom can you please give us a  
moment if you don't mind Mom: My  
own son kicking me out of my  
bedroom nc nc nc.

ME: drama mama (I give her a warm smile and thank her.  
she kisses my forehead as she walks out.)

Dad I have a  
problem.

Dad: What's  
wrong?

Me: My nightmare are back again it's been a month now.  
it's always the same thing. It's always like he is back into  
our lives and it's nothing but hell. Terrorising us  
especially mom. Everything he did to her I see it all over



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

again in my dreams.

Dad: When exactly did they start again?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ME: after Unlce Bandile and uncle Lwazi told us about what happened to them. After that I kept wondering what would have happened to us if mom didn't take it all herself. I know she left him to protect us. I know that if she didn't do what she did it would have escalated. I know he could never physically abuse us because mom made a deal with him.

Dad: how do you know that Lonwabo?

Me: I heard her telling uncle Sizwe one day. He had called to check up on us and she was telling him what was happening. I went up to her room to check on her as I usually did after Banzi left for his usual trips. She doesn't know I know. I never told anyone. You are the first person I told.

Dad: You know Wabo I know that what I am about to say is not what you want to hear but sometimes what we don't want to hear is what we need to hear. It's not the easiest thing to do but you need to forgive him. He doesn't even need to know that you have forgiven him. You will only find peace once you forgive. Yes you won't forget what happened but you will have peace. You are having these nightmares because you are not at peace. Forgive and you'll have peace. I will never know how you feel about

what happened because I have never been in that situation but I can understand how you feel and I can understand that it was not easy for you to go through such but you don't have to go through those things anymore. You will never experience that again and the difference this time is that you guys are surrounded by love all around. It is not just your mother that's showing you love it's a whole bunch of people me my kids who became your siblings your uncles and your grand parents. You are safe now. You are with people who will do anything to protect you from that kind of pain. For your own peace forgive him.

Me: I know dad but it's not easy it's really not easy. I think of all the pain he put us through especially mom think about how she still has scars on her body that remind her of what happened. It hurts all over again dad. My therapist said the same thing you are saying and I told him I would try but it's not easy.

Dad: Please try it is for your own good. The reason your mom has been able to move on is because she forgave him and found peace.

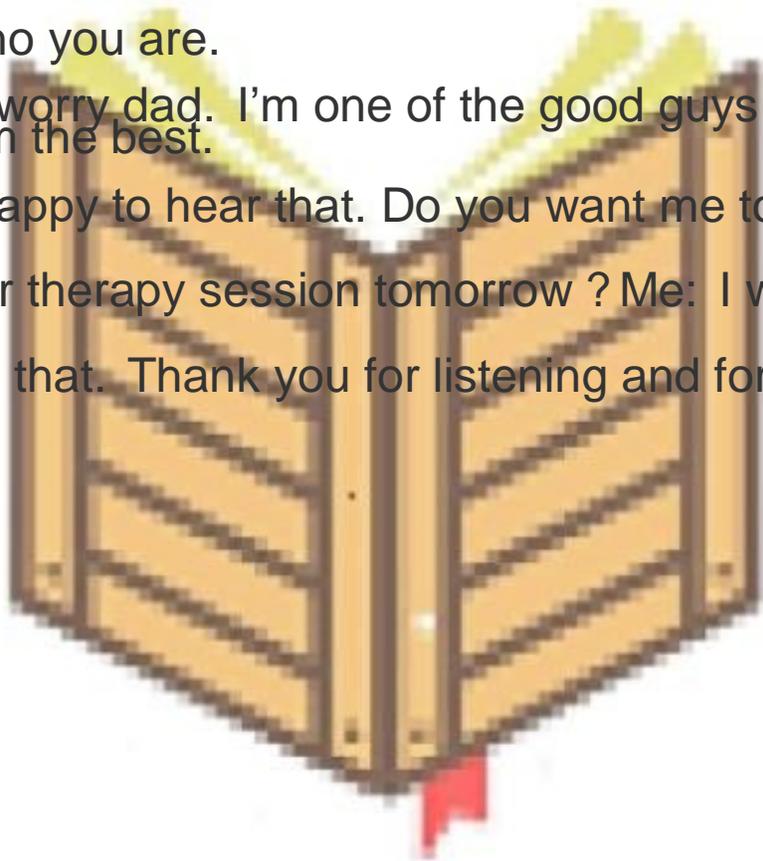
ME: To be honest when you and mom started dating I

was scared that you might be the same as him but as time went on you proved to be different.

Dad: not all men are the same son and I don't ever want you to allow yourself to fall under the umbrella of bad men Men who don't know how to treat women and kids. No matter what how people treat you never allow them to change who you are.

Me: don't worry dad. I'm one of the good guys and besides I learn from the best.

Dad: I'm happy to hear that. Do you want me to go with you to your therapy session tomorrow ? Me: I would appreciate that. Thank you for listening and for the advice.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Dad: Anytime. Come here. (he hugs me.) I love you. Me: I love you too.

SATURDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

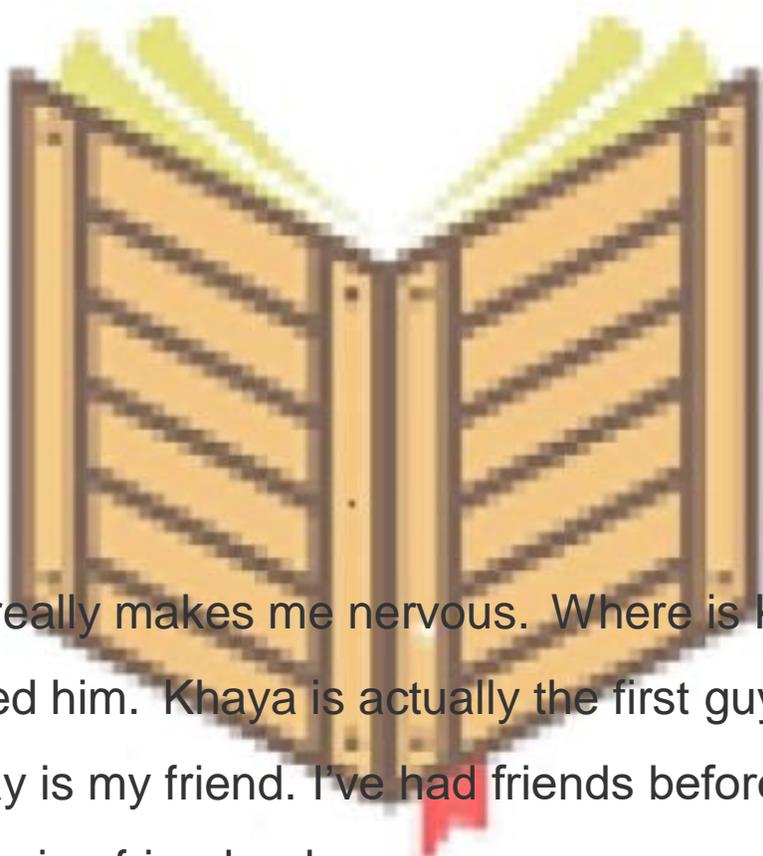
MCE

BISI

\*  
\*  
\*

This man really makes me nervous. Where is Khaya when I need him. Khaya is actually the first guy I can actually say is my friend. I've had friends before but I stopped having friends when a guy was suppose to be my friend betrayed me and slept with my girl. I've always been carefull when it comes to having friends. I know he is somewhere around this house but he is going to let his dad fry me alone.

Qhawe: Come with me (I stand up and follow him and



NOVELSGURU.COM

say a little prayer. This man is going to kill me today maybe he is taking me to go see my shallow grave for when he is done with me. Oh My God! This is nice.) You can close your mouth now. this is my man cave.

Mcebisi: This is what I would call a man cave. This is nice. Fully equipped even has a baby section. WOW. My babies are going to spend their weekends here. (I notice him staring at me. Oh Shit!!! Did I say that out loud? I need to keep quiet now.)

Qhawe: I am going to pretend that I didn't hear that. You wanted to talk to me. Mcebisi: Yes but it has nothing to do with business.

Qhawe: ok. So I take it it's a personal matter.

Mcebisi: You know I'm a very simple man. I don't come from much but I come from a lot. My parents raised me to be a good man and they always made sure that I had everything I needed growing up just like you do with your kids. (he gets up from his chair and goes to the bar and pours drinks for us. I think he can see I'm nervous. He gives me mine and down it in one go. He takes my glass and pours me another glass of whiskey and places it in front of me.)

Qhawe: Why are you so nervous? Mcebisi: me nervous no I'm not nervous. Qhawe: If you say so. I'm listening.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mcebisi: I know that you don't like the fact that I'm dating your daughter and I know that you are worried about the age difference between the two of us. I want to assure you that you have nothing to worry about and I think I have proven that. I love her very much. When I met her my world was complete. I don't see a future without her in it. I tried to see if I can live without her if I can have a future without her and I couldn't see it. I see her growing old with me. She is the one I have been waiting for and I believe that I am the one meant for her. I can take care of. I'm not rich I don't have all the money in the world I don't have my own business I've never really been interest in having one but I know I have love for her I have loyalty for her and I will give her no reason not to trust me. I love her she is my life line. With that said I came here today to ask you if I can take her home to my parents they would like to meet her and I came to ask if I can have her hand marriage.

Qhawe: When you are a father one day and have a daughter you will understand the way I feel. You will want to protect her from all the guys that think they love her but they just want to play with her. I know you are good for her and I know you will be able to

take care of her. You will have to talk to her about taking her to meet your parents and you will have to ask her to marry you and if she says then you have my blessings. I'm not a monster Mcebisi. I just love those kids and I want to protect them from harm and I want them to be happy that's all. Lina once said to me that they guy that is meant for her is the guy who will be able to stand up to me and be able to talk to me like a man. A who would come to me first before asking her to marry him. I'll let you draw your own conclusion from that statement.

Mcebisi: I understand what you saying and trust me I will never let anything hurt her not even me. Yes I will make mistakes yes I will act stupid at times but I would never intentionally her. Thank you.

Qhawe: I do trust you kid. She must never come home crying because of you. Do we understand each other?

Mcebisi: Yes we do.

Qhawe: Good. Khaya is waiting for you outside he said something about you guys going somewhere. You have business to take care of.

Mcebisi: Oh yes. Thank you very much for your time. (I get up shaking his hand an leave. I wonder is Khaya up to

now. What business do we have to take care of)

\*

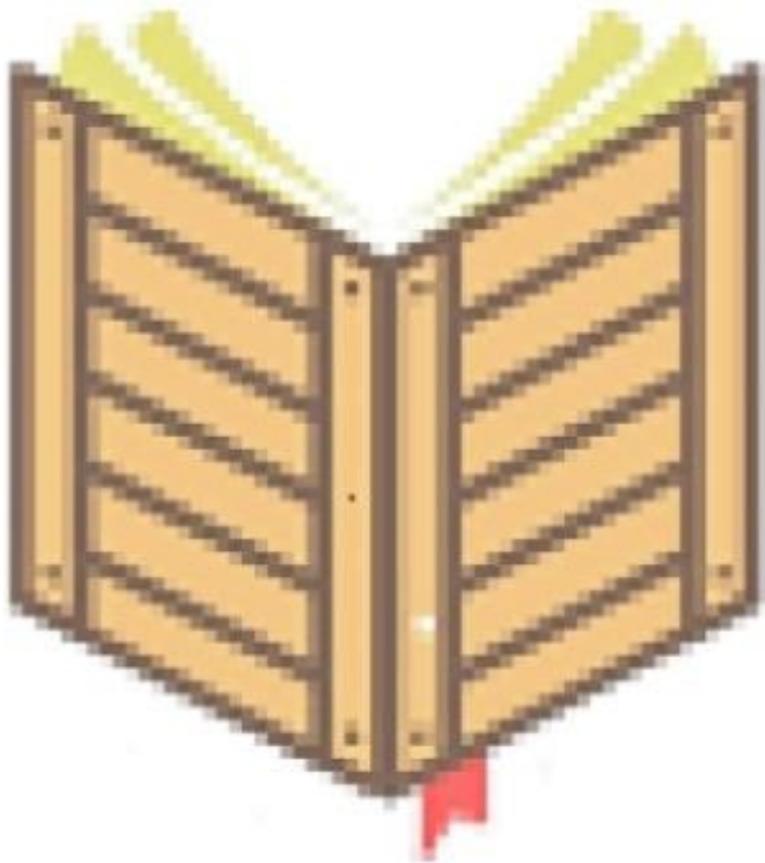
\*

\*

KH

AYA

\*



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*

\*

Me: You been very quiet since we left the farm. Are you ok?

Mcebisi: Your dad is very intimidating. I'm also just thinking about something he said that Lina said to him.

Me: how did it the talk go?

Mcebisi: He said I should talk to Lina and if she says yes he'll give us his blessings. Me: I would say that's a good thing.

Mcebisi: It is a good thing. I'm just nervous about asking Lina.

ME: don't be. She loves you very much and she will definitely say yes Mcebisi: What are we doing here who lives here? (he asks as I park the car.)

Me: come you'll see. It might just cheer you up. (we get out of the car and walk inside the block of apartments taking the elevator to the 5th floor. I take out a key and open the door as soon as we walk in we hear moans and walk towards the bedroom.)

Mcebisi: You seem to know your way around here have you been here before? ME: I have

a few times. (I answer as I open the door to the bedroom.)

Mcebisi: did you bring me here to watch people having sex. (he is looking at me like I've gone mad.) I'm kinky man but not that kinky.

Her: OH MY GOD!!! WHAT ARE YOU DOING HERE

Me: You have always been stiff when it came to you being on top. Get dressed let's go for a ride. Mcebisi: So this is the business we have to take care of. You know your parents will kill us when they find out we are acting like them.

Me: I'm protecting my wife they'll understand. They think we don't know what they do to protect us hence they never allow us to be around.

Guy: what are you doing interrupting me and my girl and you are up in here having a conversation acting like there's nothing wrong with what you are doing.

Mcebisi: it's not that they think we don't know they just don't want us to see that side of them and they can't know about this. Did you hear someone say something just now.

Me: No I didn't. Anyway I get what you are saying. Miss

Barbie please make it quick I don't have all day.

Guy: She is not going anywhere if anything you two are leaving. Mcebisi:

There goes that voice again and it's very irritating.

Me: I know right. Listen guy what ever your name is Guy:

Mxolisi



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I didn't ask. This has nothing to do with you stay out of it if you know what's good for you.

Zukiswa I said get dressed. You know I hate repeating myself.

Mxolisi: Mkhize is that you? It is you? (Mcebisi turns and looks at this guy seriously and smiles mischeviously.) is this about what I did to you?

Mcebisi: you know what

Sponsored

stay out of it if you know what's good for you. Zukiswa I said get dressed. You know I hate repeating myself.

Mxolisi: Mkhize is that you? It is you? (Mcebisi turns and looks at this guy seriously and smiles mischeviously.) is this about what I did to you?

Mcebisi: you know what I think I am going to enjoy this even more. I never thought I'd see you again. Small world right. Plus Karma is a bitch.

Me: You know this guy?

Mcebisi: apparently I do. This is the guy I told you about.

Me: Oh!!! Get dressed sir. Time is against us. We have

somewhere else to be.

Mxolisi: I'm not going anywhere with you. (I take out my gun but I don't point it at him) I said get dressed

Zukiswa: what is this all about?

Me: good you are done now we can go. Hurry up wena ndoda. In fact move your ass you can finish dressing in the car. Let's go.

Mcebisi: I hope that toy of yours is licensed mine is.

Me: it is licensed. I wouldn't walk around with an unlicensed weapon unless I want to go to jail and that is not part of my plans. I have a wife to take care of and make babies with. Plus Khanyi will kill me and bury me in a shallow grave.

Mcebisi: I can't wait for Lina to be wife. I love that girl man. She drives me crazy. (I though your dad was going to kill me today. I was so nervous)

Me: Her and Lungi are the same. (we are here.)

Mcebisi: this is your parent's house. What are we doing here?

Me: I know. It has this lovely basement. You are going to love it. Everyone out of the car. Zukiswa: What are we doing here?

Mcebisi: You ask too many questions Barbie. You should stay quiet like your boyfriend. (as we walk in I lead them to mom's basement. She will kill if she finds out about this. Oh wow she added another electric chair nice)

Me: have a sit guys. (I point to two electric chairs. They sit and I cuff them using the cuffs attached to the sits)

Welcome to the BASEMENT

Mcebisi: This is your mother's special room? I love your mother Khaya. Me: I know right. She is crazy. Let's get down to business.

Mcebisi: So Mxolisi this is your girl? Wow I didn't think she was your type but come to think of it you don't have a type you sleep with anything that can open it's legs for you.

Mxolisi: Are you sour about me fucking your girl? That was a long time ago dude. Get over it. Mcebisi: you have it twisted my guy. I'm over it. got over it the day I walked out of your life wrote the both of you off. right now I just can't resist to have fun with you.

Mxolisi: oh please you don't have the balls to do anything to me.

Mcebisi: How do these chairs work Khaya? (I take

one of the remotes and hand it to him) Me: Press the blue button. (he presses the button and this idiot scream for dear life.) Mcebisi: You were saying? (he can't answer he is still catching his breath.

Me: Zukiswa how many times did I tell you to stay away from my wife? Does your boyfriend know you are still chasing after me and terrorising my wife?

Mxolisi: I thought you said he was the one bothering you Zukiswa

Mcebisi: Oh this is getting good. Let me sit back and watch this show. It turns out I don't have to do anything to you I just have to watch. I need something to chew on.

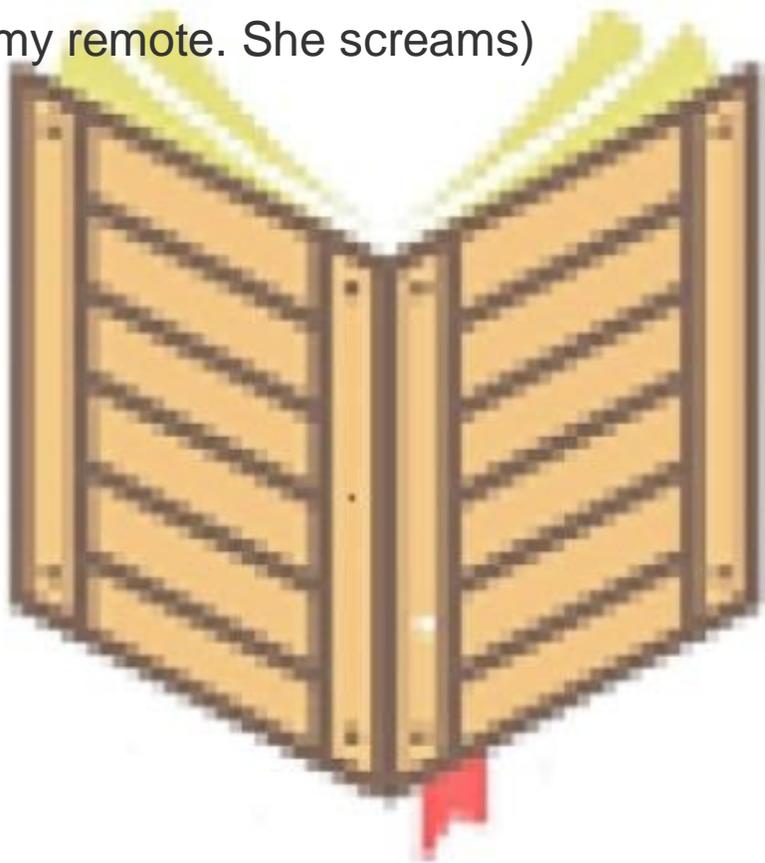
Me: check the cupboard there there should be some chips in there. ( he walks to the cupboard takes out a packet of chips and sits back on his chair like he is watching a movie. Eish this guy) So you lied to him and told him that I'm the one coming after you. How can I possibly do that when you are the one who cheated on me.

Mxolisi: hayibo Zukiswa you said the guy cheated on you what's going on here.

Mcebisi: looks like Barbie has been telling a lot of lies. Tell me something how long have you been sleeping together?

Zukiswa: it's been three years and I cheated on him with Khaya. Mxolisi: but you said he was an ex that wants you back.

Zukiswa: I lied ok. I lied. The fact is that I love you and I love him. I love both of you (I just decided to press the button on my remote. She screams)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: shut up you are making noise. I have very sensitive ears. I don't care about what you did mainly because you don't matter anymore you are nothing to me. You are here because you are hurting my wife and I don't take kindly to that. My wife is off limits Zukiswa do you understand me? Zukiswa: She is not good for you (she screams again I look at Mcebisi who shrugs)

Mcebisi: What?? She irritates me. (I just shake my head.)

Mxolosi you really know how to choose them.

Mxolisi: he is married Zukiswa why ?

Me: Dude stay quiet. Zukiswa I SAID MY WIFE IS OFF LIMITS. DO YOU UNDERSTAND? Zukiswa: Khaya

please don't do this I love you (I press the button and she screams again)

Me: Do you know why I'm using this chair. I don't want you to have scars and right now you pushing my wrong buttons. I am going to repeat myself again and for your sake I hope we like the answer you give me otherwise

Mcebisi will have to do a number on you. MY WIFE IS OFF LIMITS. STAY AWAY FROM HER. DO YOU UNDERSTAND?

Zukiswa: I understand.

Me: Good girl. If anything happens to her and I mean anything I will kill you. Mxolisi: Why Zukiswa. We had a good thing going why ruin it

Mcebisi: I told you KARMA IS A BITCH. Khaya are we done here otherwise we'll be late. The girls are waiting. (Mxolisi screams again. I look at Mcebisi.) I couldn't resist

Me: Yes we are done. I'll get one of the guys to take them back. Stay away from my wife Zukiswa and stay away from me.

MONDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

LONW

ABO

\*  
\*  
\*

I walk over to Sibahle who was sitting alone crying.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: what's  
wrong sis?

Sibahle: Nothing.

It's nothing



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: It can't be nothing if it's making you cry. Why do you let those guys walk all over you like that? Sibahle: What am I suppose to do Wabo?

Me: Stand up  
for yourself

Sibahle: I'm too  
scared.

Me: so because you are scared you are not going to stand up for yourself. You are going to cry about it everyday. I know you are not scared Sibahle. Do what you need to do you don't have to hurt them stand up and defend yourself (the same girls we are talking about walk up to us with some guys)

Girl 1: Your brother is cute can I have his numbers (I look at her and ignored her) Girl 2: looks like he is a shy one.

Me: If you don't mind we are having a private conversation please leave. Guy 1: or what?

Me: Or nothing just leave us alone.

Girl 1: Looks like big brother is protecting his sister. She can't even speak for herself. (Sibahle has been looking

down all this time not saying anything. This girl takes her books and throws them on the floor.) you think you are better than all of us just because the lecturers like you.

Me: Sibahle remember what dad taught you

Sibahle: But you always say violence

is not the way to solve things Me: not in this case.

Girl 2: Oh please what can this one do she can't even hurt a fly. (Sibahle stands up while this girl was waving her hand in her face. She grabs girl's hand and twists it to her back and pins her on the table holding her face down.

She looks at girl 1)

Sibahle: Pick up my books put them in my bag.

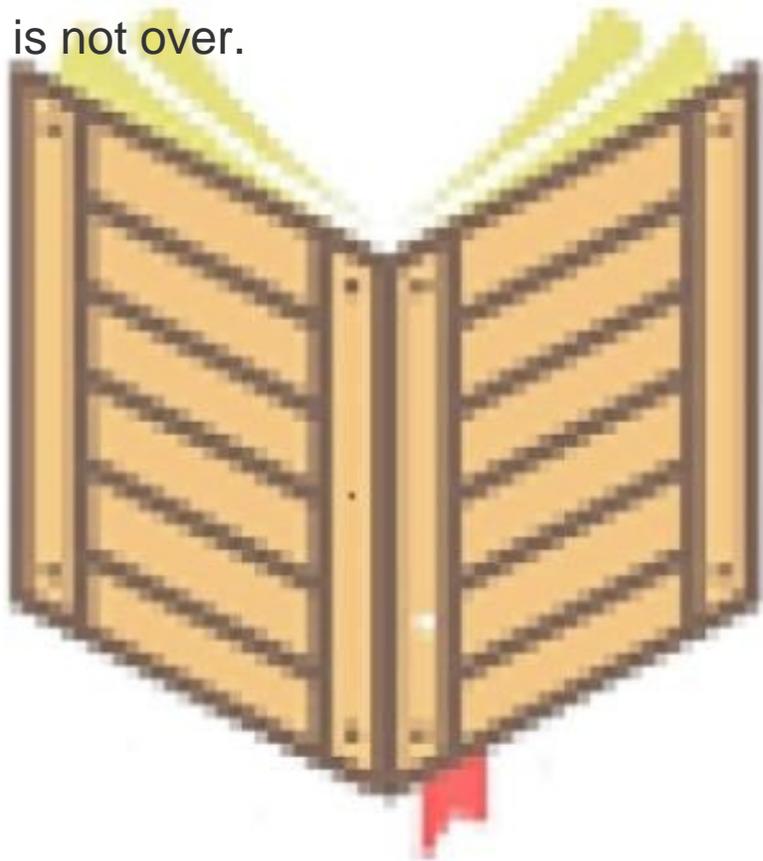
Guys 1: what do you think you are doing? (he asks walking over to Sibahle)

Me: Touch her and I swear I will make regret the day you ever laid your eyes on her. If anything happens to her after today you will run but you won't be able to hide from me. I'll find you and when I find you trust me when I tell you that no one will ever find you. You don't know who we are don't mess with us. Just because we keep to ourselves in this campus doesn't give you the right to walk all over us. (they pick up her books and put them in her

back pack while the other girl is still pinned down swearing at Sibahle) QUIET you attracting unnecessary attention to yourself. Sibahle lets go of her.

Sibahle: I didn't want to do this but keep pushing me I'll do worse. Just leave me alone. (they all walked away but as they walk away Girl 1 comes back to us)

Girl 1: this is not over.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sibahle: If you know what's good for you then you will understand that it is over. (she clicks her tongue and walks away.) I really didn't want to do that.

Me: how long were you going to cry because you are angry at what they were doing or angry at yourself that you are doing nothing about it?

Sibahle: I get it Wabo. I just don't want to attract attention to us.

Me: I know and I understand but Sibahle you can't let people walk all over you and talking to that group wouldn't have mattered you needed to be hardcore. How many times have spoken to them told them this was wrong but still they continue harassing you you've reported them still they harass you. That had to happen just as long as you don't hurt or kill anyone you are good. They needed to see that you are not some defenceless doll. Even if I'm not around you they'll think twice before approaching you.

Sibahle: thank you my

twin. I love you Me: I

love you too. Let's get

back to class.

Sibahle: Mom is going to freak out when I tell her.

Me: dad will be like “yes that’s my girl.” (we both laugh as we walk to our classes.)

\*\*

\*

\*

LU

NGI

\*

\*

\*

Me: Dad the wedding is in July and I need to get all the guys so that you can have your measurements taken for your traditional attires

Dad: When do you need us to that?

Me: I’ve made an appointment for you guys for tomorrow at 17:30

Dad: I’ll let your uncles know. Where is Lwandle she also said something about fittings

Lwandle: I’m here. Fittings on Wednesday and we only

have a week and a half to our wedding day. Dad: This is too much.

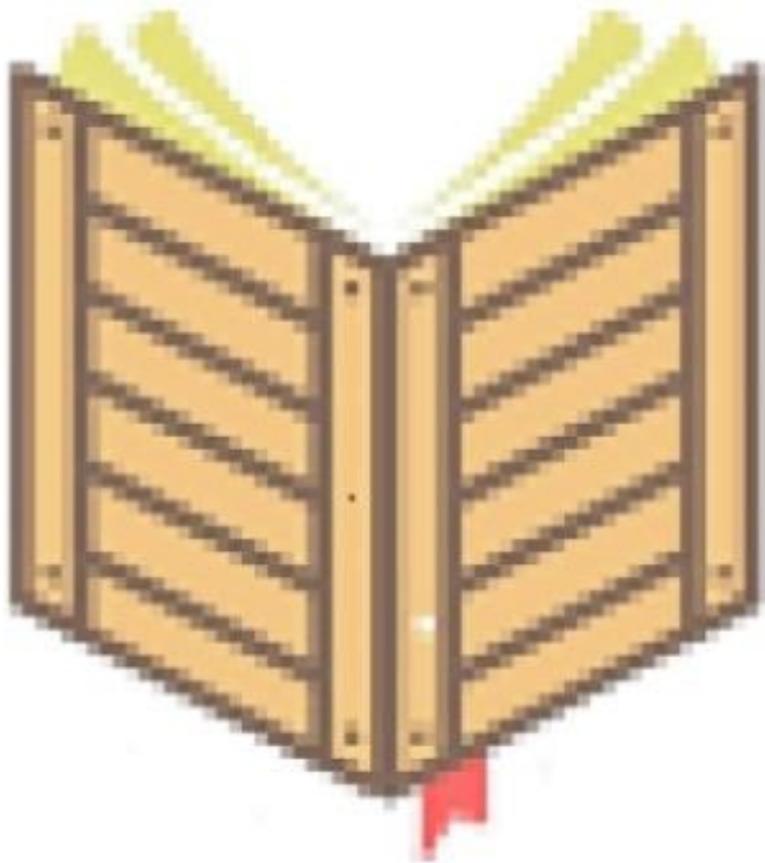
Lwandle: You wanted to get married before your daughter.

Dad: I know because I want us to be there for her as Mr and Mrs Langa. Is that so wrong?

Me: it’s not dad. Actually I like it that way. When are

Khaya's parents getting married. I thought they would also be getting married now.

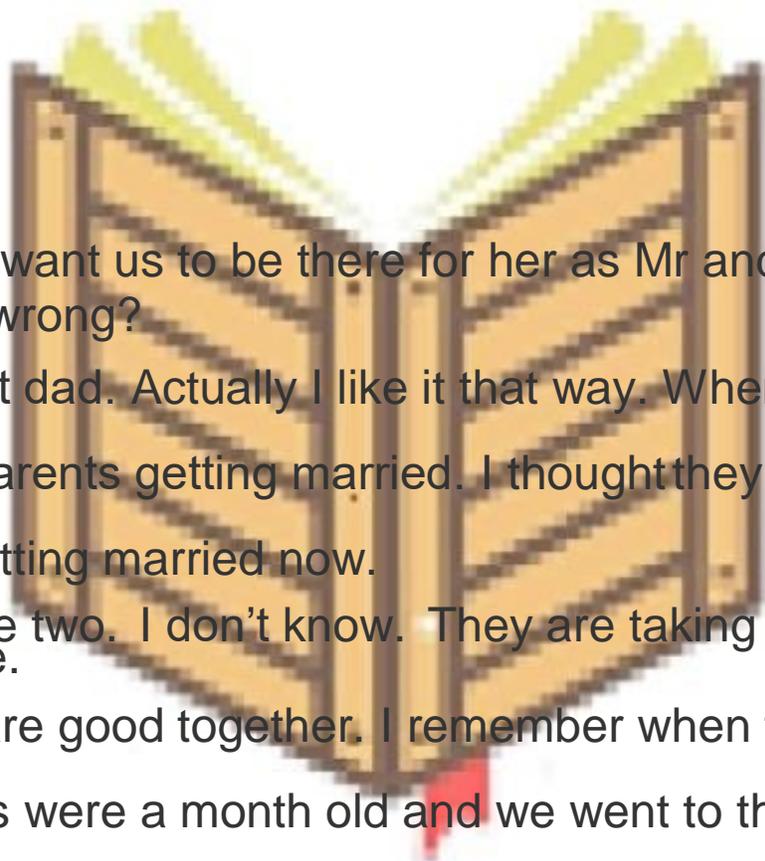
Dad: those two. I don't know. They are taking their own sweet time.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: they are good together. I remember when the quintuplets were a month old and we went to the East London to have IMBELEKO done for them. I really thought Khaya's dad was going to propose that weekend. The way he was

Sponsored



because I want us to be there for her as Mr and Mrs Langa. Is that so wrong?

Me: it's not dad. Actually I like it that way. When are Khaya's parents getting married. I thought they would also be getting married now.

Dad: those two. I don't know. They are taking their own sweet time.

Me: they are good together. I remember when the quintuplets were a month old and we went to the East London to have IMBELEKO done for them. I really thought Khaya's dad was going to propose that weekend.

The way he was was just amazing. In fact all you guys are the same. The way you look at your partners you would kill for them.

Dad: You should see how Khaya looks at you. (I

instantly blush. The door bell rings) Me: I'll get it.

(I walk to the door and open it. Who are these people.)

Sihle: Lungi! (I didn't see her)

Me: mama what are you doing here and who are these people?

Sihle: We are here to see you and your dad. (I move aside to let them in and call dad) Luyanda how are you?

Dad: I'm good. What are you doing here Sihle?

Sihle: Luyanda as you can this is my family. We

came to talk to you and Lungi Lwandle: would you like something to drink

Lady: yes sisi juice please and some water. Thank you Sihle:

these are my aunts and uncles

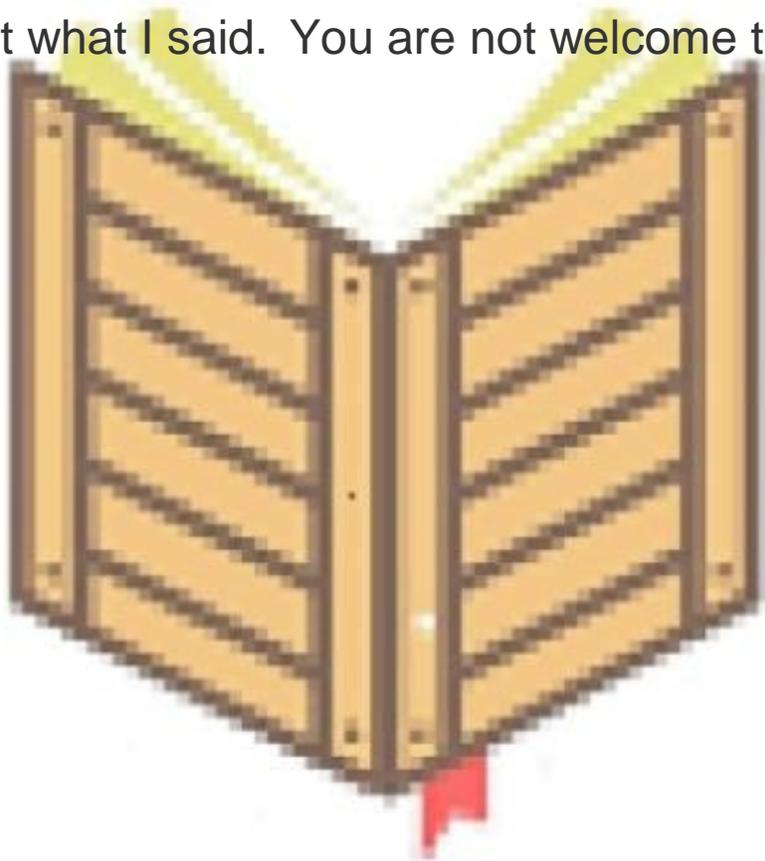
Lungi.

Lungi: it is nice to meet. Mom I don't get this

Aunt 1: Luyanda we did you wrong and we are here to apologise for what you had to go through. Luyanda: Why now? you had 21 years to come clean why now.

Aunt 1: because it is the right thing to do and yes we should have done it a long time and we are sorry we didn't.

Luyanda: Let me tell you why. It's because Lungi is getting married and you want to be part of the wedding because if Lungi was not getting married you wouldn't be here today. let me tell you this before this conversation drags on longer than necessary. I accept your apology in fact we accept your apology but I am not changing my mind about what I said. You are not welcome to my



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

daughter's wedding and you are not getting the Lobola money. That money is hers and she going to use to finish her studies. (the room goes quiet. I knew it. I knew this is about the money)

Me: so this is about the money?

Sihle: Lungi I raised I was your parent all these years.

Me: Who's fault was it mama that you were a single parent. Let me remind you mama that you chose to be a single parent and you come here apologising and your apology is not even sincere all you want is the money. Do you know what hurts the most mama the fact that you planned it all and now you want us to feel sorry for you. You are my mother and I love you but right now I find it hard to forgive you especially when you have just proven that the only thing you care about is the Lobola money.

Aunt 2: Are you going to let her talk to her mother like that? (she asks looking at my dad)

Lwandle: with all due respect ma what do you want him to do. She is expressing how she feels she is not disrespecting anyone or insulting anyone.

Aunt 2: I wasn't talking to you wena. You have nothing to do with this. I wouldn't be surprised if it was you who said

Sihle should not get this money.

Luyanda: You are not going to come into my house and disrespect my wife like that. I draw the line there. Since we have nothing else to talk about please leave my house.

Uncle 1: what you are doing is wrong. The lobola money goes to the parent that raised the child. Luyanda: I said please leave my house or I'll call the police and have you arrested for trespassing on private property.

Me: mama please just leave. It's obvious that you don't care about my feelings. The only thing you care about is money.

Aunt 2: Let's go. This is not over. We'll have to talk to a lawyer about this (dad chuckles) Luyanda: You do that. Remember I am a lawyer too. (this woman clicks her tongue and they walk away)

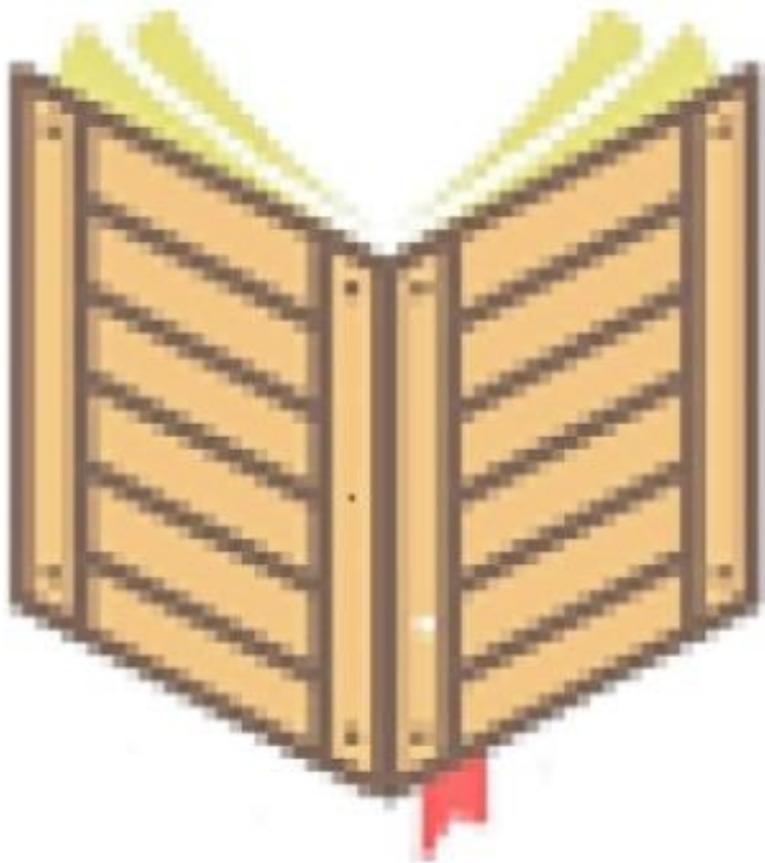
Sihle: Luyanda please don't do this?

Dad: Sihle leave. I told you that by the time I am done with you; you will beg me to kill you. You have the guts to come here with a fake apology just for money. What about

CHAPTER 121  
our daughter Sihle doesn't it matter to you that the money is going to help her further her studies doesn't it matter to you what she wants? Don't answer that just get out of my

house. (she looks at me with tears in her eyes. I just walk away leaving her standing there with Lwandle following me.

FRIDAY



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*

\*

\*

LINAMA

NDLA

\*

\*

\*

We are on the road driving to Nanda. I am so nervous. I haven't said word to him since we got in this car.

Mcebisi:

Nana

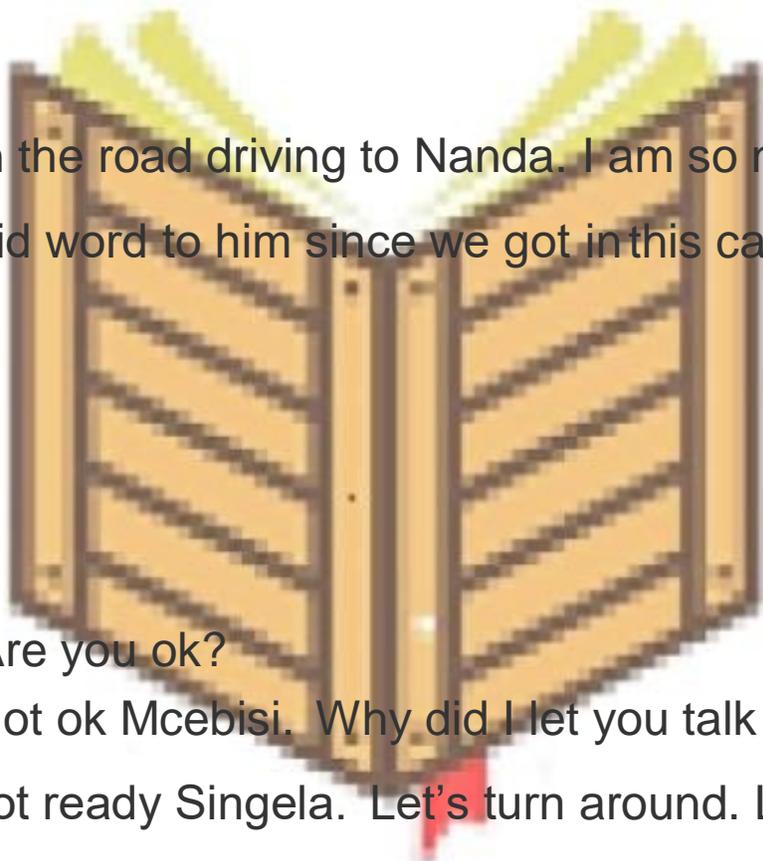
Me:

Mhhhh

Mcebisi: Are you ok?

Me: I am not ok Mcebisi. Why did I let you talk me into this. I'm not ready Singela. Let's turn around. Let's go back. What if they don't like me what if they think I'm too much of a snob. Ok I am freaking out I am really really freaking. I'm scared Mcebisi. (he pulls the car over on the side of the road.)

Mcebisi: Lina look at me give your hands. Jesus Lina you are shaking. (I nod really fast.) hey calm down. Take a



NOVELSGURU.COM

deep breath baby. There stay calm. You have nothing to worry about. If my parents don't like you then that's their problem I doubt they won't like you. You are a wonderful and a very respectful woman that is the first thing my dad is going to notice about you and he is going to fall in love with you instantly and to my mother you are going to be the daughter she never had. She is going to spoil you rotten. Please stop freaking out. It's going to be me my parents and you. So please relax my love. (he gives me kiss and drives off. I must have fallen asleep. I feel him shaking me gently telling me we are here. WOW!!! This is beautiful. There are beautiful rondavels about three and the main house not big but very nice. The yard it beautiful.)

Me: this is beautiful

Mcebisi: it is. I always love coming home. I promise you are going to love it here. I'm going to take you to my favourite spot later on.

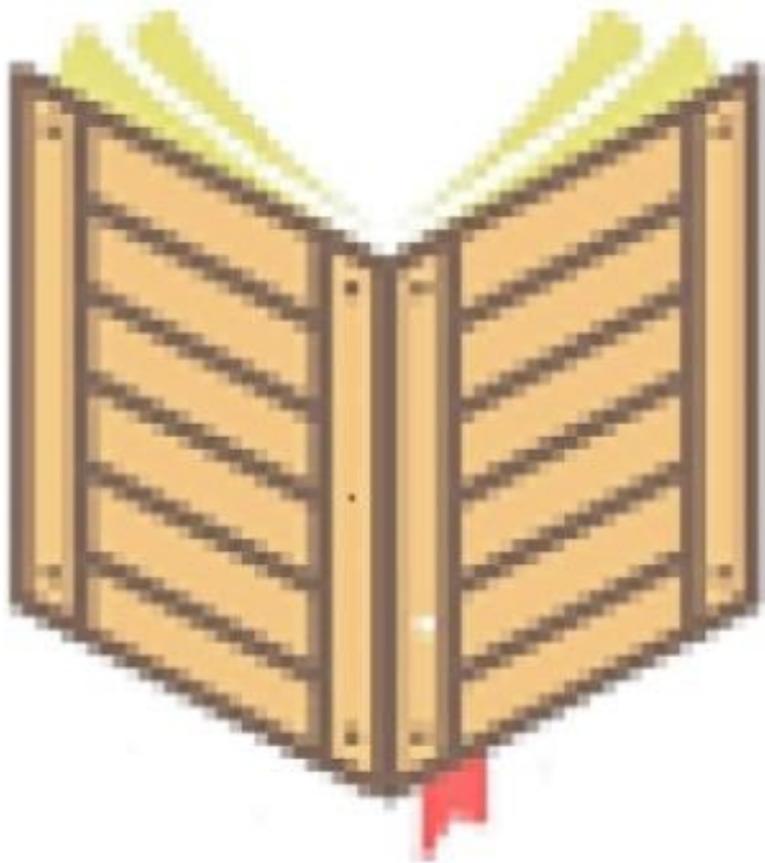
Lady: finally you are here. Come give your mom a hug. I have missed you so much my baby. (then she kisses him all over his face.)

Mcebisi: Mom can you please not do that in front of my

woman.

Mrs Mkhize: Mcebisi she is beautiful. Come here baby.

(she gives me a tight warm hug. This woman is very loving I can feel it. Her hug is so motherly just like mom's hugs) How are you my darling?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ME: I'm fine mama and how are you?

Mrs Mkhize: Mcebisi take the bags to her room. Mcebisi: Her room mama? I don't follow.

His mom: Yes Mcebisi you are not going to share a room while you are here. You'll only share a room when you have paid Lobola.

Mcebisi: but ma... (I look at him and mouth an apology to him. he walks out of the lounge pouting. Even though we don't have sex Mcebisi is addicted to sleeping next to me. It has been difficult since we moved to Durban. I remember one night he came to see Khaya and he sneaked into my room and left very early in the morning.)

Mrs Mkhize: do as I say Mcebisi.

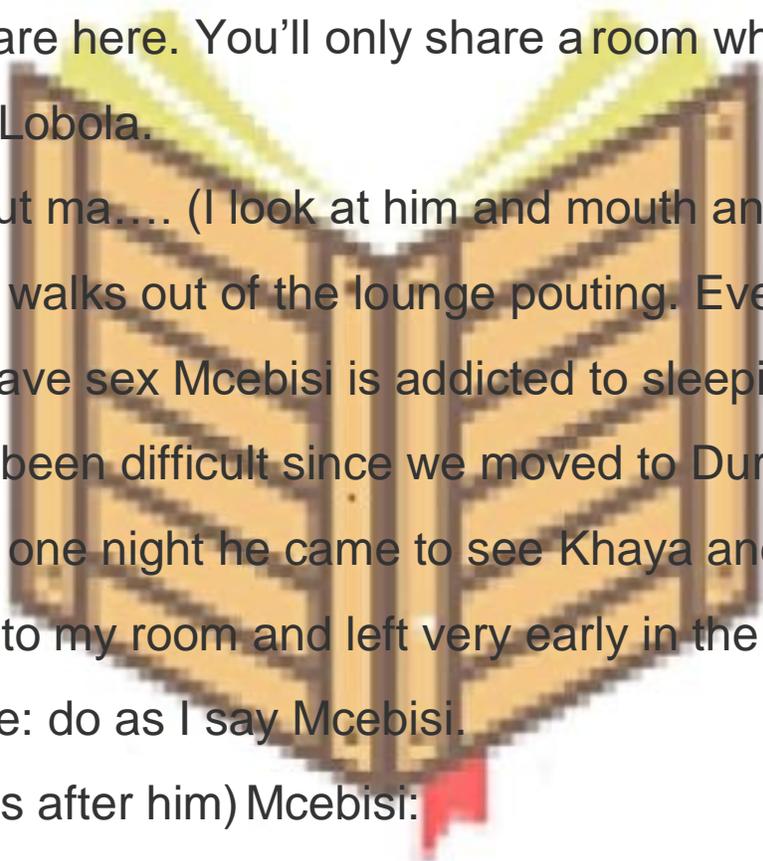
(she shouts after him) Mcebisi:

Where is dad?

Mrs Mhize: in the garden. Come and help me in the kitchen. I was busy preparing lunch for you guys. Tell me what do you do?

Me: I'm still a student ma.

Mrs Mkhize: that's good. And your family your parents (I



tell her about my family. We talk for a while about my family before her husband and Mcebisi walk in. I was busy setting up the table for lunch.)

Mcebisi: Lina please come here. Dad this is the woman I've been telling you about Linamandla Sondlo. Lina this my dad.

Me: Khabazela it is nice to finally meet you.

Mr Mkhize: it is nice to finally meet you ngane yami (my child) ngiyabona ukuthi uyingane eyifundisiwe intlonipho. (I can see that you have taught respect)

Me: My family is very big on respect loyalty trust and love.

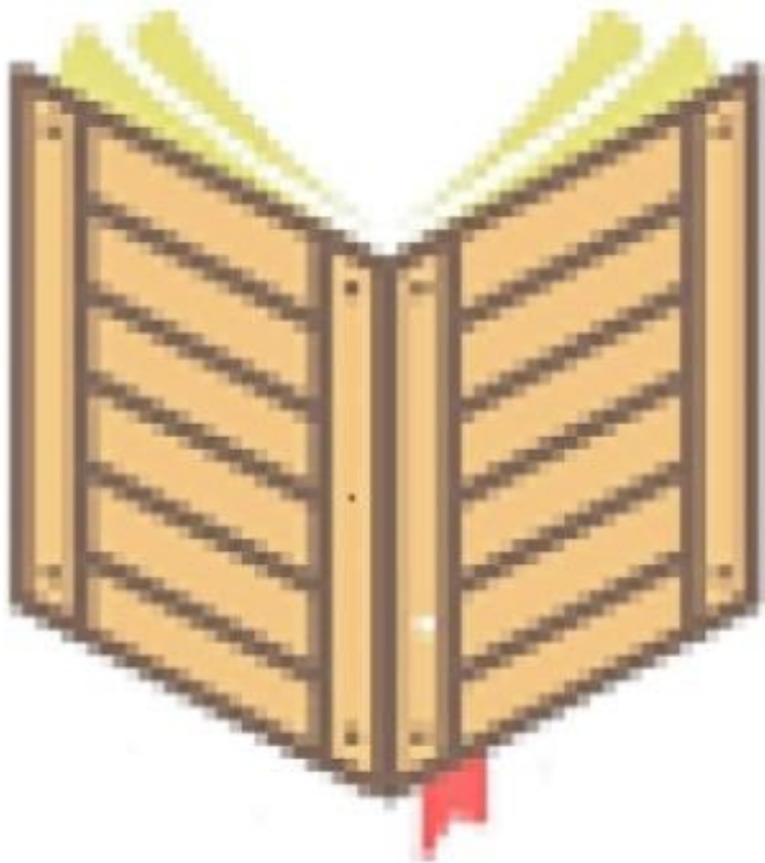
Mrs Mkhize: that is a good thing. Those are also important morals in this family. We can sit and eat the food is ready.

Mr Mkhize: siyabonga nkosikazi. (this food is delicious this woman can cook. This is nice. At this moment I don't even know why I was nervous. He has great parents. we are sitting and listening to them tell me their love story how they met and all. Our moment is interrupted by some woman who walks in without knocking.)

Her: Makhelwane ngibone imoto yomfana la ngaphandle ngathi ngingene ngizobingelela. Ave izojabula indondakazi

yami ukuzwa ukuthi ukhona mfana. Kunjani kodwa? (I saw his car outside and I thought I should come in and say hi. My daughter is going to be so happy to know that you are home. How are you?)

Mcebisi: I'm fine ma



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sponsored

how are you?

Her: I'm fine too. and who is this young lady?

Mrs Mkhize: this is my daughter in law. They just arrived and we were just having a quiet and private lunch you know just the family.

Her: Oh I see. It's fine. I'll see you later then. Bye

\*

\*

\*

TWI

NS

\*

\*

\*

Bandile: how am I suppose to

tell the parents Banele? Banele:

I don't know man but you have

to tell them.

Bandile: but we are not sure. The timelines don't fit the story that's my problem.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Banele: Either way you have to tell them and they will advise you. Look I know what they have taught us and all but I'm sure they will understand that you didn't mean for it to happen and the fact that you don't remember anything about that day says something else. Look I know that the parents are not always going to be there and we need to take care of ourselves and protect each other but right now we need them. ( Khaya walks in)

Khaya: what's up guys. It sounded very urgent when you called. Banele:

Bandile has a situation.

Khaya: what kind of situation? (bandile proceeds to tell Khaya about the situation) SHIT! Bandile. Mom will kill you.

Banele: Khaya you are not helping.

Khaya: Fine I'm sorry. We need to tell them they can help.

Bandile: can't we handle this on our own and tell them about it later.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khaya: we could. But they have resources we don't have and we can't expect the uncles not to tell them they definitely will.

Bandile: this is messed. What the hell was I thinking.

Khaya: hey it's not the end of the world. You are going to be ok. I just hope that when you get out of this situation you would have learned your lesson.

Banele: it's a very sticky situation. I never thought this would happen so soon. We just finished school and working on our careers and this happens.

Khaya: why are you guys acting like it's the end of the world. Stop feeling sorry for yourselves. Banele I know you feel like you should have protected your twin but there's no way you could have known that something like that was going to happen. Stop beating yourself about it. the parents will help and this situation will be dealt with accordingly. We could do this ourselves but the problem is that the people who have the resources we need are the parents and the uncles. We still need to establish ourselves and network a lot to actually be at their level of connections and the fact that we connected to them is going to work in our favour some day but right now we need the adults. (Lonwabo walks in)

Lonwabo: good you are all here wait why are you all here what's going on? Khaya: Bandile has a situation

Lonwabo: another situation Bandile  
what is wrong with you? Khaya &

Banele: What do you mean another  
situation?

Lonwabo: they  
didn't know?

Bandile: I never  
told them.

Lonwabo: Sorry I  
didn't know.

Bandile: it's ok. I would have  
had to tell them anyway. Banele:

What are guys talking about?

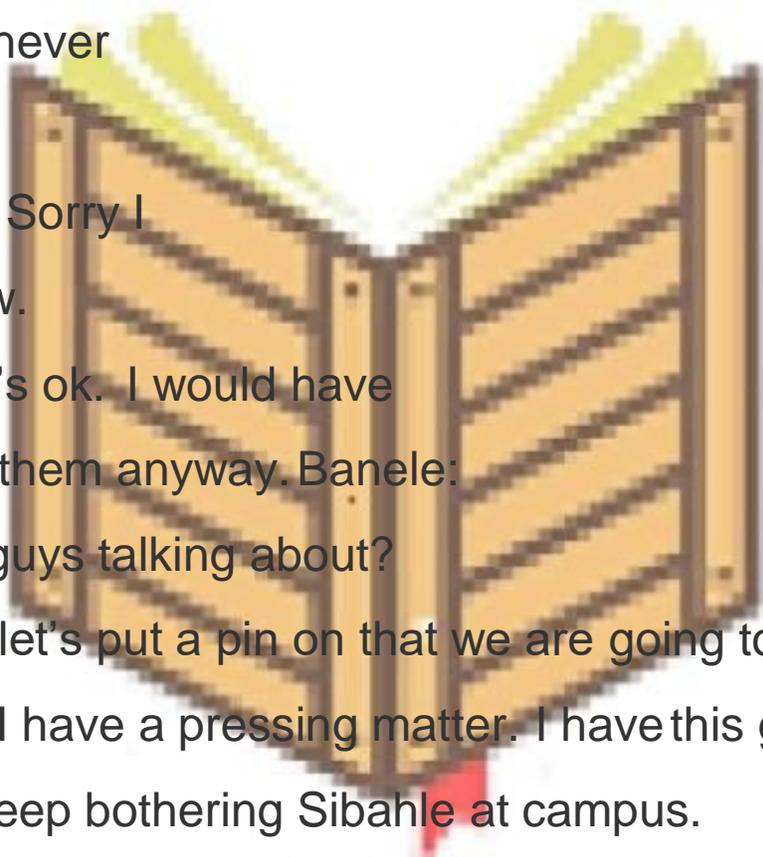
Lonwabo: let's put a pin on that we are going to come  
back to it. I have a pressing matter. I have this group of  
kids that keep bothering Sibahle at campus.

Banele: Let me guess she doesn't want to stand up for  
herself.

Lonwabo: yes but she had to and they've left her alone for  
now but I have a feeling that they are going to be trouble.

Khaya: what do you want us to do?

Lonwabo: I need you to come to campus tomorrow. I have  
a game tomorrow and I know they will there.

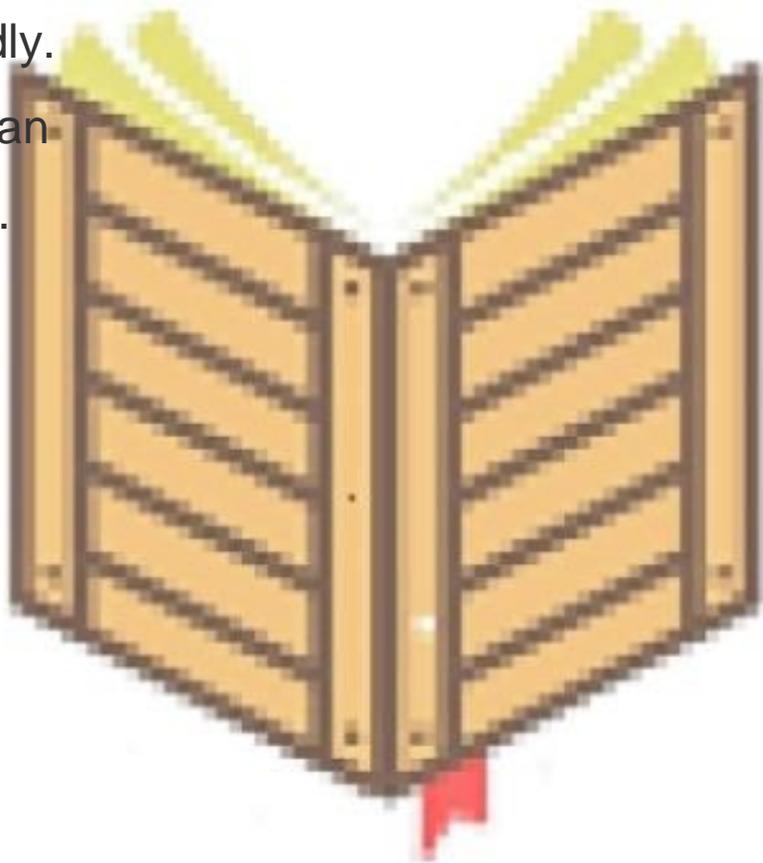


Bandile: we know you have game tomorrow we were going to be there anyway. Lonwabo: After the game I want us to have a friendly conversation with these guys. Banele: How friendly do you want this conversation to be?

Lonwabo:

Very friendly.

Khaya: I can do friendly.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lonwabo: since the whole family is going to be there we are going to have to be descreet about it if you know what I mean.

Banele: We get you. Friendly and descreet

Khaya: Has Sibahle told the parents about the incident?

Lonwabo: Not yet but she will. I have to go.

Lisakhanya and Lwanele are waiting for me. Bandile: where are you guys going?

Lonwabo: Mall. Zenande and Ntando are already there and we are later. See you later brothers.

## CHAPTER 122

SATURDAY

\*

\*

\*

LONW

ABO

\*

\*

\*

Her: That was a good game. You were really good out there especially the last try you scored. Me: You actually



NOVELSGURU.COM

understand the game you not here to watch the hot guys play.

Her: I love the game. My dad was a player and my brothers are players. Besides I don't mind the hot guys especially the ones that are good on the field.

Me: you are the first I've met that actually comes to watch for the love of the game. I'm Lonwabo by the way.

Her: I know. (she gives me a warm smile) I'm Oyama I'm first year student studying Graphic Design.

Me: I'm studying Mechanical Engineering. My little brother has the same name

Her: it was nice meeting you Lonwabo. I would love to meet you little brother (three guys walk up to us and I recognise one of them.)

Guy 1: Oyama who is this why are you going around talking to guys? Oyama:

He's friend and I was congratulating him

for a good game. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Guy 1: So now you are flirting with him?

Oyama: Lunga come on I wasn't flirting we were just talking. (this guy grabs her arm roughly and you can tell she is feeling pain.)

Me: Hey you are hurting her let her go. She told you she wasn't flirting. Let her go Guys 2: this doesn't concern you rugby boy.

Guy 3: You are the guy that let your sister hurt my girl.

Me: Your girl as you put it and the rest of your gang were terrorising her. Was I suppose to let you walk all over her. Don't forget what I said to you that day. I am a man who is always true to his word Guy 1: Look here I don't care who you are stay away from my girl.

Me: I doubt very much she is your girl if you are treating her like. I told you to let her go can't you see you are hurting her. look at her. (Bandile and Banele walk up to us)

Banele: and then what's this about? Let the girl go you are hurting her Oyama:

Lunga please (he lets her go)

Bandile: that's better. Do we have a problem bro

Lonwabo: These idiots interrupted a conversation I was having with the lady but it's ok. (Khaya joins us with Ntando. Just as they do the girls that were terrorising Sibahle walk over to us)

Khaya: is there a problem here?

Lonwabo: these are the  
guys I told you about.

Khaya: Let's go  
somewhere quiet

Lunga: we are not going anywhere with you

Khaya: fine then I'll beat you up right here right now and  
embarrass you in front of your friends just like you  
embarrassed this girl.

Guy 2: Let's go (we walk over to a far corner of the field)

Me: I told you the other day that you should leave me and  
my sister alone otherwise bad shit is going to start  
happening to you one by one.

Lunga: I need you to stay away from my girl. ( I look at  
Oyama and smile at her)

Me: I can't she's my friend so you'll have to get use to it.  
and if you man handle her again I'll be there to sort you  
out.

Banele: we are not a fan of guys who man handle women  
it does something to us we might just end up killing you.

Girl 1: Your sister nearly broke my arm

Me: but she didn't it's still attached to you is it not. Stay  
away from her.

Bandile: Look here this is a friendly warning. KEEP AWAY  
otherwise we are going to have problems. (he walks over

to Oyama and gently checks her arm and she flinches slightly to show she was feeling pain.) Put some ice on it you might need a doctor as well and you really should dump this idiot. My brother here would make a better boyfriend (he says that looking at me)

Me: Bandile stop that



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khaya: do you understand what we just said. If you don't listen next time we have this kind of conversation it won't be so friendly. (I look at Oyama)

Me: Are you going

to be ok? Oyama:

yes. I'll be fine.

Thank you Lunga:

stay away from her

Oyama: Lunga please let's go

ok. (they walk away.) Khaya:

You like her don't you?

Me: She seems like a nice girl

Bandile: No Wabo what he meant was you like her like

her as in you want to date her. You want to be her night in

shining amour

ME: Oh please! She

has a boyfriend. Khaya:

a jerk at that

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: It's her

choice.

Khaya: she

likes you Me:

No she

doesn't

Ntando: Yes she does and you like her. you guys are going to end up dating.

Me: enough with this conversation. Let's go the parents are waiting. Bandile when are you planning to tell the parents about your situation?

Bandile: Next weekend after the double wedding. Ntando: You have another situation?

Khaya: even Ntando knows about your first situation and you didn't tell us. Bandile: they were there and you were not. Let's just leave it at that.

Khaya: and I thought Banele would be reckless one. I guess I was wrong.

\*

\*

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

MCE

BISI

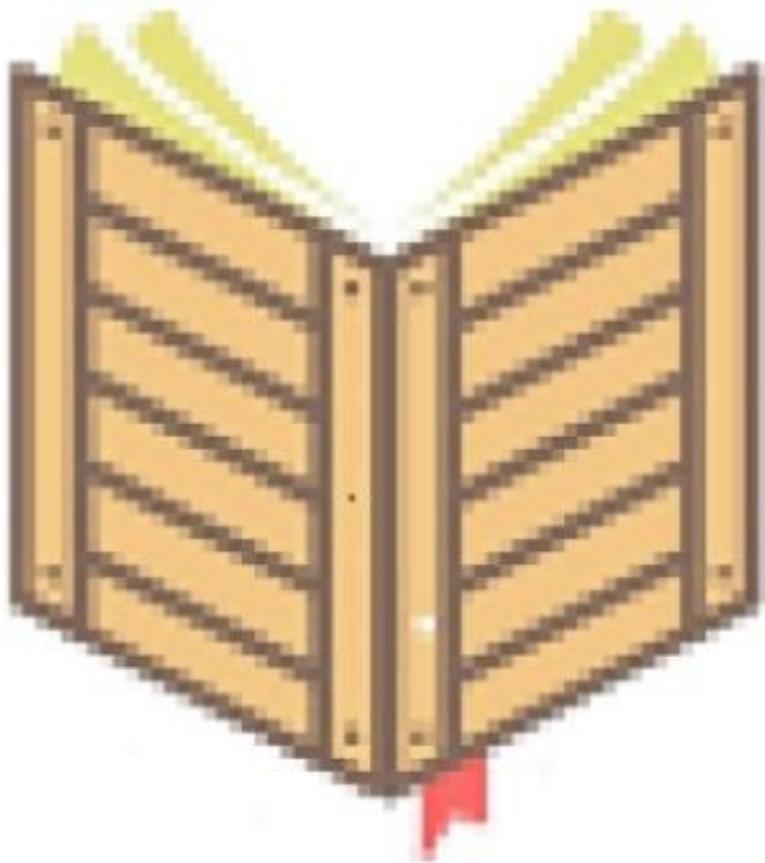
\*

\*

\*

Me: Baba we'll be back. I just want to show Lina around. Dad: Ok son.

Lina: where are we going?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Yesterday I didn't get a chance to take you to my favourite spot so I'm taking you there. ( as we drive out of the yard I notice the neighbour and her daughter looking at us.) You are going to love this place plus you are going to want o come visit this side all the time.

Lina: is it far?

Me: No it's not far. Next we can walk there.

Lina: Ok. So tell me what's the problem with your neighbour? Me: she wants me for her daughter.

Lina: does the daughter want you?

Me: Yes she does.

Lina: have you ever slept with her?

Me: No I never slept with her. I was never interested in her in that way. Lina: ok. Are

there any other girls that I'm going to

have to deal with **NOVELSGURU.COM**

ME: Honestly my love I don't know. The thing is with me when I break up with a girl I break up with them I never go back there. I move on. So I don't know if there's girl I've dated that's still hung up on me or a girl that's going to be

jealous of you and want to start problems for us. We are here.

Lina: WOW! This is really beautiful I am in love. I love it babe.

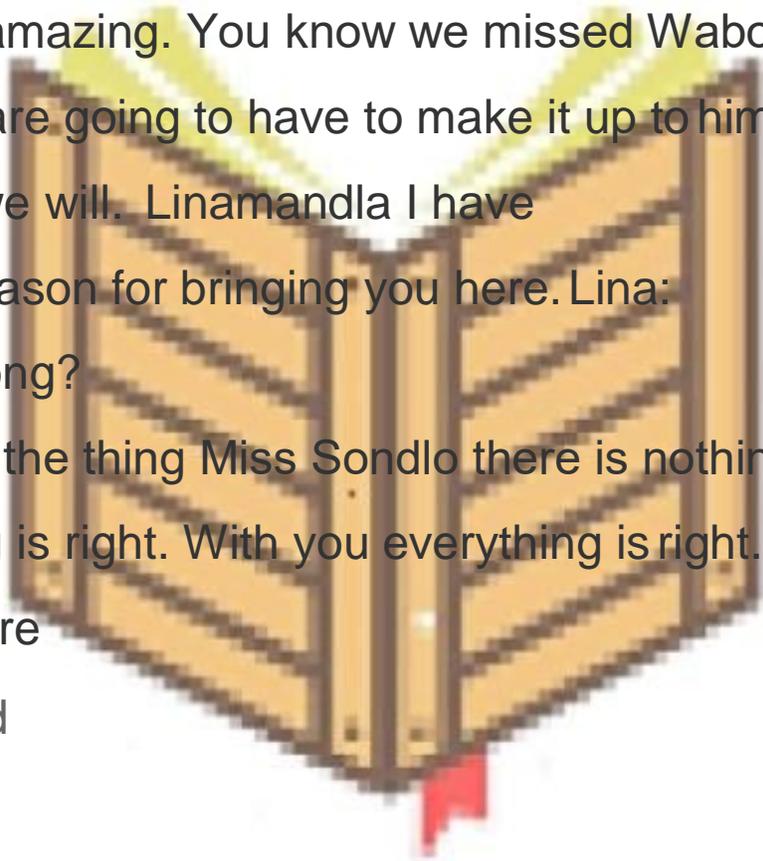
Me: I knew you would love it. I come here a lot when I'm home. This is where I sit and clear my head. The sunset is the most beautiful here as you can see.

Lina: it is amazing. You know we missed Wabo's game today we are going to have to make it up to him.

Me: and we will. Linamandla I have another reason for bringing you here. Lina: what's wrong?

ME: that's the thing Miss Sondlo there is nothing wrong. Everything is right. With you everything is right. I have loved before

Sponsored



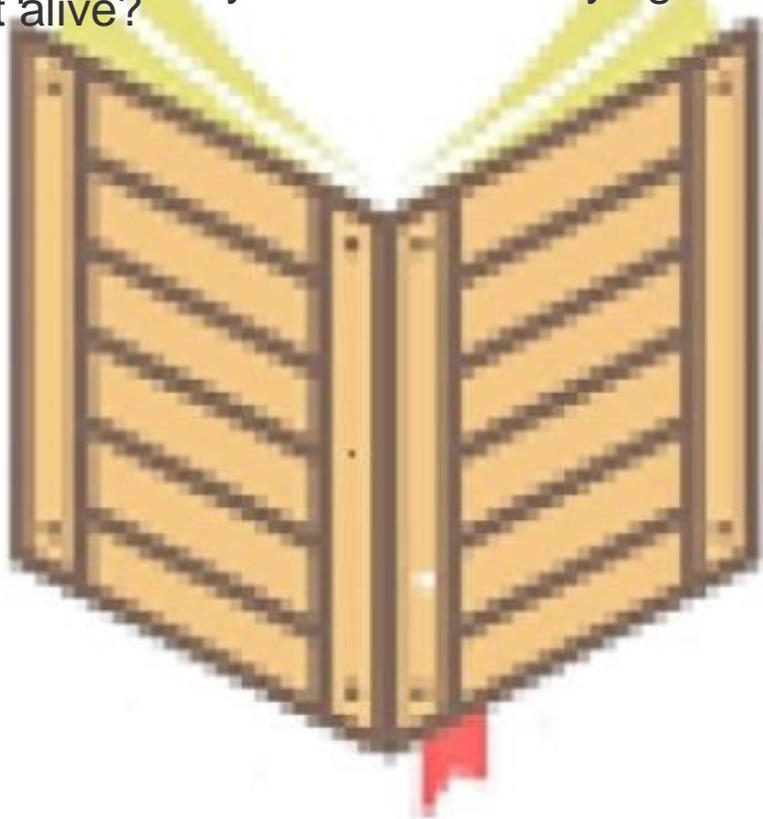
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I loved someone who didn't love me someone who ended up sleeping with my friend hence I don't really have friends. I fooled around a lot with girls until I met you. I didn't want to fool around with you I saw a future with you

and I told myself that I am never letting you go.

Linamandla I love you I love you so much that if you were to leave me I would die. I don't want to live my life without you. Please be wife be the mother of my kids my friend my partner in crime and everything else. I spoke to your dad and he said that if you say he will give us his blessing.

Lina: You spoke to my dad about marrying me and you walked out alive?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ME: I walk out alive proud with my head held high. I really thought he was going to kill me. Lina: I'll marry you. Yes I'll marry you. I love you Mcebisi Mkhize I don't see myself with anyone else but you. (I gently grab her and make her sit on my lap and kiss her.)

Come let's go back. (as soon as we get home I tell the parents and they are so happy especially my mom.)

Mom: finally I have a daughter.

Me: See I told you that mom is going to spoil you rotten.

Dad: she definitely will. I understand that you are still in school my child. Lina: Yebo baba. I'm studying medicine and I'm doing my third year.

Dad: Mcebisi you must let her finish school don't pull her out of school.

Me: I never planned to baba. I want to get married next year and yes you will still continue with school and we can have kids when you are finished with school. We can discuss all this later Lina: yes we can discuss all of it and I appreciate that you are ok with me finishing school.

Me: I have to babe. I can't be the only one educated in

our house. (my dad just laughs it off) Dad: We'll have to talk about when you want to go and pay for lobola so that we can make all the necessary arrangement. (a knock interrupts the conversation and it's the girl from next door.) Her: Sanibonani (Hello)

Dad: Yebo sawubona ngane yam. Singakusiza ngani namhlanje (yes hello my child. How can we help you?)

Her: I just came to see Mcebisi. My mom told me he was around. Dad: Oh ok. I see he is still busy.

Me: it's ok Baba I need to talk to her anyway I need to make a few things clear. (I look at Lina and kiss her. ) I'll be outside. I love you.

Lina: I love you too.

Me: Let's talk outside Sne.

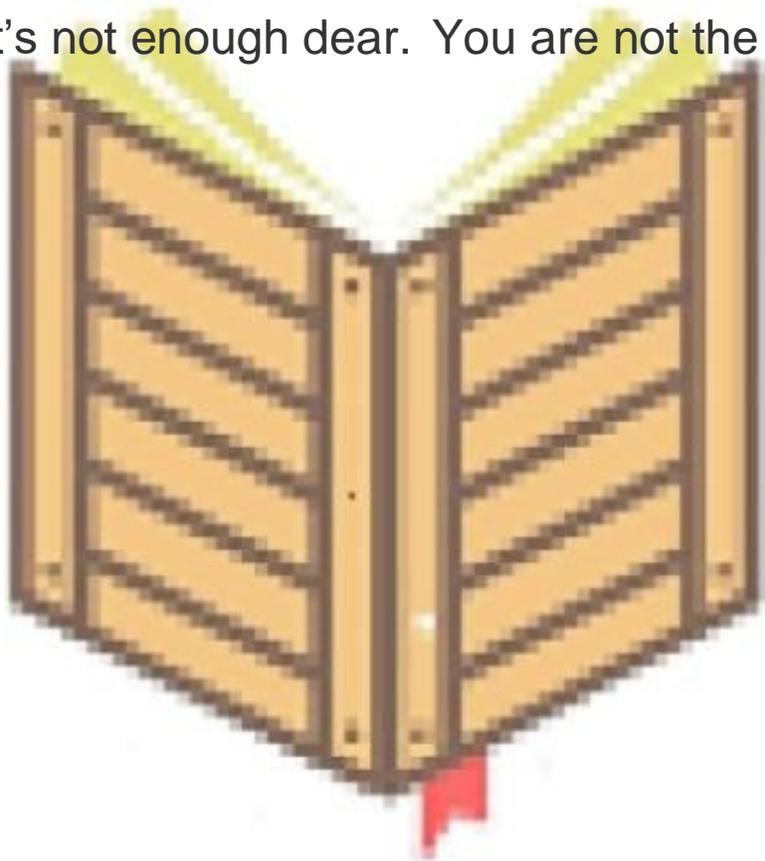
Sne: She seems a bit young for you isn't she?

Me: I fail to see how that is any of your business. If there's nothing else that you came here for please leave.

Sne: Mcebisi come on we've known each for a very a long time and you know that I've always been into you. I want us to try this.

Me: I have never been into you. I have never seen any other way except as my neighbour.

Sne: Why Mcebisi why are you not interest in me? I am beautiful I have a beautiful body I can make you happy in many ways (she says that moving closer to me kissing my cheek. I take a step back) Me: there's the reason why everything that you just said. Why do you think that being beautiful having a nice body and being good in bed is enough? It's not enough dear. You are not the type of



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

woman I can build a home with. You are not the type of woman that would stick around if things go bad with me. You are not the type of woman who wants to have kids and you are not type of woman who wants to have a career. You want a man that's already established a man that is going to take care of you a man with money that you are going to bleed dry. You want all the finer things in life but you are not willing to work for them. I'm with her because she is everything you are not and for six months she stood by me and supported me when that six months wasn't very kind to me and you in that six months you didn't even look at my direction. I am going to repeat myself; I AM WITH HER BECAUSE SHE IS EVERYTHING YOU ARE NOT AND I LOVE HER MORE THAN LIFE ITSELF. She knows me she understands me and I can't say the same for you. (just then Lina walks out and comes to us holding a packet of my favourite chips.)

Lina: I thought you might need this. Aslo can I borrow your car your mom wants me drive her to some woman that she wants to.

Me: will you be ok driving here since you don't know this place. I can always drive you guys I don't mind.

Lina: I'll be ok my love. Your mom will be my GPS besides you still have business to deal with. (she says that part looking at Sne.)

Mom: and besides I want some time alone with my daughter. Your dad is looking for you. Me: I was going to drop you off and fetch you when you are done.

Mom: We'll be fine baby don't worry. Just take the trash out before it starts smelling. (she looks at Sne and kisses my cheek.)

Lina: Your mom is right about the trash. See you later babe. Me: don't take too long. I love you.

Lina: I love you too.

Mom: Lina let's go baby. (and she drives off.)

Me: thanks for stepping by Sne. I'll see you around.

CHAPTER 123

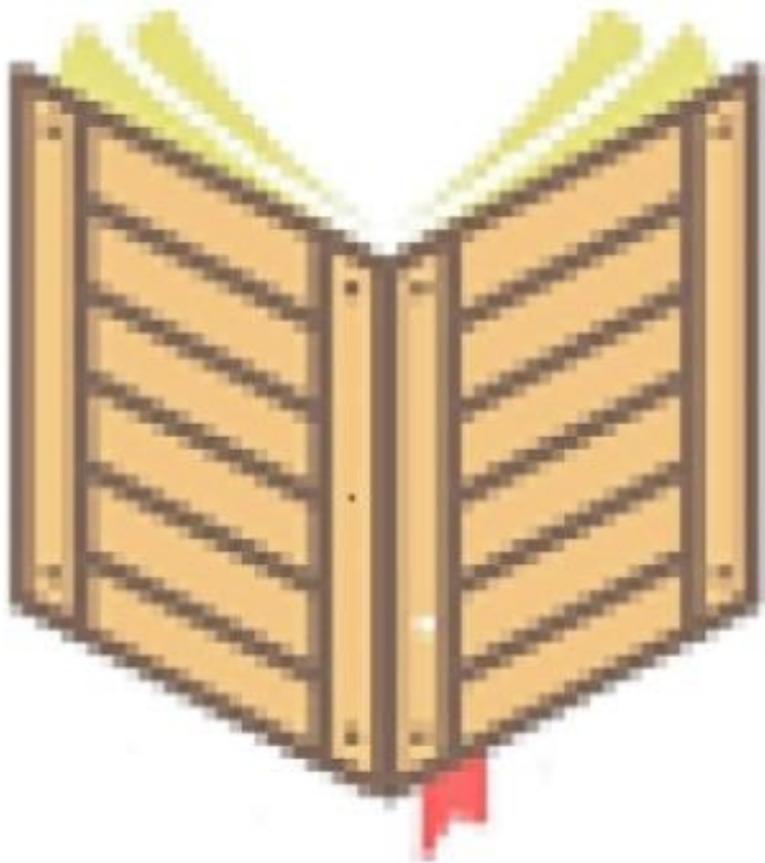
A WEEK LATER **NOVELSGURU.COM**  
SATURDAY – THE DOUBLE WEDDING

\*  
\*  
\*

NARA

TED

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

\*

Everyone is busy running around getting ready for the day. Two couples are getting married today. Ncesh and Lwandle are very nervous.

Khanyi: You don't have to be so nervous ladies. You marrying the men you love after all. Ncesh: Easy for you to say.

Lwandle: I never really thought I would be getting married. I never thought I would find the one meant for me.

Khanyi: Well you have and you must enjoy it.

Thando: Khanyi is right. You have to enjoy this day.

Today is the beginning of the rest of your lives and remember the wedding is a once off thing and marriage is a lifetime.

Khanyi: it is true.

Lwandle: I just wish that my parents were alive to witness this day.

Khanyi: they forever live in your heart darling. Come on let's stop with all this. Let's finish up otherwise we are going to be late I'm sure the guys are already out there.

THE GUYS

Mcebisi: it looks like the ladies had a change of heart about getting married today. Lwazi: maybe the found younger guys and realised these two can't keep up with them.

Mcebisi: I don't think it's that maybe they can't deal with the snoring and nagging from these two. Luyanda: if you two don't stop this nonsense of yours I'll shoot you.

Lwazi: Please don't tell me you are carrying a gun on your wedding day. Mcebisi: What kind of a lawyer are you?

Bandile: I don't even know why we had to make the two of you groom's men Mcebisi: Because you love us.

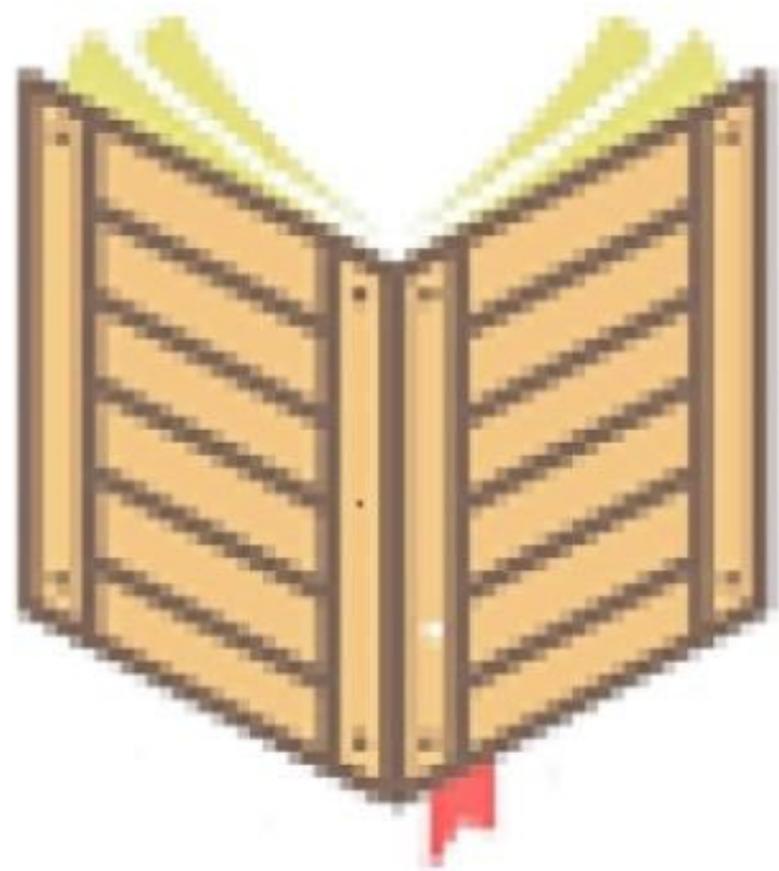
Qhawe: there will be no love if you don't stop with this shit. I'll shoot you and bury you myself. Mcebisi: you can't. You have a wife and 5 months old babies so you can't do anything that will end up putting you in jail.

Qhawe: Shut up  
here they come.

Bandile: she looks  
amazing

Luyanda: they both do. Lwandle is starting to show a little. She is so adorable. Lwazi: are you two crying?

Qhawe: I said shut up



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

The wedding ceremony went on peacefully couples exchanging their vows declaring their love for each other. Luyanda and Bandile are the happiest men right now. They are now officially married. Now it's time for everyone to enjoy the reception.

Qhawe: can I have your attention please (everyone goes quiet) at this moment I would like to present to you our couples of the day Mr and Mrs Langa Mr and Mrs Qhina. May you guys stay strong in your marriage stay loyal to each other always trust each other respect each other and love each other like you've never loved before.

There will be challenges but don't let them break you never forget to pray and always be there for each other no matter what. (he raises his glass to toast the couples)

TO THE NEWLY WEDS AND TO THE FUTURE

With that toast everyone celebrated the newly weds congratulating and wishing them well. There were not many speeches that were made at the reception. This was a small and intimate celebration with close friends and family. This weekend has been dedicated to the wedding. tomorrow the newly weds are going to their

homes for the traditional ceremonies that they need to do. Weekend went off without a glitch. Everyone was happy and they enjoyed themselves. Now it is time to get ready for the wedding of the year in July.

\*

\*

\*

BAN

DILE

\*

\*

\*

So we all decided to stay in East London for a while spend some time with our parents before we go back to our normal lives in Durban. My dad was very happy to see my kids. They've been attached to hip the entire time we've been here. It's as if I'm invisible. The only people dad sees are my wife and his grand kids. Nc nc nc this old man.

Qhawe: it's the same with me man. The minute Khanyi walked into the house with the kids all fifteen of them I



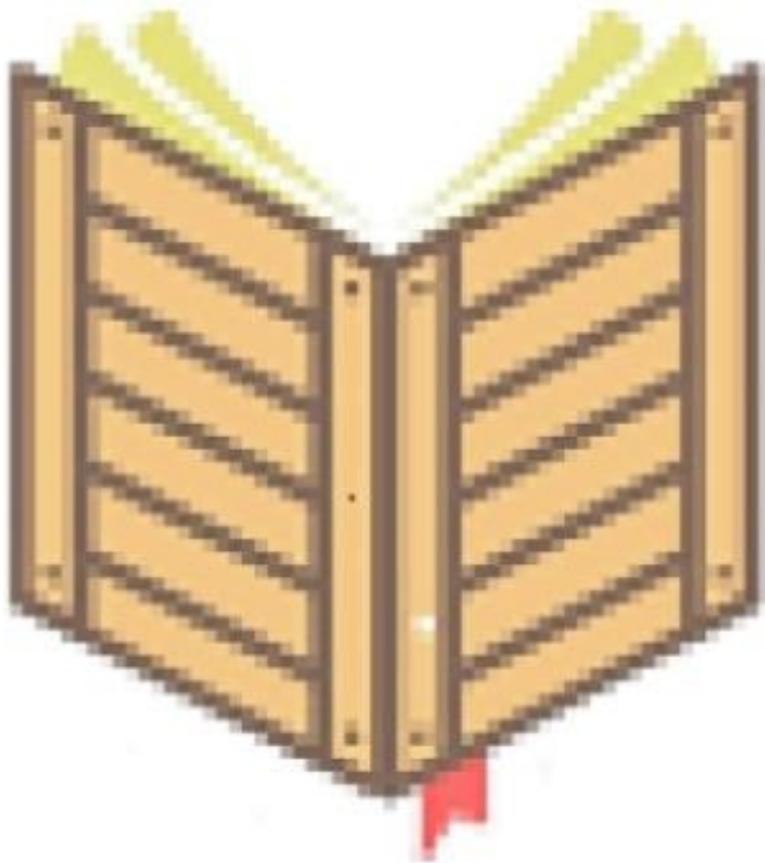
NOVELSGURU.COM

became invisible.

Me: Where were they?

Qhawe: they spent the entire weekend with Khanyi's parents and now we are spending these two days with my parents before we leave.

Me: Next time I come home I'm leaving everyone behind.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: that's an option.

Me: Let's go see Luyanda and see how he is coping with his parents. He's probably getting attention from his uncle only. Are you ok Qhawe?

Qhawe: I'm not sure. I've just had this bad feeling like something bad is going to happen.

Me: Don't do that man. You know whenever you feel like that something usually happens. Brush it off.

Qhawe: I tried it keeps coming back. Even Khanyi is worried.

Me: Look let's just drive to Luyanda we'll pick up Lwazi on the way.



\*

\*

\*

LUYA

NDA

\*

\*

\*

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

We decided to stay two more days here with my parents and it has been great. My uncle calls me to join him for a drink. Apparently ever since he found out about what his

wife aunt Bulelwa did he has not been drinking that much. He drinks on weekends now and dad tells me that he is doing well with the business.

Uncle: your wife is very beautiful mtshana and she is glowing. Me: that's because she is pregnant malume.

Uncle: that's wonderful news. I called you here because I wanted to thank you for what you did. mywife took my company from me from under my nose. Up until today I don't know how I signed it over to her but thank you for getting it back for me Luyanda. I'll be forever grateful for that.

Me: It was nothing malume. I just returned what rightfully belonged to you.

Uncle: I want to file for a divorce mtshana. I can't stay married to that woman. She might just kill me.

Me: I have a colleague who is a divorce lawyer I'll refer your case to him so that he can call you and explain everything to you.

Uncle: Thank you mtshana.

Me: Are your kids ok with you divorcing

Uncle: Not really but they understand why it has to happen.

Me: that's better then (Next we here gun shots. I look at my uncle who is looking at me)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Uncle: mtshana you are bleeding (I feel myself falling of the chair

Sponsored

I'll refer your case to him so that he can call you and explain everything to you. Uncle: Thank you mtshana.

Me: Are your kids ok with you divorcing

Uncle: Not really but they understand why it has to happen.

Me: that's better then (Next we here gun shots. I look at my uncle who is looking at me)

Uncle: mtshana you are bleeding (I feel myself falling of the chair he is kneeling over men.) You are going to be ok Mtshana. Don't worry you are going to be ok.)

\*

\*

\*

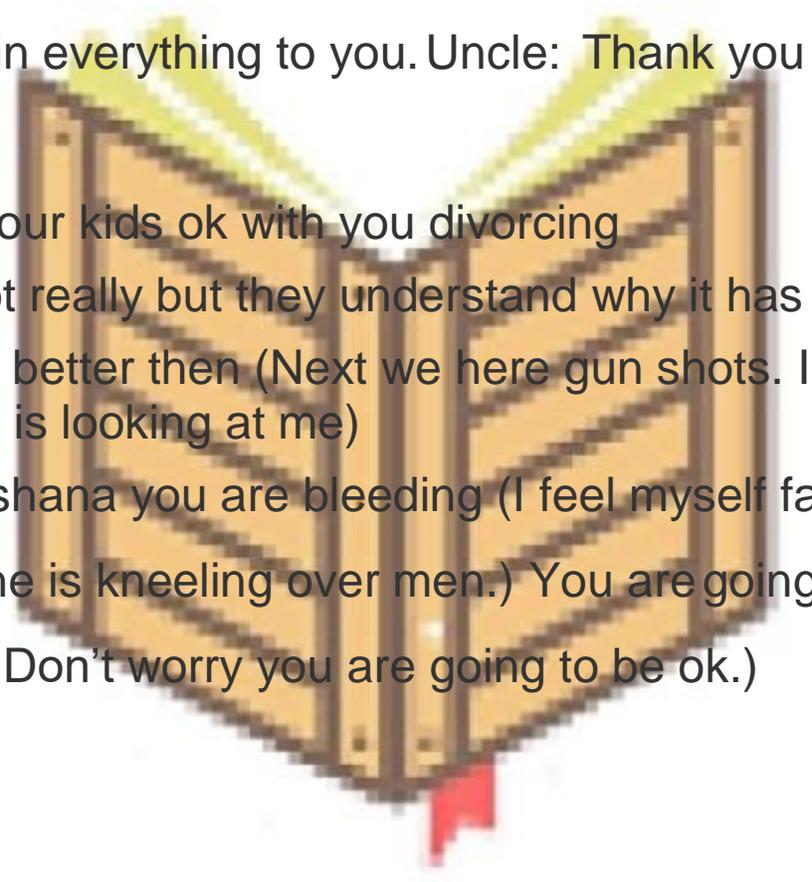
LWA

NDLE

\*

\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

We had the gunshots as we were busy preparing lunch for the family. My father in law quickly ran outside and we followed. The scene that welcomed us outside had me weak I couldn't breathe couldn't control my tears Lungi was also crying uncontrollably. This can't be happening. He can't die not when we still need not when he has not met our baby. They both have been shot. Who could do this?

Mr Qhina: the ambulance is on it's way at least they are still breathing.

Me: I sit on the ground take his head and put it on my lap. Luyanda you have to fight you have to fight for us. We still need you please baby hang in there. (Lungi comes and kneels next to me while Veronica was kneeling next to her brother in law. Who could have done this. Lungi manages to calm herself and tries to help them)

Lungi: I'll try to stop the bleeding. I'll be back. (she runs off to the house and comes with towels and a first aid kit.)

grandma take this an put over the wound and put pressure on it. uncle might have a punctured lung considering were the wound is. Dad mignt have some organ damage he has been on the side.

Mr Qhina: the police are  
also on the way. Veronica:  
How is he how's my son



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: he is still breathing ma. I don't think the wound is fatal but he is unconscious. (just then the ambulance arrives with Bandile's car following behind it. As soon as they park the car they come running to us.)

Qhawe: what happened? (at this time the paramedics were busy with Luyanda and his Uncle Lungi goes running to Qhawe who embraces her in a hug)

Mr Qhina: We don't know my son. We had gunshots and when we came out this is what we found. Lwazi: Who could have done this.

Paramedics: We have to take them to the hospital who is coming with us. Mr Qhina: I'll come with you.

Bandile: We'll follow you.

Qhawe: Lungi look at me Your dad will be ok. He is going to make it he is a fighter and he still has a lot to live for.

Please calm down. You have to be strong for him and for your step mom remember she is pregnant.

Me: come here baby. (she walks over to me and I hold her) your dad is going to be fine ok. You did good.

Lungi: who could have done this.

Lwazi: We'll get answers later for now let's go to the hospital.

## STILL MONDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

## BANDILE (TWIN)

\*  
\*  
\*

It's time I talk to the parent. Mom will be easier to talk to than dad and thank God he is not here. Take a deep breath Bandile. I walk in and she is alone which is a good thing.

Me: Mom can I talk to you

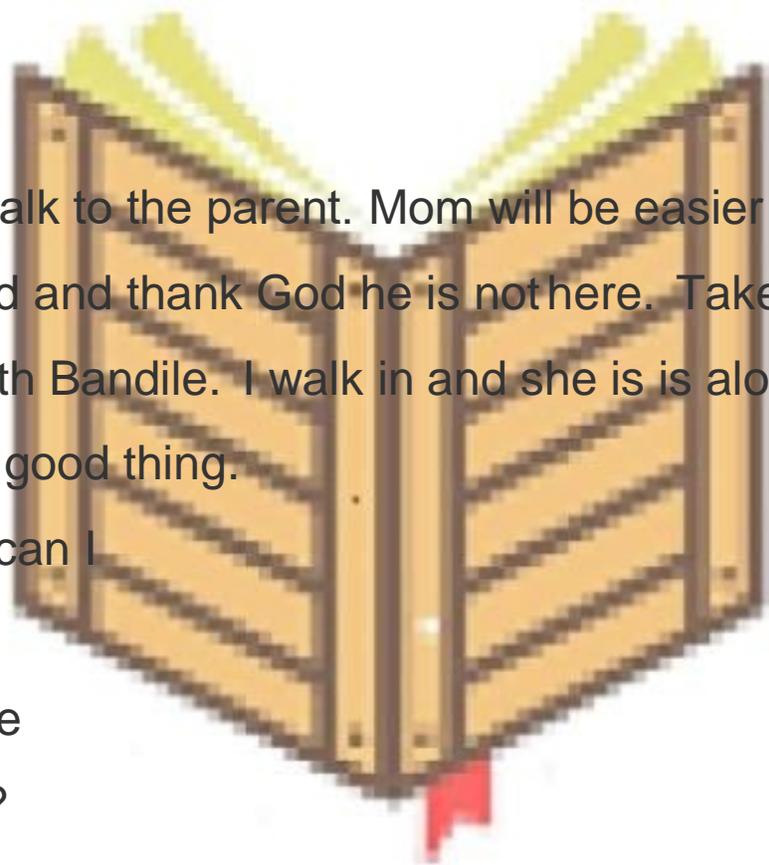
Mom: Sure what's up?

Me: I have a situation

Mom: Ok. What kind

of situation? Me:

Apparently I got a girl pregnant



Mom: Bandile what do you mean “apparently?”

Me: the thing is ma I don't remember sleeping with her.

Ok this is what happened. Banele and I we went out one night a few months back. We went to a friend's party.

When we got there there were a lot of people we knew and there was this girl that had a crush on me at school but I was never interested in her. she's not the kind of girl I would date. Anyway her and her friends chilled with us the whole night it was fun. Mom I swear I was not even drunk. We didn't drink that much because we still had to drive home but I don't remember how I got home. Banele says I left him at the party and went home with this girl. When I woke up I woke up alone and naked even today I still don't remember what happened. (she stays quiet for a while)

Mom: You were careless Bandile and you know what we always say to you guys about crowded places. People know who you are they know your parents and they will do anything to get into your pockets. You are lucky you are talking to me right now and your dad is going to have a thing about this.

Me: I know mama and I am sorry. I need your help. If she really is pregnant ma I don't believe it's mine. I always

use protection ma.

Mom: you don't remember what happened that night so you might have not used

protection. Remember you were not in control of the situation she was. She drugged you because she knew you would never willingly sleep with her. what else?

Me: she says that if I deny the pregnancy she is going

to open a case against me of rape. Mom: is this girl demented does she know who she is dealing with.

She must not make me angry. How is she going to rape you and then say she was raped. Who is this girl?

Me: Andrea Williams. We were at varsity together. I was her senior she is still there she is doing her final year this year.

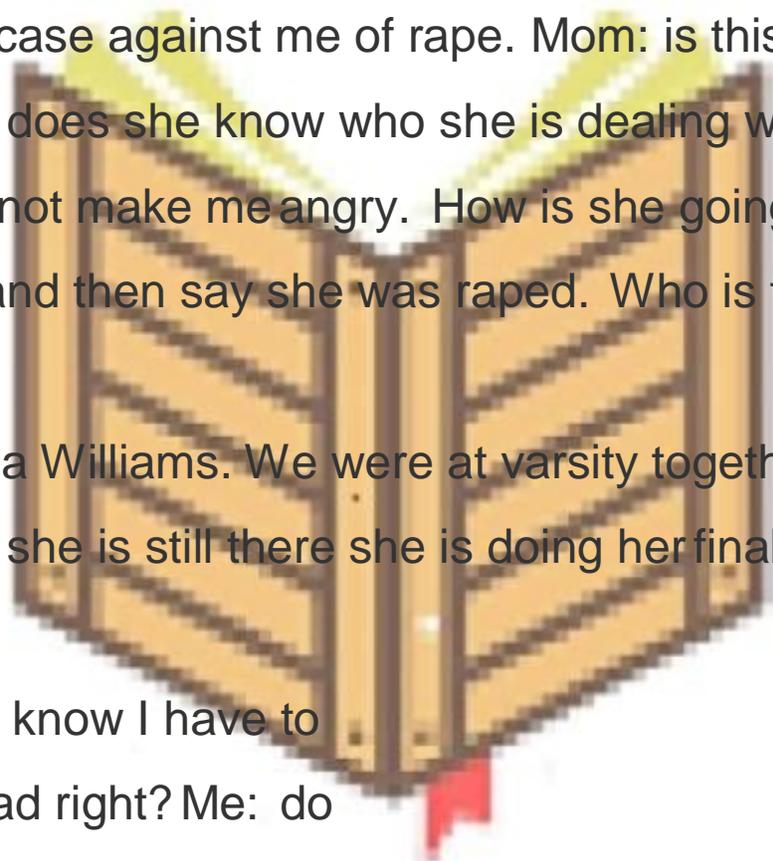
Mom: You know I have to tell your dad right? Me: do

we have to?

Mom: Yes we do because we are going to need his help.

(her phone rings interrupting us) it's your dad. (she answers her phone and talks for a while ending the call by telling dad that she will be right there.)

Me: Mom what's wrong?

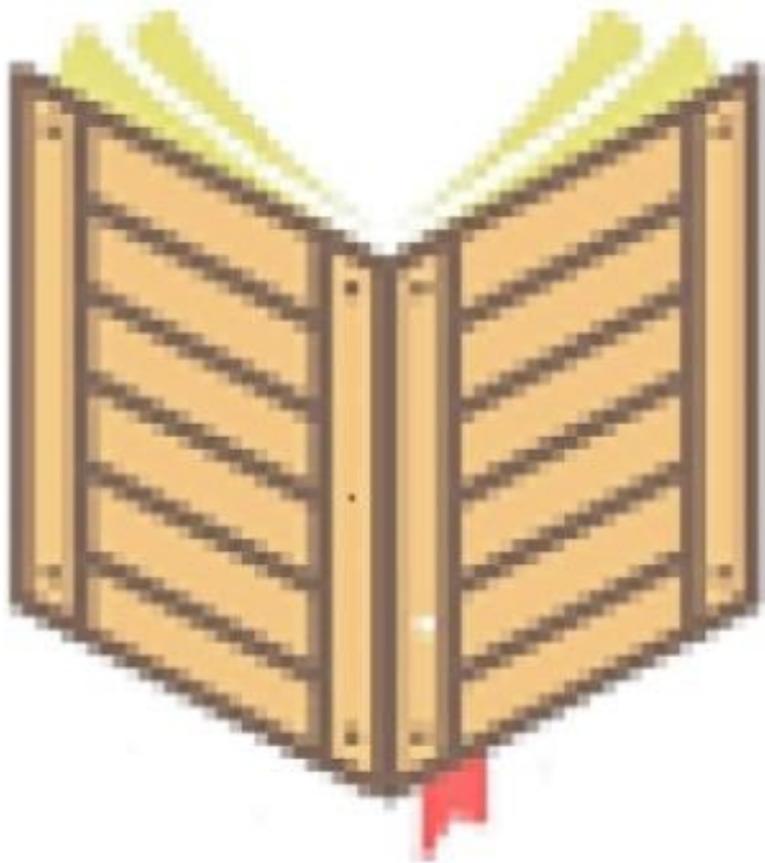


**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mom: Luyanda is in hospital he was shot. Look we'll finish this conversation later. I have to get to the hospital.

Please stay and babysit for me.

Me: but ma



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mom: Bandile come on. You know your younger siblings went back to Durban today they have school. Besides if you want my help you will babysit. (she says that grabbing her car keys and leaving me there.)

\*

\*

\*

KHANY

ISILE

\*

\*

\*

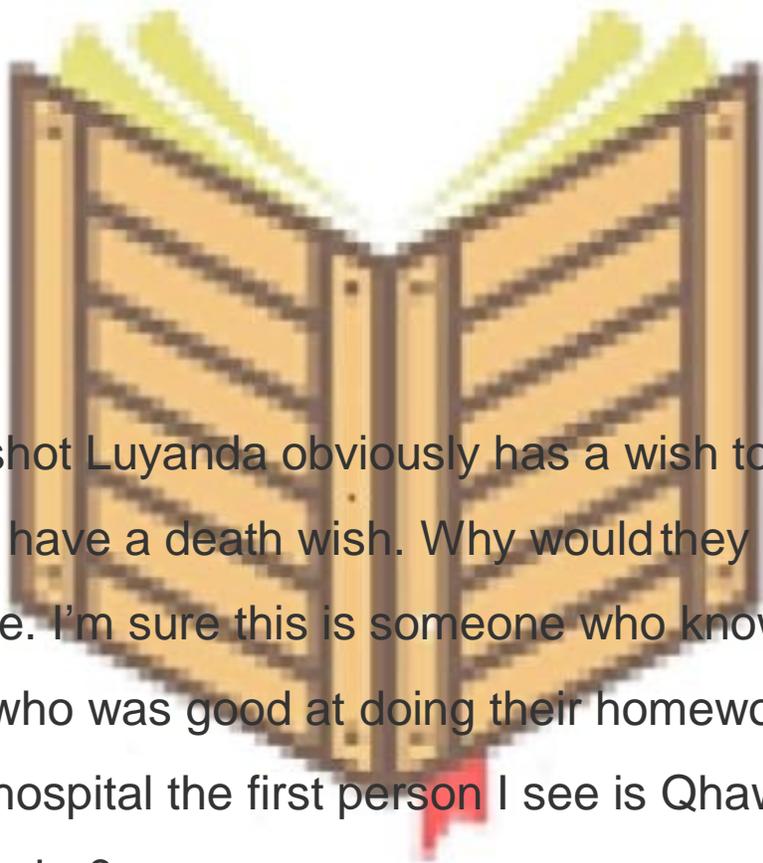
Whoever shot Luyanda obviously has a wish to end up in jail or they have a death wish. Why would they shoot him at his home. I'm sure this is someone who knows him or someone who was good at doing their homework. When I get to the hospital the first person I see is Qhawe.

Me: How is he?

Qhawe: they are both going to be ok. The bullets didn't cause any major damage. Whoever shot them was an amateur. Who did you leave the babies with?

Me: Bandile is baby sitting.

Qhawe: why would you put my babies through that



NOVELSGURU.COM

kind of torture you know how he is. Me: Don't worry your mom is home but he doesn't know that this serves as punishment. Qhawe: What did he do?

ME: He has a situation but we'll talk about it later. Qhawe: I see.

Come let's go see the lawyer.

Me: have you called Siphos? Qhawe: Not yet.

Me: Let me call him first.

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\* Me: Siphos how are you

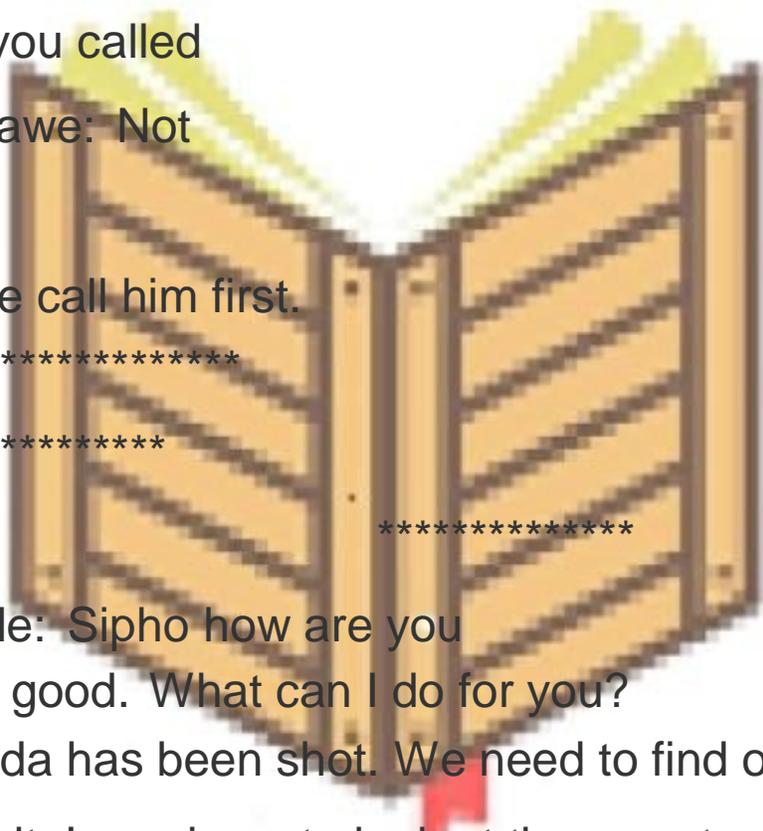
Siphos: I'm good. What can I do for you?

Me: Luyanda has been shot. We need to find out who could have done it. I need you to look at the recent cases that he

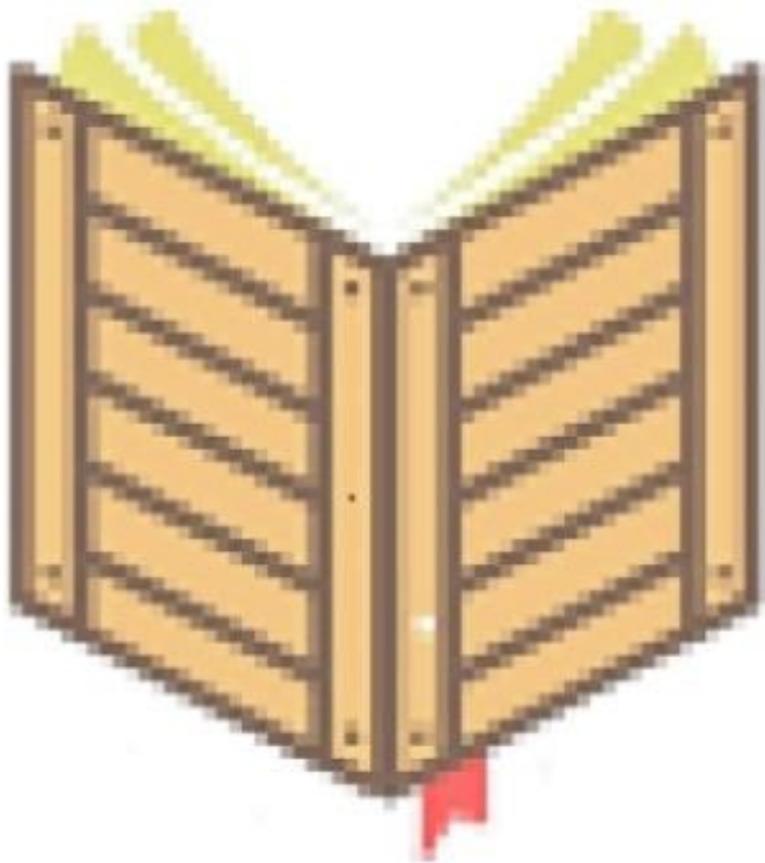
has worked on or is currently working on maybe someone out there was not happy about the outcome of the case or maybe it's personal. Don't rule out Lungi's mom.

Siphos: I'll look into it. When are you guys coming back?

Me: we are supposed to come back tomorrow but with this happening we'll stay for a bit. Has Sizwe picked up my



kids from the airport?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sipho: they just arrived

Sponsored

Eddie and Andile are also here I'll update them. We might fly out tonight or tomorrow morning. Me: Please make sure Sizwe gets Anelisa to stay with the kids since you guys are coming this side and I need Eddie to make sure that Jason is there and that he takes the kids to school and fetches them. I'll call Anelisa later. Thanks Sipho. We'll see you guys tomorrow.

Sipho: sure thing Khanyi. I'll let you know what I find.

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

Qhawe: do you think Anelisa will cope with the kids she hasn't stayed with them in a while.

Me: She'll have to. It won't be for long. Her relationship with her kids has improved. I think they will be ok. Let's go see my lawyer.

Lwazi: Mama bear you are here

Me: Hey guys (Lwandle and Lungi are really not ok.

Luyanda's mom is more of a mess They have red swollen

eyes obviously from crying. Lungi comes running to me)

Hey sweetie. Shhh don't cry baby he is going to be ok.

Lungi: I just found him and now someone wants to take him from me why? Why can't I just be happy just once in my life. He has a baby on the way he just got married.

We were happy ma and someone wants to take our happiness from us.

Me: I promise you baby who ever did this is going to pay.

They will be punished. (I look at Lwandle who looks exhausted. I let go of Lungi and hold Lwandle who is really trying hard to strong and she is probably doing it for Lungi. I look at his mom) how are you ma?

Veronica: I'm ok my dear. At least there was no major damage done. They are going to be ok. ME: where is malume?

Veronica: He's in the room next door. My husband is with him. He is also going to make it. you have to find out who did this. The police are not going take this case seriously.

Bandile: We'll do what we can ma. Whoever did this will pay.

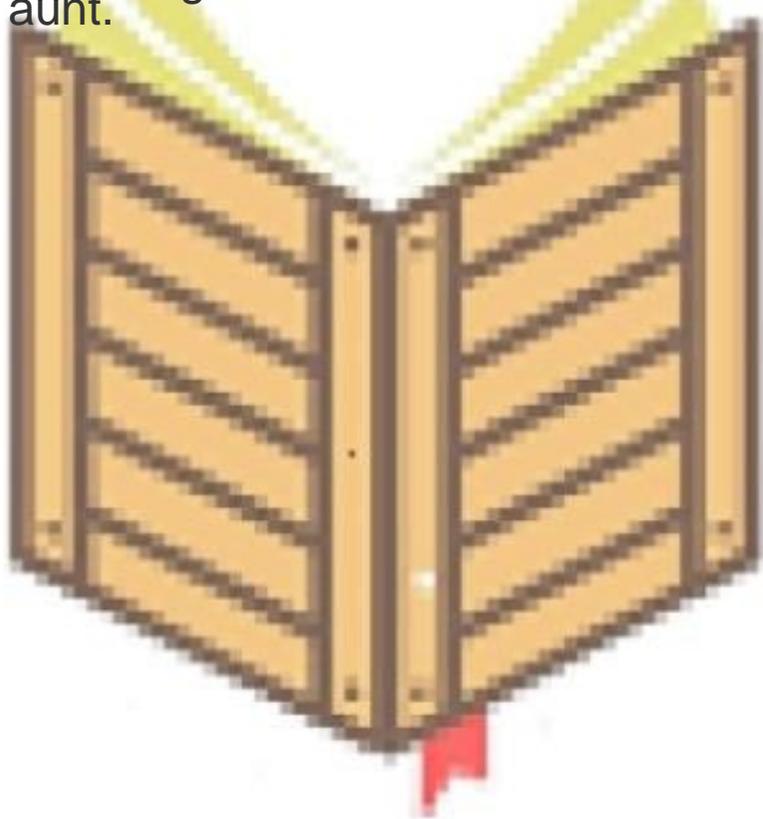
Lwazi: Mama Bear can we talk outside guys join us

please. (Lwazi takes us to the waiting room) Me: I called

Sipho and asked him to look into his cases check if there are any unhappy clients and also asked him not rule out Sihle.

Lwazi: I don't think Sihle is behind this. She is stupid but not that stupid. There's two people that lost a whole lot regarding the Lungi saga

Bandile: ,Lwazi is right. That Luleka woman and the Luyanda's aunt.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: Sipho must just look into them but I'm with Khanyi on this one. Let's not rule out Sihle plus her aunt also lost a whole lot.

Me: Let's wait and see what he comes back with and we can take it from there. (Just then Detective Malusi Jaxa walks in)

Malusi: My favourite people how are you?

Me: Malusi still as crazy as ever.

We are good and you? Malusi: I am good. And yes I am crazy crazy about you.

Lwazi: You know Khanyi this detective has a death wish. How can he flirt with you like that in front of Qhawe?

Malusi: don't stress Lwazi. Qhawe knows and he is cool. On a serious note tell me what happened here.

Qhawe: The family lawyer was shot at home he was sitting outside with his uncle. They only heard gunshots no one saw anything

Malusi: Someone saw something there's always a witness I just have to look in the right places. Bandile: We are glad you are handling the case. Our private investigator is also doing a little digging and we'll keep

you informed with what he finds.

Malusi: could you please make sure that when you find out who did this you call me immediately so that I can arrest them. I don't want to arrest my suspects all bruised and I end up having to make up stories. (we all look at each other)

Me: Sure Malusi. Whatever you say.

## CHAPTER 125

TUESDAY

\*

\*

\*

KHANYI

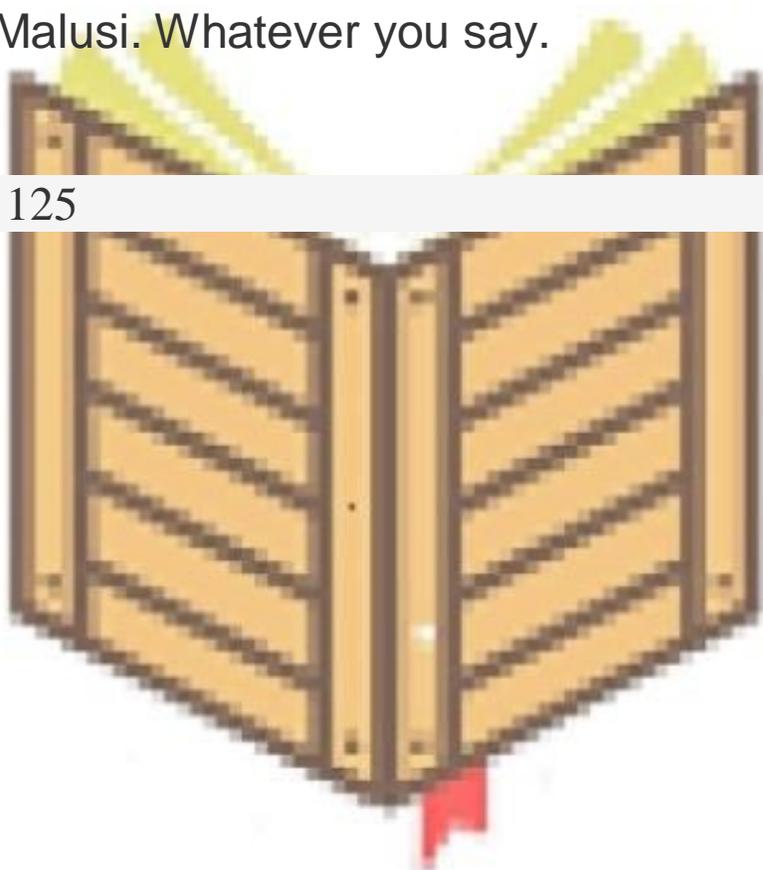
SILE

\*

\*

\*

Qhawe made love to me last night he said he doesn't want my mind focused too much on what's going on and he also knows that sex is one the things that helps me to relieve my stress. Sex is



NOVELSGURU.COM

always great and he really knows how to make me forget. When ever he makes love to me it's always like it's just me and him in this world. But then my happiness is not long lived.

Qhawe: whatever you are

thinking don't think it.Me: how

do you know what I'm thinking?

Qhawe: Because I know you my Queen. Don't think it it might not end well.

ME: Why not Que? Everytime I am happy in my life someone decides to play with my happiness. We should be going home to our kids today but we are here because someone decided that we do not deserve to be happy that Luyanda doesn't deserve to happy. He is my family Que. They keep messing with my people and I'm expected to fold my arms watch and forgive. They are killing my family and I keep letting them live. Why can't we just be left alone. Why can't we be just happy just once be happy without any body messing with us. Why do we always have to fight for our happiness. It's not fair. Everytime I start being happing the devil keeps knocking at my door wearing heels and when I don't open the door the devil finds another way. I can't baby I can't deal with this. Whoever did this to Luyanda is going to die.

Qhawe: I understand how you feel my love I truly do. But you need to remember why we keep handing the ones that do us wrong to the police. We have kids that need us. The last thing we need is one of us ending up in jail. One day we are going to

look back at these challenges and smile thinking that it was all worth it. We need to stand together our enemies need to know that they can't get to us. They need to know that whenever they bring the fight to us we will fight back and that's what we need to do. We need to always fight for what we believe in for our family. Just when they think we can't fight back we fight back. We can never give up. If one of us gives up then this family will start falling apart and we can't allow that. We are family we are who we are we made us all because we believe in each other we trust each other and loyal to each other.

Me: I hear you my love and I under everything you are saying it's just that sometimes I feel like people are taking advantage of us.

Qhawe: Of cause they are taking advantange of us of our kindness and we can't let them. Let's get dressed so that we can go to the hospital. They guys will be here in two hours.

Me: Ok. I'm still angry though. Angry that people think they can walk all over us and do as they please with our lives and on top of everything else that's happening right now some girl thinks she can rape my son and getaway with it.

Qhawe: What do mean by your son being raped which son are you talking about we currently have seven sons

Sponsored

we currently have seven sons so which of the seven are you talking about? ME: Shit! Did I say that out loud?

Qhawe: Yes you did now start talking. Who was raped and by who?

ME: Bandile was drugged and raped by some girl who now claims to be pregnant with his child. Qhawe: and when were you planning on telling me this.

Me: As soon as I found out but then you called about Luyanda while I was talking to Bandile yesterday. ( I proceed to tell him everything that Bandile told me.

Qhawe: I've told them to be vigilant when they are in crowded places especially now that we are slowly getting to the lime light.

Me: I know babe but right now we need to deal with this situation. If the girl is really pregnant with his child then he'll take responsibility for the child but so help me God that girl is going to pay for raping my son.

Qhawe: she definitely will.

Who is she? Me: Andrea

Williams

Qhawe: Did you just

Williams? Me: yes

why?

Qhawe: Ask Sipho to investigate her and find out who her father is. Anthony Williams has always been my competitor in this industry and he has always hated me.

Me: Thee Anthon Williams always in the public eye.

Qhawe: the one and only and I hope that this

Andrea is not his daughter. Me: Ok. I'll speak to Sipho when they are here and ask him to look into

it.

\*

\*

\*

SIH

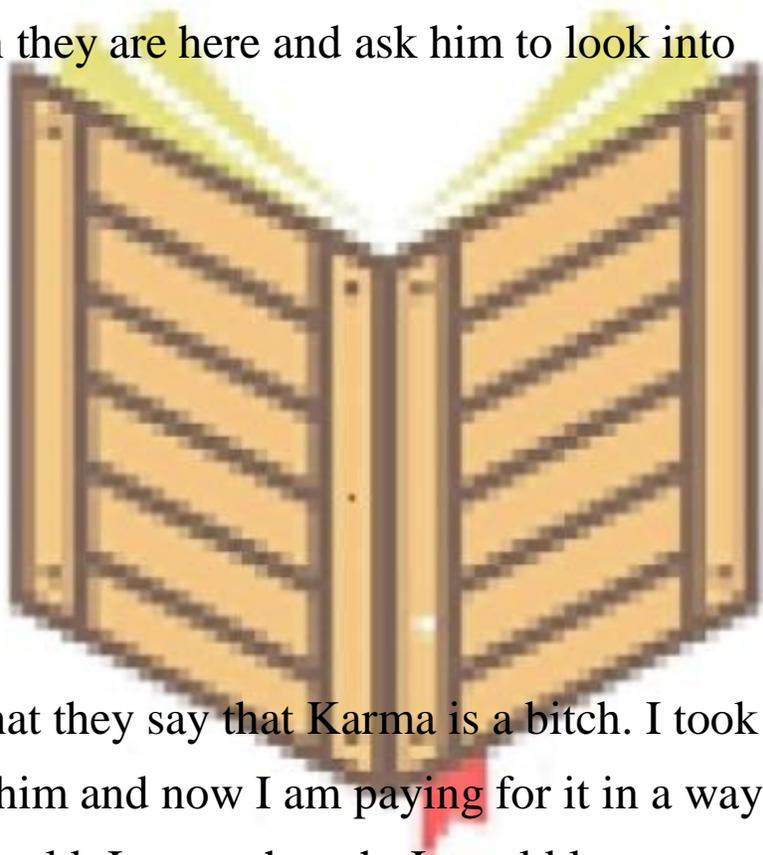
LE

\*

\*

\*

It is true what they say that Karma is a bitch. I took his daughter away from him and now I am paying for it in a way I never thought I would. I never thought I would lose everything including my daughter. I don't really blame her for hating me. I wasn't the best mother. Sometimes in life we take things for granted. I took for granted Luyanda's love for his daughter for a period of time



NOVELSGURU.COM

I destroyed him. I don't even know how he managed to get himself together. It goes to show that whatever evil plans we have for others might work out for a while but they won't last long. In the end for every bad thing that we do to others it comes back to us ten times more. Right now what I did to my daughter and her father it's coming back to me ten times more. No matter how many times I apologise no apology will ever bring back what I stole from them

Today I am without a house I am on the verge of losing my job because of the careless mistakes I have been making lately because I am not completely focused on my job and I can't blame anyone for it. Maybe Luyanda was right I might just end up begging him to kill me. My phone rings interrupting my thoughts.

Me:

Hello

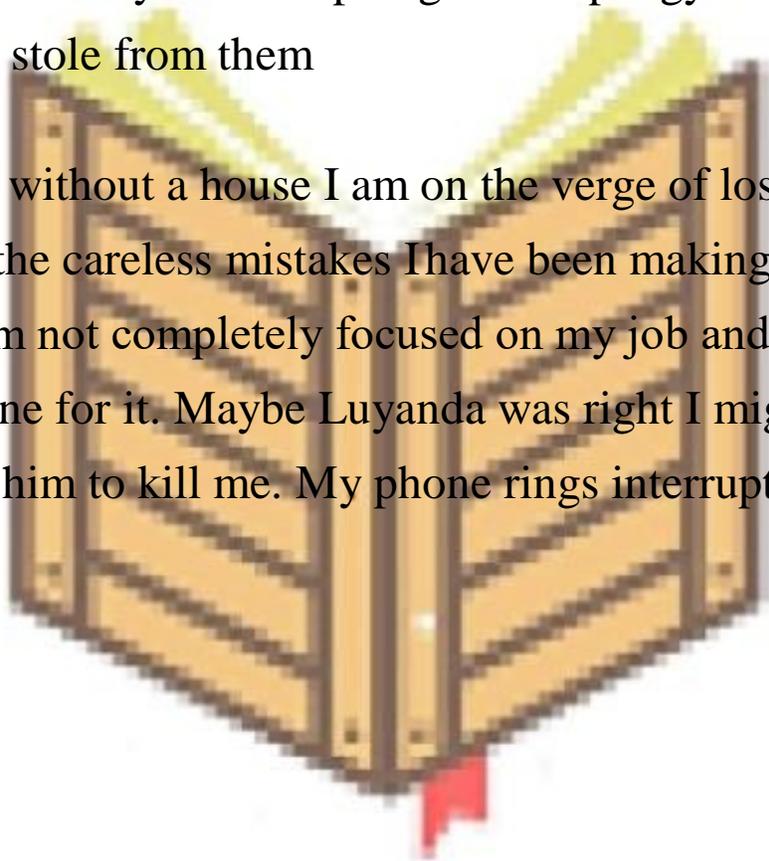
Her: I

shot him

Me: You shot who?

Her: I shot Luyanda. He took everything from me. My husband is gone because of him. I have nothing because of him.

Me: Well this is nothing compared to what we did to him. Do you know how stupid what you did is. You will not survive jail when you get caught and they will send you to jail once they



NOVELSGURU.COM

find out.

Her: they'll never find out. No one saw me do it.

ME: I wouldn't count on that if I were you. There's always someone who saw something. Do you realise that I am going to be the first suspect in what you did. What you did was very stupid you just put all our lives at risk.

Her: Why would you be the first suspect? Me: I

wanted the lobola money

Her: You deserve it. You raised Lungi on your own.

Me: don't even mention that because I chose to raise her on my own. I went along with a stupid idea and look where it got me with practically nothing and my daughter hates me. Look this is your mess you can clean it up on your own. You were not suppose to kill anyone and believe me when I tell you that they will find you. I have to go.

DAMMIT!!! How stupid can a person be? How did I get myself involved in all this? Since when am I greedy person. This is really messed up.

\*

\*

\*

LW

AZI

\*

\*

\*

Me: I have a job for you

Him: What kind of a job is that?

Me: It's a clean up job. I need it to be completely clean no trails or loose ends or anything like that. I want everything to disappear into thin air.

Him: It's going to cost you you know that right?

Me: I know. When it comes to my family

I'll do anything. Him: Send me the info.

Me: as soon as I have it I'll send it and

that might be tonight. Him: what happened to make you take this drastic decision?

Me: Someone tried to kill my brother man and I'm tired of people messing with my family. Him: I hear you man and I understand. I'll wait to hear from you then.

Me: Hopefully tonight latest tomorrow. Talk to you later.

\*

\*

\*

SN

E

\*

\*

\*

I can't believe the things Mcebisi said to me. How can he even say all those things. I can be anything he wants.

Her: Friend are you ok?

Me: I'm ok. Just thinking about the things that Mcebisi said to me.

Her: What exactly did he say to you ( I tell her everything Mcebisi said to me)Me: and on top of everything else that girl looks very young.

Her: I know you might not want to hear what I am about to say to you but Mcebisi is right my friend. How many times have you said you are not ready to have kids how you don't want to work you just want a man to let you spend his money and it's obvious that Mcebisi likes his

ladies educated attractive and he likes the working ladies. Even if she is not working she must at least be driven to do something with her life except spending his money. I bet you right now that Mcebisi doesn't mind spending money on her because she brings more to their relationship than you ever will Sne. You and your mother need let go of this idea of you becoming Mrs Mkhize one day it won't happen. I am warning you now Sne don't even think of using Muthi otherwise you will regret it for the rest of your life.

Me: I thought you were my friend how can you say all these things.

Her: I am your friend Sne. I'm just the kind of friend that won't lie to you and tell you to go for someone you will never have.

Mcebisi has never looked at you that way Sne and he never will.

Me: I still want him he can learn to love me and I won't use Muthi I don't believe in that but my mother does.

Her: don't even try you won't win. You will get hurt Sne. The pain that you will feel if you carry on messing with Mcebisi and his girl will be beyond measure.

CHAPTER 126

NOVELSGURU.COM

STILL TUESDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

LWA

NDLE

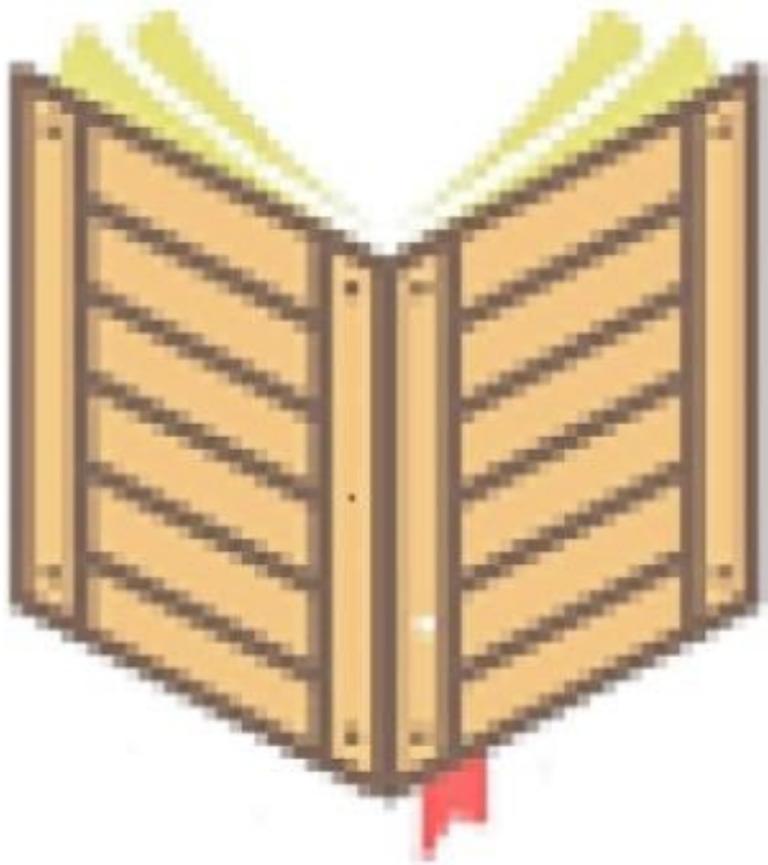
\*

\*

\*

I felt someone shaking me gently while I was sleeping next to Luyanda in hospital. I was suppose to go home but I was so tired I think I passed out in his bed. I hear a screechy voice telling me to wake up and it feels like I am dreaming and I ignore it and just continue sleeping. After a while I wake up feeling better. I go to the bathroom and do my business and when I come back he was still asleep. I need him to wake up now. I miss him. I miss all of him. I don't understand why someone would do this. I'm glad that there was no serious damage done. This goes to show that life can be too short or it can be too long hence we have to live our lives to the fullest enjoy every moment take risks at times even though you don't know what the end result will be. Life is unpredictable that way. You never know what's going to happen when you wake up in the morning. I never knew I would wake up one day as someone's wife and pregnant. Four years ago I miscarried due to abuse I suffered in the relationship I was in. I stayed in that relationship believing that he will

change. He



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

would beat me up then the next day wake up and apologise saying he didn't know what got into him and like a fool I believed him and it continued until the day he beat me up and i miscarried. I could have left the relationship earlier but I believed I loved him and as it turned out I didn't love him I was just dependant on him and he took advantage of that. It took me losing my child to leave him. Even though I didn't know I was pregnant at the time the loss I suffered gave me the courage to leave because I realised that if I don't leave I am going to lose my life. Since then my life has been all about work. I have no friends and never dated again after I left Zukile. When I met Luyanda I was out for drinks on my own something about him drew me to him. the way he carries himself is such a turn on. I never thought I would trust another man after Zukile but Luyanda came into my life and showed me a different side of love. He showed me love that I've never been shown before. He effortlessly makes me feel comfortable with him. Whenever I am in his arms I feel at home. Now someone decides that they want to take that away from me why what did I ever do to them? What did Lungi ever do to them for them to just take her father

away. They just found each and now this happens. How cruel can people be?

Him: You should really not stress so much it's not good for the baby.

Me: You are awake. (I get up from the chair I was sitting on and hug him tight forgetting that he is injured I am reminded when he flinches in pain) Sorry babe I'm just so happy.

Luyanda: I'm glad you are happy to see my ugly face. Where's my daughter?

Me: She went home with her grandparents but they'll be back later tonight. They are going to be so happy. You had us worried there for a bit.

Luyanda: worry no more my love. How is my uncle?

Me: He is ok. He also just needs to wake up. Let me call the doctor (just then the doctor walks in) Doctor: I see you are awake

Me: I was just about to call you.

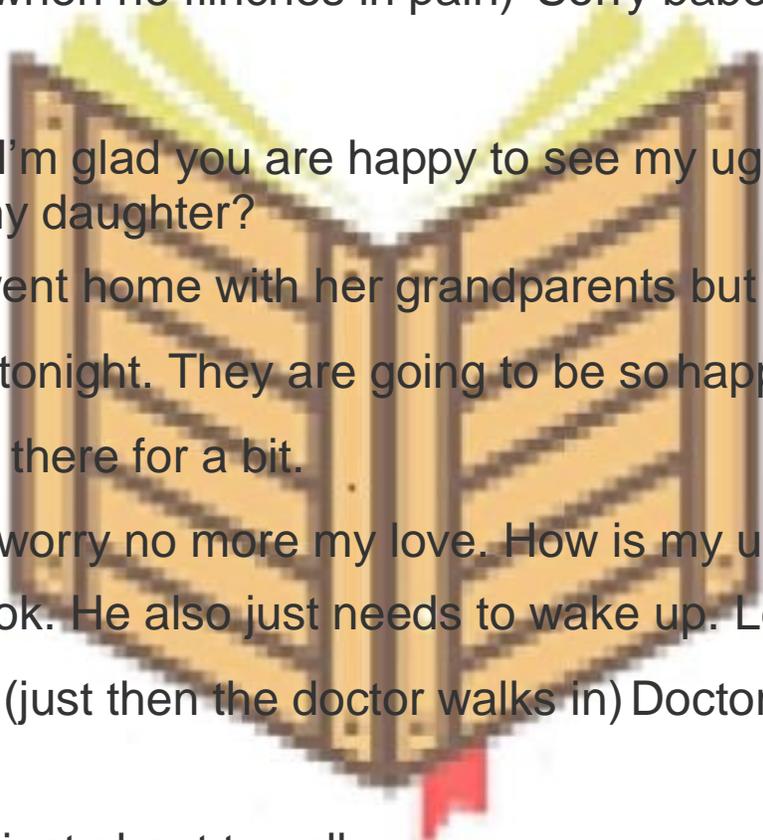
Doctor: I am here now. How are

you feeling Mr Langa? Luyanda:

I'm ok just a bit of pain.

Doctor: I'll have the nurse give you something for the pain.

You daughter did real good stopping the bleeding with you



NOVELSGURU.COM

and your uncle. She should consider studying medicine

Luyanda: She will when she has completed her nurse's course this year.

Doctor: that's good. I am not going to send you home today. I am going to keep you for another day or two just to make sure that you are completely ok. It's a good thing you are awake your wife was worried sick about you. I've also done a check up on her and you'll be pleased to know that they are both ok.

Luyanda: that's good to know doctor at least I can breathe easily now.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Doctor: the police were also here I told them to come back tomorrow you were still out then.

Me: thank you doctor. (with that said he walked out) You see we are perfectly fine. (he just pulls me to him and kisses me.)

\*

\*

\*

LW

AZI

\*

\*

\*

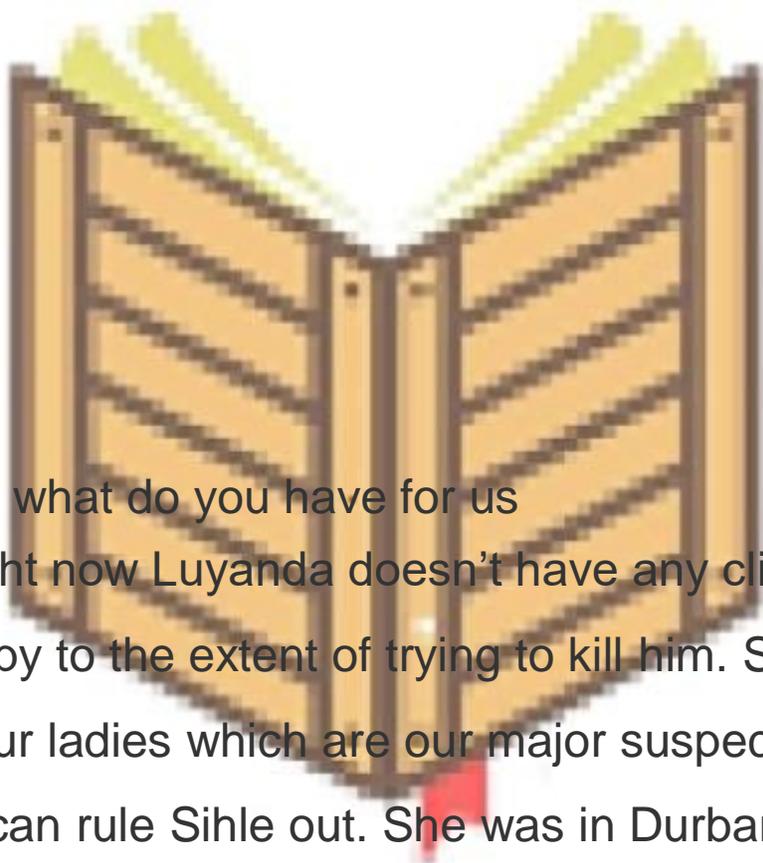
Me: Siphon what do you have for us

Siphon: Right now Luyanda doesn't have any clients that are unhappy to the extent of trying to kill him. So I looked into our four ladies which are our major suspects right now. We can rule Sihle out. She was in Durban still is in Durban sulking she spends most of her days at home when she is not at work. The woman is depressed I think.

Me: That's not our problem. What else do you have?

Siphon: Sihle's aunt is not Johannesburg I haven't found her yet

Sponsored



NOVELSGURU.COM

I haven't found her yet Luleka is not in Durban as well I still haven't found her and Bulelwa has been here moping around her house. We have three suspects and it could be any of these three

women. I should have more info tonight.

Bandile: My money is on all three of them they are in this together.

Sizwe: I don't think so. In situations like these there's always that one person that is so stubborn that they would want revenge. It's only one person and they did it themselves they didn't hire anyone. If they had hired someone who is good at this type of thing Luyanda and his uncle would be dead. Unless they hired an amateur.

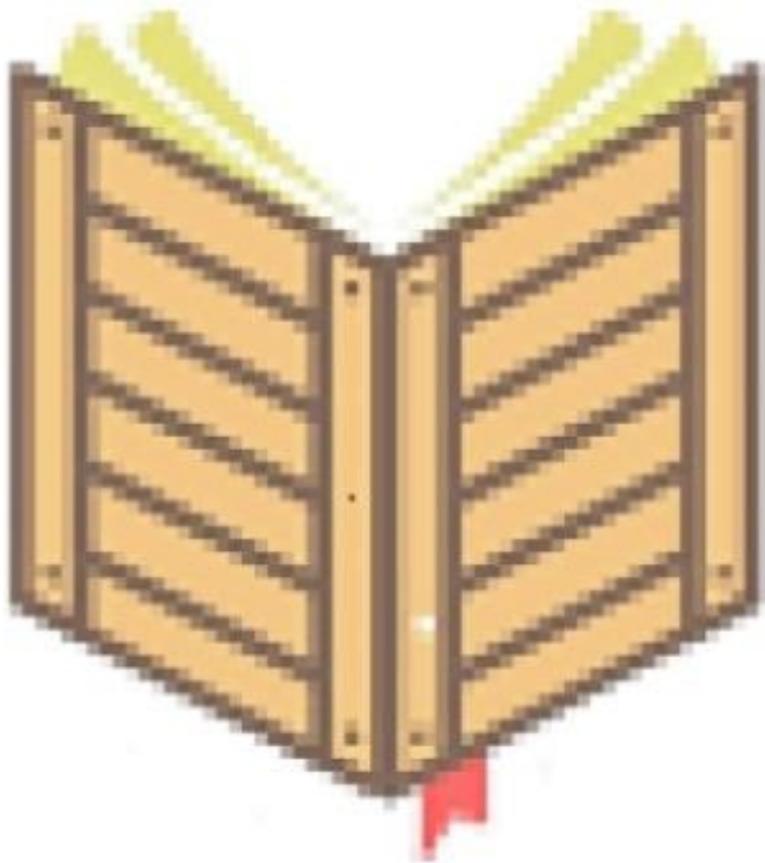
Me: whoever did this had better make sure that we don't find them. Do you know if the detective has found out anything?

Sipho: I haven't spoken to him yet and I'm sure that someone saw something we just need to find that someone.

Me: Mama Bear how are

you? (as she walks in)

Khanyi: I'm ok just tired.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

ME: Where are the little Boovs

Khanyi: With their grands parents. they troublesome. They are teething. Where are Ncesh and Thando

Me: We'll meet them at the hospital.

Khanyi: Ok. Siphon I need to look into someone for me

Anthony Williams and check if he has a daughter named Andrea. I need everything you can find on him.

Me: What happened?

Siphon: by the sounds of it's not good.

Khanyi: This Andrea girl drugged

Bandile and raped him. Bandile:

When did that happen?

Lwazi: how can you not remember being with another

woman you are cheating now Bandile hee? Bandile: She is not talking about me you idiot

Khanyi: Now the girl claims to be pregnant. Qhawe told me that Anthony is his biggest competitor in Architecture

business and he doesn't like Qhawe very much especial with the deals that Qhawe has been getting which are

outside the country.

Siphon: I know the guy. I've done a job for him before and that was before I met you guys. Andrea is his daughter. I

wouldn't be surprised if she was faking the pregnancy. It wouldn't be the first time she lies about being pregnant. She does that to guys she like and they don't see her in that light she forces them to date her and threatens to cry rape. It looks like she is making a career out of it.

Khanyi: She messed with the wrong kid this time.

\*

\*

\*

SIZ

WE

\*

\*

\*

I walked out because I had a phone call to make.

ME: Are you good man?

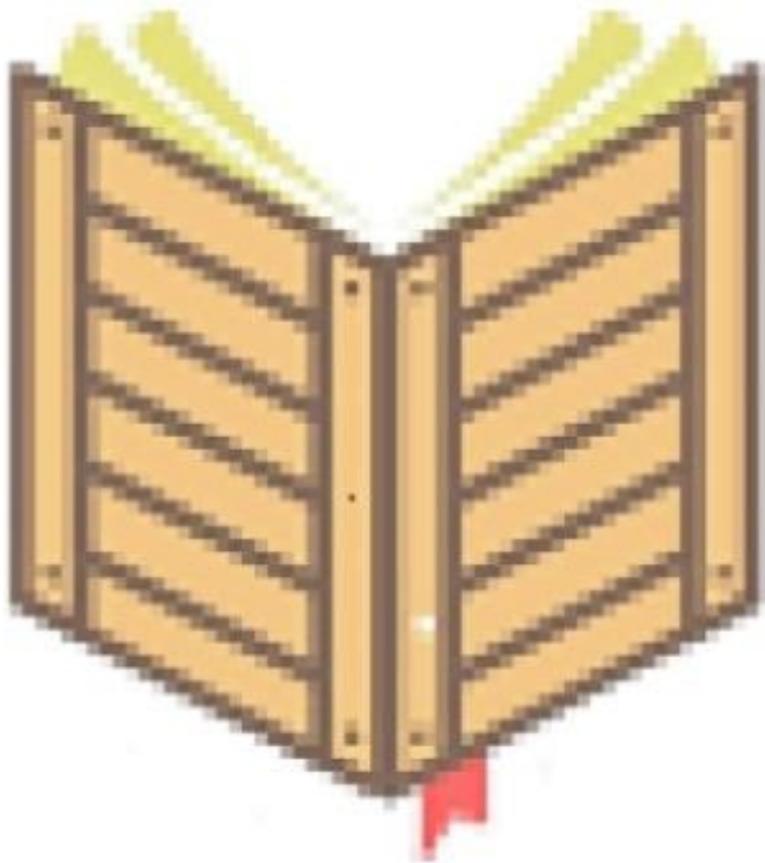
Him: I'm good. I haven't heard from you in long time where are you what's happening with you? Me: I got out of the game years ago. I am now legit with a daughter and soon to be married.

Him: finally my man is settling down. I take it this is not a friendly call.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Someone is messing with my family and I need to have them dealt with.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: temporarily or permanently

Me: In this case I prefer permanently. I'll send the info.

Another thing is that I need you to find someone for me

Anthony Williams his daughter is playing with fire and she is going to burn.

Him: I hear you. I'll wait for the info then. I'll call you as soon as I have something on this Anthony guy.

Me: thanks man I really appreciate it. (I hang up)

I swore I would never go back to that world and now stupid people are pushing me to use my old contacts. I really don't understand why people can't leave us alone. I guess this situation calls for drastic measures.

## CHAPTER 127

WEDNESDAY

\*

\*

\*

MCE

BISI

\*

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

Me: Thank you for lunch my love.

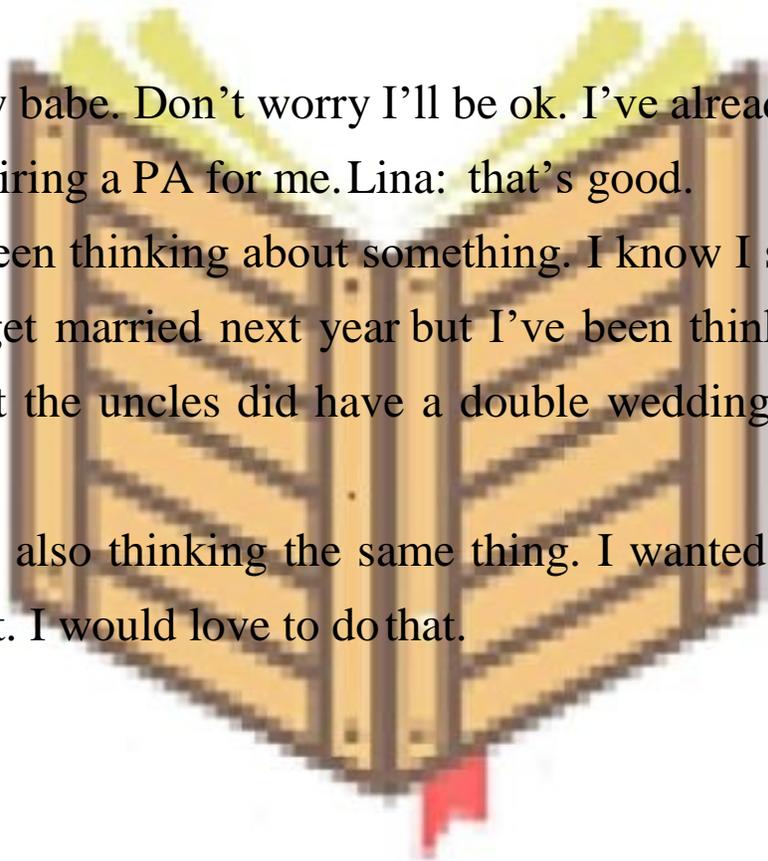
Lina: it's not a problem. When are you getting a PA Mkhize?

Me: I'm still fine for now. The receptionist downstairs is managing well with the work load. Lina: You do know that at some point you have to get one it's going to get busy and I can't help all the time with the work especially with my exams around the corner.

Me: I know babe. Don't worry I'll be ok. I've already spoken to HR about hiring a PA for me. Lina: that's good.

ME: I've been thinking about something. I know I said I would like us to get married next year but I've been thinking what if we do what the uncles did have a double wedding with Lungi and Khaya?

Lina: I was also thinking the same thing. I wanted to talk to you about it. I would love to do that.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: so basically you are saying you can't wait to be Mrs Mkhize.

Lina: I would like nothing more. Besides what's the point in waiting unless you are not ready with the lobola.

Me: that's nothing to worry about babe. I am ready with the lobola. I can even pay it today so long as your dad doesn't charge me an arm and a leg.

Lina: He is a reasonable man.

Me: are you done with your classes today?

Lina: yes Singela I'm done. My afternoon class was cancelled. We should speak to Khaya and Lungi about the wedding.

Me: Let's do that tonight. I'll also speak to my dad about sending a deligation to your parents. He'll probably send a letter first. My dad is very old fashioned.

Lina: trust me my dad would appreciate that.

Me: Come here I want you to sit on my lap. (she stands from her chair comes around the desk to me and the dress she is wearing . mhhhh) Kodwa Linamandla how many times must I tell not to wear this dress? (as she sits on my lap between my legs looking at me with such an innocent smile I kiss her running my hand up on her inner thigh moving up under her dress to her cookie. I gently squeeze her cookie and whisper in her ear) You are only suppose to wear this dress after I have made sweet love to you for the first time after which I know I can have you anytime I want. Right now I want nothing more than to put you on this desk have your legs on my shoulders and pumping you hard and deep. You are killing me woman.

Lina: (She kisses me again and whispers back) What if I want to feel you inside me what if I am ready for you to make love to me

Me: Baby what are you saying? (I ask as I gently pull back to look at her)

Lina: I am saying that I am ready I am saying that I want you I am saying that I want to experience all of you.

Me: I thought you would want to wait until we are married.

Lina: Since we are getting married in July now I can wait only if you can manage it. Me: I've managed it for a year and a half two more months will be nothing.

Lina: Ok then. How about I take care of the little problem you have right now. (she stands between my legs while kissing me and whispers in my ear.) Please stand and lean against the wall and drop your pants. (I don't waste any time to do as I am told. She comes and stands in front of me. Her height reaches to my chest and I love that about her. She goes down on her knees not taking her eyes of me. She takes my very erect dick and holds it in both her hands and starts moving them up and down around it. This feels good so good. She massages it in

different ways from using both hands to one hand before she moves down to massage my balls and slowly licks it from my balls to the tip she does that for a while and slowly puts my dick in her mouth which drives me crazy causing me to grab on her hair. She really know how to make me surrender to her. She sucks my tip like she is sucking a lollipop. She takes her time sucking on the tip she stops and gives my shaft wet butterfly kisses with a bit of suction in every kiss. She goes down my shaft to my balls again she sucks on my balls putting them in her mouth one at a time. This woman is going to have me cumming soon. She stops and licks my shaft all the way to the tip and swallows my shaft in her mouth again moving her head back and forth taking her hand and stroking my shaft as she sucks on it. I gently move myself in and out of her mouth and in that she slowly pushes me in deep in her mouth she is getting me deep in her throat I don't know how she manages to control her gag reflexes but she does. She goes on for a while but she gags and pulls back a little. She puts me in again giving me control allowing me to move back and forth in her mouth and she slightly grazes my shaft with her teeth which sends over the edge and I can't control my orgasm and I explode in her mouth. Yhooo this girl is going to be the death of me. I must say in all the blowjobs I've had she is gives the best. While still on her knees she pulls my trunk up and gets up pulling my pants up.)

Lina: I hope you enjoyed that as much as I did. Me: One of these day you are going to kill me.

Lina: I love you too much to do that Mr Mkhize. Me: I love you too Miss Sondlo.

\*

\*

\*

LUYA

NDA

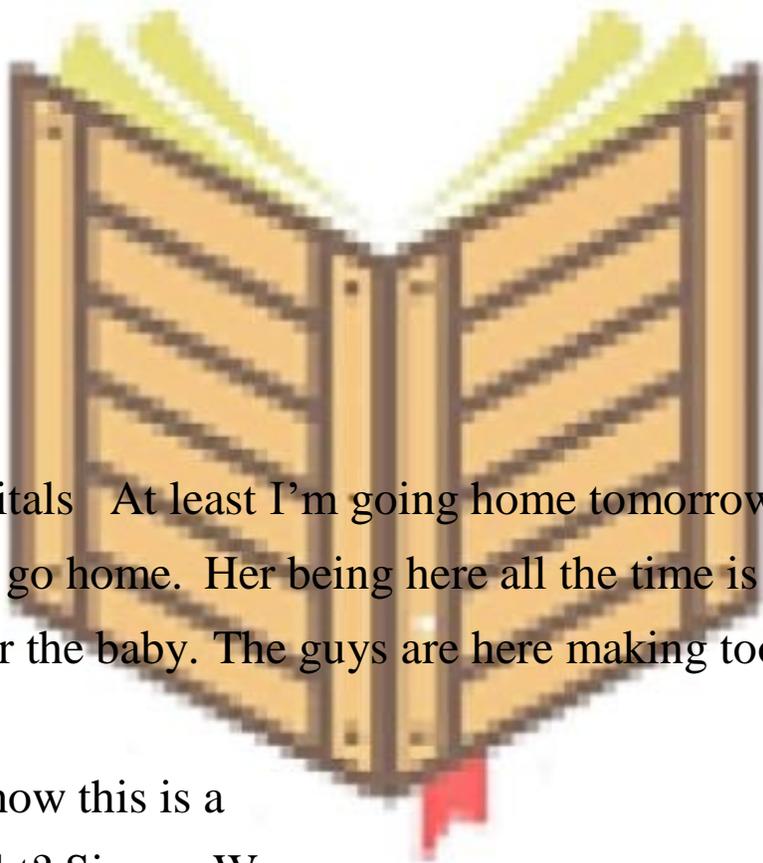
\*

\*

\*

I hate hospitals At least I'm going home tomorrow. I told Lwandle to go home. Her being here all the time is definitely not good for the baby. The guys are here making too much noise as usual.

Me: You know this is a hospital right? Sizwe: We know what's your problem? Me: You making noise.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sizwe: Don't make me laugh. Now it's you in a hospital bed we are making noise and when it was the others you were making just as much noise.

Me: prove it.

Sizwe: everyone in this room is a witness

Qhawe: You were the loudest Luyanda when

Khanyi was in hospital. Lwazi: that is definitely true.

Me: So now you ganging up on me

Lwazi: You are a lawyer get yourself out of this situation. Siphon: You guys can be really childish

Bandile: there goes Mr always serious. Siphon you need lighten up a bit. Or what is Sindy not giving it to you nicely.

Siphon: as a matter of fact she is giving it to me very nicely but that's not where we are. I know who shot you. Someone definitely saw something. They saw a car drive off after the shots were fired and they managed to catch the registration number and the car was registered to Luleka Gxaji the good doctor.

Lwazi: she doesn't learn nhe.

Siphon: she lost her license to practise as a doctor her husband divorced her getting full custody of their son she lost everything and she wanted to avenge herself. I tracked her car and she is back in Durban.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Eddie: I'll get my guys get her and that means we should leave for Durban soon.

Sipho: that's not all. She was not alone she was with your aunt Luyanda hence you and youruncle were both shot. (Lwazi's phone rings and walks out to answer it)

Me: it was not enough that they took my child from me they had to kill me taking me away frommy daughter my uborn child and my wife. You know what this time I am not going to be so nice.

I am going to kill them.

\*

\*

\*

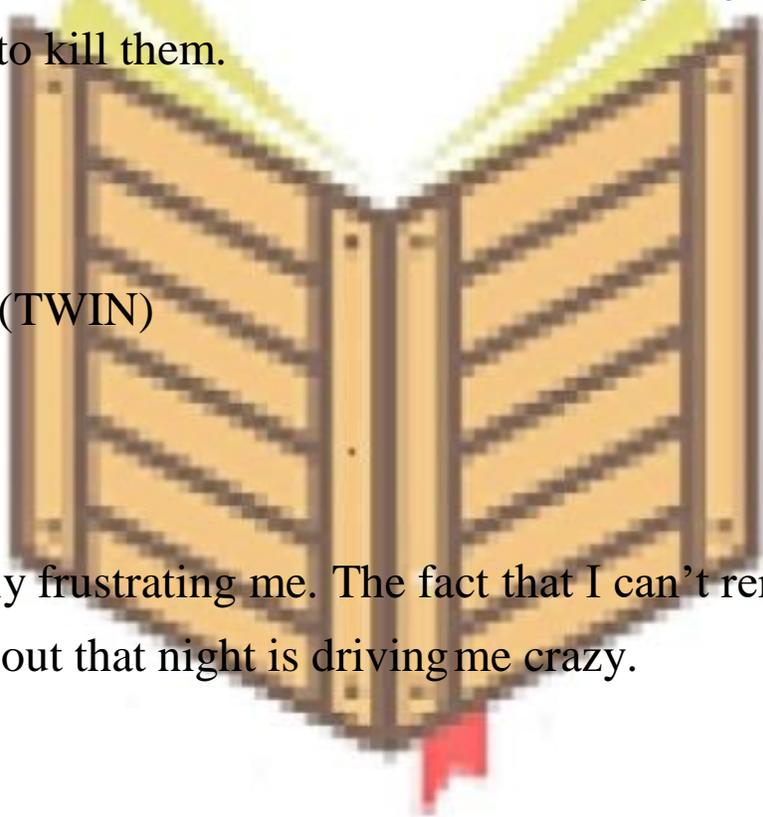
BANDILE (TWIN)

\*

\*

\*

This is really frustrating me. The fact that I can't remember anything about that night is driving me crazy.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khaya: I'm sure you didn't come to my office to just stare out the window.

Me: No I didn't but you have an amazing view. This whole thing with Andrea is frustrating me. What if this was some kind of plan to get back at dad since her father doesn't like my dad that much.

Khaya: why does he hate dad?

Me: A few years back there was company in Zambia that wanted to upgrade it's building and make it more modern. So dad pitched for that project as well as Andrea's dad but dad got the deal. Eversince then dad has been getting a few deals around Africa and mom made it worse with her ad campaign and made QM Architectural to be internationally recognised and this up coming project that he has got in Mauritius to build a hotel there. Andrea's dad is making all this personal now.

Khaya: so he can't win in the business world so he attacks dad personally is that what you are saying?

Me: it's possible. On the other hand this could just be Andrea being Andrea wanting to be part this family or it could be a ploy to get me to own up to the pregnancy in the hopes that her dad might merge companies with dad.

Khaya: it definitely does make sense. We need to talk to this Andrea girl. Bandile: I thought we were letting the parents handle it.

Khaya: We are but we are also doing our own little investigation.

Me: let's do it then. I'm too young to be father besides I really don't want to have a child out of wedlock.

Khaya: that's good. We need to talk to this girl and prove that she is actually pregnant and have a parternity test done if she is. Mom and dad can handle her father. I'm sure mom has already asked uncle Sipho to look into them. We really need our own PI.

Me: We'll find one.

Khaya: call your twin and inform him and I'll talk to Mcebisi.

## CHAPTER 128

SUNDAY

\*

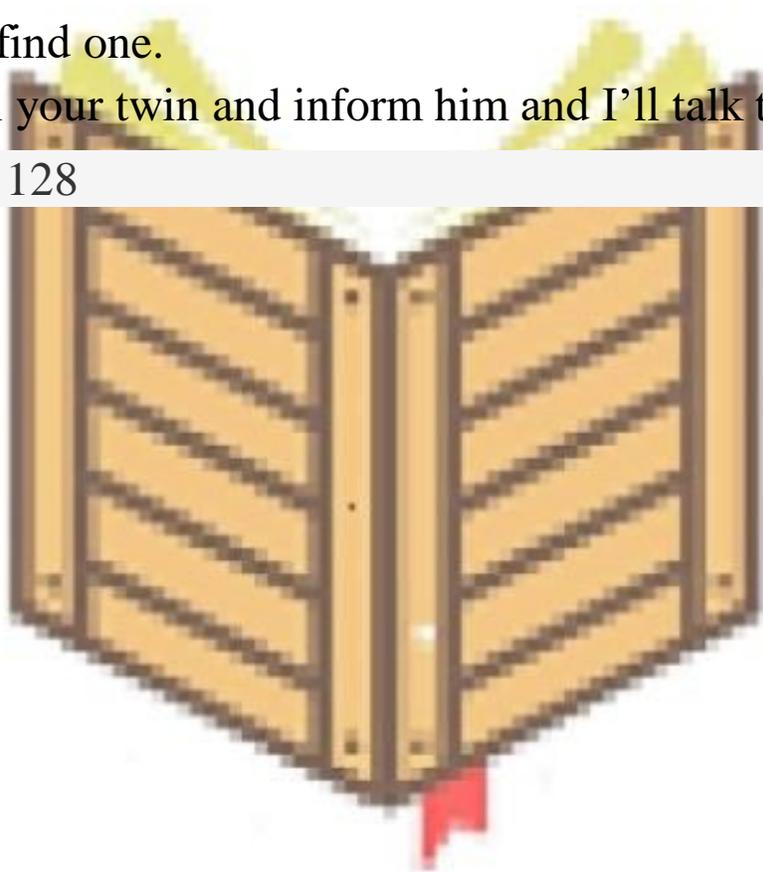
\*

\*

BAN

DILE

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

We just arrived in Durban . it's been a hectic week.

Luyanda was discharged on Wednesday and his uncle too. They are both recovering well. We have decided to spend the night at the farm.

Luyanda: You guys really need to stop babying me.

Lwandle and Lungi do enough of that. I was just shot I am not paralysed I can do things for myself and when I need help I'll ask.

Sizwe: just enjoy us pampering you because this is not going to happen again anytime soon. Lwazi: Sizwe is right. Enjoy it while it lasts. I must say Qhawe this man cave is awesome even Luyanda is comfortable.

Qhawe: Thanks man. (Khanyi walks in with detective Nxele) Det. Nxele:

Gentlemen

Me: Detective what can we do for you

Nxele: My colleague in East London called regard a case that involved a shooting of one you. Luyanda: that was me. Is there an update?

Nxele: there is. I'm surprised you haven't found anything

yet. Normally you give me the info before I get it.

Lwazi: Our PI is very slow these days. We don't know why maybe the Mrs is starving him for working long hours. (he looks at Sipho and smiles.) What do you have for us detective?

Qhawe: would you like a drink?

Nxele: anything non alcoholic I'm still on duty.

Me: update detective

Nxele: oh yes. There was a witness and apparently there were two people involved a Luleka Gxaji and Bulelwa Langa.

Luyanda: that's my ex and my aunt

Nxele: then I am sorry for what I am about to tell you.

They were involved in a car accident on their way to Lesotho basically they were leaving the country by the looks of things. We found a

gun amongst their belongings our lab is running some test on the gun to see if it was the one used. Lwazi: are they ok detective?

Nxele: I'm sorry but they are no more the accident was very bad they died on the scene. This happened last night (the

room goes quiet. This is too much of a coincidence. One of us has something to do with this accident I can bet my life on it.)

Me: Any signs of foul play detective?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Nxele: None. It was just an accident. It looks they were driving in the wrong lane and tried to swerve away from on coming traffic but it looks like they lost control of the car and it rolled off the cliff. (this is definitely a hit and one of has something to do with it.)

Luyanda: thank you detective.

Nxele: I'll be on my way then. Maybe we can do lunch sometime. Qhawe: sure thing detective. (with that said he leaves)

Luyanda: Ok start talking one of you is responsible for that accident. Me: it's too much of a coincidence

Luyanda: start talking. I'm not mad. I'm actually glad because I was planning on doing it myself. Lwazi: in that case I did it. Look man seeing you in that hospital bed hurt more than you can imagine. Seeing Lwandle and Lungi crying like that broke my heart. knowing that you had just found Lungi and the same people that took her away from you tried to take you away from her leaving her without a father once again and taking you away from your unborn child and wife it made me very angry I couldn't

just let them go sit in jail and enjoy life like the rest that we put in jail. I'm sorry man but I just lost my cool and i just couldn't deal. It was too much especially seeing your girls like that.. Sizwe: I also had someone to do the job but my guy was too late.

Me: Were you ever going to tell us if we didn't suspect

Lwazi & Sizwe: At some point yes. (they look at each other and laugh)

Lwazi: We probably wouldn't have gotten to Khaya's wedding without telling you.

Luyanda: I appreciate you for looking out for me guys and believe me I'm not angry with you. I would have done it myself.

\*

\*

\*

KH

AYA

\*

\*

\*

Me: have a sit Andrea

Andrea: Bandile what is the meaning of this?

Mcebisi: just sit down and stop asking too many



NOVELSGURU.COM

questions. (she quickly sits down and looks at Bandile)

Bandile: How far along are you in your pregnancy

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

you never told me?

Andrea: Three months and who are these guys?

Bandile: These are my brothers. That's my big brother

Khaya Sondlo he is the head of public relations at QM

Architecture and also has his own music studio and that's

my brother in law Mcebisi Mkhize and he is the CEO of my

mom's marketing company.

Mcebisi: Nice to meet you Andrea. So how did you and my brother hook up.

Andrea: I've always had a crush on him and we hooked at a friend's house party. It was great one thing led to another and now I am pregnant.

Me: it's funny how he doesn't remember half of what happened that night he doesn't even remember sleeping

with you. He doesn't even have flash backs it's like someone wiped his memory or he was drugged.

Andrea: are you trying to say that I drugged him?

Mcebisi: that's not what he is saying. He was simply making an observation. You seem nervous are you ok.

Andrea: I'm fine.

Bandile: we have a doctors appointment tomorrow.

Andrea: for what I already told you everything and here are the scans if you don't believe. Mcebisi: Are you denying the father of your baby the right to see and hear the heart beat of his baby?

Andrea: No I'm not. I just had an appoinment I don't see a point to go again so soon he can come along to the next appoint.

Me: Next appointment is tomorrow at 10:00 am. Bandile will text you all the details please don't be late.

Andrea: Bandile why are you doing this why don't you believe me?

Bandile: It's not that I don't belive you dear. I just want to see for myself that you are actually pregnant. For all I know you could have borrowed these scans from a friend or

something. (immediately when Bandile said that she quickly looked down and looked up at Bandile again)

Mcebisi: before you feed us any of your lies this is how this going to work. Tomorrow you are going to be available for the appointment and you are going to do a parternity test to prove that this is in fact his child before you go crying RAPE. I hate girls like you I really do.

Me: if you don't want trouble you will cooperate. Oh and if I were you I wouldn't tell anyone about this conversation especially daddy dearest and if you happen to tell anyone we'll know.

Mcebisi: guys lets go otherwise your parents will have a thing if we are late for dinner. Have great evening sweet cheeks. I

Bandile: if you tell anyone about this I'll open a case against you for rape. Andrea:

No one will ever believe you.

Me: You think so go ahead then try us and you'll be behind bars so fast you won't know what hit you.

Mcebisi: and when we see you tomorrow you better have a better explanation of what happened that night than this jeberish you just fed us today.

Bandile: See you tomorrow at 10:00

\*

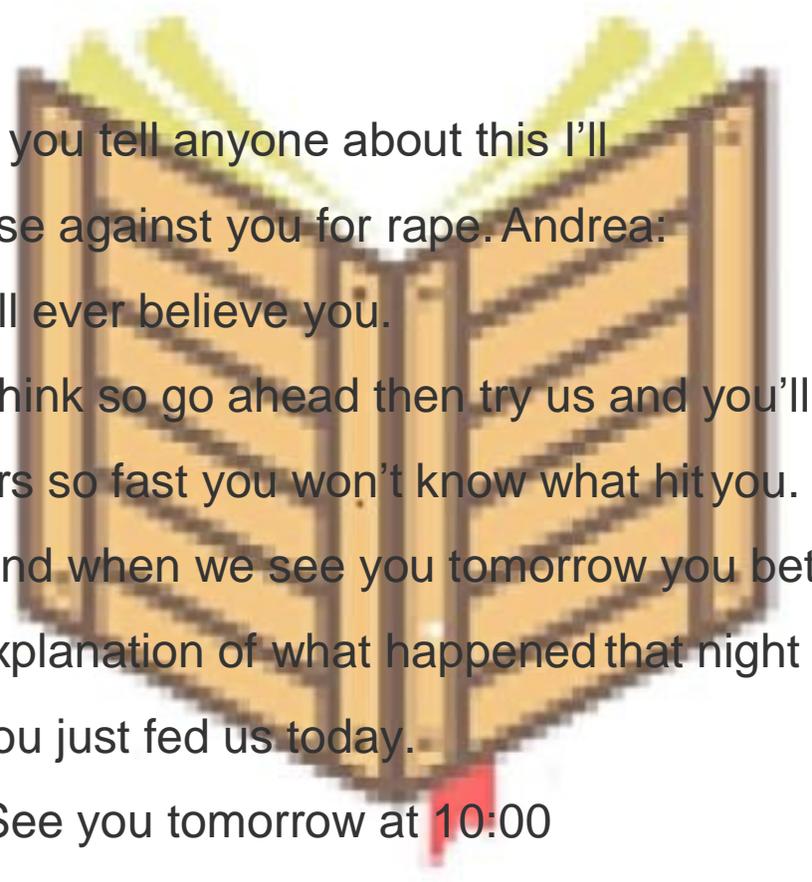
\*

\*

LW

AZI

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

Me: did you see the news?

Sihle: no I didn't. Why did you call?

Me: I called to give you some

news and to warn you Sihle:

what news

ME: Your friends are dead. They shot Luyanda which you probably know. They died in a car accident on their way to Lesotho. They were running away.

Sihle: OH My God!! When did that happen?

Me: Last night. I didn't call for a friendly chat. If you try to do anything to Luyanda or his daughter or even his wife you will end up just like your friends. Do we understand each other?

Sihle: yes we do.

Me: good then. Stay away from them and we'll be good. (with that said I hang up.)

CHAPTER 129

MONDAY

\*

\*

\*

BANDILE (TWIN)

\*

\*

\*

Me: You are late and I don't appreciate that.

Andrea: I'm sorry ok. Can we just do this.

Mcebisi: you really have a stinking attitude Miss Williams. You need to clean it up. (Andrea clicks her tongue and walks away.)

Khaya: we'll wait for you out here.

Me: No I need you to come in with me.

Mcebisi: I don't mind. Let's go. (we all walk into the doctor's office. Same doctor that attended to mom.)

Dr Nkosi: Hey guys what can I do for you today?

Bandile: we are here because the lady is pregnant and we just want to make sure and know how far along she is.

Dr Nkosi: Did you do a pregnancy test?

Andrea: yes I did and I am three months pregnant. I've already seen a doctor I don't know why he is making me do this again. (Dr turns and looks at Bandile with a

questioning look)

Mcebisi: My brother was not there for the appointment doc and we don't trust the information she gave us.

Dr Nkosi: alright then. Please get on the bed miss (she does as told and you can tell she is nervous as hell and if she doesn't have anything to hide why would she be nervous. When she she lifted her top you can tell she is pregnant she is starting to show. ) You can't be three months pregnant unless you have twins in there. I am going to do a scan. (the does his thing we could here the heart beat and he showed us the baby and all.)

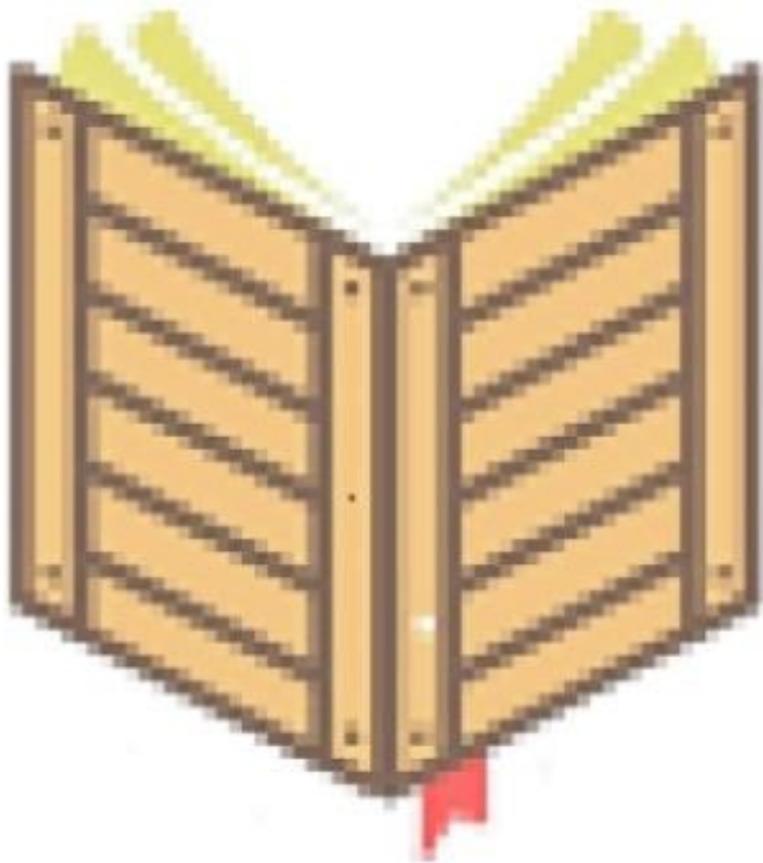
Bandile: Doc you said she can't be three months pregnant

Dr Nkosi: No she is not. Who ever the doctor that she went to see was off by two months. She is exactly five months pregnant and it's just one baby. She is not going to carry big. Your stomach is small for someone who is five months pregnant but that's normal. The baby is fine everything is fine. Take care of yourself and drink the pills you were given.

Khaya: thank you doc. Have a nice day.

Mcebisi: So you lied to us I can't wait to here the reason behind all this. You are going to have to make it quick my

dear we have to get back to work



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Andrea: I'm sorry Bandile I had to do it. I am really sorry.

\*

\*

\*

KHANY

ISILE

\*

\*

\*

I walk into this man's office and he looks at me like I am a piece of meat. Qhawe doesn't know I am here. I need to get the truth out of this guy.

Him: You look stunning in that suit Miss Sondlo navy definitely suites you. How are you? Me: thank you I guess. I'm not ok at all since I am here

Him: What's wrong Qhawe not treating you well

Me: Actually he is the best. He is amazing in every way that you can imagine. I'm here because of your daughter. Do you mind if I sit?

Him: Not at all go ahead have a sit. So you are here because of my daughter. What about her? Me: I think you know but so that there are no misunderstandings I'll tell you. Your daughter claims to be pregnant and she

says it's my son's baby which I don't believe hence I am here. I know for a fact that she drugged him I have a surveillance of tape of where it happened. I'm sure you didn't count on that. the house party they went to the owner of the house has cameras around the house for just incase something goes wrong at one of his parties and he was kind enough to provide us with footage of that day. Before you ask me a lot of questions I also spoke to her best friend who didn't hesitate to tell me what I wanted to know. Now why is your daughter pinning her pregnancy on my son.

Him: You are good. Why is he sending you to fight his battles for him?

Me: I wasn't aware that this was a battle my man needed to fight alone. As far as I understand you can't go into battle alone and besides he doesn't know I am here. I am here because my son is going to be accused of something he didn't do and in our family we stand up for each other.

Now tell me why is your daughter pinning her pregnancy on my son? I am not going to ask again.

Him: Why don't you ask her? I don't know why she is doing it.

Me: You are lying to me. You see Anthony if I have to ask

her then you won't like what I'll do to her to get the truth. Do you want to know why? Don't answer that I'll tell you anyway. You see your daughter drugged my son and slept with him without his consent and in my knowledge that is rape and my family doesn't take kindly to abuse be it's a female or a male that is being abused.

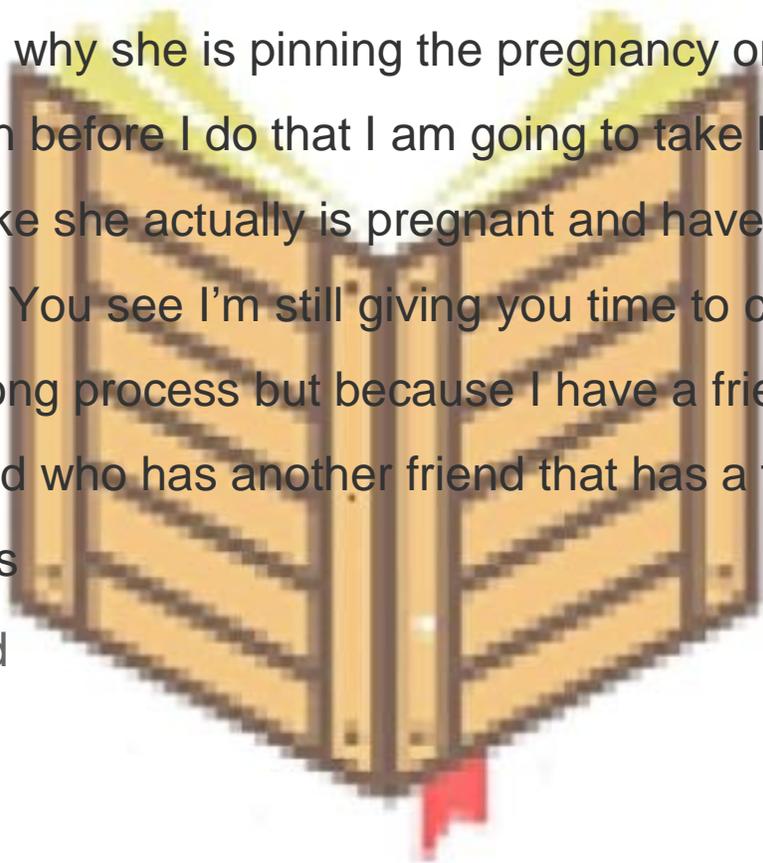


**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: even if your son can go to the police and report what happened to him who is going to believe him.

Me: Are you sure about that. Fine then I am going to have a case opened against your daughter for rape and we'll see who has the last laugh when she goes to jail. Before I do that I am going to put her on electric chair and make her tell me why she is pinning the pregnancy on my son. Then again before I do that I am going to take her to a doctor make she actually is pregnant and have a parternity test done. You see I'm still giving you time to come clean. This is a long process but because I have a friend who has a friend who has another friend that has a friend in high places

Sponsored



who has another friend that has a friend in high places this process is going to be short plus I have the police on speed dial on my phone. You have 24 hours to tell me the truth or hell will break loose. (I get up look at him and smile.) 24 hours Anthony 24 hours. I would be wise about

my choice if I were especially since you are the only parent she has.

\*

\*

\*

KH

AYA

\*

\*

\*

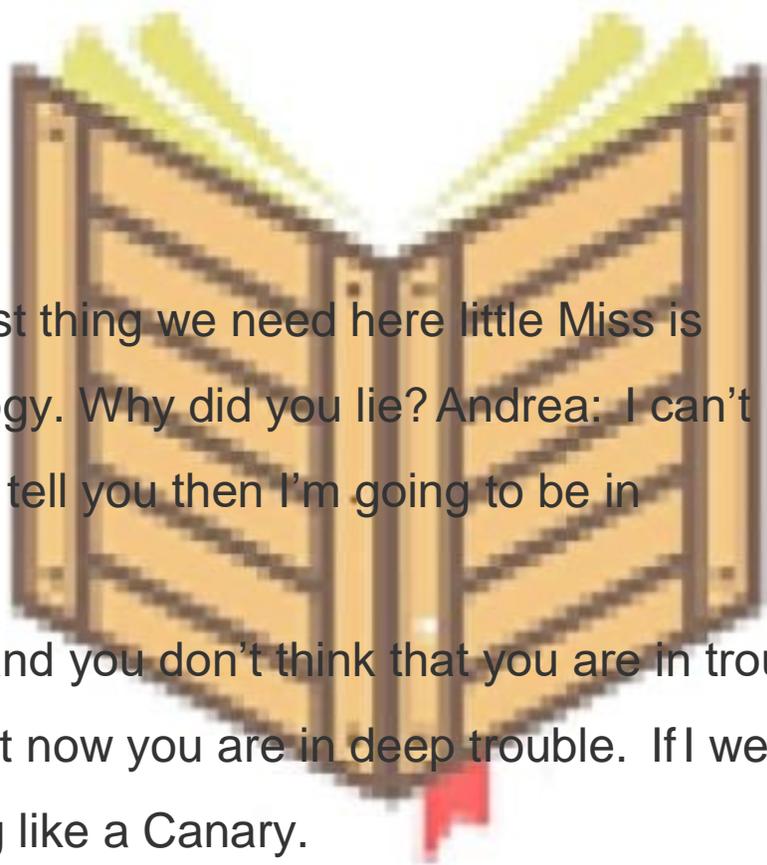
Me: the last thing we need here little Miss is your apology. Why did you lie? Andrea: I can't tell you if I tell you then I'm going to be in trouble

Mcebisi: and you don't think that you are in trouble right now. Right now you are in deep trouble. If I were you I would sing like a Canary.

Bandile: You were ready to ruin my life and I deserve to know why so start talking Andrea: I can't I'm scared.

Me: You should be more scared of us than anything else right now.

Mcebisi: I'm driving to your mom's house Khaya she need



NOVELSGURU.COM

to sit on that electric chair maybe when she gets the taste of it she will start talking.

Andrea: electric chair you can't I'm pregnant you will kill my baby

Mcebisi: I don't care I need to get the truth out of you and that's how I'm going to do it.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: We can't say anything to him that will change his mind. He is going to put you in that chair whether you like it or not and there's nothing we can do.

Andrea: fine I'll tell you what you want to know just don't hurt my baby.

Mcebisi: now that's more like it. Wait we are close to the mall I am hungry let's grab something to eat. Aren't you hungry Andrea being pregnant and all. (she nods) I don't understand sign language Andrea: yes I am hungry.

Mcebisi: good. Guys what do you feel like eating.

Bandile: Let's go to Mugg and Bean (when we get to the mall we go straight to the restaurant place our orders and eat)

Me: We are listening Andrea

Andrea: My dad told me to lie. He knew I had a crush on you but you were not interested. Bandile: How did your dad know that?

Andrea: he is the only parent I have and I talk to him about everything. He hasn't been getting a lot of clients lately due to some scandal he got himself involved in. he said I should lie and say you made me pregnant hence I drugged you that night and made it look like I slept with

you. I never slept with you. We left your brother at the party after I drugged and when we got to your house you passed out and I just stripped you naked and called an uber for myself and went home. This was a plan to get your dad to merge his company with my dad's company.

Me: now was that so hard to do.

Mcebisi: so you were prepared to ruin my brother's life just because your father got himself into trouble which in turn was going to destroy my father in law's company. The scandal your father got himself involved in would have destroyed both companies. Your father is really a stupid man. Besides we don't associate ourselves with people like your father and his shenanigans. Andrea: Now you know the truth what are going to do?

Mcebisi: That's for us to know and for you to stay out of it.

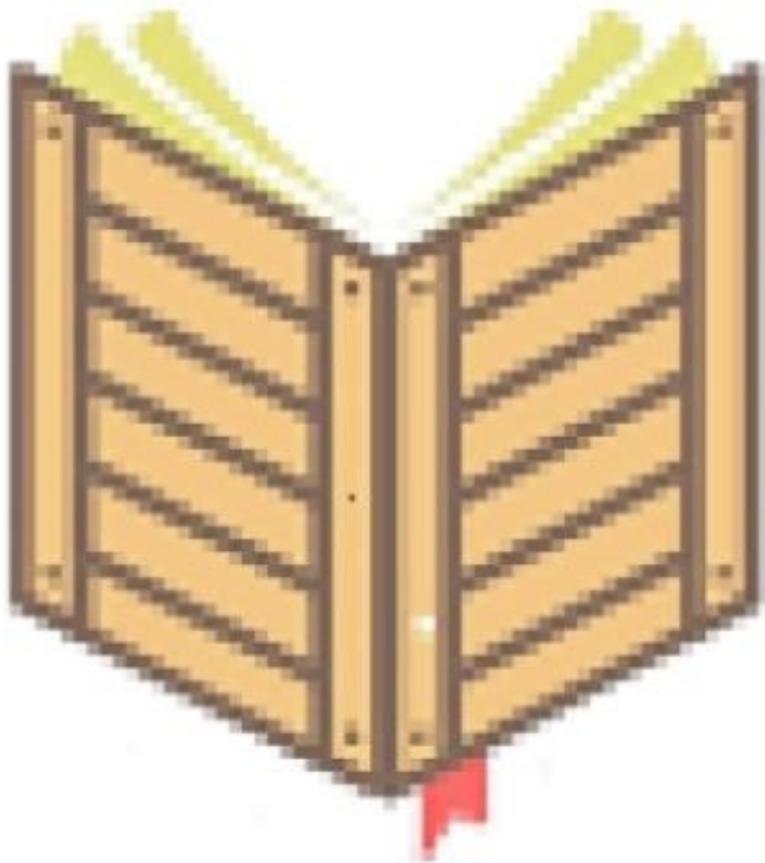
Bandile: I just want to know one thing. What was the plan about the father of the baby? Andrea: the was no plan he knew about everything about the whole plan.

Me: How stupid. Guys let's go. I have a meeting at the studio in an hour.

Mcebisi: Thank you for your honesty and I was never going electritute you at least my threat worked.

TUESDAY

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

\*

KHANYI

SILE

\*

\*

\*

Sipho: Are you aware of Anthony's drug related scandal?

Me: I am aware of a scandal was not sure what it was about. Could it be that he is using his daughter to get into Qhawe's company?

Sipho: It's possible because he is losing a lot of business so he might be looking to merge. Me: Sipho tell me something do we have stupid written on our foreheads?

Sipho: why do you ask?

Me: it seems like this man thinks we are stupid. Why would we want to associate ourselves with him with such a scandal hanging over his head. Honestly I don't understand.

Sipho: you know you should speak to your sons. They might have all the info you need. They've been busy. I had my suspicions about their movements a few days ago so I started keeping track. They spoke to Andrea yesterday. They also took her to the hospital and I think that was to find out if she really is pregnant. I didn't want to spook them so I let them be. Oh and your son in law is also involved.

Qhawe: so what you are saying is that my boys

are protecting each other. Siphos: that's what I'm saying. This is not the first time.

Qhawe: what do you mean this is not the first time?

Siphos: they dealt with Khaya's ex using your basement Khanyi. Khaya and Mcebisi are really becoming like you Khanyi and you Qhawe. The guards at the house told me but they were told not to say anything.

Me: you don't say

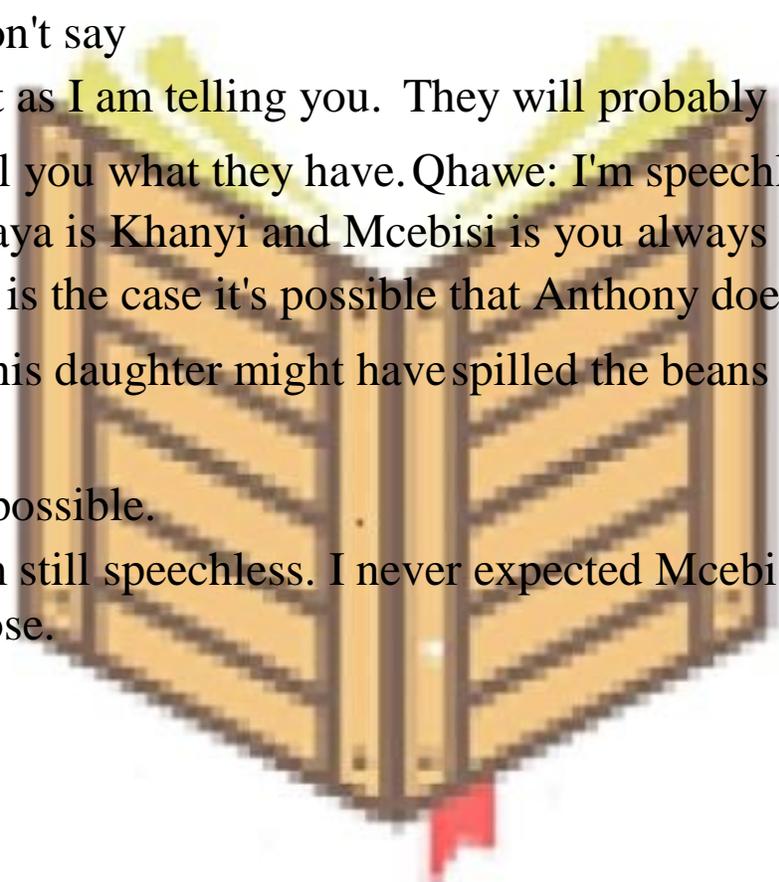
Siphos: Just as I am telling you. They will probably come to you and tell you what they have. Qhawe: I'm speechless.

Siphos: Khaya is Khanyi and Mcebisi is you always by his side.

Me: if that is the case it's possible that Anthony doesn't know that his daughter might have spilled the beans that's if she did.

Siphos: it's possible.

Qhawe: I'm still speechless. I never expected Mcebisi and Khaya to be so close.



Sipho: it's probably because they are the first real friends they've had to each and they are growing to be brothers.

Mei: just like you guys.

Qhawe: Let's wait for them to come to us. Khanyi gave Anthony 24 hours to come clean. The 24 hours is not over yet. I still can't believe you went to see him without telling me.

Me: I needed to get a feel if what he is all about. I'm sorry(

I say blowing him a kiss) Qhawe: I hear but you still have to pay for not telling.

Khanyi: But I was doing it for our son (I pout)

Qhawe: I know my Queen but you know what happens when you do things without telling me. Me: I guess I'll have to prepare myself then.

Sipho: I'm still in the room you know. (Shit I forgot Sipho was here.) I could leave and give you space to clirt with each other freely.

Lwazi: They are busy getting it on in a form of a dialog while you are still here. (He says as he walks in.)

Sipho: you have no idea. They were ready to take each other's clothes off.

Lwazi: welcome to our world my brother. These two are the worst of us. They are worse than the newly weds. Even their own kids have to call them into order.

Qhawe: you are exaggerating Lwazi.

Lwazi: let's ask the kids and see whonis exaggerating.

Sipho: I have some info for you Lwazi. It's a good thing you are

hear. But you are not going to like what I have to say.

Lwazi: just tell me man. Bad news is the thing in this family.

Sioho: I've been keeping tabs on your father. He is still around.

He has a friend here that he is staying with that has been helping him get his life together. He still wants to talk to you.

Lwazi: doesn't he get that I don't want to talk to him. (Lwazi doesn't scare easily but anyone who could walk into this room right now would be able to tell that Lwazi fears this man.)

You know what on second thought he can just come Luyanda can put a bullet between his eyes for me.

Qhawe: hey calm down don't want you giving yourself another heart attack. You don't have to be scared of him anymore. He won't do anything to you.

Lwazi: I can't help it Qhawe.

Me: hey (I take his hand and he is shaking like a leaf) you are shaking. ) Lwazi calm down please. Qhawe call Thando she's upstairs with the babies.

Lwazi: Mama Bear I can't deal with him I just can't .

Me: you don't have to  
ever again. Thando:  
what's going on?

Me: Calm him down please.

Sipho: I had some info about his father.

Thando: baby look at me. He is not here he is never getting  
close to you you don't have to speak to him nor see him. (She  
says all this holding him close to her chest. ) You have family  
that loves you a family that will protect you no matter what.  
You have me I love you so so much

Sponsored

I can't even explain the love I have for you. You don't have to be  
afraid my love. You have people that love you.

Qhawe: I really hate seeing him this scared.

Khanyi: this can't continue. Lwazi is seeing a therapist but the  
mere mention of his father throws him off. Someone tell me  
why a man like that gets to be alive.

Qhawe: Khanyi calm down it bad enough that we have Lwazi  
who is unsettled we don't need you to be unsettled too.

Me: Don't tell me to calm down Qhawe this can't continue. (I say  
slightly raising my voice and I realise I am in trouble.)

Qhawe: my Queen I know you are upset but you don't get to

Speak to me in that tone of voice do we understand each other?

(I quickly nod my head) I can't hear you.

Me: I understand and I am sorry.

Qhawe: apology accepted but you will still be punished. (Shit)Lwazi: let her be Qhawe.

Thando: leave it alone babe. (She looks at me and laughs)Me: are you feeling

better Lwazi

Lwazi: I'll be ok.

\*

\*

\*

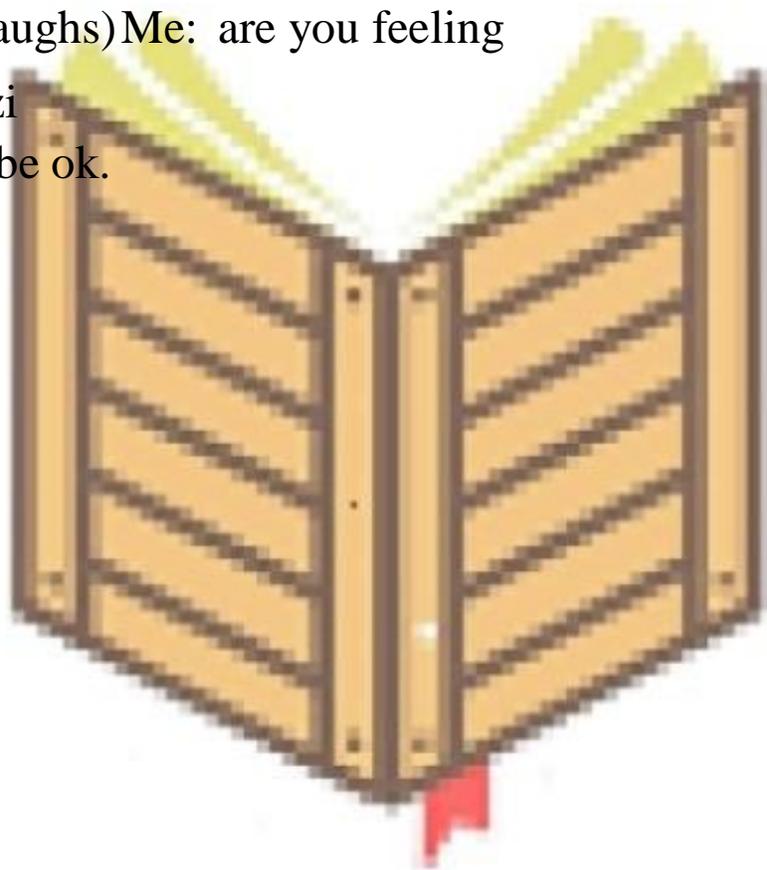
LONW

ABO

\*

\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: why are you with him?

Oyama: he wasn't like this when I met him. He was sweet and sensitive very loving. After 6 months of our relationship he changed when I caught him cheating. Always complaining about how I don't want to sleep with him and accusing me of sleeping with other guys but I don't want to sleep with him.

Me: why don't you want you want to sleep with him people have different reasons I'm curious about yours.

Oyama: I've never slept with a guy before. My parents always tell us that we should only sleep with a man when we are married. Dad always tells us that the right will man will be willing to wait and that abstinence is the best protection against unwanted pregnancy and STD'S. Both my sister and I are virgins.

Me: you've never been tempted?

Oyama: I've never really met a guy that would make me feel that way until..... never mind. Me: Why do you have make up on today does he beat you? (She looks away from me avoiding my question and I won't force her to talk.)

Oyama: do you have a girlfriend? (I guess she is really avoiding my question) Me: no I don't. I've never had one.

Oyama: that means you are virgin. How old are you?

Me: yes I am and I'm not rush cor sex. I have car more important things to worry myself with. I'm 18

Oyama: most guys your age are e sexually active and have

babies.

Me: so as most girls your age. It's a choice and I choose to wait.

Dad always tells us that there is no rush. Having sex at a young age doesn't make you man which is what most guys

believe. They believe having sex with different girls a young age makes them a man. Oyama: what does he say makes you man?

Me: being responsible for your actions being there for your family to protect them and to love them and a whole lot of other things. Mom always says that our actions will define the kind of man we be one.

Lunga: How many times must I tell you to stay away from ber rugby boy?

Me: how many times must I tell you to she is my friend get used to seeing me around her. Lunga: Heee I'm being tested here.

Me: keep your pants on lover boy I'm not sleeping with her. Oyama ill see you tomorrow. Oh and Lunga you better start being nice to her otherwise I'll be paying you a visit soon just to give a taste of your own medicine.

Lunga: what do you mean by that?

Me: figure it out. (I get up and kiss Oyama's cheek.) Be careful Oyama and take care of yourself.

## CHAPTER 131

### TUESDAY NIGHT

\*

\*

\*

KHA

YA

\*

\*

\*

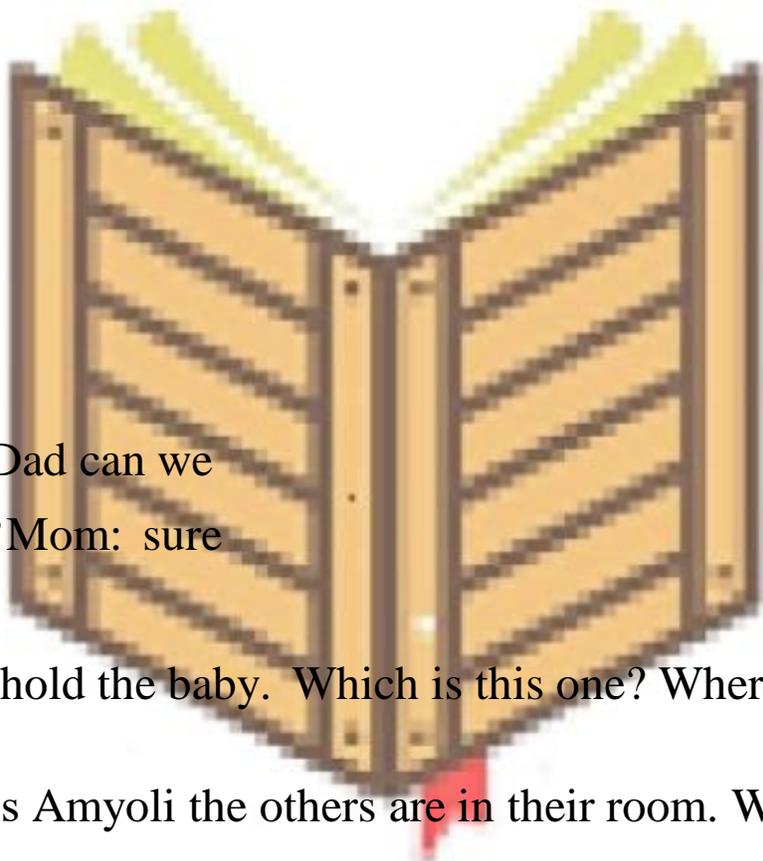
Me: Mom Dad can we talk to you?  
Mom: sure  
whats up?

Me: May I hold the baby. Which is this one? Where are the others?

Mom: that's Amyoli the others are in their room. What do you want to talk to us about?  
Bandile: I know that I asked for your help regarding the situation.

Dad: You do realise that I know about the situation you don't have to talk about it like I have no idea what's going on.

Bandile: I know dad. She wouldn't have never kept it from you even if I asked her to. Anyway we kind of intervened. We took her to the hospital and it turns out that she is pregnant but she is



NOVELSGURU.COM

five months pregnant which means that the baby is not mine.

Mom: did she tell you why she tell why she lied.

Me: Yes she did. Her father put her up to it and got the baby daddy to agree to the whole sham. Qhawe: what exactly did she say?

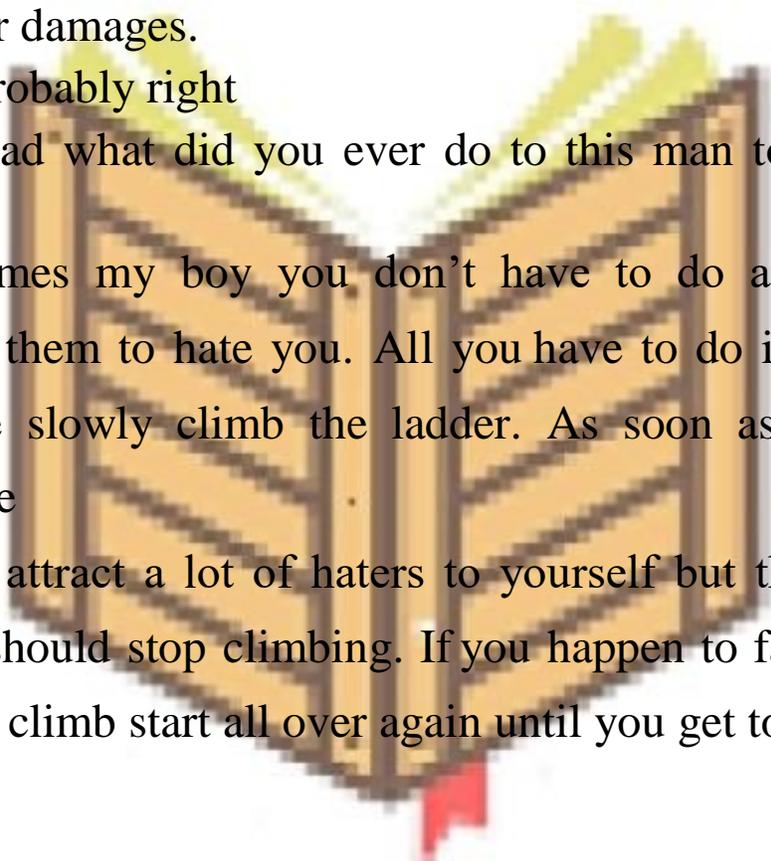
Me: she sad that it was a plan to get you to merge the two companies. That's probably what he would have wanted as payment for damages.

Dad: you probably right

Bandile: Dad what did you ever do to this man to hate you so much?

Dad: At times my boy you don't have to do anything to anyone for them to hate you. All you have to do is focus on your hustle slowly climb the ladder. As soon as you start climbing the

ladder you attract a lot of haters to yourself but that doesn't mean you should stop climbing. If you happen to fall halfway through the climb start all over again until you get to the top.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mom: That's how we got to be where we are. Your dad and I have different experiences because back then we hadn't met yet and we were climbing our own ladders. It was not easy and we are still climbing the ladder of success and this time we are doing it together. When the other falls the other is there to help the other get up and start again and we are not doing that only in business but also in our family hence we still have haters. You guys are our next generation we have never handed anything to you on a silver platter and we never will. Continue working for what you want and want to achieve at the end of the day it will be worth it you will appreciate it more when you know you worked for it than when it is handed to you.

Khaya: **OUR ACTIONS WILL DEFINE WHO WE BECOME IN THIS WORLD.** We can choose to be miserable or we can choose happiness we can choose to go get what we want or we can choose to wait for it to come to us which may never happen.

Dad: I'm glad you still remember all of that.

Bandile: **LIFE IS UNPREDICTABLE AS UNPREDICTABLE AS IT YOU MUST ENJOY EVERY MINUTE LEARN FROM BAD EXPERIENCE. CRY WHEN YOU NEED TO LAUGH MORE THAN YOU CRY APPRECIATE PRECIOUS MOMENTS AND NEVER STOP DREAMING**

Mom: and never let anyone get between you and your dreams  
Dad: Tomorrow

let's deal with Anthony once and for all.

Mom: Yes let's do that. it is great that you guys are there for each other APPRECIATE PRECIOUS MOMENTS AND NEVER STOP DREAMING

Mom: and never let anyone get between you and your dreams Dad: Tomorrow

let's deal with Anthony once and for all.

Mom: Yes let's do that. it is great that you guys are there for each other that you have each other's backs. Keep it like this and you'll get far and never forget your other siblings no matter do you hear me Khaya.

Me: I hear you ma.

Bandile: What's the plan for tomorrow.

Mom: We don't know yet but you guys have done your part and we are proud of you. Me: here take your baby.

She is asleep.

Dad: You a way with them. You are going to make a great dad. Me: I hope so dad. I

really hope so.

\*

\*

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

NTANDO

\*

\*

\*

Me: What happened at school today? Zenande:

Nothing why?

Me: don't play dumb with me Zenande. What were you doing with that boy? Zenande: we were just talking Ntando.

Me: Since when is kissing just talking Zenande? Zenande: he kissed me Ntando I didn't kiss him back.

Me: stay away from boys Zenande. Mom talks to you guys about boys plus you are too young to be going around kissing boys. He is way too old for you.

Zenande: I didn't ask him to kiss me Ntando

Me: You didn't stop him either. Look Zenande I'm talking to you right now because I'm trying to protect you from him. I know him and he has played with a lot of girls at school and I don't want you to be one of his victims ok.

Lwanele: Listen to him Zenande please. I also don't trust that guy. Zenande: Are you going to tell mom?

Lwanele: No we are not. But you need to be careful please.

Zenande: I promise I will. He is the one that's always coming to where I am at school you would swear that he is following me around.

Me: that's because he is. He is obsessed with you Zenande and obsession can be very dangerous. Don't encourage him don't lead him on and make him think he can get with you.

Make it clear to him that you are not interest in him and stay away from him.

Zenande: I hear you and I'll stay away from him.

Lwanele: good because I don't want anything happening to you. If anything happens to you I might just catch a case and end up killing someone.

Me: What do you know about killing someone wena? Stop talking like that. You sound like a murderering thirteen year old.

Zenande: He is right you do.

Lwanele: mom and dad always say we should be there for each other and protect each other always and that's what I would be doing.

Me: they never said we should do that by killing people. There are other ways you know that right.

Lwanele: I know I was just saying.

Me: as long you have no intentions of killing anyone. Look ladies at school it's just

us. Lonwabo and Sibahle are no longer there and they looked out for us and now it's just us and we have to look out for each other and very soon it's going to be just the two of you and you are going to have to look out for each other. Don't let anyone bully you but in the process of not letting anyone bully you don't become bullies.

Zenande: We hear you. You are so protective you that. there's a girl in my class that has a crush on you Ntando.

Lwanele: What's with the smile when

Zenande says that? Me: it's nothing

Zenande: You would swear he knows who it is Lwanele.

Me: I just appreciate the thought of someone having a crush on me.

\*

\*

\*

SIBA

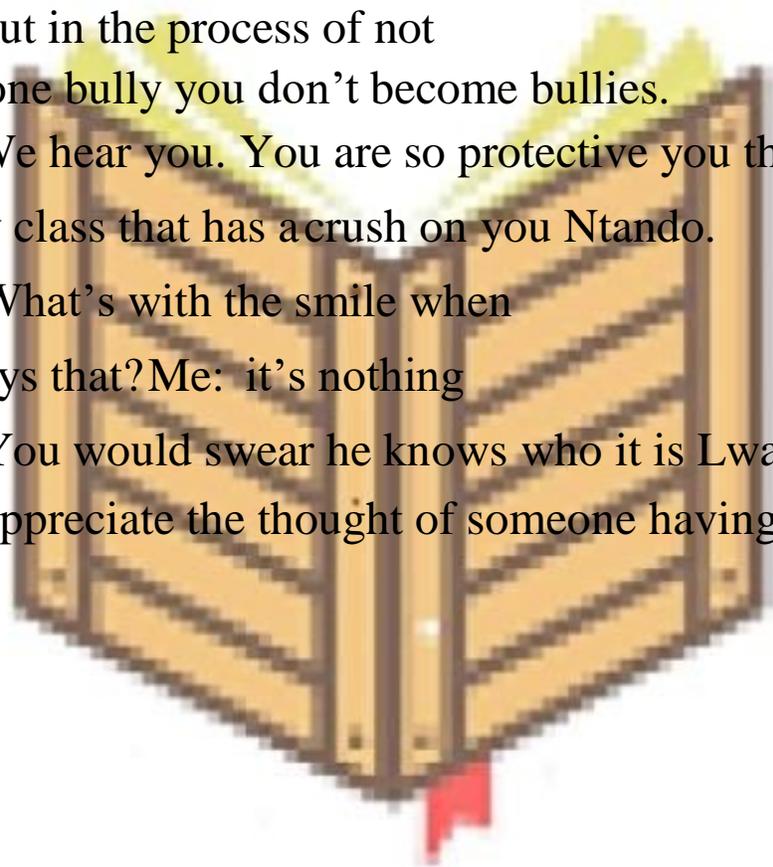
HLE

\*

\*

\*

When I grew up my siblings and I didn't have the best relationship with our mom. Dad was always the one there for us. He always made sure that we were comfortable to talk to



NOVELSGURU.COM

him about everything. Sometimes it doesn't matter how comfortable you are with your dad there are times where you just want to talk to your mom especially when you know that she is there still

alive. But somehow it would always seem like she is worlds away and you can't get to her. Sometimes I would wish I had a big sister just because I had that need to talk to a

female. One time I ended up talking to my friends at school and that was the biggest mistake of my life and today I am not a virgin because I made a choice to listen to wrong advice. I wish dad had met Khanyi before I made the biggest mistake of my life when I was sixteen. I couldn't tell dad about it because I knew how disappointed he would be but I know he would have understood and he would have been there for me but still that didn't make it easy to talk to him beside he would have killed the guy at the same time I needed my mom and she wasn't there

Lina: I still think you should talk to mom about it.

Me: And what do I say Lina. "hey mom I lost my virginity when I was 16 and I feel damaged."

Lina: all I'm saying is that mom will know what to say. What she has to say won't be the same as me it might be you never know. This guy you like won't judge you on your sexual activity history if he truly cares you and besides it only happened once.

Me: Yes it did. I never wanted to sleep with anyone after that. I promised myself that I would save myself for that special guy and I think I have met him. Since I lost my virginity I have never met anyone who makes want to drop my panties right there and there until I met him. yes we have sexual chemistry but it's not just that. I feel like I can have a long term relationship with this guy. I don't know if we'll ever get married only time will tell but the problem is that I feel like he won't want me once I tell him that I am no longer sealed.

Lina: If he truly cares about you then he won't have a problem. Talk to mom too about it Sibahle please. You know how open she is.

Sibahle: I know.

Lina: besides who is this

guy? Sibahle: You'll

find out soon enough.

Lina: You are keeping secrets from me Sibahle. I'm your sister Sibahle and you are keeping secrets from me.

Me: Emotional blackmail won't work this

time around my dear sister. Lina: it was worth

trying (we both laugh at that statement.)

Me: thank you for being a part of my life and accepting me as your little sister. Lina: You didn't make it easy for me you were just too adorable not to like.

## CHAPTER 132

WEDNESDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

KHANYI

SILE

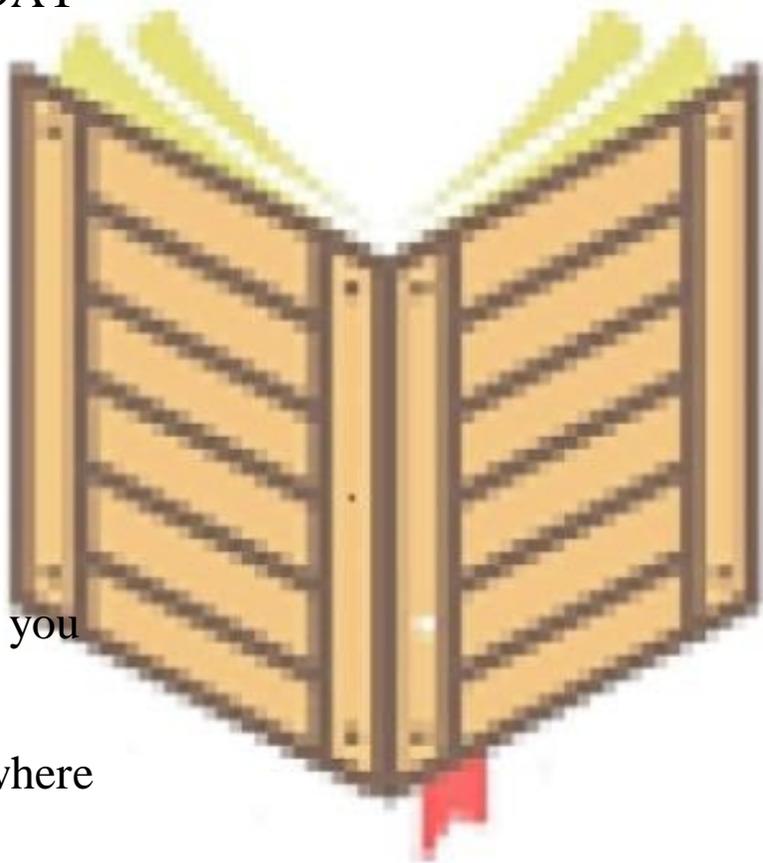
\*  
\*  
\*

Me: finally you  
are awake

Anthony: where  
am i

Me: My other office do  
you like it? Anthony:

What am I doing here?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I told you had 24 hours to come clean and your 24 hours was up a long time ago. Anthony: Qhawe are you going to let her do this I don't know what you want from me. Qhawe: I enjoy watching her when she is in protective mode especially over me. It does something to me. It moves something in me and besides we are not friends. Why would I want to get between you and her

Me: start talking Anthony or your precious daughter gets it. (Right on cue Eddie walks in with his daughter.)

Anthony: NO! NO! NO! Please leave my daughter out of it please.

Qhawe: but you got her involved Anthony and now that it's getting dangerous you want her out of it. Didn't you think of her safety when you got her involved in the first place?

Me: you know I hate it when parents involve their kids when fighting their battles. You don't think of the end result. You always think that you are going to get what you want and when you don't get what you want just like now you want to protect your child. Why didn't you protect your child in the first place why get her involved in your dealings. Look now she is going to pay your shenanigans something she absolutely had nothing to do with.

Anthony: ok yes you are right. I was selfish but please keep her out of this. Qhawe: we can't keep her out of this she is going to suffer for the sins of her father. Me: enough of this now. Tell us what we want to know

Anthony: fine. I'll tell you everything just don't hurt my daughter.

Eddie: that was quick. Why did you send your daughter to lie about her pregnancy (I couldn't resist the temptation so he screamed for dear life.)

Qhawe: Khanyi why did you do that?

Me: I want him to know what's going to happen if he lies to us plus I couldn't resist

Eddie: Give me that remote Khanyi

Me: But Eddie i.....

Qhawe: Give it to him Khanyisile (I give it to Eddie pouting and looking at Qhawe like I want to cry) You'll get over it. I love you

Me: "mxm"

Qhawe: I'll deal with you later. You are going to pay for that

Me: But.... (he looks at me and puts his finger on his mouth and I immediately keep quiet. SHIT)

Qhawe: Now let's get on with the business at hand. Anthony you were saying before my wiferudely interrupted us

Anthony: years ago I made a deal with the wrong people to keep the company running. I was sinking into debt my company was not making any money I was losing clients because of you. Me: what did he do to make you lose your clients

Anthony: Ever since he got that Zambian deal everyone wanted to work with him after he finished that project. They liked the modern building he did for the Zambians. So I had to do something to save my company and keep it afloat. Like I said I made a deal with the wrong people. I agreed for them to use my company to clean their drug money and they would use my shipments to get their drugs to Durban. Everything went south when the man I made the deal with got arrested and the police started investigating and somehow they had some info on me but they couldn't find anything that linked me to him because I never kept record of anything that involved him. So ever since the police started investigate me for drug trafficking and the press somehow found out I've been losing a lot of money. This is all your fault because you got him arrested. (he goes ahead and tells us the initial plan he had)

Qhawe: He was messing with my family just like you are doing. did you really think about this plan of yours? Do you realise that if i had gotten myself involved with you the merged company would have gone down the drain because of this nonsense you are involved in. I would have lost everything I worked hard for.

I would have never associated myself and my company with someone who has been accused of drug trafficking and involved in money laundering. That would have been suicide. You really didn't use your brain because you were desperate and ended up involving this poor child in your battles.

Anthony: You would have done the same thing

Qhawe: No I wouldn't have. I love my kids too much. I want them to live a long life I protect them from things like these because I want them to do the same with their kids.

Me: Can I have the remote back now? Eddie

& Qhawe: No!

Me: this is not fair. You are lucky my husband won't let play with you a little. Listen little man. You are the only parent she has got and she is pregnant and she is going to need you. Normally the police would be here by now but we are going to have mercy on you. We are not cruel people we just don't take kindly to people who think they can toy with us and our family.

Eddie: We are going to let you go and help your daughter get through this pregnancy. She gotherself pregnant by an idiot who doesn't even understand that he needs to be there for her now. You are going to stay away from this family and take care of your shit without involving

them. Next time you won't deal with them they are very nice and I am not so nice. I won't hesitate to kill you. Are we clear?

Anthony: yes we are. I swear it will never happen again.

Qhawe: good. It's not my fault that you never got that deal. You didn't give them what they wanted and I did. stop blaming me for your misfortunes. If you had been man enough and came to me before you got yourself into this I would have helped you.

My wife here would have helped you too. she is very good at what she does.

Anthony: You keep calling her your wife I thought you were not married.

Me: we are not. It just has a nice ring to it when he talks about me and calls me his wife. Let's go daddy I miss my babies.

Qhawe: Eddie please take care of this.

Eddie: I'll see you later guys. I have good news to share with you.

Me: see you later then.

\*

\*

\*

OYA

NOVELSGURU.COM

MA

\*

\*

\*

Me: Lunga please can we not fight please. Lunga: are you

sleeping with him?

Me: for the 100th time no I am not sleeping with him I am not sleeping with anyone.

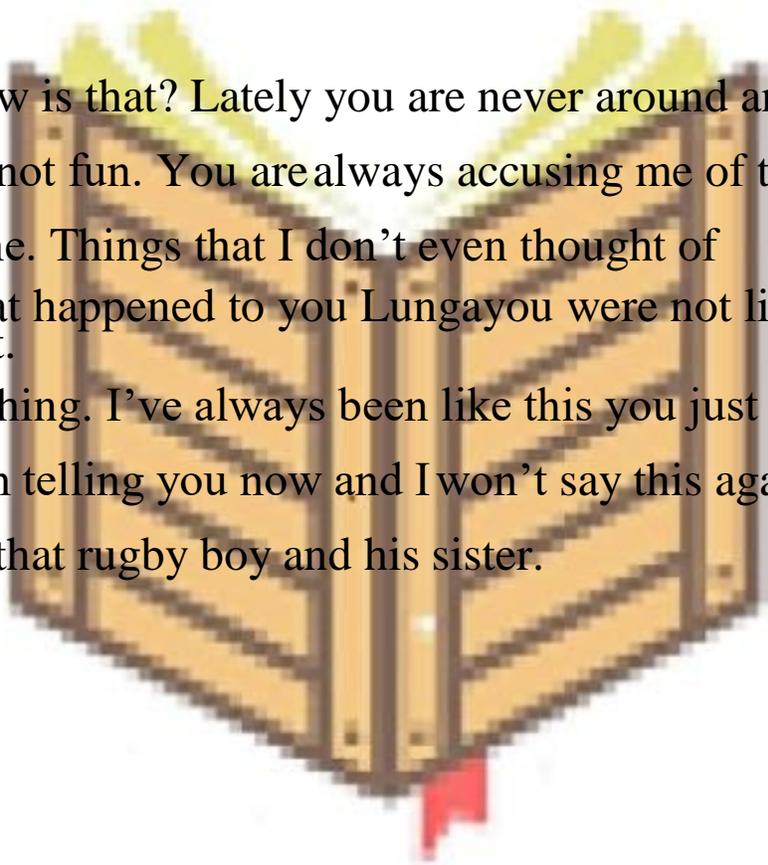
Lunga: I see the way he looks at you and I don't like it. I don't want you spending time with him do you hear me?

Me: that's not fair Lunga. You spend time with other girls.

Lonwabo is just a friend. Lunga: You don't need friends I'm your friend.

Me: and how is that? Lately you are never around and when you around it's not fun. You are always accusing me of things that I haven't done. Things that I don't even thought of doing. What happened to you Lunga you were not like this when we first met.

Lunga: Nothing. I've always been like this you just never noticed. I'm telling you now and I won't say this again stay away from that rugby boy and his sister.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: No Lunga. You can't control my life like that. (he slaps me so hard that I fell on the floor. He took off his belt and started beating me. I manage to get up and run to the bathroom and lock the door. I can't stop crying and I know it won't take him long to break this door now.)

Lunga: Oyama open this door before I break it down. You know that no one can hear your cries. OPEN THE DAMN DOOR OYAMA!!!

Me: GO AWAY LUNGA!!!! (I quickly take out my phone and send a text with my location and put it in my pocket again. Just then Lunga breaks down the door.) Lunga please stop this. You are hurting me

Lunga: COME HERE! (he drags me out of the bathroom and throws me against the base of the bed and I hit it with my back.) GET UP ! (he pulls me off the floor and throws me on the bed and starts hitting me with the belt again) I tell you to stay away from those people and you talk back to me Oyama. Since when do you talk back to me. Today you are going to learn that you will never talk back to me again. you will do as I tell you. (he stops and looks at me) take off your clothes.

Me: Lunga please I am sorry. (A slap lands across my face)

Lunga: I SAID TAKE OFF YOUR CLOTHES (with the little strength I have left I sit up and take off my dress and I am left with just my panties) this is the first time I've seen you naked. You have a nice body Oyama but I am going to ruin you

for every man that wants to be with you. (with that said I feel the belt on my bare back and I can't help but scream but no one is coming to my rescue. I say a little prayer while he is busy enjoying torturing me. He stops and pulls me to the edge of the bed.) this cookie of yours is mine and I am going to have it now.

SHUT UP!! (he slaps my again. He puts my legs between his and holds me tight in place and belts me again on my thighs at this time I have no energy to scream and cry out loud. I just cry silently praying that my text was received. he continued until he got tired. He stopped and left me on the bed and went to the bathroom. I try to get off but my thighs hurt so much I drag myself off the bed and when I try to stand I fall. I try crawling to the door I know I won't make it far but I have to try) AND WHERE DO YOU THINK YOU GOING? I AM NOT DONE WITH YOU. (He drags me to the bed again and he is completely naked)

Me: Lunga please please don't do this. I promise I won't do it again please Lunga. I am....(I could finish my sentence and he put his dick in my mouth moving in and out of my mouth going deep in my throat he didn't care that was gagging from all that. he took it out and made lie on my back. He got on of my chest moving closer to my face. He held my head tight into place and use his other hand to get me to open my mouth and he put his dick in again and roughly fucked my mouth which really hurt.

My tear haven't stopped falling. He did that until he released his



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

juices in my mouth and made me swallow. He got off me and took out ropes from the drawer of the bedside table and tied me to the bed.)

Lunga: and it's time for round two my love ( just then I heard the door open and heard an unfamiliar voice I couldn't see who it was my eyes were filled with tears.)

Him: I would untie her if I were you.

Lunga: what are you doing here? This has nothing to do with you leave now. (the other guy took out his gun and pointed it at him.)

Him: I said untie her. (he untied the ropes. As soon as I was loose I just curled myself on the bed and continued crying.)

Lunga: You are going to regret this. (Just then I felt someone cover me with a blanket.) Him: Shhhhh! You are going to be

ok. You are safe now. (this is a different guy and I don't recognise his voice either) did he rape you? (I have no

energy to speak I am still crying so I just shake my head

"No") You are safe. Will you let me carry you to the car?

Me: Yes.

CHAPTER 133

NOVELSGURU.COM

STILL WEDNESDAY

\*

\*

\*

BAN

ELE

\*

\*

\*

Me: is she ok?

Khaya: she is not man. She just passed out.

Mcebisi: Drive this car man. (He didn't have to tell me twice. I have never driven so fast in my life.)

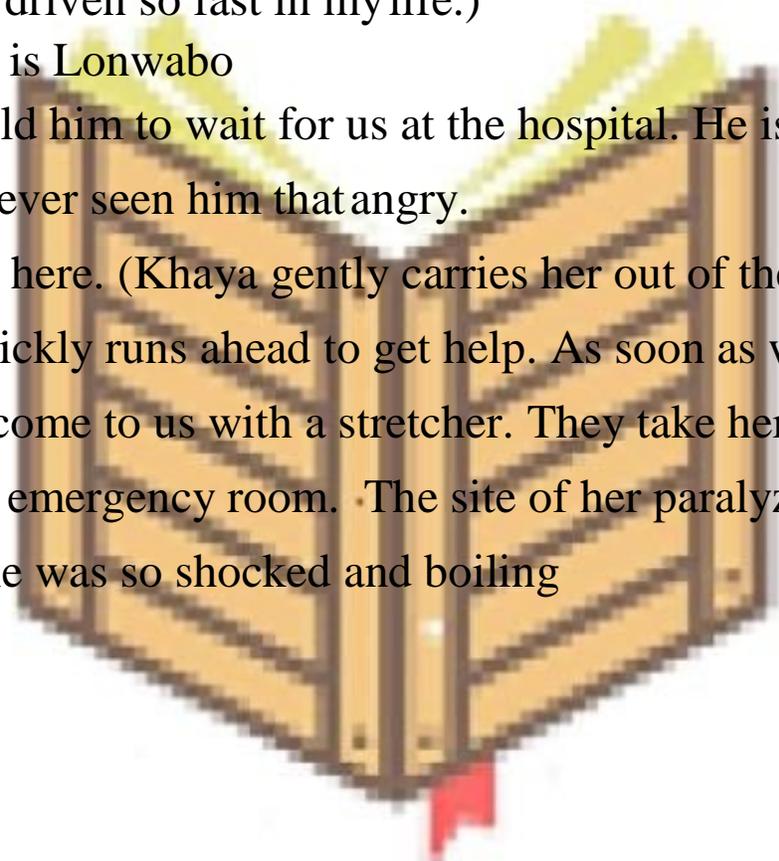
Me: where is Lonwabo

Khaya: I told him to wait for us at the hospital. He is so angry man. I've never seen him that angry.

Me: we are here. (Khaya gently carries her out of the car.

Mcebisi quickly runs ahead to get help. As soon as we walk in the nurses come to us with a stretcher. They take her and rush her into the emergency room. The site of her paralyzed

Lonwabo he was so shocked and boiling



NOVELSGURU.COM

with anger. Khaya walks over to him and hugs. He pulls him to waiting room and tries to calm him down.)

Khaya: Calm down Wabo. You are no good to her like this. She did good by texting you and we got there just in time.

Lonwabo: I know Khaya. I just had flash backs of mom. (The tears just fell from his eyes.) I asked her about it and she didn't want say anything. I figured when she is ready she would talk. I should have stayed away from her like he said and maybe this would have not happened. Maybe she wouldn't be here now if I had stayed away.

Mcebisi: don't do that Wabo. Don't blame yourself. That dog would have done this either way. Just be happy she was able to send that the text in time. Don't blame yourself.

Lonwabo: I don't understand how he could do that. Was making friends and talking to others her ultimate sin and he goes around calling himself a man. He is going to pay dearly for this. He is going to get the taste of his own medicine. We need to let her parents know.

Khaya: already done.

Me: when are we sorting out this dog?

Khaya: Let's just make sure she is ok first. We can deal with him later. Mcebisi: Bandile is on his way too. (Just then the doctor walked in.)

Doctor: Oyama Ndlela

Me: that's us how is she.

Doctor: she is badly injured from the beating she has a few cuts and one broken rib and some internal bleeding. She is awake but she asked to see the guys that brought her in before we sedate her. You know i have to report this to the police.

Khaya: we know doc. You go ahead and report it. Thanks doc.

Her parents will be here soon. Me: let's go see her. (The doctor takes us to her ward.)

Mcebisi: doc can you please make sure she is transferred to a private room by tomorrow. And when her parents get here ask them to compile a visitors list and leave it at the reception.

Doc: no problem. You have five minutes. Mcebisi: thanks

doc.

Khaya: Hi

Oyama: hi thank for saving me but who are you? (You can tell she is in pain. She is forcing herself to talk. She should be sleeping)

Mcebisi: we are brothers to the guy you texted. Oyama: where

is he?

Lonwabo: Right here. (Her tears just fell and Wabo just went to her and sat next to her.) I want to hold you but I'm scared to hurt.

Oyama: it hurts every where Lonwabo I can't feel my body. I just feel pain. (She takes his hand kisses it.) Thank you for sending your brothers. I should have told you what was happening but I was scared.

Lonwabo: anytime. Don't worry about that. We'll talk about when you get out of here. Ok. Me: we need to leave as for you little miss you need to sleep. Your parents will be here soon.

Oyama: thank you so much.

Doctor: ok guys it's time to go. You can come back tomorrow she'll be out for the rest of the night. (Wabo kisses her cheek.)

Lonwabo: take care of yourself. We'll see you tomorrow.

\*

\*

\*

LONW

ABO

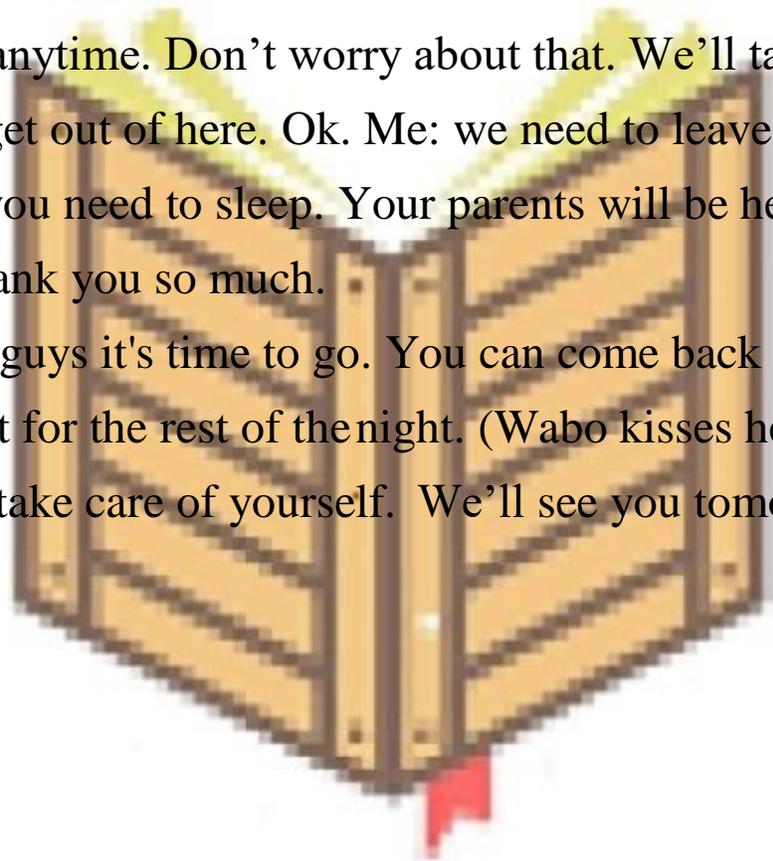
\*

\*

\*

When we left the hospital I had to make a call to a friend.

Him: Lonwabo Sondlo what do I owe this call to and I'm sure it has nothing to do with Zwelibanzi.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: It doesn't but you said if I ever needed a favour I should call. Him: Please tell me you going to let kill Zwelibanzi now.

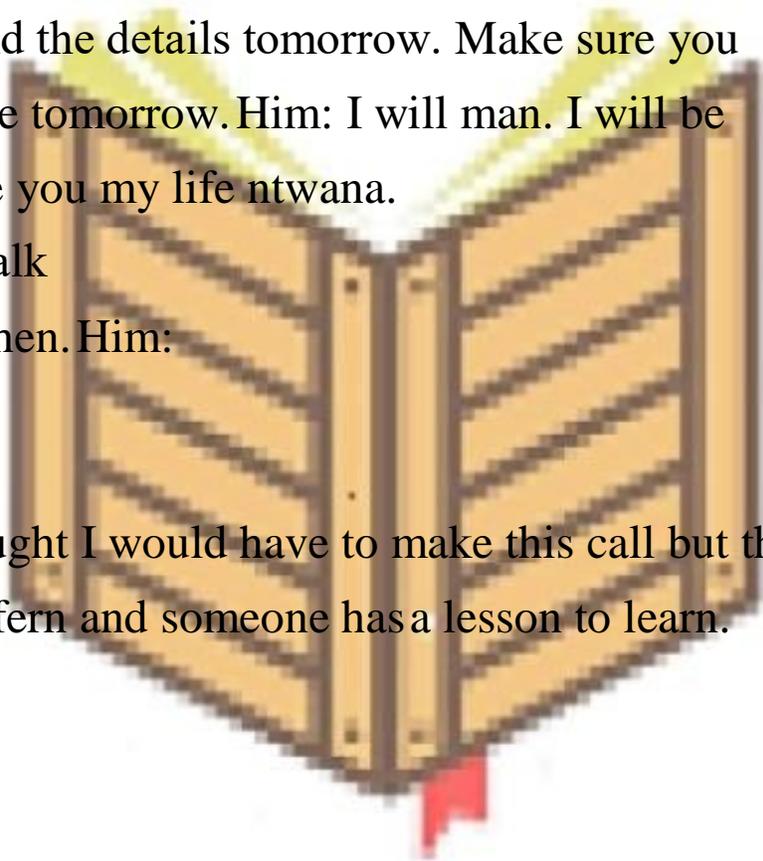
Me: No but I need to give someone a taste of his own medicine and I need you for something special I have in mind for him.

Him: when and where?

Me: I'll send the details tomorrow. Make sure you are available tomorrow. Him: I will man. I will be there. I owe you my life ntwana.

Me: we'll talk tomorrow then. Him: Sure.

I never thought I would have to make this call but then shit has just hit the fern and someone has a lesson to learn.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khaya: is he in?

Me: yes he is. Let's set everything up for tomorrow and we have to tell mom and dad. We are going to need the police as well. I want him to rot in jail.

Mcebisi: he is not as his place at the moment. He is at some bar drinking his life away. I asked one of the guys to look around his place and see if he can't find something we can use. I have a feeling that this guy is serial rapist and his victims are too scared to report it. What I saw when we walked in on him with Oyama tells me that he uses girls to fulfil his fantasies

Khaya: You think so?

Mcebisi: I do. He gets off on watching women suffer in unbearable pain caused by him. Me: if she didn't think of sending that text

Sponsored

she would be worse than what she is now.

Mcebisi: yes and this guy has someone protecting him. I want the doctor to report this and have the police involved. Wabo I need you to convince her to tell the police everything that's the only way we can find out who is protecting him. It's either a lawyer or a police officer. One of his victims must have reported and the case probably mysteriously went cold. I am almost

certain that this is not the first time he has done this and he has succeeded a few times.

Khaya: this is getting hectic and deeper than we thought.

Me: yes it is. Regardless he still needs to pay. I watched mom getting abused by her husband and I couldn't do anything to save her. I couldn't protect her. when we left that hell hole I made a promise to myself that no woman will be abused under my watch. I promised myself to protect those that would need my protection and right now that's what I'm doing for Oyama. I couldn't do it for mom but I'll damn sure do it for this girl.

\*

\*

\*

LUN

GA

\*

\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

You know those guys don't know who I am. I'll show them. How dare they walk into my place like that and taking my woman. I have to find her. I need make sure that she is ok. she needs to come back to me we still have unfinished business. She can't just leave like that we can work things out. I just wish she listened to me. If she had stayed away from that guy none of this would have happened. She just had to provoke me. I need to deal with these guys. They can't go around disrespecting me like that. My dad needs to make this disappear like he did with the others. I can't afford to go jail. But first I need to find out which hospital they took her too. They probably took took her to a public hospital I'll start looking there.

Me: barman give another drink. I told you to keep them coming  
Barman: don't you think you've had enough.  
Me: just keep the drinks coming man I don't need a lecture from you right now.

## CHAPTER 134

THURSDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

LONW

ABO

\*

\*

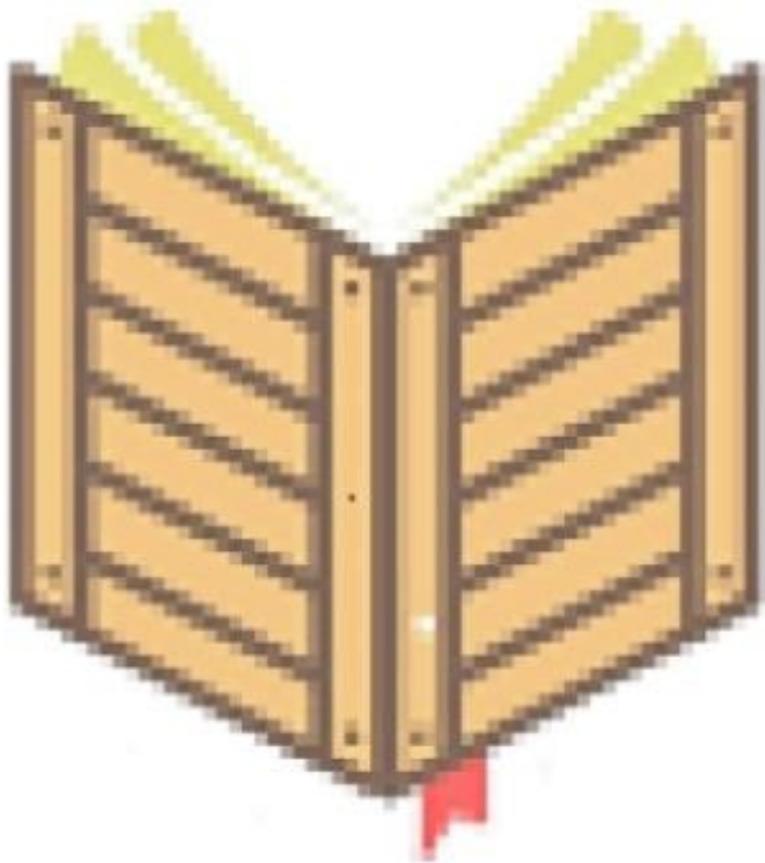
\*

Dad: Wabo are you ok what's going on? You seem like you have a lot on your mind  
Me: Dad would it be so bad to want to give someone a taste of their own medicine?  
Dad: Why do you ask?

Me: I just feel like the justice system in this country is failing it's citizens. People get away with a lot because they know someone high up in the system. People are protected for their wrong doings and still continue with their wrongs because they believe they are untouchable. If you and mom didn't have money if you didn't have the resources that you have right now do you think that the people you've had arrested would be in jail today. it seems like people get arrested but the cases go cold because of lack of evidence or the case file disappears.

Dad: To be honest with you Wabo if we didn't know a good police officer that was dedicated to his job I don't that the guys we had arrested would be in jail. They probably would have bought their way out and if we didn't

have the resources that we have there wouldn't be much evidence against



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

them and it would take the detective a very long time to solve the cases because of the lack of resources in the system and the fact that the system itself is slow. Where is all this coming from? Me: I have this friend at school her name is Oyama Ndlela she's a Graphic Design student. We met at one of my games and she is a nice girl.

Dad: You have a female friend it sounds like she is more than a friend.

Me: For now she is a friend dad maybe there might be something more later on I don't know. Only time will tell.

I'm in no hurry to date dad. Can I finish my story now without you interrupting me? Dad: That's a good thing and yes you can finish your story (this man just smiles at me. I'm sure he was thinking that I'm gay)

Me: She has a boyfriend and this boyfriend is not very nice to her. He ill treats her that was my first initial thought because this guy kept telling me to stay away from her and I could tell that she was afraid of him. She came to school recently wearing make up and I asked her why because she doesn't wear make up she didn't want to tell me why so I let her be and figured that when she is ready to talk she will. Right there I concluded that she was being

physically abused. But I told myself I would wait for her to talk or ask me for help. Yesterday she sent me a text and the text said "PLEASE HELP HE IS GOING TO KILL ME" she also pinned her location to the text and I told Khaya and explained the situation to him and he went there with Banele and Mcebisi and they told me to wait at the hospital. What I saw when they brought her in Dad brought every memory of seeing mom filled with bruises the times she would hardly get out of bed because she was in pain. Hearing her silent cries begging him to stop it all came back to me dad. This guy beat Oyama so bad that she is lying in a hospital today with a broken rib internal bleeding cuts on her body and more. She is in a bad state dad. (I can see the anger in my dad's eyes but he is trying to keep calm. I go ahead and tell him about what Mcebisi said about this guy and what the plan is)

Dad: I am going to ask uncle Siphon to look into this guy and see what's going on and who is protecting him.

what's this boy's name

Me: Lunga Sithole and he is a third year

Marketing student and a soccer player. Dad: Ok.

I'll talk to uncle Siphon. How are you feeling?

Me: I made a promise to myself a long time ago that no woman I care about would suffer at the hands of another man. I couldn't protect mom but I want to protect her dad.

Dad: I understand how you feel. Whatever you do involve the police and I'm sure her doctor has reported this to the police and I am going to ask Det. Nxele to look into it. Whatever evidence you have against this guy you will have to give it to him and try and convince your lady friend to tell her story to the police that is the only we can found out who is protecting this guy.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: thanks dad. I don't have much going on with my classes today so can I skip this day. I want to go to the hospital and see her

Dad: Just for today and the rest of the week you can go see her after your classes. Me: thanks dad. I'll see you later.

\*

\*

\*

OYA

MA

\*

\*

\*

Lying in hospital and thinking that it is all my fault. I should have just stayed away from

Lonwabo. Why did I even try to be friends with him

because I know how Lunga gets. Was it so bad for me to

talk to other people. He doesn't even want me to have

female friends. I can't do this anymore and the worst part

is that I never even told my parents about what was

happening. They know him to be this nice guy that loves

their daughter enough not to rush her into having sex. (my



NOVELSGURU.COM

parents walk in)

Mom: How are you feeling nana?

Me: I'll be ok mama. It still

hurts but I'll be ok. Dad:

Who did this to you baby?

Me: Lunga did this to me (and the room goes silent

and you can even here a pin drop) Dad: How long

has this been going on?

ME: three months now but this is the first

time it has been so severe. Dad: Why

didn't you say anything Oyama

Sponsored

cuts on her body and more. She is in a bad state dad. (I

can see the anger in my dad's eyes but he is trying to

keep calm. I go ahead and tell him about what Mcebisi

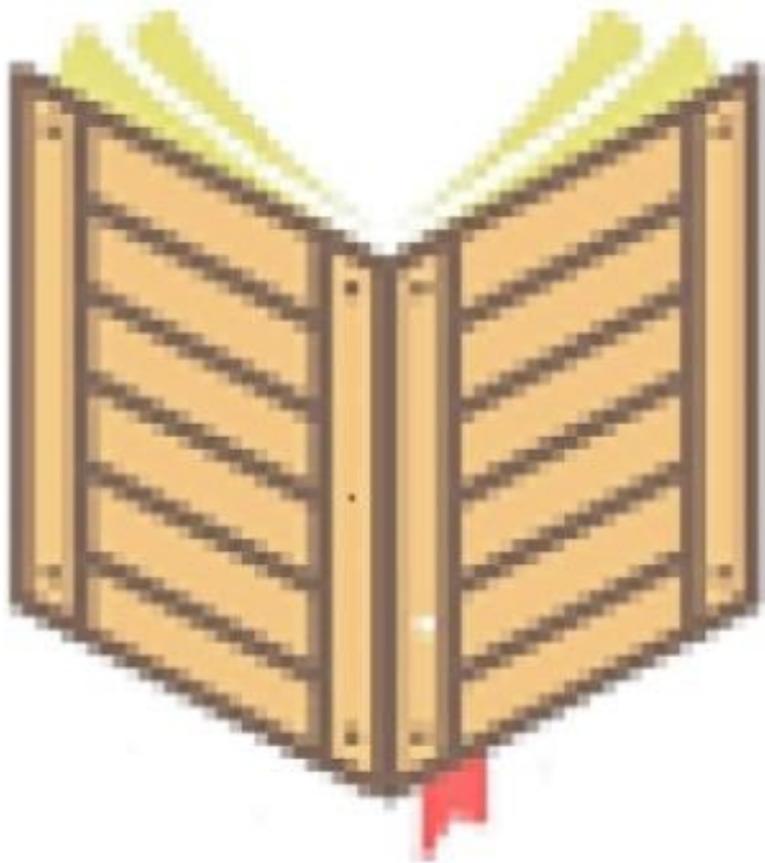
said about this guy and what the plan is)

Dad: I am going to ask uncle Siphon to look into this guy

and see what's going on and who is protecting him.

what's this boy's name

Me: Lunga Sithole and he is a third year  
Marketing student and a soccer player. Dad: Ok.  
I'll talk to uncle Siphho. How are you feeling?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I made a promise to myself a long time ago that no woman I care about would suffer at the hands of another man. I couldn't protect mom but I want to protect her dad.

Dad: I understand how you feel. Whatever you do involve the police and I'm sure her doctor has reported this to the police and I am going to ask Det. Nxele to look into it. Whatever evidence you have against this guy you will have to give it to him and try and convince your lady friend to tell her story to the police that is the only we can found out who is protecting this guy.

Me: thanks dad. I don't have much going on with my classes today so can I skip this day. I want to go to the hospital and see her

Dad: Just for today and the rest of the week you can go see her after your classes. Me: thanks dad. I'll see you later.

\*

\*

\*

OYA

MA

\*

\*

\*

Lying in hospital and thinking that it is all my fault. I should have just stayed away from

Lonwabo. Why did I even try to be friends with him

because I know how Lunga gets. Was it so bad for me to

talk to other people. He doesn't even want me to have

female friends. I can't do this anymore and the worst part

is that I never even told my parents about what was

happening. They know him to be this nice guy that loves

their daughter enough not to rush her into having sex. (my

parents walk in)

Mom: How are you feeling nana?

Me: I'll be ok mama. It still

hurts but I'll be ok. Dad:

Who did this to you baby?

Me: Lunga did this to me (and the room goes silent

and you can even here a pin drop) Dad: How long

has this been going on?

ME: three months now but this is the first time it has been so severe.

Dad: Why didn't you say anything Oyama why keep quiet for so long baby?

Me: I was scared tata I was scare that it might get worse if he knew I told anyone. Dad: Oh my baby I wish you had told me it wouldn't have gotten to this.

Mom: What do you do

Oyama to provoke him

Dad: what do you mean  
provoke him?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mom: She must have done something to make him beat her like this.

Dad: Are you hearing yourself woman? This is your daughter and you think she deserves what happened to her. have I ever laid a hand on you when you did something I didn't like or made me angry? Have i?

Mom: No you haven't

Dad: Then why do you stand here and think that your daughter deserves this? Mom: I'm sorry I was just ..... (dad doesn't let her finish)

Dad: Just what Noxolo? It's this kind of behaviour that gives these men the power to continue abusing women. Go home now.

Mom: but I still want to stay

Dad: just go home. (mom looks at me and I have no words to say. I'm shocked at what she just said she leaves the room) I should have trusted my instincts about this boy. The way he was so possessive over you my instincts told me he is no good I should have trusted them and you wouldn't be here today.

Me: I'm going to be fine dad. I really am. He beat me because I made friends with one of the rugby players at

school. He told me to stay away from him dad but I didn't. Dad: he had no right to lay his hands on you not matter what the reason is. I have never laid a hand on your mom not even once and she has done a lot to anger me like now but that doesn't mean I should beat her to a pulp. We talk things out. Oyama why did they put you in a private room my medical aid doesn't cover this. They should move you to a normal ward.

Me: it was a request made by the guys that rescued me. Dad: So Lunga is not the one who brought you here?

Me: No dad. At some point during the beatings I managed to run the bathroom and lock myself in I had my phone with me in my dress pocket and I managed to send a text to the first person that came to my mind at that time and that was my new friend. He sent his brothers and they got there just before Lunga could rape me. (I just could control my tears)

Dad: shhhh don't cry baby. You are safe now. I'm glad they got there in time. I should meet these boys. ( as I look over my dad's shoulder there they are but there's five

of them now. Looks like the other one is a twin.)

Me: they are here. (my dad let go of me  
and turned to look at the door) Lonwabo:

Sorry we didn't mean interrupt.

Dad: It's ok. Come in. I'm Oyama's dad and she just told  
me you rescued her.

Khaya: you could say that. I'm Khaya and that's my  
brother Lonwabo Sondlo My twin brothers Banele and  
Bandile Mtimkhulu and my brother in law Mcebisi Mkhize.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Dad: Nice to meet you all.

Mkhize from Nanda?

Mcebisi: Yes sir. My father  
is Nkosinaye Mkhize

Dad: I know your father he is really a good man and I'm  
glad he raised a good man. I don't know how I could ever  
thank you for helping my daughter.

Banele: we just did what any decent guy would done. We  
are just happy we were able to get her out.

Dad: I take it you are the friend she sent a text  
to?(he asks looking at Lonwabo) Lonwabo: Yes  
sir I am.

Dad: thank you so much.

Khaya: Mr Ndlela do you mind if we talk to you outside?

Dad: Sure no problem. (He walks out with  
the guys and Lonwabo stays) Lonwabo:

How are you feeling (he asks kissing my  
cheek)

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: it still hurts but not a much as yesterday.

Lonwabo: I'm glad to hear that. I

need you to something for me Me:

what's that?

Lonwabo: When the police get here I need you to tell them everything that happened. Me: I'm scared Lonwabo I'm scared he is going to come after me if I do that.

Lonwabo: Do you trust me? (I quickly nod) I can't here you Princess. Me: yes I trust you

Lonwabo: Please do as I tell you and trust that I won't let him hurt you again. He is going to jail for a very long time.

Me: I doubt that. His father is the police captain.

Lonwabo: is that so. Look I have to go. Please tell the police everything . trust me he won't hurt you again. I'll see you tonight. I have something I need to take care of. (He gets up and kisses my forehead and leaves)

CHAPTER 135

STILL THURSDAY

\*

\*

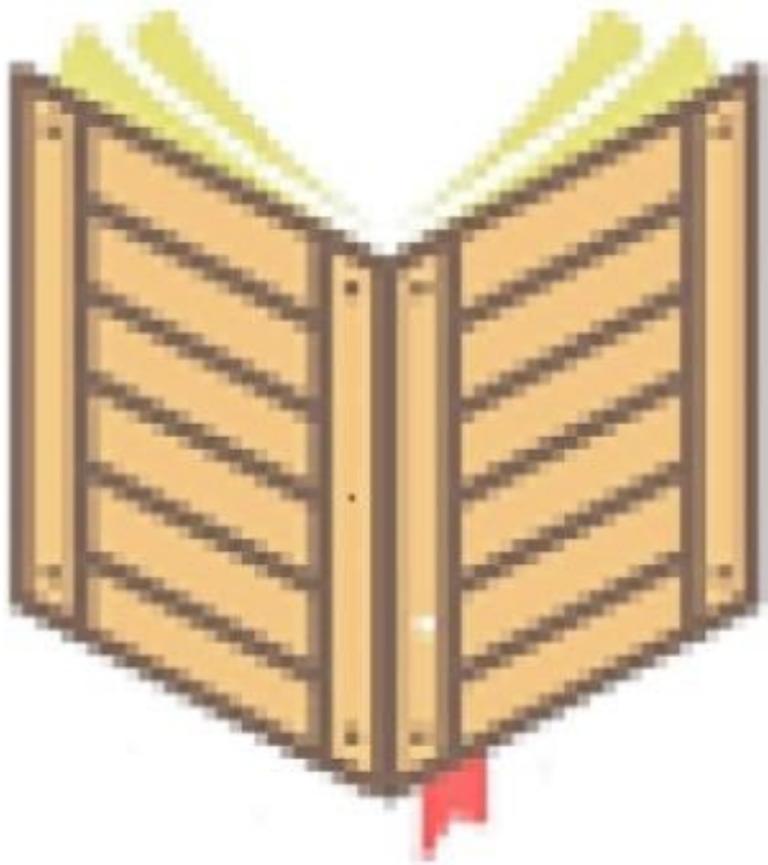
\*

LUN

GA

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

\*

I'm so hungover. My phone is ringing where is it?

Me: what do you want?

Him: is that how you answer your phone?

Me: sorry dad. I didn't look at the caller ID. It's a good thing you called.

Dad: what did you do Lunga how many times did I tell you that there will come a point where I cannot help you. Why do you do it because I surely never raised you like this.

This time you are going to jail my son and there's nothing I can do for you.

Me: dad please I can't go to jail. Please dad. There must be something you can do.

Dad: you messed with the wrong girl this time. I'm looking at her case file now. The people she mentions in this report that helped her have put some powerful people in jail. I am surely going to lose my job for protecting you. I thought I was protecting you but I didn't realise I was giving you power to become a monster. This is the third case with your name Attached to it and I can't help you. I should have never made the first cases disappear in the

first place. I covered up two cases for you and I can't do anything with this one.

Me: dad come on I'll lose everything please. (A knock interrupts me.) Dad I'll call you back. Someone is at the door.(I just hang up as I open the door what the hell is he doing here)

Me: Rugby boy what are you doing here with your goon squad. (A punch lands on my face from this guy. What the hell. He pushes me away from the door and I almost fall.)

Mcebisi: you really shouldn't call him that it pisses him off.

Wait did he just call us a goon squad? Bandile: yes he did

Mcebisi: do we look like a goon squad what the hell is a goon squad anyway? Me: what the fuck do you want in my house?

Khaya: we have unfinished business with you. (Another punch lands on my face again. This boy can really throw a punch. Just when I was about to punch back a gun is pointed at me)

Banele: you are not going to fight back. (This kid punches me again and again he throws a punch to stomach which lands me on the floor coughing a bit of blood. He takes off his belt and folds it in half and takes a sit.

Mcebisi: we looked around your apartment last night and found some interesting stuff more over a USB with your deeds and you like the girls fresh sealed so that you can take their virginity in the most ruthless way. You really are a psychopath. Something is absolutely wrong with you.

Eight girls



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

and you are still not in jail. Daddy must be hiding your secrete very well or daddy doesn't know everything.

Me: There is nothing wrong with me it's just pure pleasure. We all find pleasure in defferent forms and we do things differently to get the kind of pleasure we want.

Mcebisi: did he just say pleasure (this guy gets up and kicks me in the stomach a few times) How's that for pleasure? This whole situation is making me hungry. Hey do you have any food here or snacks something I can chew on while I'll be watching the show. Never mind I'll find it myself I might just order in.

Khaya: You and food you are inseperable.

Bandile: he was probably born with a packet of chips in his hand. (they all laugh at that statement.) Lonwabo: Take off your clothes

Me: what??

Lonwabo: I said TAKE YOUR DAMN CLOTHES OFF EVERYTHING OFF. I WANT YOU NAKED I won't repeat myself (I look at him and he is damn serious and there was a knock on my door again.) Oh that's our new friend. (they let him in and he greets them shaking their hands and takes a sit next to Lonwabo) Xolisa you are right on time.

Banele: I thought you were told to strip. Hurry up man we don't have all day. (I do as I'm told and at this point I don't even have the energy to fight back(Lonwabo gets up and belts me. It is so painful I feel like screaming but I just cry silently after a while they take me put me on the bed and tied me up with ropes from all corners of the bed. after they are done tying me up this kid continues to belt the life out of me. I can't cry anymore.)

Me: Please stop this why are you doing this what did I do to you?

Lonwabo: did you stop when she asked you to stop yesterday? Did you stop when she begged for her life when she told you were hurting her did you stop? ( he stikes me again with his belt across my thighs and right there I knew today I am going to die. Dad was right I messed with the wrong girl. I didn't think they cared. No one really cares about the girls I date. Everything he is doing to me right now is everything I did to Oyama.)

Lunga: I'm sorry I should have listened

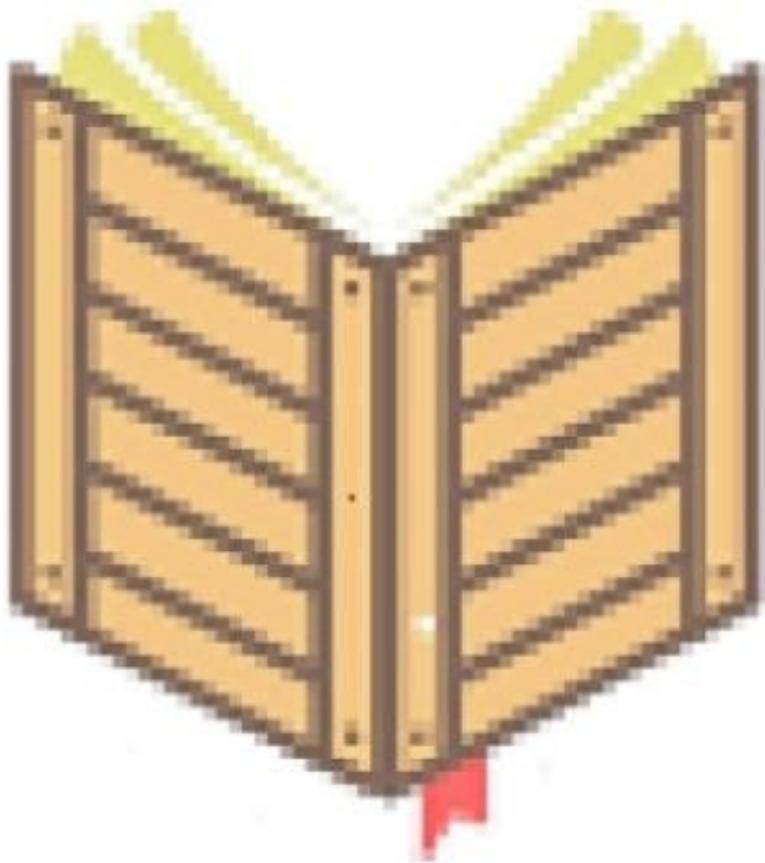
I just got carried away. Mcebisi: I

thought you said it was pure pleasure

Khaya: Maybe Lonwabo is confusing him with these

beatings. I should just shoot him here and now once and for all.

Mcebisi: Please don't shoot him. I'm still enjoying this show. By the way remind me never to get on your brother's wrong side. Lonwabo really knows how to throw a punch.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lonwabo: I don't think you want to watch the next scene. I definitely won't be watching. I'm going to the hospital. But before I go Xolisa you are up next he is all yours. (this Xolisa guy gets up from the couch and takes his clothes off I know what's going to happen. He gets on top of my chest and moves close to my face.)

Me: Please don't do this please I'm begging you. (he doesn't say anything he just slaps me and holds my head in place and tells me to open my mouth which I refuse another slap lands on face.) Xolisa: I won't tell you again. Open your mouth now. (with that said I open my mouth and he puts his dick in holding my head tight in his hands and he fucks mouth hard and deep.)

Lonwabo: Xolisa call us when you are done. Guys are you coming? Trust me you don't want to watch this. Besides I need a ride to the hospital. Let's go. (they all get up and go leaving me with this guy fcuking my mouth I can't even scream for help. He continues with this torture until he let his juices into my mouth . he takes his dick out and closes my mouth using his hands making me swallow everything. My mouth hurts it's burning because of pain my throat hurts. I have no energy for anything. He unties me and

turns me over to lie on my stomach and ties me the same way again. he gets between my legs and opens my butt chick and pours something on butt hole.

Me: Please stop I'm begging you please stop.

Xolisa: this is going to hurt like nothing you've never felt before. I won't be gentle. (with that said he pushed his dick in my hole and I couldn't help but scream outloud in pain.

He carried on with me screaming begging him to stop but my cries fell on deaf ears. He climaxed the first time and the second time. He carried on fucking me for hours taking short breaks in between. When he was done he took me to the bathroom cleaned me and dressed me. He cleaned the bedroom change the bedding and took the one filled with blood and put in a black plastic bag. He put me back on the bed.) just so you know I am gay. Just incase you were wondering. Next time you will think twice about

raping virgins or any other woman for that matter. Sleep and get your energy back. The police will be here for you in a few hours. You don't have a phone and don't even think of running you are being watched. (with that said he leaves. I really under estimated these guys.)

\*

\*

\*

SIBA

HLE

\*

\*

\*

Him: how are you? You seem to far away with your thoughts. What's wrong?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I'm not a virgin

Him: and that matters because?

Me: I'm damaged why would you want someone who is damaged? Him: Who told you were damaged?

ME: No one It's a conclusion I came to all on my own.

The guy that broke my virginity didn't want me anymore after that. that's why I always thought I was damaged goods.

Him: do you think I want to be with you for the sex?

Me: Honestly no I don't. I'm just scared that you might not want me because I have had sex before. Him: it doesn't matter if you have had sex before or not. Sex is not the reason I want to be with you. I'm not a virgin either. I've slept with a few girls before. Do you see me as damage do you not want to be with me because of that?

Me: I want to be with you because you are kind you care for me and for the time I've known you you put me first.

Him: Sibahle a relationship is not just about sex. Yes sex is important but it is not the most important thing in a relationship. Trust is very important respect Love. They way we treat each other in a relationship is very important.

It determines the kind of relationship we'll have. When you get into a relationship with me the most important thing I want you to do is to respect me and I should respect you. I don't expect you to just trust me I will earn that with my actions towards you. Having sex with someone doesn't make you damaged. If that was the case then every person in this world we live in would be damaged. I won't push you into having sex we will do it when you are ready. The man that raised me taught me well and I have no intentions of disappointing him or disappointing myself by forget the life lessons he taught. Do you want to know what's wrong with most us?

Me: Yes

Him: we forget the good lessons we are taught at home and start listening to friends who will tell us something different. That's why it is important that when you choose friends choose people who will fit in your circle people who will build you to be a better person and you build them.

You choose people that will always be there for you people that you can consider family even though they are not your blood. I'm sure you lost your virginity because you

made a choice to listen to friends who didn't care about you they didn't share the same beliefs. Never forget where you come from never forget the good morals and values that you were taught. Some of are lucky to have parents that teach all these good things. Others are not so lucky. Some learn from their parents that beating up a woman is ok. Beating up a man is ok rape is ok killing is ok. that 's how others grow up.

Me: I hear you and I'll stop thinking I am damaged.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Him: I just want you just as you are don't pretend with me don't hide your trueself because I definitely won't hide or lie about who I am. We still have a lot to learn about each and we have all the time in world. Come here (I go to him and he makes me sit on his lap.) You need learn to be comfortable with who you are be comfortable in your own skin. (and he kisses me)

## CHAPTER 136

TWO DAYS LATER (SUNDAY)

\*

\*

\*

OYA

MA

\*

\*

\*

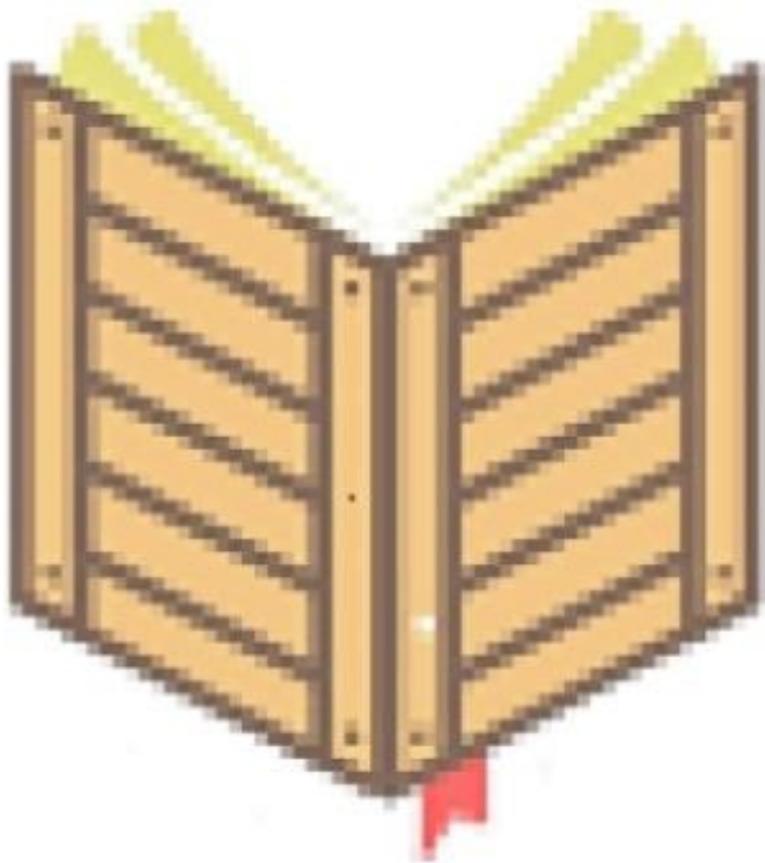
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lonwabo has been here every night since I got here. His brothers also come to check up on me. I am feeling much better. The swelling has gone down but I still have a lot bruises. I'm sure they will disappear soon. The doctor has also recommend a therapist who has been coming to see

me once a day. I must say for a male therapist he is easy to talk to. I finally told Lonwabo about how Lunga has been treating me and the beatings. He told me not to worry because Lunga has been arrested and he is going to jail for a long time and apparently I was not his first victim.

He has made me feel so worthless made me feel like what I was doing was wrong. Made me feel like saving myself for the right person was wrong. He controlled every aspect of my life and in the beginning I thought it was just his way of showing me that he cares. He is my second boyfriend. My first boyfriend broke up with me because I wouldn't give the cookie. At least he was honest about it. When he tried to sleep with me I told him I was not ready I told I was still a virgin and he'll have to wait until I'm ready. He told me straight out that he wants someone to have fun with he is not all about commitment and everything which I appreciated. With Lunga it was different. He said all the right things to make sure I stay with him only to realise he only wanted my cookie. After a while he really became obsessive over me. After my classes he made sure I went straight home or he would

take me to his place and take me home later. I felt like I couldn't do anything wrong. I couldn't make mistakes because he would just snap at me and beat me for little things I do wrong and he always made sure he beat me where no one could see my bruises until the first day I met Lonwabo.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

My mom also made me feel worse by saying that I probably provoked him. She made me feel I deserved the things Lunga did to me. She did apologise but when I asked her why she did that she couldn't tell me so I just let it go. Honestly I just want to forget the whole thing. I just want the nightmares to stop. I just want to stop seeing his face when I close my eyes. I just want to stop seeing his dick in my mouth whenever I try to eat. I just want it to all stop.

Lonwabo: hey why are you crying (I didn't even realise that I was crying. Lonwabo hasn't hugged me since I got here. I think he is afraid that he'll hurt me. He sat next to me on the bed and looked at me. I just threw myself at him and cried on his chest. He hesitantly pulls me close and holds me tight but also careful not to hurt me. He feels safe. I feel like I don't know but it's not how I felt when Lunga held me. It's a good different.) He won't hurt you anymore.

Me: but he haunts me in my dreams in everything I do he haunts me .

Lonwabo: eventually it will get better. Just give it

time. You won't forget but you will heal.

Remember that we are not all like him.

Me: thank you for being so supportive and yes I know there are good in this world. I'm sorry I got your t-shirt wet my tears. (I say as I pull away from him.)

Lonwabo: it's ok don't worry about it.

Me: I really don't know how I'm ever going to thank you.

Lonwabo: well there's too things you can do for me.

Me: I wonder what could be those two things

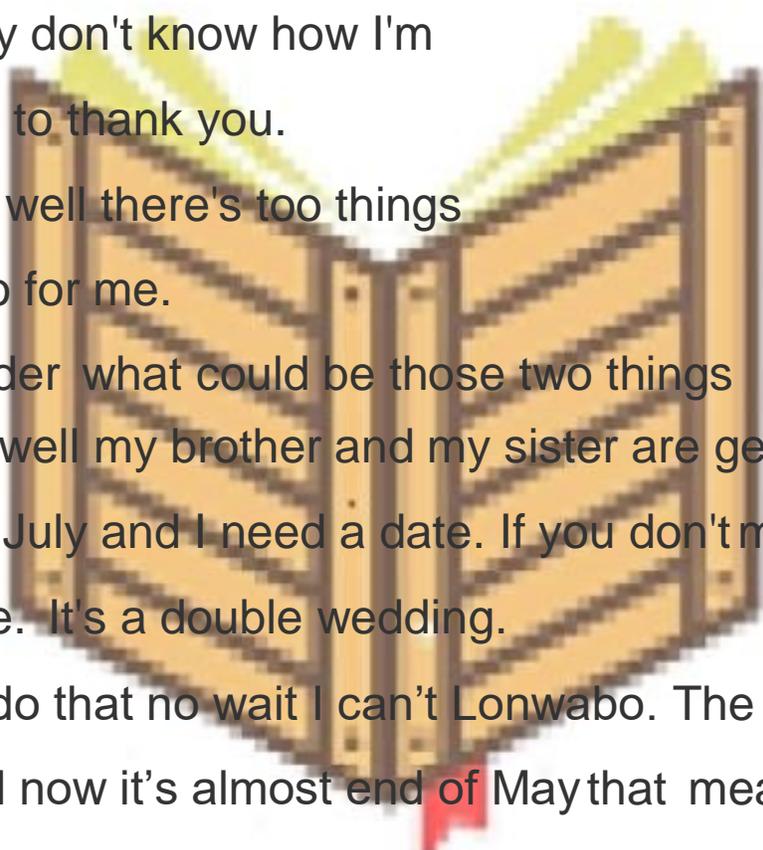
Lonwabo: well my brother and my sister are getting married in July and I need a date. If you don't mind please be my date. It's a double wedding.

Me: I can do that no wait I can't Lonwabo. The wedding is in July and now it's almost end of May that means I only have a month to find a designer that can make a dress for me.

Lonwabo: I'm sure my sister in law's and my sister's designer can fit in three more dresses for you. Me: hayibo

Lonwabo three more dresses why?

Lonwabo: one for the white wedding and two for the



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

traditional wedding. they were suppose to only have a traditional wedding I don't know what happened the ladies decided to have both. I just feel sorry for their future husbands.

Me: ok I see. ( I wish he could stay until I fall asleep at least when he is here he has a way of distracting me and making me concertrate on something else rather than what happened to me and he doesn't show pity. He just makes me feel ok he makes feel worthy.)

Lonwabo: I'll speak to Lina and Lungi the brides to be and see what we can do about your dresses.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: thank you.

Lonwabo: I have to go for now. I'll be back tonight. Should I bring you anything? Me: No I don't need anything but I do want to ask you for a favour.

Lonwabo: What's the favour?

Me: tonight can you stay until I fall asleep?

Lonwabo: I'm sure I can manage that but I'll have to talk to my parents and let them know I'll be here till here late.

Me: Thank you I really appreciate it. (he gently hugs me and kisses my forehead.)

\*

\*

\*

KH

AYA

\*

\*

\*

Seeing Oyama like that really did bring back memories of mom being like that and it hurt. It really hurt but I couldn't show the pain I felt for Lonwabo's sake. I had to be strong for him. I think he really likes this girl and I don't think he knows it. My brother is taking his own time when it comes



NOVELSGURU.COM

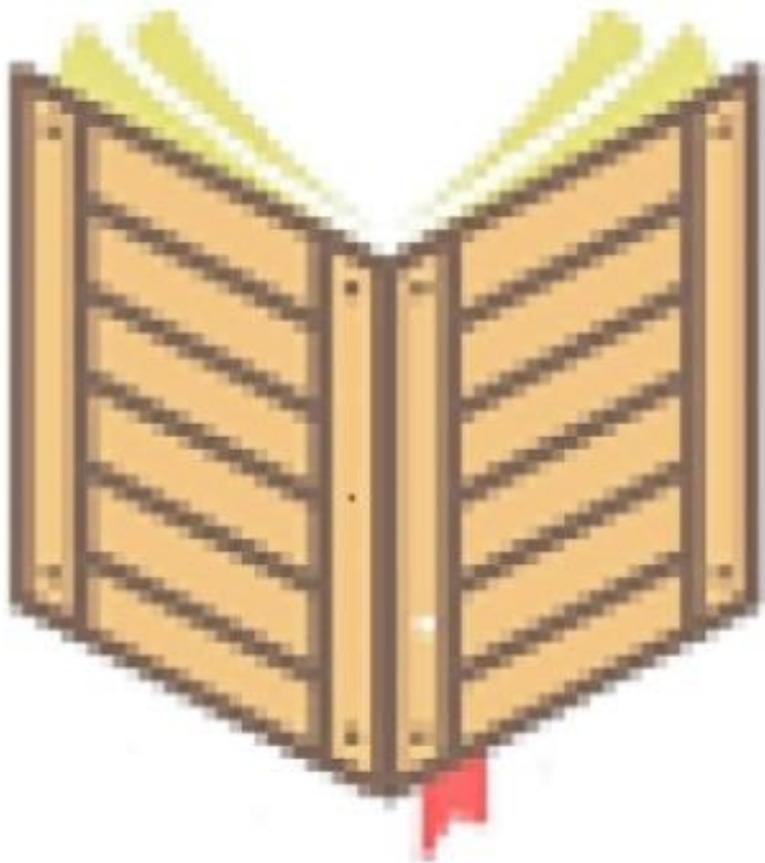
to

girls. He says he just wants the one girl the one that's meant for him the one he'll marry and I really admire that because not all of us can do that. He always says that he doesn't want to turn out like his father or my father he wants to be the best husband and the best dad to his kids. I really think that Oyama is the girl for him but I don't think he knows it and if he does then he is doing a job hiding it.

Sometimes I wish there were more people who are supportive of the good guys. In as much as men are responsible for Gender Based Violence he wants to be the best husband and the best dad to his kids. I really think that Oyama is the girl for him but I don't think he knows it and if he does then he is doing a job hiding it.

Sometimes I wish there were more people who are supportive of the good guys. In as much as men are responsible for Gender Based Violence there are men out there who are also being abused by other men and by women as well but they can't speak up. The minute they start speaking up they become the laughing stock of the

community. They are asked “stupid questions like how can you let a woman beat you up like that?” things like that. they are made to feel like the choice they made of



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

being the good guys is the wrong choice but through it all good man are still out there still doing what needs to be done right. We are also hoping that our project will bring out a lot of awareness to male abuse.

Dad: are you getting nervous about the wedding? you seem far away with your thoughts (he asks as he walks into the kitchen.)

Me: I'm not nervous dad. I was just thinking about Lonwabo's friend Oyama.

Dad: Is she just a friend or is there more going on between those two? I think there's more going on.

Me: They like each other that much I can tell you and Lonwabo is not going to rush her into dating him he is going to let her heal from this first which I think is a good thing to do. She needs to heal first before she can be involved in another relationship.

Dad: Maybe Lonwabo will be her healing.

Khaya: maybe. (Mom walks in as well she goes straight to her husband and kisses him) Mom: what are you two talking about ?

Dad: we were just talking about

Lonwabo's new girlfriend. ME: dad

she is not his girlfriend they are just friends.

Mom: they might as well be a couple. Lonwabo has been spending more time at the hospital these days than he does here. Lisakhanya even said that she doesn't like sharing Wabo's attention. She is used to getting all of his attention whenever she needed it.

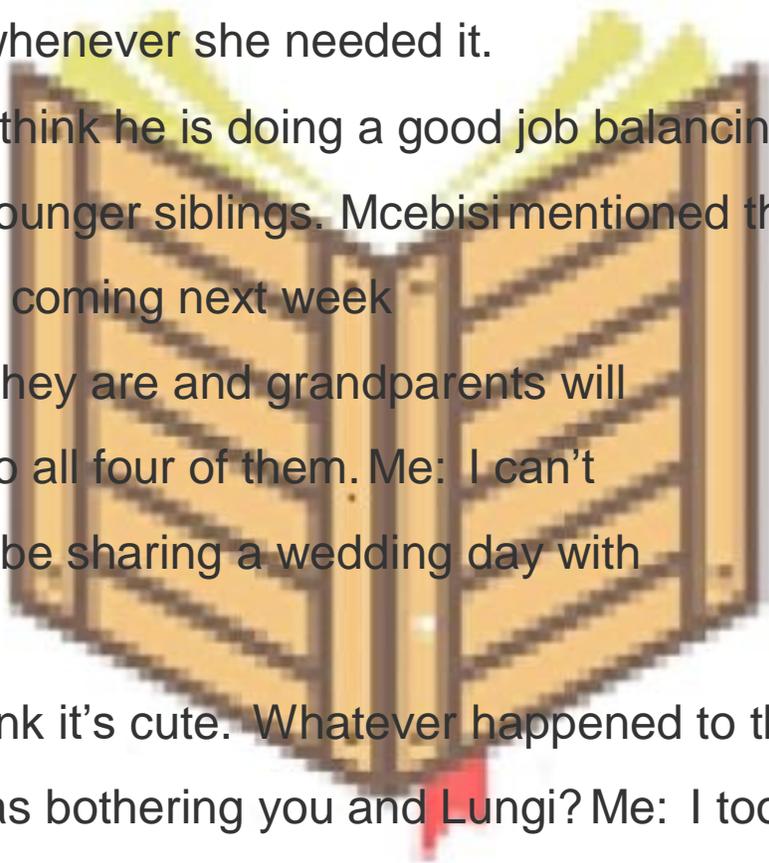
Me: well I think he is doing a good job balancing everything even his younger siblings. Mcebisi mentioned that his uncles are coming next week

Dad: Yes they are and grandparents will be here too all four of them. Me: I can't believe I'll be sharing a wedding day with my sister.

Mom: I think it's cute. Whatever happened to that girl that was bothering you and Lungi? Me: I took care of her.

Mom: oh is that so and how did you do that?

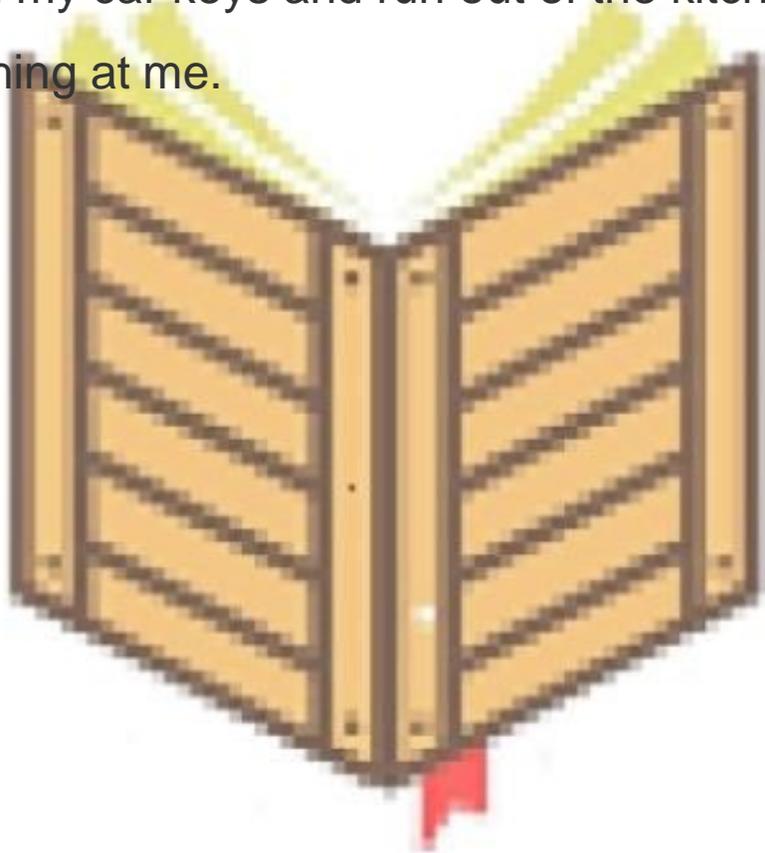
Dad: do you even have to ask. Khaya is just like you. I'm sure he did what you would have done. (he walks over to her and pulls her close and kisses. I think they forgot that I'm here. I clear my throat)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I'm still here you know that right. Go to your room I was in this kitchen first.

Dad: No you can leave and go to your apartment and leave us to our business besides this is our kitchen and we can do as we please. (mom just looked at me and smiled. I'm just happy to see her so happy. I grab my phone and my car keys and run out of the kitchen leaving them laughing at me.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*

\*

\*

MCE

BISI

\*

\*

\*

After the whole saga of Oyama and that Lunga guy I decided to drive hom. My dad said that he needed to see me. It's a good thing that I'm not that far from home actually it's a good that I moved back to Durban. Being close to my family and being close to the love of my life gives me peace. I love her family and truly appreciate the way they have accepted me. We are family even before I am even married to their daughter. As soon as I drive into the yard Sne's mom sees me. Why did she have to see me now. She is going to waste no time coming here. I don't understand why this woman can't get it through her head that I don't want her daughter. Everytime I come here it's Sne this and Sne that. it has gotten worse now that they know I'll be getting married soon and I really

pray they don't do anything stupid. Just as I get out of the car she is already standing next to the fence. I still don't know why mom didn't just allow me to build a wall around here.

Sne's Mom: Mcebisi

how are you? Me:

I'm ok ma and you?

Sne's mom: I'm good too. it' always good to see you. Are you staying long? Sne will be back later she went into town.

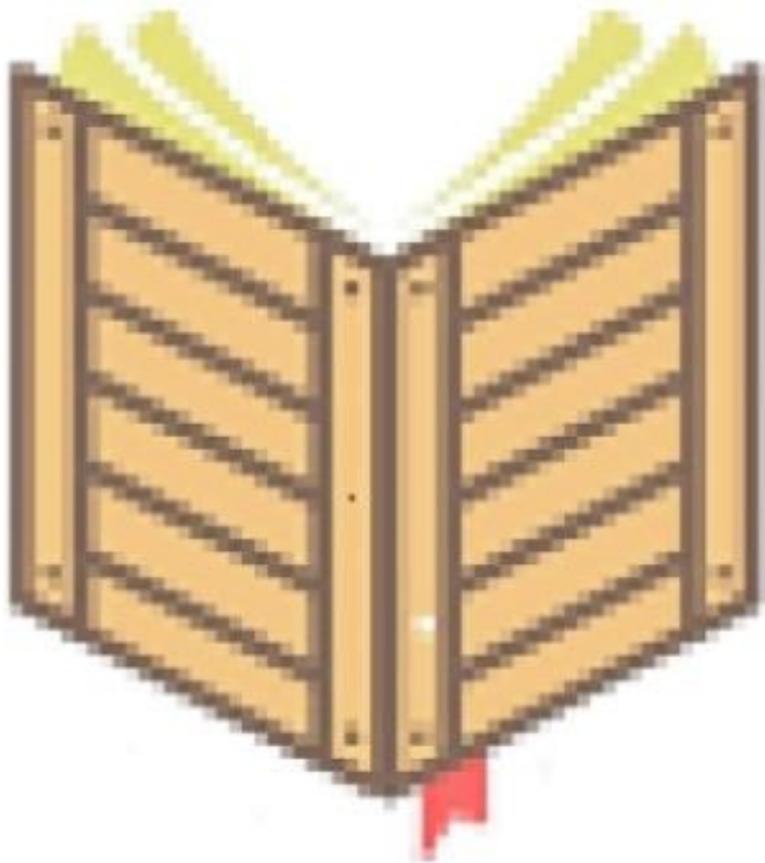
Me: No mama I'm not staying. I am just here to see my dad and I'm leaving again.

Sne's mom : oh I see. I hope Sne is back before you leave she would really love to see you. Me: Yazi ma with all due respect I don't like what you are doing. I don't like that you keep forcing your daughter to get close to me. I don't like her in that way and I have told her that. I have a fiancé ma a woman that truly love with all my heart and I am marrying her soon. So you need to stop what you are doing it is not good for your daughter. I don't love her and I never will and I won't have you terrorising my wife when she is here otherwise there will

be trouble. I don't love your daughter and I never will so please you need stop this.

Sne's mom: you can to love her Mcebisi.

Me: Did you hear everthing that I just said? You need to stop this otherwise you and I we'll problems.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

## CHAPTER 137

### A MONTH A HALF LATER

\*

\*

\*

### NARRA

### TED

\*

\*

\*

The Mtimkhulu kids are rising up on their own they are slowly becoming their parents. Lunga was arrested after his incident with Oyama. His trial is still on going. The state lawyer has managed to get four of the girls that were Lunga's victims to testify against and they are still trying to get the other four. They are really scared they want to remain anonymous and they don't want to be part of the case as they just want to forget to what happened to them. But the state lawyer has a strong case especially with the video tapes that Lunga made. He is probably looking at life in prison. His father was charged with obstruction of justice he is waiting to be sentenced.

Oyama and Lonwabo are growing closer as friends. Oyama is now more comfortable with Lonwabo. When she was released from the hospital she started having her therapy sessions at least twice a week. She still has nightmares but she

doesn't get them as often as she used to. She is taking it one day at a time and having Lonwabo on her side has been great. Even though her parents are supportive but she prefers to be around Lonwabo. Lonwabo has really grown and he is doing a great job balancing) being a big brother and a good to friend to Oyama. Lisakhanya is jealous of Oyama but eventually she will get to used to the idea but the major thing is everyone wants to meet the girl that was saved by the Mtimkhulu boys boys but she is not ready to meet the family yet. Lonwano is also not pressuring her and asked his family to do the same.

Sibahle has been doing good at school. The girls that bullied her have not bullied her since that Saturday of Lonwabo's game when they were confronted by the brothers. She has gained her confidence back and smiles a lot lately. She is being mysterious about the new man in her life she only talks to Lina about it and has made her promise not to tell anyone. Lina was shocked to find out who the gys and she was made to promise not to say anything.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Everyone is doing well. The babies are growing. Oyintando is now seven months old and the Quintuplets are five month old. Everyone is enjoying having these babies around and now everyone is patiently waiting for Lwandle to pop.

Lina's Lobola negotiations went well without any interruptions. Lina is now traditionally Mcebisi's wife. The young couples are getting closer everyday their love is becoming stronger everyday. The wedding preparations have been going smoothly. Oyama's dresses were also done just in time. Lungi and Lina's designer agreed to make the dresses and she absolutely looks amazing in them. Lina and Khaya have invited Nkosikhona's other kids to the wedding. their relationship still need work and they are working on it.

Khanyi has been working from home ever since the Quintuplets were born and she prefers it that way until they are older. Qhawe is going back to the office full time after the wedding. he is so excited about the upcoming wedding you would swear that he is the one getting married.

Lwazi has been doing good. The nightmare are not as often he sees his therapist at least once a week. Thando is always there by his side and vice versa. Bandile Ncesh Luyanda and Lwandle are also doing good. Eddie is going to be a father

again his wife is pregnant. Just as the sangoma (Nkoskhona's aunt) predicted.

The family is happy but not without a glitch here and there. The challenges are always there but they get through them as long as they stand together.

\*

\*

\*

FRID

AY

THE DAY OF THE WEDDING

\*

\*

\*

This is the day the young couples have been looking forward to. They are all ready to commit to each other for life. Today it's the white wedding and Lungi's traditional wedding and tomorrow every will driving to Nanda for Lina's traditional wedding.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khanyi: you girls look

so beautiful Lina and

Lungi: thank you ma

Mrs Mkhize: Come now let's get going I'm sure that the guys are waiting and we can't keep them waiting

Khanyi: I can't believe my babies are getting married. You guys grew up too fast. It was just yesterday that you were babies and now you are getting married.

Lina: mom please don't cry you are going to ruin your make up. The ladies make their way to the church where the guys were waiting. These couples decided to write their own vows and only two sets were written. One piece of the vow was for the guys and the other one was for ladies. The ladies have made their way into the church and the couples are now standing in front of the Pastor.

Paster: We are gathered here today to join these two couples in holy matrimony. The couples have also written their own vows. Before I hand over to them to say their vows. Is there anyone in this room who thinks these people cannot get married today. (The room goes quiet and no one says anything). Ok then

Sponsored

let's continue. We will start with the ladies. Over to you ladies

Lina and Lungi: From they day I said the words “I love you” to you I knew I meant every word. I knew that I wanted to spend my life with you. I stand before you today bowing to you as the King that you are. I kneel before you and submit to be yours in all aspects of my life. I give myself to you without any doubt that you will love me you will worship the ground I walk on as I do with you. My love for you has become endless it has become eternity. I love you my King today and always. I am completely yours to love to cherish to catch my tears so that the sand doesn't catch them. You are the beat to my heart the rhythm of my soul. I am yours and you are mine for eternity.  
Pastor: and now over to you gentlemen

Khaya & Mcebisi

Time stopped when I first met you. At that moment it was just you and me no one else existed. From then life became more meaningful. My life had a purpose and soon I couldn't see a life without you. There is no life without you in it. As your King I will treat you as the Queen

NOVELSGURU.COM

that you are. I will respect you and I'll be loyal to you always. I stand before you bowing to you as my Queen and promising you that you will shed no unnecessary tears because me I promise to protect you and our family at all times. I promise to love you the way you only deserve to be loved. I give myself to you be your husband to love to cherish to catch my tears so that the sand doesn't catch them. You are the beat to my heart the rhythm of my soul. I am yours and you are mine for eternity.

As the couples finished saying their vows the Pastor blessed their rings and continued with the ceremony at the end of which he pronounced them husband and wife.

The reception was amazing. They kept their wedding small and intimate. They didn't have many speakers also so all the formalities were done quickly. The people enjoyed themselves after which they had to go to Khaya's home for the traditional part of the wedding. Everything that needed to be done was done because tomorrow they are going to Nanda for Lina. Lungi was given the name Chulumanco by her new family. Everything went well for Khaya and Lungi.

## CHAPTER 138

### SUNDAY (DAY OF THE TRADITIONAL WEDDING)

\*  
\*  
\*

LINAMA

NDLA

\*

\*

\*

After the reception my husband had to leave for Inanda with with his family and we would follow in the morning. We arrived early this morning. We wanted everything to be done early so that the people not sleeping over don't have to travel late at night. Everything went well I was introduced to the ancestors and to the family. Everything that needed to be done has been. I am now officially his wife. Mrs Linamandla Mkhize. I just love the sound of it. After everything my mother in law took me to the kitchen where the other ladies were.

Mrs Mkhize: Lina these are the ladies that you need to keep close to you in this family. That is Lindokuhle and Gugulethu they are Mcebisi's cousins and next to them is Jabulile their mother and that over there is the lady I call my friend she is more my sister than a friend Hlengiwe.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindo: Hi Lina. I never thought Mcebisi would get married let alone marry such a beautiful woman. (she is making me blush.)

Me: thank you Lindo. It is very nice to meet all of you.

Jabu: you seem nervous don't be my dear. Feel free darling and relax we are not the horrible inlaws. You should have a sip of my wine just to calm your nerves. (yes I drink wine but I can't drink with my in laws.)

Me: don't worry ma I'll be fine.

Mrs Mkhize: hayi Jabu just let my daughter be you are making her shy.

Jabu: Busisiwe she needs to relax she is so nervous. Anyway let's finish packing up this meat for your in laws Busi. I'm sure they'll want to leave soon.

Busi: yes they will. I must say today turned out to be a beautiful day.

Lindo: it definitely was and still is. Ma Busi is your nousey neighbour here? I haven't seen her. Busi: she is here. She was here after the in laws arrived this morning saying that she wants to be the first one to meet them I told her she will have to wait just like everyone else.

Gugu: I hope she has given up on the idea of Mcebisi marrying her daughter.

Busi: I wish. she was saying that Mcebisi should take Sne as his second wife and I told her straight out that my son is not going to that and I don't want her daughter as my daughter. This woman is acting like I owe her something.

Me: what's the deal with Sne. She is acting like a bitter ex.

Gugu: it would be better if she was a bitter ex but she is not she is nothing but a neighbour and what they are doing is very annoying.

Lindo: don't worry about it Lina I know my cousin and I am sure he has told her where to get off. He won't let that woman bother you. The way he looks at you he will do anything to protect you.

(I just smile and blush at her. When we are done with the meat we take it to my parents and my grand parents they are getting ready to leave. They are leaving me behind. I am spending what's left of my school holiday here. Since Mcebisi's parents live alone my sisters are also staying behind to keep me company.)

Khanyi: Look at you you look beautiful my baby. Being a wife suits you. Me: thank you ma.

I'm going to miss you guys so much.

Khanyi: you better get used to it my baby. When you go back you'll be staying with your husband.

Me: I know but at least we will be close.

Busi: She is going to be in good hands and she is going to love it here. Her husband is also staying so she will be ok.

Lwanele: We'll also be here so you won't be lonely. Sibahle: she definitely won't be.

Dad: you can still come with us. Khanyi:

Qhawe!!!!

Dad: What?!!

Me: I'll be ok dad. Promise me you will call me everyday.

Dad: Come here (he opens his arms for me and hugs me tight and I just couldn't control my tears. I am really going to miss him) Don't cry baby. If I didn't trust him to be good to you I wouldn't have allowed you to marry him. I promise I'll call you everyday twice a day.

Me: Ok. I love you so much.

Dad: I love you too my Princess. You are his Queen now but you will always be my Princess. Me: I know daddy. ( we all say our goodbyes and they all leave.)

Mcebisi: (he walks over to me and holds my hand.) You are going to be ok. Can you make me something to eat I am hungry. You don't have to bring the food out here I'll come to the kitchen. I just need to talk to dad about something.

Me: Ok Singela. (I leave everyone outside and go prepare food for my husband)

“You really think he is going stick around?” that's Sne as she

walks into the kitchen holding a bunch of clean plates.

Me: Why do you ask?

Sne: You are not woman

enough for him Me: Oh! And

you are?

Sne: yes I am.

\*

\*

\*

MCE

BISI

\*

\*

\*

I still can't believe she is now officially my wife. I have waited for this for so long. It feels like a dream.

Dad: you look happy my son



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Khabazela you can never imagine how happy I am. That woman in there is the one for me

Sponsored

I'll come to the kitchen. I just need to talk to dad about something.

Me: Ok Singela. (I leave everyone outside and go prepare food for my husband)

“You really think he is going stick around?” that’s Sne as she walks into the kitchen holding a bunch of clean plates.

Me: Why do you ask?

Sne: You are not woman

enough for him Me: Oh! And

you are?

Sne: yes I am.

\*

\*

\*

MCE

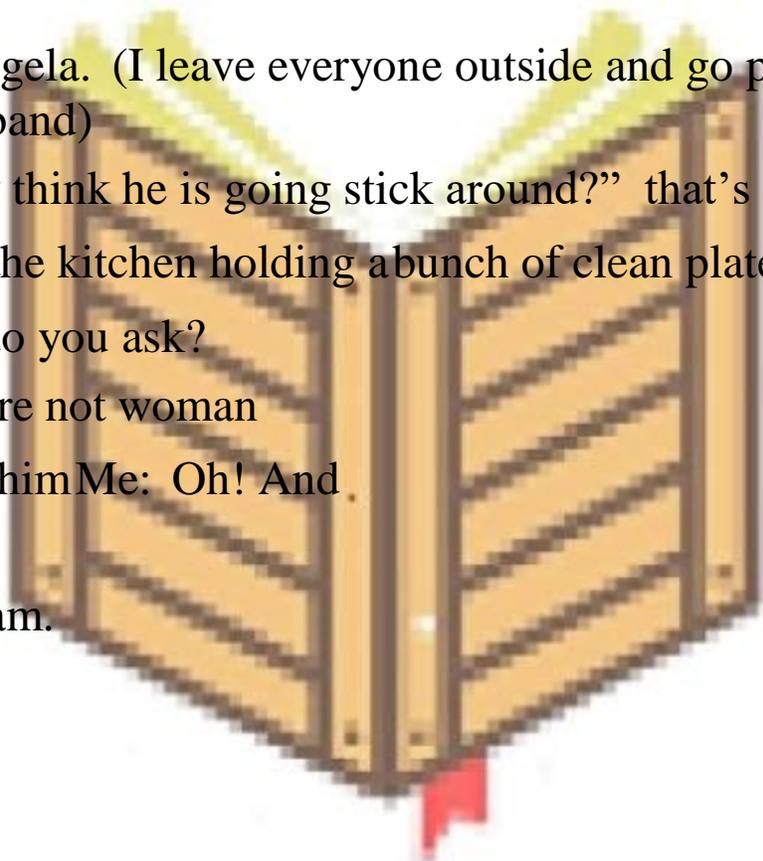
BISI

\*

\*

\*

I still can't believe she is now officially my wife. I have waited for this for so long. It feels like a dream.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: you look happy my son

Me: Khabazela you can never imagine how happy I am. That woman in there is the one for me this is not a mistake. She understands me Khabazela she loves me for me and not for what I have or what I have archived. If I didn't have all I have she would still love me Baba and she has proven that.

Dad: Be good to her. Always remember what I have taught you about how to treat a woman especially how to punish her when she has done wrong. Never lay your hand on her unless it is to caress her to wipe her tears or to touch her as you make love to her.

Me: I know Baba. I won't forget those lessons. Let me go I asked her to prepare something to eat for me. I'll be back. (I leave him there with my mom walking to him. When I get close to the kitchen I can hear Lina is talking to someone and I know that voice. I just stand at the door and she has her back to the door and Lina is concentrating on what she is doing. They both can't see me.

Sne: Yes I am

Lina: So if that is the case why did he marry me instead of you?

(immediately after that question she stops and I know she can smell my cologne she knows I am here. She looks up and I quickly shake my head “no” and I think she gets it. She carries on with what she is doing not giving away that I am here.)

Sne: as soon as he realises that he made a mistake he will leave you. You will never be able to satisfy him sexually. I can tell that you are one of the innocent girls. I know how he likes it we have done it a few times. (this girl is really dillusional I want to hear this)

Lina: Oh and I thought you were just neighbours

Sne: we were more than that once. He is going to get tired of you. He is going to want someone who has experience and he is going to get tired of waiting for you to be ready. And I am going to be there to make sure his needs are satisfied.

Lina: do you even know the man that you are talking about? If you knew him right now you would know that he has told me everything about you and what has been happening.

Sne: clearly he doesn't want hurt your feelings. At the end of the day Mcebisi will be mine. Lina: I would like to see you try.

Listen here little miss you are lucky we are at my in laws house otherwise I would be dealing with you in a very different way.

This is how this is going to work:

1. You will never disrespect my husband's name just like you did

right now speaking nonsense about him. 2. If you know what's good for you you will stay away from him and from me. 3. If you go around lying about my husband sleeping with you I won't hesitate to kill you.

Me: Clearly she doesn't know me at all and clearly she doesn't listen very well. (she is shocked to see me. She really didn't know I was there and she thinks she knows me. It didn't even take my wife that long to realise I was there.) Clearly you are looking for trouble Sne nhe?

Lina: Singela your food is ready. ( I walk over to her kiss her and take a sit at the table and she bring me my food.) I'll let you deal with her. ( she walks back to the counter and takes her plate and joins me.)

Me: Sne I told you to stay away from my wife and you are not listening to me and this grave you are digging for yourself is getting deeper and you might just never be able to get out of it.

I am going to say it again Sne "Leave my wife alone otherwise we'll have problems" Sne: I can't Mcebisi I love you. (Lina chokes on her food and looks at Sne)

Lina: You do realise that he is someone's husband and if you think you are going to be the second wife you better get that thought out of your head now.

Me: I don't need a second wife. You are all the wife I need.

(Sne clicks her tongue and walks out.)

\*

\*

\*

SN

E

\*

\*

\*

I hate this Lina. She thinks she is all that and I am going to show her that she is not all that. I am going to take that husband of hers right under her nose.

I've always wanted Mcebisi and I will have him I really don't care that he is married. I am going to do whatever it takes . I've always liked Mcebisi and I've always wanted to know what it is like to be with him. Yes I've been with other guys but Mcebisi has always been the one I want to be with. Since high school.

All the boys at school were interested in me but he never showed interest but I still want him I want a taste of him

CHAPTER 139

STILL SUNDAY

\*

\*

\*

LU

NGI

\*

\*

\*

\*\*\*\*\*FLASHBACK\*\*\*\*\*

Khaya: WOW!!! You look gorgeous. (pulls me close to him and kisses me.) After tonight you know what's going happen if you keep wearing things like these Mrs Sondlo.

Me: I know very well dear husband and I am looking forward to it all. (he lifts me making me wrap my legs around his waist and walks us to our bedroom while kissing me and telling me how much he loves me. When we get to the bedroom he gently puts me on the bed and looks at me like he is never going to see me again.)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khaya: I love you so much Lungi don't ever forget that. I will not end at telling you that I love you but I will show you everyday that you are the only one for me.

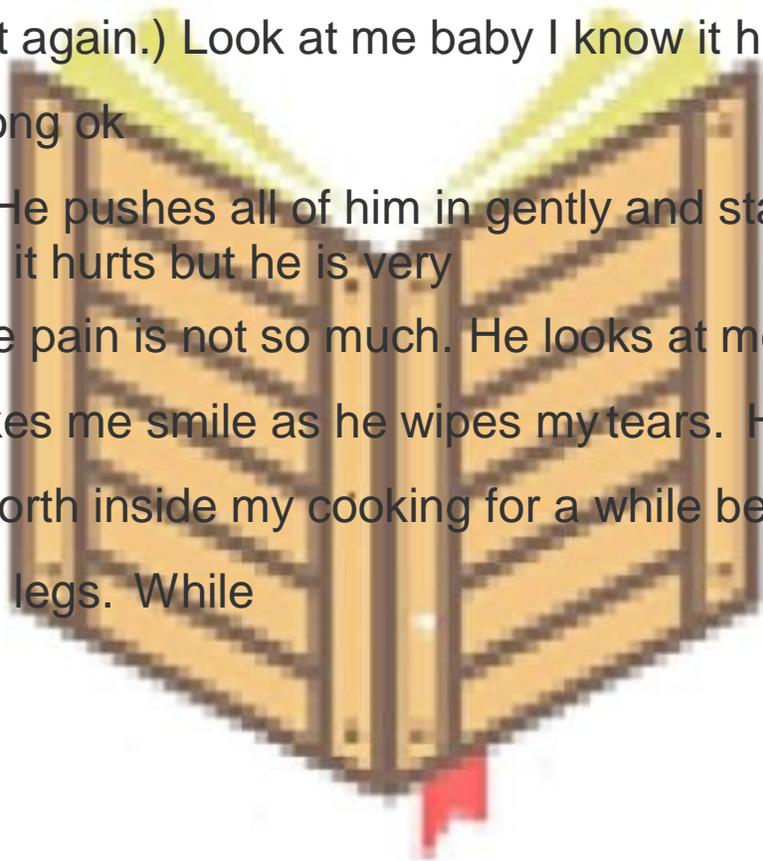
Me: I love you too Mr Sondlo. (he kisses me gently and slowly. He slowly moves away from my lips down to my neck to my chest between my twins his hands playing with my twins and gently squeezing them and slightly pinching on my nipples. He leaves wet kisses all the way to my belly button and comes back up again to my neck his hands massaging the sides of my boobs while gently squeezing them he moves his fingers to the dark area that's around my nipples and circles his fingers around my nipples gently stroking the nipples from time to time. Right now I feel so wet I'm enjoying what he is doing. He kisses my lips again and moves to my twins again using his tongue he draws circles around my nipples and flicks my erect nipples and he takes in my nipple in his mouth and sucks it then licks it. he alternates between licking and sucking my nipples from one breast to another. He stops and gently massages my twins while kissing me he finds my neck again and my boobs again then moves down to my stomach and plays with his tongue around my belly

button. He moves down to my cookie kissing the top of it moving to my inner thighs alternating them and I feel his lips kissing me around my opening. He does not go for the clit. He continues to tease me and I am really getting horny and very wet the he flicks his tongue on my clit playing with it. he lets the tip of his tongue swirl around my clit and slowly increases the pressure against my my clit with his tongue and at this moment I call out his name. I want to say something but I don't know what to say I grab on to the sheets and arch my back pressing my cookie against his face while I grab his head he sucks on my clit and puts pressure on it with his tongue again and I can feel my orgasm coming he continues like that until I explode. He gently comes up to my lips and kisses my while I try to catch breath.

Khaya: You look beautiful (he doesn't give a chance to respond he kisses me and spreads my legs wider and I feel his finger going in my cookie gently moving it in and out of my cookie he stops and kneels in front of me. He curls me into a fetus my knees are close to my boobs my legs still open but not that wide.) takes your hands and

hold on to the back of your thighs and don't let go until I tell you to. (I do as I am told while he kisses me again and I can feel his shaft at the opening of my cookie. He pushes the tip in gently and slowly. He takes it out again and tries again and this time he pushes in halfway I think and it hurts but it's not as bad as I thought it would. He takes it out again.) Look at me baby I know it hurts but it won't for long ok

Me: Ok. (He pushes all of him in gently and starts moving slowly and it hurts but he is very gentle. The pain is not so much. He looks at me and smiles which makes me smile as he wipes my tears. He moves back and forth inside my cooking for a while before tells me to let go of legs. While



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

inside me he places my legs on the bed with my knees up and spreads me open holding my knees and gently moves inside me. This man is driving me crazy this feels good. I feel like he is hitting every corner of my vagina and the pain has subsided a little. I don't feel so much now. after a while he takes my right leg and places it on his shoulder and and takes my left puts it between his legs and moves again this time increasing his pace. I feel my orgasm coming he takes down my leg from his shoulder and wraps it around his waist and he ups his pace and right now I don't wait much time I explode but he doesn't stop moving back and forth. He continues fucking me through my orgasm and I think he has hit my g-spot because I can't seem to stop climaxing I am holding on to him so tight I am holding on to him so tight he is a moaning mess he moves faster and after a few minutes he explodes. He gently unwrapped my leg from his waist and positioned his body between my legs and laid on top of me placing soft kisses on my neck. He whispers in my ear.)

Khaya: catch your breath my love and I'll bring you some water. I'm not done with you.

\*\*\*\*\*END OF  
FLASHBACK\*\*\*\*\*

He really was not done with me and I must say I really enjoyed myself. It was painful at first but as I got to relax I started enjoying it. My husband was a perfect gentlemen.

Khaya: I hope that smile is because you are thinking about me Me: I was thinking about last night. (He looks at me and smiles) Khaya: Repeat tonight when we get home ( I just smile at him.)

\*  
\*  
\*

LINAMA

NDLA

\*  
\*  
\*



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

I am now in his outside room well it is now our room. I'm in my towel just had a bath I also have a towel wrapped around my head since I washed my hair as well. The Aunts bought lingerie for me and Lungi saying we have to look very sexy. Aunt Thando was so persistent about it. I

am not going to lie I am very nervous about tonight. I have seen his dick a lot of times and sucked but I am scared. Mom said it will hurt but she also said that if he know what to do then it won't hurt so much. There are certain positions he can choose from so that it doesn't hurt as much. That didn't really help because I am still scared. I wonder how it went with Lungi. We didn't have time to talk and I'm sure he is keeping her phone off on purpose.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Mcebisi: You look good in those towels. (I turn around and look at him. He is standing by the door and he walks in. I didn't think he would be back by now. I thought I would be dressed by the time he is back.)

Me: You think so? (he walks closer to me unbuttoning his shirt)

Mcebisi: I do infact I think you would look better without them. (he takes off his shirt and is left in his jeans and he takes belt off too.)

Me: so what do you suggest Khabazela?

Mcebisi: I love it when you use my clan names it really turns me MaMkhize.

Me: Oh then maybe I should stop using them then (by this time I am in his arms looking up at him) Mcebisi: You can't do that my love you would be killing me if you do that. (he slowly removes the towel on my head and my hair falls just above my shoulders. And he slowly moves his lips to my shoulders kissing them. ) You are amazing. (he turns me around and moves closer to my body and leaves butterfly kisses at the back of my neck moving slowly to my shoulder then back to the back of my neck and to my other shoulder. He knows very well that my back is my weakness I get

wet instantly. He moves his lips from the back of my neck down between my shoulder blades. He stops and turns me around and kisses the life out of me. He is making me very horny I can feel myself getting very wet. He stops and takes a step back and looks at me.

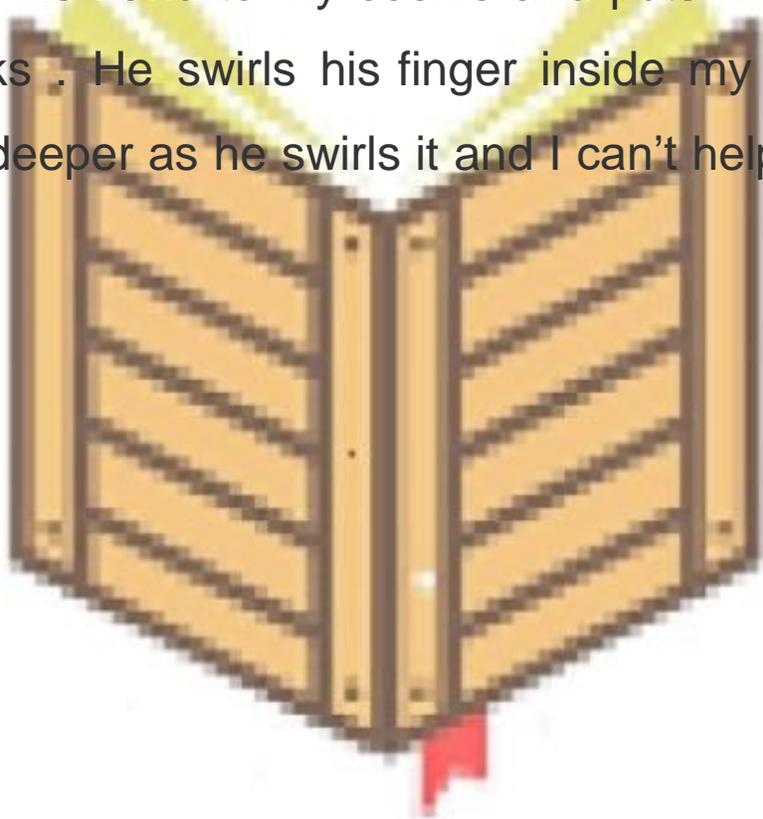
Mcebisi: I am going to introduce you to a different world of sex things that I have never told you about things that I would like to enjoy with you but that won't be now. Right now I want to introduce my wife's cookie to my dick. I want to make passionate love to you like I am going to do for the rest of our lives. I want to hear you whisper my name as I make you climax. Drop the towel Mrs Mkhize. (I don't wait time I drop the towel. There's just this thing about him when he tell me to do something I just want to do it without hesitation his commanding voice is such a turn on for me. He

looks at me admiring my body. ) I love your body (he says that walking closer to me and he pulls me to him and walks us to the bed. He sits and makes me sit on top of him with legs around him. he continues to kiss me while gently squeezing my boobs after a while he takes my left boob in his mouth and starts sucking on it for dear life the he flick

my nipple with his warm tongue and slightly bites on it. It feels good. I like the pleasure with a bit of pain. He looks at me

Mcebisi: do you like that? must I do it again?

Me: I like it. (I know better than to just nod. He continues playing with twins biting my nipples a little here and there. He moves his hand to my cookie and puts his finger and finger fucks . He swirls his finger inside my cookie and pushes it deeper as he swirls it and I can't help myself but lose



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

control. He takes it out and licks it with a smile on his face. This man is pure crazy. He places me on the bed and he takes off his jeans and underwear. His dick comes out to play.

Mcebisi: lie flat on your stomach my Queen. (I do as I am told and I can feel him hovering over me as he gets between my legs and finds my and kisses me again with soft wet kisses. He moves the kisses to my back he kisses my entire back all the way to my lower back he spans me and gently squeezes my butt cheeks. He spans me again and this time he kisses my butt cheeks. He puts his finger in again and plays with it in there for a while when I am about to climax he stops and he lifts my ass a little and spreads my legs even more ) are you ready MaMkhize  
ME: Yes (and my response comes out as a whisper I guess he heard me just then I felt his dick at my opening pushing gently and slowly. He took his time until he was fully in. he leaned his body forward taking my hand into his and he starts moving slowly. It hurt my tears are falling.

Mcebisi: I'm sorry baby the pain will pass and you will

enjoy. (he was right. After a while I was holding on tight to his hands whispering his name as the pleasure was kicking in. After a while he flipped me over and I was on my back with both my legs on his shoulder and his dick inside working it's magic. He changed again and we were on our sides facing each with one my legs over him so that he can easy excess to cookie. He continued to sex me up in that position until we both climaxed.

ME: I love you

Khabazela.

Mcebisi: I love you too.

MONDAY

\*

\*

\*

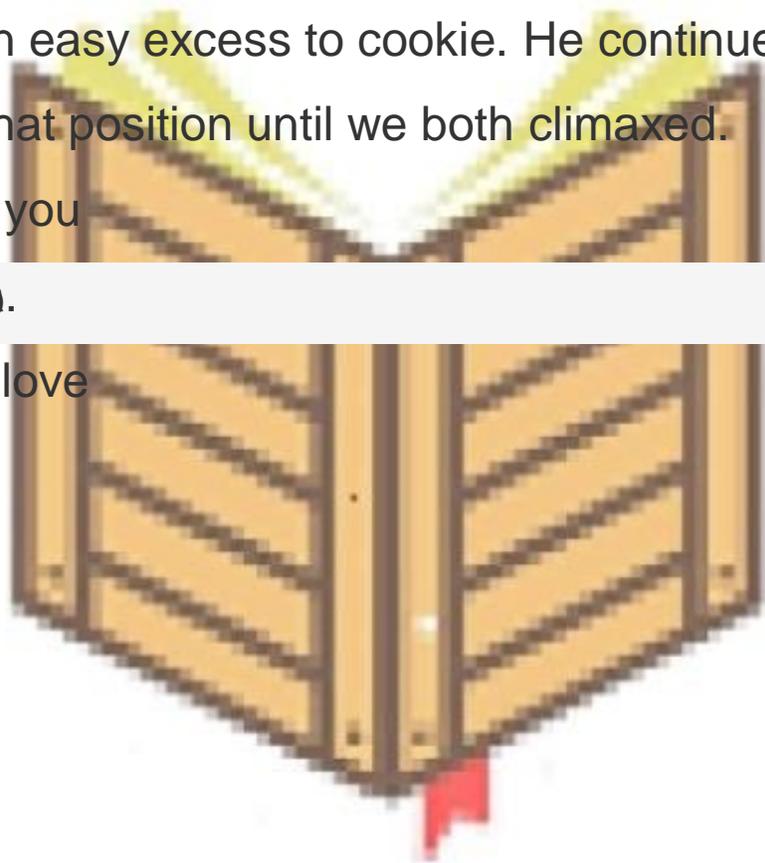
SIBA

HLE

\*

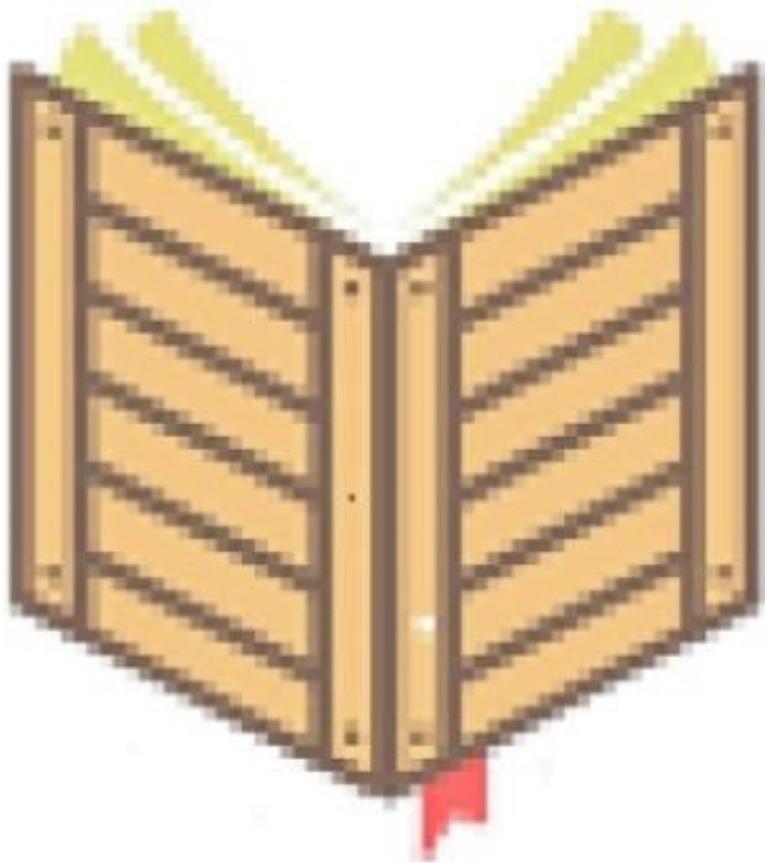
\*

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

I can hear my phone ringing maybe I'm dreaming. It stops ringing and when I try to sleep again it rings again and this time i pull it out from under my pillow as it is actually ringing and I answer it. Me: Hello  
Him: Still sleeping I see How are you?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: You woke me up from a wonderful  
so I'm not doing so good. Him: what  
was th dream about?

Me: it was about us but I won't tell you the details now.

Him: mmhhhh I see. Then it must have a really good  
dream. I wonder what was happening in the dream.

Me: stop fishing I'm not telling. are you getting ready for  
work?

Him: Yes I am beautiful. I have to make money so that I  
can be able to take care of you as your man.

Me: You do know that my parents are still  
taking care of most of my needs. Him: I  
know that and I will too. what they don't do  
for you I'll do it

Me: You are crazy you know that right.

Him: I know I am. When are you coming back?

Me: We are going to be back sometime next week because  
next weekend my parents are having a dinner party and we  
all have to be there.

Him: Oh ok. but I'll drive to Inanda this weekend to see  
you.

Me: I would love that. Lina knows about us I told her I hope  
you don't mind.

Him: I have no intentions of keeping our relationship a

secret from anyone I want the world to know how I feel about you.

Me: I say this again you are crazy.

Him: I know baby. I have to finish getting ready for work and I'll call you later. Me: Ok.

Thanks for the call. I can't wait to see you. I miss you so much.

Him: I miss you too. I'll video call at lunch. ME:

Ok. Later Babe

Him: Later Bahle.

I miss him so much I can't wait for this weekend. I might as well wake up and bath. I won't be to go back to sleep anyway it sounds like people are awake. I'm sure they are still busy cleaning up after the weekend. My other sisters are still sleeping. I'll let them sleep. I'm sure they are tired.

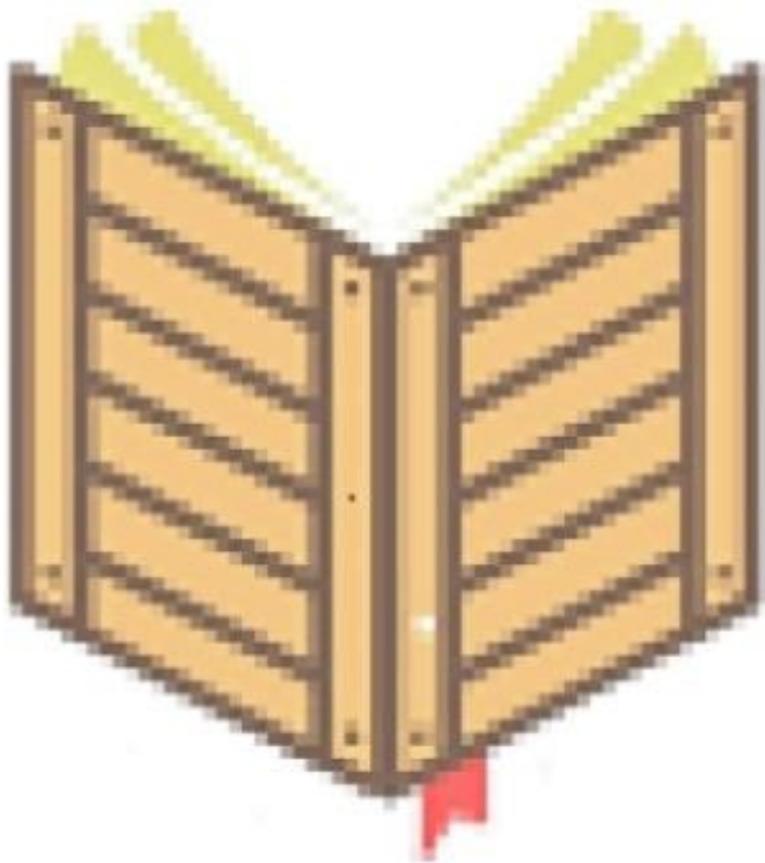
**NOVELSGURU.COM**

When I get to the kitchen Mcebisi's mom was in the kitchen packing plates in plastic boxes. Me: Morning Ma

Her: Morning baby. Why are you up already?

Me: I received a call and I couldn't go back to sleep so I decided to bath and come help with breakfast. Is Lina awake?

Her: No she's not. Don't wake her. I'm sure she needs the rest.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Ok ma. I'll get started on breakfast then.

Her: that's fine. I'll finish up here. When Mcebisi wakes up he has to move these to one of the rondavels. So tell me dear are you dating? (I didn't expect that question but I answer her honestly.) Me: Yes Ma there is someone special and I am hoping that he is the one. I really don't want to kiss a lot of frogs before I can kiss the one that will be my Prince Charming.

Her: You'll have to pray about it baby and what you want is not a bad thing and you will have it. Just believe and pray about it.

Me: thank you ma I will. (we talk a lot while I'm busy with breakfast and she is busy with packing the plates and her cutlery. Just as i finish with the food Lwanele Zenande and Lisakhanya walk in all dressed already.)

Lwanele: Morning everyone

Mrs Mkhize: Morning babies did you sleep well? Zenande: Yes

we did ma thank you.

Lisakhanya: I like it here it's very nice and quiet.

Mrs Mkhize: I'm glad you like it. today we'll have to go grocery shopping later on. (just then the neighbour's

daughter walks in. what's her name again Sne I think.

What is she doing here?

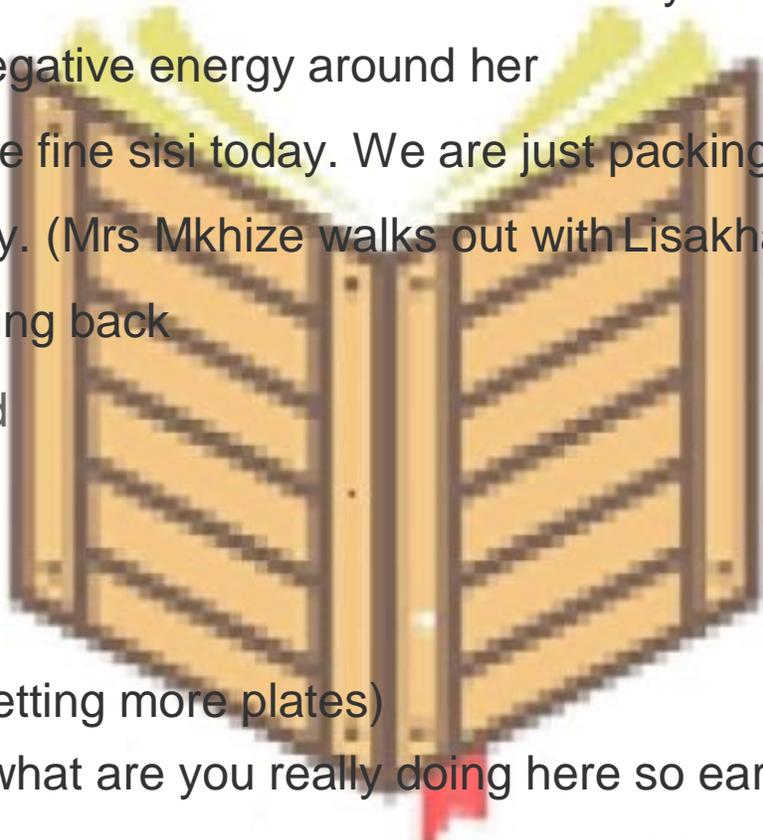
Sne: Morning Ma

Mrs Mkhize: Morning Sne what are you doing here so early?

Sne: I came to see if you need help with anything. (I don't like this girl and I don't trust her. she is very dodgy and she has this negative energy around her

Me: We are fine sisi today. We are just packing things away today. (Mrs Mkhize walks out with Lisakhanya saying she's coming back

Sponsored



they are getting more plates)

Lwanele: what are you really doing here so early? Are you done with your chores at your house? Sne: you can't ask me that I am older than you and you should watch how you talk to me.

Lwanele: I just asked a simple question you know. I might be thirteen years old but I'm not stupid and I've been around a whole of things to know that you can't be

trusted.

Zenande: in simple terms what she is saying is basically that we don't trust you.

Sne: that's not my problem I'm just here to see if you guys needed help with anything after the weekend.

Me: We are fine for now. we'll ask if we need any help.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lwanele: that means

you can go home. Sne:

Where's Mcebisi?

Me: Still sleeping with his wife.

Sne: a new makoti still sleeping at this hour she should be the one making breakfast for her in laws. Mrs Mkhize: that is your business how?

Sne: I was just saying ma

Mrs Mkhize: i want you to leave. You were told we don't need help. As for what happens in this house and how MY DAUGHTER behaves is none of your business. Do you here me. And if you think of interfering in the marriage uzowukhomba umzi onotshwala siyezwana na.

Sne: yebo ma.

Me: Considering that you are not family Please excuse us we also have family things that we need discuss (she just looked at me and walked out.)

\*

\*

\*

LU

NGI

\*

\*

\*

I have not gone back to work yet. I still have another week to go of my leave and today I decided to go see my dad and Lwandle

Me: how are you guys

Dad: we are good baby.

And you how are you? Me:

I'm good dad and I am

happy.

Lwandle: that is good. I wish I could give birth now. I'm tired of being pregnant.

Me: You still have a few months to go. Just hang in there.

(just then there was a knock and Lwandle went and opened the door and it was my mom.) MoM!!!

Sihle: Lungi. I didn't think I would see you here. I thought you would be gone for your honeymoon. Me: we have other plans ma.

Sihle: Luyanda I just came see you I wanted to ask how it went with the wedding I guess I can ask Lungi that since she is here.

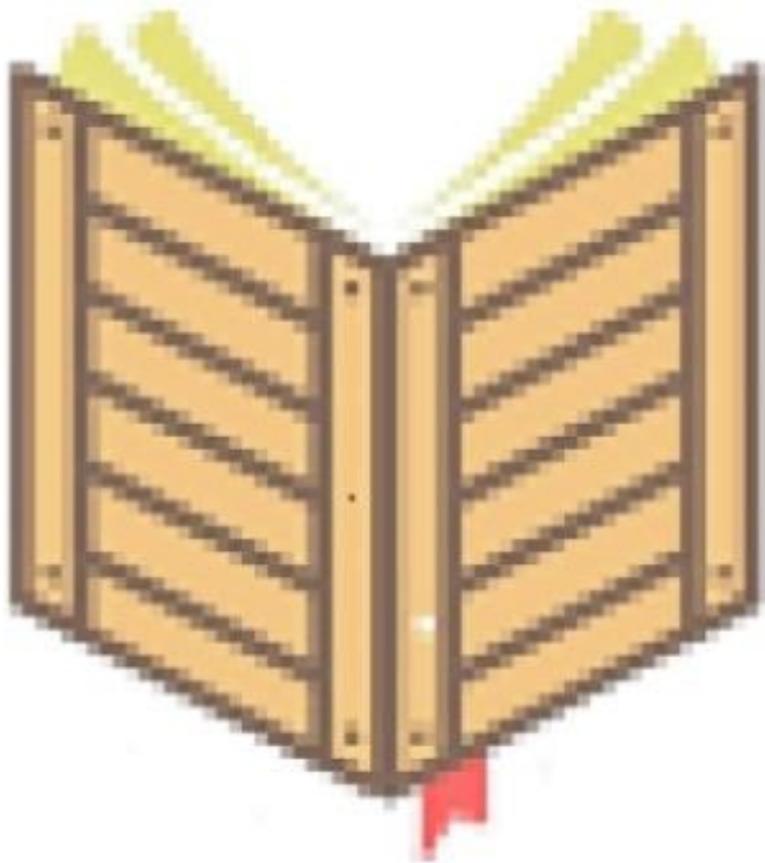
Dad: that's if she wants to talk to you.

Me: it's ok dad. I have forgiven

and I've moved on. Dad: If you

say. We'll give you two some

space to talk.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: thanks dad (and he walks out with Lwandle)

Sihle: Lungi I am glad that you are here. Lungi I am sorry about everything that I have put you through I know I was selfish. I really didn't think of you when I did what I did. seeing you now with your dad how close you guys have become. I can see what I have taken from you all those years ago. I know my apology will never give you back the time you guys lost because of me and I don't expect to be forgiven by you but I don't want you to know that I am sorry and I am sorry for everything. I love you Lungi I love you very much and I hope that one day things can go back to normal between us one day.

Me: Yes mom you did all that you did and it hurt to learn that my own mother could do that to me. You knew how much I wanted him but you lied to me for years. I have moved on ma. I am focused on the relationship we are building and we are doing. I love my dad I love very much and I won't let you or anyone else hurt him again and I know he won't let anyone hurt me. We lost a lot time and we can't make up for it but we are looking forward to everyday creating new memories everychance

we get. I have forgiven you mama for my own sanity I have forgiven but that doesn't mean I'm ready for you to be a part of my life. It will take time.

Sihle: Thank you Lungi that's all I need right now just to know that you have forgiven me. Me: I can't do this. I have to go ma.

\*  
\*  
\*

LINAMA

NDLA

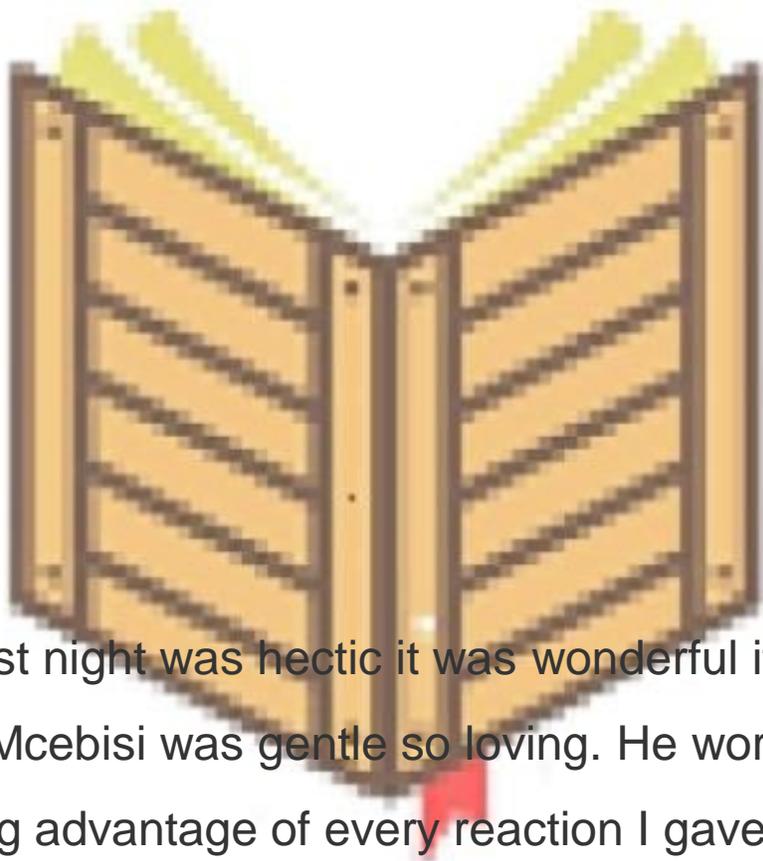
\*  
\*  
\*

Yhoooo last night was hectic it was wonderful it was beautiful. Mcebisi was gentle so loving. He worshiped my body taking advantage of every reaction I gave him to how he touched me and played with my body. I wish I could have been able to sleep some more but I am supposed to go shopping with my mother in law.

Me: Baby let's go.

Mcebisi: which car are you using today?

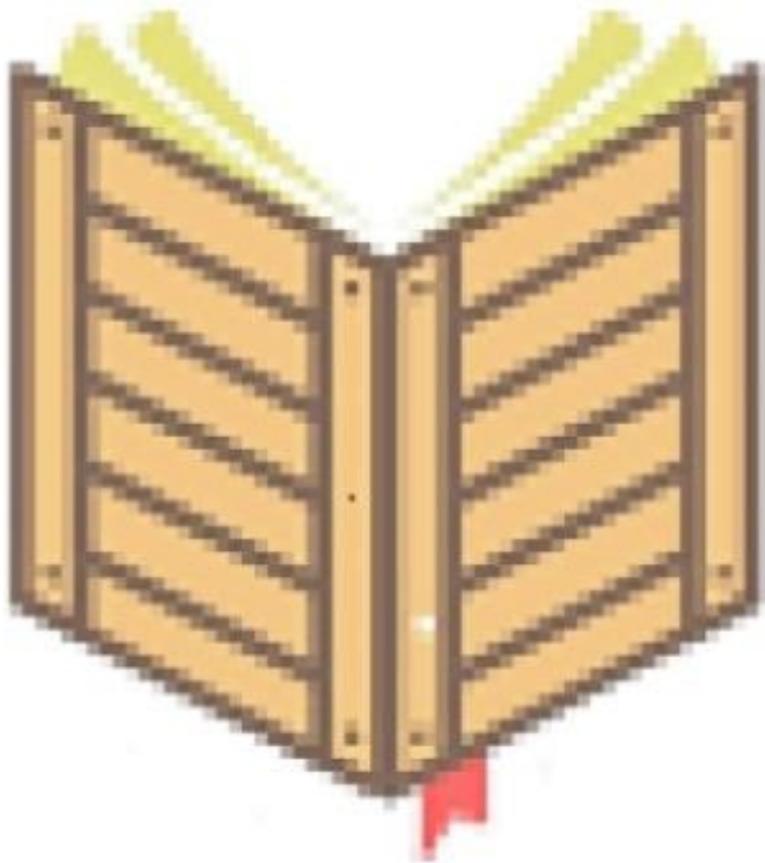
Me: I'm not sure of who's going and not going Singela.



NOVELSGURU.COM

We'll dound when we are in the kitchen. Mcebisi: take the my SUV babe you call all go.

Me: Ok babe. (when we walk into the kitchen Sibahle was just dishing up.) Morning family Lwanele: Morning sis Morning bhuti



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sibahle: Sit

guys lets eats.

Mcebisi:

Where's dad?

Mrs MKhize: He left early. He took your aunt and cousins back to Ntuzuma. Mcebisi: I see.

Mrs Mkhize: Lina you are glowing baby did you sleep well?

Me: I slept well ma (I say blushing with my husband brushing my thigh under the table.)

Mrs Mkhize: I'm glad. (just then there was a knock on the door) I'll go see who it is. (she leave us there and goes to check. She come back and I can't believe my eyes. I thought she left with the others yesterday.)

Me: Gogo Nomzamo I though you left yesterday.

Nomzamo: I couldn't leave without giving you guys your wedding gift. (she puts her hand in her small skin bag and takes out two bacelets made from beautiful beads.)

CHAPTER 141  
Lina Mcebisi; your marriage has unsettled a lot of people it

has created a lot of enemies for you. You need to stand by each other. You must never doubt each other's love and most importantly you must always trust each other.

You will be happy but you have a lot challenges along the

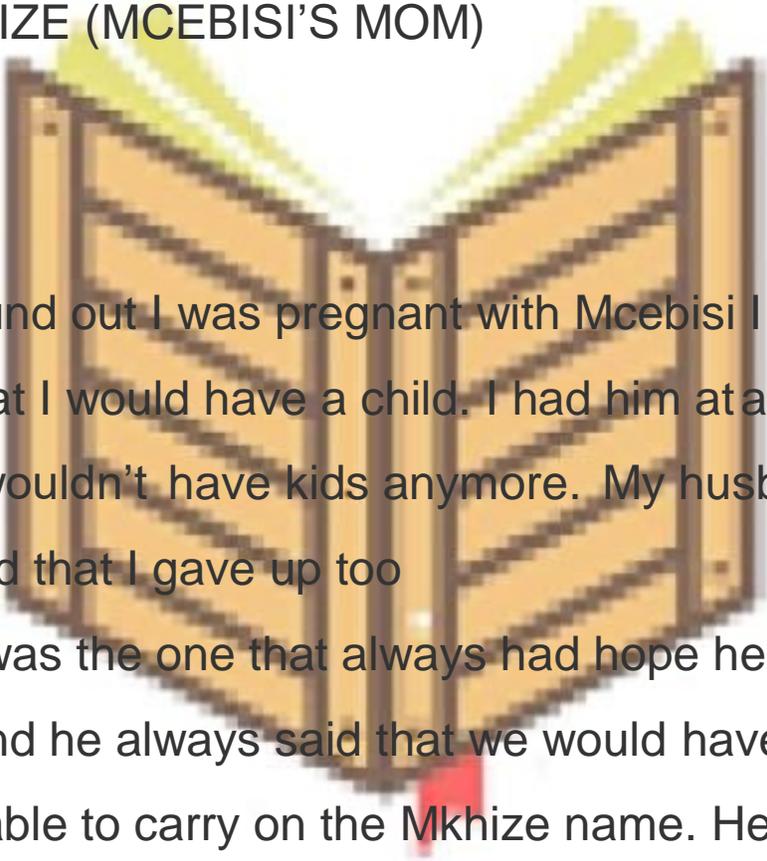
way that you have to deal with.

## STILL MONDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

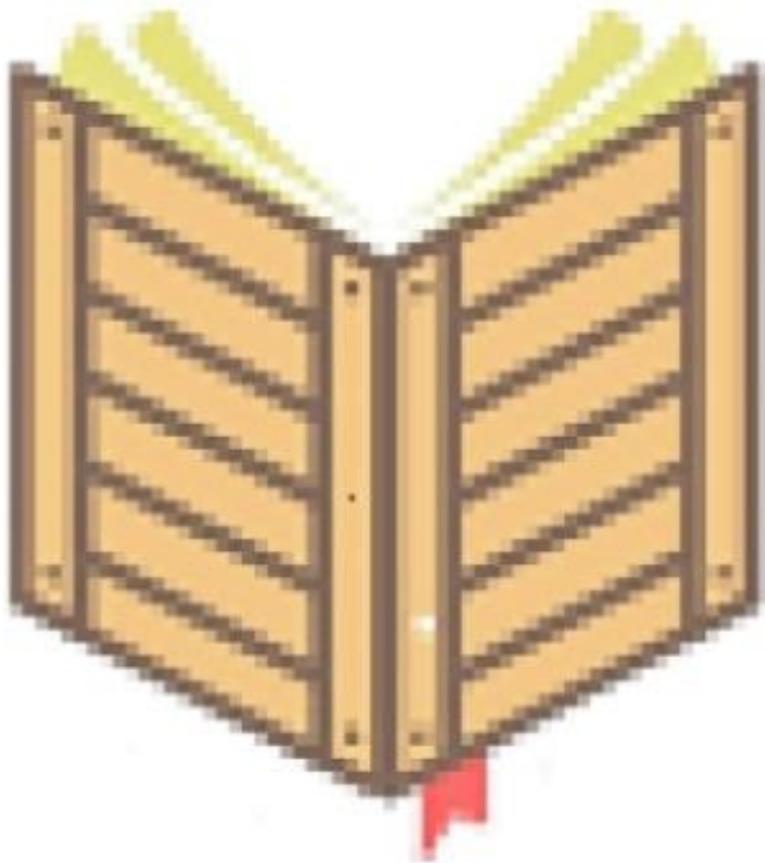
### MRS MKHIZE (MCEBISI'S MOM)

\*  
\*  
\*



When I found out I was pregnant with Mcebisi I never thought that I would have a child. I had him at an age I thought I wouldn't have kids anymore. My husband always said that I gave up too soon. He was the one that always had hope he never gave up and he always said that we would have sons that would be able to carry on the Mkhize name. He was right. We were blessed with our one and only son and now he is married and he will carry on the Mkhize name just as his father said long ago. We raised our son here and he has always been different from other local kids. He has always been driven and focused. Apart from that He was just like

other boys. He liked girls a lot I never thought he would get married especially after one of his friends betrayed him he even stopped having friends because of that betrayal and he seemed happy with his decision. He never had a girl



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

that he would call a girlfriend. We never really put pressure on him about having a steady girlfriend and all. I must say I was surprised when he wanted to introduce Lina to us and told us that she is the girl that he wants to marry and now my son is a married man.

I've always had problems with my neighbour. She is a single a mother her husband left her years ago and only God knows why. She never talks about it and I never pry into her business. She irritates me though. She has always had this idea that our kids would get married one day and we would be this one big family. I know that the only reason she wants that is because she thinks we have money. We are not rich but we are able to live a comfortable life and be able to do the things we love doing and when Mcebisi started working he spoils us rotten. He even had our house renovated. This woman would always say that her daughter would be well taken care of. I don't understand why this woman can't see that my son never looked at her daughter that way. The girl is also the type of girl that wants a man to do everything for her she is not driven she doesn't have dreams of her own. My son never

had interest in that type of woman. He said that even if his woman wants to be a housewife she must have something to keep her busy like a small business or something.

I'm glad my son met Lina. He seems to be comfortable with his inlaws and they have accepted him as their son. He seems to be very close with Lina's older brother Khaya. They seem inseparable. It was wonderful to watch them working together during the wedding preparations laughing together. My has something that he never had and I think it's something he has always longed for and that's siblings. My son walks in the kitchen while I am making myself some tea.

Mcebisi: Ma why are you sitting here alone where are the girls?

Me: they took a walk to the spazza shop. We forgot to buy bread when we went shopping. Mcebisi: I see.

Are you ok though? You see very distant with your thoughts

Me: I'm ok baby just thinking and realising how happy and

comfortable you are with your in laws. (just then there's a knock on the door and Sne and her mom walk in)

Sne: Hello (she is carrying plates in her hands) How are you?

Me: we are fine sisi. What can I do for you? (I have to do the talking since my son decided that he won't say a word.)

Sne's Mom: MaMkhize I brought the plates that I took home yesterday. Me:

Thank you MaKhumalo.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

MaKhumalo: why are you making tea for yourself when you have a daughter in law that can do it for you? If you had agreed to my request Sne would be making you tea now and you would be just relaxing.

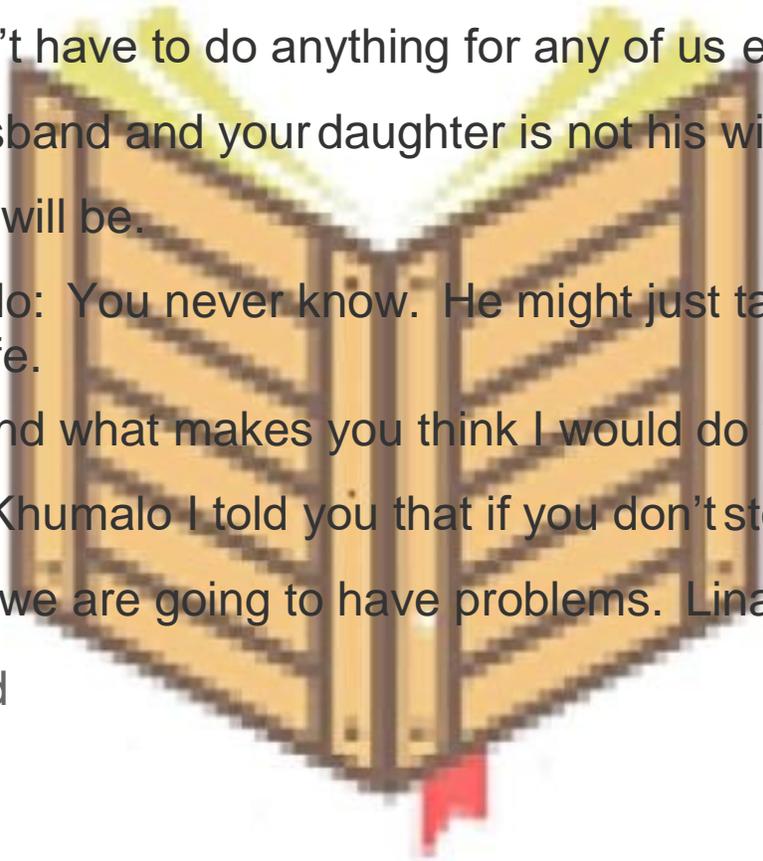
Me: My daughter is not a slave in this house and she is not married to me she is married to my son. She is free she doesn't have to do anything for any of us except for her husband and your daughter is not his wife and she never will be.

MaKhumalo: You never know. He might just take her as a second wife.

Mcebisi: and what makes you think I would do that?

Listen MaKhumalo I told you that if you don't stop with this nonsense we are going to have problems. Lina is my wife

Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

you and your daughter will respect that and you will respect her as my wife. I will not have you terrorising her. (Lina and her sisters walk in) You guys are back

Lwanele: yes Bhuti. Can you take us to your favourite spot later on to watch the sunset.

Mcebisi: come here (she goes to him and stands between his legs.) how do you know about that? Lisakhanya: Lina told us about it and she says it's beautiful.

Sibahle: I smell trash

Lina: Khabazela I thought you took the trash out.

Mcebisi: I did babe you know I did but some how the bin keeps feeling up.

Lwanele: in that case we should keep the bin outside.

Mcebisi: I try but somehow it finds it's way back in to the house.

Zenande: so basically it's like a pest. Maybe we should call the pest control since the municipality is not doing the job with the trash. Maybe the pest control will do better with the pests. (I like these girls they really don't like Sne.)

Lisakhanya: We has

guests Hello Sne:

Hi how are you?

Lisa: fine thanks. Ma would you like some tea?

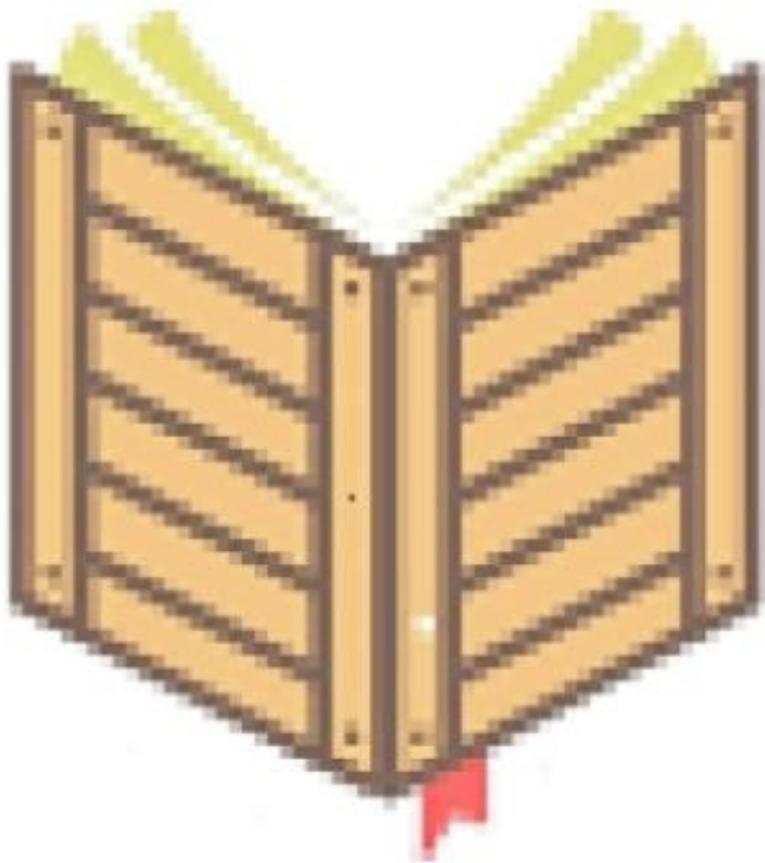
Me: it's ok sweetie I already made for myself. You can just give me a slice of cake. (they completely ignore Sne and her mom to them it's like they are not in the room. Lina walks over to her husband and kisses his cheek.))

Lina: Would you like anything Khabazela?

Mcebisi: A slice of cake would be nice MaMkhize. (he

is calling her that on purpose) MaKhumalo: let us

leave we'll talk soon makhelwane (neighbour)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sne: I'm going to stay a bit.

Sibahle: No you won't thanks for stepping by.

Me: yes thank you for stepping by MaKhumalo. We'll see you tomorrow plus my son is going out with the girls soon.

Lwanele: Lona says it's the most beautiful sunset BhutiMcebisi: It is. You will see for yourself.

\*

\*

\*

LW

AZI

\*

\*

\*

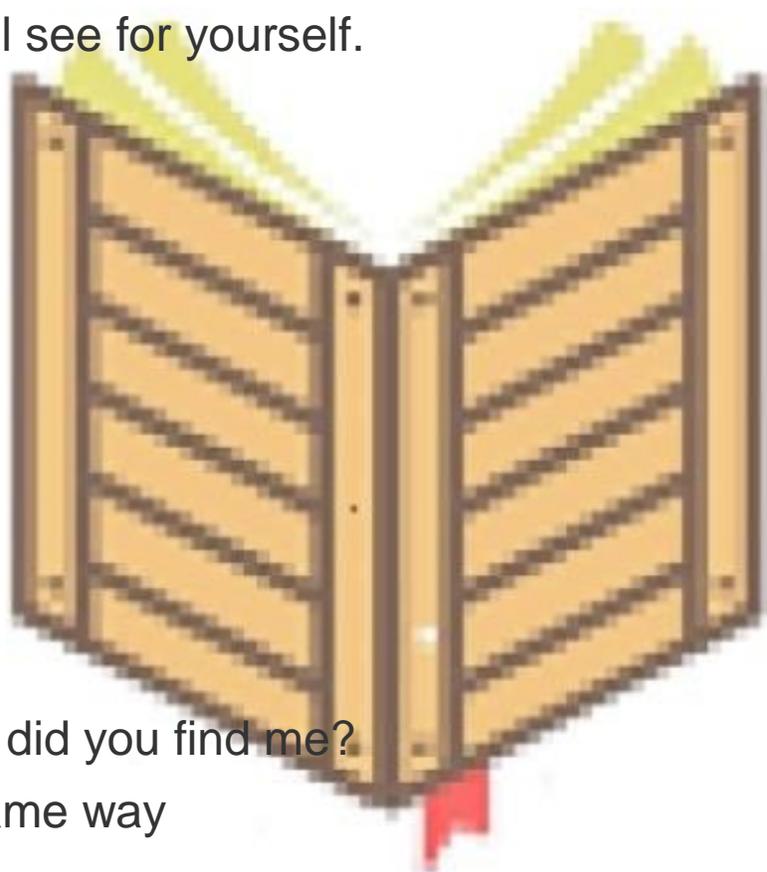
Him: How did you find me?

Me: the same way

you found me. Him:

what do you want?

Me: I should be asking that question. You are the one that was looking for me. Him: what are you going to do with that are you going to shoot me?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: that

depends

H'im: On

what?

Me: on your answers to

my questions. Him:

what questions are

those?

Me: what do you

want from me? Him:

forgiveness

Me: and you think you deserve it?

Him: No I don't but at least I know when I die I would

die knowing I tried to make amends. Me: Why why

did you do it?

Him: Honestly I don't know. I guess the drugs and the

alcohol enhance who I really was at that time.

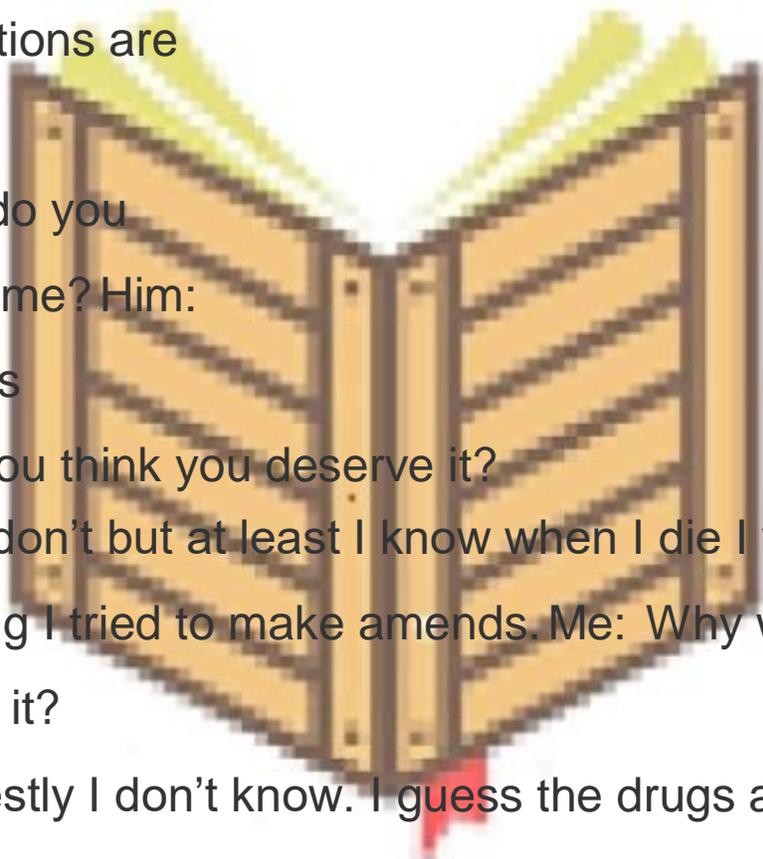
Me: so you believe you

have changed? Him: I'd

like to believe that.

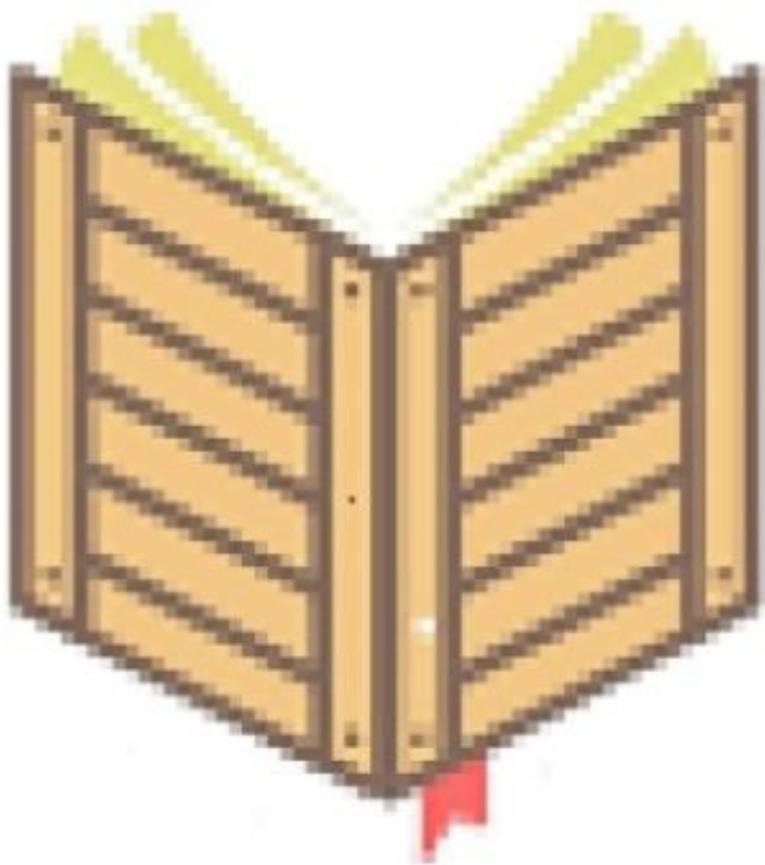
ME: do you want to know why

I am here today? Him: why



NOVELSGURU.COM

are you here?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I am here because I am tired of living in fear of you. I'm tired of my nightmares. I'm tired of waking up in the middle of the night with the thoughts that you might come back and hurt me again. My therapist said I should face my fears and I am doing that today. I wish it was you who died instead of her at least that way I know I would have lived a happy life. I've always lived in fear that you would find me and drag me back home but you didn't. I am glad that my uncle stayed true to his word and thanks to him and his wife the love they gave me and showed me kept me going and it still does.

You are nothing to me. At this moment you don't exist. I just never realised that earlier on. I don't need you in my life. My uncle is still alive and he is still there for me. I am going to forgive you but I want nothing to do with you. I am not going to kill you because death would be an easy escape for what you put me through. I want you to live with it for the rest of your life. I want it to haunt you every day. I want it to haunt you more like there's no tomorrow.

Him: You can't mean that Lwazi?

Me: I mean every word of it. You are dead to me Don't try to talk your way out of it this time. You are dead to me.

Don't call me don't text me don't do anything to try and contact me. God knows I hate you enough to kill you but I won't karma will deal with you.

Him: I hear you and I don't blame you.

This is something that I had to do. I had to face him. at first I was scared But I realised that I was giving him power. Life has not been easy for me because of everything that's going on. At least now I know I can move on with my life

Him: I know that what I did to you was wrong in so many levels and it unforgivable. I know your mother died because of me and right now there is nothing I can do to bring her back. All I can hope for is that you will meet her one day in heaven. I may wish for death right now but you are

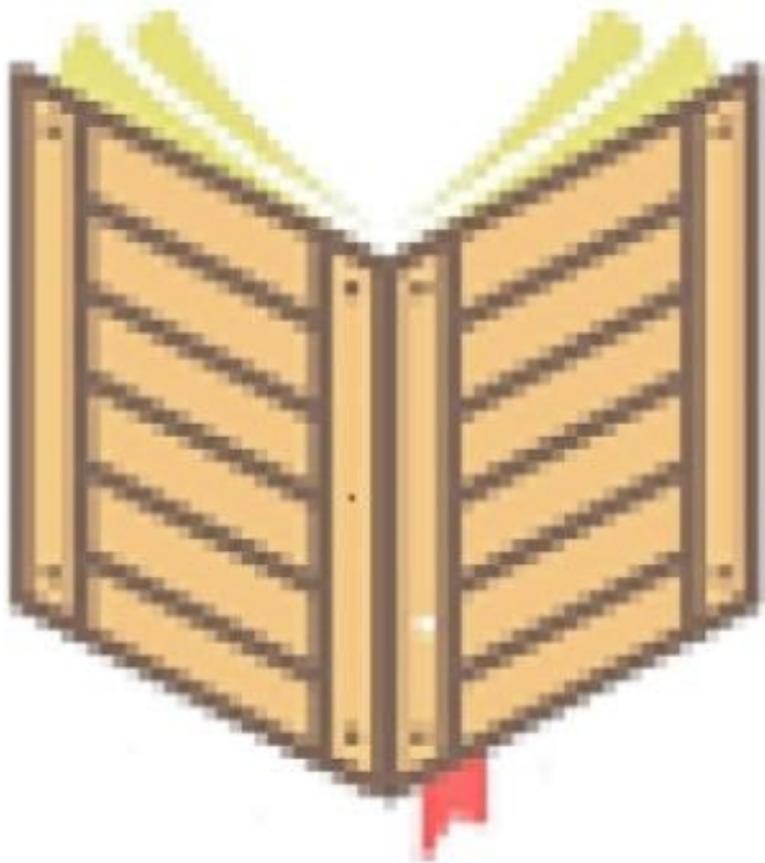
right. Death would be an easy escape . for what it's worth I am truly sorry for what I put you true and I am grateful that you decided to chill with us a bit

(I get up putting my gun and breathing a little. I am grateful for Thando I am grateful that she is a part of my

life. Lately I don't know how I would have managed without her. She is an awesome woman and I intend to marry her soon.)

## CHAPTER 142

TUESDAY



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

\*

\*

\*

MRS MKHIZE

\*

\*

\*

Me: Hello Makhumalo. (I never liked coming to this house. There's just too much negative energy.

MaKhumalo: Busi this is a surprise. Please sit. I'll ask Sne to make us some tea. Me: No need for that. I am fine. Thank you.

MaKhumalo: alright then. What can I do for you?

Me: MaKhumalo we've been neighbours for a very long time. We've never been the best of friends but we've always helped you when you needed the help and you've never really shown any appreciation of that instead you always wanted more which I found very unsettling about you hence we were never close. We understood when your husband left it was a difficult time for you but you managed to get on your feet and take care of yourself and your daughter and your son. Still that was not enough. You wanted to marry your daughter off to my son because you knew she would be well taken care of which is the reason why your son is hardly ever home.

What you don't seem to understand is that my son was never

interested in your daughter that way maybe you do see it and understand but you refuse to comprehend it. MaKhumalo I understand that you want your daughter to be married to a man who has money and that man is not my son and it never will be not even as his second wife. My son will never take a second wife he is not a polygamous man never was and never will be.

MaKhumalo: but Busi..... (I don't let her finish)

Me: there are no buts about what I am saying MaKhumalo. You and Sne need to leave my son alone. I will not tolerate this behaviour. When my son is not here you hardly ever go over to my house but when Mcebisi is home you are at my house for everyday that he is around and your daughter too. I want you to keep things the same way as they are when my son is not here. I don't want you coming over to my house the way you are right now. Mcebisi is married now and he loves that girl very much he will do anything to protect her. Do not get on the wrong side

of him because if you do there is nothing I can do for you.

Mcebisi will kill for that girl. (Sne walks in)

Sne: hello ma how are you?

Me: I'm ok Sne sit with us you also need to hear what I have to say. MaKhumalo: She doesn't have to. I'll tell her myself. Sne you can go.

Me: Sne sit down. MaKhumalo she needs to hear this from me and understand the seriousness of it.

Sne you need to stop running after my son. We both know that you don't love my son and you never did. All you are interested in is his money. It stops today. Go find yourself a sugar daddy somewhere or better yet find yourself a job. I don't want to see you at my house again for no reason. You will not go to my house asking to see my son. He is a married man now and you will not disrespect my daughter like that or any way for that matter. And MaKhumalo you need to listen to me because you won't like it if I involve my husband in this and most definitely don't want my in laws involved because from what I have heard they are not be messed with. Just like them I won't let you come between my children. Leave them alone. Stay away from them. My son is happy and I'll be damned if I let you people take that happiness away from him from them. I promise you if you try anything to come between them and I mean anything I will

personally make you regret the day you were born both of you. I hope we understand each other. Sne: yebo Ma.

MaKhumalo: I hear you.

Me: understand this MaKhumalo in as much as you would do anything to protect Sne I will do anything to protect my son and my daughter in law. Take this as a warning. (I stand up and leave before they can say anything else. I also cannot stand being in this house. The energy is too heavy and not clean.)

\*

\*

\*

QHA

WE

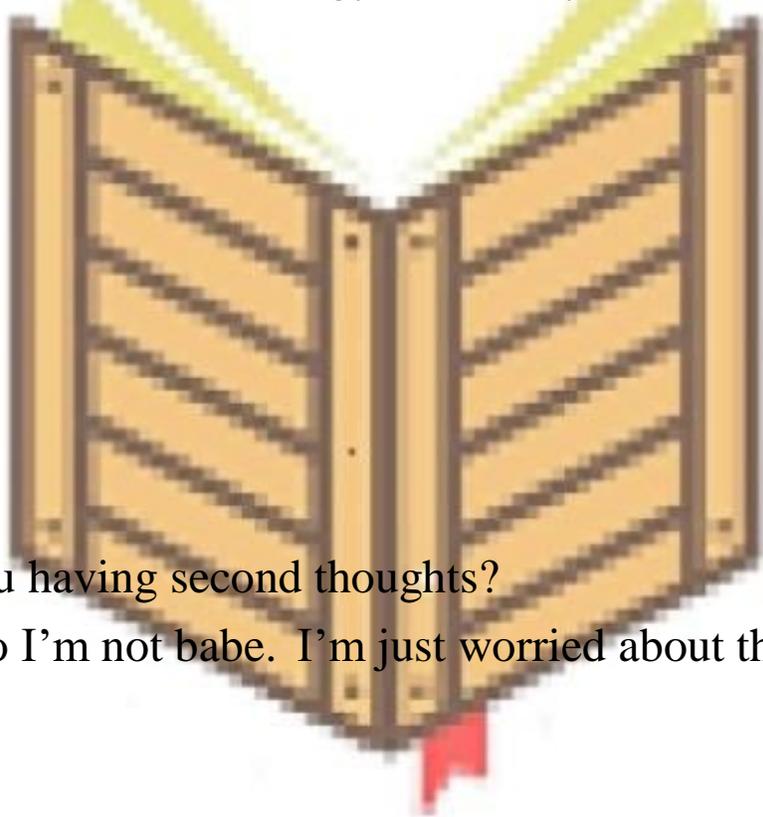
\*

\*

\*

Me: are you having second thoughts?

Khanyi: No I'm not babe. I'm just worried about their reaction.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: they will be shocked yes but they will be happy as well so don't stress too much about it. Come here (I make her sit on top of me wrapping her legs around my waist and kiss her passionately then go down to her neck and I unwrap the towel from her body leaving her naked. I play with breasts gently squeezing them. She leans her body back giving me full access to her chest. I move my lips down to her breasts and start sucking on them at the same time squeezing them a little harder than usual and she lets out moan telling me that she liked what I just did. I continue doing that for a while adding a bit of bite on her nipples every now and again. I stop and get up from the couch and put her body against the wall while kissing her with her arms wrapped around my neck her fingers playing around at the back of my neck and the back of my head. This is her favourite position she has always loved it when I carry her like this and my dick is as hard as anything right now. I quickly drop my pants and my underwear at the same time while she tightly holds on to me and kissing me for dear life. I put my hands back on her ass grabbing making sure I hold her in place.

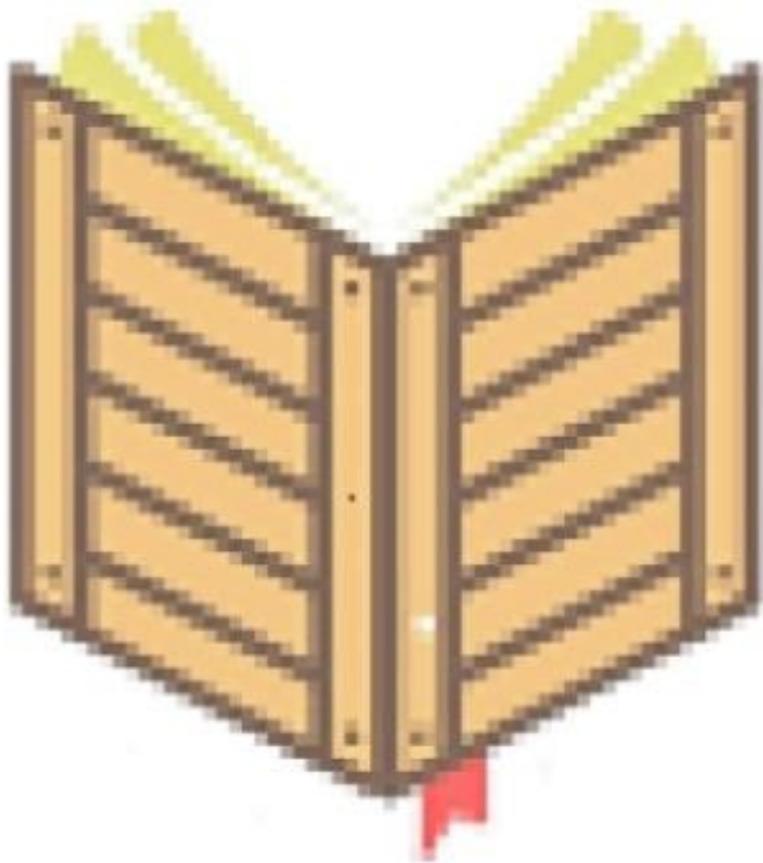
Me: Unhook your legs baby (she does as I tell her and I open her legs wider and slowly insert my tip in her warm (she does as I tell her and I open her legs wider and slowly insert my tip in her warm wet cookie. I do that a few time before I gently push

all of me in her making her gasp for air gently pounding in her slowly going in and out of her and pushing myself in deeper with each stroke. She tightens her arms around my neck pulling me closer to her making me bury my face in her neck while talking dirty in my ear. This woman really know how to drive me

crazy. I push myself in even deeper and harder and up my pace and she reaches her orgasm and when she is done I let her breath a little and walk over to the side of the couch I pull out and put her on the floor and make her bend over the armrest of the couch and spread her legs. I leave her like that and walk to my closet and grab a tie. She is still in that position. I position myself behind her between her legs. I take her hands behind her back and bind them using my tie. I push myself in and this time I am not so gentle and she lets out a soft scream. I continue pounding in her until she reaches her orgasm again.

I slowly pull out and untie her and lay her on her back on the bed towards the edge. I lift her hips to match the height of mine and have her legs on my shoulders and slowly penetrate not fully though moving inside her back and forth. I hear her whispering curses while grabbing onto the sheets and I up my pace. I slightly stand at an angle move her legs from my shoulders holding them at the back of knees opening them wide and fully go in and deeper and I move faster. She has her eyes

closed her breathing is getting heavier she is holding onto the side of my



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

arms very tight I know her orgasm is about to come. As I move inside her hitting every corner of her cookie she squeezes my shaft with her cookie and that drives me to the edge. I up my pace again and we both lose it. She opens her eyes and looks into mine as we both climax.

Khanyi: I love you. (I pull out and move her up on the bed I lay her on her side and insert myself again. we just lie there facing each other he leg over hip she is breathing into my neck playing with her fingers on my back. The first time I made love to her I could never understand why she never wanted me to pull out afterwards but now I do. I got to understand that she is having a silent conversation the way she touches my body the soft kisses on my neck and my chest the way she touches the side of face and play with my short beared. That's love right there that's intimacy that's our pillow talk. At times she even falls asleep while I'm inside her and she'll whisper an "I love you" here and there. This I have never experienced with anyone and I've gotten used to it and I love every moment of it ...

Khanyi: They are going to be angry with us you know that especially Lwazi Sizwe and Bandile. Me: I know but we can handle them and they will be ok.

Khanyi: I can imagine Lwazi's reaction right now your brother has too much drama.

Me: I know. He has always been like that. I'm just glad he is also finally settling down and wanting to have kids. He never

wanted to have kids because of what happened. Thando really brings out the best in him.

Khanyi: she definitely does. (she starts moving slowly and that makes my shaft grow inside her. She brings my face to hers and kisses me) I can never have enough of you.

Me: Is that so My Queen ( I flip her to lie on her back while I'm inside and automatically she wraps her legs around my waist using them to push me deeper inside her. I love it when she does that. She puts her arms around my neck and brings me to her face for a kiss and instructs to move. I smile looking at her eyes that begging me to make love to her.)

Me: I swear you are a sex addict.

Khanyi: You made me one. (with that said I move in for a kiss and made love to my woman.)

## CHAPTER 143

STILL TUESDAY

\*

\*

\*

ANEL

ISA

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

Life has been good to me. Sizwe has been a great man in my life and a great father to our daughter. My daughter spends a lot of time with her siblings at Khanyi's house even tonight she is there. Sizwe wanted us to go out for dinner basically it's date night. When I look at him I think of how stupid I was to break up with him in the first place. If I had known if I wasn't so blinded but then again it is what it is. If most people new my story with Sizwe they would judge me for sure. I love this man with all that I am he makes me happy he allows me to be me. He loves my kids and gets along very well with them and they love him.

My relationship with my kids has improved a lot and I am happy. I don't think it will ever get to what they have with Khanyi and I don't blame them for that. I was never the mother they needed me to be from the word go but I'm happy with the progress that we have made and hopefully it will keep getting better. My relationship with Khanyi is also great. It doesn't have that awkwardness it had when we started out. I have learned a lot from her especially when it comes to forgiveness. Khanyi really believes in forgiving even if that person doesn't deserve to be forgiven. She always says that when you forgive you are doing it for yourself and for the other person. In my case I had

to learn to forgive myself for my wrong doings accept that I can change what has been done but learn from it which is exactly what I am doing learning from my mistakes and doing things differently with Olu and enjoying being a mother again. Being around this family has taught me to love myself to appreciate what I have. This family is the best thing ever.

Sizwe: Babe are you ready? Me:

yes I am. We can

go. Sizwe: You

look beautiful.

Me: thank you. Where are we going ?

Sizwe: We are going to Amici Friends your favourite restaurant.

Me: what's the occasion Sizwe? You've been acting very strange lately don't think I haven't noticed.

Sizwe: I wouldn't dare think that. (he drives off to our destination)

Me: so you are not denying that you have been hiding something from me? Sizwe: I do have a

surprise for you. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Sizwe you know I don't like surprises.

Sizwe: it's funny how you keep saying that and yet you still enjoy your surprises. Me: but I still don't like surprises.

Sizwe: We are here. (He gets out and opens the door for me. As I get out of the car he holds my hand. I love this restaurant. I love the chilled out vibe here. As we walk in the waiter directs us to a reserved table at the far corner of the restaurant and it's private. The tables next to our table are empty. He pulls out the chair for me to sit. This area is beautifully decorated. Wow this man went all out for this date.)

Me: this is beautiful

Sizwe: well I am glad you like it. (the waiter comes back with a bottle of champagne placed in a ice bucket and leaves. Sizwe takes the bottle opens it and pours for us. He has been smiling non stop since we got here. I wonder what is he up to?)

Me: I spoke to Khanyi about funding my business idea babe since she is funding small local businesses.

Sizwe: have you given her the business plan?

Me: yes I have. She said she would look it over and get back to me. (the waiter comes back and he is bringing our food but I don't remember giving him an order for food.)

Sizwe: I pre ordered the food before we came here.

Me: Oh ok. (this is fun. We actually haven't done something like this since Olu has been born.) Sizwe: Anelisa our relationship began like any other normal relationship but in between shit happened

Sponsored

we got through it. It was not an easy journey and today we are here. We have been through a lot and I am mostly thankful that you don't hold what I did to you against me. I am happy that in the mist of it all we were able to find each other again and fall in love. I have come to believe that it is true what they say about love. That you find love in the most unexpected places and from the most unexpected place. I never thought I would be here today. I love you Ma ka Olu I love you so much and I don't want to have a life without you. I want you to bear my last name I want you to be my wife my life partner my best friend my everything. Will you marry me?

Me: Oh Sizwe this is what you have been planning the whole of last week? Sziwe: Yes it is.

Me: Yes my love. Yes I'll marry you. (he moves closer to me and kisses me.)

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

\*

SIP

HO:

\*

\*

\*

Sindy has been doing great. She has not been in touch with her mother ever since she moved here. Durban has been good to her. She now has a job interview lined up for her next week as a PA and it's very good money. Her relationship with her father has been good they are growing closer everyday and with her sibling too. She finally has the family that she has longed for and she is really doing well for herself. She has also become comfortable now to be around Khanyi's family. We now spend more time with them and what I like is that they never pushed they understood that she was not ready.

Sindy: Babe I need a dress for the dinner party. Did Khanyi say what the dinner is party and why we have to be all formal?

Me: No she didn't. She just said it's a dinner party and it's a black tie.. Only God knows what's going on with those two  
Sindy: Now I have to go shopping for a dress.

Me: Sindy you have so dresses in your closet. Why don't you choose one from your closet. Sindy: I don't have formal

dresses in my closet Siphho.

Me: Mhhhhh I see.

Sindy: So can we go shopping for my dress please tomorrow at lunch time

Me: No Sindy. You can go on your own. You know how you get when you are shopping besides Bandile has asked me to join him and Lwazi for lunch tomorrow.

Sindy: You are such a bore.

Me: I know babe. What I like about this whole situation is that you know your man will do everything and anything for you except going shopping with you.

Sindy: I hate you

Me: tough luck babe I am here to stay. (my phone rings ) Hello

Her: How are you?

Me: What do you want?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: why are you so cold?

Me: I asked you what you want.

Her: we need to talk and we need to talk face to face.

Me: that's not going to happen. Whatever you have to say you can say it now. Her: Siphon how long are you going to treat me like this?

Me: You are my sister and you betrayed me in the worst possible way. So forgive me for not being interested in anything that involves you. I have to go. I would appreciate it if you don't call again. (I hand up.)

Sindy: are you ok?

Me: I'm ok baby. I won't let her ruin my day. Sindy: did she say what she wanted?

Me: I did give her a chance to explain herself.

Sindy: one day you are going to have to get over what she did. Me: I know babe.

I'm just not ready to face her.

Sindy: it's ok baby but to hold on to hate for too long it will destroy you. Me: thank you (I say

kissing her)

Sindy: for what?

Me: for loving me and being here for me. Sindy: there no place I'd rather be at.

Me: I love you

\*

\*

\*

LINAMA

NDLA

\*

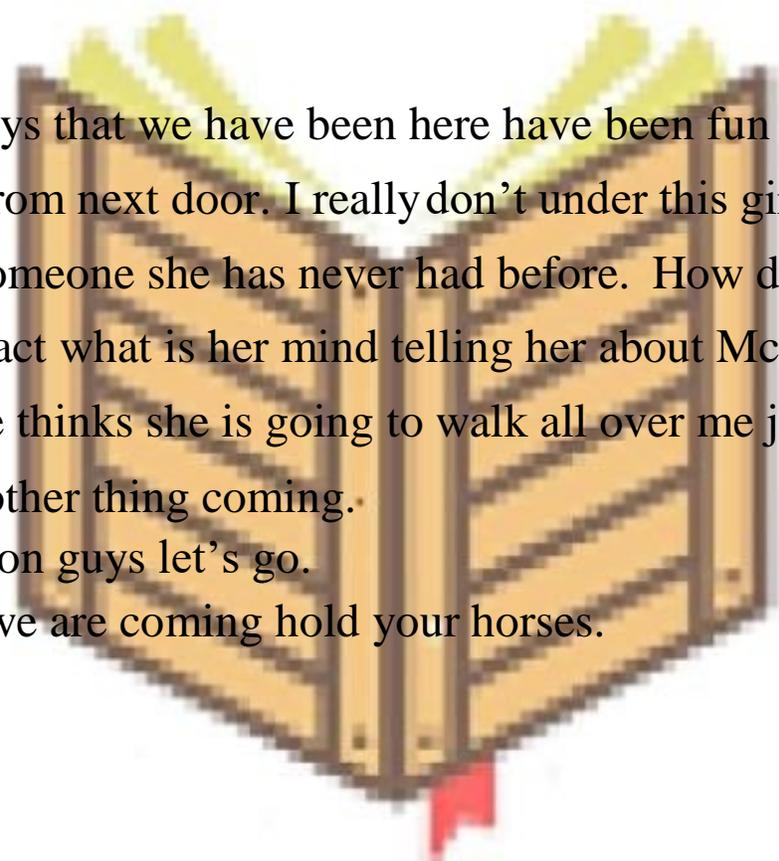
\*

\*

The few days that we have been here have been fun except for the witch from next door. I really don't understand this girl. How can she want someone she has never had before. How does that work? In fact what is her mind telling her about Mcebisi. Then again if she thinks she is going to walk all over me just like that she has another thing coming.

Me: come on guys let's go.

Lwanele: we are coming hold your horses.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: You've been saying that for the past five minutes. Mcebisi: what are they busy doing?

Me: I really don't know babe and we are going to be late for the movie. Lisakhanya: we are here. We can go.

Mcebisi: are you sure you guys don't want me to come with you Zenande: You can come with us. It will be more fun.

Me: Babe you promised I would have tonight with my sisters. Mcebisi: Ok fine you can go. (He kisses me and we leave.)

We decided to go to Watercrest Mall. We got there bought our movie tickets and our snacks. Sne: Wow the new Mrs Mkhize is out and about

Sibahle: what's it to you if she is.

Sne: oh Nothing. You really are spending his money.

Me: Not that it's any of your business but today I am spending my own money. Yes I do spend his money on important things that will benefit the both of us and after all I am his wife.

Sibahle: Look Sne none of us here like you for obvious reasons. I would suggest that you stop embarrassing yourself like this. When you see us in public rather pretend that you 't know us.

Lwanele: it will save you the

trouble of talking to us. Sne: You think you are better than me nhe

Me: Oh but I am darling. Look we don't have time for this. Goodbye Sne. Come guys let's go or else we'll be late.

Lwanele: why does she hate you so much? Me: Because I am married to Mcebisi

Lwanelw: so she wanted to be the one Me: Yes baby she did.

Sibahle: she accept that Mcebisi doesn't want her other wise she is going to be in trouble.

## CHAPTER 144

WEDNESDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

LINAMA

NDLA

\*  
\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

We are going back home soon and before we go home I need to deal with this Sne chick. She thinks she can walk all over me nje just like that. She needs to learn that I am my mother's daughter.

Sibahle: What's wrong you seem far away.

Me: I was just thinking about what I need to do to Sne.

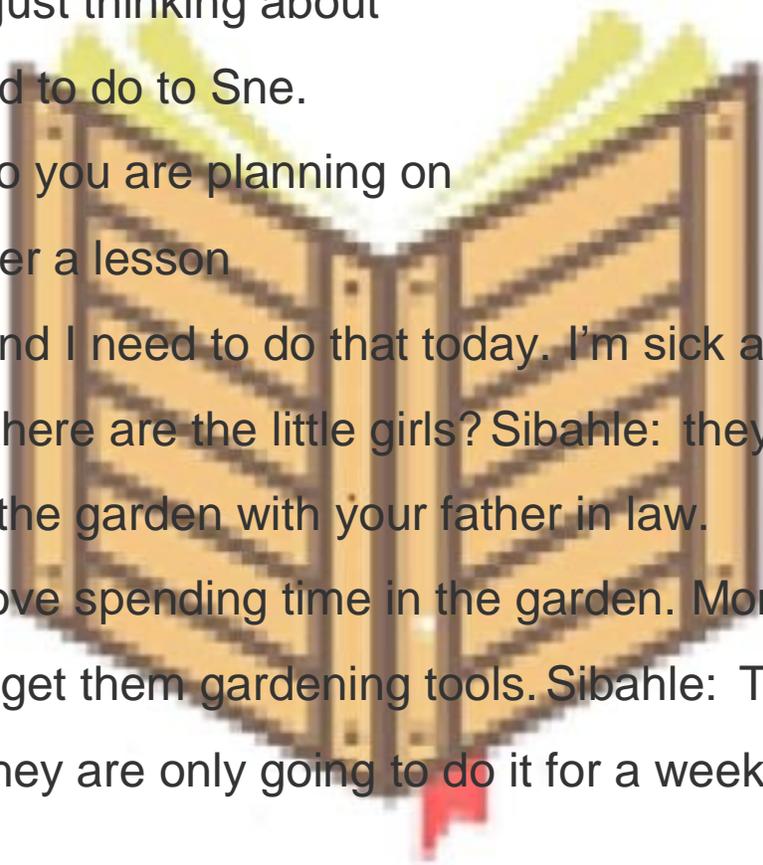
Sibahle: so you are planning on teaching her a lesson

ME: Yes and I need to do that today. I'm sick and tired of this girl. Where are the little girls? Sibahle: they are outside in the garden with your father in law.

Me: they love spending time in the garden. Mom is going to have to get them gardening tools. Sibahle: Tell me about it. they are only going to do it for a week when we get home.

Me: She'll just have to deal with it. Do me a favour dear please call Sne for me and bring her to the room outside the one next to ours. (as she walks out my husband walks in.)

Mcebisi: My wife



NOVELSGURL.COM

ME: My husband (he walks over and kisses me.) Mcebisi: What's wrong you are pre occupied

ME: I am going to deal with this girl next door. We saw her yesterday at the mall when we went to the movies. She always has something to say and she needs to know her place now. I've been letting her behaviour slide for too long. Don't try to stop me

Mcebisi: I am not going to stop you baby but I do want to know what you are going to do. Me: Nothing much my love. We just going to talk.

Mcebisi: You sound just like your mother and Khaya. Talking is never just talking. Me: we are our mother's kids. (Sibahle walked in)

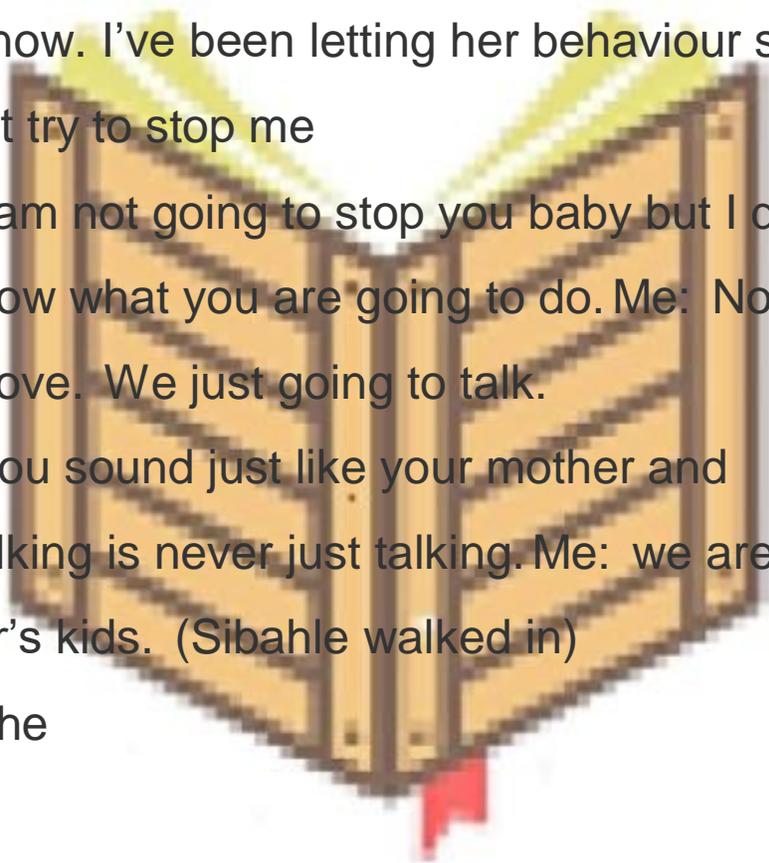
Sibahle: She is here.

Mcebisi: who is here?

Sibahle:

Sne Mcebisi: mhhh I see.

Me: I'll see you later my love. (I kiss him and walk out with



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

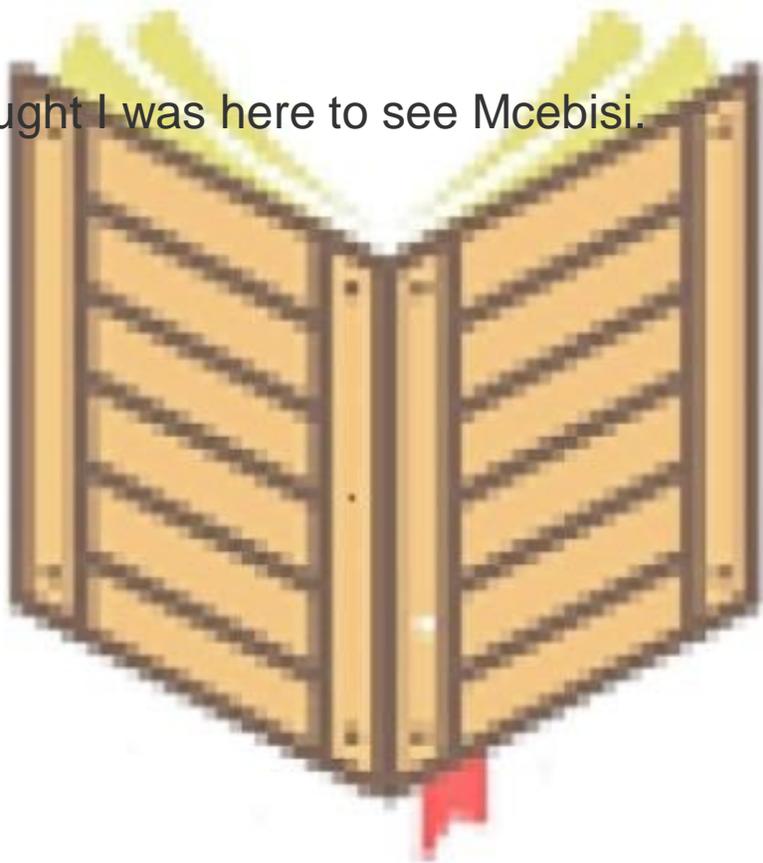
Sibahle. She was sitting on the chair that was in there she looked so relaxed and happy. When she saw me her look changed to disappointment)

Me: What did you say to her to make come here?

Sibahle: I told her that bhuti wants to see her and she couldn't wait to come here. Me: Mhhhh I see.

Hello Sne

Sne: I thought I was here to see Mcebisi.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: Well you thought wrong. (She got up and tried to walk out.) Sit down Sinethemba. You and I we are going to talk.

Sne: We have nothing to talk about.

Me: Oh but we do darling. I want you to understand a few things about this situation. I want you to understand that if Mcebisi wanted you you would be here. I want you to understand that I am not going to let you walk all over me and talk to me any way you please.

Sne: I don't owe you anything sisi. I don't have to do anything for you. (I slap her so hard she nearly fell off the chair. She turns looking at me holding the side of her face.) You slapped me.

Me: I'll do more if you carry on with this little attitude of yours. Mcebisi is my husband and mine alone. I love him and he loves me. I will not have the likes of you come between us. You see Sne in the time that Mcebisi and I have know each other we have been through a lot we have been there for each at all times and trash like you thinks you can break us up. You are a very stupid girl and your actions are going to get you into trouble. You are going to be in such deep trouble that you won't be able to

get out. And by deep trouble I mean my entire family and you don't want that. Stop barking up the wrong tree Sne. You can do whatever you to get a man carry on and be a gold digger that you are but just stay away from my husband.

Sne: You have no idea who you are dealing with. I am ..... (I didn't let her finish. I slapped her again and again. I took out the belt that I had with me and started belting her. what amazes me is that she has such a big mouth and she can't even fine back.

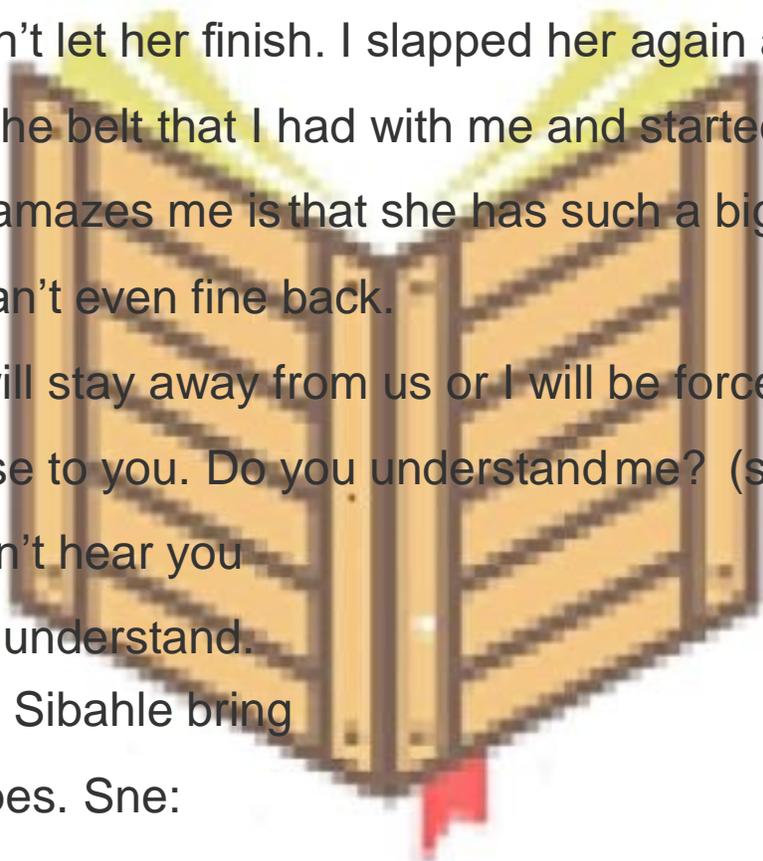
Me: You will stay away from us or I will be forced to do much worse to you. Do you understand me? (she nods) I can't hear you

Sne: yes I understand.

Me: Good. Sibahle bring me the ropes. Sne:

what are you going to do with ropes.

Me: Oh I am going to tie you up here for a few hours just to give you an idea of what will happen if you and your mother carry on with this nonsense of yours. I won't do anything to your mother if she doesn't behave you will be



NOVELSGURU.COM

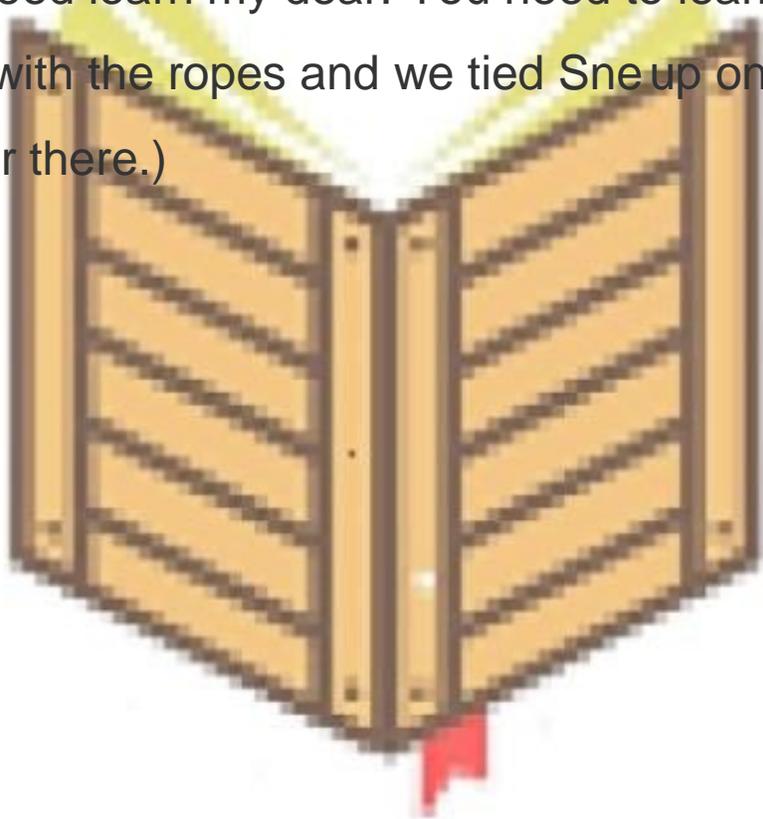
punished for her behaviour.

Sne: I promise we'll stop

Sponsored

please don't tie me up here please.

Me: You need learn my dear. You need to learn. (Sibahle walked in with the ropes and we tied Sne up on the chair and left her there.)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

\*

\*

\*

LW

AZI

\*

\*

\*

Me: I went to

see him

Qhawe:

who?

Me: My father I went to see him. It took everything in me not to kill him. I had my gun with me and it took everything in me not to shoot him. I chose to forgive him

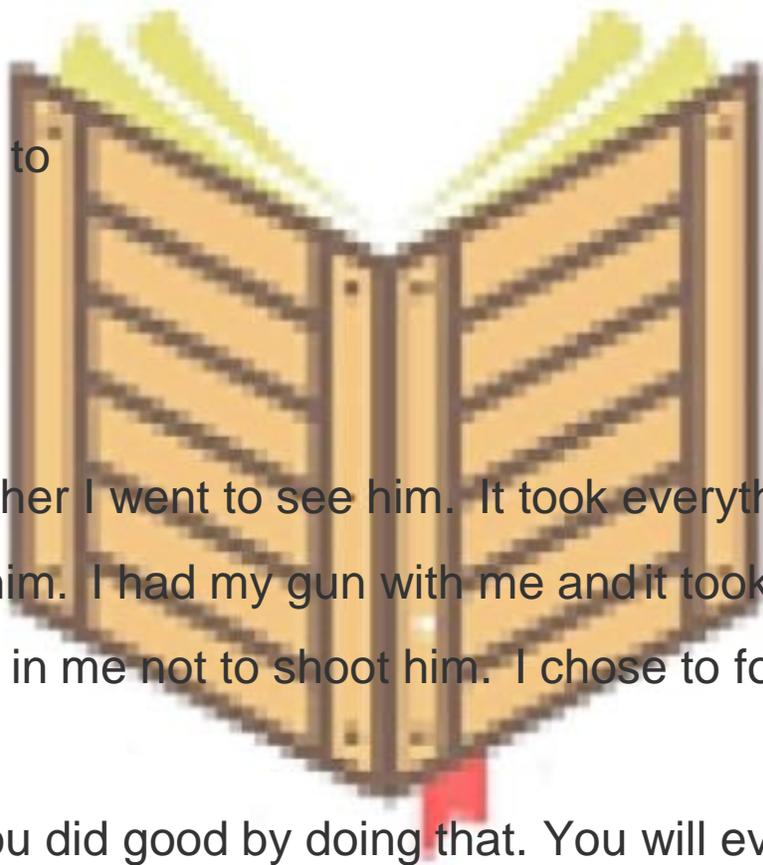
Qhawe.

Qhawe: you did good by doing that. You will eventually have peace. in time your nightmare will stop.

Me: He doesn't deserve it Qhawe he really doesn't.

Qhawe: I know he doesn't deserve it. you need to remember that you didn't do it for him you did it for you and your future.

Bandile: at least now you will be able to move on



NOVELSGURU.COM

and focus on your life with Thando. Me: I know guys. I feel like a whole world has been lifted off my shoulders.

Qhawe: I'm glad you feel that way.

Bandile: I am just glad you are going to be your old self again. Me: don't get it twisted Bandile I have always been myself.

Qhawe: good because my daughter called and told me she has a problem with the neighbour's daughter and she said she was going to deal with her today.

Me: that child is her mother's daughter.

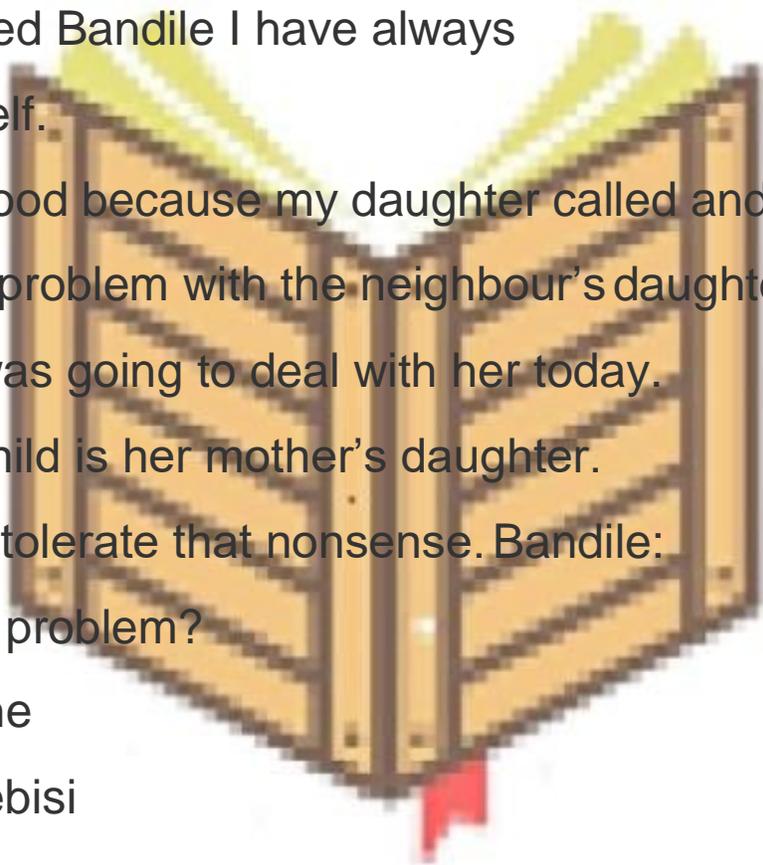
She won't tolerate that nonsense. Bandile: what's the problem?

Qhawe: she wants Mcebisi

ME: is she a bitter ex?

Qhawe: No she is not. Mcebisi never dated her. she is a gold digger. She wants him for his money.

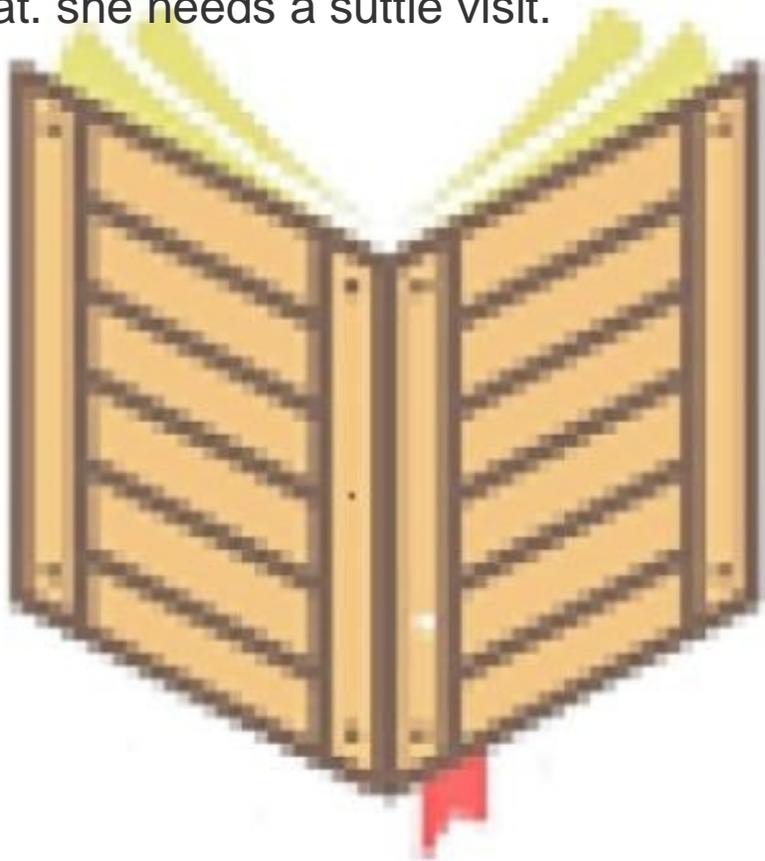
Bandile: I don't get some women. She has never dated the guy she doesn't know what it's like to be with but she



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

wants to fight for him and to make matters worse she carries on even after he married someone else just to show him that he never had interest in her but she still forces herself on the guy. I'll never get that about some women even men for that matter.

Me: She is crazy if she thinks she can mess with my niece just like that. she needs a subtle visit.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: let's wait and hear from Lina how she dealt with this situation. I really don't know why we can't just be happy without all these stupid things that keep popping up to mess with our joy.

Me: I know what you mean. To be honest with you guys I was really happy before my father found me but I told myself I am not letting him take my happiness away from me. He took my childhood from me he took my happiness from me when I was young and he took the most important person in my life from me and right now I'll be damned if I let him take that away from me destroy me like he did when I was young.

Bandile: That's more like it. you don't need him you never did and you never will. Me: What happened with Lonwabo and that girl of his?

Qhawe: apparently she is not his girl they are just friends.

Me: Lonwabo must not think he can fool us. He loves that girl anyone can see it.

Bandile: Lwazi leave the poor child alone. When he is ready to tell us about it he will. Remember we were once his age as well.

Me: I won't say or do anything to scare him away from

talking to us besides I'm his favourite uncle. Qhawe: there you go again with being the favourite uncle.

Me: but it's true

Bandile: No you are not. You got those kids in more trouble than anyone ever did and you are suppose to be an adult.

Me: even if that is the case I am still their favourite. Chew on on that Qhawe: oh please!!!! (he says that walking out leaving us there.)



## CHAPTER 145

A WEEK

LATER

THURSDA

Y

\*

\*

\*

LONW

NOVELSGURU.COM

ABO

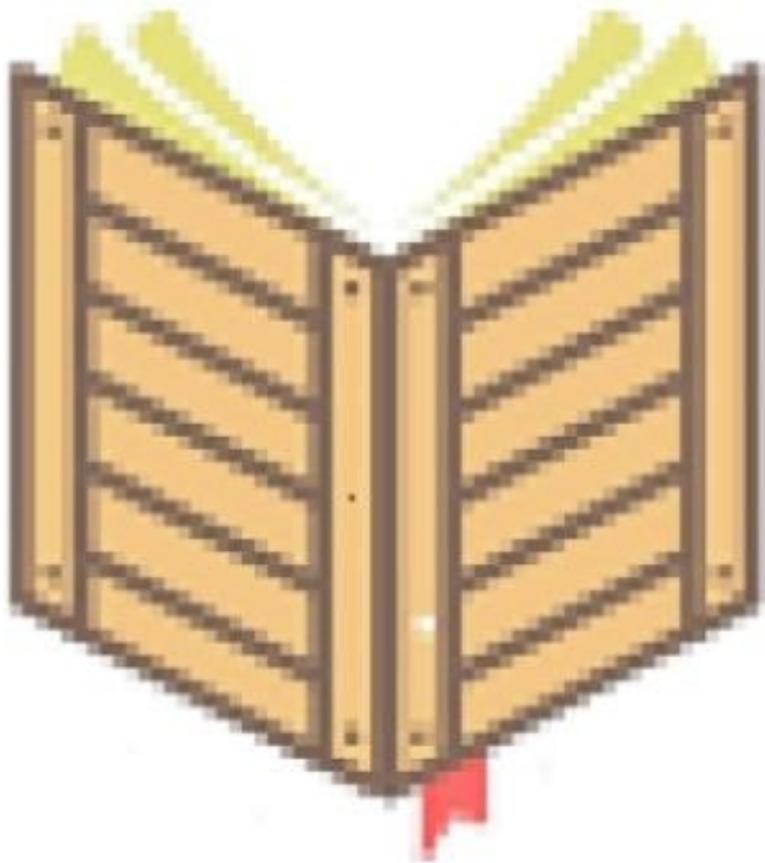
\*

\*

\*

My brothers say that I am in denial when it comes to my feelings for Oyama. I know that I like her and I like her a lot.

She is an amazing woman. I can't say I love her. Only time will



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

determine that. All I know is that I love spending time with her. She even loves playing the play station games with me. Not many girls do that. Come to think of it she is just like my mother.

Me: hey

Oyama: hey you. She was already seated waiting for me. I walk over to her and kiss her forehead. She loves it when I don't do that. Her reaction is always priceless.)

Me: have you been waiting long? Sorry i'm late.

Class took a bit longer. Oyama: It's ok. I just got here. How was class?

Me: boring as usual and yours?

Oyama: it was ok. The lecturer asked me for my number and I refused. He wants to go out with me.

Me: is it the first time he has asked?

Oyama: No it's not. I'm thinking of reporting him now. Me: what do you know about him?

Oyama: one of the girls told me he does that a lot especially with new girls. They say it's the second time that a girl refused to give him her number.

Me: What happened to the other girl.

Oyama: She is still around. She is a year before me and I think second year students have a different lecturer for this class.

Me: what class is that?

Oyama: it's Digital Illustration. He is not even that good at it. He is more focused on girls than he is on his work.

Me: if he persists about asking you for your number then you should report him that would be harassment and he knows the rules. He is just taking chances. Try and see if you can't speak to the other girl and find out what happened.

Oyama: that's a lot.

Me: You are learning to protect yourself. Sometimes to be able to protect yourself you need to know all you can about your enemy.

Oyama: he is not my enemy. He is nothing to me.

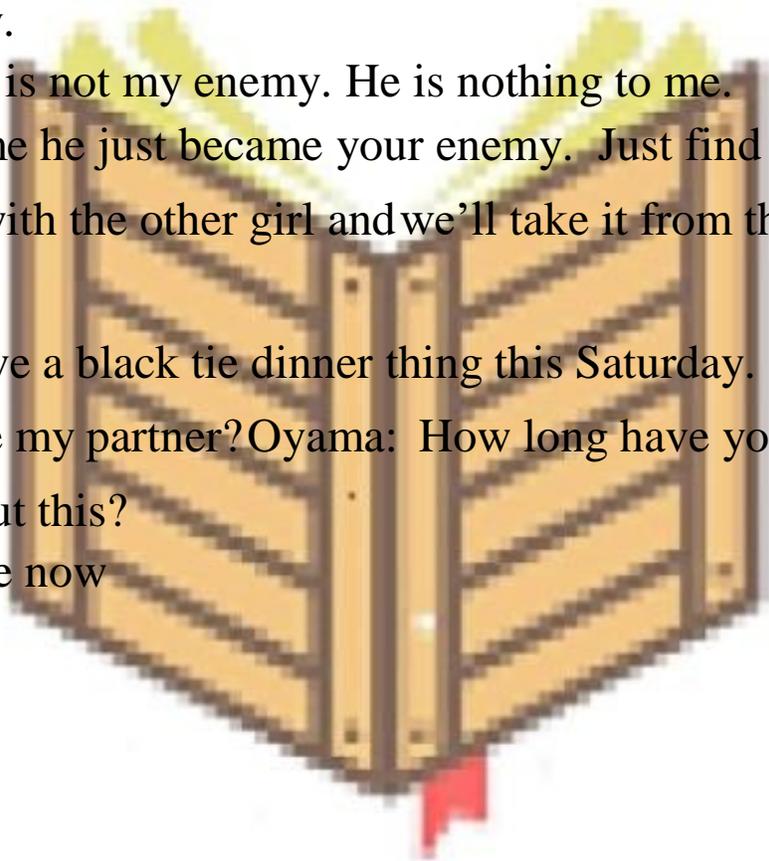
Me: trust me he just became your enemy. Just find out what happened with the other girl and we'll take it from there.

Oyama: ok

Me: we have a black tie dinner thing this Saturday.

Will you be my partner? Oyama: How long have you known about this?

Me: a while now



NOVELSGURU.COM

Oyama: and you are only asking me today. what am I going to wear? I don't have evening dresses Lonwabo.

Me: you don't have to worry about that.

I'll take care of it. Oyama: what am I going to do with you really? Thank you.

Me: All you have to do is appreciate and just say thank you. Oyama: You are so

crazy. You really know how to spoil a lady

Me: dad and the uncles have taught us everything we know.

Count yourself lucky that we are friends. Are you done with your classes today?

Oyama: yes I am why?

Me: How about a game of Grand Theft Auto

Oyama: Ok. I'll have to let my parents know though. Do you know that they don't believe me when I tell them that we are just friends.

Me: my family too. Grab your bag lets go.

\*

\*

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

QHA

WE

\*

\*

\*

I had a long day at the office today but it was worth it. I am also preparing for our trip to Zambia. All the married couples didn't go to their honeymoons. We are all going for a business and leisure trip to Zambia. I walk in to the house and I put my bag on the coffee table and walk straight to the kitchen. I know that she is in there I can smell the food she is cooking. The site I walk into in the kitchen is one of the most beautiful moments I've seen. The Boovs are in the kitchen in their baby sits. She has Holy Grail by Jay Z ft Justin Timberlake playing through the entire house and she is dancing for the Boovs and they are just smiling at her. Coming home to this it's the best thing. I really I couldn't ask for anything more. Me: they don't even understand what you are doing. (she jumps a little and stops dancing. Thandokuhle starts crying and when his mom dances again he stops.)

Khanyi: he won't cry when the song ends. Me: so he enjoys your dancing and the song?

Khanyi: Yes daddy he does. You need stop watching me. Me: what can I say you look cute and you are such a turn on.

Khanyi: No Que. Don't be naughty in front of the kids.

Me: well I am going to kiss you in front of them. Come here. (I hold her at the waist and bring her close and kiss her. Amyoli is all smiles. I swear these babies are too smart for their age.)

Loneabo: Parents can I talk to you for a minute

Me: sure what's up?

Lonwabo: I know that the dinner is a family thing but I would like to bring Oyama as my date if that is ok with you.

Khanyi: I don't have a problem as long as her parents are ok with that . Me: You really like this girl

Sponsored

don't you?

Lonwabo: I do dad. I really do. she is an amazing woman Khanyi: what is she going to do for a dress.

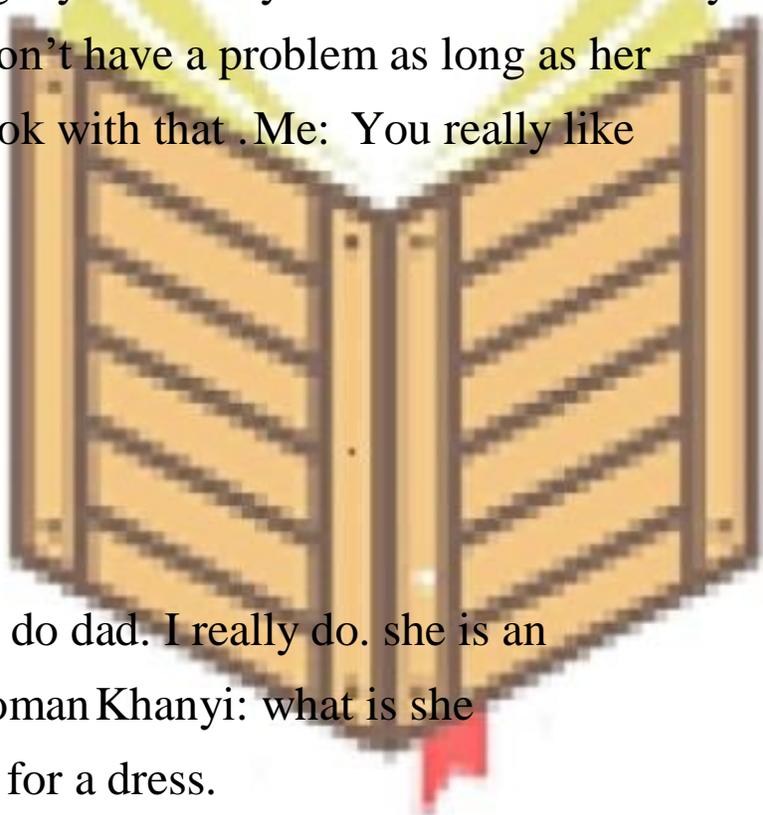
Lonwabo: Lina is going to help with that. they are coming home tomorrow. Thanks guys I have to take Oyama home before it gets late

Khanyi: Please be home for dinner.

Lonwabo: I will be Mom. (he says that walking out.)

Me: these kids are growing up too fast. Have you spoken to

Lina about this situation she has. Khanyi: She has told me and I



NOVELSGURU.COM

want to have a quiet word with Sne's mother.

Me: Let's wait and see how Lina deals with them and we can take it from there

Khanyi: I'm not worried about Lina. I am more worried about Mcebisi. He won't hesitate to shoot to kill for Lina and the last thing we want is for them to blood on their hads.

Me: I hear you my love. The kids also need to stand up for themselves. We won't always be there to fight for them.

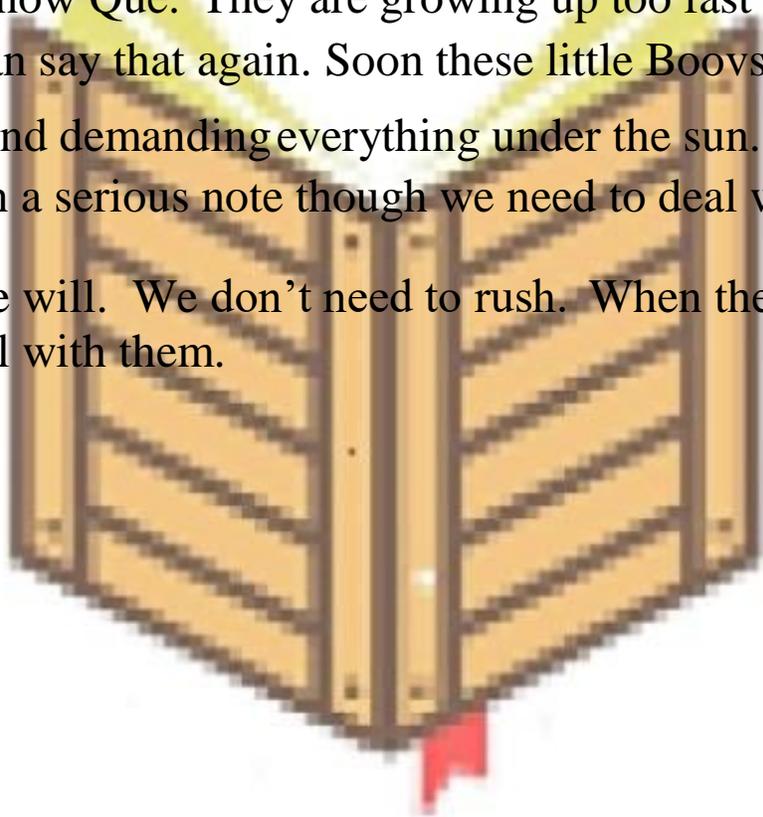
Khanyi: I know Que. They are growing up too fast

Me: You can say that again. Soon these little Boovs are going to be talking and demanding everything under the sun.

Khanyi: On a serious note though we need to deal with the Khumalo's.

Me: and we will. We don't need to rush. When they least expect we will deal with them.

\*  
\*  
\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

SINDY

\*

\*

\*

Life has been really good. I have been seeing a therapist to deal with my issues with my mother. I haven't spoken to her ever since she left Durban. She has tried to call but I haven't had the energy to deal with her. I am absolutely not ready to deal with her. I just need to focus on myself and my relationship with Siphso which has been amazing. Siphso has been great. He has been very supportive. When we started out our thing I didn't think I would have a serious relationship with him. I never thought I would have a man that loved me for me. A man that I didn't have to manipulate to be with me. A man that I am with because I honestly and truly love him and he feels the same way. I am not with him because of his money. Yes he takes care of me and all. He also gives me the freedom to be me to grow myself to live my dreams and work on my career. He is not rushing anything he is giving me time to heal and I can truly say I am not holding on to what my mother did. I have forgiven her but I am just not up to talking to her not yet.

My dad says that I will completely heal from what I did once I face her and talk to her about this whole thing. I understand what he is saying but I am not ready. I am really not.

On the other hand my relationship with my dad his wife and my siblings has been great. We are slowly getting to know each other and getting comfortable to be around each other. I know it will take time but we'll get there.

I love my new life it's simple comfortable it's full of love and adventure. Siphos always making sure that I enjoy every moment and encourages me to create more good memories for myself.

## CHAPTER 146

FRIDAY

\*\*

\*

\*

SIBA

HLE

\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

We had to leave Inanda yesterday so that we can help mom prepare for tomorrow night's dinner. I must say we had a great time there. Mcebisi's parents will also be here tomorrow and all our grand parents. I just wonder what this is all about.

The door bell rings and I get the door and it's a delivery guy. He stands there staring at me not saying anything. He just stares.

Me: can I help you (and that seems to snap him out of it)

Him: sorry miss. I have a delivery for a Miss

Sibahle Mtimkhulu. Me: that's me.

Him: I'll be right back. (He walks to the delivery vehicle and comes back with a gift box and a bunch of Yellow Water Lillies my favourite flowers. Besides my family there is only one person who know about the flowers. ) Please sign here. (he gives me a digital signing pad and I sign. I take my things and as I am about to close the door he speaks.) there's more Miss

Me: More what?

Him: More of your delivery. (he walks back to the vehicle and comes back with another box and another bunch of flowers. How am I going to answer my mother's questions about all this. This man is absolutely crazy. I haven't even told them I am dating and he does this.

Couldn't he wait until tomorrow when we tell them. This guy goes back and gets a third box that is smaller than the other and large glass water bowl with pink and white water lilies. Hayi lo

bhuti wenza kakhulu ngoku (this man is doing too much) ) That is all Miss.

Me: Thank you and I close the door. (I try to collect everything and take it to my room before anyone sees all this. As soon as I close my bedroom door my phone rings

\*\*\*\*\*

PHONE

CONVERSATION\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*Me: Baby

Him: Did you get everything I sent you?

Me: It just arrived. I haven't opened the boxes yet

Him: ok. Open the big box first. Do you love the flowers?

Me: I love the flowers you know that babe. (when I open the big box there is a dress in it. it's a beautiful long sleeveless yellow evening gown with a low v-neck line that has a very light blue trimming) it's a dress it's beautiful

Him: it's for you to wear tomorrow. Open the second box love ( I do as he tells me and I find shoes in the box light blue shoes) the shoes go with the dress.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Baby you know that you didn't have to do all this. Him: I know but I wanted to.

Me: I love them. They are beautiful.

Him: Open the last box ( I open it and there's all the accessories that go with the dress. He got me small earrings matching necklace and a bracelet and a clutch bag. All these have a touch of light blue in them. Everything is just how I like things.

Simple yet elegant)

Me: I don't know what to say

Him: You can say thank you nothing else  
Me: thank you. I love everything.

Him: Good. Let me get back to work. I also have to fetch my suit later on. I'll video call tonight.

Me: Ok Ngconde. Thank you so much.

Him: you should call me by clan name all the time. (that causes me to blush.) We'll talk later. Me: bye.

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom is definitely going to come into my room at some point today. How am I going to explain all these flowers. This man is too much. I'm so used to being spoiled by family and this feels different it's new and it will take some time getting used to it.

\*

\*

\*

MCE

BISI

\*

\*

\*

My brothers in law are crazy. We are collecting our suits for tomorrow. I tell them about the Sne and her mom drama and they immediately want to drive to Inanda and sort them out.

They couldn't believe what Lina did to Sne when I told them about it. They didn't think she could do that.

Khaya: it turns out she really is her mother's daughter.

Me: you could say that again. I saw Sne walking out of the room where all this happened she was crying so much and could barely walk. She got her real good. She is going to think twice about doing anything stupid.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Bandile: she shouldn't have started with the drama in the first place. At least she knows who she is dealing with.

Banele: Where are Ayanda and Asive were they not going to join us? Asive: we are here.

No need to send a search party.

Me: We wouldn't waist time sending a search party to look for such ugly people. Ayanda: You wish we were ugly.

Asive: Look who's talking

Sponsored

the ugliest guy in the room.

Me: My wife won't like that and I am going to tell her. wait I just realised how good it feels calling her my wife.

Ayanda: I can imagine. I want that too. Khaya: It's the best feeling ever.

Me: especially when she calls me  
NOVELSGURU.COM  
by my clan name. Ayanda: I know what you mean.

Khaya: the right one will come along and you will know. Banele: How do you know that she is the one?



Me: You just know. The moment of realisation is when you realise that you can't live without her.

Banele: I see. But I am not in a hurry to get married. I just want to work on my career first make money so that I can be able to take care of her and then I can think about getting married. I want her to be a house wife. She can have her own business and all just something to keep her busy.

Bandile: You don't want a career woman?

Banele: she can have a career but when we have kids I want her to be a stay at home mom. She can work from home. I also want to be able to work from home by the time I have kids just like dad.

Me: I understand what you are saying.

Khaya: You need to meet right girl first. Treat her like a Queen and she must treat you like a King as well if you know what I mean. You must both be able to understand that a relation is a two way street. You must respect each other trust each other and be loyal. Trust is a foundation of any relationship. Once the trust is established you guys can never break it. It will be difficult

to rebuild the relationship the trust won't be as strong as it was before it was broken. We all make mistakes and you can never hurt each other intentionally especially by cheating. Cheating is not a mistake it is a choice. Whatever happens with you and your partner you should learn to talk things out.

Communication is the key to understanding each other.

Me: Khaya is right. All the things that he has mentioned make the flow of the relationship easy and light. A relationship can never be one sided. Always remember that we are not the same.

Asive: what do you mean by that?

ME: I mean that there are women out there who are not good women and there are men out there who are bad and that does not mean all women are the same or all men are the same if that was case then all of us here we would also be bad men.

Ayanda: I hear you. I'm just starting out as a business man and I just hope the one I meet can understand that it takes a lot of work to build a business but that doesn't mean I won't make time for her

Bandile: the right one will understand and she will be by your side always.

Banele: You know what guys we should do a seminar about this under the Brotherhood project. I spoke to mom about something that I think we should do. The project is getting a lot of sponsors and a lot of money and I think we should use that money to fund small businesses. Businesses that are just starting out.

Khaya: that would be a great idea.

Me: we can make it a joint venture because your mom's company does the same thing. I'll speak to her about it.

Khaya: that would be great. Let's go guys. Just got a message from dad we need buy tomorrow's drinks.

## CHAPTER 147

SATURDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

KHA

NYI

\*  
\*  
\*

Me: Lina please check on the babies for me and please bring me one of the baby monitors.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lina: ok ma. Are the caterers here?

Me: yes they are. This is going to be a long day. Thando Ncesh Lwandle and Anelisa should have been here already. Sindy will be here later on.

Lina: they are probably on their way mom. What's this dinner about mama? You seem nervous about it.

Me: you'll find out soon enough.

Lina: you and dad are up to something. (She smiles and walks away)

I really don't know how this night is going to go but I am hoping for the best. I need to check on the caterers I just hope they don't burn down my kitchen.

Lwazi: the caterers won't burn down your kitchen relax. Me: how did you know I was thinking that?

Lwazi: you forget that we know you. There's no need for you to go to the kitchen everything is fine. Your man just checked on them. I came here to ask you for the champagne.

Me: It's in the cellar.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lwazi: Khanyi you have been a great addition in our lives. I'm glad that Qhawe met you. Thank you for being you and being so supportive and being there for us. (He walks over to me and hugs me tight.)

Qhawe: You have your own woman to hug and leave mine alone. (As he walks into the lounge) Lwazi: you seem to forget that she is ours too. She said it herself.

Qhawe: khanyi you need to rectify that.

Me: relax baby you know I am all yours. No one can ever take your place in my heart. (I walk over to him and kiss him)

Qhawe: I know my love and I am all yours.

Lwazi: enough with all the mooshy staff. We need to start getting ready.

Sizwe: Lwazi you came in here to fetch the champagne where is it. Please don't tell me you were busy being cosy with Khanyi and you and Qhawe were fighting over her.

Lwazi: when you say "fighting" you make it sound really bad. We don't fight we just share pleasantries

(he gives Sizwe a naughty smile. Lwanele walks

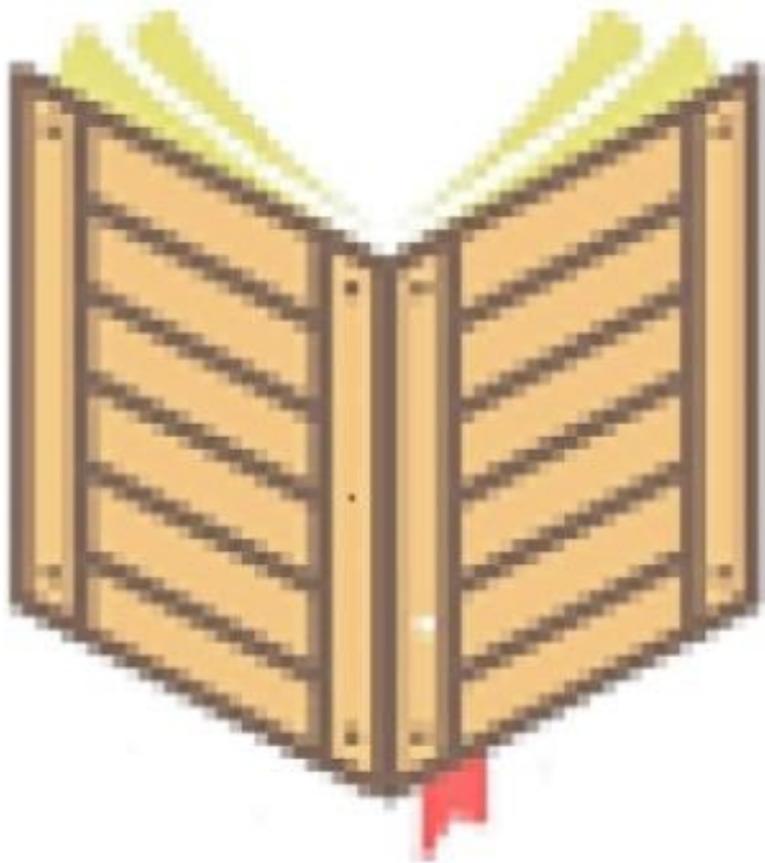
walks in calling out for me Lwanele: uncle Lwazi you are here. (She runs to him and hugs him) I need your help with something.

Me: why were you calling me baby?

Lwanele: It's ok mom uncle

Lwazi can help me. Lwazi:

what do you need Princess?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe:

why him?

Lwanele:

just dad.

Lwazi: I told you I was the favourite uncle. (He takes Lwanele's hand looks at us sticks his tongue at us and they walk towards the stairs. )

Sizwe: now I have to get the champagne. Qhawe: that's Lwazi for you.

My girls eventually arrived. The deco is done dinner is almost ready and now it's time for us to get ready. The babies have been behaving so far.

Anelisa: Olu is so well behaved when she is here.

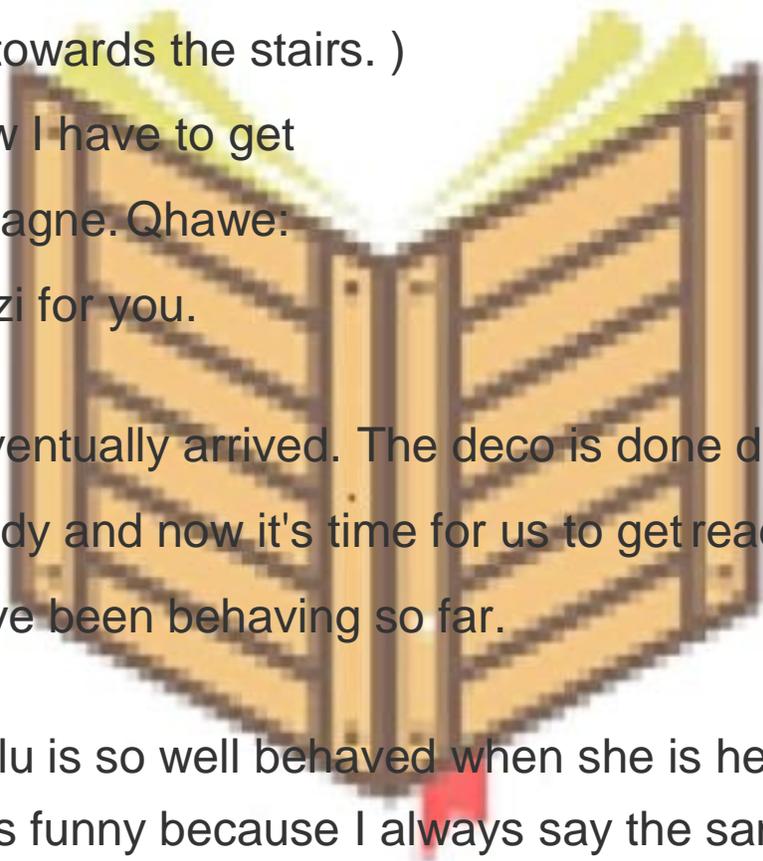
Khanyi: It's funny because I always say the same thing when the Quins are at your

house. Surprisingly they are well behaved today. The

grandparents have been spoiling them. Khanyi's mom:

ladies you need to hurry and finish up. Khanyi your inlaws are here.

Me: ok mama we are almost done. We'll be down in a



NOVELSGURU.COM

minute.

\*

\*

\*

MCE

BISI

\*

\*

\*

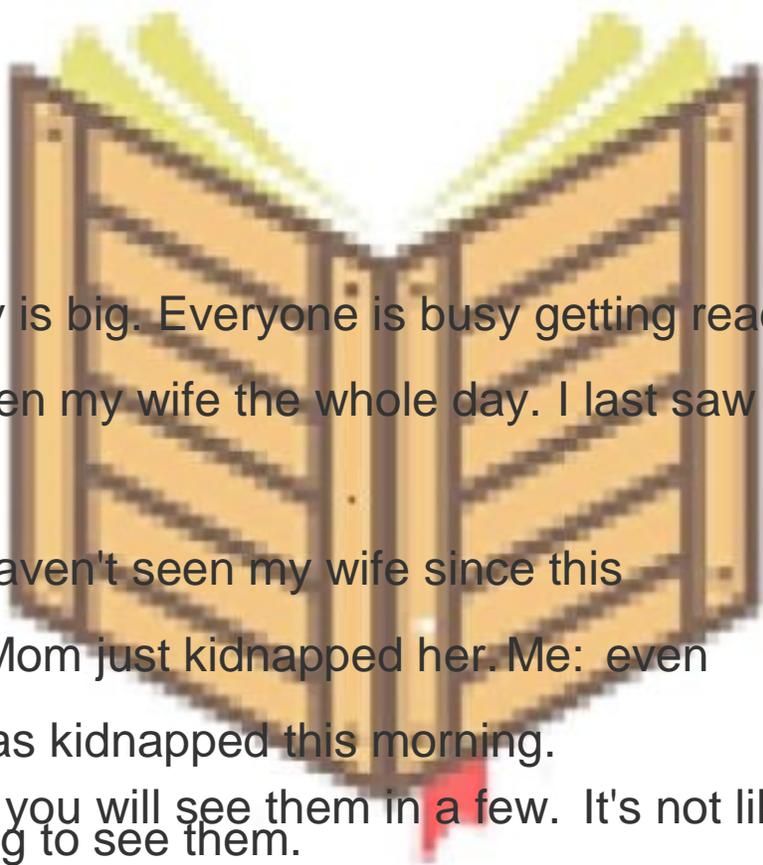
This family is big. Everyone is busy getting ready. I haven't seen my wife the whole day. I last saw her this morning.

Khaya: I haven't seen my wife since this morning. Mom just kidnapped her. Me: even my wife was kidnapped this morning.

Lonwabo: you will see them in a few. It's not like you are never going to see them.

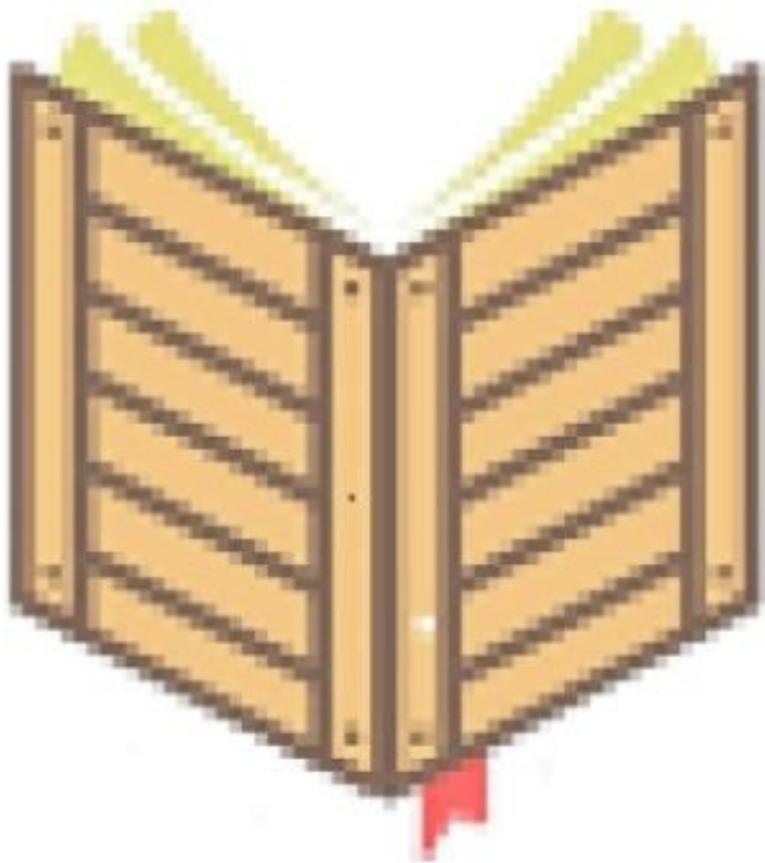
Me: you don't get it Wabo. I can't not see her the whole day. Not seeing her is like not eating. Lonwabo: why am I not surprised that you compare this to food.

Khaya: you would swear he was born with food in his hand. Bandile: we should ask his mom what happened



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: nothing happened I just love food. (Oyama walks in looking dazzling in her long Olive green dress with lace sleeve beautifully decorated with sequence low round neck. Lonwabo couldn't take



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

his eyes off her. I just noticed that his outfit matches hers. He gets up and walks over to her and holds her hand. I don't care what this kid says he is smitten over this girl. )

Lonwabo: you look absolutely look amazing Oyama: thank you you don't look too bad yourself.

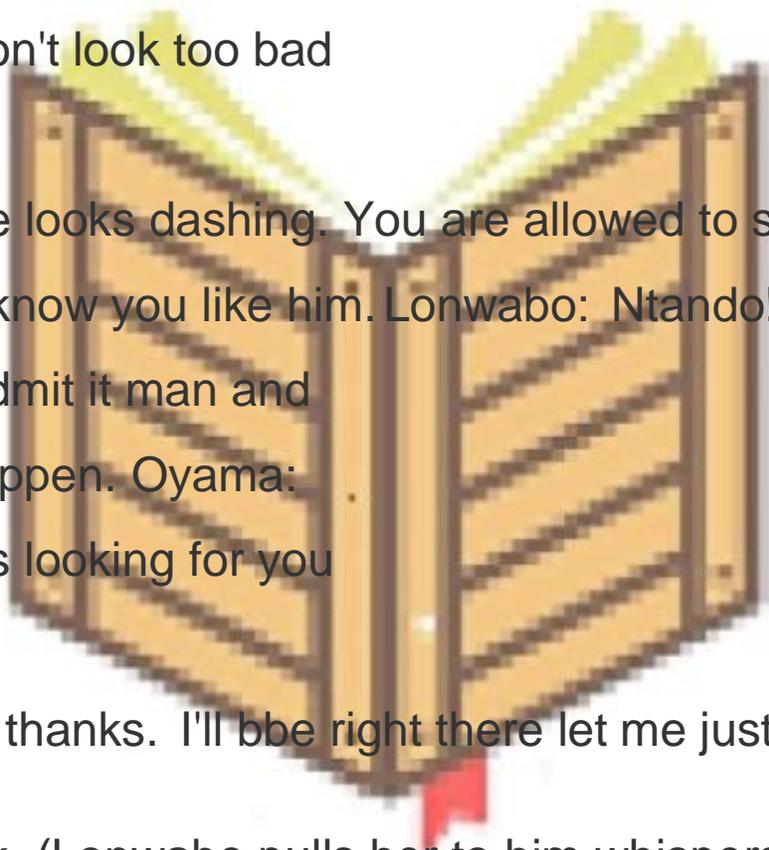
Ntando: he looks dashing. You are allowed to say it.. We all know you like him. Lonwabo: Ntando!!!

Me: just admit it man and make it happen. Oyama: your dad is looking for you Lonwabo.

Lonwabo: thanks. I'll bbe right there let me just finish here quickly.

Oyama: ok. (Lonwabo pulls her to him whispers in her ear and kisses her forehead. These two are so cute. They should just tell each other how they feel.)) I'll see you later then. (She says as she walks out of the room.)

Me: you should tell each other how you feel and stop this hide and seek you are playing. Khaya: let



NOVELSCURL.COM

them be man. They are taking things slow.

Ntando: don't take them too slow someone else might just snatch her. (Lonwabo just looked at us smiled gave us the finger and ran off.)

Me: did he just show us the finger?

Banele: I believe he did. (I got up immediately ran after him with the other guys following behind me.)

Lwazi: what's with the running in the house behaving like kids. Me: but we are kids.

Lwazi: you are grown man

Me: relax bhut Lwazi otherwise you'll find yourself with grey hair and wrinkles. Lwazi: I'd still be good looking even then.

Me: Uyazitshela (you are full of yourself we all laugh. )

Lwazi: I can see you are all dressed up. Let's go and join the others in the tent.

\*

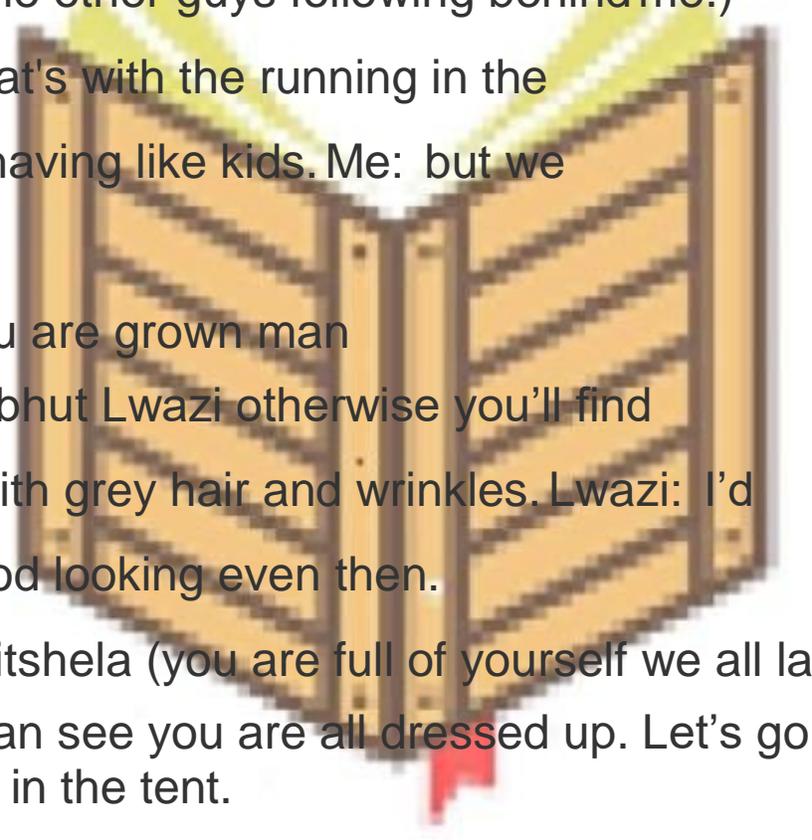
\*

\*

NARR

ATED

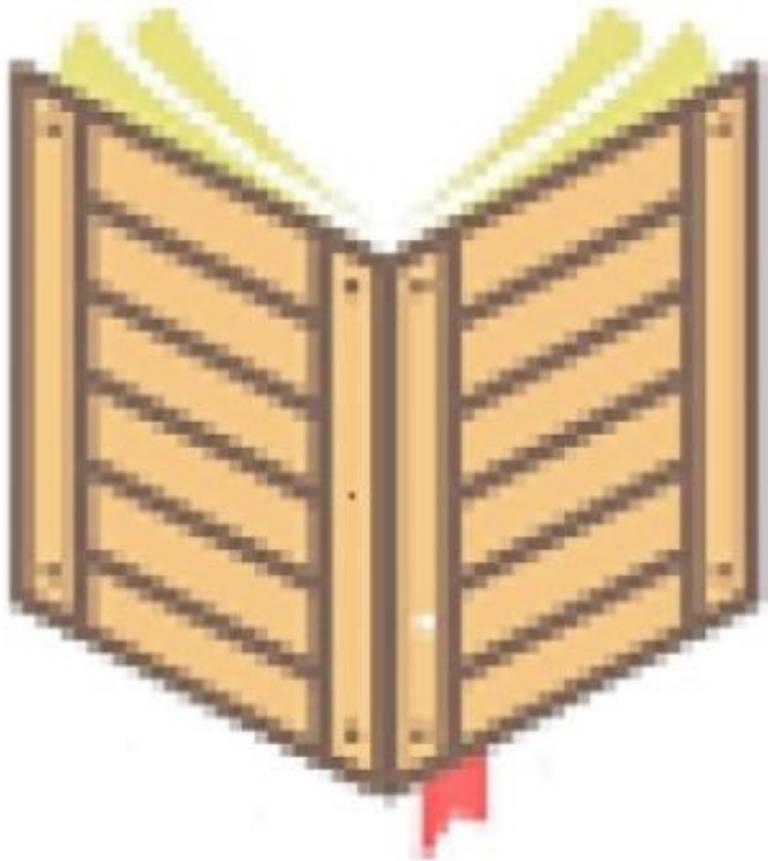
\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

The ladies were already there when the guys walked in. Everyone was looking amazing in their dresses and suits. The setting was warm and the deco amazing. Khanyi kept things simple the way she likes them. She was also wearing a long maroon dress no sleeves. It had a cowl neck. Tight fitting to the waist from the waist down it was flowy. She looked amazing and she accessorised with nude coloured accessories. Her man was wearing a nude suit with a maroon shirt and a nude tie. They all looked amazing. The family was sitting on the big table having their dinner soft music playing in the background. Everyone was just caught up in their own conversation. After desert was served everyone was just relaxed around the table having fun.. Sibahle has been contemplating to get up and make her special announcement before her parents say what this dinner is all about.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sibahle: May I have everyone's attention please (everyone turned and looked at her) I know that mom and dad planned this dinner to tell us something but I have something I want to share with before they share their

news. I've been wanting to tell you all about this but there was never a right time. I won't get another chance like tonight when we are all under one roof like this.

Khanyi: what

is it baby?

Sibahle: Mom

dad

Sponsored



family I am seeing someone. I have a boyfriend. Dad please don't freak out and please let me finish. I really like this guy and he makes me happy. He makes me laugh all the time when I cry he is there to wipe my tears he catches me when I fall surprises me with my favourite flowers every now and then. He even surprised me with the dress I'm wearing today.. (she pauses)

Qhawe: You know baby at some point in your lives I have to accept that you are growing that I am not the only man that will want to kill for you including your brothers and your uncles. I am glad he is good to you and I hope he

knows that the day you come home crying because of him he'll be a dead man walking. Sibahle you know what's right you know what's wrong. Your mom and I we have taught you how a man should treat you and how you should treat a man. You should never allow him to treat any other way except the way you deserve to be treated and that is to be treated like royalty.

Sibahle: I know dad and that is why it feels right to tell you all about him.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Bandile Snr: who is this girl Princess I want to know his intentions for you (Sibahle looks at her uncle Bandile and looks at the man sitting next to him and looks at her dad and back to the other guy and he nods for her to go ahead. Sibahle: it's Ayanda.

The room goes quiet you can even hear a needle drop to the floor that's how silent it was. Ayanda got up and stood next to Sibahle holding her hand. She was shaking because she was so nervous. He brought her closer to his chest and held her until she stopped shaking.

Bandile Snr: She is the girl you were telling me about? Ayanda: Yes dad she is.

Khanyi: How long have you been seeing each other?

Sibahle: a few months

Khanyi: Do you care about her Ayanda?

Ayanda: very much so. She means the world to me. The love I have for her grows stronger everyday. Dad you know my intentions for her. I want to marry her at some

point in our lives I want to spend my life with her.

Qhawe: I'm not going to say you cannot date her. we are going to talk about this later on though. I'm just glad you told us.

Sibahle: Dad please be gentle with him. Qhawe: I'm not going to do anything to him.

Mcebisi: You said the same thing to Lina when you found out about us Lwazi: he almost ate you alive. He might just eat this one alive.

Sizwe: maybe he'll just torture him a little before he lets him date her Qhawe: You guys are making me sound like a father from hell.

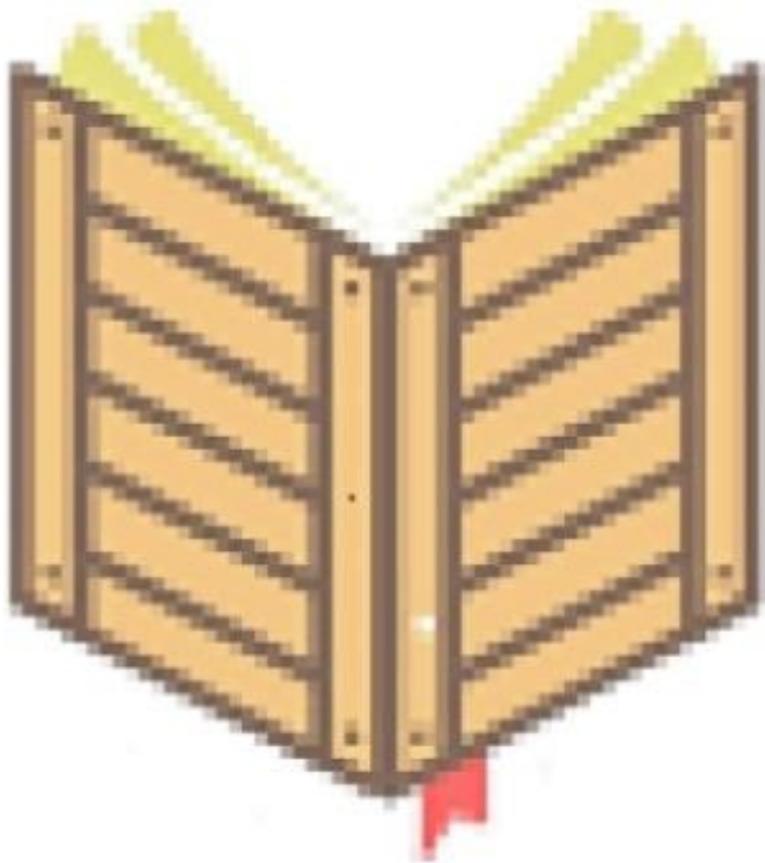
Bandile: I still don't know what to say.

NOVELSGURU.COM

The new couple sits down as everyone was asking a lot of questions about their relationship. It was a grilling session until Qhawe decided to stand up and make his announcement.

Qhawe: Guys let's leave the kids alone. As long as they are happy that's good enough. Ayanda you know the rules of this house.

Ayanda: Yes sir I do.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Qhawe: good. Now the reason we are all here tonight. Our parents know why we are all here. Khanyi please stand. (she stands up and stands next to her man all smile.) we would like to share some news with you. A lot has happened in our lives. We have had good times and bad times and we are all still here together as a family stronger than ever and growing. Guys we love you you know that and we do apologise for doing what we did without talking to you or involving you.

Lwazi: I hope you have not killed anyone  
Sizwe: Lwazi be quiet.

Qhawe: thank you Sizwe. Guys we have come a long a way to be where we are and I pray that we stay as strong as we are and grow stronger. Before the Quins were born we decided to get married.

Lonwabo: what are you saying?

Khanyi: what your dad is trying to say is that we stand before you tonight as Mr and Mrs

Mtimkhulu. We are married. That's not all before you say anything Qhawe would also like to officially adopt my babies and make them officially his and he would like you guys to have his surname.

Lina: I'm still stuck on the "we are married" statement. Ntando:  
Holy mother of all gods!!!!

The room just went quiet again. Everyone is shocked. No one is saying anything.

## CHAPTER 148

### STILL SATURDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

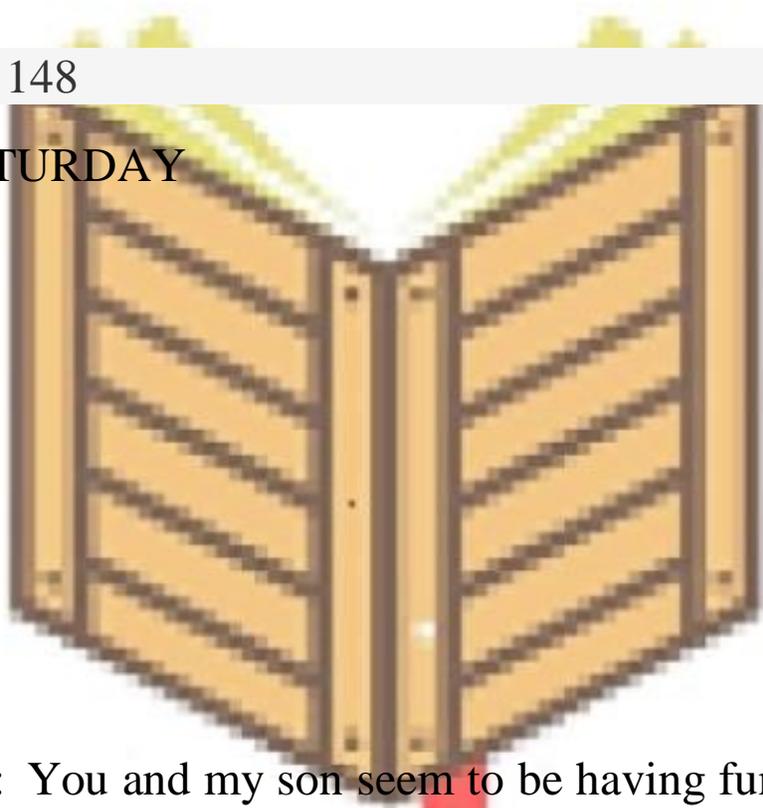
QHA

WE

\*  
\*  
\*

BandileSnr: You and my son seem to be having fun surprising us like this. Wena Ayanda you still have a lot questions to answer. Qhawe you got married and you didn't tell us what the hell man.

Lwazi: You could have at least told us we've always been there for each other.



Me: come on guys it's not like that. it's no longer just the three of us now. If I told you then I would have had to tell everyone else. We couldn't choose who to tell hence we didn't tell anyone.

Lwazi: fine I get that but still to come and say you are married already this is a shocker. First it was five babies and now this. You don't stop nhe.

Sizwe: so you guys have been married months now?

Khanyi: Yes Sizwe. I know you are going to say I should have told you but it's just like Qhawe said we couldn't choose who to tell and with everything that has been going on we didn't want to take the attention away from the other weddings that were happening. When Bandile and Luyanda got married we were married already.

Lina & Khaya: When exactly?

Me: We got married December last year before Anelisa gave birth to Olu. Lwazi: Yhooo so long ago.

Lwanele: How could you keep this a secret for so long. I just think that you should have told us and made us a part of it.

Me: Princess I understand what you are saying. With all the plans that were happening we just decided it would be best if we do it this way.

Nchesh: So what you are saying is that we are not going to be bridesmaids at your wedding basically there won't be a

wedding?

Thando: I'm still on the "we are married" part. Not even engaged but married.

Khanyi: No there won't be a wedding. We just didn't want to take the spotlight away from you guys.

Lwazi: Why is Luyanda so quiet. (he turns and looks at Luyanda who didn't seem shocked by all this)

Luyanda: I

knew... Bandile:

YOU WHAT???

Sizwe: why does he get to know and we don't

Andile: it's a pity Eddie is not here he is going to kill you when he finds out.

Lwazi: Luyanda is the lawyer he had to know right? Maybe I should change careers and be a lawyer so that I don't get to be kept out of things that are happening in this family.

Me: Lwazi can you not be so dramatic

Lwazi: can you blame me? (I choose not to answer that.)

Sibahle: Dad since you kept such a big secret from us you won't get to grill Ayanda.

Me: Keep dreaming sweetheart. He is going to be grilled just like every guy that comes along to date you girls.

Sibahle: but dad....

Lina: let it go Sibahle it is going to happen no matter what you say. Besides my husband cannot be the only one that gets to be in the Lion's den.

Me: don't even think for a second that Ayanda is off the hook not even his father can speak for him.

Bandile: I have no intentions of doing that. He has a lot of questions to answer.

Zenande: Considering that I am fourteen years old let me see if I get this. So you guys are now husband and wife right

ME: Yes baby

Zenande: Mom said something about you adopting her babies.

I thought the babies were yours. Me: Not those babies. She meant Khaya Lina Lonwabo Ntando and Lwanele.

Zenande: I thought they were already yours

Me: Yes they are but now we want to make it legal. I want them to be legally mine and I would like for you guys to share the same surname but they have to agree to it. (she turns and looks at all her siblings)

Zenande: they will do it without a doubt.

Me: I hear you baby but we still have to talk about it.

Ntando: I assume that you spoke to Banzi about this what did he say?

Me: He agreed. He didn't give up his parental rights. He did

agree to the adoption. Lonwabo: did he say why he is not giving up his parental rights?

Khanyi: He is hoping that things will change between you guys. Lonwabo: I see.

Banele: guys I can't believe you are married. Dad we told you that you were going to marry her and you didn't believe us. Look at you now.

Bandile: they don't get tired of shocking us.

Mcebisi: You know this was fun the food was nice and I was to go for a second helping of desert but the parents zize nge vur vai my head is speaning (everyone just broke into laughter. He's been silent the whole time and when he speaks that's what he says.)

Lwazi: bayadelela nje aba.



Khanyi's mom: yeyi nina leave my kids alone. They did what they did because they didn't want to take the attention from your events. You all know that had they told you; you would have wanted to focus on them and give them all the attention. Just let them be. You should be happy. Sibahle: don't get us wrong granny we are happy we are just in shock that's all. Some of us have hardly said anything and it's something that we would have loved to be part of.

Khanyi's mom: you are a part of it. You are here tonight to celebrate their love. Khanyi: thanks mama.

Khanyi's mom: I have your back baby.

Loyiso: khayi's mom is right just let them be. My son wanted to give his wife the best wedding ever but they decided otherwise. It's been busy with all the wedding plans that have happening and they wanted to be married before the little Boovs were born.

Me: really guys tonight we are here to celebrate hence you are all dressed up.

Mr Mkhize: I would like to say something. (Everyone turns to look at him giving him the attention)

Correct me if I am wrong it looks like Qhawe is the Alpha in this family and as an Alpha he did what he thought was best which indeed was. I see nothing wrong with what they did. You guys have built something beautiful for yourselves. I have never seen anything like this and I am glad my son is a part of it. Don't fault

the couple for how they did things. Share in their joy.

Lwazi: we hear you tata but these two need know that as much as we are happy for them they need to make it up to us. They are giving us headaches with their behavior.

Mr Mkhize: this one is just like Mcebisi.

Me: you would swear they are brothers the way they are.

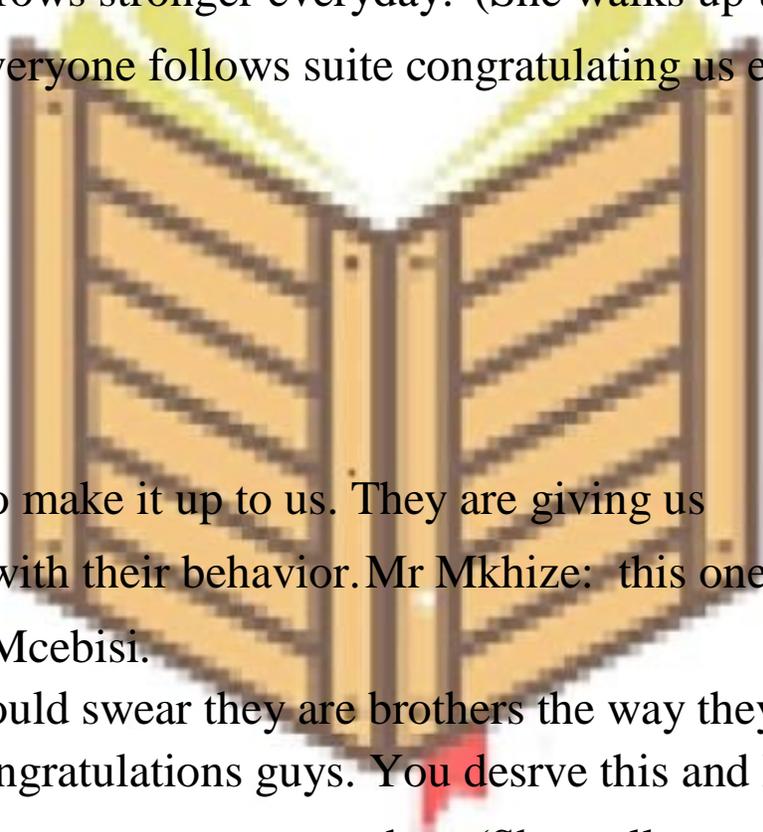
Thando: congratulations guys. You deserve this and I pray that your love grows stronger everyday. (She walks up to us and hugs us. Everyone follows suite congratulating us except for Lwazi

Sponsored

they need to make it up to us. They are giving us headaches with their behavior. Mr Mkhize: this one is just like Mcebisi.

Me: you would swear they are brothers the way they are.

Thando: congratulations guys. You deserve this and I pray that your love grows stronger everyday. (She walks up to us and hugs us. Everyone follows suite congratulating us except for



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lwazi Lwanele and Lisakhanya. I swear these three have more drama than the whole family combined.)

Lwazi: don't look at us like that. You made miss seeing you exchange your vows  
Lisakhanya: we missed being flower girls

Lwanele: I'm just mad you didn't tell us.

Me: come on guys. We knew you were going to angry with but went ahead and got married hoping that you would be happy for us. I'm already making it up to you guys with the trip to Zambia.

Lwazi: there's a watch I've been meaning to buy for myself... Me: Fine I'll buy it for you if it means you will stop sulking.

Lwazi: congratulations man. It's about time you put a ring on it. (He smiles and hugs and the girls join in. I swear Lwazi is going to be the death of me.)

\*  
\*  
\*

LATER  
ON  
LION'S  
DEN

\*  
\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

The grand parents have gone to sleep. We decided to carry on with the night we have now changed into our casual clothes and we are having a braai. The kids are sitting by the pool. The ladies are busy with light snacks to go with the meat.

Bandile: why her?

Ayanda: she is special she touches my heart in a way that no woman has. Dad I know she is the one that I have been waiting for. I want to take my time and get to know her. I want her to get to know me. Her smile makes weak her tears break me her laughter brings joy to my heart.

Me: How long has this been going on?  
Ayanda: it's been a few months now.

Me: I don't care if you are Bandile's son if she ever comes home crying because of you I'll kill you and bury you in a shallow grave. Do you understand me

Ayanda: I understand.

Mcebisi: You are just like my father in law. You and him same bag of maize meal. We've been getting close getting to know you and you keep such a big secret from us.

Bandile Jnr: he really can keep secret there was not even a sign that he is dating her. he came over a few times with her here but they acted like nothing was happening.

Mcebisi: they are good actors. They should be awarded an Oscar. Lwazi: they definitely do deserve an Oscar

Bandile: You know that we can put a stop to this right. Ayanda I've been friends with her father for a very long time. We've become brothers and I've become her uncle. We've become family.

Ayanda: I understand all of that dad but this was not planned. It just happened dad.

Me: we understand that and we also understand that you guys didn't spend much time together growing up and we understand that it is something beyond your control. I am not going to say don't date. If your relationship is meant to be then it will happen if not then it won't happen. I don't want you messing with my daughter I don't want her to be your fling she is probably not like any of the girls you've dated.

Sipho: this family has so much drama.

Lwazi: You can say that again. Qhawe didn't even give us a hint about him getting married. People really know how to keep secrets in this family. Ayanda you know us you know how we are with the girls in this family so you know that if you make one wrong move we will be on your case.

Bandile: she has school and she lives with her parents you have to respect that.

Me: You will come over to my house by invitation and when you pick her up for a date or whatever provided she has permission to go out which won't happen very often.

Ayanda: I understand.

Me: good then.

Mcebisi: let me give you a piece of advise since I have experience dating one of his daughters and even married her. Whatever you do always remember that these girls talk to him about everything.

Khaya: even my wife. I make one wrong move she is going to come running to him and on top of that my father in law is a lawyer. I'll leave that to your imagination.

Mcebisi: Wena Khaya you are screwed more than I am. You could end up in jail easily even looking at her in a way she doesn't like the father would throw you in jail for a week.

Luyanda: why are you talking about me like I am not here? Besides it is our job to protect our daughters. You will understand one day when you have your own.

Me: and that's only when you are married Ayanda. Ayanda: I got it.

Mcebisi: don't worry man. He'll come around eventually. At the end of the day he wants his daughters to be happy if you can manage that then you are in. Look at me (he smiles and winks at Ayanda.)

Lwazi: I need something to eat.

Mcebisi: I'm in the same boat as you. Let's see what's happening in the kitchen.

Andile: bring the meat the fire is ready. Ayanda I'm not going to say much all I am going to say is for you to treat her like the Princess that she is.

## CHAPTER 149

SUNDAY

\*  
\*  
\*

AYA

NDA

\*  
\*  
\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

Last night was a great night and surprising. We slept over at the Mtimkhulu residence. It felt so good being around Sibahle and not have to hide how I feel about her and be with her freely even though her dad kept his eye on me.

The brothers are worse than their father. When my brother and I came back from Johannesburg this is not what we expected. There is so much love around us now and we have decided to stay in Durban and expand our business here. Not that dad didn't show us love he did a lot but this is a different kind of love family love. I should actually speak to dad about bringing our grandfather here for a visit he'll definitely love spending time with everyone. There wasn't enough time during the wedding. my dad walks in interrupting my thoughts.

Dad: are you ok?

Me: Yes dad I am ok. Just thinking.

Dad: You know when you told me about your girl I never thought it would be Sibahle.

Me: I know dad. I also never expected to feel the way I feel about her. I think I love her dad.

Dad: You don't think. You do know that you love her you just don't want to admit it. You are afraid to admit it. I'm sure she is just as afraid as you but she was brave last night by standing up for your relationship.

Me: I know she is an amazing woman.

Dad: You have to be good to her son. I know that you've had issues with females because of your mother but I can see that you are different with her. I watched the two of you last night. I haven't seen you like that in a long time. You were truly enjoying yourself and so free around her. You were yourself. I am happy that you are starting to see that not all women are like your mother.

Me: she makes me want to be a better man for me and for her. I just hope that she won't get tired of me I hope she will stand by me through it all especially since Asive and I just started a business it's going to take a lot of work.

Dad: Never at anytime forget to make time for her. You must always have time for her. I get busy at times with my work but I always make time for my wife. I see you guys are getting along very well. Me: yes we are. When are you making us a little sister?

Dad: it will just happen. We'll see. I didn't think you guys would want to have a sibling.

Me: we do and hopefully it's a girl. (Sibahle walks in while we were talking she had a cup of coffee with her.)

Sibahle: Morning (she walked towards me) I thought you

were alone. I brought you some coffee. Sorry Uncle B I didn't know you were here.

Dad: It's ok. I'm sure my wife has made me some.

(Sibahle walks closer to me and hands me my coffee with a warm smile.) guys I want to say something to you.

Sibahle I have known you from when you were a baby I have been a part of your life from day one and I never imagined that you would date my son. I always thought I would protect you against some idiotic guy that would want to play. I never thought I would have to protect you against my son. Maybe if you guys had spent more time at a younger age you wouldn't be dating today. I know that we are not family by blood but nevertheless we are family and we take care of each other and I want the two of you take care of each other and don't forget the lessons we have taught you. Always treat each other with respect. (Uncles Lwazi walks in with Mcebisi they don't even knock.)

Dad: do your knuckles hurt so much that you can't knock? Lwazi: this is not your room it's your son's room.

Mcebisi: It looks like we  
are too late anyway. Me:

Too late for what?

Mcebisi: we wanted to see if she was going to bring  
something to drink in your room or wait until you went  
downstairs I guess she brought. Is it coffee or tea?

Me: It's coffee. Wait a minute why does it matter  
to you if she brings it here or wait Lwazi: His wife  
waited until he was in the kitchen. He just lost  
R500 to me.

Sibahle: You made a bet of what I would do  
Sponsored



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

you guys are not serious

Dad: and I bet this was your idea Lwazi.

Lwazi: Actually this time around I am innocent it wasn't my idea or let me say our idea. It was one of the twins

Sibahle: You guys are so unbelievable. I am not talking to you for the rest of the day. Mcebisi: it was not our idea you can't punish us.

Sibahle: the mere fact that you had a bet you were a part of it. Unbelievable. I'll see you later babe. (she kisses my cheek and walks out of the room)

Me: really guys really. (they just smile and shrug.)

\*

\*

\*

NTA

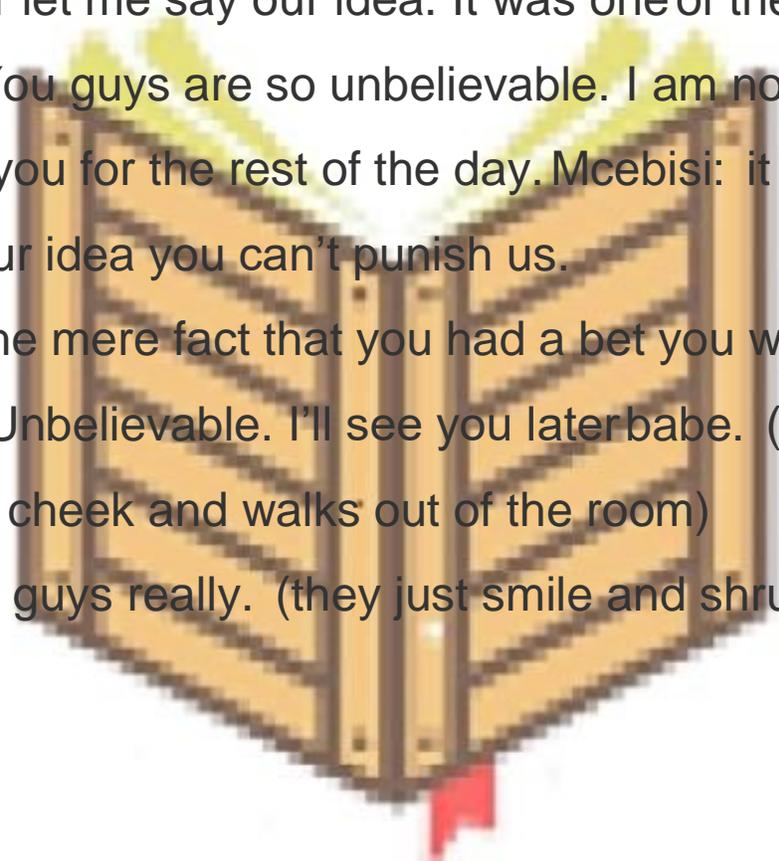
NDO

\*

\*

\*

All our lives all we ever wanted was to have a loving family



NOVELSGURU.COM

and now we do. A big loving family. My little sisters are a handful though especially at school but honestly I am loving being the brother.

Zenande: Have you thought about what was said last night at the dinner. Me: I have and I actually want to do it.

Lonwabo: I don't see why not. We never used the Tom name anyway and plus he agreed to the whole thing so I don't see why we shouldn't change our surname.

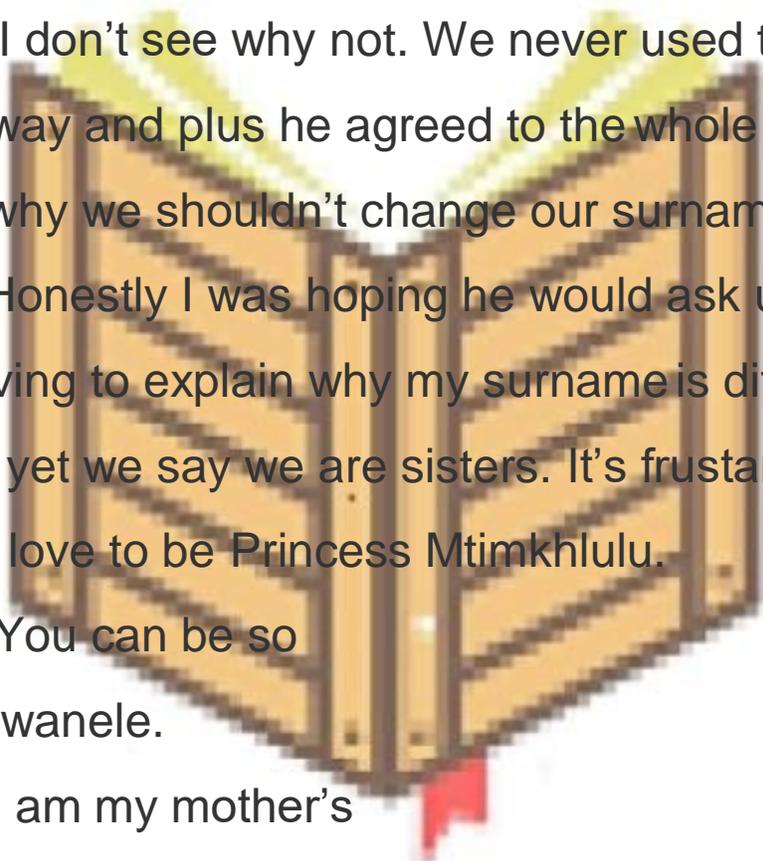
Lwanele: Honestly I was hoping he would ask us to. I'm tired of having to explain why my surname is different from Lisa's and yet we say we are sisters. It's frustrating. I for one would love to be Princess Mtimkhulu.

Zenande: You can be so dramatic Lwanele.

Lwanele: I am my mother's daughter I guess

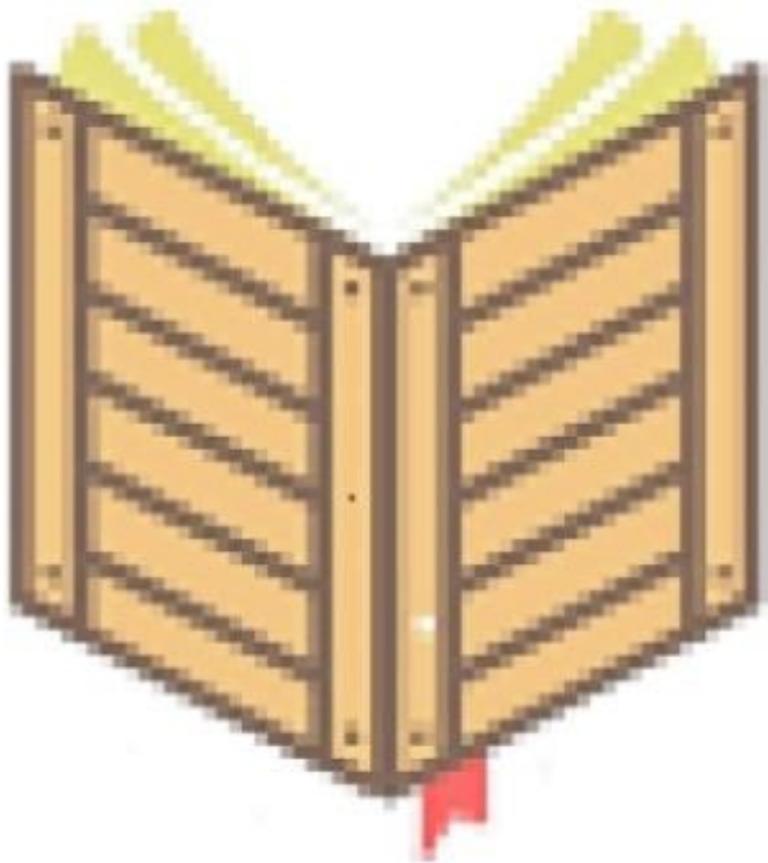
Me: Mom is not dramatic you are becoming more like uncle Lwazi everyday. You and Lisa are spending too much time with him now you are adopting his dramatic tendencies.

Lisakhaya: Oh please just leave us alone. we like spending time with him. He is fun. So you guys are going



NOVELSGURU.COM

to change your last name to Mtimkhulu?  
Lonwabo: Yes we are. (Oyama joins us)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Oyama: Hey guys

Me: Hey. Are you ok?

Oyama: I'm fine. Just didn't sleep much.

ME: I know. I heard you scream a couple of times last night. Was it the nightmares? Oyama: Yes it was.

Me: I could tell. You only slept when Wabo went to sleep next to you. Oyama:

please don't tell your parents. I don't want them to worry.

Lwanele: we won't tell them.

Oyama: I heard you guys talking about your last name are you going to change it? Me: yes we are. It's the right thing to do and we want to do it.

Lonwabo: and it would be the best way to honour him as our father carrying on his name and his legacy.

Oyama: that is wonderful. Your parents would really appreciate that. Your dad would love that especially the way you put it Wabo. I've been meaning to ask you. Why do they call you Wabo? Lonwabo: its was Lisa's way of calling me and everyone ended up calling me Wabo.

Oyama: I like it. (she says

that smiling at him) Me:

I've been thinking.

Zenande: about what?

Me: we should have a day of fun for just us I mean all the kids including the big kids too. Maybe even a weekend. I know the parents wouldn't mind especially since the older kids will be around. Oyama: You should speak to them they won't just agree to every thing.

Zenande: yes we will have to speak to them first. (Sibahle joins us as well.) Sibahle: what are you going to talk to the parents about?

Me: a weekend away for us kids.

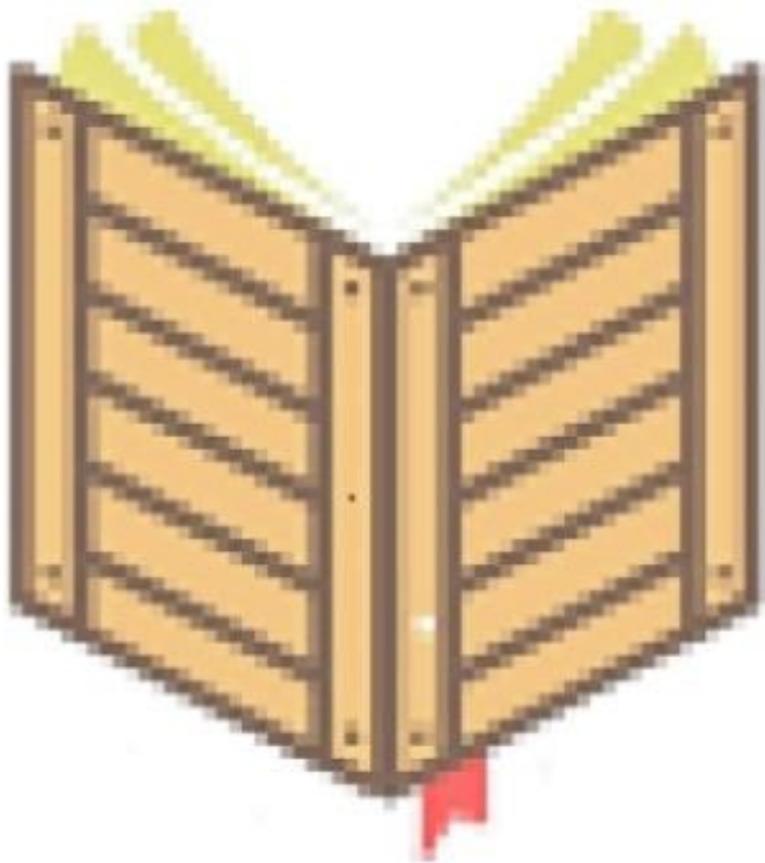
Sibahle: I'm sure they won't mind they probably want some time alone.

Oyama are you ok. I heard you last night and when I went to check on you Wabo was sleeping next you.

Oyama: I am fine Sibahle. I don't get them every night like I used to before. They are getting better.

Sibahle: Listen my brothers have a project called the BROTHERHOOD. They help abused males in anyway that they need help. Would you like to share your story of what happened with the BROTHERHOOD maybe someone out

there needs to hear from you so that it can encourage them to come out and speak out. The guys want to involve women as well even though their main focus is on men and young boys but they don't want to leave out women and children.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Oyama: Wabo once told me about the project and when I am ready I'll share my story maybe I can get the other girls that were his victims to come forward as well.

Zenande: do you think they will?

Oyama: I don't know but I hope they will especially now that he is in jail.

Lwanele: My grandfather bought a dance studio for me. It has a lot of young girls and boys my age and younger and some are just street kids that the BROTHERHOOD are helping. We are trying to recruit more older people to join plus dancing can be therapeutic. We are also going to have a dance off we are raising funds to build a shelter for the homeless.

Oyama: that's amazing. I would love to be part of that and plus I love dancing. Tell you what I'll try and recruit some of the students at campus to join in and maybe some of them can help coach.

Zenande: as long as they don't expect to be paid. This is a project where one volunteers their services and they do it for the love of doing it.

Oyama: I understand that.

Lonwabo: I didn't know you love dancing. (He smiles at

her knowing that he also loves dancing and he coaches at the studio as well)

Oyama: there's a lot you don't know about me Mr Mtimkhulu. Lonwabo: I love the sound of that.

Me: you two should just get married.

## CHAPTER 150

A MONTH LATER

\*

\*

\*

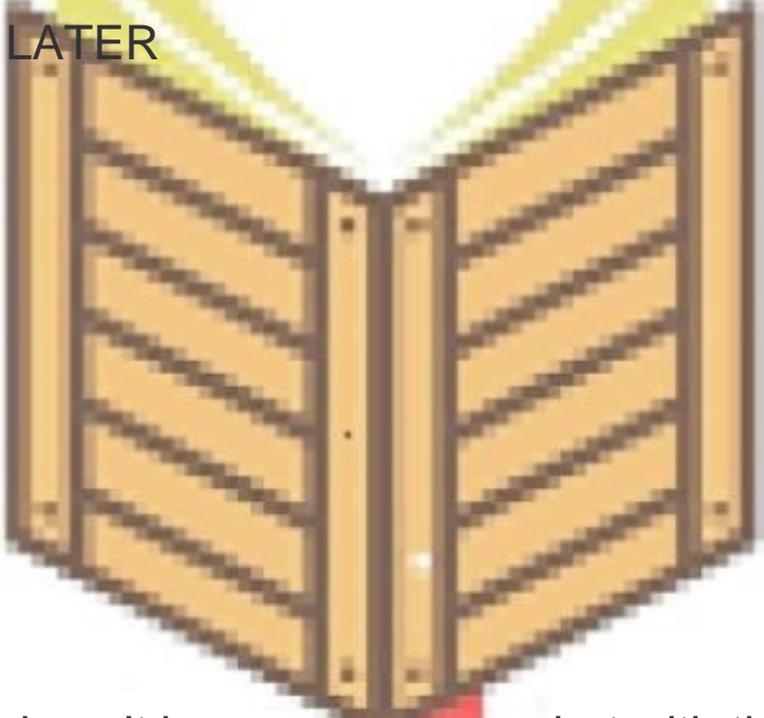
OYA

MA

\*

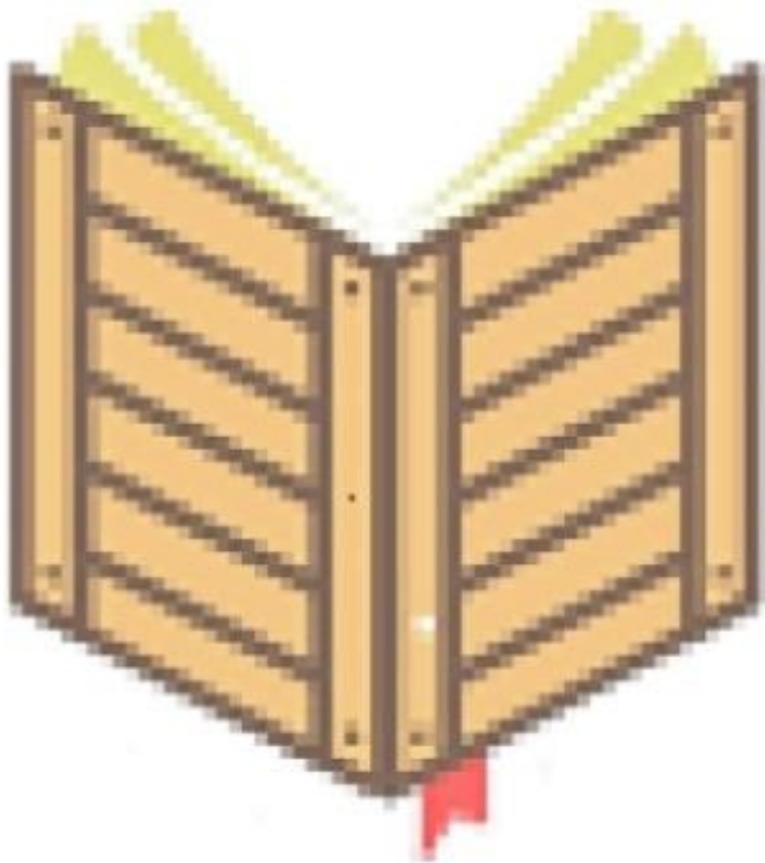
\*

\*



My journey hasn't been an easy one but with the support of my family and Lonwabo's family I am getting there. Healing is a process a long process at it. there are no short cuts. I must say that I am grateful to Lonwabo he is always there and my parents too. Lonwabo's siblings check on me everyday. I think they are taking turns doing that. I think today is one of the most difficult days in this

healing journey of mine but my therapist told me it's something I have to do in order to move on



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

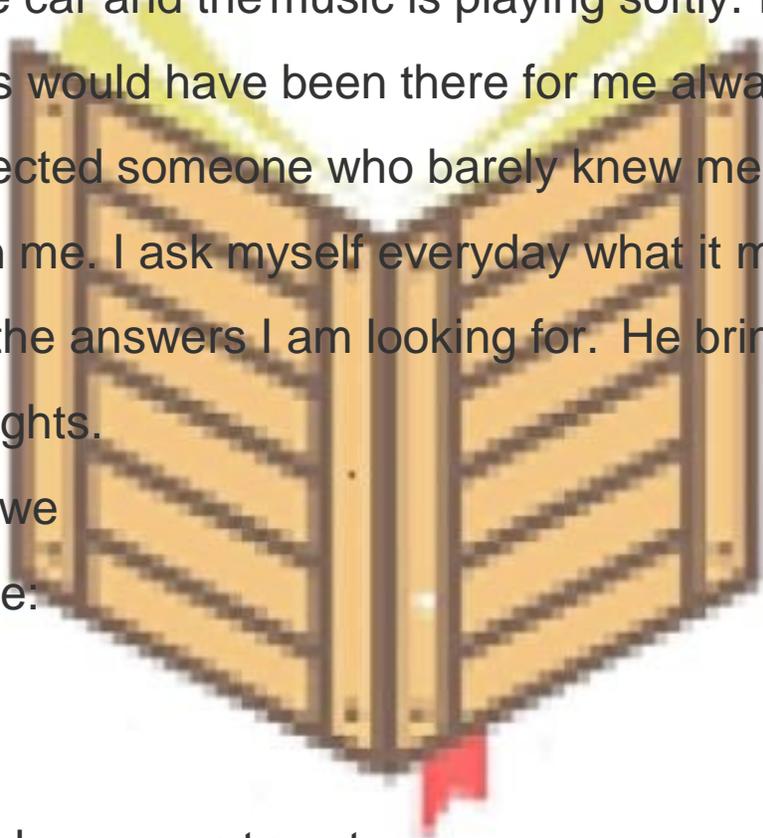
completely with my life. Even my parents agree with the therapist but they are not coming with me today.

He has been so quiet since he drove off from my place. I think he is just letting me be with my thoughts I wish he would say something just to distract me. It's just the two of us in the car and the music is playing softly. I know that my parents would have been there for me always but I never expected someone who barely knew me to be so invested in me. I ask myself everyday what it means and I never get the answers I am looking for. He brings me out of my thoughts.

Lonwabo: we  
are here Me:  
ok. thank  
you.

Lonwabo: do you want me to  
come in with you? Me: No.  
this is something I have to do  
on my own.

Lonwabo: I'll wait for you here then. Just call  
me if you need me to come in. Me: I will.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Thank you for coming with me.

Lonwabo: I wouldn't be anywhere else.

Me: Let me go in. (he walks me to the door he holds my waist pulls me close to him and holds me tight at the waist and whispers in my ear.

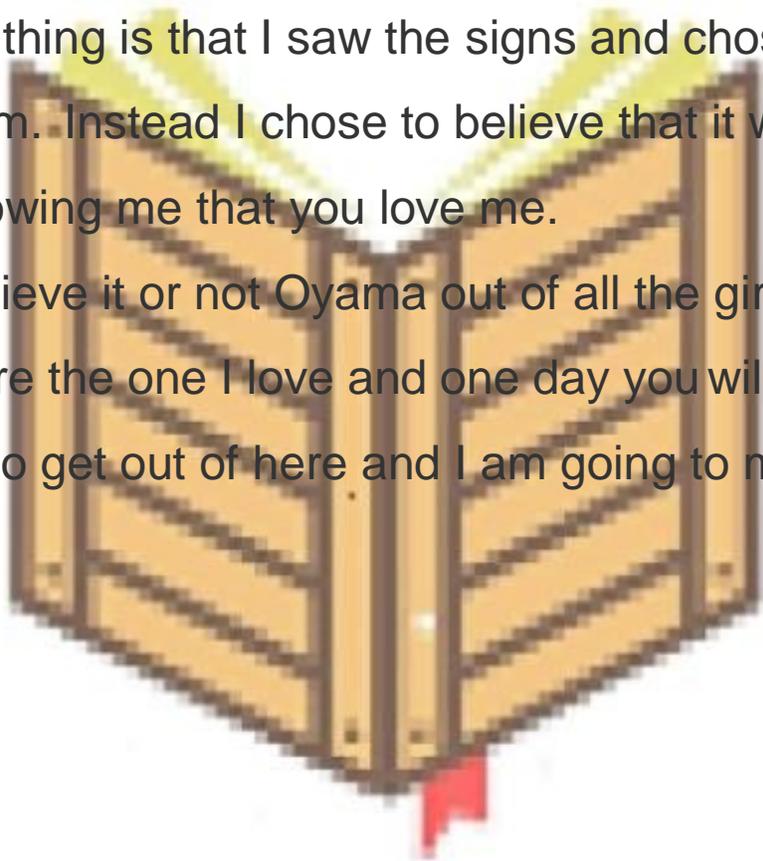
Lonwabo: Don't wear this dress again especially when you come here. (He let's go kisses my forehead and walks away before I could say anything leaving me stunned and confused by what he just said. The guards let me in and sign in. I was taken to the visitors room and I was told to wait there. I got tired of sitting I was just too nervous so I just decided to stand by the window while I wait. I turn around when I hear the door open and there he was accompanied by two gaurds. He takes a sit at one of the tables and I walk towards him and seat oposite )

Lunga: You look amazing as usual. To what do I owe this visit?

Me: it's not that I wanted to come here but I came so that I can be able to move on with my life. I came here to tell you that I forgive you even though you never asked for forgiveness I forgive you. Lunga: I really don't know what you want me to say to you

Me: I don't want you to say anything. There is nothing you can say me to me that would change how I feel about you. You are a psychopath Lunga. You don't see anything wrong in what you did to me and those other girls. I'm not expecting an apology from you because I know I'll never get one. You know what's funny about this whole thing is that I saw the signs and chose to ignore them. Instead I chose to believe that it was your way of showing me that you love me.

Lunga: believe it or not Oyama out of all the girls I was with you are the one I love and one day you will be mine. I am going to get out of here and I am going to make you mine.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: as I understand it you are never getting out of here  
Sponsored

you are never getting out of here you don't even have a possibility of getting out on parole.

Lunga: I will get out my dear and you Oyama will be mine.

Rugby boy had better enjoy himself with you while he still can.

Me: the day you decide you come after me is the day you sign your own death warrant. I would tread carefully if I were you.

Lunga: Oh please what can you do to me nothing. Rugby boy is also going to pay for what he did to me.

Me: don't test me Lunga. Remember you are here because I stood up for myself and the other girls you raped. You are no longer in control of my life Lunga. I have control of my own life and I am not about to let you or the likes of you make me live my life in fear. You are nothing to me and never will be anything to me except a nightmare that I am getting over. Goodbye Lunga. (I could tell that I pissed him off with the things I just said but I

don't care. This is my life and I am owning it. When I get outside Lonwabo was sitting on the passenger side with the door open busy on his phone. He looked so handsome. My mom said I should be sure about how I feel before I tell him and make sure that I am not making him Lunga's rebound. I wish I knew what he was thinking when he looks at me.

Lonwabo: staring is rude

Me: I'm sorry I didn't realise I was staring.

Lonwabo: I see. How did it go? ( He asks as he moves from the passenger seat making way for me and he moves to the driver's side and drives off)

Me: I think it went well but he threatened me that when he gets out I will be his.

Lonwabo: he should be thankful that he is alive. The day he decides to lay his hands on you is the day he dies.

\*

\*

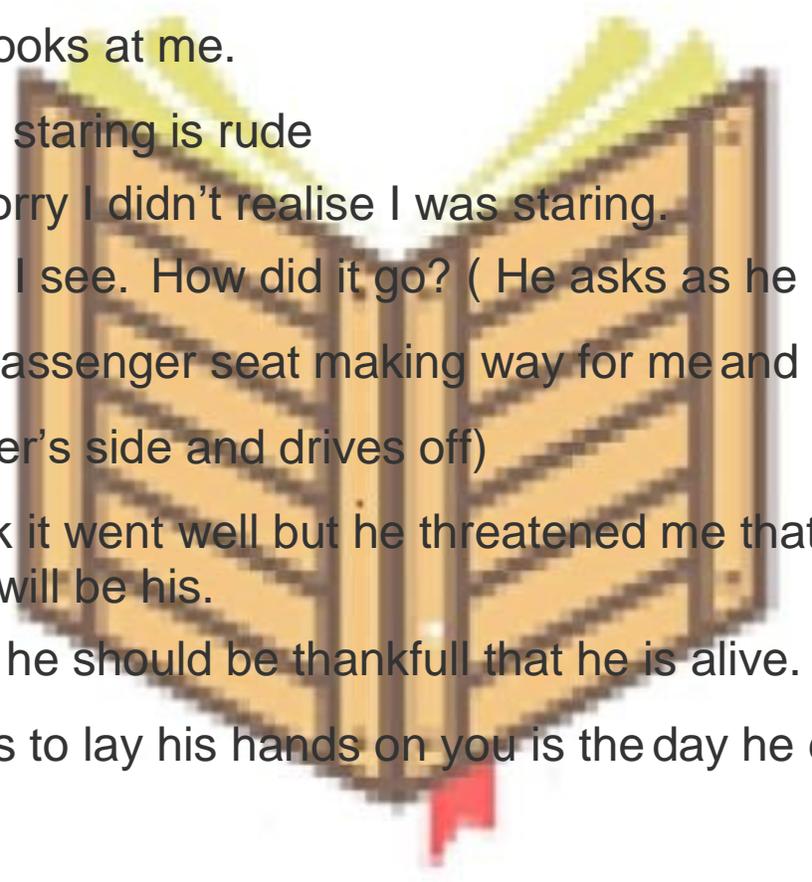
\*

S

N

E

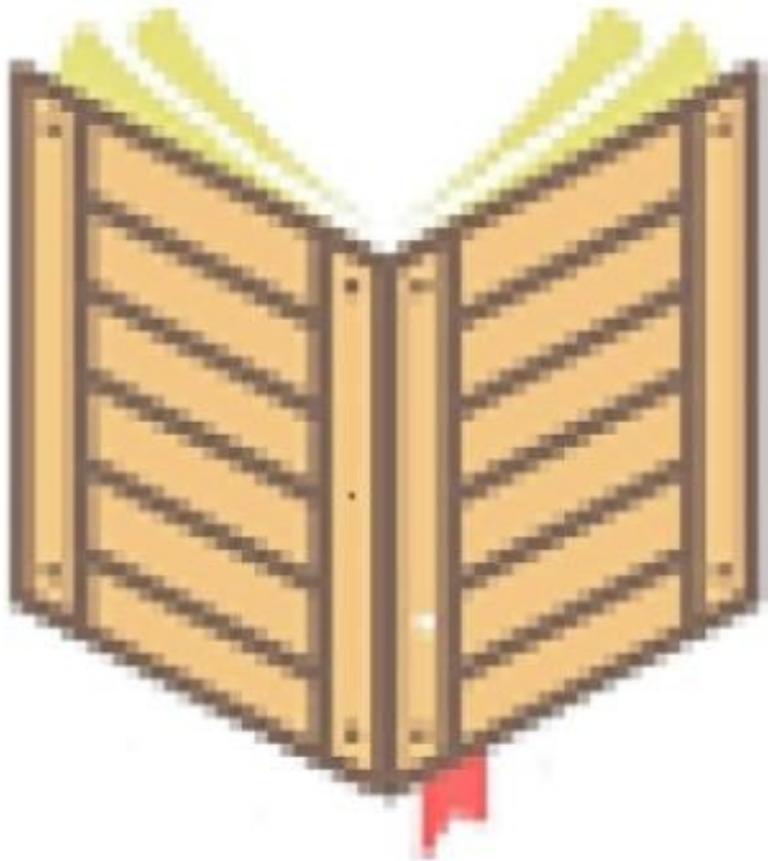
\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*



[NOVELSGURU.COM](http://NOVELSGURU.COM)

Me: Mom can we please not do this. This is not going to go well.

Mom: that girl is in your shoes Sne. You are the one that should be married to him not her. Me: he doesn't want me mama. Can we just leave it and I can't make him want me.

Mom: well this is the only way you can. (she says as we get into this house)

Her: take your shoes off and leave them by the door.

(we do as told walk in and sit on the grass mat layed out on the floor infront of this old woman.) you shouldn't be here. I cannot help you Mom: what do you mean you cannot help me.

Her: You came here with intention to cause harm to others and that is not how I work. And the people you want to hurt are protected. There is nothing you can do to them.

Me: what do you mean?

Her: everything you do to hurt them will come back to you ten times more. Mom:

How is that possible you are said to be powerfull.

Her: whoever is protecting them is more powerful than I am. Even when she dies they will remain protected. What

I am trying is that leave them alone and that is the best thing you can do for yourself.

Sne: ma please let's just leave them alone. I don't want to do this anymore. Please mama. Mom: How can you give up so easy

Sne: I'm not giving up I just don't want to go after Mcebisi. Mom: how do you plan on having the life that you want Sne. Me: Let's just go

home mama.

Her: You should listen to your daughter. Leave those people alone.

\*

\*

\*

ED

DIE

\*

\*

\*

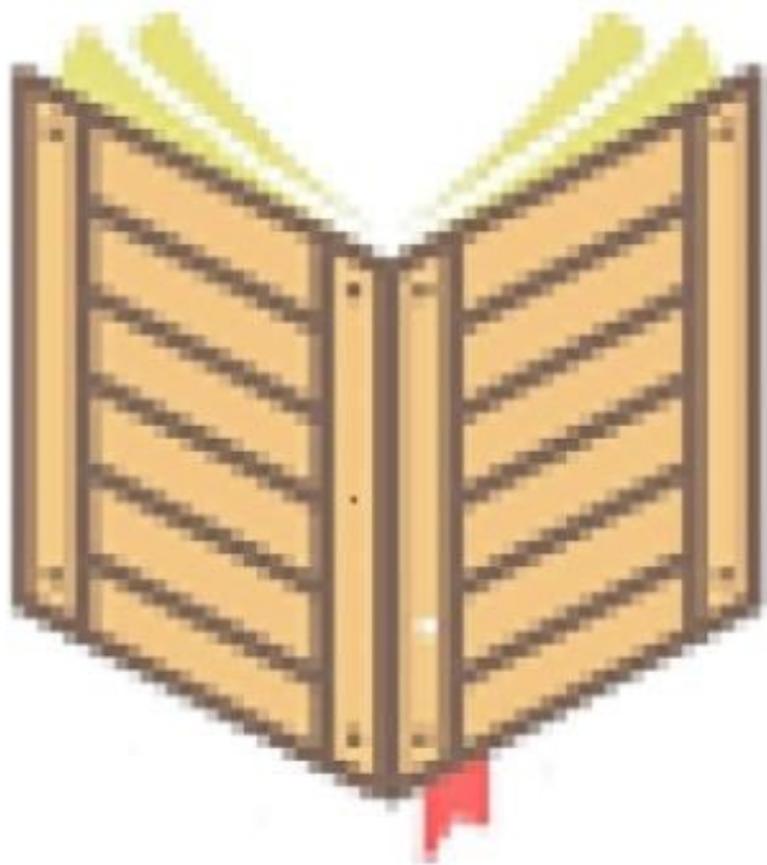


NOVELSGURU.COM

I missed the dinner party last month and everyone learned that Khanyi and Qhawe were married. What they don't know is that I knew about this whole thing and they are going to kill me but they'll get

over it. My wife is also pregnant and it's been great. We just got back from a holiday trip in Cape Town. We needed the time to ourselves. I want us to spend as much time together as we can because when the baby is born we won't have enough time to ourselves.

Me: Hey Khanyi



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Khanyi: Hey Eddie what's up?

Me: I need you to help with the number fo the Sangamo lady we met then we were in King Williams town. I wanted to tell here that my is pregnant . she told us to be patient that we will be blessed with another child. I must say I didn't believe her but today I feel the need to than her.

Khanyi: I'll give you her number you can call her. Over the years I have learned to trust her. She is the only traditional healer that I actually trust. She has helped me with a lot things in my life.

Me: I hear you. So how did the family take the news?

Khanyi: not so well but they have accepted it and they are looking forward to the Zambia trip. Me: I told you that it would work. What about Lwazi Lisa and Iwanelele .

Khanyi: those three are so dramatic. Qhawe is buying Lwazi a watch that he has been meaning to buy for himself I don't know what the girls are getting.

Me: we've been keeping tabs on everyone who is in prison because of us and so far there are no threats and no problems.

Khanyi: that's great news. I need your

help with something though. Me: I'm listening

Khanyi: I think that one of the employees of one of the construction companies is stealing from us I'm not sure who it is. Can you look into it for me.

Me: Sure no problem. When did you speak to Nkosikhona's wife? Khanyi: I think two weeks back wh?

Me: I just think that we need to watch her kids. They might come for revenge in the future. Khanyi: I really

CHAPTER 151  
hope they don't. the last thing I would want to do is destroy their lives. They must not come after my kids otherwise there will be hell to pay.

SATURDAY

\*

\*

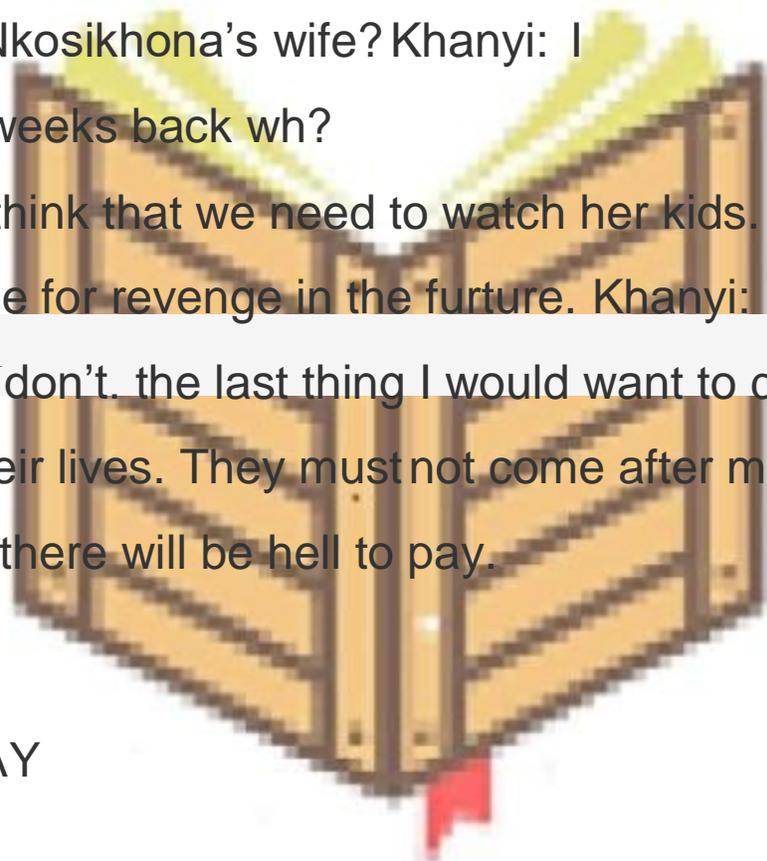
\*

ZWELI

BANZI

\*

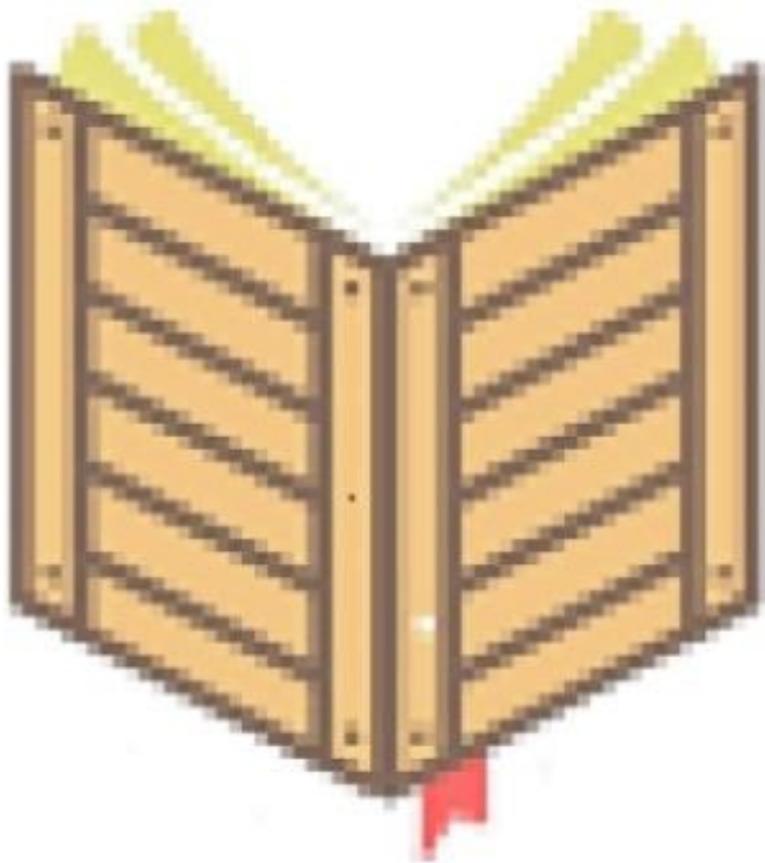
\*



NOVELSGURU.COM

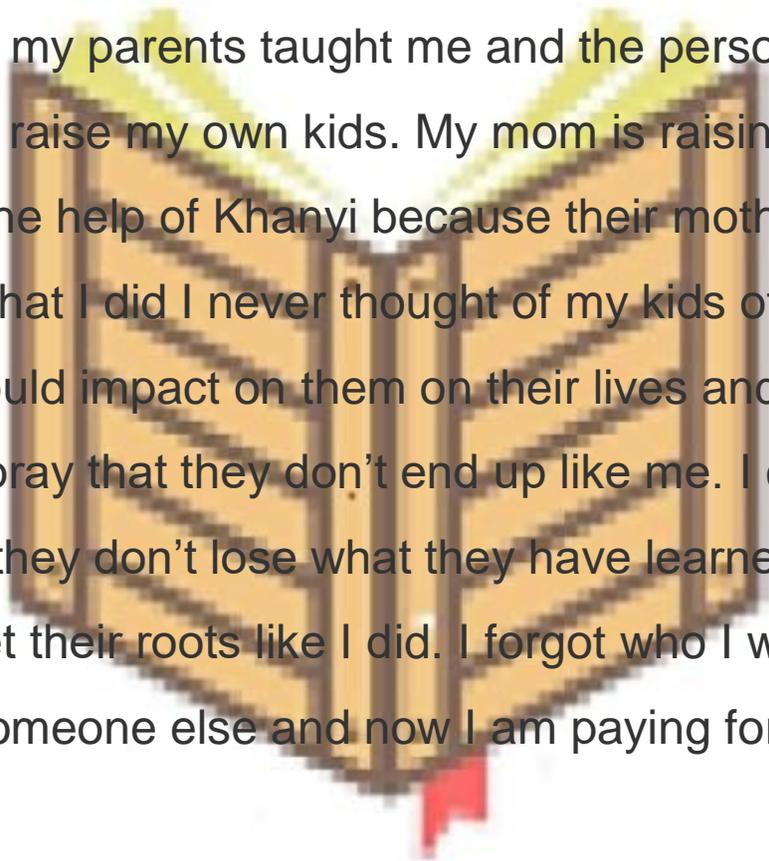
\*

I never thought in my life I would end up here. I grew up with everything. I was never a spoilt brat but I had everything I needed but somehow I always wanted to have more. My dad would always



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

tell me that I should learn to appreciate what I have. What I had was never enough for me. I always had to have more. I was always at the top of my game in everything I did. I always made sure I had what I wanted and I think that's where the problem came in. I forgot about what I needed in life and focused on what I wanted. I forgot everything my parents taught me and the person I am. I can't even raise my own kids. My mom is raising my twins now with the help of Khanyi because their mother is also jail. In all that I did I never thought of my kids of how my actions would impact on them on their lives and now all I can do is pray that they don't end up like me. I can only hope that they don't lose what they have learned they don't forget their roots like I did. I forgot who I was and became someone else and now I am paying for my actions.



NOVELSGURU.COM

As parents we always think that we can't learn from our kids. I have come to realise that I am learning a lot from my kids. After everything that I have put them through they are really working hard not become like me. They are doing things differently. I guess for them having Qhawe in

their lives is motivating them to become better and he is really a good father to them. I hope that one day I can do things right with my kids I hope I can build some sort of a relationship with

them. Sometimes as parents we really have to pay attention to what we do in front of our kids pay attention to what they see in us as in the long run they turn to be what we portrayed to

them. Sometimes we raise our kids right teach them all the right things but they turn out bad only because they start listening to friends and succumb to peer pressure and make wrong choices. I chose to forget what I was taught and gave into to temptation and greed. Today the kids are visiting me they asked to see me and I don't know why. Maybe it's because I agreed to the adoption thing. The guard walks into my cell.

Guard: You have a visitor let's go. (I walk out and he takes me to the visitors area and there they are with their mother and she is so beautiful. Lwanele is really taking after her mother. I wonder why she was never enough for me now my loss is another man's gain.)

Me: Hi guys

Lwanele: Hi Banzi (I've gotten used to them calling me Banzi and I don't blame them. I never acted as a father to them.)

Khanyi: you look good.

Me: thank you. I can say the same for you guys. Look at these kids they are so grown.

Khanyi: they are growing up too fast for my liking. Look I'll give you some space so that you can talk. (she gets and walks to sit at the table that's by the window. I guess her husband is waiting for them outside. I call out to her)



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: please tell him to come in I would like to talk to him when we are done. (she looks surprised but nods.) Hey guys how are you?

Ntando: we are good and you?

Me: Surviving. So you wanted to see me. (Ntando and Nele look at Lonwabo. I guess he is the one that's suppose to tell me why they wanted to see me.)

Lonwabo: We heard that you agreed to the adoption why?

Me: Because I can see how happy you are with him. I can see how he is treating you just like you were his own kids. Anyone who doesn't know our story would swear that he is your biological father. I agreed because he can give you more than I can. I've been nothing but a pain in your lives I caused you more grief than happiness. I hurt you in ways that a parent should never hurt his kids. I was never a role model to you guys and he is. Even though I agreed to him adopting you it will be an open adoption I have not given up my parental rights with the hope that I can salvage our relationship. I won't be involved in any decision making that concerns your lives all I want is to have a relationship with you guys.

Ntando: I understand what you are saying. I believe in

second chances and I am willing to give you one.

Lonwabo: Did he talk to you about the name change?

Me: thank you Ntando. Yes he did and that is up to you guys. You never used my last name because me and your mom were not married when we had you. I would have loved for you guys to use my last name but really I don't deserve that. It is your decision.

Lonwabo: we have decided to take his name and we would like you to understand that we are not doing this to spite you but because he deserves the honour.

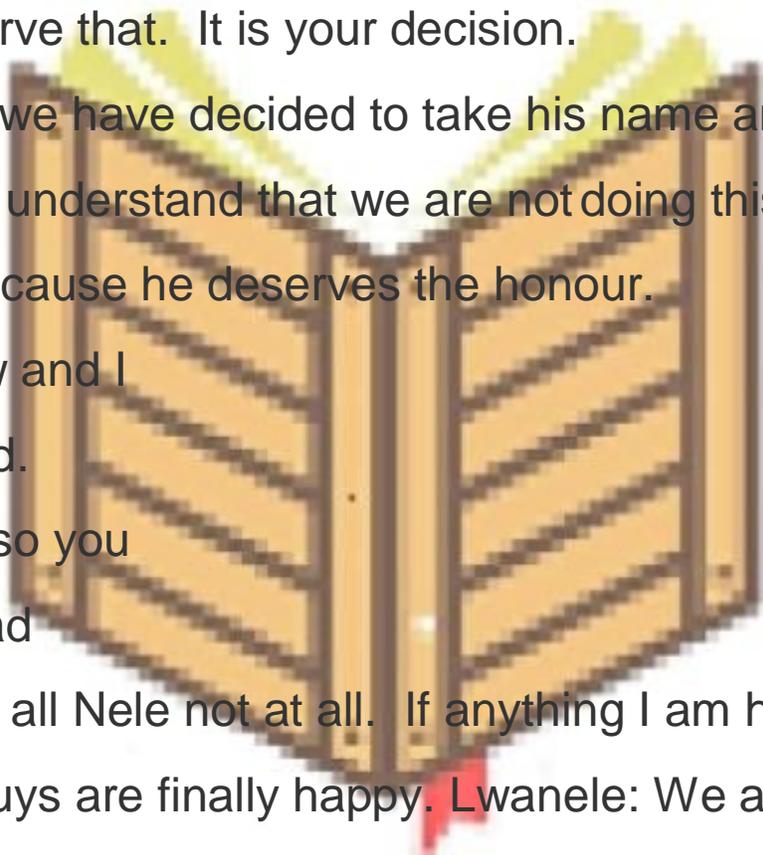
Me: I know and I understand.

Lwanele: so you are not mad

Me: Not at all Nele not at all. If anything I am happy that you guys are finally happy.

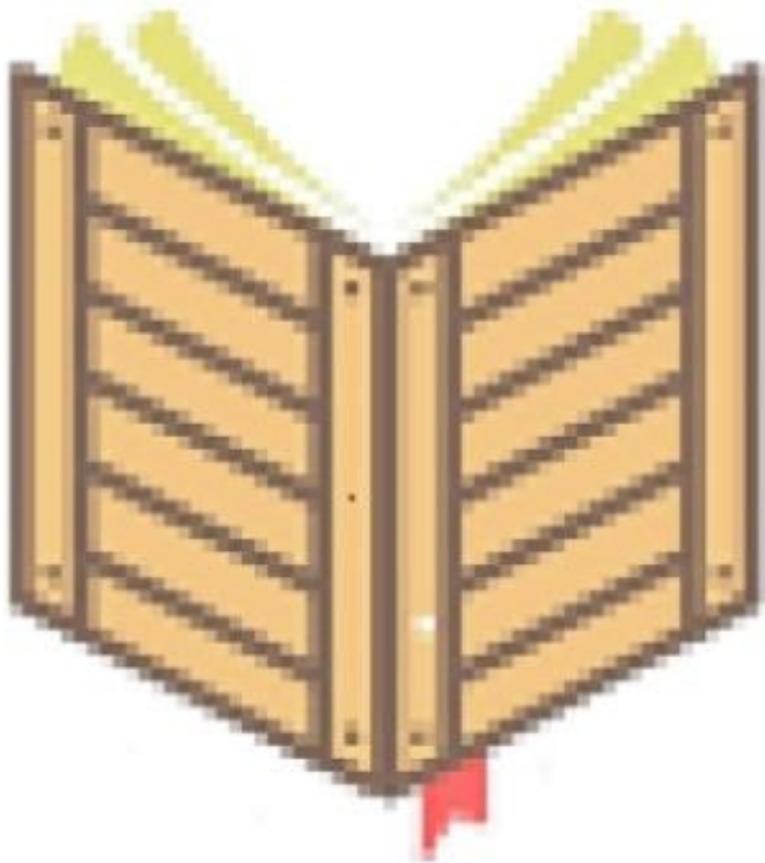
Lwanele: We are happy very happy. The twins will be spending the December holidays with us. And grandma is coming for a visit next week with them

Sponsored



NOVELSGURU.COM

very happy. The twins will be spending the December holidays with us. And grandma is coming for a visit next week with them if mom and dad say it's ok we can come and visit again with grandma and the twins.  
Me: I would really love that.



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Lonwabo: You really want a second chance? Me: I do. Are you willing to try?

Lonwabo: We can try and see.

Lwanele: He has a girlfriend now. Me: who has a girlfriend?

Lwanele: Wabo her name is Oyama.

Lonwabo: she is just a friend that's all.

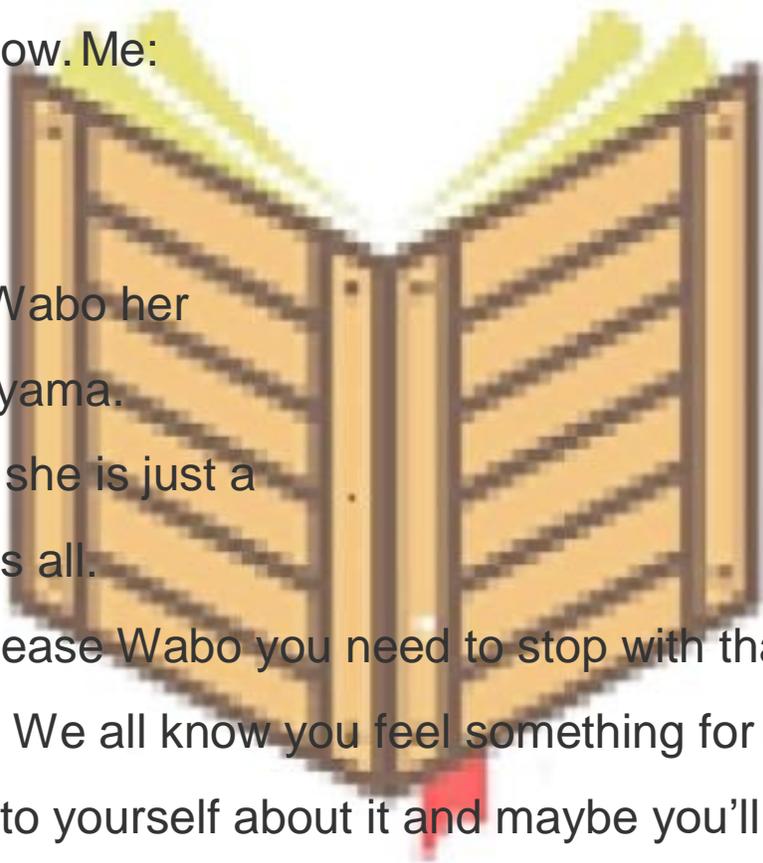
Ntando: Please Wabo you need to stop with that statement. We all know you feel something for her. Just be honest to yourself about it and maybe you'll eventually get some sleep at night.

Lonwabo: How do you I don't sleep at night.

Ntando: I'm your brother I know these things. Besides your sister here told me because she was concerned about you.

Lwanele: You really should just tell her how you feel.

(watching them talking like this makes me realise how



NOVELSGURU.COM

much I am missing out on. We continued talking about general stuff and they were asking me about how life is in prison. Their dad walked in and walked straight to his wife who stood up when she saw him he pulled her close to him and kissed her forehead. She turned to look at us and I nodded for them to join us.)

Qhawe: Zwelibanzi

Me: Hey (Lwanele went and sat next to him placing her head on side of his arm.) Qhawe: You asked to see me

Me: yes I did. I want to thank you for being the father I never was to them. I want to thank you for loving them the way you do for being a role model. You became their light you became their healing from the pain I caused them. Even when I die someday I'll knowing that my kids are good kids they have a good life and loving parents. I am ready to sign the adoption papers when they are ready.

Qhawe: I love them. They made it easy for me to love them they became my life they are my life. (he looks at them with a warm smile and so much love.)

Me: I have something else that I want to tell you guys Ntando:

that is?

Me: I have been diagnosed with Colon Cancer. It's at the early stages I'm starting with the treatment next week.

(they go silent looking shocked)

Khanyi: when were

you diagnosed? Me: 4

days ago

Lwanele: does that mean you are going to die?



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I'm not going to die anytime soon. It was found early before it could spread so now the doctors are going to treat it. I am going to fight it. I am going to be better because I still want more time with you guys. This time I am not giving up.

Lonwabo: I hope the treatment works. I really do. You might have been a horrible father but this is something I could never wish on my worst enemy.

Qhawe: I really do hope that it works.

Guard: Your time is up.

Me: Just a few minutes man.

Guard: I already gave you an extra 20 minutes. Let's go.

Me: fine. Thank you for bringing them Khanyi. I really appreciate it and thank you for the second chance. (I walk away with the guard as they leave as well. I must say that was a great visit.)

Guard: You have good kids.

Me: I know I'm trying to fix things between me and them.

Guard: Considering your state I hope it works out for you guys in time. You should have told them the truth about the stage of your cancer.

Me: I don't want them to feel sorry for me. I don't want

them to get close to me out of pity. Guard: I hear you

\*

\*

\*

S

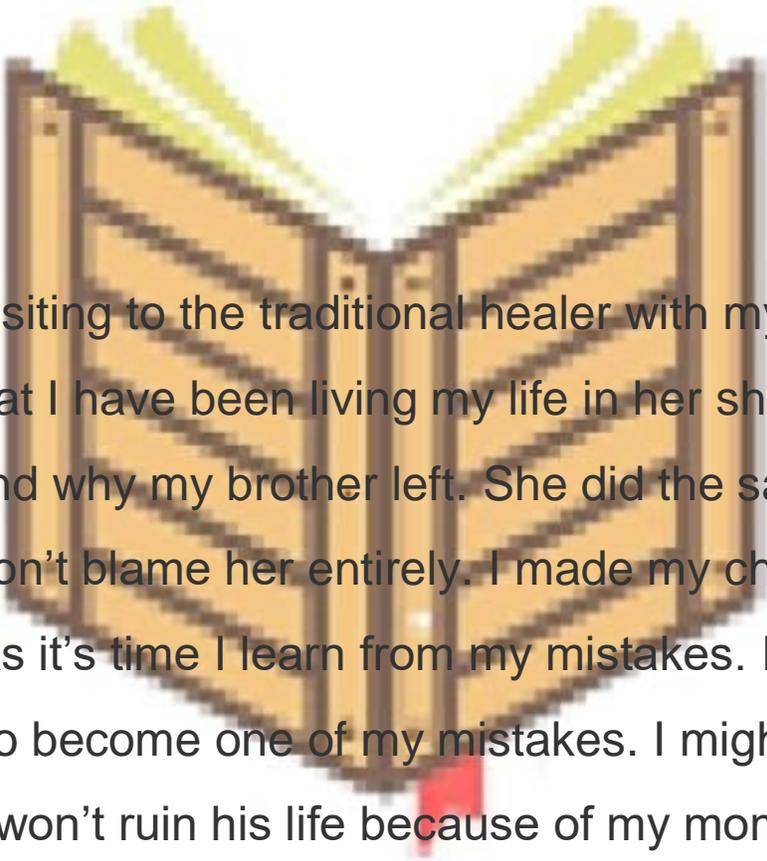
N

E

\*

\*

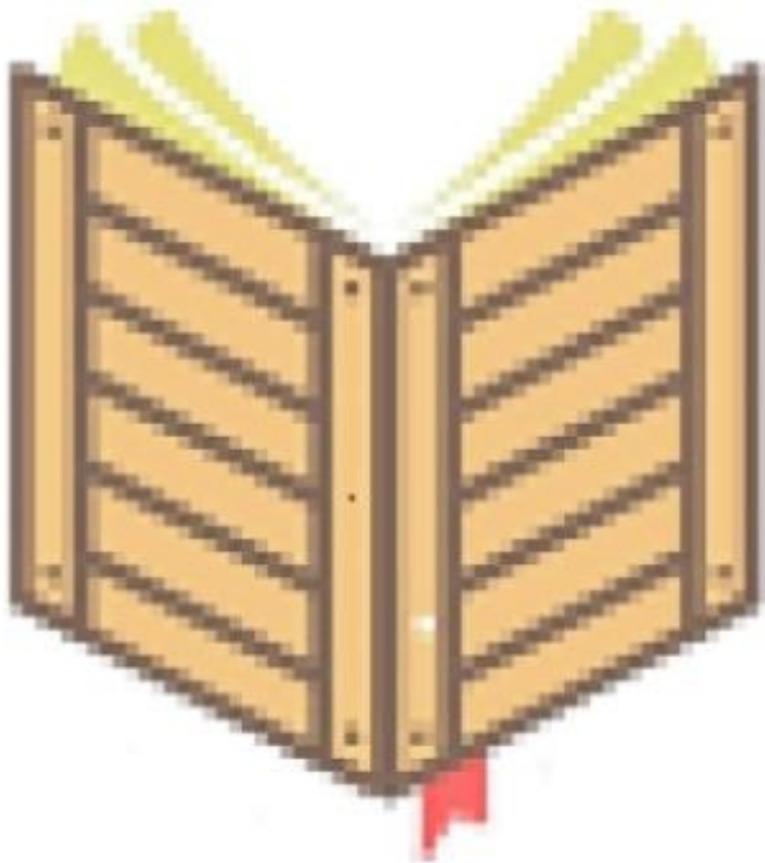
\*



After the visiting to the traditional healer with my mom I realised that I have been living my life in her shadow. Now I understand why my brother left. She did the same thing to him. I won't blame her entirely. I made my choices and now I think it's time I learn from my mistakes. Mcebisi is not about to become one of my mistakes. I might be a bitch but I won't ruin his life because of my mom. He made it clear to me that he doesn't want. His wife loves and she would kill for him. No matter how pathetic my life is right now I still value it. My friend was right I should just leave them

alone. Everytime she told me the truth I always thought

she was just being jealous but she is the most real friend I have. She is looking out for me. I should learn from her. she is an independent woman. She finished school she is working now and working on starting her own business and she wants us to be partner. Maybe I should take her up on her offer. At least I am smart enough to save



**NOVELSGURU.COM**

money from the money I get from the reach guys I date. I have something to put on the table for the business.

Maybe it's also time that I move out and start living on own. I've never lived on my own. My mom never wanted me to move out. She always wanted me to stay with her. my friend actually told me that as long as I still live with my mother at my age I'll never grow as a person. If I continue living with my mother I am going to find myself in more trouble than I anticipated. I have never used Muthi to trap a man or destroy someone's life and I am not about to start. I know how dangerous this thing can be. I have a friend that used it and it didn't turn out well for her. Mom is too desperate for money. Money is more important to her more than anything and that is what she taught. "Move above everything else"

Her: change is not easy my friend you have to take it one step at a time. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Me: I am willing to try. It won't hurt. I've never been independent. I've always depended on a man for everything.

Her: it's never too late to learn to stand on your own Sne.

SUNDAY

\*

\*

\*

QHA

WE

\*

\*

\*

It feels good to live life and not have to look over your shoulder.  
For a change we are living life peacefully.

Lwazi: so you and Khanyi are really going to go public with your marriage?

ME: Yes we are. People have been asking questions about us and now we are going to give them answers and this would probably be the last time we speak about our relationship in public. Our private life will remain private.

Bandile: At least there won't be any speculations about what's going on. We've also been getting a lot of questions maybe we should have a joint press conference.

Luyanda: that wouldn't be a bad idea.

Me: we'll have to speak to the wives first.

Luyanda: I doubt they will mind that very much but Lwandle is due anytime now and she would probably want to do it after she gives birth. But I think it will be better if we do it now.

Me: I think so because the baby will keep you very busy.

Lwazi: I think Thando is pregnant and I don't think she knows (Lwazi just said that out of the blue very unexpected.)

Bandile: why do you say that?

Lwazi: she has mood swings lately her eating habits have changed as well and she hasn't been on her periods in two months.

Me: How do you know when she is on her periods?

Lwazi: she always tells me so that I know there won't be any sex.

Bandile: I really hate that time. (my phone beeps indicating that I've received a message and not long after the guys phones beep as well.)

Me: I believe right now we own Food Lovers Market in La Lucia and three clothing shops at the mall.

Bandile: but you told her she can spend your money.

Me: yes I did but this much money on groceries and this is all because of you guys. You spend too much time at our house.

It's about time it changes I can't suffer alone.

Lwazi: Oh please I'm sure she didn't even put a dent on your bank account. Besides you are the one that chose to have a big house that can accommodate all of us and you have a man cave which makes me wonder why we are spending the day at

Bandile's house.

Me: We are spending time here because I am

tired of hosting you guys. Lwazi: hayibo

Qhawe how? I can't survive not going to your house.

Me: well my dear brother you are just going to have to survive it and next Sunday we are going to your house.

Lwazi: and I have to buy food for all of you NO NEVER!!!

Bandile: I'm buying food for all of you. My wife just spent enough for me to own shares at food lovers market and pick 'n pay. So you better get used to spending on us.

Lwazi: I don't think I like this rotating idea. Are the others also a part of it. Why don't we just stick to the original plan and that was going to the Mtimkhulu residence every Sunday.

Me: yes they are. And no no more spending every Sunday at my house. Everyone will have their turn.

Lwazi: maybe it should be the last

one in this circle. Luyanda: Nope

you are next and we are not changing

it.

Lwazi: I'm looking at this message and I'm about to have a heart attack. What the hell did Thando buy. This woman is going to be the death of me. Which when you a spend a Sunday at my house she is going to spend more. Someone kill me now.

Luyanda: How can you even ask that. I'm sure Thando has to buy groceries every week the way you eat. I'm sure she shops like Qhawe and Khanyi and their case is understable because their house has more people. What's your excuse?

Lwazi: You are just exergerating things. I don't eat that much.

ME: Oh please you and that son in law of mine eat like there's no tomorrow.

You know when we were in school I never thought we would be here living life the way we are. Luyanda: You could say that again. I never thought I would meet a crazy bunch of people and actually be a family. I must truly say that being Khanyi's lawyer changed my life and now I am about to be a father for the second time. After I was told Lungi that Lungi had died happiness was a distant thought in my mind. I just lived for the sake of living. Khanyi gave me reasons to be happy and look forward to life everyday. Then I met Lwandle and discovered my daughter was alive and well. They are my heart if I should lose them my heart would stop beating.

Bandile: we hear you man. There's no better feeling than knowing that you are living life and you have something to live for.

Me: How about we make the trip to Zambia a celebration of what we have achieved in life trials and tribulations that we've been through how about we celebrate our wives?

Lwazi: Don't you also have business in Zambia?

Me: I do that will just be a few meetings for two days that's all.

Lwazi: Ok then. (just then the ladies walk in with Sizwe and Anelisa.) Thando my love

Sponsored

that will just be a few meetings for two days that's all.

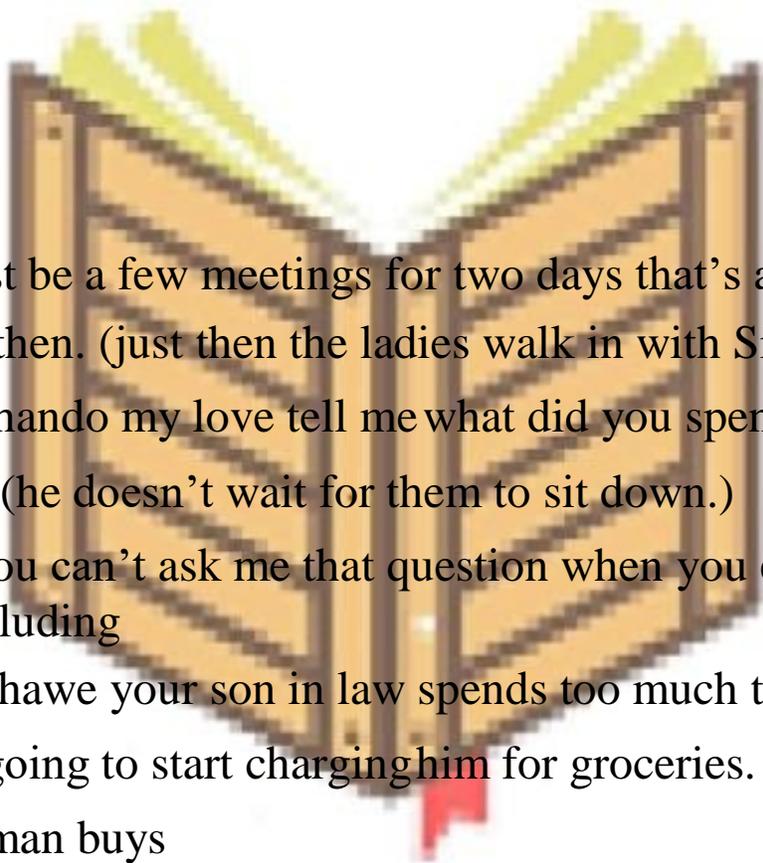
Lwazi: Ok then. (just then the ladies walk in with Sizwe and Anelisa.) Thando my love tell me what did you spend all that money on? (he doesn't wait for them to sit down.)

Thando: You can't ask me that question when you eat every five minutes including

Mcebisi. Qhawe your son in law spends too much time at my house I'm going to start charging him for groceries.

Me: Your man buys groceries at my house.

Thando: I hear you.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khanyi: Leave my son in law alone. Lwazi stopped buying groceries at the house a long time ago. He eats for free.

Me: so you have lying to me Lwazi?

Lwazi: I wouldn't say that exactly Qhawe but ..... did you have to tell them Khanyi? You know how your husband is.

Khanyi: it's the truth. I should have told my husband sooner. Where are the others? Bandile: they are coming.

They'll be here later.

Lwazi: Khanyi why are being like this

Khanyi: if you don't buy your share at my house then Mcebisi won't too.

\*

\*

\*

MAKHU

MALO

\*

\*

\*

I don't know what's going on with this child. She is changing. She doesn't even want anything to do with Mcebisi. Why can't she understand that I want the best for her. when her father he left us with nothing. I don't understand why children can't see that I want what's good for them. I want them to well taken care of. It's hard out there and they are busy playing games.

Sne: mama please just stop ok. This is my life I have to do



what's best for me and if I keep listening to you I am going to find myself in deep trouble.

Me: this is for your own good Sne.

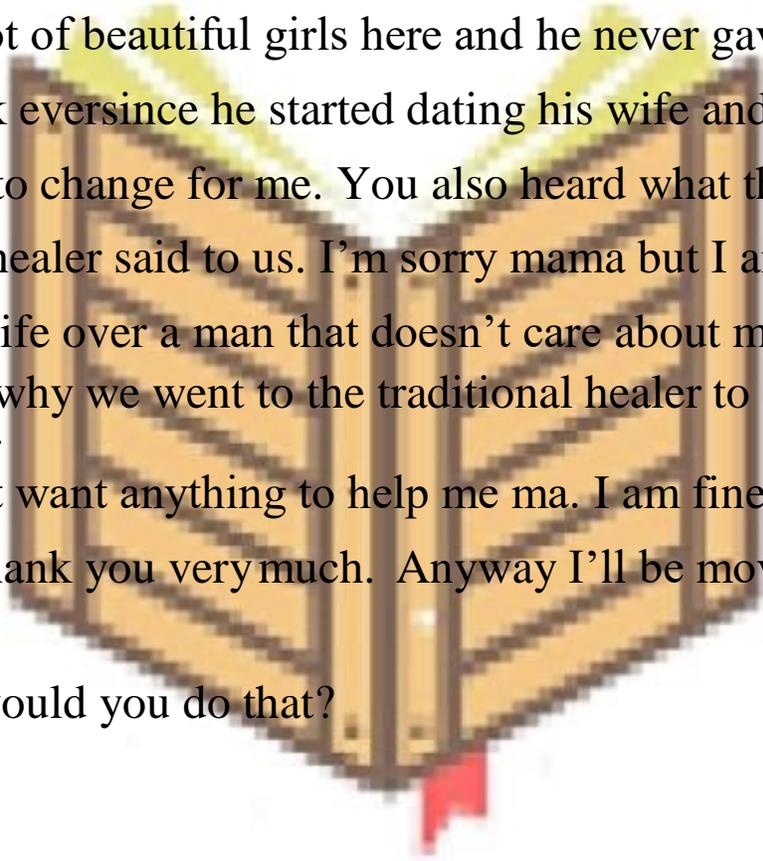
Sne: what I am doing ma is what's good for me. Mama I told you that Mcebisi's wife beat me and Mcebisi allowed it to happen that alone ma showed me he doesn't care about me and he never will. He loves his wife he only has eyes for her.

There's a lot of beautiful girls here and he never gave them a second look ever since he started dating his wife and you think he is going to change for me. You also heard what that traditional healer said to us. I'm sorry mama but I am not about to lose my life over a man that doesn't care about me.

Me: that's why we went to the traditional healer to get something to help you.

Sne: I don't want anything to help me ma. I am fine just the way I am thank you very much. Anyway I'll be moving out soon.

Me: why would you do that?



Sne: I'm doing it for me ma. I also need to grow as person and do things for myself. I can't always be living in your shadow. At least now I understand why Dumisani left. (she gets up leaves me there before I could even say anything. What has gotten into this child.

\*

\*

\*

SI

MA

\*

\*

\*

Life hasn't been easy in here but me and my sisters we are hanging in there. I received news that my husband was diagnosed with cancer and the treatment might not help. It might just prolong his life for a while. His father died from cancer now him. My babies have lost of us and by the time I get out here they would probably want nothing to do with me. They would be all grown up. They are going to lose their father but I hear that he gets visits from his children. Maybe his mom brings the twins to visit him. I doubt his older kids want anything to do with him.

Amanda: what's on your mind?

Me: My husband has cancer and it's not looking good. Amanda: that's

not good.

Me: I know. I need to make arrangements to go visit him.

Amanda: that is going to be difficult maybe they might allow it due to the fact he is sick and might die soon.

Me: it's worth a try and I miss my twins.

Amanda: I miss my kids and they haven't even been here to see me. Only their father came and it was not a pleasant visit.

Me: what do you mean?

Amanda: he told me that the kids are not interested in seeing me and that he is married now. Me: don't tell me you still love him. you guys broke up a long time ago.

Amanda; I'll always love Bandile. Not being loyal to him and not being a good woman to him are things I will always regret. There is no second chance for me there never was. You know Sima as women we always blame men for bad the shit that happens in our relationships and while we are pointing a finger at a man we don't don't realise that three fingers are pointing at us. Sometimes we just need to look in the mirror because sometimes it's not the man that is at fault it is the woman but because they have always been at the receiving end of it all we never

stop to ask ourselves if the current argument is your fault. We never stop to ask ourselves if we did anything wrong.

Me: what has gotten into you lately?

Amanda: Nothing. I just realised that Bandile never did anything wrong to me. He was always there but I made feel like he was not worthy I made him feel like shit every chance I got. I tried using his kids against him and to get him. Yet he did nothing but be a good man and a great father to our kids. He never even cheated on me Sima but I always accused him of cheating when ever he was working late building his company to be what it is today. Him and Lwazi are partners in the business and they were always together. Look at them today. the hardwork they put in has payed off and now they have time for their women and children. If I had held on understood what he was trying to do stayed by his side supported him when he needed me to and I didn't. I wouldn't be here today.

Me: I hear you but it is what it is Amanda and there's nothing you can do about it. Trying to destroy them is what landed us here. Zweli warned me to stay away from Khanyi a couple of times but I didn't listen and here we are.

## CHAPTER 153 (Finale)

1 YEAR LATER

\*  
\*  
\*

OYA

MA

\*

\*

\*

Life has been good. I've never been better. Nightmares have stopped. I only see a therapist when I need to. My parents have been a great support system and I passed my first year excellently as well. My parents always encouraged me never to give up and my relationship with my mom has improved a lot. Last year October Lonwabo's mom invited me to go to Zambia with them my parents were very hesitant about it but they eventually let me go. I must say it was so much fun I really enjoyed myself. We are now at the end of our second academic year today we were writing our last exam paper and Lonwabo is taking me out for dinner tonight. We've been friends for a year and six months. We've gotten much closer now. we spend a lot of time together. I'm close with his siblings as well. His big brothers treat me like

NOVELSGURU.COM

their little sister. Since it's just me and my sister it actually feels good to have

brothers. Choosing what to wear tonight has been a nightmare apparently I had wear an evening dress but I eventually went with a knee high body hugging blue dress with sparkles and a silver heel with a matching clutch bag. I don't know why I am nervous but then again this is not what we usually do. this is the first time he has taken me out to a formal dinner.

Mom: Oyama Lonwabo is here. ( this guy is always on time and always brings me home on time. I grab my phone and walk out of my room.) You look beautiful baby. What's the occasion today?

ME: Honestly mama I don't know. I was asked to wear an evening dress. (as we walk into the lounge there he was standing by there in his black tuxedo. My heart started beating faster than normal. Lonwabo just has effect on me. Maybe tonight I should just tell him how I feel. It's been over a year since Lunga and I am over that even though I will never forget but I have moved on now. I'm not afraid anymore.)

Lonwabo: You look amazing

Me: You don't look too bad yourself. We should get going.

Lonwabo: yes otherwise we'll be late for our reservation. We'll see you later ma and than you for letting me take her out tonight.

Mom: it's fine Lonwabo as long as you bring her home safe and

in one piece. (mom kisses my cheek and let's us go.)

When we get to the restaurant we are taken to our table and the setting in this place is amazing. Everyone is dressed formally. I guess it's one of those restaurants. I keep looking at him sitting opposite me. The tux suits him very well he looks very sexy in it.

Our waiter brings our

drinks. I need one just to calm my nerves. I have acquired the taste of red wine. I fell inlove with it when Lina introduced me to it. The ladies in that family love wine but Lina and Lungi never drink in front of their parents. )

Lonwabo: You really look beautiful tonight I love that dress.

Oyama: Thank you. ( the waiter brings our food and we carry on talking about everything. Our conversation is flowing easily as usual. Our conversation are never forced and what's amazing is that we can sit in silence and still be comfortable. ) Lonwabo I have something I want to tell you.

Lonwabo: ok I am listening.

Oyama: (I take a deep breath. "Oyama you can do this" I think to myself.) Wabo I love you not as just a friend. I've loved you for a very long time. I wanted to be sure of my feeling before I told you. I didn't plan on telling you tonight but it just felt right to do it right here right how.

Lonwabo: I love you too. I brought you here tonight to tell you how I feel and to ask you to be woman.

Me: I would love to be yours. (he gets up takes my hand and makes me stand right in front of him. he pulls close to him while looking down on and reaches for my lips kissing the life out of me. Oh My God! He makes me weak. I've kissed guys before but this this is different this kiss tells me I am his he is claiming me.)

\*

\*

\*

KHA

NYI

\*

\*

\*

Being Mrs Mtimkhulu has been the best thing in my life.

My husband is wonderful. He is taking good care of us. The Quins are almost two years old

Sponsored

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

they are just too much trouble now. After our trip to Zambia I decided that I am going to work from home full time. Mcebisi is doing well with the company. I just help here and there

especially when it comes to Qhawe Lwazi Sizwe and Bandile's accounts. They want to be hands on with their ad campaigns. The construction companies are doing well also. Lonwabo and Ntando are hands on only part time. They will completely take over when they finish with their studies. It's been a year and half since we announced to the family that we are married and things have going great. We had a press conference to announce it publicly. Luyanda and Bandile were also part of that conference. Ever since the conference we've had peace from the media. I never thought I would be where I am in life right now. I am grateful that I never gave up on life. If I had given up I would have lost out on all the blessings I've received so far. After I left Zwelibanzi I didn't think I would completely heal from the abuse I suffered while with him. My heart was shattered I was not prepared to love another man only to find that I would meet the one meant for me. Qhawe came into our lives and he became our light. His love healed our hearts His love healed my heart.

\*

\*

NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

LW

AZI

\*

\*

\*

Before we went to Zambia I suspected that Thando was pregnant and she was. After we came back from Zambia we decided to get married. I am now a married man and a father to a beautiful little princess named Babalo. Things I never thought I would be in my life. My dad had taken a lot from me but after I decided to forgive him I started feeling better I started doing things differently and here I am today. Bandile and I joined the BROTHERHOOD project and we speak now about our experiences hoping that they will encourage others to come out and speak out. The project has helped quite a lot of young boys and we've taken some back to school and the others are developing their skills at the skills center that we built thanks to one of Qhawe's business associates that sponsored the centre. Thando has been a great wife. She has been so supportive through it all. It hasn't been easy. We've all had our ups and down. I've slept on the couch a few times. We all have. The women we married don't take shit from us and we appreciate that and that makes us treat them like Queens everyday. Thando has suggested that we buy a bigger house since we plan on

having more kids and the fact that out of all of us I have the smallest house and people can't sleepover when we have our Sunday get together. Eish these get together; having to buy food for everyone. I think I need to stop giving Thando my bank card because she just goes crazy with it.

\*

\*

\*

NARRA

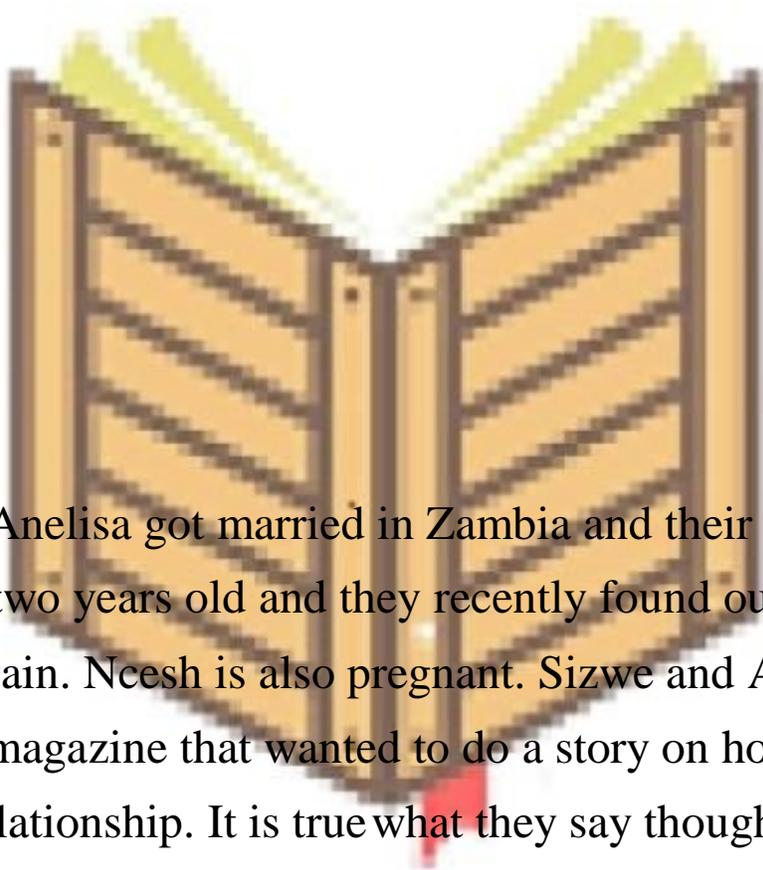
TED

\*

\*

\*

Sizwe and Anelisa got married in Zambia and their little princess is two years old and they recently found out that she is pregnant again. Ncesh is also pregnant. Sizwe and Anelisa did a story for a magazine that wanted to do a story on how they met and their relationship. It is true what they say though. Love can be found in the most unexpected places with the most unexpected person. Their relationship has been stable frowning strong everyday. Luyanda and



NOVELSGURU.COM

[Todayebooks.comPdfdreams.com](http://Todayebooks.comPdfdreams.com)

Enjoy lot of African new novels click on image that mention below



Lwandle also have a son who is a year old now. They decided to name him after

Luyanda. Luyanda Jnr. Khaya and Lungi also doing great.

Zukiswa stopped harassing Khaya after she was taken to the basement. Mcebisi and Lina are also doing good. She has left them alone but her mother has not. She has been going to traditional healers trying to find a way to break up the couple but with no success.

Life can throw a lot of curves at you and the choice will be up to you if you want to give up or get and start again. Giving up should never be an option. We should strive to do better to be better and make our dreams come true since no one is going to do it for.

**NOVELSGURU.COM**

This family has been through a lot in their lives but each member of this family never gave

up. They had options and giving up was never an option but never chose to give up. The family started small and it grew to

be what it is today and in the process they learned to trust each other and be there for each other. They learned to be loyal they learned love each other and respect each other. They've all been through the worst and they have found healing in each other. They mended each other's hearts by loving unconditionally and just allowing themselves to be loved the way they deserve .

\*  
\*  
\*

UNKN  
OW



NOVELSGURU.COM

\*

\*

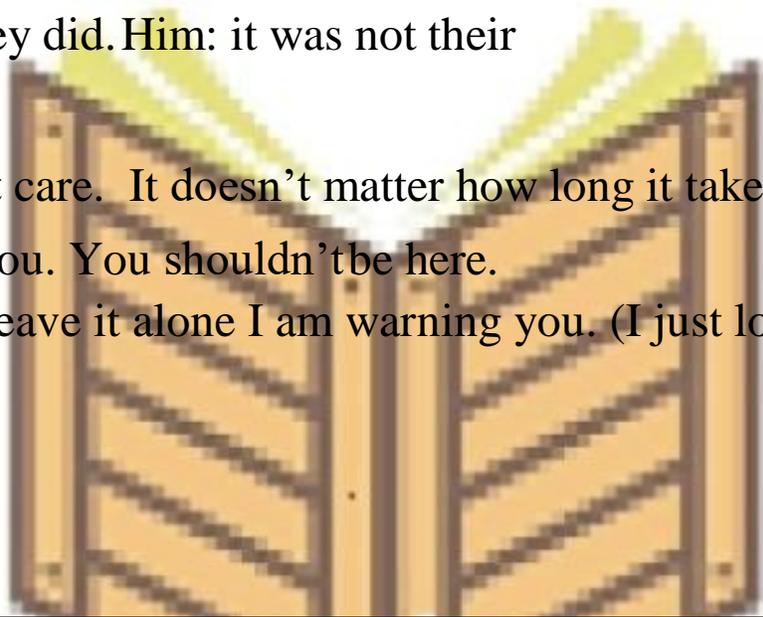
\*

I don't understand how they can live life and be happy after what they did to me and my sister  
Him: Leave them alone otherwise you are going to find yourself in trouble.

Me: I can't. I am going to make them pay for what they did.  
Him: it was not their fault if you.

Me: I don't care. It doesn't matter how long it takes I am going to avenge you. You shouldn't be here.

Him: Just leave it alone I am warning you. (I just look at him and shrug.)

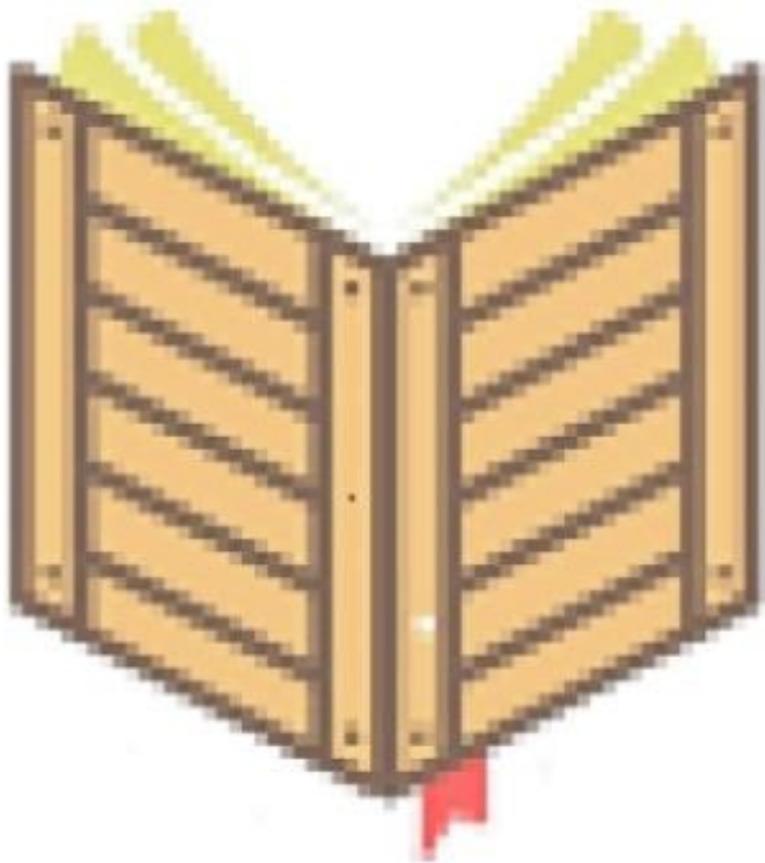


Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site  
please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me  
Thanks.

**For daily latest books please visit**

<https://novelsguru.com/>



**NOVELSGURU.COM**